THE

WORLD

Or the

Present State of the Universe

BEING

A General and Complete Collection

OF MODERN

VOYAGES and TRAVELS

SELECTED

Arranged and digested from the Narratives

of the

Latest & most Authentic Travellers *&* Navigators.

BY CAVENDISH PELHAM ESQR.

Embellished with upwards of One Hundred and Thirty

Beautiful Engravings

VOL. I.

LONDON.

Published as the Act directs. Nov.r 20. 1810

By J. Stratford, 112, Holborn Hill.

Suffield sculp.

THE

WORLD:

OR, THE

Present State of the Universe.

BEING

A General and Complete Collection

OF

MODERN

VOYAGES AND TRAVELS.

SELECTED, ARRANGED, AND DIGESTED, FROM THE NARRATIVES OF THE LATEST AND MOST AUTHENTIC TRAVELLERS AND NAVIGATORS.

BY CAVENDISH PELHAM, ESQ.

EMBELLISHED WITH UPWARDS OF

ONE HUNDRED AND THIRTY

BEAUTIFUL ENGRAVINGS.

THE WORLD WAS ALL BEFORE THEM.
MILTON.

VOL. I.

London:

PRINTED BY W. STRATFORD, CROWN COURT, TEMPLE BAR; FOR

J. STRATFORD, No. 112, HOLBORN-HILL.

1806.

WELLCOME
HISTORICAL
MEDICAL
LIBRARY

PREFACE.

TO expatiate on the utility or entertainment of a work which has immense regions for its object, and all animated nature for its speculation, would be manifestly unnecessary. Traversing the latitudes of space, or exploring the wonders of the Universe, improves and refines the understanding, expands the ideas, and confers a graceful ease and polish to the manners of mankind. By travelling we not only become accomplished, but even the intellectual faculties receive improvement; and the mind acquires wisdom, while the heart is humanized and rendered susceptible of all the liberal emotions.

By the active spirit of discovery which has lately impelled the lovers of science to visit the remotest regions of the earth, many thousands have now cultivated a more intimate acquaintance with the Globe, and a greater extension of commerce; together with a more competent knowledge of their countries, manners, and pursuits. The success of voyagers has stimulated the emulation of travellers to explore the interior recesses of great continents which could not be approached by former navigators. This class of intelligent adventurers was long wanting to visit the different tribes of men in their internal state and condition. From the efforts of many such enterprising travellers, we have derived much of the extensive knowledge we now possess of those countries.

A judicious Collection of Modern Voyages and Travels presents the earth to our astonished eyes, and displays the wonders of the deep. All the inhabitants of the various intermediate regions from the torrid to the frigid zone pass in review before us, and we distinctly behold them in their genuine characters of civilization, savage ignorance, superstition, or ferocity. It exhibits to our view the vegetative produce of the most distant climes, and enumerates the sanative and commercial uses of the innumerable plants which decorate the fertile bosom of the plain, or venerably crown the summit of the aspiring mountain.

If the advantages derived from actual travelling are so numerous and important, what may we not rationally expect from the narratives of those who have faithfully communicated to us the particulars of their adventures; the mutations of climate they have experienced in the variety of regions they have visited, and a genuine series of events so interesting to those who pursue essential knowledge? Do we not, without sustaining any part of the expence incurred by those arduous enterprises, receive all the improvement, amusement, and refinement which they have purchased with infinite hazard, time, and treasure?

The successive discoveries in the Pacific Ocean, and other parts of the Globe, have lately acquired such a certainty and consistency, that they are now regularly arranged and distributed in the habitable World; while the recent discoveries of La Perouse, Vancouver, and other navigators, tend to complete the delineation of the continental shores. The embassies to China, Tibet, and Ava, have furnished fresh and important materials,

materials; and the researches of the Asiatic Society, with other important communications, throw a radiance over Hindostan and the adjacent countries. The Travels of Park, Brown, and Barrow have greatly elucidated our imperfect knowledge of Africa; and Hearne and Mackenzie have nearly ascertained the northern boundaries of America. More important books of Travels, and other sources of geographical information have certainly appeared within these few years, than at any former period of literary history.

In this work the essence of innumerable volumes of Voyages and Travels will be carefully incorporated, with such valuable materials as we have assiduously procured from other unquestionable authorities. The almost infinite variety of publications, from which we have gathered much of our information, have all been recently ushered into the world; and the reader need not be informed, that a collection of Voyages and Travels is rendered the more interesting and valuable, when its sources are from modern information. Candour must readily admit that the nearer such information approaches the present period, so much the nearer to perfection will our collection arrive than any similar productions which have preceded it.

Recent discoveries have shewn that upwards of two thirds of this Globe are covered with water; and these waters, whether oceans, seas, lakes, or rivers, are contained in hollow spaces. The grandest concavity of this globe is filled by the Pacific Ocean, occupying almost half its surface, from the eastern shores of New Holland to the western coast of America. This concavity receives but few rivers, the chief of which being the Amur from Tartary, and the Hoan Ho and Kium Ku from China; while the principal rivers of America run towards the east. The next grand concavity is that of the Atlantic Ocean: a third is the Indian Ocean. Such are the most profound concavities of the Globe, while others are filled by less capacious seas, as the Mediterranean, the Baltic, and others of smaller extent, till they diminish to inland lakes, &c.

We cannot contemplate this wonderful subject without adopting the rhapsodical expression of the Psalmist —"O Lord, how manifold are thy works, in wisdom hast thou made them all! The earth is full of thy riches; so is the great and wide sea, also."

The emphatical effusions of the divine Milton sometimes involuntarily burst forth in pious ejaculations; as,

"*These are thy glorious works, Parent of Good,*
"*Almighty! Thine this universal Frame!*"

And Thomson, in harmonious numbers, informs us, that, "Water, Earth, and Air proclaim the Almighty's bounty."

Again, "A wise man looks upon himself as a citizen of the world!"

*** This work will be accompanied with explanatory notes and observations, to elucidate and harmonize the narratives of the respective Travellers, Navigators, Historians, and Geographers.

MAP
of the
WORLD
Including the most recent tracts and Discoveries of the latest
NAVIGATORS.

From an Original Drawing by
J.RUSSELL,
1806.

London *Published as the Act directs July 5.1806, by J.Stratford N°112 Holborn Hill.*

TRAVELS

IN

UPPER AND LOWER EGYPT.

By C. S. SONNINI,

ENGINEER IN THE FRENCH NAVY, AND MEMBER OF SEVERAL SCIENTIFIC AND LITERARY SOCIETIES.

Translated and abridged from the French.

SECTION I.

Preparations—Departure from Toulon—Island of Corsica—Genoa—Dancers—Sail from Geneva—Cape Corso, Capraria—Turtle Doves and Quails—Anchor at Palermo—Manners and Customs there—Petrifactions and Antiques—Depravity of Taste in Building and Ornaments—City of Montreale—Singular Method of preserving dead Bodies—Vallette described—The Order of Malta—City of described.

WE are happy in presenting to our readers the substance of Sonnini's travels in Egypt,* a country once highly distinguished among the nations of the globe: The travels of Sonnini are rendered singularly valuable by his well-known attachment to veracity, the reputation he has universally acquired for his interesting remarks, and his elegant, artless, and entertaining descriptions.

The French government having appointed Mr. Tott inspector of the sea-ports of the Levant and Barbary, issued orders to equip a frigate at Toulon to carry him to the place of his destination. He was afterwards commanded to embark on board the Atalanta, of 32 guns, and about 300 men, commanded by M. Durfort. She sailed from the road of Toulon on the 26th of April. The passengers were Mr. Tott and his suite, and a lady and three gentlemen from Versailles, who had obtained permission to embark for Palermo, Malta, and Syracuse: The society of these persons, and the politeness of the commander, rendered the voyage peculiarly agreeable.

As M. Sonnini had received intelligence from Marseilles, that the frigate then equipping at Toulon, would require time to be got completely ready, he undertook an excursion into Languedoc, accompanied by M. Tott's secretary. In the vicinity of Cette, and along the coast, they picked up a variety of volcanic matter and marine productions. They were astonished to find in the humid sea-weed, a very singular species of scarab.

He was induced to visit Ciotat on the report of a vast quantity of coral said to be found in the subterranean cavities in that quarter, but he discovered that his information had been erroneous. He was informed, however, at Ciotat, that the following ceremony annually takes place at the

* Egypt, celebrated from the earliest ages of antiquity, and recently a distinguished scene of British valour, both by sea and land, seems to have been originally peopled from the northern parts of Arabia, or from Syria; the Egyptians and Abyssinians having been in all ages, wholly distinct from the native nations of Africa. Mr. Brown, a late intelligent traveller into Egypt, remarks "that the Copts, original inhabitants, have no resemblance of the negro features or form. The eyes are dark, and the hair often curled, but not in a degree that is occasionally seen among Europeans: The nose is often aquiline, and though the lips are sometimes thick, by no means generally so; and on the whole a strong resemblance may be traced between the form of visage in the modern Copts, and that presented in the ancient mummies, paintings, and statues. Their complexion, like that of the Arabs, is of a dusky brown; it is represented of the same colour in the paintings which I have seen in the tombs of Thebes." *See Pinkerton's Modern Geog.* ii. 730. *Trav.* 71.

To Moses, the law-giver of the Hebrews, mankind is indebted for the earliest, most authentic and most interesting memoirs of ancient Egypt; and he knew the country much better than any traveller who has written since his time.

latter end of December. A considerable number of men, armed with swords and piſtols, go in purſuit of a little bird, called troglodyte by the ancients, (a name which it ſtill retains in the natural history of birds, written by Guenau de Montbeillard.) * When they have discovered this bird, which is attended with little difficulty, care being taken to have one ready upon these occasions, they ſuspend it ſolemnly from the middle of a long pole carried by two men on their ſhoulders, giving it the appearance of a heavy load. This winged curioſity is then formally weighed in a large pair of ſcales, and the remainder of the day is devoted to mirth and feſtivity. The name given to the troglodyte is not leſs whimſical than the ſpecies of feſtival which it occaſions. The appellation beſtowed upon it by the inhabitants at La Ciotat, is, "the polecat, or father of the woodcock," merely from its plumage reſembling that of the woodcock, which they ridiculouſly ſuppoſe to be engendered by the pole-cat.

They viſited the baths of Balaruc, and the vineyards of Frontignan, which produce that ſpirituous and high-flavoured liquor, the exceſs of which ſometimes conducts the drinker to the hot-bath. From thence our traveller proceeded, along one of the moſt delightful roads in France, to Montpelier. Having ſpent ſo much time in this agreeable ramble, it appeared neceſſary to return ſpeedily to the coaſt of Provence, and they reſolved to go thither by ſea: they accordingly agreed for their paſſage with the maſter of a tartan then in the port of Cette; and while they were waiting at the inn for the hour of departure, the maſter arrived, out of breath, to inform them, that the commandant was extremely offended at their conduct, in preſuming to quit the port without his permiſſion.

Though M. Sonnini might have refuſed obedience to ſo ſingular a requeſt from the commandant, he and his companion waited upon M. Quérelle, officer of Invalids, and commandant of Cette, who on their arrival informed our traveller, that he was ſurprized at his neglect, in not having paid him a viſit; and added, that he ſhould certainly have invited him to partake of his ſoup, had he thought proper to have noticed him as he ought. Sonnini laconically replied, that as a ſtranger, a traveller, and an officer who did not belong to the army, he muſt implore forgiveneſs for his ignorance of the commandant's exiſtence, aſſuring him that ſoup was not the object of his reſearches.

On the 26th of April, 1777, the Atalanta ſailed from the port of Toulon; after which ſhe was detained by contrary winds and ſtormy weather in the bay of Toulon till the 2d of May. On that day, a breeze from the north-weſt enabled the ſeamen to reſume their voyage. On the 3d at day-break, the veſſel came within ſight of Corſica; and, as ſhe approached, M. Sonnini ſurveyed the northern coaſts of that iſland. Between cape Calvi and cape Corſo, lofty mountains of a rocky and barren appearance preſented themſelves. Thoſe near cape Calvi, under the ſhelter of which a ſpacious and ſafe harbour is formed, are extremely high, and their ſummits were then covered with ſnow. In the gulph between the capes Corſo and Calvi, a ſmall low iſland called *Iſola Roſſa, (Red Iſland)* protects a deep important haven againſt weſterly winds.

Several porpoiſes, or blowers, now made their appearance, playing on the ſurface of the water; a too general preſage of foul tempeſtuous weather. A ſtorm ſoon aroſe, and it was found impoſſible to proceed to Corſica; a reſolution was therefore formed of ſtopping at Genoa, where they arrived on the 4th of May at ten in the morning. †

* Motacilla troglodytes. *Lin. Syſt. Nat.*

† Recollecting that the city of Genoa has lately been particularly deſcribed by ſeveral modern authors, M. Sonnini thought it became him to be ſilent on that ſubject; but he entertains his readers with the recital of a little occurrence which furniſhes a *trait* of national character. In the ballets of the opera, he ſays two female dancers, both young and beautiful, enjoyed pre-eminent rank; though each was excellent in a particular line, their merits were differently rated by different beholders, one was ſaid to have displayed in her motions, all the attitudes of grace; while the other was principally admired for her great exertion and activity. The latter, however, was immoderately applauded, but the former was regarded with the coldeſt indifference. Wiſhing to expoſe the depraved taſte of the audience, and that merit only might be rewarded with their approbation, M. Sonnini and his friends, took different parts in the theatre. Reſolving to avenge the inſulted graces, they attended the opera-houſe ſeveral evenings, diſperſed in different parts of the houſe, and whenever their favourite actreſs appeared, received her with burſts of applauſe, in which they were joined by a few of the Genoeſe; and by means of perſeverance, they ſucceeded in tranſferring the public favour from the lady who had hitherto enjoyed it, to her they now thought proper to approve. They afterwards gave an entertainment on board the Atalanta to both the ladies, when every expedient was practiſed to compenſate the little reverſe of reputation the ſlighted lady's talents might have received.

Pacchierotti,

Pacchierotti, whose merits are celebrated by Brydone,* was then at Genoa: his voice, as a singer, was full of sweetness, but his manner of playing spiritless, and destitute of animation. He appeared young and handsome, but his countenance wanted expression, dignity, and ease: he was better calculated to be heard than seen.

After a delay of ten days, by contrary winds, in the port of Genoa, the frigate set sail on the 13th of May, with a fresh gale. As Sonnini departed from the shores of Italy, the maritime alps, whitened with eternal snows, presented to the view an immense amphitheatre; together with lofty mountains near the gulph La Specia, replete with the finest marble: he also passed Gorgona, a small island, belonging to the duke of Tuscany, and another small island between cape Corso and Capraria, a barren spot belonging to the Genoese. The wind proving unfavourable on the 14th, the frigate passed between Corsica, and the isle of Elba, a dependency on Naples: this island has two good harbours, and some quarries of marble; and is particularly celebrated for its iron mines and magnets, which render its approach perceptible to navigators, from the variations that occur in the œconomy of the compass. The iron produced here is said to be equal to the best swedish.

The coast between cape Corso and Bastia, consists of steep mountains, many of which are covered with snow. The city of Bastia is pleasantly situated on the declivity of a hill, and its harbour affords secure anchorage for small vessels. Near the island of Elba a barren rock appeared, denominated Monte Christo, which seems to have been detached from the island by one of those convulsions of nature which frequently happen in those seas. A ridge of rock, called Planosa, (or *Flat Island*) just makes its appearance above the water's edge, extending from Monte Christo to Elba, and is much resorted to by sea-calves and seals. †

A flock of petrels, termed birds of storm by Buffon, appeared in the afternoon, astern of the ship; and towards evening, the wind changing from south-east to south-west, blew violently; the sky was lowering and extremely dark; repeated flashes of lightning increased its horror, and the sea swelled tremendously. This gale of wind continued till the 15th, when the frigate was abreast of the mouths of Boniface, the strait between the islands of Corsica and Sardinia.

Stormy weather is generally expected in this part of the Mediterranean, the water being repelled in contrary directions by a vast extent of coast, with numerous ridges of rocks and quicksand, agitated by winds eternally variable. During the storm, the ship was visited by turtle-doves and quails, to shield themselves from the fury of the contending elements; but they were so fatigued and dismayed, by the tremendous fury of the storm, that they voluntarily suffered themselves to be taken by the hand. Not far from the frigate, shoals of porpoises furrowed the waters, while, on the other side, a tortoise pressed heavily upon the surface.

The vessel encountered another heavy gale on the 16th, and on the 17th passed within sight of Ustica, a dependency of Sicily: it was formerly known as a retreat to the pirates who infest these seas, but the king of Naples has since erected a small fort there, to terminate their piratical proceedings. Our traveller now beheld the lofty shore of Cape St. Vitto, in Sicily, and at ten the same evening anchored in the mouth of the harbour of Palermo; taking the earliest opportunity of dispatching an officer to compliment the viceroy of Sicily, and to adjust the formalities of a salute; a ceremonial which has often become the source of serious disputes, and disturbed the tranquillity of nations. It was methodically agreed, that the Atalanta should fire fifteen guns, and that an equal number should be returned by the citadel. The frigate accordingly fired that number of guns as a salute; but such was the state of the Sicilian artillery, that two hours elapsed before the cannoniers could raise together some pieces of ordnance which laid half buried in the earth, to put them in a condition to serve as a wretched apology for guns. The Barbary corsairs were so far from being strangers to this neglect of the Sicilians, that it was no uncommon thing for them to succeed in cutting their vessels out of this very harbour. ‡

The

* In his travels to Cicily, and Malta.

† Oiseau de Tempete. *Buffon.*

‡ The harbour of Palermo, one of the safest in the Mediterranean, is defended by a circular fortress, but, as it has been already intimated, has no very formidable artillery. The city, suburbs, and circumjacent walks, present to the spectator an agreeable and variegated amphitheatre, terminated by a chain of lofty mountains. The streets are wide, commo-

The churches of Palermo, like moſt of those edifices in Italy, are magnificently decorated; and many of them are so overloaded with ornaments as to be offensive to good taste. The principal objects of admiration which decorate the interior of these structures, is the superb altar of St. Catherine's, constructed of the finest marble: in the cathedral, twenty-four columns of oriential granite, several tombs of porphyry, and an immense tabernacle of lapis-lazuli arrest the beholder's attention. By a singular accident, the marble of which the church is constructed, forms a broad festoon border round the altar. *

The temple, which has been erected to Nature and the Sciences, is extremely ruinated; and the Museum is in a woeful state of decay: the collection of animals is chiefly composed of a few monsters, preserved in spirits of wine, and some worm-eaten skins which are literally dropping in pieces. The Jesuits are accused of having carried off the most valuable articles, when they were expelled the Neapolitan dominions. Some valuable petrifactions and antiques, are still to be inspected, of which Sir William Hamilton has favoured the world with drawings and descriptions. Fazello, who has written a history of Sicily, and other authors, make serious mention of giants who are supposed to have inhabited this island, and that their gigantic skeletons have been discovered in different parts of Sicily: but no remains eſtablishing these circumstances being displayed in the museum at Palermo, and as M. Sonnini consulted the most intelligent persons on the subject, without discovering any authority for so singular a report, he concluded that these personages of extraordinary stature existed only in imagination.

The surrounding country is extremely pleasant: the Bageria, in particular, a canton extending nine miles from the city, is remarkable for the fertility of its soil, and the villas which embelliſh it. The avenues conducting the traveller to it are decorated with aloes, and Indian fig-trees. In this quarter, prince Palogoni has a singular country residence, strongly representing the folly and bad taste of the builder. The exterior, and avenues are debased by a prodigious number of clumsy stone statues, rudely hewn and huddled together, representing monsters, too monstrous and disgusting to be ridiculous. The interior is ornamented in a style perfectly analogous. The walls of the apartments are plated with coloured glass, in imitation of marble; while looking glasses, reflecting images a thousand different ways, adorn the cielings. Here are indiscriminately displayed large crucifixes, pyramids of cups, saucers, coffee-pots, and chamber-pots, forming an assemblage grotesque in the extreme. The chapel is adorned with a group of naked angels of the most beautiful forms and brilliant colouring; and, in the midst of these, we behold a wooden figure, representing a dead man half devoured by worms, which is unfortunately so well executed as to appear extremely natural. The proprietor of this strange mansion has lately been obliged to deposit his wealth in the hands of trustees, the state fearing he would otherwise ruin himself by pursuing his ridiculous ideas. His city palace is distinguiſhed by similar decorations.

Near this assemblage of absurdities, the mansion of prince Vulguarnera is situated; the construction and furniture of which display inimitable taste. It affords an enchanting prospect, has an alluring garden, enriched with a fine piece of water, and an elegant theatre, where dramas are performed for the amusement of domestic circles, combining every addition dictated by genuine taste to improve the terrestrial paradise.

commodious, and well paved; and the city is ornamented with four beautiful gates.

In Sicily it would be thought highly indecent for a man in affluent circumstances to be seen walking; in consequence of which, carriages are multiplied beyond conception: a stranger may hire a handsome one for about six or seven shillings a-day. Swords are universally wore at Palermo by persons of the most humble conditions: the cobler, the hair-dresser, and every description of artisan, added to the usual garb of his profession, has his side armed with a long sword, his head enveloped in a huge peruke, and his nose saddled with a preposterous pair of spectacles.

M. Sonnini visited Madame Montague, the hostess whom Brydone has caricatured in one of the chapters of his Tour: that lady had heard something of his pleasantly at her expence, but never had been informed of the particulars. Sonnini read to her the passages wherein she had been noticed, and she in return proved the traveller was accurate in his representation of her loquacity, by recapitulating some anecdotes which passed between them on the subject of seeking for another lodging.

* A priest, having drawn aside four or five curtains, with a mysterious air, a wooden crucifix appeared, which the good man seriously affirmed had been begun by St. Nicholas, who, having fallen asleep while he was constructing it, was much astonished on his waking to find his work completed. Sonnini, however, declares, "that it was hardly worth while to call in the assistance of a miracle to complete so miserable a production."

From

From hence our traveller directed his course to Montreale, a small city on the summit of a steep mountain, which is ascended by a magnificent road, containing several streamlets for the refreſhment of the thirsty traveller; and perfumed by aromatic odours, emanating from an adjacent forest of citron and orange trees, Montreale is famous for a large church, erected by William the Good, which is enriched with a grand altar of massy silver, admirably executed. In the vicinity of Palermo, a Capuchin convent excites the curiosity of strangers, the beautiful gardens of which are visited as a public promenade. Beneath the monastery is a large cave, divided into four galleries, into which the light is admitted by means of apertures at each extremity. Here are preserved the remains of all the Capuchins who have died in the convent, as well as of various other persons of rank and opulence. The bodies are rendered thus durable, by being gradually dried before a slow fire, which reduces the flesh, without much apparent injury to the skin; they are then clothed in the Capuchin habit, and placed upright along the sides of the vault; the head, arms, and feet remaining perfectly naked. Such is the exhibition of dead friars in the Capuchin convent near Palermo.

But quitting this dreary abode, let us view the fertile soil of Sicily, and its exuberant productions, warmed, as Mr. Sonnini observes, "By the heat of a genial sky, and subterranean fires." Every species of culture is here successfully employed, and vegetables are produced in great abundance.* The harvest of Sicily, in ancient times, acquired that island the name of the Granary of Rome; and at all seasons of the year it now exhibits a luxuriancy of vegetation. The pastures are covered with numerous herds of fine oxen; game of every kind is extremely plentiful, and the sea is equally liberal of her fish; tunnies were sold at Palermo, while M. Sonnini resided there, at five farthings a-pound. A coral fishery near the coast of Sicily employs a considerable number of boats.

The Atalanta sailed from the harbour of Palermo, soon after midnight on the 22d of May. A breeze from the east wafted her upon St. Vitto, a lofty promontory. The coast from Palermo to this cape is steep, and intersected by fine cultivated vallies, which form a pleasing contrast to the sterility of the neighbouring rocks: the water is so deep along the coast, that vessels may approach it without danger. The navigators then passed between Maretimo and Pavoyanna, two small islands, appropriated by the king of Naples for the banishment of his state prisoners. In steering towards Malta, a long extent of the low Sicilian coast presented itself between cape Marsella and cape Passero, and gave a distant view of a chain of lofty mountains, parallel to the coast. The weather was fine, the sky serene and clear, and the vessel glided gently over the smooth surface of the water, which was hardly dimpled with the moderate breeze; while the passengers gazed rapturously on the spontaneous productions of nature, most agreeably diversified by the labour and attention of the husbandman.

On the morning of the 25th, the frigate approached Pantalaria, a fertile island, and pretty well inhabited. It has but a single spring of water; but, on the top of its highest mountain, a lake of considerable extent appears, supposed to be the crater of an extinguiſhed volcano. The seas which surround this iſland are, however, formidable to mariners, especially in winter, experience having taught them that ſhips seldom pass it without encountering a violent gale of wind. In the evening some swallows made their appearance; and in the afternoon of the 26th the frigate entered the harbour of Malta, which our author pronounces "one of the largest and most beautiful in the universe." The entrance is narrow, and defended on each side by a strong castle. The fortifications which defend the port and the city are truly excellent: it is a well-known fact, that the united forces of the Ottoman empire failed in their attack of this impregnable rampart.

Valette is a well-built city, the houses of which, like those of the oriental nations, have flat roofs; and the streets are paved with a substance resembling stone, though of a soft consistency when taken from the quarry, but hardens by exposure to the air: the whiteness of this production is so extreme, especially when it reflects the rays of a burning sun, that it is thought very injurious to the eyes. The palace of the grand master is spacious, beautiful, and simple. The order of Malta have a public library, which is rapidly augmenting. Several curiosities of natural history are exhibited in the library; among which we behold a petrified bone of considerable size. It was long supposed to be a piece of petrified wood, but the bony texture was easily discernible, and M. Sonnini convinced several persons of their

* In the archbishop of Palermo's gardens, several banana plants, were seen in the open ground.

error, proving it was a fragment of the *femur* of a large quadruped, a drawing of which he sent to Buffon. *

The old city, or *Cetta Veccia*, is about three miles from the new city, and is embellished with a fine cathedral, decorated with the valuable marbles known by the appellation of *green and yellow antique:* the interior is completely lined with crimson damask, trimmed with a broad border of gold lace. The churches of Malta are indeed more simple and beautiful, and in a better taste than those of Genoa and Palermo. From the turrets of the cathedral the smoke of Mount Etna may be perceived, though at the distance of about two hundred miles. In the vicinity of this church a small grotto is to be seen, in which a good statue of St. Paul is erected; that apostle being highly venerated by the Maltese, who suppose him to have delivered that island from serpents, with which it was before infested. This grotto was formed by scooping from a certain spot a species of soft and calcareous white earth, known at Malta by the name of St. Paul's earth. Tables are made of it, on which is impressed the image of the apostle with a serpent in his hand. This earth has also the reputation of being a specific against fevers, and highly efficacious in many other diseases; but the learned deny that it has any other property than that of furnishing a gentle sudorific †.

The industry of the farmers of Malta cannot be sufficiently admired for having diffused fertility over such a mass of sterility, the best part of which was only covered with a few inches of earth. To reduce a soil, so apparently ungrateful to vegetation, they have excavated and beat the rock to pieces; with the hardest parts of which they have constructed a wall round the field, to prevent the rain from carrying away the vegetative earth. A part of the rock is reduced by hard labour into small particles, with which they mix a thin stratum of mould, some of which they procure from Sicily. This mixture is found extremely prolific, producing alimentary plants, figs, oranges, and fruit. The oranges produced in Malta are universally admired for the richness of their red pulp, and their delicious flavour. But the innumerable walls, to enclose their subdivided possessions, afford but a cheerless and fatiguing prospect to the beholder; culture cannot assume a truly smiling aspect when so feebly seconded by nature.

The large garden of St. Antonio, belonging to the grand-master, about a mile and a half from the city, is mentioned by Sonnini as a surprising effort of Maltese industry. It certainly contained a great variety of beautiful flowers; but the walks were rendered uneasy to the feet, and unpleasant to the eye, by being uniformly covered with fragments of white stone. Messrs. Durfort, Tott, Sonnini, and their particular friends, were entertained by the grand-master, at his country palace: only the two gentlemen first named were admitted to the master's table, as they enjoyed the rank of colonels; the other gentlement sat at a different board, the honours of which were performed by a gentleman

* A rich cabinet was seen by M. Sonnini, in the possession of M. Barbaroux, which contained some curious petrifactions, medals, beautiful shells, a large figured pearl, and a crystal medallion, by Michael Angelo. Walking is no degradation at Malta, as it is in the noisy city of Palermo. The Grand Master only possesses a coach and six horses, and that is seldom engaged in any other manner than in conveying him to his country seat. The knights, and principal inhabitants have a chaise drawn by a single mule, carefully led by a servant to prevent any accident to annoy foot passengers. M. Sonnini speaks highly of the members of the order, declaring they are remarkable for the great amenity of their manners, and the abundance of their civilities.

† The Maltese also affirm that a continual miracle is performed by St. Paul, as the mass in the grotto appears to suffer no diminution, whatever quantity may be taken from it. For this assertion there is apparently some foundation, but a speedy reproduction may probably be caused by the humidity of the grotto, and the earth's want of consistency; cavities however are in many places observable, where pieces have been detached from the mass by the application of sharp instruments. A white lichen grows over the interior surface of the vault of St. Paul's grotto.

In the environs of the old city large caverns are in many places to be seen, divided into such numerous ramifications as to form a labyrinth where an inconsiderate person might lose himself and perish: they were formerly places of sepulture, and now retain the name of *catacombs*. Stone coffins are placed in them on each side, one above another. Some of these habitations of stone, are considerably broader than others, and present an excavation for two heads, significantly intimating that they were probably intended for husband and wife. These catacombs perhaps served for a retreat for the Maltese, when their island experienced the frequent ravages of war. Malta is situated almost centrally between Africa and Sicily, in the Mediterranean sea, being about twelve miles in breadth, and twenty-one in length.

It is little more than a rock, almost bare, consisting of a white calcareous kind of stone, of a loose texture which does not absolutely repel cultivation. No vestige of a volcano is to be found on Malta, nor even any vitriable substances; excepting talc, gypse, and clay, every thing is calcareous; and the clay, which is thinly scattered, is mixed with calcareous matter.

of

of the palace; which was a pleasing circumstance to those among them who wished to be relieved from the oppressive ceremony of the first table. After dinner, however, all restraint was banished, and the grand-master mingled with the company.

As the territory of Malta cannot produce sufficient aliment for the inhabitants, the greatest part of the corn, cattle, and other necessaries of life are imported from Sicily, which may properly be denominated the granary of the Maltese. The communication with that island is remarkably expeditious; the vessels for transporting provisions are ingeniously constructed, and generally navigated by excellent mariners. The alabaster of Malta varies in colour, but always exhibits a mixture of yellow, grey, and black. Sonnini saw some beautiful tables, and large corner buffets of it in the grand-master's palace.

The coasts of Malta furnish fish in abundance, among which the accola, or white tunny, is greatly esteemed: it is smaller than the common tunny; but the flesh is whiter, and has a more delicate flavour. Coral, and a variety of shell-fish, are also found on those coasts, as the spiny oyster, the whelks, &c. The paper nautilus is sometimes met with, but so rarely, as to be deemed a curiosity.

SECTION II.

Maltese Gallies—Rise and Decline of the Maltese Order—The Vessel visited by a Variety of Birds—Alexandria, Description of—New City of—The French Consul assassinated—Cleopatra's Needles—Cleopatra's Baths—Pompey's Pillar—Lizards, Jackalls—the Jerboa.

WHILE the Atalanta remained at Malta, which did not exceed twelve days, the wind was strong and changeable, the sea much agitated, and it rained incessantly; which appeared very extraordinary to the inhabitants, as they seldom have any rain in the island at this season. A tremendous thunder-clap accompanied this deluge, which greatly heightened the consternation, as such a circumstance has hardly ever been known there in summer, though Sonnini observes, Thunder is "very frequent, and very violent in winter."

This stormy weather brought back the gallies of the order into the harbour, which were saluted by the Atalanta with fifteen guns, for which the general returned four. In the gallies an incredible number of persons were on board; the general's alone containing about eight hundred. Their decorations were superb, embellished with sculpture and gilding: their enormous sails, striped with blue and white, with a large red cross of Malta in the centre, formed together a moft magnificent spectacle; but they were not well equipped either for fighting or foul weather. The order continued this appearance of ancient splendour, to display at least that the brotherhood is illustrious.

When the hospitable brotherhood of St. John of Jerusalem, exchanged that modest title for that of *knights*, they became rather a military than a religious association. A series of wars againft the Mahometans, often accompanied with brilliant military exploits, trained them to habits of intrepidity. Though compelled to abandon Rhodes, they made so gallant a defence as to entitle them to everlasting honours: at Malta they braved the fury and valour of Soliman, and fixed the boundary of the Ottoman career. This martial ardour, accustomed to strict discipline, and austerity of manners, for a long time prevailed; but, as the indolence of the Mussulmen increased, the rigid institutions of the order became relaxed. The struggle between the Knights and Turks now dwindled into a phantom, of which some pitiful expeditions of corsairs presented the shadow: the cruises of the gallies were only excursions of pleasure to the delightful ports of Sicily. To enter into further particulars respecting this order, would be a departure from that necessary brevity, which our duty impels us to regard.

It has been asserted that the Maltese language is an injudicious compound of Arabic and Italian; but Antonio Vaffali, * a learned Maltese, asserts that

* Vocabulary of the Maltese language, by Antonio de Vassali, printed at Rome in 1796.

that the Maltese is as elegant and copious as any of the living languages.

The wind being favourable, the Atalanta left Malta on the 7th of June, and set sail for the island of Candia.*

The frigate made a short stop at Paleo-Castro, on cape Solomon, the eastern-most point of the isle of Candia, inhabited only by a few shepherds; who, struck with amazement at the sight of a ship of war and a felucca, fled with their flocks to the interior of the island, yielding to the navigators a coast which they had abandoned. Little time was now required to waft them to Alexandria, and a few days conducted them to the low, sandy and desert shores of Egypt. These shores present nothing attractive to commerce or curiosity, but they afford tremendous risks to navigators: hardly appearing above the level of the sea, they are not perceptible at a distance; and should the wind blow towards the land, it is next to an impossibility to preserve the vessel. To make the land of Alexandria is also attended with much difficulty and danger: the first indication of it, on the western side is Abousir, called by Europeans, *The towers of the Arabs*; two eminences, on each of which a tower presents itself, discernible at the distance of twelve miles: one of these structures appears to be round, the other square.

The coast of Egypt eastward of Alexandria is very different from that of the west: it is higher, and more irregular, and exhibits some traces of cultivation; date-trees, and human habitations are often seen: When the vessel is within sight of Pompey's Pillar, it is in the exact direction of Alexandria: but great circumspection is required in approaching these shores, as currents sometimes involve the ships, and impel them towards the desert with irresistible rapidity.

Two ports, almost equally spacious, present themselves to the choice of those who propose to cast anchor close to Alexandria: the name of the western is the Old Harbour, its entrance being by a narrow channel between two shallows; but its interior is a deep bason, where good anchorage and shelter is found in the worst of weather. The other, which is to the east, and called New Harbour, is separated from the former by a narrow peninsula: its depth of water is not very considerable, and is not only encumbered with rocks and shelves, but is completely exposed to the north wind. At the entrance of this harbour a shelf exists, called the Diamond, which it is necessary to steer very close to, in order to escape the shallows on the other side. The Diamond, and the adjacent rocks, are probably some of the remains of the ancient Pharos; thus modern vessels are sometimes wrecked on the fragments of the noblest edifice that ever was reared for their preservation. European vessels enter the New Harbour only; the old is preserved to accommodate the ships of the disciples of Mahomet. †

Sonnini declines giving a circumstantial description of this renowned city of Alexander, of

* M. Tott had purchased a felucca to enable him to examine th coasts that the frigate could not approach; which was productive of much embarrassment, as the felucca could not keep up with the ship. On the 12th the navigators passed the island of Cerigo, the ancient Cythera, where Mythology informs us Venus landed, when she sprang from the foam of the sea: they also observed at a small distance, four sterile uninhabited rocks, and on the 14th the Atalanta anchored in the bay of Suda, in the isle of Candia. The day after her departure from Malta, a bird of prey perched upon her sail yards. It appeared to be a male sparrow-hawk, though denominated a corsair by the sailors, from its cruizing in the sea in search of quails and other birds of passage; on the same day a grey sparrow, and a yellow wagtail alighted on the rigging; but unable to endure the fatigue of a long flight, they willingly suffered themselves to be caught. M. Sonnini conducted them into the great cabin, and, after tenderly caressing them, indulged them with their liberty: fearing, however, to venture on a boundless sea, they speedily returned at the window from which they had a few minutes before escaped. They afterwards remained contentedly in the ship, and amused the crew with their warbling, and feats of activity, till they approached the coast of Candia, when they ceased to be any longer passengers in the Atalanta, confiding in their wings for present and future safety; retiring perhaps to animate enchanting groves.

† Though such is the genuine character of this port, it is generally crowded with vessels; here the riches of Asia and Africa are freighted for the ports of Europe, and here are imported the productions of European arts and manufactures. A geographical position of such importance could not escape the genius of Alexander. He saw, amidst the rapidity of his conquests, that here he might erect the theatre of mutual communication of all nations. A city, planned by the command of an Alexander, and superintended by a Dinocrates, must certainly have been originally magnificent. The kings of Egypt farther embellished the new capital, under one of the Ptolomies: Cnidas constructed a Pharos which was denominated one of the wonders of the world: Ptolomy Philadelphus founded an immense library; and it became the centre of science, commerce, and riches; and the useful arts were also cultivated with success; but, on the introduction of luxury, elegant refinement degenerated into licentiousness, the morals of the people were corrupted, and Alexandria fell a victim to the follies of its own inhabitants.

which

ALEXANDRIA.

Sparrow sc.

which it is impossible to view the remains without emotions of the most poignant regret. Monuments that once appeared to defy the ravages of time, are now mutilated and mingled with the common dust: the devouring flames, directed by ferocity, have consumed the library of the Ptolomies: the ancient Pharos lies buried in the sea, leaving no indication of its once admired situation; and Alexandria itself now occupies only an inconsiderable part of the ground of the antient city, where a few scattered fragments are only to be discovered.

The population of Alexandria is estimated by Savary at about six thousand,* consisting of Turks, Arabians, Syrians, Cophts, Jews, and Christians. Strangers from all the eastern countries, attracted principally by commerce, occasionally reside there. This motley assemblage, frequently jealous of each other, affords a singular view of the manners, customs, and habits of the respective nations.

The new city of Alexandria is erected principally on the brink of the sea. Its houses, like those of the Levant, are flat-roofed; and apertures supply the place of windows, with wooden lattices of different forms, so closely placed as almoft to exclude the light. The streets are narrow, awkwardly disposed, and destitute of pavement. The town is enclosed by a wall, erected by the Arabs; but the existing city forms only a part of the interior of it, presenting to the view, only scattered wrecks, and piles of rubbiſh. The wall is extremely thick, and flanked with a hundred towers. † Exclusive of the fragments of ancient monuments, some of the work consists of stony masses of small fossile sparry concretions, strongly cemented together. Where repairs are made, common stones are in some places introduced.

The Arabic language is usually spoken in Alexandria, and most of the other parts of Egypt; but such of the inhabitants as have commercial intercourse with Europeans, speak Italian, and Moresco, or Lingua Franca, an injudicious compound of Arabic, Spanish, and Italian.

Cruel and revengeful in their dispositions, the Egyptians are not easily induced to forgive an injury or insult, having a violent propensity to the effusion of blood on too many occasions. Though they conceal their animosity for a time, till a covenient opportunity presents itself, their malice is terrible. When an European has injured or offended them, they sometimes revenge themselves by exercising cruelties on another European, without considering or enquiring whether he was a relation, friend, or countryman of the person who was the original offender. ‡

An accumulation of rubbish, sand, and duft constitutes an appropriate abode to the present Alexandrians, whose degeneracy serves to augment

* They were estimated by Mr. Brown at twenty-thousand in 1792.

† Pocock accords with Sonnini in the account of the walls of Alexandria: He says, "It was in the year 600 of the Hegira, answering to the year 1212 of the Christian æra, that one of the successors of Saladin, who had just taken Egypt out of the hands of the Caliphs of the race of Fatima, ordered the walls of modern Alexandria to be reared: he employed in this work, which is two French leagues in circumference, the wreck of the ancient city. The walls, and the hundred towers which flank them, are composed of fragments of marble and broken columns, confounded with common stones. *Rich Pocock's Tr.* 1,493.

‡ Not long before M. Sonnini's arrival, the French consul had been assassinated at Alexandria, from the prevalence of of this vindictive spirit. A French hair-dresser, enjoying the diversion of shooting in the environs of the town, a quarrel arose between him and an Arab, in consequence of which, the French frisseur fired his piece on the Arab, and killed him on the spot. The fury of the Alexandrians was, in some degree appeased, by the murderer's being hanged in the public square; but the brother of the Arab who was killed, solemnly bound himself by oath, to take the life of the first European he should meet. Attending to this circumstance, the Europeans in that city confined themselves within doors for three whole months, hoping the vengeance of the Arab would have subsided in that time; and then ventured to appear again in the streets, when not a man of them was molested in the course of eight days. Encouraged by this forbearance, the French consul thought he might also venture to take the air, and repaired with a janissary of his guard to amuse himself on the banks of the canal. The vindictive Arab, who was always armed, happening to be in the same quarter, approached the consul, who entertained no disagreeable apprehensions, and brought him to the ground by a shot fired through his back. Instead of taking vengeance of the assassin, the janissary ran off with the utmost speed, and the unfortunate consul expired a few hours after. The French merchants instantly dispatched a quick-sailing boat to Constantinople, to demand exemplary justice: orders indeed were returned to inflict due punishment on the assassin, but these orders were shamefully evaded, and the Arab did not even quit the limits of the city. Events of this kind are too common in this country to excite astonishment.

Citizen *Volney* has given this anecdote in his "Travels through Egypt and Syria:" his account does not *entirely* agree with that of M. Sonnini, though we are induced to believe the latter has made no mistake, as he had his intelligence from those who beheld what passed.

the desolation: prostrate columns, mutilated statues, entablatures, and fragments of all denominations, are promiscuously strewed over the environs of the city, exhibiting a hideous theatre of the most horrible destruction. Afflicted at the sight of this fallen grandeur and magnificence, the generous traveller sighs over the immense ruins, and burns with indignation against a barbarous race, who have wantonly destroyed so many stately monuments, which time, the most remorseless of devourers would hitherto have spared.

Towards the eastern extremity of the crescent, formed by the new port, two obelisks were to be seen, denonimated *Cleopatra's Needles*, though not supposed to have been erected by that celebrated queen: one of them retains its original upright position, the other has deserted his base, and is almost buried in the sand. To her likewise have been ascribed the excavations, named *Cleopatra's Baths*, and the construction of the canal, conveying the waters of the Nile to the cisterns of Alexandria*. They are each cut out of a single block of granite, and surrounded with hieroglyphics, which remain distinct on the obelisk that is standing, except on the eastern side, where they are no longer visible. The palace of the Egyptian kings was at no considerable distance from these obelisks, of which superb vestiges are still discernible. The ruins now supply an abundance of granite and marble, to be employed in the construction of the houses of the citizens. Medals, and many other curiosities, are discovered by digging on the site of this palace. From those ruins was extracted the fossile grinding tooth of enormous size, shewn to Sonnini. It passed for the tooth of a giant among the Alexandrians, though they have since been fully satisfied of its having been the tooth of an elephant.

Passing from the southern gate of the city, a superb column rears its majestic head, triumphant over ignorance, time, and superstition, and bears the indiscriminate names of Pompey's Pillar †, and Pompey's Column. It is composed of three pieces of the most beautiful red granite, forming the pedestal, the shaft, and the capital‡. Savary and others affirm its height to be one hundred and fourteen feet, but Paul Lucas, who declares he measured it accurately, says the height does not exceed ninety-four feet. The whole of the column is equivalent in weight to one million one hundred and ten thousand pounds avoirdupois.

The ground on which the pillar is erected, unable to support so vast a burthen, gave way, and exposed part of the sustaining pivot: it is a granite block, six feet square, on which rests a pedestal of much larger dimensions than itself, which evidently proves the exact perpendicularity of the whole.

Southward of this pillar a deep and spacious valley appears, containing many fragments of ancient structures. Among these, on a level with the sand, are seen thick solid walls, disposed in the form of the letter T.

In early times the city of Alexandria was not, as it is at present, surrounded by a steril waste: it was refreshed and fertilized by the lake Mareotis, and two large canals; one from Upper Egypt, and the other from a branch of the Nile, called the Bolbitic. Under the dominion of the Arabians these necessary works were supported in tolerable repair; but the rage of the Turks for destruction, have banished these salutary canals and reservoirs which gave fertility to the country. The rapacity and barbarity of the Ottomans, have also dried up the sources of knowledge that excited the mental energy of the inhabitants.

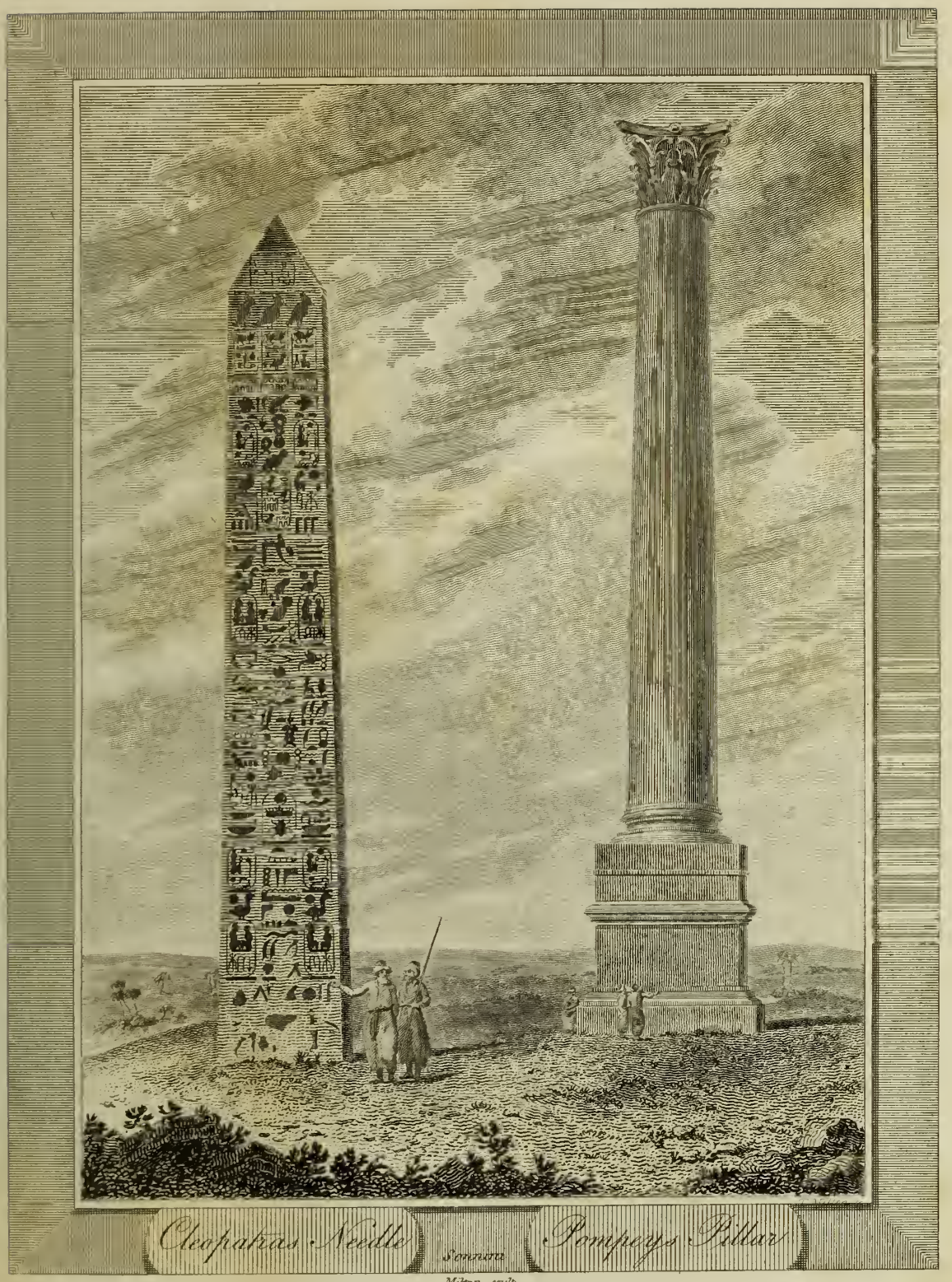
The canal of Lower Egypt now only remains, and that in a very ruinous state. Little more than a century ago it was navigable by boats, which conveyed merchandize to Rosetta, without encountering the dangers of the sea, or the sand-banks in the mouths of the river Nile; but the banks are daily becoming more ruinous; no longer a sufficient quantity of water remains to

* On this occasion Sonnini thus abruptly abandons the thread of his narrative, to emblazon the virtues of that Egyptian princess, with very amorous colouring:—"While the names of those who reared most of the astonishing edifices of ancient Egypt, is absolutely unknown, posterity carefully preserves the memory of a woman, rendered illustrious by her magnificence, her genius, her heroic character, and her incomparable beauty; of the woman, whose charms triumphed over the greatest of the Romans; of the woman, finally, whom we can reproach only with the sallies of a passion, not easily restrained in an ardent soul, and under a burning sky; at which the graces disdain not to smile, and which nature does not disavow."

† Dr. White, in his Egyptiaca, 1801, 4to. inclines to think that the famous column, ascribed to Pompey, ornamented a space opposite to the Serapium or Temple of Serapis, in which was the great public library; and escaped antient notice by its connection with that grand edifice.

‡ Savary confirms the opinion of Dr. Pocock respecting the height of this column.

float


Cleopatras Needle
Sonnini
Pompeys Pillar
Milton sculp

float even a boat; and a dingy ill-flavoured water with difficulty arrives at the cisterns, which are themselves in a moft deplorable state. The culture of this district extended much farther, and might easily have been increased by the Alexandrians; but if they were too indolent to preserve the only water they could drink, it is not matter of surprize that they would be very anxious to procure the other necessaries of life. The verdure and coolness of the shade on the banks of the canal, had attracted a multitude of small birds: Fig-peckers and larks are birds of passage, and here make a temporary halt to enable themselves to endure the fatigue of a long voyage, in their road to the Delta; but many of them were ensnared to furnish food for the voluptuous.

The sparrows, on the contrary, more habituated to the society of man, seldom emigrate; and their flesh is not alluring to the Alexandrians, though they partake of the food and habitations of which they are the uninvited guests. They inhabit the districts of Egypt, Nubia, and Abyssinia; but are not to be found along the western coast of Africa. Their absence from the latter, is perhaps occasioned by want of proper food. Sparrows never fix a residence in places where wheat, and its kindred grains, are not cultivated.

At a short distance from the canal of Alexandria the traveller is shewn the catacombs, a series of long galleries hewn out of a rock. They are supposed to have been the quarries which furnished the stone for the construction of Alexandria; and having contributed to supply habitations for men while they were living, became their abode after their death: much labour was not however required to enforce obedience in the stone to the plan of the mason, it being very soft and calcareous. Sensible of its being destitute of hardness and durability, the ancient Egyptians gave it wonderful solidity by a peculiar species of mortar. Many of these subterraneous alleys are in a ruinous state; but in those which our author entered, there were three coffins on each side, piled on each other. At the extremity of some of the galleries, separate apartments are to be seen, with coffins, which were probably the sepultures of particular families. The Arabs declare that these catacombs have a subterranean communication with the pyramids of Memphis: it is certain, however, that they extend as far as the sea at the bottom of the Old Harbour; and the three caverns, cut in the rock on the coast, known by the name of Cleopatra's Baths, seem to be a continuation of them.

At the entrance of the catacombs, M. Sonnini says he has seen several cameleons*; and these dreary regions are the common retreats of Jackalls, which are numerous. These animals, in large companies, visit the abodes of man. Their cries, which resemble the lamentations of infants, create much disturbance during the night; and they devour cadeverous substances. They are indeed so crueland ferocious, that they are objects of apprehension to the human race.

In these caverns a very extraordinary animal is found, to which has indiscriminately been applied the names of hare, rabbit, field-mouse, rat, &c. Its real Arabic name is the Jerboa; its size is nearly that of a rat; the head large and broad in proportion to the body, and flat at the top; of a clear pale red, with a blackish shade; the upper jaw projecting beyond the lower, and each furnished with two incisive teeth only; the snout is short, broad, and obtuse, and strong hairs on each side form long whiskers; the nose is naked, white, and cartilaginous; the eyes large and prominent, with the iris brown; the ears are long and large, and scantily covered with short hair; the body broader behind than before, covered with pale silky hair. The fore-feet are short and white: the hinder legs are clothed with long hair of a faint red and white: the tail is pretty long, and rather larger in circumference than a goose-quill, but is quadrangular, terminating in a tuft of long silky hair, half black, and half grey: the female has eight teats; the male is somewhat smaller than the female, and the tints of his fleece are not so deep.

These animals are frequently seen among the sands and rubbish in the environs of Alexandria; they live in societies, and dig their habitations in the ground; their nails and teeth being their only

* Marvellous stories have been propagated of this species of lizard, which are disgraceful to the science of natural history. The changing of the animal's colour must not be ascribed to the objects presented to it, but its internal affections, that enlarge or diminish the tints which marble its delicate skin. It is absurdly affirmed that he lives wholly upon air; but flies and insects are its common and natural food. To satisfy himself on this subject, Sonnini prevented some cameleons from catching any insects, without excluding them from the open air. They existed indeed for twenty days, but greatly dwindled in substance, they lost their agility and vivid colours; and their skin appeared wrinkled, and adhered close to the bone.

tools

tools employed upon the occasion. The slightest noise alarms them to seek for shelter in their holes; the Arabs sometimes, however, catch them alive by stopping up all the avenues of the colony except one, through which they force them out: Their flesh, though not esteemed a delicacy, is eaten by the Egyptians; M .Sonnini shut six of these animals in a large iron wire cage; but they gnawed away, during the first night, the upright and cross sticks of their prison, which was afterwards lined with tin. They lived on wheat, rice, and fruit, and were highly pleased with basking in the sun: They had much agility in their motion but were very docile and gentle. They readily suffered themselves to be stroked, but never discovered either joy, gratitude, or fear. Their gentleness appeared the effect of indifference, approaching to stupidity.

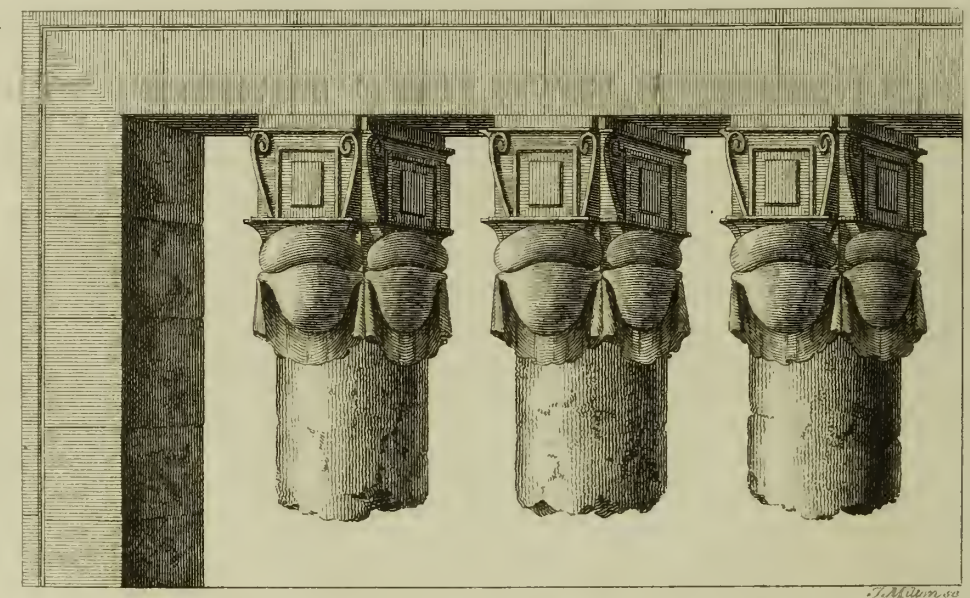
While Sonnini remained at Alexandria, he lodged at the French factory, a large quadrangular building at the bottom of the New Harbour: it forms a square inclosing a large court-yard, with warehouses round it under arcades: these arcades are supported by columns, extracted from the fragments of pillars found among the ruins of the ancient city. In the court, a statue of white stone represents a woman with a child by her side, the drapery of which has considerable merit. Some Arabs found it buried in the ruins, and sold it to a French interpreter, who intended to transmit it to his own country, but happening to die soon after, the statue had received many blemishes by being thrown about among the bales of merchandize. The apartments appropriated to the residence of the merchants, are over the warehouses, and very lofty. A single gate of great solidity, defends this structure. It is farther strengthened in tumultuous emergencies, by packages of goods piled upon each other; and when they have reason to apprehend the populace will break in, the inhabitants of the factory are enabled to slide down from their windows in the night, and seek an asylum in some vessel.*

Hearing mention made of a curious monument in a mosque, in the environs of Alexandria, M. Sonnini procured an opportunity of examining it at his leisure. The mosque itself is very ancient, having been erected by one of the Caliphs, and the walls are encrusted with different coloured marbles, and adorned with some elegant pieces of Mosaic. The tomb, which had been the principal object of Sonnini's curiosity, is one of the most beautiful pieces of antiquity preserved in Egypt, and is used by the Mahometans as a kind of reservoir for performing the ablutions of their religion: it is very large, and nearly forms an oblong rectangle. It consists of a single piece of superb black marble, spotted green, red, yellow, &c. and is covered with a profusion of hieroglyphics on both sides. It was formerly impossible to procure admission into this mosque, which naturally acounts for the silence of travellers respecting so great a curiosity. On the pavement of the mosque, Sonnini perceived a Greek inscription in Roman characters, nearly obliterated; but the word CONSTANTINON was easily distinguished. A duke of Braganza was the first European who visited this mosque. Happening accidently to approach it, he ventured to step in: some children having observed him, surrounded him with clamorous outcries; but he silenced them by throwing some money amongst them, and quietly made his retreat. After this large sums were offered in vain by Europeans, for permission to visit the mosque, but, after some time, a Shech who had the care of it, admitted any person who would pay a chequin: in consequence of this toleration, some Englishmen having been seen there by the populace, the Shech was reprimanded by the commandant of Alexandria, and ordered to admit no Christian of any country. But Soninni's visit was so prudently and privately conducted, that no clamour arose upon his having enjoyed such a privilege.

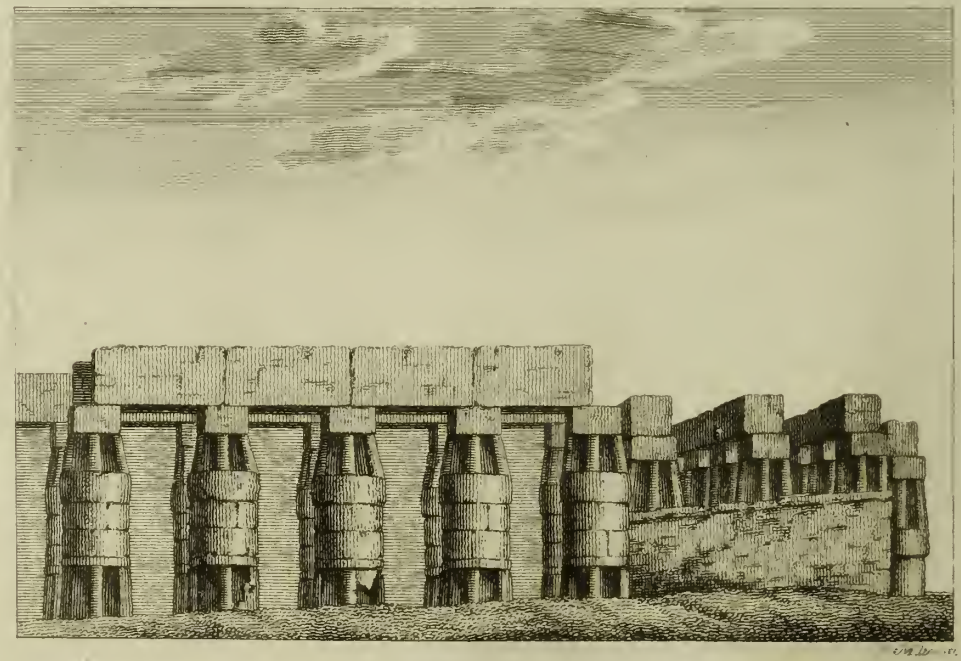
The Venetians and the English have also commercial establishments at Alexandria; the former pursuing the line of traffic which was adopted by their predecessors: the English, on the contrary, struck out new paths, and seemed to aim at possessing exclusively the commerce of India through the red sea.

The commerce of Alexandria is principally a commerce of deposit, for the convenience of con-

* Sonnini had once an opportunity of witnessing the extreme terror excited in the minds of the French belonging to the factory, from the bare idea of an Alexandrian riot: a person happened to say, that an Egyptian was slain by a native of Europe, the gates of the factory were instantly shut, bales of goods ordered to be moved, in readiness to sustain the expected shock, and all the persons in the factory were preparing to escape to the harbour, by dropping from the windows; when they had the happiness to be informed that it was one Mahometan who had killed another.



Capitals of the Colonnade of the Temple of Dendera.



Colonnade of Thebes.

Specimens of EGYPTIAN *Architecture.*

Sonnini.

veyance from thence to other places. Merchandize is transported by water-carriage to Cairo, whence, after supplying that populous city, it is dispersed over Arabia, Upper Egypt, and Abyssinia. Little barks are employed in carrying goods to and from Alexandria to Rosetta, the first city of Egypt on the Nile. They are substantial boats, handsomely constructed, without decks, and drawing little water; having two or three masts, according to their magnitude, with large triangular sails: their burthen is usually from five to six tons. Though their voyage to Rosetta hardly exceeds thirty-six miles, and they can stop in their passage at Aboukir, great danger attends the navigation; a violent gales ometimes occasioning the vessel to fill and sink. During the increase of the Nile these accidents are not so frequent; but when the river has retreated into its bed; it is so extremely shallow at the mouth that the Egyptian mariners never approach it without trembling.

Among a variety of salt-water fishes on the coast of Alexandria, are a species of thornback, known by the name of the sea-crab, the flesh of which is hard and unpalatable; the sea-cat, which is a little better; the palamides, a sort of small tunny; the gar fish, the sur-mullet, and the pointed fish they call the eel, which frisk about in calm-weather in shoals innumerable on the surface of the water. Here is also found a fish, which occupied a distinguished place upon the tables of the Romans, denominated the wolk from its voracity. Sonnini had a drawing made of one of these fishes, which was two feet and a half in length; its body was of a dark blue, shaded with grey; its head was blueish, and the gills were irregularly spotted with red. By the seamen of Provence this fish is denominated the Carousse.

SECTION III.

Journey from Alexandria—The Mules turned loose—Prefer Travelling by Night— Ruins of Heraclea—Aboukir—Tomb of a Mahometan—Rosetta, Description of—Oxen, Cows, Calves—Horses, &c.—The inhuman Treatment of Dogs, Cats, &c.—The Tahose, Turtle-Doves—Wild Ducks.

TO travel by land from Alexandria to Rosetta, a kind of desert must be crossed; M. Sonnini, M. Tott, the traveller Savary, and a numerous suite, left Alexandria July the 12th, at seven in the evening. These foreigners, clad in the French fashion, by some means offended the inhabitants, who insulted them in their passage through the city, and saluted them with a shower of stones, accompanied with abusive language. Another misfortune attended them as they were passing on the road; the ass, commissioned to carry their provisions, indignantly shook off his panniers, to ease himself of the unpleasant weight, and bottles, plates, pies, &c. were literally demolished. The scattered fragments being carefully collected, the author committed them to the care of a horse of a milder disposition, and the journey was resumed. The travellers were then overtaken by the night, which proved extremely dark: they proceeded, however, till they had nearly accomplished half their journey when they halted to refresh themselves. Having rested a short time from their fatigue, they were preparing to set out again, when an uproar and dispute arose concerning the mules, which had been turned loose, and could not be found or distinguished without some difficulty. The muleteers proceeded to blows, the Janizaries attacked the contending parties, and an hour at least was consumed in witnessing this scene of confusion. M. Sonnini, with the assistance of a servant, had taken better care to secure the respective animals, and the party were all mounted, highly amused at their temporary distress. Hence a lesson might be conveyed, that in travelling, as well as in military expeditions, regularity and order are indispensable. At length, however, the tumult ceased, the signal was given for departure, and about six o'clock the next morning they arrived at Rosetta.

The journey from Alexandria to Rosetta is usually performed by night, to avoid the inconveni-

ence of a parching sun; but Sonnini, having been long accustomed to hot climates, was capable of supporting the most ardent power of the solar rays. This is considered as a journey of twelve hours, and mules may be moderately hired by the travellers, but no carriages can be procured. The paces of the mules are pleasant, and occasion very little fatigue to the rider; and they are so well acquainted with the road, that it is unnecessary to guide them either by night or by day, though no beaten track could be distinguished over the sand*.

Leaving Maadie, an open plain commences: the land is very low, and a vast bay is formed by the sea from Aboukir; the water would cover a great extent of country, were not solid dikes constructed to keep it off. Even with this precaution, stormy weather sometimes occasions those dikes to overflow, and inundate the vicinity of Aboukir. The route continues along the sea-shore, where beautiful shells are found of every species, and the traveller is enlivened by the visits of the sea-lark, the curlew, and the piper, while the feet of the mules are laved by the agitated waves†.

The prospect now instantly changes, and no longer exhibits a scene rendered hideous by sterility; nature diffuses her gifts with equal variety and profusion. The eye, no longer tortured with a burning atmosphere, reposes itself deliciously on a horison presenting refreshing images, and smiling with the gayest aspect. Rosetta is a handsome populous city, built in the modern style; if it does not consist of the most exquisite edifices, they are such as cannot excite disgust. On the eastern side it is watered by the majestic Nile, which gently conveys the wealth of many nations to distant regions, and fertilizes the circumjacent country; on the north, the city is rendered delightful by the neighbouring aromatic groves, and odoriferous hedges. Chance appears to have the arrangement of every thing: no studied regularity of disposition offends the eye of taste or nature; the boughs of the orange and citron tree are frequently interwoven; and the pomegranate accompanies the anona: flowers exhale their perfumes at all seasons of the year; and esculent vegetables flourish beneath the balmy shade. Fragrant bowers, intersected by chrystal streamlets, kindly diffuse the aliment of vegetables. To enrich these scenes, the turtle-doves, emblems of fidelity and truth, breathe the soft accents of inoffensive cooing.

The Delta, a plain on the opposite side of the river, has no boundary but the horizon: issuing from the bosom of the waters, it preserves its original freshness and fertility. Orchards and groups of trees, promiscuously scattered, cloathed in perpetual verdure, with numerous flocks and herds, give additional *traits* to the enchanting prospect.

Rosetta has deservedly acquired the appellation of the Garden of Egypt. The stranger there may repose in perfect security, and traverse the surrounding scenes, free from impunity, or incurring the displeasure of the natives. "In the course of these delightful excursions", says Sonnini, "the husbandman or the gardener will invite him into his cottage, and entertain him with coffee: inhabiting a soil fertile and smiling, whose freshness and luxuriance temper the ardour of the climate, the manners of the Turks in Rosetta are softened, and their character has lost its asperity."

* The route is not, strictly speaking, a desert; for half the way, on one side, a town and a few straggling houses are to be seen, and some different traces indicate that other habitations are not very remote. The gusts of wind from the south, so intolerable in the vast plains which surround Egypt, are not expected on this road; but great danger is to be apprehended from plunderers. The Bedouin robbers are very prompt collectors of unprotected booty. On quitting Alexandria, the coast is to the east north-east, along the base of a promontory stretching towards the north; at the extremity of which stands Aboukir, a town erected on the ruins of Canopus. At the distance of about eighteen miles, a remnant of the Canopic branch of the Nile presents itself, which is only a salt-water marsh, having no longer any communication with the Nile, except when that river is at its greatest height, and is generally fordable on horse-back. The mouth of this ancient branch of the Nile is much straitened by a bar of sand. A large square building stands on the eastern bank, which may probably be denominated an inn, though hardly any thing can be found in it but a well of disgusting water. This place is named Maadie, *the passage*; and is the site of the ancient Heraclea (*as we are informed by Dr. Shaw*); but the house is modern, constructed of white stones, though a large block of granite, and a fragment of grey marble appear in the formation of the gate. About a mile and a half further, some walls and ruins are discernible upon the coast, which are probably the traces of Heraclea.

† At the tomb of a holy Mahometan, near the margin of the sea, an Arab who resides there, furnishes tea, coffee, and brackish water, to gratify the thirsty traveller. Admonished by a small brick tower, he then quits the coast, to proceed to Rosetta, through a plain of shifting sand; passing several other towers of different dimensions, in the same direction, serving as guides into a moving plain. These also afford shelter to passengers, as oratories, or places of prayer for the Mahometans.

Every

Part of the Ruins of Canopus.

FIG. 2.

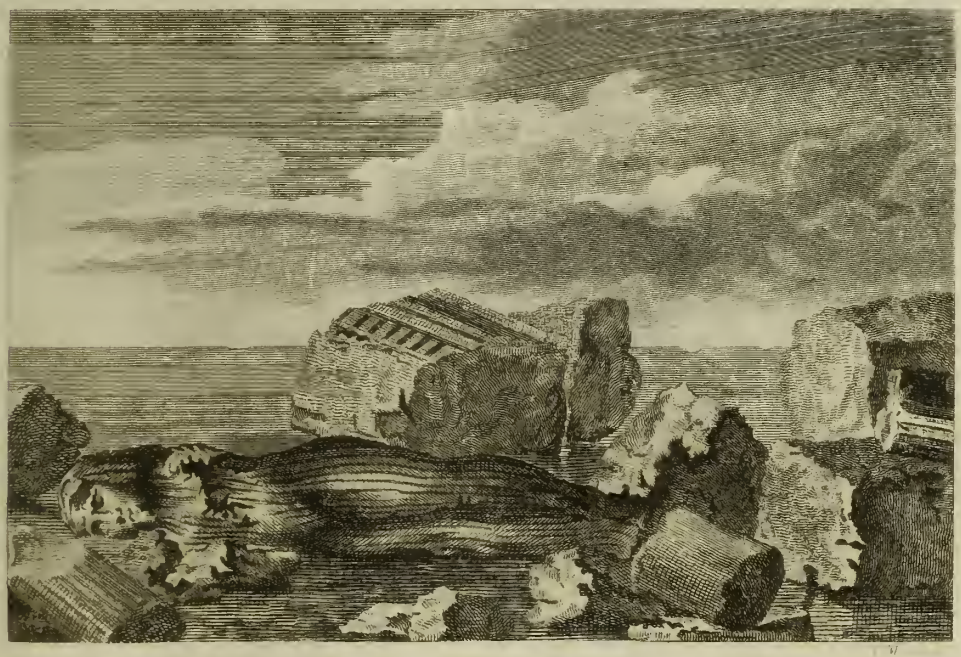


FIG. 1.

A fluted Statue at Aboukir.

Specimens of EGYPTIAN *Sculpture.*

Sonnini.

TENT of the BEDOUINS.

J. H. Wyon sc.

Every article of consumption is to be found in Rosetta, and travellers generally reside with the merchants of their respective nations. Rosetta is indeed, the emporium of trade between Cairo and Alexandria. It possesses some branches of commerce which are peculiar to itself; such as spun cotton dyed red, linen, dyes for silk, &c. Rice is exported from thence, but not in such considerable quantities as from Damietta.

The ox is the most valuable animal in Egypt, and renders more important services to man than any other domestic animal. It is well known in what estimation oxen were held in ancient Egypt: they furnished deities to that superstitious people, and their worship was universally diffused. Apis was the principal of this herd of Gods, and had his altars, his priests, and his oracles. No heifer was permitted to be slain; and to eat their flesh incurred the punishment of sacrilege*. The priesthood supported this doctrine. Funeral obsequies were frequently performed in honour of oxen, and the priesthood defended that enthusiasm in favour of animals so useful to a people, whose laws had frequently an allusion to some agricultural labours.

Egyptian oxen are still handsome, but probably they may have degenerated for want of due attention: they are of a dun colour, and their horns are small and short. Their flesh†, as might be expected of animals of hot regions, is less succulent and nutricious than that of France. The veal of Egypt is flabby, insipid, and very seldom eaten; a prohibition being still in force against it, and the Cophts follow their example from habit. The cows of Egypt sometimes produce twins at a birth, but this degree of fecundity, though perhaps less rare than in Europe, is by no means considered as an ordinary occurrence.

As the Egyptians have not the art of giving motion to their mills and hydraulic machines, by the proper application of wind and water, the strength of the ox is exercised for that purpose; every rice-mill requires forty or fifty of these animals, which greatly enhances the price of them; they are sometimes sold for so high a price as ten guineas each, at Damietta and Rosetta, where machinery of that kind is so abundant. These animals when harnessed have their head at liberty, as the yoke is so peculiarly constructed, that the business is effected by the exertion of the shoulders. To this method of yoking has been ascribed the thickness of their withers, which, in that particular, greatly exceed those of others: it is possible, however, that it is only a natural swell, in which case the animal may be considered as a species approaching the bison.

Domestic animals of all kinds are no where more familiarized than in Egypt, and other eastern countries. The horse, though high-spirited, is as gentle as the lamb: the buffalo, while he displays a ferocity of countenance, is as obedient as the ox, and quietly submits to the will of his rider or leader. This gentleness of character does not proceed from indolence, but the judicious conduct of the men of the country, who profit by their usefulness, and by their peculiar mode of treatment ensure the docility of their animals. These parts of the east have always been inhabited by wandering nations, now called Bedouin Arabs, who, possessing only their flocks, have no other care than to preserve them; they associate with themselves, and are so frequently travelling with them from place to place, that they require neither fold nor shackler. The dromedary, after having pastured at liberty the whole day, at night repairs to his master's tent, lying down before it, while it shelters the Bedouin and his family, his mare, a few goats, and some sheep.‡

In Rosetta, and its environs, multitudes of animals

* By the Hindoo law, at this day, the murder of a man or a calf, is the only crime which the Hindoos punish with death. *Mackintosh's Tr.* i, 312.

† M. Maillet, in his description of Egypt, speaking of the Egyptian oxen, says, they are animals of such exquisite beauty, that the pencil is incapable of representing it"—M. Sonnini, however, says, "I never yet met with any one ox which struck me either for its form or colours!"—*Maillet* adopts the same kind of language in speaking of their quality. "Their flesh," says he, "is admirable; it does not yield in quality to that of the oxen of Hungary, nor to any other whatever; nay, it has this farther excellence, that of being extremely nutritious."

On this assertion, M. Sonnini, adds the following remark, —"This meat, nevertheless, is far from having the flavour of the beef which we eat in France. The assertion of Maillett, false in the fact, is likewise so in the principle. In truth, it contradicts a general observation which every traveller has it in his power to ascertain, namely, that the flesh of the animals of very hot regions has neither the succulence nor the flavour of that of animals of the same species, fed in cold or temperate climates." *Sonnini's Tr.* I. 236.

‡ Among the animals domesticated by the Egyptians, is the ichneumon, or mangouste, anciently an object of worship, and held sacred by the people. Buffon was the first who accurately descsibed the mangouste, and dissipated many errors concerning the natural history of it. Sonnini examined the animal in its natural state, and relates many particulars concerning

animals are accumulated, seemingly designed by nature for the peculiar service of men. Dogs have been respected in all ages, by savage as well as civilized nations, excepting the Mahometans; who, by an absurd prejudice, founded on an absurd religion, consider them as unclean beasts, and dare not presume to touch them, under the penalty of becoming unclean themselves. How contradictory to the practice of the ancient Egyptians, who so highly venerated the dog, that they rendered him peculiar honours, as being the most faithful and intelligent of animals! *

It is astonishing, that in supporting a life of misery, these dogs should not be exposed to the effects of the hydrophobia †. "But this malady," says M. Sonnini, "rare in the northern parts of Turkey, is still more so in the southern provinces of that empire, and is totally unknown under the burning sky of Egypt."

The Egyptian dogs are a species of large greyhounds, which would be extremely beautiful if they were treated with less severity; but they lose the elegance of their form by encountering a variety of difficulties to support existence. The Bedouins, in all respects less superstitious than the Turks, have a breed of tall greyhounds to protect their tents; and their affection for their protectors is so great, that a man could hardly destroy one of these animals without forfeiting his own life.

Though they entertain so unjust an aversion to dogs, the Mussulmen have a great partiality for cats. Mahomet greatly respected them. It is related of him, that being called away on sudden and important business, he cut off the sleeve of his robe rather than disturb one of those animals that lay asleep on it. Hence a cat is beheld with pleasure in a mosque as the favourite of the prophet, and as the enemy of many noxious creatures; but if a dog should pollute any of their temples by entering them, he incurs instant death. Among the ancient Egyptians cats were highly venerated, and when any one of them died in a house, his death was solemnly lamented by the owner, who shaved his eye-brows as a token of his mourning. If a cat was accidentally killed, the aggressor was punished with death; and the animals, when dead, were embalmed in the sacred temples, and from thence conveyed solemnly to Bubastis, now called Basta, in lower Egypt, to be interred ‡.

Sonnini

cerning them. The mangouste might easily be domesticated, but the Egyptians at present never rear them, nor have they any certain information that their ancestors ever did: the domesticated ones mentioned by Bellonius and Prosper Alpinus, were probably a few preserved from motives of curiosity; for, though they destroy rats and mice, they over-balance their services by their avidity in destroying poultry, and feasting on their eggs. From their fondness of eggs, they frequently employ themselves in scratching up the sands, to discover those of the crocodile, and thus preventing the excessive propagation of that destructive creature; not by passing through its throat, and devouring its entrails, as many ancient and modern writers have erroneously stated. If mangoustes have been seen to spring furiously on little crocodiles *(an antipathy to the crocodile is, however, a real innate instinct in an animal of a totally different species, the thirse, or tortoise, of the Nile.)* when set before them, it was the effect of their appetite for reptiles in general, and not from their being commissioned by a particular law of nature to devour those amphibious animals. In Upper-Egypt, where crocodiles are numerous, mangoustes are seldom to be seen; but in Lower-Egypt, where crocodiles are hardly known, the mangoustes are abundantly plentiful, the soil being more humid and shaded, supplying them more liberally with their proper prey than the Upper Country.

* It is therefore astonishing, that few cities in the world contain so many dogs in proportion as those of Egypt; or at least manifest such apparent signs of their partiality to those emblems of fidelity, by permitting them to range in the street. But, with all this appearance of tenderness and mercy, the poor animals exist only on the food which chance procures them at the doors of houses, or which they scramble for among the receptacles of offal; always exposed to the blows of inhuman passengers, and sometimes liable to be butchered by the ferocious mob, they endeavour to render their best services to their ungrateful persecutors: they frequently pass the most unfrequented streets, anxious to avoid the possibility of contaminating them by touching their clothes; the Mussulman being at the same time equally careful to keep his garments out of the way. From their natural propensity to be beneficial to mankind, they are the terror of the depredators by night, spontaneously guarding the quays, the boats, and the interior of cities. It is singular, that these dogs never remove from the districts where they first drew their breath; united into distinct tribes, they are acquainted with their limits, and should any one venture beyond his boundary, he would be attacked by the whole cohort whose quarters he had invaded.

† M. Le Cointra, who resided in Egypt, declares, that, "in this country the hydrophobia never appeared; and that at Aleppo, where there is a prodigious multitude of dogs of different species roving about, abandoned to themselves, and without a master; that there, where those animals perish in great numbers, for want of water and food, and by the heat of the climate, the hydrophobia never was seen." *Mem. on the Means of curing the Hydrophobia, by M. de Matheis, inserted in the Bibliothe Physico Econom.* A. D. 1784. p. 216.

‡ The honours conferred on these animals were not merely the effects of the ignorance or caprice of the people: they were invented by the priests to procure respect for objects necessary to be preserved, as destroyers of rats and mice, which were abundant in that country, and destructive to the grain. Cats are encouraged in all the houses of Egypt; in those of the opulent they are indulged in the most superb apart-

Sonnini derived much pleasure and information from his various excursions in the environs of Rosetta, where the plains were decorated with a variety of plants, and the groves frequented by birds of the most beautiful plumage, whose melodious notes delighted every passenger. The date-trees being very numerous in that country, birds of various denominations perch on their long foliage, while others hop from branch to branch in the thick hedges of the inclosures. With the assistance of a fowling-piece, the author brought many of these aerial beings to the ground. One of these, the *houhou* of Egypt, Sonnini sent a description of to Buffon; and it appears in his work under that denomination.

The hahou, or Egyptian cuckoo, has short wings, though they are long in proportion to the body; they can neither soar, nor cross a small extent of space by a single flight, for if they cannot discover a bush or shrub to perch upon, they must inevitably fall to the ground; they are perfectly tame, and are not much alarmed by the approach of men: so far from being rapid in their motions, they can only exert themselves to a sufficient degree to enable them to catch the insects, on which they principally subsist. The houhou, though classed in the same genus with the cuckoo, is totally dissimilar in its habits to that bird: they usually go in pairs, which appear to be strongly attached to each other: they hatch their eggs and rear their young, with the same affectionate kindness which is displayed among the feathered inhabitants of European groves.

The lapwing is a common bird in Lower-Egypt; birds of this species, when winter commences, flock from colder climates to a warmer region, where they can procure a more plentiful supply of nourishment: The Nile, on its subsiding, leaving multitudes of insects for their support. These migrating lapwings are fat, tender, and well-tasted, but those which have not improved themselves by travelling, are said to possess no alluring qualities.

Turtle-doves are found here also in great abundance; but of these the birds of passage are preferred by the epicure, to those of the country. The former arrive in Egypt in autumn, and are numerous from the sea up to Cairo: they are of the common species, and very different from the native doves of the country. They abound in the interior of cities, as well as in the fields and gardens; but they are far from being shy, though they are more frequently heard than seen, as they delight in hiding themselves among the thick branches of the orange-tree.

The *turtle-dove of Egypt* is extremely beautiful; the upper part of the head and neck is of a light lint grey; the back and upper part of the wings are of the same colour, but display a more vivid tint; a half collar, black and narrow, appears on the upper part of the neck; the throat and inferior coverts of the tail are white; the feathers of the tail are of a light ash-colour, terminating with white; the iris of the eye is orange-coloured, the beak ashen; the tarsus and the toes are of a rose colour.

Turtle-doves, of whatever kind, are, however, spared by the Egyptians, who never eat them, but rather consider it as a breach of hospitality to destroy a harmless race, many of which visit their country in perfect confidence, and add to the general harmony of the grove. Even the farmer, who sees his fields plundered by whole flocks, suffers them to multiply in tranquillity; but this condescension was not imitated by Europeans. "On my first journey," says Sonnini, "I had the pleasure of seeing there *(at Cairo)* at the end of the month of August, a pair of ring-necked turtle-doves build their nest, on the shelf of a window in the consul's house. Habituated to the protection of men, and having nothing besides to dread from the intemperature of the atmosphere, these gentle birds employed very little art in this work; it was nothing but a few straws negligently laid across. The female deposited there on the night of the 28th an egg, which would probably have been followed by another. I took the utmost precaution that she should not be disturbed, but all was in vain; the nest, the eggs, were carried off, and with them the fruits of the love of that species of bird which best knows the feelings of it, and the satisfaction

apartments, and partake of the indolence and state of their luxurious masters. "What difference does it make," says Sonnini, "in the case of idolatrous religions, whether you worship a man or a cat, a woman or an onion? are they not all at an equal distance from the deity? Since men will be superstitious, is it not best that they should be usefully so? Happy the nations whose superstition tends towards the improvement of agriculture, and the furtherance of general good!"

I should have enjoyed in watching their progress, and in observing them during the period of incubation. A Turk, an Egyptian, would have had respect to these affecting operations of nature; an European annihilated them."

The little owl shot by Sonnini, in visiting a ruinous castle, was rather different in its plumage from the owls in Europe, but that difference did not absolutely constitute a distinct species.

Various sorts of wild ducks arrive annually in Lower Egypt, and assemble in the lakes near Rosetta and Damietta. An exclusive privilege of taking them is granted by government, and great quantities are sold in the markets; the ceremony of cutting their throats must, however, be first performed, as the Mahometans feed upon no animal which has not been bled.

The thrush arrives in this country about the same season, and remains there till the month of March; but while the wild-ducks flock to enliven the collections of distant waters, the thrush continues among human habitations, or seeks the balmy groves.

In the neighbourhood of Rosetta, beautiful little winged animals of different forms and colours are seen, fluttering amidst the shrubs, and eclipsing by their brilliancy the flowers which every where abound. Among these the dragon-fly exhibits a body of the finest purple; its wings are orange-coloured at the bottom, having also a spot of the same colour near the extremity. Another beautiful insect, less innocent than the dragon-fly, is a wasp, ten lines long; the front of the head is a beautiful yellow, and it has two large black eyes; with three spots, resembling eyes, triangularly placed on the crown of the head. The rings of the belly are elegantly variegated, with shining black, yellow, and gold colour. A hopping insect called the cricket *(grillus)* is also frequently seen, the colours of which are judiciously distributed; its length is fourteen lines, and its greatest breadth about three; the crown of the head is marked with a line composed of black and yellow; the large eyes are black and white; a small eye in the middle of the head is of an orange colour; the rest of the head is of a greenish grey; its wings are grey, tinged with yellow and blue, and its claws are black.

SECTION IV.

Inhabitants of Rosetta—Their Manners and Customs—Smoking Tobacco, and drinking Coffee much practised—Their Aversion to what is termed taking a Walk—Amusements at Coffee-Houses—An Egyptian Story—Pantomimic Courtship—Egyptian Ladies delight in large black Eyes and Eye-brows—and Red Nails.

ROSETTA has not, like Alexandria, any immediate communication with the sea, it does not therefore swarm with such a multitude of foreigners and adventurers, a circumstance of some importance to those who delight in a tranquil life. An European, however, is not secure from insults in Rosetta, but they are not expected to be so numerous, or of such magnitude as those which he may have to encounter at Alexandria, or with which he may be persecuted at Grand Cairo. The turk is usually contented by applying the epithet of *infidel* to an European; but the terms of *christian* and *dog* are so truly synonimous in Egypt, that they are often indiscriminately used, even when no insult is intended. Should an European appear in a populous quarter of the town without a Turkish habit, he would probably be saluted with hisses or sneers, and pursued with repeated shouts of Nouzrani! Nouzrani! The Jews also, though stationary inhabitants, are more intolerably treated than the Christians; but they patiently endure insults and revilings, if they are permitted to enjoy their insatiable thirst of gold. Habited in the oriental style, they are compelled to wear a head-dress, and to be shod in a peculiar manner; but they are chiefly distinguished by tufts of hair, which they must suffer to grow near the ear, on both sides of the face.

The merchants are principally Turks or Syrians, though a few of them come from the coast of Barbary; the degenerate descendants of the ancient Egyptians, called Copts, are numerous at Rosetta. Some Arabs also are resident in

that city; the first of which is one of the Mamelucs, who is honoured with the title of Aga*.

When the opulent and indolent Turk has satiated himself with the sweet warbling of the birds, and the balsamic breezes, undulating in the garden, he repairs to the coffee-house, a kind of smoking rendezvous, where only coffee is to be had, and a lighted coal, to preserve the delicious weed in a continued state of fumigation. Mats are spread for the company; and these places of resort are frequented by persons of all nations, who reside in Egypt:—a few words pass occasionally, but nothing like a conversation occurs. The Turk is cold and taciturn, regarding every other nation with disdain; and the African, though not equally fond of silence, chooses to follow his example. Dancing girls, buffoons, and extempore declaimers attend these places, to offer their services: a professed story-teller, also tenders his oratorical narratives, hoping to obtain a reward for his tiresome and insipid compositions. Some of these, however, are borrowed from Arabian writers, and are entitled to some praise.

A stranger in Rosetta† can hardly pass through a single street, without being invited to come into some house to drink coffee. This act of politeness is become so habitual, that it is frequently used by those who have not any coffee to give, and who would be much embarrassed if the invitation was accepted. The coffee used here, which is brought from Arabia, is excellent, and forty beans are allowed by connoisseurs for every cup.

Though the inhabitants of Rosetta are less barbarous than those of other parts of Egypt, they are equally addicted to revenge and perfidy, and harbour as much aversion to Europeans. They abandon themselves to the most detestable vices; but let an impenetrable curtain drop over scenes so shocking, and let us pass into the retreat‡ where beauty, deprived of homage and sensibility, withers

* Smoking tobacco, and drinking coffee, are much practised here, and in every part of Turkey: the pipe is perpetually in the mouth, at home, or abroad, on foot, or on horseback, and the tobacco-pouch is a constant attendant at the girdle; the tubes of the pipes, which are of an immoderate length, are formed of odoriferous wood. Sonnini brought home one made of the jasmine-tree, which is extremely beautiful in that country, the length of which was about six feet: the pipes of more common use are covered with silk, and ornamented with threads of gold. The poorer class, to whom smoking seems a necessary employment, make use of simple tubes of reed. The perfume of aloes, used with the tobacco, renders it perfectly mild, and the smoke inoffensive.

The tobacco of Egypt is of so mild a quality as not to provoke spitting, which is thought very indecent in that country. Such of the orientalists as are not required to labour, usually enjoy the coolness of their orchards, the perfume of their delicious gardens, or the prospect of a tranquil stream; but never walk, except when urged by business, or strongly stimulated by pleasure. They delight in the exercise of riding, but have no relish for what the Europeans call *taking a walk*. It extorts a smile from them, to behold any of the natives of those regions walking backwards and forwards in the open air, and repeatedly pursuing, and retreading the same monotonous steps:—Going forwards and backwards, without any apparent object, they consider as the height of folly, unless prescribed by a physician, for the cure of some particular disorder. The African Negroes, and the South American savages entertain the same idea of this practice; their vacant minds are never occupied by meditation, and consequently require no relief from a too intense application.

† The country in the neighbourhood of Rosetta is particularly beautiful. Mr. Browne speaks of it in the following terms:—"The eye is not indeed gratified with the romantic views, flowing lines, the mixture of plain and mountain, nor that universal verdure that is to be observed on the banks of the Rhine or the Danube. But his taste is poor who would reduce all kinds of picturesque beauty to one criterion. To me, after being wearied with the sandy dryness of the barren districts to the west, the vegetable soil of Rosetta, filled with every production necessary for the sustenance, or flattering to the luxury of man; the rice-fields covering the superficies with verdure, the orange groves exhaling aromatic odours, the date-trees formed into an umbrageous roof over the head:—shall I say the mosques and tombs, which, though wholly incompatible with the rules of architecture: yet grave and simple in the structure, are adapted to fill the mind with pleasing ideas; and, above all, the unruffled weight of the waters of the majestic Nile, reluctantly descending to the sea, where its own vast tide, after pervading and fertilizing so long a tract, is to be lost in the general mass;—these objects filled me with ideas, which, if not great or sublime, were certainly among the most soothing and tranquil that have ever affected my mind." *Brown's Trav. in Egypt.*

‡ While M. Sonnini resided at Cairo, he accidently surprised a young Frenchman, behind a lattice in the consul's house, making a variety of signs, apparently to a lady who resided on the opposite side of the canal at Cairo, and who answered by significant motions, though at the distance of above twenty yards. Sonnini being permitted to behold this curious conversation, soon became an adept in the art, which he at first saw with astonishment. The young man soon after being required to leave Cairo, took his last farewel of the lady; and Sonnini, being properly instructed, presented himself at the window, in the station of his absent instructor, and informed her, in the same pantomimic language, that he was his coutryman, and came to offer her the same homage. This proposal created some difficulties at first, which were removed by the energetic persuasion of her new lover, who grew weary of addressing his vows through the cross-bars of a window-blind, to a person whose beauty was imaginary. She promised to appear on the terrace, towards the evening. Sonnini, true to the hour appointed, saw a woman elegantly dressed, but her face was concealed by a veil, a circumstance which excited his vexation more than even the lattice of his window. He earnestly intreated her to remove the impertinent covering, and a black female who attended her, enforced her entreaties and exhortations to the same effect: but

withers and languishes under the power of a suspicious barbarian, tormented by his jealousy, and profaned by his polluted touch.

The wives of the Mamelukes and principal personages of Egypt are not Egyptian women, but natives of other eastern countries, particularly of Greece, where beauty is a regular and valuable article of commerce. They seldom appear abroad, and when they are granted that indulgence, a veil or mask conceals their faces, and preserves their natural charms from the ardent rays of the sun, as well as the ill effects of a saline air. The charms of these ladies are only preserved for the tyrant who holds them in captivity. No other man can enter the place where they are, or contrive to behold their faces: inevitable death awaits the stranger who should dare to attempt the former, or speak a word to them on meeting them out of the house. The ladies, however, are sometimes inclined to break some of the links of their galling chain, and they have been known to have made the first advances: but such intrigues are attended with the utmost danger; nor can their assignations be regarded, without a conscious fear of the most tragic consequences.

This class of women frequently visit each other, and are not very delicate or decent in their conversation. Without education or principle, and in the full enjoyment of idleness and abundance, every thing contributes to present sensual considerations; the tyranny of their husbands, the vivacity of their affections, and the benignity of the climate, all contribute to direct voluptuous ideas to their imaginations: among other frolics, they sometimes amuse themselves in changing clothes, and in mutually assuming each other's dress; a species of amusement sometimes introductory of others less innocent.

Not satisfied with their natural charms, they endeavour to heighten their beauty by the assistance of art. But the women of the lower order are destitute of that delicate colouring, with which the complexions of thesuperior class of wome n are animated: they have, like the men of the same country, a tawney skin, and wear the tatters of extreme poverty; few of them have any other clothing than a species of large tunic with wide sleeves, serving at once for a gown and a shift, open on both sides from the arm-pit to the knee: the women, as before observed, seldom concern themselves so long as their faces are not exposed to public view.

Though the opulent and idle women possess so many natural charms, they are no strangers to the arts of the toilette. The most remarkable *traits* of oriental beauty, are large black eyes; and in Egypt every method is taken to render them larger and blacker. Females, of every description, tinge their eye-brows and eye-lashes with black lead, called Alquifoux: the more opulent Egyptians employ the fumes of amber, or some other odoriferous substance for that purpose. With this they cover the eye-brows and eye-lids, and the eye-lashes are blackened with it, by means of a small reed or quill.

Another fashion, equally prevalent among Egyptian ladies, requires the hands and nails to be dyed red: and so universal is this custom, that should any person neglect, or refuse to adopt it, she would be accused of unpardonable indecorum; though it rather blemishes than decorates a beautiful hand, a dingy layer of an orange-coloured drug has an unpleasing effect on the whiteness of the palm. The present ladies of Egypt sometimes refine on the general practice. The soles of the feet, when not hardened by too much walking, is covered plentifully with the same colouring. They also paint their fingers, in a partial manner; and the men apply the henna to their beards, and anoint their heads with it, to strengthen the organs, and prevent the hair and beard from falling off. A remarkable singularity is, that the perfume which

but their united efforts were for some time useless: this was too great a favour to be immediately granted; as these ladies possess so singular a kind of modesty, or delicacy, that many of them would rather exhibit their whole naked persons, than uncover their faces. On the following day the solicitations of the European were eagerly renewed, when the officious negro-slave, guessing the feelings of her mistress, snatched away the veil, and discovered a beautiful young woman over whose countenance shame had diffused a very vivid colouring. From that moment their interviews were frequent and familiar. Sonnini was invited to the house, with solemn assurances of safety; and the lady further informed him, that her husband, an old Turkish merchant, would speedily undertake a long journey, when he might conveniently pass over to her house, and be privately admitted at the back door. But the serious consequences which might probably attend this compliance, presented a barrier which all her obliging advances, and assurances of safety could not prevail on him to surmount. Several evenings passed away in a contest between his prudence and a tender passion, in which the former was found the most invincible. At length, however, their interviews were observed by some vigilant Mahometans; and a musquet was discharged from some of the neighbouring terraces, the ball of which whizzed close to one of our traveller's ears, congratulating him on his discretion in abandoning the assignation at the lady's house.

the

the flowers of the henna exhales, ceases to be agreeable when any person smells to it very close.

The taste of men in the eastern countries is extremely different from that of Europeans, with respect to their women. Extreme corpulence, among them, is the greatest perfection of beauty: the ladies are therefore desirous to acquire some degree of superiority in this particular. It is but justice to add, that among all the nations of the earth, there are no women who pay a more rigid attention to cleanliness than these orientals, and no women upon earth can be more successful in their endeavours*.

SECT. V.

Natron—Journey to Aboukir—Ancient City of Canopis—Mutilated Remains—Sonnini visits the Governor, who receives him with great Solemnity—Tower of Canopus—Mosque of Abou Maandour—Remarkable Lizards.

IN Rosetta there are magazines of natron, and manufactures in which it is employed. This is a mineral alkali, found near the centre of a desert in Egypt, anciently known by the name of the desert of Nitria. It is not often found pure, being frequently united with earthy matter, marine salt, Glauber's salt, and a small portion of vitriolic tartar.

The natron has the same properties as the salt-wort, but in a higher degree: it is much used at Rosetta, in bleaching thread and cloth. One hundred pounds of common natron, with about seventy pounds of lime, are used in bleaching two hundred pounds of thread. The trade in natron is important. At Venice, this alkali, mixed with grey-stone, forms the excellent brown glasses of Murano. Natron is also used in dying, in preparing leather, in whitening linen, as leaven in pastry, in preserving meat, and in mixing with snuff, to give it a higher degree of pungency.

While Sonnini was in the neighbourhood of Rosetta, he visited the ruins of the ancient city of Canopus, now known by the name of *Aboukir*. Having passed through the sandy plain, westward of the city, he proceeded towards lake Maadie. On the road he passed through a little camp of Bedouin Arabs, of whom he purchased some unpleasant water; and crossing the lake in a wretched ferry boat, he quitted the road of Alexandria, and kept along the coast, till he arrived at Aboukir. It is now only a village, defended by a castle, erected upon the point of a cape, which projects into the sea. Beyond the cape, some shoals inclose a small harbour, at the front of the castle, where French frigates usually anchor when they cruise in these latitudes. Merchant ships also frequently seek an asylum there, when forced by tempestuous weather to quit the new and dangerous port of Alexandria†.

Our travellers repaired to the house of a Jew, named Mallum Yousef, at that time agent to the French consul-general in Egypt, by whom they were accommodated with pleasant and convenient apartments, in a very spacious house. The travellers had brought their own bread, as none is to be procured at Aboukir; and a frugal repast was provided by the Jew and his son, the wife performing the culinary part. Here Sonnini saw a pair of red partridges, and was informed that those birds frequently visited Aboukir, and were taken alive without much difficulty.

Having finished their repast, the travellers remounted the mules to visit their vestiges of the adjacent city of Canopis; which cover a large extent of ground, and still present many objects of admiration to the spectator: but, though much more estimable relics might be discovered under the surface, such researches are forbidden by an ignorant and superstitious multitude, who confine the idea of riches to gold alone, and cannot be induced to suppose that foreigners travel for any other purpose than that of hoping to discover some hidden

* M. Sonnini is next extremely particular in giving an account of female circumcision, which is more interesting to the anatomical, than the general reader.

† It was in this quarter that the glorious victory over the fleet of the French republic was obtained, by the intrepidity of Nelson.

pecuniary treasures, and not merely to explore the monuments of art or antiquity*.

On the morning after the arrival of our Europeans at Aboukir, Sonnini went to visit the governor, who professed the occupation of a barber. Apprized of his intention by the Jew, he received him in his best apparel, and with all the solemnity of a vizier, his head covered with a white shawl, and bearing a fan of feathers in his hand. After offering him his best services, he assured him that it was with regret he informed him that he was unable to present him with coffee, as the coffee-house was unfortunately shut up. He declared he was on the most intimate and friendly terms with the landlord, for he was not only his governor, but his barber. On Sonnini's withdrawing, the governor affected the same pomposity that he assumed on his ceremoneous entrance.

The castle of Aboukir is a place of no importance: a ditch, and a few small pieces of cannon, defend the fort. A light-house, poorly illuminated, gave no additional splendour to the place. Most of the male inhabitants of Aboukir are either fishermen or sailors: the place seems uninhabited during the day, the doors of the houses being shut.

On his return to Rosetta, Sonnini resolved to make an excursion, to take a more perfect view of the Boghass, or mouth of the Nile, so remarkable for shipwrecks and danger. He was accompanied in this expedition by the French consul, his drogman, and a French merchant, mounted upon asses. Stopping near an old castle, almost demolished, they found some Bedouin Arabs were encamped there: their tents were small and comfortless, and denoted the wretchedness of the persons they were intended to shelter. The women among these people did not conceal their faces, like the other nations who are settled in Egypt. Youth had rendered the youngest of them agreeable and blooming, and they seemed inclinable to be obliging†.

The Nile having lately overflowed, the grounds near the sea were slippery, miry, and intersected with ditches. Approaching the formidable sand-bank, or bar in the mouth of the river, against which the sea was breaking with violence; the masts of germes, which had been wrecked some days before, appeared in view; and some sailors were employed in disposing of the bodies of their friends or shipmates, which the agitated waters had cast upon the shore.

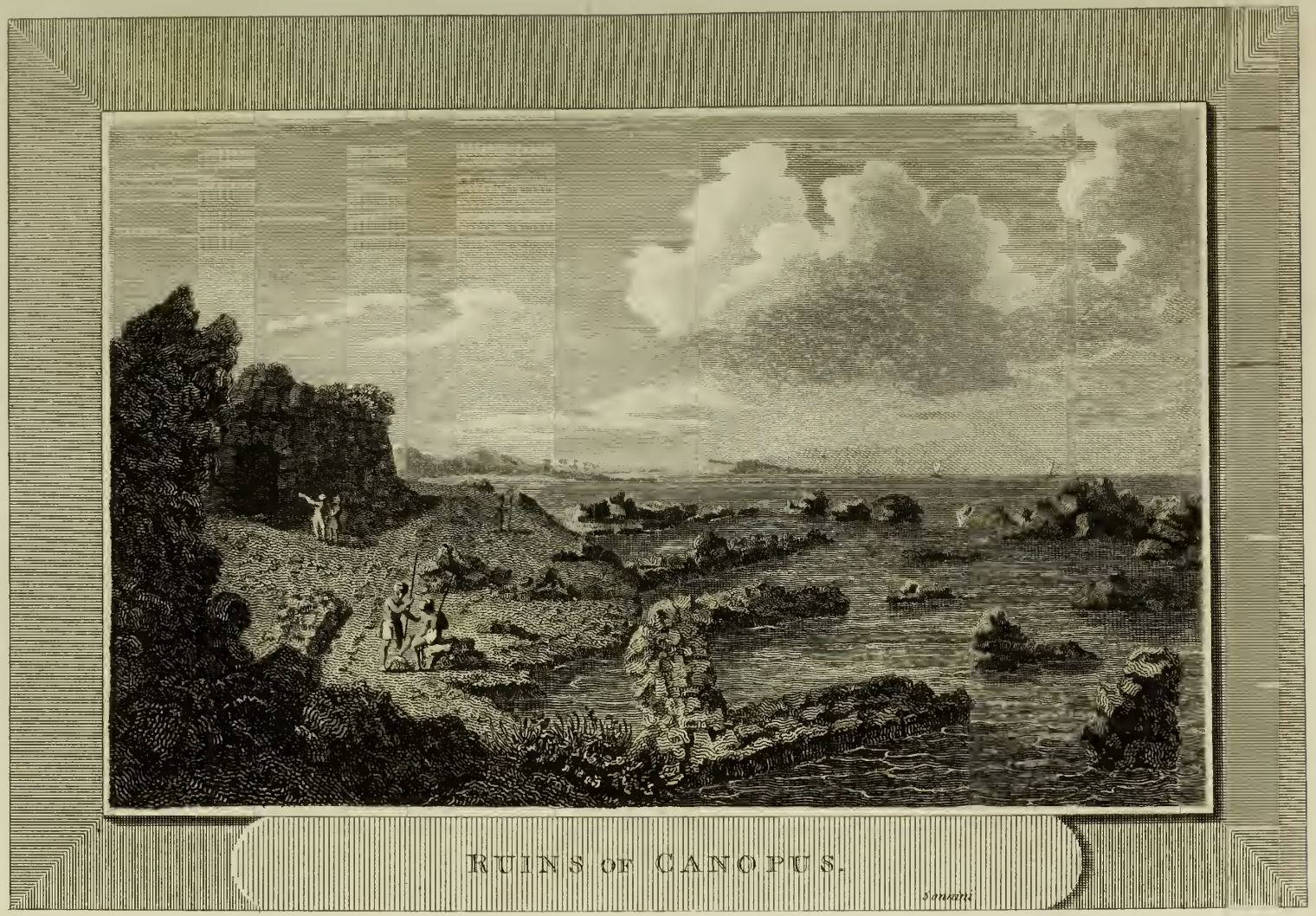
The following day our traveller went about three miles to the south of Rosetta, to see the tower of Canopus, from the mistaken supposition that the city of Rosetta occupied the place of ancient Canopus. This tower is of modern construction, though in a ruinous state: it contains an opening to a subterraneous passage, which is said to extend to Alexandria. From the top of the tower, a general view of the country is to be seen on every side. To the east, coolness and fertility

* Several pillars of the finest granite were perceived among the ruins, but they were mutilated and scattered upon the ground; their shafts, though extremely large, were fluted; and their capitals were of the most exquisite workmanship. Many avenues of subterraneous galleries, filled up with rubbish, are still to be perceived. Every article that presents itself, announces the former existence of most magnificent edifices. The natives of Aboukir called these majestic ruins, "The city of Pharaoh."

The sea has gained considerably on this part, as distant ruins are seen in the midst of the waves: near these antique remains, numerous blocks of granite are perceived, and a colossal statue of a woman, fluted its whole length; this is much mutilated, injured, and thrown from its pedestal: a large sphinx, also mutilated, appears near its side, the pedestal of which is richly covered with hieroglyphics. Such are the remains of the once celebrated Canopus, a city founded by the Greeks; where the magnificent temple of Serapis once stood, and where strangers, attracted by the luxurious pleasures of the city, as well as veneration for the God, flocked in great abundance. The surrounding country, on which nature had luxuriantly bestowed her favours, and the general affluence of the inhabitants, concurred to render it the most charming retreat, and the most enchanting residence: but luxury, pride, licentiousness, and a shameful depravity of manners arrived to such a height, as to ensure its destruction, and the downfal and desolation of Canopus consequently ensued. Like many other once flourishing cities, it has fallen a sacrifice to the vices of the people, and is now become a heap of ruins: instead of opulent and civilized inhabitants, a few ignorant barbarians are scattered on the almost deserted soil. The Nile no longer deigns to fertilize the land with its moisture; and desert tracts are substituted for verdant plains: Canopus no longer exists, but in the remembrance of a few individuals.

† Our traveller, and his companions were surrounded by these women, who petitioned for presents, and two or three parats were given them. The old women, perceiving that the travellers were more liberal to the young ones than to them, employed them as their solicitors, and were pleased to see the success of their application; especially when the young girls received from them some tender glances. While the merchant and his attendants were thus engaged in sprightly conversation with the young Arabs, Sonnini was encompassed by a group of old women, whose dark shrivelled faces were rendered additionally horrible by means of punctures traced upon their chins. With much difficulty, however, he at length escaped from the hideous and importunate circle.

display



RUINS OF CANOPUS.

Landseer sculp

A BOH MANDOUR

Mosque of ABOU-MANDOUR.

Sonnini

Warren sc.

display their treasures over the beautiful carpet of the Delta; to the north the sea, the source of wealth and misfortune, rolls its briny waves; and towards the west, sterility has fixed its everlasting abode in the Lybian deserts.

On the brink of the Nile, near the base of the tower, stands the mosque of Abou-Mandour, *(father of light)* a Mahometan saint, held in universal esteem for preserving Rosetta from being overwhelmed with sands: the saint's assistance is also frequently implored by the women, to enable them to become mothers; for which purpose they perform a nine days' devotion in the Schech. No mariners ever pass before the mosque without making an offering to the Schech, in order to procure the favour of the saint.

A turk who lived in the reign of Ali Bey, in digging near the situation of the tower, discovered some beautiful granite pillars, which were conveyed to Rosetta to be used in the construction of some buildings. Ali, informed of this discovery, pretended to believe that he had found gold there, and fined him so considerable a sum as to render him incapable to proceed in building, and perfectly cured him of making antiquarian researches. Some of these pillars remained a long time on the shores of the Nile, opposite the French house at Rosetta. They were supposed to have belonged to the ancient city of Metelis.

Opposite the mosque of Abou-Mandour, on the eastern bank of the Nile, stand a few houses, denominated Maadie, their situation facing the usual passage to the Delta. Beyond Maadie the village of Boussurath presents itself, formerly inhabited by robbers and pirates, till they were exterminated by Mehemet Bey. At a little distance from the mosque, on the western shore, stands Dgeddie, a considerable village, celebrated for the quantity and excellence of the grapes which its neighbourhood produces: though wine is not made in any part of Egypt, grapes are much cultivated; the leaves of the vine are also used to envelope balls of hashed meat, a dish much esteemed in Egypt; for this purpose the leaves, when young, are sold for a higher price than the grapes*.

Returning to Rosetta, M. Sonnini found a letter from the Jew drogman at Aboukir, informing him that the garrison had opposed the embarkation of the pyramid he had purchased. With much difficulty, indeed, he procured an order from the governor, that the pyramid should be allowed to depart. It was afterwards suggested, that this piece of antiquity was full of gold, on which occasion a long contest ensued; but when the Aga was convinced that the pyramid was merely a stone, he ordered it to be carried to Sonnini's temporary residence, demanding only a small present. On Sonnini's departure from Egypt, he was unable to take this curiosity with him, he therefore committed it to the care of the French consul at Rosetta.

An opinion prevails throughout Egypt, that Europeans have no other object in view in exploring the remains of antiquity, than to discover and procure the hidden treasures they contain. A Turk, who resided at Rosetta, had a very beautiful piece of granite, ornamented with hieroglyphics, at the door of his warehouse: M. Sonnini offered a valuable consideration for this granite, but the Turk would not pay the least attention to his proposal, alledging that his granite was full of gold. The man being poor, our traveller asked him why he did not break the stone, to procure the riches he seemed to have so much occasion for? the man replied, that such a step would be equally dangerous and wicked, *for his stone was a talisman.*

* Sonnini, while his draughtsman was taking a landscape of the surrounding scenery, passed his time in exploring the desert, a sandy region, the dust of which is so very fine, that the smallest insect leaves its track. Lizards are very common in this desert; they are of a small species, the largest not exceeding seven inches in length, and the medium size four or five. The upper part of the head is of a greenish yellow, speckled with blackish spots, the eyes are large, and the tongue is forked: the upper part of the body is variegated with green and yellow, and covered with small scales of various forms; they have five toes on every foot, those on the two hinder are longer than those of the fore-feet, and all are armed with nails. The tail, which is round, terminates in a point. To the beautiful scaly robe, these little reptiles add sprightliness and agility in their motions. Sonnini also saw a little serpent, shining with the most beautiful colours, but it crept suddenly into a hole, and concealed itself.

SECTION VI.

The Banana Tree—Custard Apple—Atlé—Buffalo—Water of the Nile—Climate—Inattention to Cleanliness—Diseases—Burial of the Dead—Disorders of the Eyes—Serpent Eaters—The Eel of the Nile—Nightingales—Falcons—Wild Beasts—The Thaleb—Sheep—Goats.

THE fruit of the Banana tree, which is a native of America, embellishes the gardens of Rosetta with its yellow hue during the three winter months; and the environs of Damietta are adorned with a profusion of the same annual exhibition. A few of these prospects may also be seen in Cairo, but they are not to be met with farther south; even at Cairo, the tree is so scarce, that a basket of its fruit, which is much admired for the agreeable acidity of its flavour, is considered as a very estimable present. Another fruit, from the same parent soil, is here called the sweet-sop, or custard apple, and is highly grateful to the taste and smell. It is covered with small papillary elevations, resembling those of a fir-cone; and, when ripe, displays the united colours of green and yellow. Its Arabic name is *keshta* (cream) from the whiteness of its soft pulp, which abounds with oblong kernels.

The common mallow is cultivated in these orchards, and is considered as a proper vegetable to boil with meat. The meluchia resembles the marsh-mallow, and affords a mucilage on boiling; its flowers are yellow, mixed with red; and the plant deserves cultivation merely as an ornament, without considering its great nutritive qualities.

The atlé *(tamarix orientalis)* seems peculiar to Egypt, and is to be found near every village. It attains the height and size of an oak, and is the only large tree in Egypt that furnishes timber or wood for fuel.

It is common to see a female buffalo tied by all her four legs, under the shade of an atlé, near a peasant's hut; she affords her keeper a quantity of good milk, which is manufactured into all kinds of butter and cheese. The buffalo was originally brought from Persia, though it is now more numerous than the ox, and equally domesticated; but it still retains a remnant of ferocity, like all half-civilized animals. The Egyptian buffaloes, however, are not so fierce as those of other countries, though they sometimes manifest a degree of wildness by indulging in occasional freaks. The sight of any thing red, which is said to enrage them elsewhere, makes no impression upon them in Egypt; many of the inhabitants, exclusive of the decoration of a red turban, wear a shawl of that colour about the neck and breast, without attracting the notice of these Egyptian animals.

The buffaloes of Egypt are of a blackish colour all over, except the tufts of hair on the forehead, and at the end of the tail, which are a yellowish white. They are neither yoked to the plough, nor employed in any other kind of labour. The females are reared to produce milk, the males to be slaughtered and eaten. The flesh is red, dry, and tough, and emits an unpleasant musky smell; but the Egyptians, coinciding with the opinion of one of their ancient physicians, pronounce it the most wholesome aliment next to the sheep. The hides of buffaloes form a considerable branch of commerce, and various articles are manufactered from their horns, which are striated transversely.

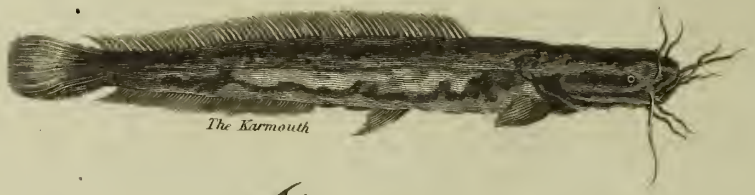
The buffalo delights so much in water, that he will sometimes continue in the Nile for the whole day; he swims with ease, and crosses that river with facility, however rapid its stream. The peasants frequently venture to cross the water on his back, but in that case they must hold firmly by the horns, for as the animal sinks deep into that element, the current would otherwise wash off its rider. The female seldom produces more than one calf at a time, though the exaggerations of credulity have multiplied them to three or four.

To the water of the Nile * miracles of fecundity have

* The comparative course of the Nile may be estimated at about two thousand British miles, thus nearly rivalling the longest Asiatic rivers. *Pink. Mod. Geog.*

The mouths of the Nile are thus particularized by Savary, in his travels through Egypt in 1777, 1778.—At Pelusium is situated the mouth of the Nile, which took its name from the city. Proceeding westward along the sea-shore, the traveller arrives at the Tanitic mouth, so called from a considerable city called Tanis, built on an island of the lake. The ruins of this city are said to be still remaining; but M. Savary

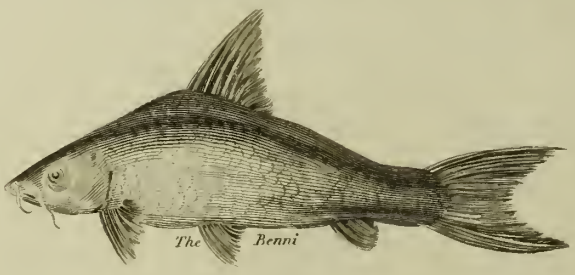
The Hersé



The Karmouth

The Sardine or Sprat

The Schilbi



The Benni

FISH OF THE NILE.

Sonnini

Milton sculp.

have been ascribed by the Egyptians; to become mothers, they affirm, women need only to drink of that river, and bathe * in it; and the sailors of Provence are so fully convinced of its prolific virtues, that when they touch at Egypt in their voyages to the Levant, they never omit filling a cask with it, to convey to their wives, as introductory to a numerous progeny. Many ancient and modern authors have, indeed, extolled the qualities of the water of the Nile; but the author of the Philosophic Researches concerning the Egyptians and Chinese, presumes to arraign the water of that river, the only beverage of that kind to be found in a country destitute of springs, except a nauseous kind of beer. He quotes Granger, Pocock, and Hasselquitz, and from their testimony discovers a multitude of diseases floating down the Nile †.

The climate of Egypt has been pronounced the source of many dangerous maladies, and especially the cause of the plague. So lately as 1773, a physician at Paris affirmed, that Egypt was the birth-place of the plague ‡. Dr. Samoilovitz, a Russian physician, asserted, about the same time, that the plague prevailed habitually in Asia, and more particularly in Egypt. The world was not undeceived on this subject, till Volney and Savary published accounts of their travels; and perhaps the mistaken notion may not yet be sufficiently exploded. It is certain, however, that the plague never originates in Egypt, but is conveyed thither from other countries. Sonnini is of opinion, that the climate rather resists than provokes the plague, as it did not make its appearance during the twelve years he travelled in that country, though no precautions were taken to guard against it. In 1780, a Turkish man of war, having the plague on board, anchored at Alexandria, when a man dropped down dead, who had been standing near a chest when it was opened; yet the crew walked about the city without exciting any alarm.

It is, indeed, matter of surprize, that the plague so seldom happens in Egypt, as the inhabitants neglect the slightest precautions against it; works contributing to the fertility of the soil, or the salubrity of the air, are demolished from mere caprice, and marshes are permitted to occupy the place of lakes; canals are inconsiderately filled up, and stagnant water is permitted to remain and disseminate a fetid effluvia, and to co-operate with the stench of dead carcases to infect the air.

No epidemical diseases prevail in Egypt, where foreigners are never attacked by those violent and inflammatory fevers so fatal in our West-India islands; nor are they tormented with those tedious intermittants, which are the harbingers of dropsy, and a variety of obstructions. "All the reasoning in the world," says Sonnini, "can be of no weight when opposed to facts; and let a man add dissertation to dissertation, as Mr. Pauw has done, to prove that Egypt contains the seeds of an infinite number of diseases, experience, the most clear of all demonstrations, will attest the purity and salubrity of its air §."

Greatly

vary had no opportunity of searching for them. After the Tanitic comes the Mendesian mouth, so named from the ancient city of Mendes, where Jupiter was worshipped in the form of a goat, with many shockingly indecent ceremonies. Next is the Phatmetic mouth, which leads to Damietta, and here commences the modern Delta, the coaſt of which, passing the Sebennitic mouth at Cape Bourlos, ends at the Bolbitic mouth, which leads to Rosetta. The Canopic mouth may be traced at Aboukir, farther to the west; and these are the seven mouths of the Nile, the theme of the ancient poets.

* Voyages de Paul Lucas II. 83.

† M. Sonnini, and his companions, during the whole of his residence in Egypt, drank this water, at every season, even when the inundation had rendered it thick, reddish, and disgusting to the eye; but no inconvenience was experienced from its use; and Europeans who have incessantly drank that water in Egypt for several years, ascribe to the use of it their enjoyment of perfect health. The inundation of the river begins at the summer solstice, and the Copts even pretend to fix the hour of the first signs of its rise, which are distinguished by a peculiar dew, known by the name of the *drop*.

The Egyptians have a method of purifying the Nile water, by putting bruised sweet almonds in a jar, and rubbing the edge of the jar with the same fruit. But though many idle tales have been propagated respecting the evils and maladies resulting from the drinking of Nile water, they are now deemed obsolete, even in Egypt; and Sonnini himself says, "I have seen the water of the Nile drawn and drank *at all times*, and *at all hours*, without any one seeming to apprehend the least danger from its use."

‡ Expériences pour parvenir à determiner la Nature de Venin pestilential, &c. by Mauduit, M. D. Journal de Physique, August 1773.

§ With respect to the burial of the dead, the practice of the ancient Egyptians, is, in some instances, imitated by their modern successors. With the art of embalming, indeed, they are now unacquainted; but the care with which they arrange the bodies of their deceased relatives, is, at least, a shadow of the ancient practice, as well as the effect of Mahometan precepts: immediately after the death of an

Greatly as they venerate the dead, the orientals would think themselves highly censurable for injuring the health of the living; their cemeteries are therefore large, solitary, separate enclosures, without the limits of any town or habitation, and the bodies are buried deeply in the earth; a delicate precaution, the source of which may be traced to the nicest feelings. The corpse is conveyed to the place of interment on a bier, covered with a cloth of any colour; a turban being placed on the head, which is carried foremost, to distinguish it from that of a christian. It is preceded by priests, reciting passages from the Koran, and followed by female mourners hired for the purpose. The Franks who died at Rosetta, were conveyed to Alexandria, and buried in the convent of St. George. A clergyman, an interpreter, and a Janissary attended; the procession was made by land, and the funerals were very expensive.

From this subject our traveller naturally turned his thoughts to the diseases which most commonly lead to death in Egypt; among these may be noticed putrid and inflammatory disorders, dysenteries, hernias, and particularly cutaneous diseases; which would be more prevalent, were they not checked by the frequent use of the bath. The leprosy, and that horrible complaint, the elephantiasis, sometimes make their appearance; but they are not thought very contagious, as individuals labouring under them are seldom seen. The venereal disease, which often produces the most terrible effects, is widely diffused in Egypt.

But ophthalmia, or inflammation of the eyes, is certainly the most prevalent of all disorders. Hasselquitz * informs us, that, "the vapours that exhale from the stagnant waters are the chief cause of these diseases of the eyes;" but the ancient Egyptians, who paid the utmost attention to their canals, were equally subject to this disease. It may perhaps be attributed to the excessive heat, the air being impregnated with nitrous particles, and the burning dust diffused through the air by the winds. Sonnini declares, he could not expose himself to the wind for an instant in the middle of the day at Cairo, without experiencing a very painful inflammation in the eyes; the pain often continued for several days, and he could not get rid of it without the application of cooling lotions. "Egypt," says Sonnini, "is the country of the one-eyed and blind."

Among the causes of blindness being so common at Cairo, and all large towns, we may mention the frequent watering of the streets and apartments: to temper the heat, a great quantity of water is sprinkled over them several times a-day; the ground being greatly heated, sends up, after these waterings, nitrous and fiery exhalations, which are offensive to the eyes. When Sonnini had once been cured of the ophthalmia, his eyes remained weak for some time after, and whenever the ground was watered, he felt pain in his eyes, and lost his sight for a few moments, if he looked down †.

The Turks who were present, seemed perfectly con-

Egyptian, the corpse is thoroughly washed, and shaved, and every aperture closely stopped with cotton; odoriferous waters are then poured over it, and the perfumes of Arabia are imbibed into all the pores. After a profusion of these attentions, the body is committed to the earth; and a small pillar of stone, terminated by a turban, is erected over the spot where the head reposes. The friends of the deceased, especially the women, repair every Friday to the melancholy spot, with devout enthusiasm, to renew their affectionate ejaculations. This manifestation of regard to the dead, is a sacred duty among all eastern nations, and ever punctually fulfilled.

* Travels in the Levant, French Translation, Part II. 117.

† The people anciently called Psylli, who supposed themselves possessed of the power of fascinating, commanding, and eating serpents, and of curing their bites, are still existing in Egypt. They are called *Saadis*, from the name of their founder, a saint highly venerated by the Egyptian Mussulmen. Saint Saadi was the nephew of a wealthy man in Syria, who sent him one-day into the wilderness to procure a bundle of sticks; when the young man had collected sufficient fuel to form a faggot, he was at a loss for a band to tie it up; but, after some consideration, he came to a resolution of knotting several serpents together to form a band, and with this living cord he carefully bound up his sticks. The uncle, charmed with the ingenuity of his nephew, said to him,—"Go about your business, for you know more than I do, and are adequate to the task of making your way in the world."—Taking the hint, the ingenious youth travelled over several countries, charming serpents by his supernatural skill, till he acquired a great number of disciples, to many of whom he communicated his art. His tomb, in the neighbourhood of Damascus, is full of serpents and other venomous creatures, among which any person may lie down and repose in perfect safety.

Such is the superstitious origin ascribed to this extraordinary sect, each individual of which ventures boldly to affirm, that he inherits the skill and properties of the founder. His festival is annually celebrated; each of the sect, during the procession, walking with a live serpent in his hand, which he gnaws, bites, and swallows as he passes, accompanied with the most horrid grimaces and contortions. M. Sonnini, however,

convinced of the reality of the religious frenzy; and, whether reality or imposture, the transports of madness could not have been better expressed; nor could a human being be exhibited in a more terrific situation. In Egypt the Saadis are very much respected, but among the Turks, who reside in the other parts of the Ottoman empire, they are absolutely held in derision.

Sonnini had an opportunity of conversing with a priest of this sect, who was apparently a man of candour, and who informed him, that, though several individuals of his fraternity had considerable power over the reptiles, he acknowledged that he himself was afraid of them: he also declared that they always kept serpents in their houses, having first extracted their teeth, to be ready when they were wanted. To cure a person who has been bitten, the Saadi mumbles a few words over the wound, scarifies the part with a razor, and, having first filled his mouth with lemon-juice, repeatedly sucks out the blood. These persons have also the reputation of curing *the serpent's breath*, a name given to inflammatory pustules sometimes acquired by persons sleeping in the open air, which they suppose to have been occasioned by the pestilential breath of a serpent.

Towards the end of December, the winter was particularly severe: the winds raged with impetuosity; and the Nile, lately confined within its banks, was frequently inflated by its violence: rain and thunder contributed their aid to support the solemnity of the storm. The agitation of the sea permitted hardly a vessel to quit the port: of two that ventured out, one was lost in the boghall, the other foundered at sea, and the whole of their crews perished. Amidst this tumult of nature, a groupe of porpoises sported in the mouth of the Nile, that formidable and frequent seat of death and danger.

At this season of the year, the eel of the Nile, which was regarded as sacred by the ancient Egyptians, is one of the most common fish: it probably was stamped by the priests with the seal of divinity, to prevent its becoming general food: some noxious effects were indeed supposed to have been produced from its use: Hence Mr. Pauw has termed it, *The pernicious eel of the Nile**. But it is now eaten without scruple by the Egyptians and Europeans: the Turks, however, reject it, imagining the eel engenders with the serpent. These fish are large and cheap, and Sonnini says, "They are as delicate eating as the eels in Europe;" though he admits, that they have some slight differences from European eels, and may constitute a distinct species, or at least a variety.

M. Sonnini bought a turtle which had been caught at the entrance of the Nile, by a bait fastened to a large hook. It was three feet and a half in length, and its greatest breadth two feet. The spot where it was taken belongs equally to the sea or the river; but the fishermen unanimously pronounced it a sea turtle, and said it was excellent food. Sonnini was entirely of their opinion when he had tasted it, after it had been dressed in its shell, in the West-India fashion.

The assertion that nightingales are not to be found in Africa is found to be erroneous, as they certainly pass the winter season in Lower Egypt. They make choice of the closest covert, and places not far distant from the water: Sonnini says he has met with several in different parts of the Delta; where they do not, however, display their art, or pour forth that melodious voice which furnishes the orchards and forests with delightful music; a hoarse sound, and a rattling in the throat, being substituted for their rapturous strains, and brilliant modulations. It has been often asserted, that the haunts to which nightingales retire in winter are unknown: but such ideas can no longer be entertained: they distribute themselves through Syria, and other Asiatic districts: many of them assemble among the willows, and olive-trees of Judea; and

however, could not see this festival, it being only celebrated in the summer, and it was winter when that gentleman was at Rosetta; but his curiosity being excited by the subject, he prevailed on one of the sect to indulge him with the exhibition of his art in his own apartment.

The priest brought in his bosom a large serpent, of a dusky green and copper colour, which he was continually handling; and, after having recited a prayer, presented it to the Saadi, who seized it with an anxious hand; the teeth of the reptile had been extracted, but it was very lively; and on its entwining itself round his arm, his countenance changed, his eyes rolled, and he uttered the most piercing cries; he then bit the serpent in the head, and tore off a morsel, which he instantly chewed and swallowed. On this his agitation became convulsive, his mouth foamed, and his countenance assumed the features of insanity, while he occasionally devoured fresh pieces of the animal. Three men endeavoured to hold him, but in vain; he dragged them round the room with violence. At length the priest took the serpent from him; but his convulsions and insanity did not immediately forsake him, he bit his hands, and his fury continued. The priest then clasped him in his arms, put his hand gently on his back, raised him from the ground, and recited some prayers, when his agitations gradually subsided, and he sunk into a state of complete lassitude.

* *Recherches Philos.* I. 154.

Sonnin

Sonnini has not only seen them in Egypt, but also in the islands of the Archipelago, in the winter season.

Many birds of prey, attracted by the smaller animals of the feathered race, visited the Delta at this season. One of these, which our traveller supposes to be of the falcon genus, has a very crooked beak, with a thick membrane covering its base, in which the nostrils are situated: the wings are somewhat longer than the tail; the legs are short, and almost covered with feathers on the fore-part, the talons sharp and crooked. Its whole length is eleven inches and a half, and the wings ten inches and a half. These falcons are often seen hovering over fields of rice-stubble, and along the banks of the Nile. They fly singly, and often keep stationary, supporting themselves on a particular spot with their eyes fixed to the ground; but when they discover any of the creatures they are accustomed to devour, they dart upon them with great rapidity.

Little owls, generally seen in pairs, frequently appear; they are not easily intimidated: the report of a musket near them will only drive them from one tree to another. Flocks of water fowls attend on the banks of the river. Among them is the patient and melancholy heron. The most generally diffused of all these aquatic birds is the spur-winged plover, which seems to merit the epithet of *polite;* its head and neck continually moving, as if in the act of making hasty bows. Hoopoes employ themselves perpetually on sandy spots, scratching industriously with their feet in pursuit of innumerable insects.

The Delta, forming an island, has been freed from wild beasts, and the cultivated plains of Rosetta are seldom disturbed by them. The thaleb, an animal resembling the Jackall, is frequently detected committing depredations on the poultry. Buffon, in his Supplement to the Natural History, gives him the name of chacal-adive; and the Egyptians call him the *father of Husseim* *. This is doubtless the animal which has been called the fox of Egypt, many of his features bearing a strong resemblance to those of the fox. His hair is of a bright fawn colour, and he has a beautiful tail, striped transversely with black and grey; and his movements and countenance indicate artifice and cunning: he travels slily by day, taking care to conceal himself near houses, to watch an opportunity of seizing poultry, or their eggs, which he carries off with great dexterity. He is much occupied in hunting birds, a practice in which he discovers great agility and cunning. He would be thought one of the most amiable of quadrupeds, were not some of his talents devoted too much to knavery†.

Rats and mice would over-run the land of Egypt, had they not so many enemies to encounter: the cat, the thaleb, the ichneumon, the stork, the vulture, &c. all prey upon them. To pass from noxious animals to those of singular utility, the sheep and goat are worthy of attention. The wool of the former constitutes a very important article of commerce, and their flesh is esteemed delicious: that of the ox is scarce, and that of the buffalo not very desirable.

The hair of the goat is short, and of a bright reddish colour; it has a slender body, small horns, and remarkably long ears. The flesh of those of Lower Egypt is thought very indifferent food. Ancient physicians prohibited goat-flesh in the Delta, though they permitted it in the Thebais; it might probably be thought unwholesome food in humid regions. The goats are large, and furnish abundance of milk; the people being supplied with that article by driving them through the streets, as milk is sometimes procured in London from cows and asses in their perambulations. Like the sheep, the goat brings forth twice a year: the goats have two, three, and sometimes four kids at a time.

* In Egypt the Jackall is called the father of Soliman, but Sonnini could never learn the origin of this extraordinary name. It is usual, however, among the Egyptians, when a person attracts their notice by any particular circumstance or feature, to give him the name of the father of such circumstance or feature. M. Sonnini himself, who sported a remarkably large nose, was frequently called *the father of the Nose:* and one of his companions, having very large whiskers, was called throughout the journey, *father of the Whiskers.* These jocular appellations are common in Africa. An European clerk at Cape Verde, who had lost an arm, was called by the Negroes, the *father of the Arm.*

† While Sonnini was one day meditating in a garden, a thaleb, hearing no noise, rushed suddenly out of the hedge near his feet: the animal, thus suddenly surprised, was for some moments motionless, and great perplexity was depicted on his countenance. Our traveller did not move, wishing to observe the animal's motions with the greatest attention. After the thaleb had alternately taken a few steps on one side, and on the other, seemingly too confused to decide upon any mode of retreating, and still turning his eyes on Sonnini, he slowly retired, alternately setting down his feet with singular precaution, placing his tail horizontally, that it might not drag upon the ground, or rustle among the plants, till he had removed himself from the presence of his supposed enemy. The fragments of a bird of prey, on which this gentleman had been feasting, were soon after found, on the other side of the hedge.

SECT.

SECTION VII.

Departure from Rosetta—Bedouins—Ceremony of an Agreement—Suspicions entertained of Sonnini—Jew Interpreter—Antelopes—Tomb of a Mussulman—Camp of Bedouins—Camels—Dromedaries—Camels resent Cruelty and Injustice—Troop of Bedouin Robbers—Inhabitants—Damonhour—Depravity of Manners—Desert of Lybia—Hares—Tigers—Lakes—Natron—Robbed.

SONNINI had remained two months at Rosetta, waiting for a termination of the disputes which had taken place between the Beys; but as the disturbances increased, the villages were making war on each other, and he declined all thoughts of penetrating Upper Egypt, which was filled with undisciplined soldiers, and a relentless banditti. Weary of a state of inactivity he, however, resolved to visit the lakes of Natron in the Lybian desert. Having obtained letters of protection from Ishmael Bey, he assumed the name of *Yousef*, (Joseph) and the character of a physician; a profession highly esteemed among all oriental nations: he also adorned himself with a red turban, and an oriental habit; and as his three companions were dressed in the Mameluke uniform, he was frequently taken for a *kiaschef*.

In the morning of the 29th of December, our traveller departed from Rosetta, mounted like his attendants, upon mules; a camel having been procured for the conveyance of their baggage; and they were attended by a janissary to Aboukir. They crossed the lake Maadie in a commodious boat. A little beyond the ancient mouth of the Nile, they met with a small encampment of the Bedouins, who offered them water, and pressingly invited them to pass the night within their tents. Sonnini engaged some of the Arabs to escort the camel, while he and his companions went on before, on their mules, and arrived at Aboukir about eight in the evening. They alighted at the house of the Jew interpreter, by whom they were very hospitably received. When the landlord was informed of the object of the intended journey, he exclaimed against the rashness of the enterprise, and represented it as dangerous in the extreme; and, when intreated to procure camels for the purpose of traversing the desert, he declared he would have nothing to do in such a business, not choosing to be an accomplice in effecting his destruction.

Enraged at having his plan of operation opposed, our author sternly replied, that no remonstrance should make him alter his resolution; the Jew therefore instantly gave up the point. Sonnini sent for a chief of Bedouin Arabs, who was encamped at a small distance from Aboukir, and an agreement was speedily concluded between the parties: the Arab was to provide a horse and four camels, to accompany the travellers for four palacas* a-day, without his being obliged to furnish sustenance either for the animals or the master. A notary was sent for, who drew up the agreement, in Arabic, which was signed and attested by every one present, as witnesses: the parties sitting on the ground in a circle. When the contract was regularly signed, each person, stretching out his hand, addressed a short prayer to God and the Prophet, and then took hold of his beard or chin, with his right hand†.

During these punctilios, the people of Aboukir, who had raised many difficulties respecting the pyramid on his first visit, assembled together, on hearing of Sonnini's return, and demanded restitution for the immense riches of which he had deprived them; as he was then hiring camels to carry off additional property from them. The tumult became general; the barber governor claimed his share of the ingots of gold our traveller had taken, and of those which he was preparing to carry away. Horrid imprecations were uttered against the Franks in general, and Sonnini in particular; the Jew trembled with terror; the janissary endeavoured to sooth the populace by a conciliatory speech. Though Sonnini and his friends pretended to treat the accusation with a contemptuous smile, they were apprehensive it might lead to more serious consequences. To remove suspicions, however, he kept the mules belonging to Rosetta, and hoping the tumult might subside during their absence, resolved to traverse the range of coast, which lies between Aboukir and Alexandria.

* A silver coin of Hungary worth about four shillings and seven pence.

† Though much ceremony attended the execution of this agreement, the Egyptians, have not, like some Europeans, imposed the duty of a *stamp* to render it perfectly legal.

At a small distance westward, they passed through the village of *Kafr Dsjami*, (or castle of the mosque). Between this little place and Alexandria, nothing but spacious houses were to be seen, standing singly, and inhabited by cultivators. They are constructed on modern principles, and surrounded by walls; fragments of granite, and other remains of ancient edifices, having been united in these buildings, which are denominated castles by the possessors. Enquiry was made in vain by our author, where the castle of the *Cæsars* was situated, which was mentioned by Danville, in his ancient geography: but no information could be procured. This castle was perhaps a dependency of the Taposiris, mentioned by Strabo; where Anthony repaired, to barter his glory for the charms of the beautiful and voluptuous Cleopatra.

When Sonnini returned to Aboukir, the disturbances rose to a greater height than before his departure: some impudent calumniators affirmed, that they had frequently seen him arrive in the neighbourhood by night, load his beasts with a quantity of gold, and instantly depart. This fabrication enflamed the fury of the people to such a degree, that they came to a resolution first to permit him to load his camels with the riches, and then to murder him and his associates, that they might recover their stolen treasure. On the following morning the Bedouins brought the camels, when they were immediately surrounded by the crowd; but seeing that Sonnini was not afraid of them, and observing that the camels took away nothing but men, and the panniers which the travellers had brought with them, they permitted them quietly to depart, bestowing only a few harsh menaces, which were totally disregarded.

Having taken leave of the Jew, who still insisted on the propriety of his remonstrances, he again requested he would relinquish his design. Our author again thanked him for his anxiety, the janissary resumed his road to Rosetta, and the travellers directed their course to the South-east, where they crossed a sandy and uninhabited plain, and observed a numerous herd of antelopes: here they found the tomb of a mussulman saint, which is visited by the pious travellers of Egypt, for the purpose of devotion. Our author entered this solemn abode without ceremony, with his Bedouin sheik named Hussein. Here he perceived a piece of elegant white marble, on which a Greek inscription was engraved; and expressing a wish to become possessed of it, Hussein took the liberty of taking it from its place, and sold it to him. This inscription signified, " Eutoltus, Governor of the Nineteenth, in honour of the Egyptian Jupiter. This has at its foundation ten cubits, its perpendicular elevation is forty cubits, the height of its sides is a hundred cubits. In honour of *Alexander*, of his *army*, and of the Egyptian *Jupiter*." Sonnini expresses a doubt with regard to the precise meaning of this last paragraph, and asks the following question—" Is this Alexander Severus, or Alexander the Great?" And immediately adds, " The investigation of this question, and of two others, which I put to myself on reading the inscription over again, would form the subject of an important dissertation, which my present occupations will not allow me to undertake."

It seems, however, that neither this curiosity, nor the pyramid of Aboukir, was ever conveyed to France. At five in the afternoon the travellers arrived at Hussein's camp, after a journey of about seven leagues from Aboukir. The schech's own tent was prepared for Sonnini's reception, and every animal driven out of it except one young ox; it having been previously spread with carpets, manufactured by the women; and a few faggots, covered with the same kind of carpets, answered the purpose of cushions, Hussein's tent was distinguished from the rest by a large plume of black ostrich feathers, placed on the summit.

All the tents of the Bedouins are formed alike, and only differ in the size. Arabs of the most itinerant occupations have the smallest, as they are more conveniently removed from place to place; they are low, of much greater length than breadth, and entirely open on one side: as north winds frequently prevail in this country, the south-end is generally left open: they are constructed of a stuff fabricated from camel's hair, and the Bedouins usually encamp in places destitute of trees*.

Sometimes

* The camp was situated about a hundred paces from the canal of Alexandria; the water which was conducted through the lands by the labour of the Bedouins, diffused fertility over an extensive tract, which furnished pasture for horses, camels, sheep, and oxen. All the camels of Egypt are of the dromedary species, having only one bunch on the back: of these there are two kinds; one, more particularly denominated the *camel*, is the most common, the largest, the strongest, and most usually employed in carrying burthens: the other, which is smaller and swifter, is called the *dromedary* by Europeans

Sometimes the dromedaries, when they experience excessive severity from their riders, stop short, and attempt to bite them, remonstrating against their conduct in the accents of rage. On these occasions the rider must instantly alight, or he would infallibly be torn to pieces: nor must he attempt to strike the creature, as that would irritate his fury; patience and soothing language, accompanied with a gentle patting with the hand, is one of the best methods of appeasing him. The pace of the dromedary is a very long trot, at which time he carries his head high, and his tail erect. The rider, in thus crossing the deserts, travels from fifty to eighty leagues a-day: Sonnini saw a Bedouin at Cairo, who had travelled from that city to Mecca in five days, though the distance is greater than four hundred leagues. This mode of travelling is fatiguing to an European, from the motion of the animal, and the rays of a scorching sun; but if he does not wish to proceed hastily, or if he accompanies a caravan, a litter may be fixed on a camel of burden, in which he is more at ease, and may even take his repose*.

The Hebrews are not permitted to eat the flesh of the camel, but the Arabs and the Egyptians consider it as a wholesome and delicious food, though it is not eaten by Jews and Christians: the Levitical law forbids it to the former, and the latter seldom desire it, declaring it to be very hard and dry. The number of camels kept by the present inhabitants of Egypt, are bred and sold to them by the Arabs. Camel's hair is an important article of commerce; of which also the tents and carpets of the Arabs are composed. The milk of the females is a salutary aliment. The dung of these animals mixed with chopped straw, and dried in the sun, is used for fuel, where wood is difficult to be procured. From the same substance sal ammoniac is obtained.

Sonnini had hardly been an hour at Houssein's camp, when a general alarm was spread, by the sight of a hostile troop of Bedouins. Every individual was in motion; the women shrieked, the men had recourse to their arms, and promiscuously on foot and horseback, set out in pursuit of these robbers. In this confusion, our traveller, and his companions, remained with the aged men and the women to guard the camp. Tranquillity being speedily restored, a live sheep was brought to Sonnini, to be killed for the entertainment of him and his friends in the evening; but it having been observed that he was desirous of sparing the poor animal's life, Houssein's wives presented them with delicious milk and cakes, and urged them continually to feast on the innocent but simple banquet.

The manners of these inhabitants are pure and simple: the Bedouin women are not afraid to exhibit their faces uncovered, or to converse with that natural ease and gaiety which is the general companion of virtue. When young, they are not destitute of beauty, though they are of a tawny hue; but European eyes are not instantly familiarized to the indelible black compartments, impressed on the lower part of their faces with a needle and black dye †. The men among the Bedouins are generally handsome: passing a simple, uniform life, they suffer no injuries from excess, and frequently attain longevity. There is, however, an inferior race

ropeans. A third species is well known among the Bedouins, that are shorter and rounder, and their hair which is thicker and longer, is of a sallow colour, inclining to brown. When nature covered the soil of these burning regions with deserts, she gave man the camel to traverse them; an animal calculated to endure the extremes of hunger, thirst, and labour.

Added to these excellent qualities, the animal possesses a great degree of intellect and instinct, and is so susceptible of injustice or barbarous treatment, that should any one strike him without a cause, he will never forget the insult, and is sure to embrace the earliest opportunity of gratifying his vengeance; and in their paroxysms of rage, some of these animals have been known to seize a man with their teeth, throw him furiously on the ground, and trample on him. But having once gratified their resentment, they no longer retain any rancour against the person who has injured them.

* It has been asserted that camels, horses, asses, and mules, have an aversion to each other; it is certain, however, that all these animals, especially in Turkey and Egypt, live and travel together: an ass is always placed at the head of a file of camels, as the leader, the first camel being fastened to the ass, and regularly following his steps. Though it has already been observed that camels must not be beaten improperly, the camel-drivers have a stick, and the riders a leathern thong, which they use as occasion may require. Some are said to urge them on by singing and whistling; but it may not be improper to observe that the Bedouins never practice whistling, it being a species of wind music which they detest.

† This ornament is common to many African nations; the Maltese make similar impressions on different parts of their bodies. French sailors get themselves marked at Malta by men professing the art of tracing devotional figures on the arms and hands. One of Sonnini's attendants, when he was at Malta, had the representation of a crucifix marked on his arm, extending from the wrist to the elbow. His master knew nothing of this circumstance till they arrived at Cairo, when it was too late to dismiss him, which he would otherwise have done, a crucifix being rather a dangerous symbol in a country where Mahometan bigotry is carried to the highest pitch.

of

of Bedouins, always wandering, who drag through a wretched life of misery and plunder, whose figures are a libel upon the human character, and have not a single trait of the beauty of the original stock.

Sonnini continued the whole night in Hussein's tent, in company with the young ox, but the myriads of fleas which tormented him, prevented his taking any rest. Attracted by the animals and the fires in the tent, the ground and the carpets were covered with them; but the Bedouins had been so long habituated to such company, that they were not discomposed by their hunger and activity.

After expressing our acknowledgments to the hospitable Arabs, by presenting a few trifling presents, the travellers set out for the desert on the first of January, 1778, and proceeded in a south-easterly direction along the canal of Alexandria. Some small tracts were cultivated, but the rest of that part of the country was literally a plain of sand. The opposite bank presented a more cheerful appearance, being pleasantly enlivened by a long line of villages. M. Sonnini going forward on horseback, arrived at the village of Bersick before his companions, near which a party of Bedouins of the same tribe with Hussein were encamped. The Sheick, without knowing who he was, conducted him to his tent; and, being informed he was a Frenchman, he was surrounded by a crowd of Bedouins, who gazed at him, and examined him. The women were equally desirous of seeing him, but they accompanied their curiosity with presents. At length the arrival of his party liberated him from his friendly, though troublesome, companions.

The parties then proceeded over fertile fields to the separate villages, which bear collectively the denomination of Sentaw. Here he presented a letter from Ishmael Bey to the Sheich of the village, who knew the impression of the seal, though he was incapable of perusing its contents. Continuing their journey, they crossed the plains which were covered with beans in full bloom, and perfumed the air with their aromatic scent. This plant, which was an abomination to the ancient Egyptians, is now cultivated in vast fields, and constitutes one of the most common articles of food for the sheep and beasts of burden.

Towards the evening the travellers arrived at Guebil, a villiage seated on the western bank of the canal of Alexandria, and, like all the others which Sonnini had seen, built of mud. A very fine figure was said to be contained in a mosque here, but, on being permitted to see and examine it, nothing more than half a lion's head was seen enclosed in the wall of the temple. Opposite Guebil they crossed the canal of Alexander, without wetting their feet, and entered the province of Bahire; proceeding through fields, they reached Damonhour by ten in the morning.

Sonnini received a letter from M. Forneti, informing him that the roads were said to be very unsafe, and entreating him to abandon his design; these and other alarming reports had also reached Damonhour before our traveller's arrival; nor could the people be prevailed on to give credit to the idle tales respecting the motives of his journey, imagining that he had the power by magic to attract treasures to the surface of the earth, however deep they might be buried. These rumours made a considerable impression on the mind of Sheich Hussein, who now also began to start difficulties respecting the continuation of the journey; and seemed no longer inclined to fulfil the conditions of his agreement so ceremoniously executed at Aboukir. Sonnini, unwilling to let the Sheich suppose that he was necessary to him, immediately dismissed him; the Arab, however, quickly repented, and solicited to be re-engaged. Our author, after making a few observations, renewed the former agreement, and Hussein's conduct was less exceptionable in future.

The city of Damonhour is large, but indifferently built, as most of the houses are constructed of earth or bad bricks. It is the residence of the Bey and his Kiaschef; the former was with the army, and the latter was in pursuit of some Bedouins, who were pillaging in the neighbourhood. Damonhour is rendered important by its trade in cotton, as it employs the greater part of the inhabitants, who are remarkable for their depravity of manners; a great number of courtezans infest the place, who signify their profession by their uncovered faces, and their indelicate behaviour. They assemble near the principal coffee-houses, by the side of which they have little tents, whither they retire with their captives. "Among these girls," says M. Sonnini, "were some very pretty ones; and all of them knew how to employ the same means of seduction as are practised in our great cities." The only

piece of antiquity discovered at Damanhour, was a small bronze idol, pierced with holes.

Sonnini and his party left that city on the 4th, and proceeded on their journey towards the desert. Directing their course southward, they reached the village of Graguess, within sight of which appears the tomb of a Mahometan saint. From Graguess they proceeded to Dentshall, a name which signifies a *departed jar*; a story is related by the peasants of this place, that their ancestors having found on this spot, a jar filled with gold, deferred the division of the treasure till the following day; but neither gold nor jar was then to be found: from this circumstance, whether true or false, the village derived its name. Passing two other villages, one of which was in ruins, the travellers proceeded south by east, and arrived at Nagrasch in the evening.

On their arrival, the inhabitants precipitately shut their doors, supposing them either to be the kiachef's people, or Bedouins come to plunder them. At length, however, they were admitted; but as the inhabitants were continually in fear of an attack from some other villages with whom they were at war, all ideas of repose were banished, and hardly an hour passed without imaginary alarms from the terror and timidity of the women.

At eight in the morning they resumed their journey, when, perceiving three Bedouins, Sonnini galloped towards them; but Hussein requested him not to molest them, as they were his friends, though he acknowledged they were robbers. A Mameluke officer now appeared, who, supposing Sonnini to be a Turk, saluted him with *salam alicum*, and turned his horse aside to make way for him. They soon arrived at Biban, a town in which a Kiachef resides, where every Monday a market is held for camels and other cattle. Proceeding to Honeze, they intended to have reposed there during the night, but the inhabitants being of a different opinion, retreated, and every door was shut; the travellers, with their most earnest solicitations, accompanied with menaces, could only procure a little shelter.

The districts through which our travellers had passed, were rendered by their fertility an object of choice to the man desirous of abundance, while they were an interesting spectacle to the contemplative beholder; but the village of Honeze marked the line of separation between the most brilliant vegetation, and the most horrible sterility*.

Hares are numerous in the Egyptian deserts: exposed only to the pursuit of carnivorous beasts and birds of prey, they are secure from their most cruel enemy. They are sometimes hunted, indeed, in the neighbourhood of Cairo, by sporting Europeans; but they have no other inducement to be afraid of man, as their flesh is prohibited to the Mussulmen and Jews, and the Copts refrain from it by choice. The climate occasions a difference in the fur of Egyptian hares, as they are nearly grey. They are smaller than those of Europe, and less palatable; and this difference of taste has perhaps occasioned them to be considered unwholesome, and caused their flesh to be rejected as an article of food.

Our travellers having directed their course southwest all the day, they halted in the evening, and passed the night in the desert. After midnight a copious dew wetted them so thoroughly, that they suffered greatly from the cold; at five they re-commenced their march; and as soon as the mist was dispersed, herds of oxen and wild antelopes were seen on every side, exhibiting moving scenes, which made the desert less terrific. Sonnini imagines, from his different observations on the wild oxen of Egypt, that they are a particular species, nearly allied to the Zebu, if not the same.

Antelopes appear in numerous herds, and are as shy as the wild oxen; they are unequalled for lightness and celerity, and their eyes are con-

* In the morning of the 6th of January they entered on the immense desert of Lybia, the abode of dearth and drought; where no path appears to guide the traveller's steps; where the impressions of footsteps are erased almost as soon as made, and men are sometimes swallowed up in the waves of sand, agitated by the impetuous winds. Sonnini and his associates imperceptibly ascended for about eight or nine miles, over a thick bed of moving sand. They next arrived on plains, covered with small stones, and as they gradually found more elevated lands, the sand was less abundant in proportion, and at length was lost on the summit of the hills, where the stratum became solid, and interspersed with coloured pebbles. All the substances which now appeared were only the appendages to a scene of horror.

In these wild and rugged places, not a tree or plant is to be seen; in the less elevated parts a few meagre shrubs make their solitary appearance, and sometimes unite in places more favoured, forming pitiful brakes, where hares find scanty food and covert, and where other wild animals may make a momentary stay when they cannot reach a more comfortable retreat.

sidered in the east as the standard of perfection: their legs are long, slender, and tendinous, and so brittle, that it is generally necessary to cripple them before they can be taken. The Arabs on horseback, however, overtake these swift-footed animals, and throw a stick at them, by which their legs are generally broken or entangled.

But the most dangerous enemy of this elegant animal is the tiger, under which general name is comprehended the panther, the leopard, the ounce, &c. The whole genus being known in Egypt by the Arabic name *mémoura*. These animals, roaming over the burning sands, ferocious with hunger, and parched with the thirst of blood, surprize the wild oxen and the innocent and timid antelopes.

Ostriches are plentiful in the deserts, the hunting of which calls forth all the address of the Arab, and the rapidity of his horse. With greyhounds the chase is sometimes sooner concluded: the Arabs frequently watch behind the bushes, to catch an opportunity of firing at those that may happen to approach: their flesh is not eaten, but their fat is used in cookery, and plumes are made of their feathers: their eggs are eaten, one of which is thought a sufficient meal for any man; and when suspended from the roof, the mosques and churches in Egypt are usually ornamented with them.

Some wild boars inhabit this desert, but they are generally solitary, though they sometimes assemble in herds near the lakes of Natron. Our travellers saw two of them during their excursion, and unsuccessfully shot at one of them. As these animals are held in abhorrence by the Egyptians, Sonnini could not procure one; but he supposes it to be the same with that described by Buffon, under the name of the African wild-boar. The travellers had now arrived at the summit of a chain of hills, extending to the north north-west; at three or four leagues distance was another chain, parallel to the first; forming between them a deep valley, the sides of which are first perpendicular and steep rocks, and then gentle declivities of fine loose sand. In the bottom of this valley the lakes of Natron appear, but their extent cannot possibly be ascertained, as they vary according to the seasons. When there is most water they are united, and form one of greater length than breadth, which occupies a space of several leagues; at other times they are merely ponds of a very moderate extent *.

Near the lake stands a small house on the declivity of a hill, where the Copts say a saint was born, whom they name Maximus or Maximinus of the Roman legends. Sonnini and his companions having traversed the borders of the lakes, they continued their course south-west, and arrived at a Coptic convent called *Zadi el Baramou*, where a few monks reside; its appearance was horrible and forbidding. Not a tree or a shrub was planted in its vicinity, nor any apparent entrance provided for the admittance of human beings.

The company pausing at some distance, Hussein advanced before to ask admission: Sonnini was behind him, and the rest at a greater distance. Instantly a troop of Bedouins issued from behind the walls, which being observed by Sonnini, he galloped back and re-joined his companions, who had also discovered their danger, and were drawn up in a close body. M. Sonnini, leaping off his horse, exhorted his companions to defend themselves. But they were only six in number, and from the two Egyptians little could be expected; the draughtsman was hardly capable of firing a gun. The Arabs, amounting to about a hundred, came galloping towards them; but suddenly stopping when at the distance of a hundred paces, desired the travellers not to fire. Sonnini commanded them to keep their distance, but after remaining some time, in seeming consultation, they separated into four bands, three of which immediately stationed themselves on the flanks, and in the rear of the travellers. This manœuvre disconcerted the courageous few, as it would have been the height of insanity to attempt resistance. Sonnini threw down his gun in vexation, and the banditti robbed him and his followers of all their property. They left Sonnini his under vest and his breeches, but stripped his companions to their shirts: he was, however, cruelly deprived of his turban, which caused his naked head to be exposed to the insufferable heat of the sun. About twenty more Arabs then advanced from a concealed retreat, to claim their respective shares of

* On the retreat of the waters of the lakes, a sediment is left that soon becomes hardened and crystallized by the sun: this is the Natron, which is disengaged from the ground with iron instruments; it is chiefly collected in August, but is found in small quantities throughout the year; it is afterwards conveyed on the Nile to Cairo and Rosetta. About twelve hundred and fifty tons are annually collected. The water of the lakes is exceedingly diuretic.

the

the booty: but some considerable altercations happened among them before they could divide the spoil to their general satisfaction.

After contemplating this disastrous scene, our traveller proceeded towards the monastery, in search of Hussein who had repaired thither: he was followed by the captain of the robbers, who without ceremony conducted him back into the midst of his troops. Sonnini now naturally concluded, that the banditti had resolved either to take away the rest of his clothes, or prevent a discovery of their felony by murdering him; but, to his utter astonishment, the chief who had been so active in plundering and stripping him, was now as earnestly engaged in dressing him with those very garments he had forcibly deprived him of, and politely returned him his arms and purse: the other Bedouins performed the same kind office to his companions, who were equally amazed at the conclusion of this terrifying adventure.

This wonderful change of the scene was in consequence of the spirited conduct of Hussein, who, on his arrival at the walls of the convent, was surprised by some Arabs, who meant to detain him while the others were committing the robbery: they had seized his arms; but Hussein, after some remonstrances, obtained permission to mount a horse behind one of the Bedouins; and being conveyed to the place where they had posted themselves, he thus pathetically addressed them.—"Arabs, you have stripped a man who relied upon my protection, and for whose safety I have pledged my head; a man with whom I have eaten, who has reposed under my tent, and become my brother. Never can I revisit the camp, or cherish my wife and endearing infants.—Arabs, take away my life, or restore whatever was the property of my brother."

This energetic harangue, accompanied with expressive gestures, and an intrepid countenance, made some impression on the barbarians: but, without waiting for a reply, Hussein snatched his musquet from a person who held it, and, pointing it to the chief, threatened instantly to shoot him if he met with a refusal, resolving rather to draw their vengeance on his own head, than live under the stigma of his friend's misfortune. Hussein was known by the Arabs to be a man of great resolution, and that he would not hesitate much about carrying his menaces into execution: the chief therefore readily consented to restore the property of Sonnini and his companions, which was rigidly demanded, and as faithfully performed.

It was not enough for these robbers to appear just, they were also determined to be polite: the black chief now brought his horse, and insisted on Sonnini's riding on it to the convent, while he attended him on foot; the other Bedouins were equally complaisant to his fellow travellers. On their arrival at the walls of the convent, some baskets of bread, and dishes of lentils were let down by ropes, which furnished them with a salutary repast. Having finished their meal, several of the Arabs approached the European with great familiarity, and congratulated him on his life having been spared; at the same time condemning his conduct for rashly and voluntarily subjecting himself to such attacks, by traversing the desert which was known to be the resort of thieves.

The chief now solicited a present from M. Sonnini, for his exertions in procuring him the restoration of his property; but Hussein would not permit our author to part with a single parat. This conduct so highly offended the Arabs that, on a future occasion, they said they would act differently, and their first business should be to murder Hussein: they strongly intimated an inclination to renew their hostile designs; but Hussein laughed at their threats, and was so extremely vigilant that Sonnini could not find an opportunity of making a present to the chief.

Not succeeding in his application for a pecuniary reward, the Bedouin chief now demanded a written attestation or certificate from our traveller, stating, that having met him in the desert, he had taken nothing from him, and that he perfectly approved of his conduct. To prepare the certificate, one of the monks was let down from the convent, who wrote it in Arabic; and M. Sonnini, not choosing to affix his name to a testimony in favour of a gang of thieves, subscribed it La Deroutè. Abdallah, the chief of the robbers, then took care to secure the certificate; and, exhorting his travellers to guard against similar adventures, wished them a good journey.

Our travellers were now obliged to enter into a long contest with the Monks; though they certainly were convinced of the contrary, they pretended not to believe that they were Europeans. At length they offered to draw Sonnini up by the rope

rope, but he requested to be admitted by a small portal with an iron wicket, which was only opened to admit their provision; and then never to be made use of, if the Bedouins were suspected to be in the neighbourhood; accordingly they desired him to fasten himself to the rope. To shew him the method, the monk who wrote the certificate, suspended himself to it, and was drawn up by a pulley, and several of his companions followed the example. M. Sonnini, however, insisted upon the gate being opened, and Hussein seconded his resolution, protesting that if the monks did not permit him to shelter his camels, he would return in a few days, and exterminate every creature belonging to the convent. These declarations had the desired effect, and the wicket was opened, under certain regulations; but it was with the utmost difficulty that the camels could be ushered in; to accomplish which, the industry of the Arab, and the patience of the camel was equally entitled to the admiration of the beholder.

SECTION VIII.

Departure of Hussein—Coptic monks—Transactions with them—Zaidi Sourien—Ambu Bishoi—Remarkable Funeral—A Wedding Procession—Alaman—Sonnini is visited by a diseased Patient—Another Funeral Procession.

ON the following day Hussein reminded Sonnini of the adventure with the Arabs, and the difficulty which attended his extrication from their hands; adding, that he could not expect to be equally successful in similar situations: he frankly acknowledged that it was no longer in his power to be answerable for what might happen, as the Arabs would certainly murder him, if they met with them together again. He therefore observed, that an immediate return was indispensibly necessary for himself; and offered his services to conduct our author back by the same route he had come: but as Sonnini was now almost in the centre of the deserts, he was determined not to quit them without allowing himself time for making observations. Hussein, displeased at his determination, took an abrupt, but an affectionate leave of him *.

The fort contains a chapel, a reservoir for rain-water, and every thing necessary to sustain a long siege: the books belonging to the community are also kept here, though they negligently permit them to lie useless on the ground, mouldering in dust, and half consumed by the gnawing of insects; the monks, however, cannot be prevailed on to part with any of them. The cells of the monks are vaulted, low, and and level with the ground round the court—"suitable dens" says Sonnini, "for the rude idlers that inhabit them." The chapel is ornamented with only a few ostrichs' eggs, and some wretched pictures of saints: these portraits are considered as such masterly performances, that they were astonished at the indifference with which their visitors beheld them. The gospel is read in Arabic; the prayers are repeated in Coptic, which must be unintelligible to the monks, who can speak no other language than the Arabic. It is impossible to convey an adequate idea of the confusion that frequently prevails in the course of

* The convent in which Sonnini and his companions remained, after the departure of Hussein, was formerly inhabited by Greek monks, who were succeeded by Copts †, or natives of Egypt: among whom Saint Macarius rendered himself so particularly famous, that his name was given to the desert. The present residence of the Coptic *cenobites* is called *Zaidi el Baramous*, and by the Arabs *Kassr Zaidi*: it is an inclosure of lofty walls, without any other aperture than a small gate, which is opened about two or three times a year; when the people going up, or coming down, are hoisted or lowered by a rope and a pulley. The whole edifice consists of soft calcareous stones, many of which contain fossile shells. Within the walls, a small fortress is surrounded by a ditch, having a draw-bridge over it: to this fortress the monks retire, whenever the outer walls are forced by robbers; and, as Sonnini was informed by the secluded inhabitants, they were ten years before obliged to entrench themselves there against his friend Hussein, who was then the most resolute of robbers, and had broke through the great walk to pillage the convent; though for several years he had led a peaceable and honest life.

† The hair and eyes of the Copts are of a dark hue, and the former is often curled, but not more so than what is occasionally seen among Europeans. The nose is often aquiline; the lips sometimes thick, but not generally so: their complexion, like that of the Arabs, is a dusky brown. *Brown's Trav.* The Coptic women marry at fourteen or fifteen, and at twenty are past their prime.

their

ALGUAN PIGEON HOUSES.

Residence of the Coptic Cenobites called

ZAIDI EL BARAMOUS.

their devotional exercises; many altercations arise on the choice of certain psalms and anthems, and blows are frequently resorted to, in order to terminate the dispute.

During his residence at the convent, Sonnini punctually attended their performance of divine worship, and minutely copied the ceremonies and gestures of the monks: his companions were equally attentive, and so many ridiculous situations occurred, that they were sometimes seized with involuntary fits of laughter, which might probably offend the members of the community. During the time of service, the Copts neither sit, kneel, nor stand upright; remaining on their feet with their bodies bent forwards, and supporting themselves on a kind of crutch. The priest celebrates the mass with water, consecrated by him; the sacred vessels, consisting of glass plates, are also first consecrated by the priest: with this water small pieces of bread are mixed, forming together a mess like soup. The mixture being thus prepared, is used for the sacrament; of which the priest first takes a few spoonfuls, and then administers with a spoon to all who intend to partake of it. After the communion, the official pastor washes his hands, and places himself at the door of the sanctuary; and the congregation, in a kind of solemn procession, hold up their faces for the priest to dry his wet hands by stroking them. During the mass, the priest blesses some little round loaves; and, in celebrating this office, he wears a white surplice, with a cowl spotted over with little crosses*.

There were only three priests, and a few friars in this convent; the whole number of inhabitants it contained, when Sonnini and his associates were included, amounted only to twenty-three; but they were often visited by Coptic farmers, who came to suffer penance, and bring their offerings to the monks. They all eat together, one person only excepted, who continues to read while the others are regaling themselves. Their meals principally consist of a sort of biscuit made of the flour of lentils, and rice boiled in salt and water, despicable cheese, and sometimes a little honey: their sole beverage was brackish ill-tasted water. The convent is supported by collections, the offerings of visitors, and the alms of the wealthy copts. Caravans of camels bring them provisions two or three times a year; and the Arabs permit it to pass freely, considering it as their own. When they roam the desert, they find in these Coptic monasteries whatever is necessary for themselves and their horses. By ringing a little bell, the string of which hangs without, they are soon reconnoitred from the top of the wall, and instantly supplied with what they require. The monks of the deserts are not only useless, they are also dangerous and pernicious. Without the succours which they afford, the Bedouins could not long have subsisted in the environs, and thus have continued to infest the country with their continual devastations†.

In the midst of their enclosure, the monks have scraped together a little earth, which they call a garden, in which a few plants are raised. Among these our author was particularly struck with one, which he had never seen before in any part of Egypt: it is called native pepper, its stalks, when eaten raw, or boiled with provision, having a spicy taste. Either by the flowers or the fruit no judgment can be formed of the genus to which it belongs, though it appears to have no affinity to that of the peppers.

Near the monastery some ruins appear, said to be the remains of an ancient edifice, among which some steps descended to a well of brackish water. A quantity of stones were observed by our author before the gate, which were chiefly natron, grown extremely hard: and in the environs two sorts of gypsum were observed.

The Coptic monks collect in the neighbourhood of the Lakes of Natron, a sort of crystalized transparent salt gem, found in small pyramidical figures. This is denominated *marked salt*, each little pyramid having a mark on its base, asserted by the monks to belong to its original state,

* The Copts are extremely fond of ceremonies, especially those which promote activity and bustle: the priest, during the time of service, is perpetually engaged in the act of incencing the saints, pictures, books, &c. He gives his benediction with a little cross, on the top of which he has previously fixed a short end of a lighted wax-taper. The service being finished, all the people kiss a little dirty cushion; a cross is saluted next, and then a shrine, which they affirm contains the bones of seven saints: but, if the Arabs are to be believed, they contain only the bones of camels and asses, that died in the desert, which the monks have piously collected from different quarters.

† The dress of the monks accords with their habitations, and their food; a kind of robe, and a long black shirt, constitutes the whole of their clothing, differing but a few shades from the colour of their skin. Taking an impartial view of the Copts, adverting particularly to their short stature, and broad repelling countenances, these Coptic monastics are the ugliest of mankind, as well as the filthiest and the most disgusting.

though probably affixed by themselves. The monks of this convent are the only sellers, as well as the only collectors of this gem; and from their marvellous stories concerning it, the properties of it are deemed miraculous: and, among other things, they alledge, that its virtues will render women prolific.

Besides the monastery of Zaidi el Baramous, there is at no very considerable distance, the Syrian Monastery; and another, south by east; exclusive of a deserted building, on the other side of the Lakes, serving as a place of shelter to those who collect the natron. A day's journey westward from Zaidi el Baramous is the river without water *(Bahr Bela Ma)* the ancient communication between the lakes Mæris and Mareotis. Rocks of various shapes and dimensions, in this dry channel, are supposed by many persons to be petrified fragments of boats, &c.*.

M. Sonnini, having discarded the monk's dirty robe, rejoined his companions, and proposed to attack these robbers: a favourable opportunity presented itself, as the banditti were sitting on the ground round the provision, their musquets lying at some distance, and their horses at a still greater distance, standing under the shade of the wall; but though it appears probable that not one of the robbers would have escaped, if this spirited resolution had been adopted, the monks absolutely refused to open the wicket, fearing that if a single Bedouin should escape, the numerous body of them would be collected, and return immediately to ransack the convent. The Arabs, after having finished their meal, directed their course towards the Syrian monastery, expecting perhaps to fall in with our travellers by the way.

Sonnini dispatched a peasant to a Bedouin camp at Terrana, to engage some Arabs to escort him and his party from the convent; in consequence of which, ten of these Bedouins arrived, well armed, bringing with them a camel and some asses: one of them presented our author with a flamingo, that he had shot on the banks of the Natron lake, which his companions immediately roasted: but the voracious monks having conceived a fancy for it, eagerly seized it, and deprived our travellers of their expected repast.

Thinking some present would be required by the host, for the hospitality he had received during his abode in the convent, Sonnini asked his associates what they thought would be a sufficient recompence? The superior, without hesitation, informed him, that he expected he would first bestow something on the monastery; secondly, on the embellishment of the chapel; thirdly, on the poor; and fourthly, and lastly on himself. Our author, having listened attentively to this catalogue of wants, requested to know what sum might be expected for the whole? The superior replied, that he was not prepared to answer so general a question immediately; but, after a little calculation, he observed that the convent wanted white-washing all over, but he supposed five or six hundred sequins might be sufficient.—"A mere trifle!" says M. Sonnini, "for lodging and board on lentil bread, exclusive of the quantity of saline water which they had drank!"

The Frenchman made him a tender of the contents of his purse, which had been so considerably diminished by passing through the hands of the Arabs, and making a reserve for Hussein, that it was now reduced to six sequins. The monk was so violently enraged at such a present, that he loaded Sonnini with invectives, protested he would receive nothing from him, and invoked Heaven to send him some Arabs to dispatch him for his ingratitude. Not being able to curb his resentment at the fellow's insolence, Sonnini says, that he should "have beaten out the rascal's brains on the spot," had not the Bedouins conveyed him out of his reach.

* While Sonnini and his party continued at the Coptic convent, a peasant arrived from Terrana. He communicated the following intelligence: That the Bedouin robbers had been long waiting for them behind the Syrian Monastery; but, supposing they had taken some other route, they had proceeded to the environs of Terrana, where they had robbed some persons who were coming for natron of their camels and provisions. The day after this man's arrival, he discovered the recent footsteps of a horse round the walls: a few hours after, the bell of the gate was rung with violence by some Bedouins, who seemed much agitated, because they apprehended that strangers were within. The monks, in order to remove their apprehensions, lowered down some provision for them; and while they were employed in eating, Sonnini, assuming the habit of a friar, went up into the gallery to observe them as they conversed with the Copts, in the midst of whom he had taken his situation. They wanted to know the reason why the Sheck Hussein had arrived there with camels: one of them had seen upon the walls, the evening before, a person with a red shawl wrapped about his head, and much conversation was heard concerning Franks in pursuit of treasures, which he should be glad to meet with. The monks, instead of giving a satisfactory answer to these suggestions, endeavoured to mislead them by a number of ridiculous stories, that they thought too absurd to be credited.

Perceiving,

Perceiving, however, that the author was preparing to depart, he sent the Arab Shech to request the six sequins he had offered him. M. Sonnini accordingly delivered them: and immediately the travellers saw the old man addressing his prayers to Heaven, to bless them with a prosperous journey!

Leaving Zaidi el Baramous on the 13th of January, our travellers proceeded towards Zaidi Sourian, through deep passes, parallel to the great hills, which evidently have proceeded from strong currents. As they approached the monastery, their conductors prepared to act on the defensive, suspecting some Bedouins might be concealed behind the walls; but none of them appearing, they entered the convent in security. This little place of retreat is constructed on the same plan as that which Sonnini and his party had left. The monks seem less filthy in their persons, and less ferocious in their dispositions than those of Zaida el Baramous; the superior, though upwards of thirty years of age, was absolutely without a beard; a deficiency greatly to be regretted, as the beard is an appendage in this country which creates distinction and respect: he was, indeed, so much dissatisfied at this personal defect, that he solicited our European to inform him how he could acquire so estimable an ornament for his chin*.

Our adventurers quitted Zaidi Sourian on the 14th, Sonnini having first distributed among the monks his few remaining pieces of silver, and expressed a resolution of never stepping his foot within another convent. On passing one, however, called Ambu Bishoi, the monks were attending at the gate, and earnestly entreated the travellers to enter, assuring them they had the body of a saint, with a complexion as fresh and blooming as if he actually was alive. Disregarding this pressing invitation, the travellers proceeded in the eastern direction, and passed another of these houses devoted to sanctity, dedicated to Saint Macarius; Sonnini having positively refused to go near it. This convent is called Amba Monguar, and is also inhabited by Coptic monks. In the environs, the Copts point out several ruins of the ancient monastery of Saint Macarius; on which the Arabs bestow a name signifying the Women's Castle, a strange denomination for a retreat, erected out of antipathy to womankind, and inhabited by hideous Anchorites.

Travelling all night, the party arrived at Etris on the Nile, about five o'clock in the morning. The camp of those Bedouins who were Sonnini's conductors, was pitched close to this village. Proceeding to the tent of the Shech, the repast of hospitality was set before them. When Sonnini engaged the Bedouins in the desert, he candidly informed the Shech that he could not pay him before he returned from Cairo; he calmly replied, that he was perfectly easy about his pay, and added, that he had money at his service if he required it. The latter part of this declaration was little attended to by our author, forgetting that he was no longer in a country where the heart and lips were at variance. The repast being over, the Shech presented a small bag of money to Sonnini, expressing himself at the same time to the following effect. "I know all that has happened to you. With indignation I saw the behaviour of the monk at Zaidi el Baramous; I am also convinced that you will receive all the assistance you require from the Kiaschef of Warden, in consequence of your letters of recommendation; but you will give me infinite concern if you apply to a dog of a Turk, to a Mameluc. I cannot bear that a man with whom I have eaten, whom I have protected, and who is become my brother, should apply to another for assistance.—Take this money!—It is yours—If you refuse it, I shall think that you disdain a friend, because he is not the inhabitant of a desert."

Unwilling to offend his generous host, Sonnini took a few patacas, which he would not see him enumerate, nor hearken to his promise of a speedy reimbursement.

Our author then proceeded towards Warden, the residence of the commander of the district, half a league south-east of Etris, and was politely received by the Mameluc officer, who insisted on his accepting of accommodations in his house. Warden is a large village near the western bank of the Nile, and built on the site of Latopalis, a city anciently dedicated to Latona. It had been

* These monks have a little garden, in which were observed a few date trees, some small olive trees, and an almond tree. Among a variety of culinary plants, the *liblab*, a species of large kidney bean, attracted the notice of the beholder; it is perennial, and, rising to a considerable height, well calculated to form arbours: the leaves are of a lively green. This species of pulse is universally cultivated in Egypt, and the pods are in general use as an article of food.

lately been notorious for harbouring a nest of pirates, who plundered all the vessels that navigated these branches of the Nile, till they were all dispersed by the vigorous exertions of Ali-Bey, and Warden became a place of security *.

Arriving at Etris, Sonnini hastened to the camp of his generous Schech, discharged the debt he had contracted, and presented him with a few yards of cloth; but the worthy Arab, resolving not to merit the imputation of ingratitude, contrived to convey a sheep, and several articles of provision to the boat, without the knowledge of his guest. Leaving Etris in the afternoon, our travellers saw Abouneschabe, and opposite to it, on the eastern bank, Tahoue: between these villages the Nile is extremely broad and shallow. Proceeding about half a league, our author arrived at the village of Jagnouss, where he tasted of the fruit called *nebka*. It grows on a large species of rhammus, higher than a plum-tree. The fruit resembles a small round apple, tasting like a crab before it is ripe; it is not unpleasant when in a state of maturity, but tasteless when over-ripe.

The Nile near Jagnouss was visited by immense numbers of ducks; in the midst of which flights of common pigeons were continually pitching on the water, even in the strongest part of the current, and sometimes remaining there longer than a minute. This practice, which much excited the astonishment of our author, may reasonably be attributed to the heat of the climate. Half a league from Jagnouss, in the route to Rosetta stands Ikmas, and half a league further, the town of Terrana. The last-mentioned place is an enclosed town, consisting entirely of mud-walled houses, and is the residence of the Kias-chef; and in its environs some ruins appear of the ancient city of Terenuthis †.

Passing Bour-Dgiall, Dimitschi, Tamle, and some other villages, our travellers arrived at Alguan, a small village, which has a most wretched appearance, but is remarkable for an extraordinary number of dove-houses, formed in the shape of bee-hives: they are constructed of earth, square below, and conical above: the insides contain earthen pots, where the birds may commodiously prepare their nests and produce their young. The commandant was a negro Mameluc ‡.

When

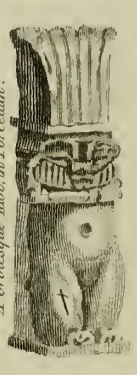
* Sonnini having hired a boat to convey him to Cairo, and return with him to Rosetta, he and his fellow travellers set sail on the 16th of January, at five in the afternoon; but a contrary wind rendered it necessary for him to anchor. About two, however, the next morning, he continued his route; and on passing a village on the western bank, saw the inhabitants quitting their dwelling, with their cattle and effects, to escape a party of predatory Bedouins. The master was afraid to enter the port of Cairo, lest his little vessel should be seized for the service of the army, which Ismael Bey was then collecting against his competitors Maurat and Ibrahim, he therefore stopped within half a league of that port; and Sonnini dispatched one of his attendants by land to Cairo, on whose return they set sail for Rosetta.

Having kept watch till midnight with the half of his party, our author lay down in the bottom of the boat, and resigned his post to the other half of his companions. Just as he was entering on a sweet repose, he was precipitately roused by the master, who informed him, that three small piratical vessels were rowing towards them, and he thought it necessary to fire immediately upon them, before they were attacked themselves. Several discharges of musquetry from his party instantly followed this intimation, and the robbers thought proper to make off with great celerity.

On the 18th the travellers passed between Warden and Guéreiss, below which Gerisel Warden is situated; where several flights of ducks, gulls of the large and small species, and a flamingo were seen; a number of spur-winged plovers also appeared on both sides of the river. Approaching Gerizel Warden, they saw a funeral; and at the head of the procession, a red and white flag were carried, a custom not adopted in towns: farther on, a less melancholy scene presented itself; it was a wedding at the small village of Menshie. The bride was mounted on a tall camel, and surrounded by a crowd of peasants, engaged in mock combats with long sticks; the country at the same time re-echoing with the sound of drums and hautboys; the camel advanced very slowly, and was frequently stopped to give the company an opportunity of dancing, shouting, and skirmishing around the bride: half a day was consumed in this whimsical procession, in parading about the village and its environs.

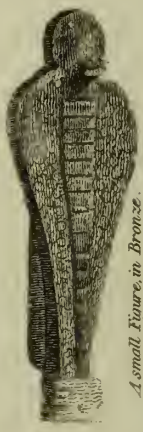
† A young Turk resided here, who was a manufacturer of very fine gun-powder; he had a feeble voice, and the hair of his head was white: both these circumstances arose from a fright into which he was thrown by Ali-Bey, who suspecting he had furnished supplies of powder to the Bedouins, whom he wished to destroy, ordered his head to be cut off. The tyrant, however, revoked his order the same instant; but the strong impression of fear had effected that surprising alteration in his voice and hair.

‡ Following the course of the Nile, they proceeded through several villages, but stopped for the night at Koniscberic. They had seen in the course of the day, six pelicans flying in company, and a considerable quantity of wild geese. The wagtails, though dispersed during the day, assemble in flocks towards evening, fly a short time over the surface of the water, and then settle together on one of the shores to pass the night. Wagtails are so extremely plentiful in Egypt, and so tame as frequently to enter the cabin-windows, and feed, without apprehension of danger, by the sides of the passengers. Sonnini found a few



A Grotesque Idol, in Porcelain.

A Head of Isis, in Alabaster.

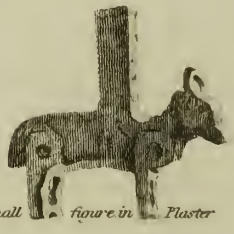


A small Figure, in Bronze.

A Porcelain Figure Enamelled with Aqua Marina.

An Osiris, in gilt Bronze.

A Cynocephalus, in Porcelain.

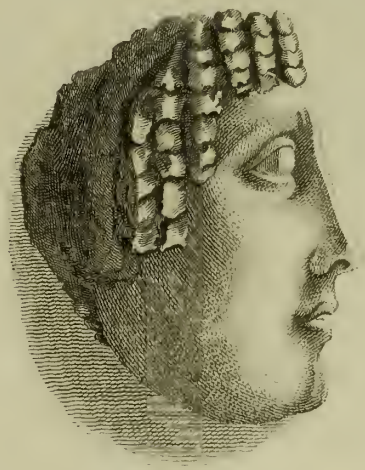


A small figure in Plaster

ANTIQUE FRAGMENTS.

Purchased by C.S Sonnini, at Salhe el Adsiar.

T. Milton sculp.



Tragic Mask, in Basaltes, Eleven Inches high.

A Fine Bust of Isis, in white Stone, Two Feet in height.

Tragic Mask, in Mortar, Nine Inches high.

ANTIQUE FRAGMENTS.

Purchased by C. S. Sonnini at Salhe el Adsjar.

T. Milton sculp.

Fig. 2. A Head of the Roman Emperor Vespasian

Fig. 1. Osiris an Idol of the Egyptians

Fig. 3. Head of a Woman unknown in white Marble.

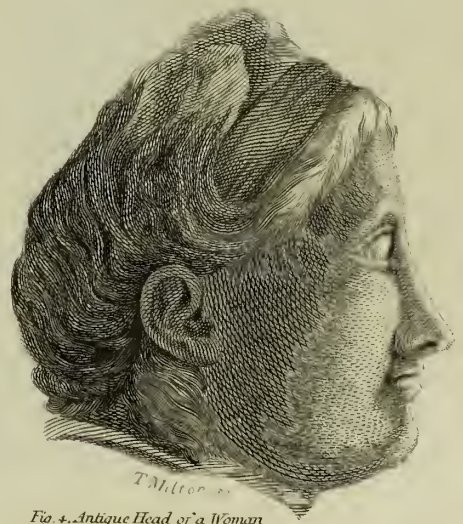


Fig. 4. Antique Head of a Woman unknown in white Stone.

ANTIQUE FRAGMENTS.

Purchased by C.S.Sonnini at Salhe el Adsjar.

When the Shech arrived on the morning of the 25th, he exhibited a most disgusting spectacle. This miserable wretch had nothing remaining of his head except the upper part; the mouth, and the whole of the under jaw, had been consumed by a dreadful cancer, rendering him almost incapable of swallowing or breathing; and a speedy termination of his horrible existence was evidently prognosticated. Unable to be of service to the patient, and terrified with the sight of so hideous an object, Sonnini leaped hastily into the boat, and ordered it to be cast off from the shore immediately. At ten in the morning, on the same day, the travellers left Komscherick, to continue their voyage down the Nile, the direction of the river there being north-east by north: they passed several villages, which presented nothing remarkable; but a little below Zaira, on an eminence, stands a chapel, the burial place of a Mahometan saint, apparently erected on the ruins of an ancient town. Salamoum, a village, is distinguished by the wall of an ancient edifice. At the distance of half a league, they reached Shabour, a large ill-built village; but the house of the commandant was better constructed than the rest, though, like them, the walls were composed of mud, and the mineret of the mosque was tolerably handsome. Leaving Shabour on the 26th, they passed through several villages without any particular occurrence. The next day they arrived at Mehallet-Abou-Ali, in the Delta, the first brick town they had yet beheld, which was defended from inundations by a dike constructed of the same material*.

Having followed the course of the Nile for upwards of sixty leagues, our author arrived safely at Rosetta, and removed the anxiety of his friends, a report having been circulated that he and his companions had been massacred by the Arabs; and they were strongly inclined to credit that report, because Hussein had assured them that he left them in a very perilous situation. That worthy Arab had been daily in search of intelligence respecting our author; but when he had received certain information of his arrival, he hastened to fold him in his arms, and to add his congratulations to those of his countrymen.

---

few medals at Komscheric, which were of little value, but they were sufficient to announce that this had been the site of an ancient settlement. The Mameluc commander, who was a man of pleasing manners, prevailed upon our author to wait for the arrival of an Arab Shech, a man of importance, who was extremely ill, that he might have the benefit of his advice as a physician.

* In one of the streets they met a funeral: by the side of the bier a large black flag was borne, diversified with yellow spots and figures. The female mourners, who followed it, held in one hand a corner of their garment, which they shook continually, as if they were in the act of terrifying something before them.

Here M. Sonnini beheld a new species of plover; the length was about eight inches, and the head of a deep-green, surrounded by a white diadem; the throat white, the under part of the neck and body white, with a reddish tinge; the feathers of the tail short and unequal; the legs and feet blueish; the bill and claws black. These are common in several parts of Egypt, and are usually seen in pairs; sometimes, however, they appear in troops of seven or eight; they feed on the shore of the river on aquatic insects; they never alight on the mud, with which the shores of the Nile are generally covered, but prefer the sandy part; they are not shy, nor alarmed at the approach of man.

Near Mehallet-Abou-Ali, farther within the land to the east, stands Sennehour-Medini, a village which exhibits many remains of antiquity. Near these ruins two villages, consisting of brick habitations, appear, which seem to be of greater antiquity than any others in Lower Egypt. On the western shore of the Nile, considerable vestiges of an ancient city were seen at a distance, but our author could not prudently venture to visit them, the neighbourhood being much infested by robbers and pirates. At a village called Salhe el Adsjar, he purchased a considerable number of fragments of sculpture and porcelain.

Pleased with having acquired these antiquities, our author, and his party, returned to pass the night off Mehallet-Abou-Ali, and sailed at five in the morning of the 28th. The boat stopped at Fouah, once a populous and flourishing city, being situated on the Nile opposite the entrance of the canal of Alexandria; but from the negligence of the Egyptian rulers, the canal and its navigation hastened to destruction; whence commerce was obliged to abandon the shore of Fouah, and to carry its riches to the harbour of Rosetta. Many of the ancient edifices of Fouah are in ruins, and the place, with its inhabitants, now exhibits the appearance of general poverty; but nature still smiles propitious on the surrounding soil, which displays a scene of singular fertility; and the fruits it produces are deservedly celebrated for their inestimable flavour. Dr. Pocock and M. Sonnini, suppose Fouah to be the ancient Naucratis. Leaving this place about noon, the travellers reached Rosetta at Midnight.

SECTION IX.

Considerations on the Bedouins—Wheat—Egypt—The Granary of Rome—Different Sorts of Bread—Barley the common Food of Horses—The Sugar Cane—Spices—Ruins of Taua—Fish of the Nile—Sets Sail for Cairo—Description of—The Inhabitants weak and uncultivated—Green Apparel prohibited—Anecdotes of Two Mamelucs.

WHATEVER may have been advanced by different authors and legislators respecting the depredations of the Bedouins, the prosperity of Egypt is generally understood. to be connected with the preservation of them: they alone can traverse with ease the immense sandy uninhabited districts, and support habitual communications through them, while the numerous flocks they feed are brought to the cultivated parts, and there exchanged for articles more essential to their support and happiness*.

As soon as the waters of the Nile are retired, the grain is sown; hence the seed-time varies with the latitude, and is also earlier in Upper than in Lower Egypt. In general, little more is necessary than to scatter the seed over the moistened earth; though sometimes slight furrows are turned up by a wretched plough, without either wheels or coulter: the vegetation is so rapid, that in four months after the corn is sown, it is reaped. The sickle, however, is not employed in this operation; it is pulled up by the hand and conveyed to large floors, similar to those used for rice. This method is less advantageous than threshing with a flail, but it is also less laborious, and more expeditious; sufficient inducements for being followed by indolent husbandmen, rendered careless by abundance.

From the ears of wheat, cut before they are ripe, and slightly baked in an oven, being afterwards bruised and boiled with meat, an excellent soup is formed, much esteemed in Lower Egypt, and is known by the name of férik. Wheaten bread is usually made in little flat cakes, unleavened, and slightly baked. A finer sort for the inhabitants of cities, is covered with fennel-flower seeds, procured from Upper Egypt, which give them an aromatic flavour. Another sort of cakes is sprinkled with sesamum, giving them the flavour of a hazel-nut.

Barley occupies a considerable portion of land in Egypt; it is ripe almost a month before the wheat, and its produce is equally abundant. It is the common food of horses in Egypt, and all eastern countries, where rye and oats are hardly known. Barley is certainly much more productive than oats; and its roots, being weaker and less numerous, do not exhaust the land so much.

Flax has been common in Egypt from the earliest periods; it now is, and for many centuries has been, a considerable article of cultivation and trade; a large quantity of cloth is manufactured from it, and the indigo used in dying it is the produce of this country. The sugar-cane is among the valuable productions of Egypt, where its culture might be improved and extended. Sugar is made at Cairo, and some of a very fine quality is manufactured for the Sultan; but the process is slow, the art having made little progress there: the lower classes of the people eat the canes green, which are sold in the markets at a moderate rate, the consumption by this method

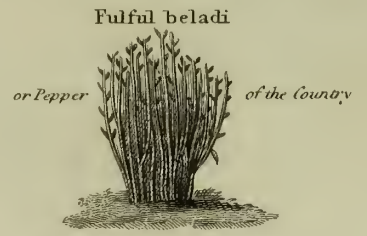
* No part of the globe displays so many resources for supporting the prosperity of agriculture, as the land of Egypt; the † fertility of its soil invites every species of cultivation. Of the plants of the four grand divisions of the earth, many already grow there, and all might be advantageously cultivated, and the portion of fertile land considerably enlarged. Many canals having been shamefully neglected, the water of the Nile no longer reaches those wide-extended lands to moisten them; and carelessness, ignorance, and tyranny, have permitted the sands to encroach on parts once covered with vegetable mould. The places rendered barren by neglect, constitute almost a fourth part of the land now in cultivation. Other tracts, where vegetation is feeble, are comparatively deserted, which, by activity and industry, would restore their ancient splendour and abundance.

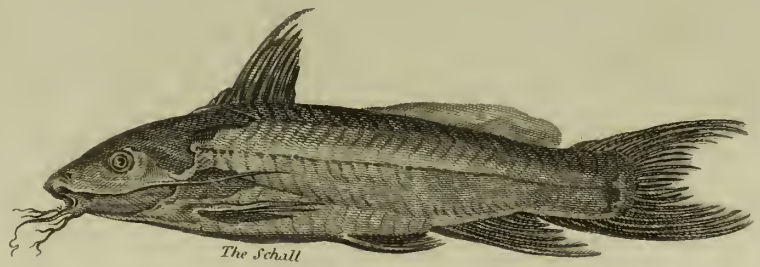
Of every vegetable which has rendered the land of Egypt celebrated for abundance, wheat stands foremost. Rome considered this country as her nurse, as her inexhaustible granary; it was also the granary of Constantinople, and the resource of the neighbouring nations. Turkey and Arabia could not now subsist without the supplies they receive from Egypt.

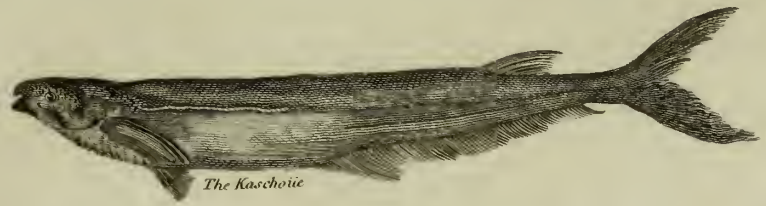
† *Mr. Browne, in his Travels in Egypt, says, "the soil in general is so rich as to require no manure. It is a pure black mould, free from stones, and of a very tenacious and unctuous nature. When left uncultivated I have observed fissures, arising from the extreme heat, of which a spear of six feet could not reach the bottom. Browne's Travels* 64.

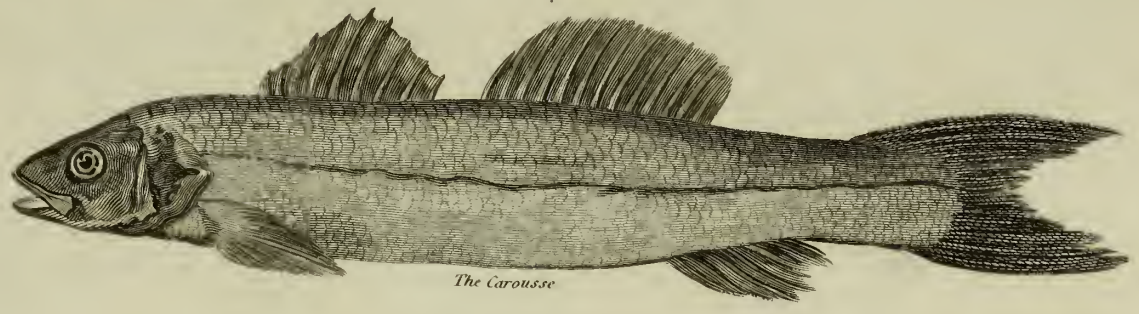
exceeding

Curious Botanic Plants Collected in EGYPT, by C. S. Sonnini.









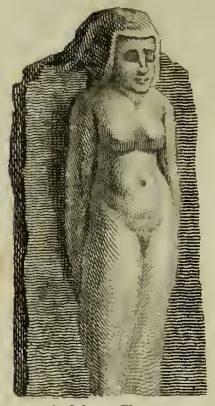
FISH OF THE NILE, &c.

Sonnini

Milton sculp.

Bust of a Woman unknown the head dress perforated to be worn as an amulet.

A Hawk in bronze



An Isis in Plaster.

A head of Isis in terra Cotta.

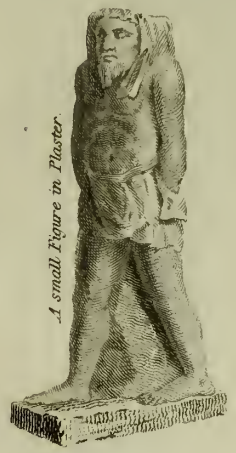
Two Marble figures of Children resting on a Dolphin supposed to be placed on a Fountain or Urn.

Antique bronze Cube.

ANTIQUE FRAGMENTS.

Purchased by C.S.Sonnini at Salhe el Adsjar.

T.Milton Sc

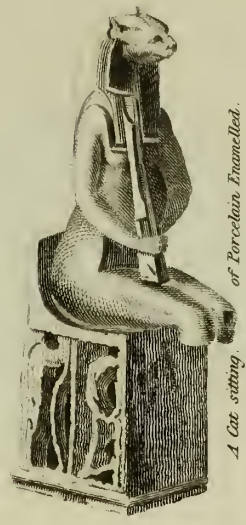


A small Figure in Plaster.

A Beetle of Black Stone.

A small Figure in Bronze.

A Head in Bronze.



A Cat sitting of Porcelain Enamelled.

A Head in Terra Cotta.

ANTIQUE FRAGMENTS.

Purchased by C. S. Sonnini at Salhe el Adsjar.

T. Milton sculp.t

exceeding all conjecture. The sugar canes begin to ripen in October, but they are not perfectly ripe till November or December.

Though Maillet * has asserted, that the cultivation of the coffee-tree had been unsuccessfully attempted in Egypt, the failure must certainly be attributed to the want of skill or conduct in the cultivator, as many parts of this country are as well suited to the growth of the coffee-tree, as the soil and climate of Arabia, where this shrub produces its fragrant berries. Aromatic plants, producing what are generally known by the appellation of spices, would find a suitable soil and propitious situations in Egypt †.

On the day of his departure for Cairo, M. Sonnini shot a bird near Rosetta, having much affinity to the little grebe, or didapper: its length is ten inches and a half; its head small in proportion to its body; the wings short; no tail; the legs flattened on the sides, and covered with scales. In the month of February, small flocks of ravens appear in the environs of Rosetta, mixing familiarly with the flocks of crows which never appear there at any other time.

Stopping at Jagnouss in his progress to Cairo, our author was informed that there were the remains of an ancient city; and a little below that village, he saw an extensive space covered with ruins, and pillars of granite lying on the ground. The people of the neighbourhood are daily finding medals, statues, and other fragments of antiquity. M. Sonnini purchased from them the following articles, *viz.* 1. An idol of porcelain, representing a cat sitting. 2. The bust of a woman in terra cotta. 3. A head of a woman in terra cotta. 4. A piece of sculpture, in white marble, of two children. 5. A porcelain idol of Osiris. 6. A head of a woman in stone. 7. A head of Vespasian. 8. The head of a woman.

The ruins near Jagnouss are probably those of the ancient city of Tena, their situation is distinguishable by the tomb of a Turkish saint, which is built in a line with them on the same bank of the river ‡.

While

* Description de l'Egypte, Part II. p. 15.

† Fruit trees of various kinds adorn and enrich this enviable country; but many others might be successfully added; the olive tree, which was always scarce in Egypt, might be propagated in great abundance, where it attains a larger size than in Europe, and its fruit is in greater perfection; the fig-trees afford abundance of their pulpy and highly-flavoured fruit. Date-trees are found every where in the Thebais and the Delta, not only on the cultivated districts, but on the sands, their cultivation requiring little care. The branches are cut off from the tree, with the dates on them, before they are thoroughly ripe, and preserved in baskets; where they ripen in succession. To ascend the date-trees, which have only branches on the summit, and are too slender to bear a ladder, the Egyptians make use of a girth, which they tie to a rope that passes dexterously round the tree. Filaments are procured from the bark of this species of palm-tree, of which ropes and sails for boats are constructed: baskets, and many other articles, are manufactured of the leaves; and the very long rib of the branches is used by the Mamelucs and Arabs, in their military exercises.

The cypperes is much cultivated in the neighbourhood of Rosetta; it produces a fruit resembling the American earth-nut, but has a more agreeable flavour. Egyptian nurses suppose the juice of this fruit to promote an increase of milk.

‡ No favourable wind occurring, the boat stopped at Terrana, when our traveller availed himself of the opportunity of taking a view of it, to see the manner of building villages in this country. Several small fishing vessels appeared in the Nile, which our traveller was anxious to examine, to ascertain the several species of fish common to that river. The schall is a species of shell-fish that has never been described; its head is large and broad; and its body is slippery, without scales; the back has two fins, the tail is extremely forked; its general colour is a brownish grey, and many parts of the head and tail are tinged with red; it is about fifteen inches in length, and four in breadth. It is considered as execrable food, hardly fit to be eaten by any thing but cats. All the species of *silures* found in the Nile were prohibited by the ancient Egyptians; and Mr. Pauw || presumes he has discovered the reason of this prohibition: "fishes without scales," he says, "used as food, promote all the diseases that have any affinity to the elephantiasis, or hypochondria, because they render the blood thick and diminish perspiration."

The kaschoue resembles the pike, and, like the pike, voraciously feeds on other fishes; it is the oxyrinchus of the ancient Egyptians, and was venerated in one part of Egypt, while in other parts it was held in abomination. The kaschoue is pretty common in the Nile, and is universally relished as a delicacy. The hersé in its nose and head resembles a weasel; the head is without scales, but the rest of body has very small ones; the body is of a blackish colour, growing lighter towards the belly. The hersé never grows large, seldom exceeding six or seven inches in length. The keschéré is a species of perch, anciently called the Latos, and held sacred in the name of Latapolis: its Arabic name, scale, is given it on account of its having an unusual number of scales; it is one of the largest and best fishes of the Nile. This fish is extremely voracious, devouring many other species, of which it thus thins the Nile; and is one of the causes of the Nile having so small a number of fishes in proportion to its size, and the extent of its course. This fish is sometimes to be found of the weight of three hundred pounds. When of a small size, which is most common in the northern parts of the river, it is distinguished by a peculiar name, that of hemnor.

The schilby is a species of silurus, destitute of scales, common to the Nile, and preferable to the schall as food. The upper jaw has two rows of little, sharp, hooked teeth; but the under jaw has but one of these recurved teeth; the flesh

|| *Recherches Philosophique sur les Egyptiens, et les Chinois*, Tom. I. p. 154.

While M. Sonnini was engaged in examining these fishes, a favourable wind arose, and he soon after set sail for Cairo: in a short time a forest of masts and yards informed him that he was approaching the harbour of that city, which is always crowded with vessels: he landed at Boulac, on the eastern side of the harbour, whence he and his companions proceeded to Cairo * on asses hired for that purpose: the bustle on the road indicated the approach to a populous city; and when they arrived there, they took up their abode in the house of the French consul.

The houses in the city of Cairo are not equal in elegance to those of the large cities of Europe; and their streets are crooked, narrow, and unpaved: their squares are large irregular places, destitute of embellishments; during the inundation, they are chiefly pools of water, and they become fields or gardens when the river has retired. The city, which is considerably more in length than in breadth, covers a space of eight or nine miles. Its population, consisting of Turks, Arabs, Moors, Copts, Syrians, Greeks, Jews, and Europeans, is estimated at four hundred thousand. Inhabitants of the winged race also take up their abode in Cairo; kites and crows living on the terraces of the houses in perfect security, adding their screams and croakings to the tumult of the restless populace. The prowling vulture increases the groupe of this singular society: the plaintive and amorous turtle, having nothing to dread from the talons of these devourers, or from the guns of the inhabitants, enters their dwellings without fear, giving them practical lessons of love and tenderness, in the caresses and attention of domestic happiness.

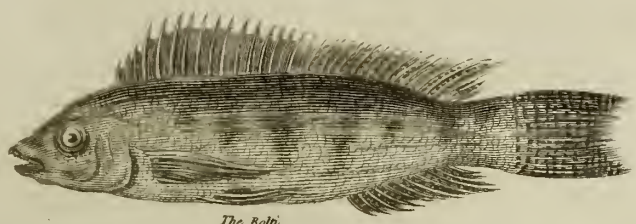
Here the splendour of excessive opulence in the few, was strongly contrasted with the extreme poverty of the many. The riches acquired by industry and care, in the intermediate classes, were carefully concealed from the prying eye of the rapacious, lest they should tempt the wealthy to practice extortions under specious pretences, which, with all their caution, they find themselves unable to prevent.

Though the men in power assume great splendour, they are as ignorant and uncivilized as the lowest among the populace. When decked in the robe of opulence, their manners are too ferocious for the eye to be deceived by the gloss of its magnificence. The beys are as ignorant, and as superstitious as the rude dregs of the people; not one of either could read or write; the knowledge of arithmetic was confined to the merchants, and the Mahometan priests bewildered themselves in attempting to expound the Koran; a few arts were exercised by foreigners, but mechanical occupations were in a very imperfect state, and the sciences were absolutely unknown. The mass of the people were barbarous beyond conception; foreigners were perpetually in fear of being insulted on the most frivolous pretext. The houses of the French were in a district by themselves, shut up by a large gate, and guarded by janizaries. Europeans could not appear in the streets but in the oriental habit, lest they should be torn in pieces: they were also obliged to wear a distinguishing mark of contempt, the talpack, a sort of high hairy cap. The enterprising English ventured to introduce the head-dress of the Druses, a large piece of striped silk, decorated with fringe, and rolled round the head like a turban. It was indispensably necessary to avoid wearing green garments, or those in which any thing verdant was introduced: to infringe this rule would have incurred the punishment due to profanation, which would have been equally prompt and terrible;

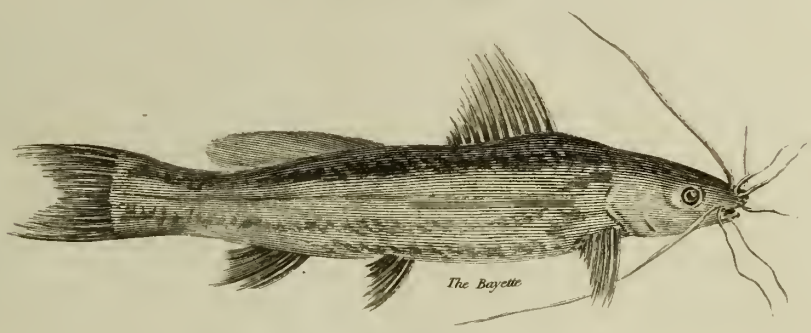
flesh is generally of a blackish grey colour, and the iris of the eye is of a golden colour. The bouri is a salt-water fish, ascending from the Mediterranean as far up the Nile as Cairo: it is the mullet, from the female row of which, botargo is made. Though the flesh is not firm, it is tolerably good eating: they are about ten inches in length. The sardine or sprat also quits the Mediterranean to pass up the Nile, where it is extremely plentiful. Those purchased by M. Sonnini were ten inches long, and three inches broad. The karmouth is a species of silurus, destitute of scales, and is very indifferent food: it is one of the most common fish of the Nile. Its length is about two feet: the muscles of its tail are remarkably strong, and it is uncommonly tenacious of life. The bayatte is a species of *silurus*, called by the inhabitants of Upper Egypt, *bogar*, or an ox, from its growing to an enormous size. They are insipid as food, and but little esteemed.

* The practice almost peculiar to Cairo, of hatching eggs by artificial heat, is said to proceed from experience, that, at a certain season, eggs fostered by hens are, in general, unprolific, while of those hatched in ovens not one third is lost. The ovens for this purpose are constructed of clay, and the eggs are placed in such a manner as not to touch each other. They are slightly moved five or six times in twenty-four hours. Care is taken to diffuse the heat equally throughout, which is at first rendered great, and then gradually diminished, till it is reduced to almost the state of the atmosphere, when the young brood are ready to come forth. The eggs are in the oven about twenty-two days; but at the end of the first eight it is known which will be unproductive. The oven is public property; so much per hundred is paid for hatching the eggs, on delivery of the chickens: the eggs which have not succeeded are also produced. *Brown's Trav.*

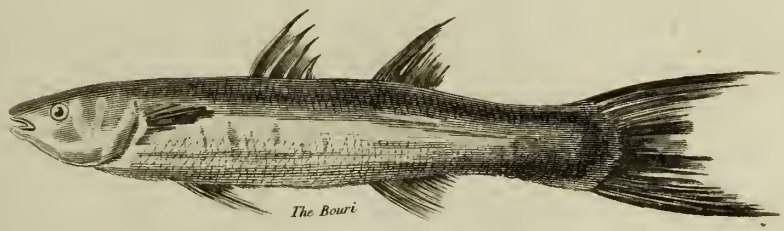
green



The Bolti



The Bayette



The Bouri

The Sardine or Sprat

FISH OF THE NILE.

Sonnini

Milton sc.

green was the favourite colour of Mahomet, and is reserved exclusively for his descendants, and those who acquire this qualification by making a certain number of pilgrimages to his tomb.

Our travellers ventured to make a few excursions, mounted on asses, but they were obliged to be rigidly attentive to decorum: if they met with a Mamcluc, a priest, or a man in office, they made way for him, alighted, placed their right hand on the breast as a token of respect, and stopped till the mussulman had passed. If they should be so inattentive as to neglect the performance of this degrading servility, the domestics of the great man, armed with stout sticks, would have punished them severely for their inattention.

The government of Egypt was arbitrary, cruel, and despotic. It consisted, when complete, of twenty-four beys or sangiacs: one of these acquired the authority of governor-general, and had unlimited power, without control, without laws, and without any restrictions but such as were dictated by his own tyrannical will. All the beys had originally been Mamalucs (pages or slaves of honour). They were slaves, brought very young from Georgia, Circassia, and other provinces of the Ottoman empire, and sold at Cairo: a few of them were Ethiopians, brought from Nubia. These slaves were purchased by the Beys, who caused them to be educated in their own houses; an education principally tending to teach them the Mahometan religion, horsemanship, and military exercise. The power of the beys was regulated by the number of Mamelucs they supported; these slaves obtained the highest offices of state, in proportion to the influence they could exercise over their masters. Mamalucs being natives of a foreign country, their children were not permitted to inherit their privileges.

This kind of government existed in Egypt for near two hundred years before it was overthrown by the Ottoman Emperor Selim, in 1517. But though Selim conquered the country, he did not make any considerable alteration in its form of government. The Mamelucs might still acquire the supreme power, and they neglected nothing to procure the good opinion of their masters: their progress was rapid, as they were promoted to a place among the heads of the government. Having reached this height, they sought the summit of absolute power; to obtain the post of Shech el Belled, every artifice of intrigue and treachery was employed. After having secured a powerful party, beys have been known to go to the house of the governor-general, with every appearance of esteem, and respect, and in the midst of their conversation, suddenly stab him on the sofa; while his guards, instead of avenging his murder, have kissed the hands of the assassin, and proclaimed him sovereign*.

* In these frequent convulsions of the government, the people were the sufferers: they were considered merely as instruments to promote the designs of the covetous and ambitious: the beys harassed, with their demands, the provincial governor, and they in return harassed the people with their exactions. The people, at length, remained indifferent wish regard to their quarrels and commotions; and the people of Cairo, expecting to experience the same vexations, whoever might be conqueror, had no predilection. The pacha kept by the Ottoman court at Cairo, as a shadow of its ancient authority, propagated discord among the beys, that the sultan might enjoy his phantom of religion. The pacha also received and transmitted the grand Seignior's tribute, when his vassals thought proper to pay it.

But the pacha continued in office only while he was in favour with the beys in power. If the Shech el Belled thought proper to be displeased with him, a messenger with a long black robe was sent into his apartment, who, without assigning his reason for so doing, turned the carpet of the divan; a well known signal that he was dismissed from his office, and must instantly quit the castle. Sometimes, indeed, the beys have not been contented with dismissing the pacha, but have also stripped him of his wealth, and caused him to be conveyed to prison. When Sonnini was in Egypt, in 1778, Mourat Bey treated Mahomet Vizier in this manner, who was a mild and respectable man, but had inconsiderately taken the part of Ismael bey against Mourat.

The divan of Constantinople appointed a successor without any demur; but even this semblance was offensive to the real despots of Egypt, and they frequently aimed at throwing off altogether the yoke of the sultan. The first of the Mamelues who conceived the design of freeing Egypt from the authority of the court of Constantinople, was Ali Bey, about the year 1780. He would probably have accomplished his aim of rendering Egypt independent, had his scheme been properly conducted, or had he not become the victim of ingratitude. He placed his confidence in Rosetti, a Venetian merchant, a man whose understanding was too limited to comprehend a plan that was intended to change the political aspect of a country. Ali's favourite mameluc, Mehemet Bey, betrayed and fought his benefactor, who died of the wounds received in battle, and slew all his adherents. A Mameluc of Ali's, with less laudable dispositions than Ali, attempted to render the country independent: this was Mourat, who was often obliged to fly from Cairo, and yield to various competitors, and always was so fortunate as to return triumphant. He possessed the supreme power, a few interruptions excepted, from 1776, to the conquest of Egypt by the French. Mourat surpassed all his predecessors in magnificence: opulence reigned in his household; his money flowed from him in full streams; but it must be acknowledged, that he filled his coffers with the same facility by frequent and detestable extortion.

Sonnini visited the camp of Mourat, where vast tents were erected for him and his principal officers, "Nothing," says he, "could equal the magnificence of his cavalry. Gold, silver, and rich embroidery on Morocco-leather, glittered in the rays of a fervid sun with a dazzling lustre."—He afterwards adds, "I have gone to the palace of Mourat Bey, with a young Frenchman who enjoyed his confidence. The bey received me with a kind of civility, made me sit by him, and gave me his own pipe to smoke, taking it from his mouth to present it to me. This was an honour, according to the customs of the country, which I have never received from any other person."

Mourat, pleased with Sonnini's answers to several questions, wanted to engage him in the double capacity of physician and engineer; offered him a house at Cairo, with domestics of all sorts, servants, and guards; a liberal allowance of provision, and a considerable salary. His offers might have seduced any one who was a stranger to the capricious humours of these unprincipled men, who load a person one day with magnificent favours, and the next furnish him with irons, or take off his head.

Mourat was in person, a graceful figure, and had a fine martial appearance: a thick black beard ornamented his chin, and his eye-brows formed arches of ebony over his animated eyes; a scar on one of his cheeks added to the intrepidity of his countenance. Capable of enduring the greatest hardships, unmoved by adversity, bold in enterprize, cool in action, Mourat might have been a consummate general; his elevated and generous mind adapted him for sovereign dignity; but injustice, ignorance, and barbarity united in forming him a tyrant*.

The Mamelucs, exercised from their infancy in military evolutions, were singularly dexterous: in launching the javelin, they were certain of hitting the mark, but their principal weapon was the sabre†, with the wavy Damascus blade of truly tempered steel, which they wielded with astonishing skill. The habit of engaging in mock and real combats, rendered the Mamelucs brave and hardy; and had they possessed any knowledge of European tactics, they would have been a formidable corps; they were singularly expert in managing their horses; and though the reputation of Turkish cavalry is well known, it is much inferior to that of the Mamelucs, in gracefulness, celerity, and activity.

The Egyptian horses, which like the Barbs are descended from the Arabians, are the most beautiful existing: they are equally full of fire, vivacity, and vigour; but these horses have not so much bottom, as the Arabians, which are found in the same countries: those of the Egyptian breed could not perform such journeys as the Arabian coursers; being more delicate, because more elegant, they would much sooner be exhausted. If, however, the whole Arabian horses are the first in the world, those of Egypt may assert their preten-

* While the two beys of the Mameluc race are celebrated for their bravery and magnanimity; other noble actions are recorded to the honour of individuals among the Mamelucs, who are rendered remarkable by their gratitude to their masters and benefactors. The two following instances were related to Sonnini, when he was at Cairo:—Mehemet Bey, after having been victorious over his father-in-law and benefactor, put to death all who were supporters of the cause of Ali. In the exercise of his suspicious cruelty, he ordered a bey, who refused to abjure his fidelity to Ali, by whose favour he had risen to his exalted situation, to lose his hand, and his tongue. In this miserable condition, one of the Mamelucs had the generosity to attend him; and being anxious to be freed from the miseries of life, he made his faithful follower sensible of his wish to be thrown into the Nile, on which they were sailing to a destined place of exile. "Yes," replied the Mameluc, taking his patron in his arms, "I know that, in this extreme of wretchedness, life must be an insupportable burden—you shall be freed from it—but you shall not die alone"—he then leaped into the river with him, having infolded him closely, and they both embraced inevitable death in each other's arms.

The other instance occurred more recently: When Ismael had compelled Mourat to take refuge among the Arabs in Upper Egypt, the conqueror dispatched an old kiaschef, who had fought and was wounded on the side of Mourat, to solicit him to join his standard; and, as a farther inducement, offered to confer on him the most dignified situations, if he would embrace the victorious party. The old man informed the emissary of Ismael, that he thanked him for his offers, but declined accepting them; for, having derived all he possessed from Mourat, fidelity to him was his duty, and he was resolved to follow him to the grave. Soon after, he abandoned all his property to the conqueror, only recommending to his humanity his wife and children; adding that, if the bey, from revenge or any other motive, should deprive them of the necessaries of life, he committed them to the protection of providence, the guardian of gratitude and fidelity.

† "I have often seen," says Sonnini, "these famous sabres tried. For this purpose, a large pillow, stuffed with feathers, is set on a support about the height of a man, in such a manner that the smallest blow would make it fall; and this the sabre, to be reputed of due quality, must cut in two at a single stroke.

sions

MURAD BEY
Bornet del.

sions to a second rank*. What has been said of Egyptian horses, is confirmed by ancient and modern testimony: the Jewish historians inform us, that it was in Egypt chiefly where Solomon purchased, at a very high price, the prodigious multitude of horses which were kept in his numerous stables †.

The Beys kept in pay an auxiliary body of Moorish infantry, men who are called *Mangregis* (Men of the west.) They were not only bad soldiers; they were also revengeful, cruel, and perfidious. They sold themselves to any person who would purchase them.

Sonnini made few excursions in Cairo, though he twice resided there for some time. During his first abode, the contests of the beys created so much tumult, confusion, and disorder, that the gates of the district appropriated to the French consul were generally kept shut. His second visit was after the French consul had quitted the city: and the merchants, left without a protector, were apprehensive that his curiosity, and thirst after knowledge, might involve them in some difficulties.

He one day visited the castle, which stands on a chain of mountains eastward of the Nile. This fortress, which commands the city, is itself commanded by the rocky mountain on which it is built. It is flanked with towers, and defended by a few wretched pieces of cannon; but the whole is gradually falling into ruins: remains of magnificent apartments, supported by pillars of granite, are still, however, to be seen in it. The way to the castle is nearly perpendicular, and has been cut through a rock: hence it is called Mokettam, or Cut Mountain. From the mountain, on which the castle is erected, the stones for building Cairo were obtained: they are white and calcareous. Cairo is defended with no other fortifications. It was once surrounded by walls, flanked by towers; but these are no longer entire: part of them have fallen beneath the stroke of time, and the remainder under the more destructive hand of barbarism. Two gates, which are of simple and noble architecture, remain. One of them is called Babel Nasr, the Gate of Victory; the other is named Babel Foutouh, the Gate of Passage; because onthis side the sultan Selim entered the city by a breach ‡.

From Cairo to Boulac the road is infested with improvisatori, or vagabonds half-naked, a set of

* And Solomon had horses brought out of Egypt; and a chariot came up, and went out of Egypt, for six hundred shekels of silver, and a horse for an hundred and fifty. 1 KINGS, x. 28, 29.

The Egyptian horses have deservedly the preference of all others for size and beauty; the smallest of which are usually sixteen hands high, and all of them shaped, according to their phrase, *kiff ell gazel*, like the antelope. *Shaw's Travels*, p. 239.

See also relation Journaliere du Levant, par H. de Beauveau. p, 159.

† Bonaparte, then a citizen, now an emperor, in his letter to the executive directory, dated Cairo, the 6th of Messidor, year 6, says, "The Mamelucs had a magnificent body of cavalry, covered with gold and silver, armed with the best carbines and pistols of London manufacture, the best sabres of the east, and mounted perhaps on the best horses on the continent.

‡ On the eastern side without the walls, are exhibited the ruins of the tombs of the sultans, which are magnificent; but most of them have been much injured by corroding time. From the vast quantity of mouldering and mutilated appearances, lying on the ground and its vicinity, it seems apparent that the city was once considerably larger than it is at present.

A large canal, communicating with the Nile a little above Old Cairo, crosses the middle of the city, from the west to the north-west; over which there are several bridges, with a row of houses on each side. Ptolomy ascribes the construction of this canal to Trajan; but M. Sonnini supposes it to have been the work of the Pharaohs. The Arabic historians inform us that the bed of this canal is paved with marble, though it is now almost covered with mud; the Nile no longer flowing through it, but in the months of August, September, and October. The breaking down of the Dike, which closes its entrance, constitutes a ceremonious festival, at which the pacha and beys are present. When the water has retreated, the bottom which has received the filth from the sewers of the city, emits an insupportable stench that renders the surrounding houses almost uninhabitable; but the heat accelerates the progress of its drying up, and it becomes one of the most populous streets in the city.

During his residence at Cairo, Sonnini passed much of his time at the windows of the consul's house, from whence he had an opportunity of seeing the dancing girls, whose steps and leaps were very different from those of European dancers; their merit seems to consist in the agitation of the loins. Though their performance was one of the most impudent exhibitions of a lascivious spectacle, it was highly gratifying to a depraved and unpolished people. The music which accompanied these dances was a hautbois, a lute with three strings, and a tambourine.

These female dancers, whose indelicate exertions always attract an immense crowd of spectators, wear on the thumb and fore finger of each hand, a little cup, which they occasionally strike together in regular cadence, like castinets. Their faces are bare, which in these countries is considered as the height of impudence: many of them wear a ring in one of their notrils. Having concluded their dances, they let down their veils, and, holding their ears with both hands, make a most horrible squall. The jugglers succeeded the dancing girls, whose tricks imitate the performances of the itinerant conjurors in Europe. Tumblers also entertain the populace with feats of activity, and have a sort of merry-andrew, whose low ribaldry is employed to extort a laugh from the lovers of vulgarity.

wretched poets, who wear on their heads a cap of rushes, and compose verses extempore on any whom they suppose simple enough to part with a little money: two of them perhaps enter into a metrical dialogue of the virtues and talents of the person they address, and to whom they are entirely strangers: their eulogies generally consist of common-place phrases, recited with great volubility.

SECTION X.

Marriages in Cairo—Caravans with Slaves from Nubia—Marriage a civil Act among the Mahometans—Slaves are exposed to Sale—Hot Climates most suitable to Horses, Asses, &c.

AMONG the processions attending civil or religious ceremonies in Cairo, Sonnini mentions those attendant on weddings. When the preliminaries of marriage are agreed on, the bride elect is attended wherever she goes by a numerous company. Preceded by music, she marches deliberately under a canopy enclosed with drapery, and is followed by a multitude of her relatives and friends. Her first visit is to the bath; after which she is conducted to the house of her husband, preceded by an additional number of persons, carrying some article of her clothes*, jewels, and a few moveables. The bride's dowry only consists in these effects, as the husband, instead of receiving a fortune, engages not only to give his wife a jointure, but purchases her of her father with a sum of money†.

In the warehouses of Cairo are found many of the productions of every part of the world, brought from their respective countries by themselves. But the negro slaves, a living species of merchandize, more particularly demand attention; they are conveyed to Cairo by the caravans of Nubia; two of these are usually brought every year, and the number of these unhappy wretches intended for sale, are estimated at between fifteen hundred and two thousand: of these the females are more numerous than the males. While Sonnini resided at Cairo, the price rose or fell, according to the number of them imported; but the finest negro of either sex, might be purchased for about three hundred livres.

Many of the negroes intended for sale, perish under the heat, abstinence, and fatigue of the journey, from their respective countries to Cairo: and when they arrive at the Egyptian capital, they are uncomfortably crowded into a building appropriated for the purpose, where they are exposed to sale by their countrymen; who permit every person who chooses, to examine, handle, and inspect them, as if they were so many cattle exhibited for slaughter. Only part of the slaves, however, remain in Egypt, many of them being purchased by merchants, and sent to Constantinople: the young Nubians are particularly valued in the Ottoman capital, where men, not choosing to rely on chastity, mutilate their brethren to secure the fidelity of their wives‡.

If

* The lady's property on these occasions is a matter of triumph, she therefore chooses to have it displayed to the greatest advantage; the magnificence of the ceremony consists in the great number of attendants; a few ounces of the lady's property is a sufficient load for any person according to this etiquette.

† The first interview of the bride and bridegroom is after the former has been at the bath, when she is successively dressed in the habit of a Janissary, or some other male attire, as the fondness of the women for disguising themselves in the habits of men in these countries is remarkable. Having pleased herself, and her female companions, in the adjustment of these masquerade habits, bursts of merriment ensue, and the lady is shewn to her husband in different dresses and disguises. Many ceremonies then take place respecting the lady's chastity, which are not necessary to be mentioned here. Marriages among the Mahometans is merely a civil act, in which the priests are not permitted to interfere; the parties appear before the Cadi, who receives their declarations, and prepares and witnesses the agreement.

The circumcision of infants is another of the ceremonies, in which the Egyptians as well as the Turks display the most ostentatious parade.

‡ It is certain that the hottest and driest climates are most favourable for horses; as those of Arabia, Persia, Egypt, and Barbary, stand foremost with regard to beauty as well as vigour; the same observation may with equal propriety be made of the asses of hot climates; in proportion to their distance from these they degenerate, the asses of the northern countries having no resemblance to those of the south. In Egypt they are extremely beautiful, grow very large, and are so much valued, that they sometimes bear a higher price than the horses; they move with elegance and grace, and their pace is quick and easy. The most opulent Mahometans do not disdain to ride on them; the ladies are pleased with them, and they are the only animals

If commerce furnishes Cairo with every kind of merchandize, its markets poured forth a profusion of articles for the sustenance and enjoyment of life. Every kind of fish that the Nile affords is to be had in abundance: M. Sonnini had an opportunity of inspecting three which he had not before seen; these were the *bolty*, the *bayatte*, and the *benni*.

The *bolti*, from which he took a drawing, was twelve inches long, and four inches and a half in its greatest breadth; the scales are large, the colour of the body is white, with broad blackish bands descending from the back to the belly; the iris of the eye is of a golden colour. The *bolti* is found in the Nile, but chiefly in the small canals running out of it, and the pools remaining after the inundation; it is reckoned delicate and well-flavoured. The *bayatte* is of a sea-green colour, shaded with brown on the back and head; tinges of red are seen on the bony coverings of the gills: the iris of the eye is yellow.—The *benni* is very common in Egypt, and, according to Forskall's and Sonnini's observations, is of the same genus with the barbel, the carp, and the tench: the scales, with which it is covered, are large, and shining with a silvery lustre. It is tolerably good food, and grows large, but a great number of small ones are caught.

SECTION XI.

Journey into Abyssinia—Sonnini engages to sustain part of the Expence—Syrian Interpreter—Baths at Boulac—Butter at Embabé—Lupins—Jews' Synagogue—Chapel of the Copts—Aqueduct—Gizah—Memphis—Catacombs—Whirlwinds—Sonnini's Liberality to the Egyptians abused—Mountain of the Birds—Bardacks—Dreadful Storm with Hail—Sheick Abade—The Convent of the Pulley—Siout—Practice of Physic—Singular Procession—Searching for Gold.

AFTER having resided a considerable time at Cairo, M. Sonnini formed a resolution of attempting to visit Abyssinia: though his allowance from the French government was inadequate to the expences of such an expedition, he was willing to furnish, from his own private property, whatever more might be required. The route by the Red Sea appeared to be the most agreeable, but finding that he must wait a considerable time before he could procure a passage to Dsjedda, and that he might be detained longer there till he could be able to find an opportunity of approaching the shores of Ethiopia, he determined to take the route of Upper Egypt; though it was extremely dangerous on account of the itinerant Arabs, who committed their depredations with impunity; and though the country was in a disordered state, Mourat having recently defeated Ishmael Bey.

Our traveller obtained letters of recommendation and protection from Mourat Bey, to all the governors in his interest. To these the Bey added a letter to Ismain-Abou-Ali, a powerful Arabic prince, by whose assistance he had been restored to the government. He advised Sonnini, before his departure, to adopt the turban, and the dress of one of his officers, to avoid the persecutions of the people. He also procured letters from the superior of the missionaries for the propagation of the faith, who have four convents for the reception of monks in Upper Egypt.

Sonnini engaged a Syrian christian as an interpreter, who spoke seven languages fluently, but without critically understanding the principles. He had agreed with the master of a small vessel to convey him into Upper Egypt, and no other person was to be permitted to enter the vessel without his approbation; and he might stop, or proceed, as his inclination should suggest. On these conditions he was to pay about seven shillings and six-pence per day for the use of the boat, and the labour of the master and his crew.

animals on which christians of any country are permitted to appear.

Asses in Egypt are preferred to horses, by those who travel over the deserts, as they are more hardy and less delicate in the choice of their food. The Mussulmen in their pilgrimage to Mecca, and the chiefs of the Nubian caravans, are generally conveyed by these animals. Some of them frequently stand for hire in the streets, ready saddled and bridled. The opulent inhabitants of Cairo spare no expence in the trappings of asses, and in procuring those which are the most valuable.

The period of our author's departure was now fixed; but, on his arrival at Boulac, the wind blew so violently from the south that he found it impossible to proceed; yet being happily relieved from his gloomy situation at Cairo, he passed the day agreeably at Boulac, walking about deliberately with a pipe in his mouth, observing the scenes and bustle of a commercial port. At night he visited the baths, which are very fine at Boulac. These are superb buildings for the purpose of bathing without water, where warm and humid vapours moisten the body, and mixing with the perspiration they excite, descend in copious drops over all the limbs. A number of operations are performed in the course of bathing, which Sonnini particularly enumerates, and adds, the persons who attend "draw a piece of pumice-stone over the soles of the feet."—Here, the French narrator observes, "you enjoy a delicious repose, and cannot forbear yielding to a kind of voluptuous langour."

But though the baths in Turkey are handsome buildings, they are much inferior, with regard to magnificence, to those which the Romans constructed under their emperors; the ruins of them, which remain, strike us with astonishment. The women in Cairo and Boulac have particular days and hours for visiting the baths, when no man is permitted to approach them *.

Sonnini left Boulac on the 21st of March, but proceeded no farther than to old Cairo, the master pretending that some repairs were necessary to the boat. This city, which marks the site of the Babylon of Egypt, is about half a league distant from Boulac, and is the port for such boats as come down from the Said. The Jews have a synagogue here, and the Catholics a convent and a church; the Copts possess a grotto, or low chapel, which, according to pious tradition, is said to have been inhabited by the Virgin Mary, with the infant Jesus, when they fled into Egypt. Here may be seen the granaries of Joseph, if the name of granaries can be properly applied to a large open space of ground, enclosed with high walls, and divided into separate courts. The walls are injudiciously constructed, and have not the appearance of antiquity; evidently contradicting the popular error, which has attributed their erection to Joseph the patriarch †.

On the other side of Roudda stands the town of Gizah, rendered peculiarly pleasing by the lofty turrets of the mosques, the numerous date-trees, and the majestic river which laves the foundation of the houses. In the vicinity of Gizah stood the ancient city of Memphis, and at two or three leagues distance are those splendid monuments of Egyptian glory and magnificence, the pyramids, which bear indiscriminately the name of the pyramids of Memphis, or the pyramids of Gizah.

Sonnini having collected the master and sailors belonging to his vessel, two triangular sails, filled by a fresh breeze from the north, drove her forward with rapidity; and her prow opened for itself an easy passage, notwithstanding the resistance of the current. After proceeding about eight leagues, she stopped near a little mud-village called Sheck Itman, which had a picturesque appearance, from its being surrounded with groves of date-trees. Several white herons perched among the verdant boughs, to add splendour to the scene.

In the chain of rocky mountains, which border the eastern shore of the Nile, beginning at Cairo, great cavities are seen, whence stones had been extracted for the construction of Memphis and the pyramids: the stones of the latter are exactly of the same species with the calcareous rock of the mountains.

* Opposite to Boulac, on the western shore of the Nile, the small village of Embabé presents itself, where butter is to be procured in the greatest perfection, and where only butter can be had fit for eating in any part of Egypt. The fertile plains in the vicinity of this village, abound wih excellent productions; among which is a species of lupins, in high estimation among Egyptians. After stripping the seeds of a thick hard skin, the inhabitants boil the seeds, (or pease) in salt and water; they are frequently sold, ready dressed, in the streets and markets. The christians of the east eat lupins to create a relish for brandy, of which they often drink excessively. Flour is also made of lupins, which is used like that of other farinaceous plants; their stalks, burnt to cinders, supply the places of charcoal in the preparation of gun-powder.

† The aqueduct which conveys water to the castle, is the work of the Arabs, and is certainly a very beautiful structure; it is supported by three hundred and fifty lofty arcades; and the water is raised by a chain pump, with four wheels, which is worked with oxen. In front of Old Cairo, the small island of Roudda is situated, in the middle of the river: on this island the mekkias, or measure, is erected, to ascertain the progress of the inundation. It is a high pillar, supposed to be the work of the Arabs.

On

On the 22d, our travellers continued their progress up the Nile*: Sonnini saw, at a little distance, the pyramids of Sakkara, and also a town of the same name, celebrated for its catacombs of mummies. The north wind still continued favourable to our travellers, but sometimes blew violent squalls: whirlwinds were frequent on the Nile, which give a kind of flatulent motion to the water, as if it was boiling up. In the plain of Sakkara, columns of sand were raised by the wind almost even with the clouds. Passing through several villages, our travellers stopped for the evening at Kafr Jaiat, where a kiachef resided. The western shore of the Nile is here lofty and steep; but on the eastern bank the chain of mountains retires, leaving vast spaces for cultivation†.

On the morning of the 23d, the boat proceeded five leagues farther to Riha, a village on the western shore, almost opposite to Atsieh, a town anciently consecrated to the Cyprian goddess, called Aphroditopolis. The following day it was impossible to make use of sails, the boat was therefore drawn by a rope; while, M. Sonnini, walking along the side of the Nile, killed several wild pigeons. After proceeding about three leagues, they moored at night opposite Schment-el-Arab: the houses of this village, like those of Upper Egypt, are square, with pigeon-houses over their roofs, and appear handsome at a distance; but on approaching them, nothing but mud-walls and wretchedness appear to delight the eye of the beholder. During this day's route, the eastern shore seemed steril and uninhabited; the western was cultivated and fertile.

Several large tracts of land are covered with the carthamus, a productive source of trade to the Egyptians, the flowers affording the beautiful red dye, known by the name of *safranum*. But it has a strong offensive smell‡.

Similar gusts, with aggravated circumstances, continued on the 27th: the mariners were much dejected, and could hardly be prevailed on to attempt to put the boat again in motion; and when they did, the fury of the storm rendered their endeavours abortive, and they were compelled to stop behind a point of sand, to protect the vessel from the violent agitation of the current: the heat was more excessive than on the preceding day, and the sweat distilled from every pore: the shifting sand, adhering to their faces, obliged the mariners to be continually cooling their eyes with the water of the river, and clearing them of the intrusive scorching dust. Towards evening, however, the fury of this scorching wind abated, and the party was enabled to proceed to Benisouef, a large, handsome, opulent town on the western shore, about thirty leagues distant from Cairo. The houses are constructed of brick, mingled with the date-trees, and the aspiring turrets render the aspect of the place more pleasing than the generality of towns and villages in Upper Egypt. A manufactory of coarse carpets gives it commercial consequence, and the fertility of the adjacent fields promotes the happiness of the neighbouring inhabitants. It is under the jurisdiction of a kiaschef.

A profound calm succeeded this tempest on the 28th, which continued till four in the evening, when the travellers proceeded on their voyage, and at night arrived at a village called Bébé, the residence of a kiaschef, and embellished with a mosque and a convent. On the 29th a fine breeze

* In sailing up the Nile, a great number of villages are to be seen in every direction. Boats, all of the same kind, and navigated in the same manner, about ten or fifteen tons burthen, continually pass and repass. These are filled with the vegetable productions of the country; sheep, goats, men and women; sometimes a horse or a camel is to be seen lying down in the boat. *Ledyard's Trav. into Egypt.*

† With people, like the Egyptians," says Sonnini, "I could not expect to accomplish a voyage, exempt from disputations: greedy and dishonest, whatever benefit you confer on them, they are never contented." Our traveller had brought with him an ample provision of coffee and tobacco, which, from the moment of his sailing with them, he had shared with them; but being dissatisfied with his mode of liberality, they modestly demanded possession of the tobacco and coffee, that they might supply themselves as they thought proper. Sonnini not only refused to comply with their insolent demand, but from that moment discontinued his voluntary douceurs: they broke out into murmurs on the occasion, which were of pretty long duration, but finding they were wholly ineffectual, they at length thought proper to be quiet.

‡ The sailors were again obliged to haul along the boat on the 26th, the wind blowing from the south: during the whole morning they only reached the town of Bousef, about a quarter of a league farther. Here they encountered one of those violent gusts of wind from the south, so dangerous and alarming in these countries. "Wretched," says Sonnini, "is the situation of those who find themselves entangled in the vast sandy deserts with which Egypt is bordered; intrepidity then is of no avail whatever, and the most valiant armies may be there overturned with clouds of sand which the wind drives impetuously along: they may be stifled to death, and perish in despair. The atmosphere was on fire, and at the same time darkened by whirlwinds of dust." Both men and animals inhaled the scorching vapours, mingled with burning sand, the plants were parched by the excessive heat, and all animated nature experienced its baleful influence.

wafted

wafted the vessel, and the weather and atmosphere were delightful: the eastern shore exhibited mountains of sand and rock, in some places verging into the river, in others retiring into the desert, and adding to the horror of its aspect. These barren mountains have acquired the name of Dsjebel el Teir (Mountains of the Birds), to indicate the inhabitants who people them. The adventurers thought proper to cast anchor in the vicinity of Sheick Zaïar, a large place on the western shore, after having sailed about five leagues.

On the 30th they continued their route to Senon-Seni, where they particularly observed the manner in which the women provide themselves with a plenitude of water from the Nile. Each individual is laden with three earthen vessels: one, very large, which is placed upon the head; the second, somewhat smaller, hangs behind the back, supported by a rope passing across the forehead; and the third, which is the smallest, is supported on the left shoulder, and held by the right hand.

On the 31st a pleasant breeze conducted the travellers to Miniet, where a mountainous chain extends along the bank of the Nile towards Arabia, exhibiting the appearance of a lofty wall, from its perpendicular position. This city has a very pleasing appearance, the houses of which are chiefly constructed of unburnt brick; but those of the kiaschef, and some few of the principal people, are built of stone. A tax is collected here on all vessels navigating the Nile; and here is a manufactory of earthen vessels called *bardacks*, in which water acquires a pleasant degree of coolness*, which makes it very salutary in so scorching a climate. Mutilated columns, and pillars of granite, with accumulated heaps of rubbish, clearly demonstrate that Miniet occupies the place of a more ancient city. Some have supposed it to be Hermopolis the Great; others are of opinion that the ruins are those of Cynopolis, where dogs were worshipped by the populace; and a modern traveller supposes Miniet to be the ancient Philœ. The modern city, however, is about one hundred and fifty miles from Cairo †.

A dreadful storm arose on the evening of the second of April, accompanied with hail, which is seldom seen in Egypt: whirlwinds of sand obscured the beams of the sun, and precipitate undulations agitated the surface of the river. The storm having abated on the 3d, the travellers resumed their voyage on the 4th, and came within sight of Scheick Abade, a resort of pirates to the east of the Nile; where immense magnificent ruins announce the site of a large city that was founded by the emperor Adrian, who rendered himself contemptible by his unnatural passion for Antinous ‡.

The boat-master was, with great difficulty prevailed on by Sonnini to approach these ruins, as they are peopled by the worst tribe of Egyptians, and the most ferocious robbers: after some altercation, however, he landed with his draughtsman, and found, among a rich variety of antique monuments, a triumphal arch supported by fluted pillars, fifty feet in width. A number of granite pillars stand towards the mountains, but the other remains are a confused mass of ruins. While the travellers were engaged on this spot, the report of a gun announced the approach of robbers, and they had just time to escape to the boat,

* Mr. Bruce, in his travels to discover the source of the Nile.

† M. Sonnini had two letters of recommendation given him at Cairo; one for the kiaschef of Miniet, and the other for an opulent friend to the French merchants; but they were both absent; the kiaschef was levying contributions throughout his district, and the Turk had retired to one of his villages near the town. The epistle directed to the latter was instantly forwarded to him; which procured a present from him to our author of five excellent sheep, and two large pots of butter; with a complimentary message, expressive of his regret, and lamenting that he was not on the spot to accommodate him.

The second person, in point of consequence, at Miniet, having heard that our author was a physician, sent a messenger to request his attendance, as he had unfortunately broke his leg three days before. Sonnini attended the summons, and found the patient had been most curiously handled by a Coptic surgeon. He was laid upon the ground without either matrass, mat, or carpet, with his thigh and leg stretched out. His extended leg and thigh were kept in that position by a little temporary brick wall, which the physician had erected on each side. The fractured limb was to be confined in this piece of masonry, till a perfect cure had been accomplished; and, in order to hasten the knitting of the bone, a plaister was daily applied to the limb, composed of earth, oil, and the white of an egg.

‡ Antinopolis was built on the site of the ancient Egyptian Abidus, long celebrated for the oracles delivered by Besa, a pretended divinity. Abidus and Antinopolis are, however, now mingled in one general destruction: the vestiges of the latter excite the more regret, as its mutilated remains exhibit elegant forms and graceful contours of the best Grecian and Roman architecture, instead of those gigantic monuments of stone usually found among Egyptian ruins, which rather create astonishment than admiration.

and

Ruins of the Temple of

HERMOPOLIS *in* EGYPT.

Denon

Warren

Milton sc.

COLUMN *at* ANTINOPOLIS
FIGURE *found at* ECHMIMM.

Sonnini.

and to get clear of those plundering barbarians, who did not neglect, however, to salute them with many threats and imprecations*.

Quitting the desolate shores of Antinous, they proceeded to Mellavoui, a small handsome city, situated at about half a league from the western bank of the Nile, which is the residence of a kiaschef. The next day the voyage was continued for about ten leagues, when the travellers arrived at Manfelout. Two leagues below, on the eastern bank, a chain of lofty rocks projects over the river, called the mountain of Aboufeda, the name of a holy mussulman, who was interred in a small chapel there. Near this monument of piety, or rather of superstition, many of the same religion, who are the most abandoned robbers, live in caves hewn in the rock, and whom it is nearly impossible to exterminate, from the difficulty of exploring their retreats.

Manfelout is larger and handsomer than Miniet, and its commerce chiefly consists in grain of every kind, and cloth; having large manufactures of the latter. It is pleasantly situated, and surrounded with palm and fruit-trees. On the eastern shore, opposite Manfelout, a monastery of Copts presents itself, enclosed with high walls, which is entered only by a basket, drawn up by means of a pulley; whence the edifice has acquired the appellation of The Convent of the Pulley.

M. Sonnini, who had known the kiaschef of Manfelout, at Cairo, had received from him letters of recommendation to all his dependents; he was therefore hospitably received at Manfelout by the kiaschef's treasurer; and on the 6th of April proceeded to Siout, five leagues farther. He was accommodated there in a house belonging to the same commander, which was elegant and spacious; and as he intended to continue some time at this place, he thought proper to discharge his boatman, with whose conduct he had little reason to be satisfied. He acted like many other faithless servants, who frequently complain of hard services being imposed upon them by the master, and yet make supplication to remain with him, when he forms a resolution of parting with them.

Siout is a large city in Upper Egypt, erected on an artificial eminence about a mile on the west side of the Nile: a canal conducts the water to the city, over which a handsome gothic bridge, of three arches, is erected. Near this spot the ancient city of Lycopolis † is supposed to have stood, where a wolf or a jackall was worshipped ‡.

Having letters from Mourat Bey to the kiaschef of Siout, our traveller was graciously received by him. The kiaschef Ibrahim, receiver of the taxes from the caravans of Nubia, was also extremely obliging, and lent him horses to enable him to visit the environs of the city §.

Sonnini having acquired considerable reputation at Siout, as a physician, people from all quarters came to consult him, and those of a superior class prevailed on him to visit them. But he was not much gratified with the excess of fame he had so generally procured; as he knew that a professor of medicine must here practice his science in a particular manner ‖. Be the disorder what

* In the mountains near Antinoe many openings are to be seen, which were probably places of sepulture or catacombs; such as are to be found in the environs of all the great cities of the Thebais. The inhabitants ascribe their excavation to Demons: in which opinion they are supported by the declaration of the missionary Vansleb. The Christian legends record them as the solitary retreats of holy hermits. The mosque of Shech Abade, inclosing the tomb and relics of an Arab saint of that name, form a strong contrast to the magnificent fragments of the city of Adrian, But it is truly diverting that, while the Mahometans regard this saint as a zealous partisan of the Koran, he is claimed by the Christians as one of their bishops, who was honoured with martyrdom at Insiné.

† Pocock imagined that Siout was the site of Antœopolis, though Ptolomy has placed it on the eastern shore. Mr. Bruce, in his travels to the source of the Nile, says he conceives Siout to be erected on the ruins of the ancient city of Isin.

‡ Sonnini supposes the Jackall to have been the sacred animal.

§ About a mile behind Siout a chain of rocky mountains are seen, which appear from the city to be pierced with holes of different forms: these are the entrances of caverns hewn out in the rock; some of which are beautifully ornamented with symbolical figures. They lead to spacious halls, having hieroglyphics on the sides, nearly obliterated by time; and the remains of paintings are still distinguishable on the cielings. It seems very probable that these excavations were intended as places of sepulture by the ancient Egyptians: this opinion is, in some degree, supported by the following remark, that they are always found in the places near which great cities existed; whence it may be inferred, that the caverns of the mountains of Siout have been the cataeombs of the Lycopolitans.

‖ "What would become (says Sonnini) of the physician who should venture to prescribe a remedy that is *not taken by the mouth?* He might esteem himself happy if he came off with his life; as such a proposal would be considered as a most serious insult. I shall never forget what befel a French surgeon in one of the Ports of Caramania. A Turkish Aga consulted him on a severe pain in his head. The surgeon prescribed a *particular* remedy. The Mussulman, enraged that to cure a complaint in the *head*, application was to be made to a *part diametrically opposite*, started up in a fury, drew

what it may, the physician only deigns to feel the pulse before he prescribes; if he should ask a single question of the patient, or shew the least hesitation, he would be instantly dismissed with contempt. Should he unfortunately be called in by a man in power, he *must* either cure his patient, or expect to die himself; for if the patient dies, the physician is punished as an assassin*.

But while Sonnini was employed, against his inclination, in restoring the health of others, he was himself attacked with the violent disease of the eyes, called by the Greeks *chemosis:* the ball of one of his eyes started from its orbit; sleep never closed his swollen eye-lids, and his face had a most horrible appearance. Unable to bleed himself, he sent for an Italian missionary to perform that operation. This pretender to surgery was so unskilful in the business he had undertaken, that he broke the lancet in his patient's arm, which he slashed in every direction, to extract the fragment. He so far succeeded in the operation, however, that he gave our author a copious bleeding, but he procured him no relief.

Sonnini had recourse to cooling draughts, but without effect; his sufferings continually increased. At length he ordered some poppy-heads to be boiled in water, which he drank when night arrived, and experienced profound repose for about fifteen hours; during which time the narcotic proved so salutary, that his eye returned into its socket, and when he awoke he was perfectly cured: a little dimness, however, remained for a few days. But, during his convalescence, our author found it necessary to change his lodging; the kiaschef, to whom the house belonged, having arrived with all his train. A small house was hired for our traveller, and his companions, who occupied the whole of it: and he solemnly declares that he paid only *two medinas*, (rather more than a penny a-day); though he supposes, that being a foreigner, they were induced to charge him this extravagant sum†.

The kiaschef of Siout entertained a very high opinion of M. Sonnini's talents in the medical line, and supposed him also to be a profound dealer in magic, he therefore proposed to him that they should go together to a mosque in the city, where great treasure was said to be concealed, and discover all this treasure by means of his sorcery; which might be shared between them. Our author assured him that he was wholly unacquainted with the method of finding gold, but, if it was his particular desire, he would accompany him to the mosque: he did so; and, after examining the building, assured him that the report which had been propagated was entirely groundless, and that no riches were concealed in any part of it.

The Syrian interpreter having frequently told Sonnini that the kiaschef wished to engage him in his service, our traveller took this opportunity of reproaching the commander with endeavouring to deprive him of so valuable a servant: he accordingly desired a young Alexandrian to mention

drew his sabre, and was with great difficulty prevented from sacrificing the Frenchman to his resentment.

* Except in some particular maladies, the Egyptians acknowledge only three sources of diseases; the *bile*, the *blood*, and the *cold*; and, having felt the pulse, the physician has only to pronounce one of those words, without making use of any explanatory terms of appellation, whatever may be the disease. No great difficulty attends the proper choice of one of these words: a yellow complexion denotes *bile*: red announces *blood*, and pale denominates *cold*. M. Sonnini became well acquainted with these important signs, and seldom erred in his conjectures: he also employed a little artifice by concealing his own knowledge of Arabic, and being always attended by his interpreter. By this deception, judiciously managed, he obtained great celebrity.

A common method of cure, among the Egyptian physicians, is to burn the part affected: this practice among the ancient Greeks was often successful, when it was exercised with discretion; but in Egypt it is performed so unskilfully, that the patients are frequently covered with sores, proceeding from the application of hot irons, when the disorder has not been in the least abated.

† Passing the streets of Siout, our traveller frequently saw the processions which attend the circumcision of children. One of these processions opened with hautboys and cymbals: flags of different coloured silks followed next, on which was written in Arabic the Mussulman profession of faith‡. These were surrounded by priests, chanting passages of the Koran: behind them a man carried a tabernacle, adorned with diamonds and streamers, containing the sacred book. The circumcised children followed, splendidly arrayed, and mounted on horses adorned with all the trappings of luxury: two men supported each child, and a third led the horse. Several camels also appeared in the procession, each bearing a pair of kettle drums. Women closed the scene, mingling their shrill vocal sounds with roaring instruments, accompanied with long rollings of the tongue; the common method of expressing joy among the Egyptians.

An extraordinary circumstance happened at Siout on the 15th of April. Rain is so uncommon in the southern parts of Egypt, that it may almost be said it never rains there: but on the day above stated, a violent south wind blew, accompanied by a clouded sky during the whole day; and from time to time a little rain fell; but at night a storm arose, with a torrent of rain, accompanied with lightning, and some peals of thunder.

‡ There is but one God, and Mahomet is his prophet.

this circumstance to the Kiaschef, who seemed astonished at the charge. The interpreter being sent for, and interrogated on his business, acknowledged he had been guilty of misrepresentation, in consequence of which the enraged Kiaschef ordered him to be bastinadoed; but, on the earnest solicitation of Sonnini, a pardon for him was procured.

SECTION XII.

Journey to Sennaar—Love Potions—Conspiracy to assassinate the Author—Who is again sent for to a Patient—Dinner with the Copts—Robbers—Erysipelas—Ruins of Panopolis—Courtezans—Farschout—Sahet—Echmimm—Accident which befel the Author's Boat—Dendera—Tentyris.

WHILE Sonnini was ruminating on the journey into Abyssinia, a favourable opportunity offered at Siout for undertaking it. He proposed to accompany a caravan then on the eve of departure to Sennaar, whence he intended to pass into Abyssinia. The Kiaschef Ibrahim having great influence with the people of this caravan, Sonnini requested him to use his interest with the Kabir * in settling the agreement for the journey. The Nubian at first demanded an exorbitant sum, and several conferences ensued on the subject at the house of Ibrahim, through the medium of the Syrian interpreter; but no agreement was concluded on. A few days after, the same Nubian came to Sonnini's house, requesting to speak with him in private. Having dismissed every one but the interpreter, he asked our traveller if he knew of any drugs that would act powerfully as *love-potions*, assuring him that such stimulents were much coveted in his country, and that the king had expressly commanded him to procure such compositions.

Our traveller, without paying much regard to the Kabir's information, replied in the affirmative, which gave him such infinite pleasure, that he instantly abated one half of his demand. Satisfied with the moderate terms proposed, Sonnini flew to Ibrahim with the news; but Ibrahim did not appear to rejoice on the occasion: he indeed cooly congratulated our author, but requested he would conclude no agreement without his interposition. In the mean time the Nubian seemed extremely anxious for our traveller to visit Sennaar, assuring him that he would be graciously received by his Sennarian majesty; and at length declared that he would require nothing for his journey, resting assured that the king would make him a sufficient recompence for conducting the stranger to his court †.

These Nubians come from the extremity of Africa, to bring into the capital of Egypt those valuable commodities which nature has placed there, to compensate the heat of the climate, and the oppressive ardour of the sun. Besides gold, and other merchandize, they also bring monkeys and perroquets, which amuse the affluent at Cairo. The monkeys, which, like many other animals, were objects of veneration among the Egyptians, are not natives of the country ‡.

As

* A name given in Nubia to men in power.

† This sudden change created some suspicions in Sonnini's breast, but he was still impatient to embrace an opportunity of performing his favourite plan; and was on the point of closing the agreement with the Kabir, when he received a message from the Kiaschef, inviting him to come to his house, attended only by the young Alexandrian. On his arrival there, the Kiaschef informed him that he must think no more of his journey to Sennaar; for that, suspecting some treachery from the Kabir's pressing importunities, he had caused him to be watched, and had discovered that the Syrian interpreter and the Nubian chief had agreed to massacre M. Sonnini and his companions, as soon as they arrived at the desert, and divide their spoils between them. That our traveller might not entertain a doubt of the fact, the Kiaschef sent for the Syrian, and mentioned to him the particulars he had discovered of his perfidy, and advised him to confess the whole horrible plot. The confounded Syrian fell, as if thunder-struck, at the feet of the kiaschef, acknowledging his crime, and accusing the Kabir of having projected it, and adding some circumstances which were not perfectly known. Ibrahim, assuming an indignant tone, ordered the offender to be caned to death, and Sonnini permitted the instruments of punishment to be produced, before he attempted to intercede for his pardon; which the kiaschef would not comply with, but on condition that his master would faithfully promise to punish the offender. Sonnini, having expressed his gratitude to the Kiaschef, from whom he had received many other favours, returned to his house, where he found the Kabir, who, not knowing what had happened, had come again to solicit his speedy departure with the caravan.

‡ The Nubians of Dongola and Sennaar are tall and well proportioned; they wear a beard and whiskers, and their skin

As a physician, Sonnini's reputation was extended far and wide. A Sheick of the Arabian Bedouins encamped near Manfelout, hearing of his extraordinary skill, invited him to his camp; but, on his arrival, he found he was not to exercise his art on the Sheick, but to restore to sight an old Arab who had been blind for upwards of two years. He was, however, informed to his great surprise, that our author's skill did not extend to performing miracles, but he caused him to be carefully sent back to Siout. He then took leave of the Sheick, and of the innumerable quantity of flies which swarmed within his camp *.

The plains which surround Siout are remarkable for their fertility; the orchards yield a fine variety of fruit, and the farinaceous plants excite admiration by a rapid growth and an abundant produce. Hemp is much cultivated in these countries; but instead of being spun into thread, as in Europe, it is prepared by the Arabs and Egyptians in such a manner as to supply the want of intoxicating liquors: it creates a kind of voluptuous relaxation, of a delicious stupor, which inspires gaiety and produces pleasant dreams. It is different from European hemp, its stalk being thicker and less elevated; its leaves broader; its fruit more numerous, and the plant itself exhaling a stronger smell.

After a long residence at Siout, partly occasioned by indisposition, Sonnini thought of continuing his route to the south of Egypt; but, being unable to procure a boat to ascend the Nile, he hired two camels and six asses, to convey him and his companions to Echmim. Quitting Siout on the 23d of May, about noon, the travellers proceeded for about ten hours, and arrived at Tomieh about nine at night; a very small market town, but the residence of a Kias-chef. In the course of the day they passed through the large town of Aboutigé, near which are the ruins of the ancient city of Abotis; but no monuments or remarkable fragments remain, a confused heap of rubbish is all that is now exhibited. In the mosque at Tomieh, a stone camel was shewn, which, the inhabitants affirm, turns itself towards Mecca when the pilgrims leave Cairo, and turns again towards Cairo when the pilgrims quit Mecca. But Sonnini had no opportunity of examining this wonderful statue.

The travellers pursued their journey the next morning, leaving Tomieh about six o'clock; but they had hardly rode two leagues when four men on horseback directed their course towards them; and, to remove all doubts, a peasant declared they were robbers. For a considerable time they continued to ride round our author and his companions: sometimes advancing, sometimes retreating. Our travellers being thoroughly prepared, were perfectly easy with regard to any attack that these highwaymen might think proper to make, looking on, and diverting themselves with their manœuvres. Observing at last, that instead of exciting terror they only afforded amusement, the robbers disappeared with velocity.

Arriving at Tahta, a town about twelve leagues from Siout, the travellers stopped to rest themselves. Here our author's progress was impeded by the application of an opulent Copt, named Mallum Mourcous, who requested him to call at his house, to administer advice in a very dangerous disease; and, on his arrival, entreated him to decline the completion of his journey till he had restored the petitioner to health. Sonnini, however, vainly attempted to accelerate his departure, by asserting that the Arabic prince, Ismain-Abou-Ali, expected to see him. But the Copt assured him he was well known to the prince, and would make so satisfactory an apology to him in a letter, that he would be answerable that he would not be offended. Sonnini,

skin is of a shining black. They profess Mahometanism, with the addition of many pagan superstitions; they go almost naked, having seldom any other covering than is required by decency; but some of them wear a long shirt of grey cloth, the sleeves of which are turned up, and leave the arm bare. They have usually several small leathern cases, for the reception of money, tobacco, or other articles in general use; on the bend of the right arm a poniard is fastened, with a leathern sheath; they have no covering for the head, but they plait their woolly hair in different modes, as fancy may suggest. Those Nubians who engage in commerce, speak the Arabic language; but among themselves they have a particular idiom.

* One of the rich Copts of Siout insisted on giving Sonnini a dinner. The interior of the house was commodious, and every thing had the appearance of affluence. The repast was served up with profusion, and the company drank copiously of excellent date-brandy, served up in glasses of Venice crystal. In other respects the people take their meals like the Turks and Arabs. They swallow with precipitation, and are not like men whom the pleasure of society assemble together; but rather like brutes whom want and voracity collect around their pasture. The grease runs in streams from the sides of their mouths, and the stomach sends forth frequent fumes, attended with reiterated reports.

per-

perceiving that none of his attempts to evade would be regarded, consented to remain with his patient, according to his request.

His complaint was a violent erysipelas, a kind of St. Anthony's fire, which covered one side of his breast, and was attended with excruciating pain. He had been attended by all the physicians in the country, who had pronounced his malady incurable. Sonnini, however, modestly declares, "I will not say I was more skilful, but more fortunate" than others, "and at the end of ten days *Mallum Mourcous* was perfectly cured*."

The Copts are condemned as heretical in the Roman church; but, among those of Tahta, there were many converts to the Catholic faith. Their curé, who was a respectable man, had passed fifteen years in a seminary at Rome, and could speak Latin and Italian fluently. He assured Sonnini that the coptic Catholics were much persecuted by their brethren, and that one of the most violent persecutors was Mallum Mourcous †.

On his arrival at Echmimm, a town about half a league from the Nile, on the eastern bank, Sonnini hastened to the convent of Italian monks, where he found his companions preparing to re-cross the river in search of him. They informed him that their reception at the monastery had been uncivil and inhospitable; as they could not, without much difficulty, get permission to repose within the walls; and it was afterwards intimated to them that they must provide themselves with another lodging. M. Sonnini, notwithstanding he had a recommendatory letter from their superior at Cairo, was received in a manner equally rude, and obliged to leave the place without having seen any of the monks; though he had waited in the court half the day, exposed to the heat of the sun, while his companions procured a lodging for him in the city ‡.

A spruce delicate monastic read the letter from the superior with a smile of contempt, and then informed our author that he was not himself the superior, but he would seek after him. His words, however, did not accord with his actions, as, without farther ceremony, he turned himself round upon the sofa, without looking or speaking any more at the disgusted European.

The catholic Copts at Echmimm are supposed to form half the population of the city. Their curé had been ten years at Rome, and was highly estimated by his flock, as he added the practice of physic to that of divinity.

Echmimm would have been a beautiful city, if the houses had been built with better materials; the streets are wide and straight, while those of other cities in Egypt, are narrow, crooked, and irregular. The materials are indeed so defective,

* When the opulent Copt found himself relieved from his dangerous disorder, he knew not how to express the extent of his gratitude and joy. The day before his physician's departure, he sent him some rouleaux of seguins; but Sonnini, recollecting his former behaviour, returned the gold, and desired the messenger to inform his master, "that a Frenchman rendered services solely for the pleasure of being useful." He requested him to present to Mallum Mourcous a very fine telescope, as a mark of acknowledgment for his hospitality. The gift was accepted, and Sonnini, at his departure, left the Copt impressed with a more favourable opinion of Europeans, than he seems to have entertained at his arrival.

† The curé procured several antique stones, the engravings of which were not without merit. After the heavy rains of winter in the north of Egypt, and after the inundation of the Nile in the south, the Egyptians often discover engraved stones as well as medals. Though good medals are seldom found in Egypt, excellent engraved stones are frequently met with.

A species of palm-tree, called fan palm, is peculiar to Upper Egypt: it is there called the *doum*. This palm-tree, very common in Thebais, shoots forth several naked stalks, marked with circular rings, and terminated by broad leaves in the form of a fan. The fruits, like those of other palm-trees, grow in bunches. By disposing their stalks in the form of elegant vases, nature enlivens, with the verdure of these magnificent bouquets, plains frequently stripped naked, and generally scorched by the sun.

Leaving Tahta on the morning of the first of June, our traveller, weary of imitating the slow pace of the camels, went on before, with two of his attendants. After some time they stopped for their companions, but none of them were to be seen; a considerable part of a sultry day was spent in looking for them, whence it was conjectured that they had fallen a prey to robbers. As night approached, they proceeded in great anxiety to Souhaje, seven leagues from Tahta, where the Kiaschef politely invited them to sup and take their repose; but this hospitable reception could not dispel the uneasiness they experienced at the loss of their companions. The next morning, however, in going to cross the Nile to Echmimm, Sonnini had the satisfaction to learn, that his friends and their camels had crossed over the preceding day; their conductors having shewn them by a shorter route than that which he had taken.

‡ M. Sonnini thus describes the Monkish *petit maitre* who received him at the convent.—"A little beard, carefully trimmed, and arranged with uniformity, shaded without encumbering his chin; every thing about him announced the most attentive solicitudes of the toilet, as the *ton* of a *petit maitre*. My figure, scorched by the sun, appeared to startle him; the wrinkles of ill-humour furrowed his fair forehead, and a look of disdain measured me from top to toe."

that, should the rain fall as violently as it does near the coast in the Delta, the whole city would soon be washed away. A grey tint spread over the buildings, gives them a very gloomy appearance. The walls are embellished with earthen pots, the asylums of pigeons; and pigeon-houses, in the shape of a square tower, appear on many of their roofs. A chain of rocky mountains to the eastward reflects an excessive degree of heat. M. Sonnini says, " I never felt it *(the heat)* so violent as on the day after my arrival at Echmimm; that is to say, the 3d of the Month of June *."

Leaving Echmimm on the 9th of June, Sonnini and his companions crossed over to the western shore of the Nile, to pursue their journey by land to Farschout. During the whole of the day, the heat was so excessive, and the air impregnated with such fiery clouds of dust, that both men and cattle were in danger of suffocation. Passing through the city of Girge, the capital of Upper Egypt, they arrived at Bardis in the evening; when a wealthy inhabitant of that place, to whom they had a letter, received them with great civility. On the following day the travellers reached Farschout in the afternoon, where another colony of Italian monks were planted. Our travellers carried with them letters of recommendation, similar to those which had proved so ineffectual at Echmimm, and were anxious to know how they would operate: Sonnini therefore left his companions in the environs of the town, and proceeded to the house of the monks; an inferior servant refused to admit him, alledging that the superior was asleep. Sonnini then requested him to take charge of a letter from the superior-general; but even this favour was insultingly refused. Provoked at so many evasions, our author snatched the letter out of his hands, and retired fuming with rage.

He dispatched a person to procure a lodging among the people of the town: three hours elapsed in a state of uncertainty, while the messenger was endeavouring to find a suitable accommodation; during which time the travellers were exposed to the extremities of heat and dust. Sonnini then requested by means of an interpreter, that the monks would point out a house to which he might retire. The superior returned with the interpreter, and begged he would make choice of the convent, where he acknowledges to have received *civility*.

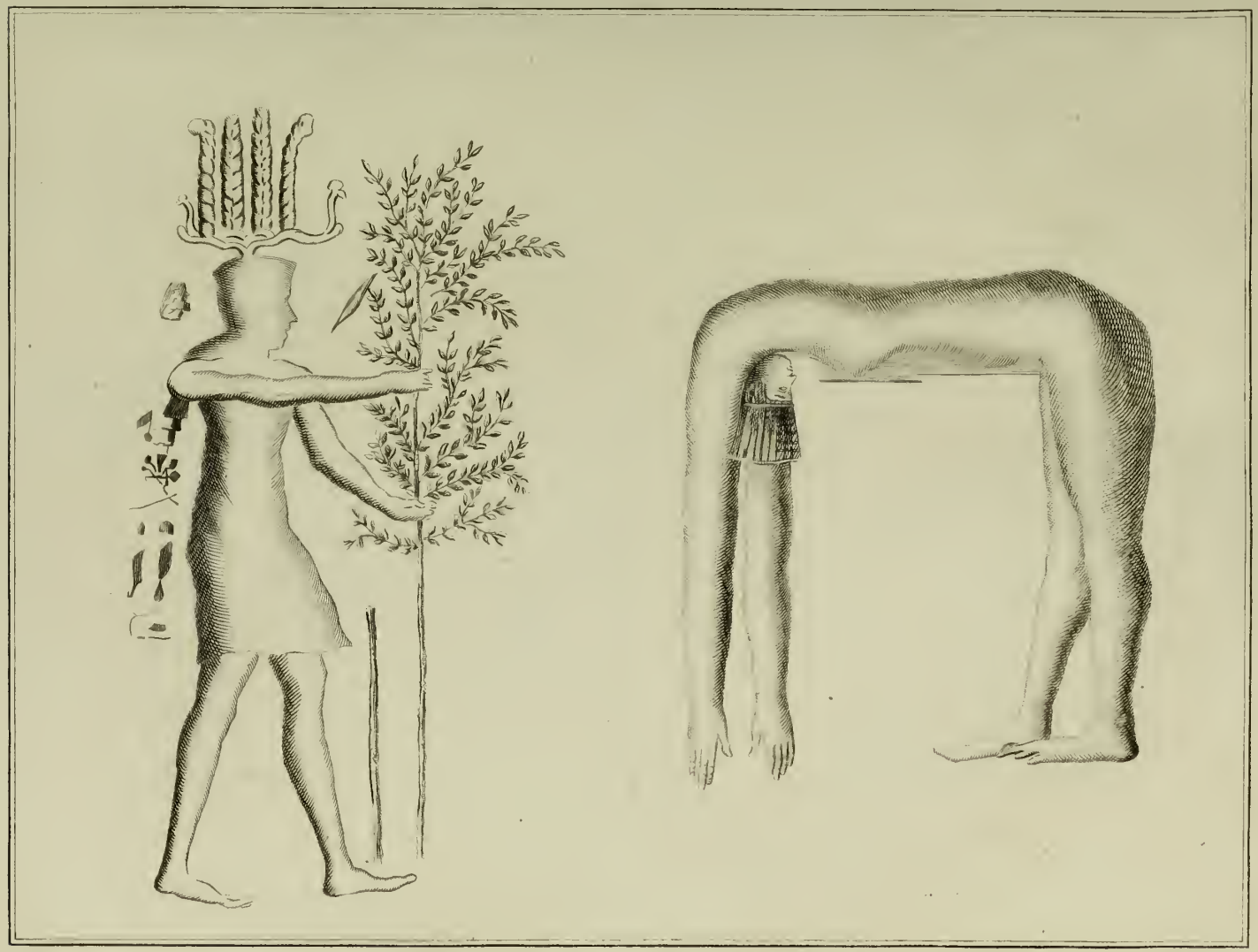
On the 15th of June, M. Sonnini quitted the convent of Farschout; the monks had behaved to him, during his stay, with great civility; and as the Nile was supposed to be infested with pirates, he committed part of his baggage to their care. He and his companions then repaired to the water-side, and got into the boat; which was just on the point of being pushed off, when a Mameluc with a party of soldiers came up, and saying the boat was engaged for the Kiaschef of Basjoura, his master, compelled our adventurers to disembark with their baggage. The camels that had brought the goods were therefore reladen, and the travellers were preparing to return to Farschout; when the Mameluc informed the interpreter, that if Sonnini would give him a chequin, he would resign the boat to him. M. Sonnini declared he would not give him a parat, being now convinced that he had acted without authority. The Mameluc reduced his claim to a pataca, about fourteen pence, and only requested that sum as a matter of favour. To prevent further delay our author complied; but so much time had elapsed in adjusting this busi-

* Ruins of the ancient city of Panopolis or Chemmis, are still to be seen to the eastward of Echmimm, and near the enclosure of the modern town. Among these an enormous stone, half sunk in the earth, demands particular notice; it has on one of its sides a Greek inscription, which is too much obliterated to be legible, but the word " *Tiberio*" is distinguishable. Beneath the surface of the ground, part of which has been dug up, some beautiful paintings appear. The most conspicuous figures are a sphere, with the twelve signs of the zodiac. There are also several ruins of ancient edifices, and some immense stones, resembling that already noticed.

An ancient mosque at Echmimm is still much venerated among the christians, who pretend that it was formerly one of their churches. They say it is more than a thousand years old. It appears, however, to have no pretensions to such antiquity. It is remarkable for having several small granite pillars, extracted from the ruins of Panopolis. Like the other cities of Egypt, Echmimm contains a great number of courtezans: their beauty and perfections have been highly extolled by many travellers, but if Sonnini is to be believed, " you only behold these wretched creatures, ugly for the most part, poorly dressed, and repelling by the excess of their effrontery." So far from being legally protected, as some authors have said, the Kiaschef's immediately banish all those who have substantiated charges against them; and some of these magistrates will not even permit a courtezan to come within their jurisdiction.

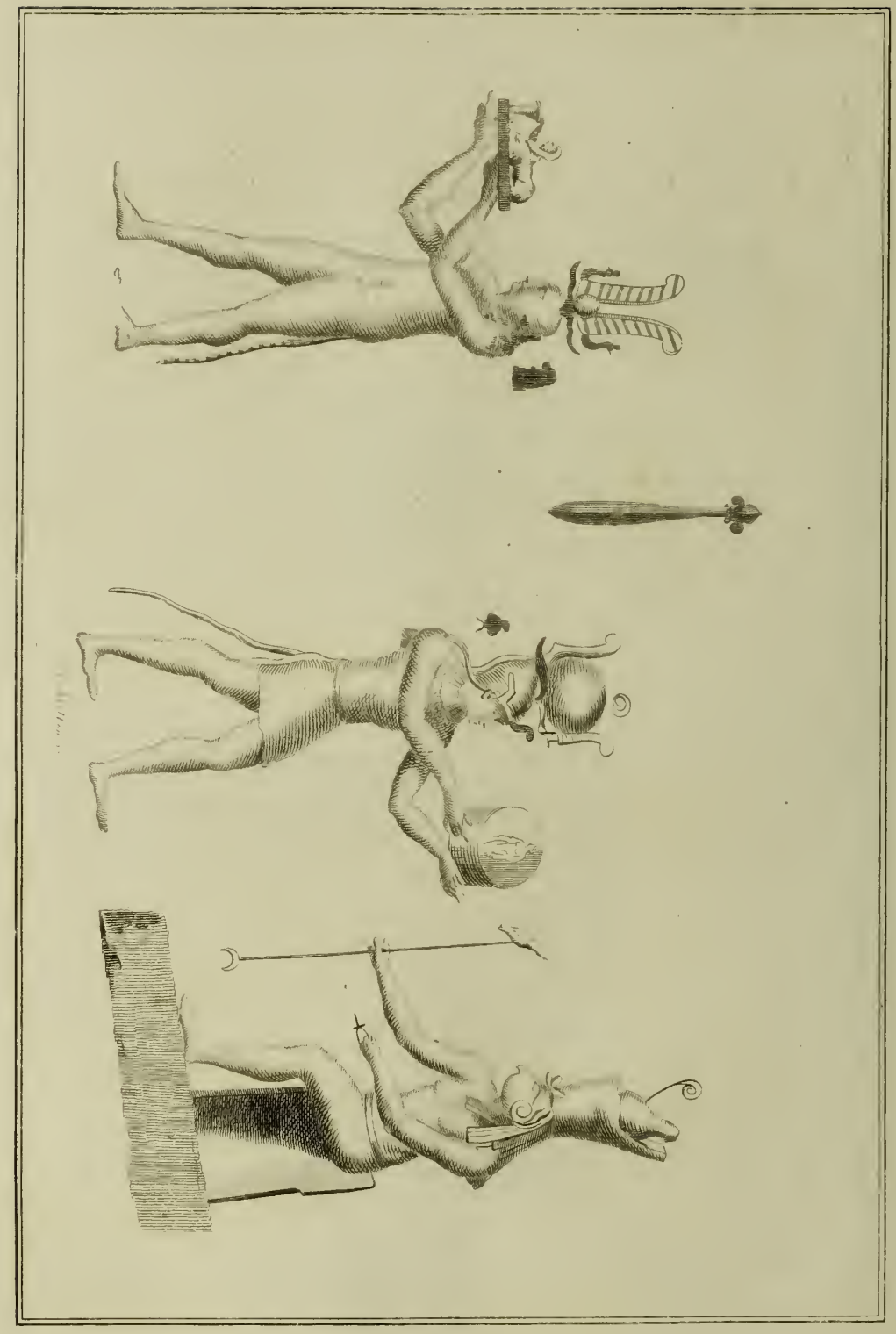
ness

Figures in the Temple of Dendera ..... Plate 4.



Milton sculp.t

Figures in the Temple of Dendera. ..... Plate 3.



Figures in the Temple of Dendera.....Plate 2.

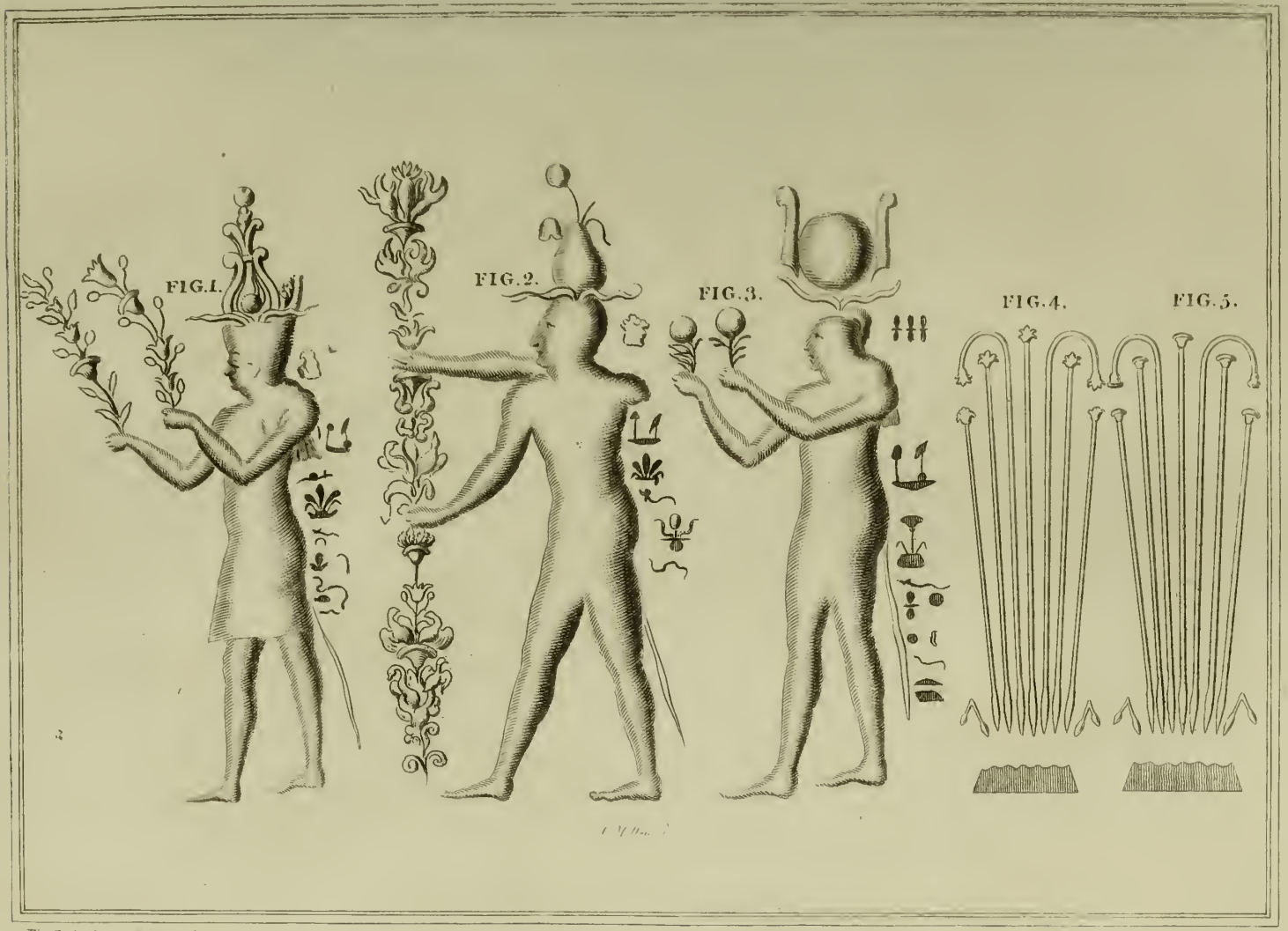


Fig 1. 2. 3 part of an Isiac Procession.

Fig 4. 5 the Water Lily.

Figures in the Temple of Dendera.

ness, that the boat could not depart till the next day, and the travellers took up their abode in it, near Sahet*.

The next morning the weather was calm, and the voyage was commenced, but the sailors were under the necessity of hauling the boat along with a rope. Several floats of water-melons were descending the Nile, the Egyptians never taking the trouble of loading boats with these fruits, but fasten them together in rafts, in order to convey them to their destined places. The first crocodiles our adventurers saw in the river were a little beyond Sahet, but they became more numerous southward. These frightful animals are so formidable to the inhabitants, that enclosures of stakes are in many places formed in the river, to prevent their biting off the women's legs, as they draw water.

The travellers stopped opposite Hou, a village on the site of the ancient city of Diospolis Parva. Heaps of rubbish, large bricks, stones, and an arcade that forms an entrance to a subterraneous conduit, are now the only vestiges of the ancient works. From *Hou* they proceeded to *Kafr Essaiad*, where they saw a flotilla descend down the river, conveying earthen ware to Cairo for sale. The wind being favourable, they proceeded in the night; but, on its becoming very dark, they stopped near an island of sand, below which the stream undermines the western bank in so great a degree as to occasion frequent falls of large masses of earth†.

On the evening of the 17th, they arrived at Dendera, near the ancient Tentyris, on the western shore of the Nile. The city itself was of great extent, and surrounded by fertile plains and orchards. Dendera and the surrounding country are under the dominion of an Arabic prince, who bears the title of emir, but is tributary to the Beys of Cairo. Our travellers waited on the emir, and presented him with the letters of Mourat Bey and prince Dervisch: he received the strangers graciously; and, by his conversation, seemed to possess exalted talents; his apartment indeed was mean, and the persons who surrounded him had a very wretched appearance. The prince, like the rest, wore a long black frock, and he was particularly distinguished by a turban. But the qualities of his mind made ample compensation for the poverty of his appearance; his good sense rendering him much superior to the generality of Egyptian governors‡.

M. Sonnini, his draughtsman, and interpreter, proceeded, on horseback to the site of Tentyris, about a quarter of a league distant from Dendera, towards the mountains of the west. They had hardly arrived there, when the emir and his attendants appeared. The prince accompanied them over every part, and pointed out such objects as had been noticed by former visitors, and the places where they had dug up the ground. He even desired him to give orders to have it dug up in any part he chose. This offer Sonnini de-

* The kiaschef, hearing of the behaviour of his representative, ordered him to restore the money he had extorted, and to apologize for his conduct: his manner was now as humble as it had before been insolent, but our author, on dismissing him, permitted him to carry off the fourteen pence.

† Our travellers had often heard these masses precipitate, and congratulated themselves on escaping their tremendous force, not thinking of the dangers that impended. The master and the sailors, having carelessly supposed they had fastened the boat to the shore, yielded to the power of sleep upon the beach; and Sonnini and his suite, after some time, fell asleep in the boat: at length the violence of the current detached the vessel from its insecure fastening, and carried it rapidly away. Thus they were carried down by the impetuosity of the stream, for the space of a league, when the boat violently struck with a terrible crash against the shore, very near a place from whence a large quantity of loosened earth had fallen. Awaked by this terrific shock, the astonished adventurers found the vessel, repelled by the land, driven towards it by the current, turning round in every direction, and furiously striking against the bank; the darkness of the night added to the horror of the scene, and for a time prevented them from finding the oars.

At length, however, they succeeded in getting near the centre of the river, when they heard a mass of earth fall on the very spot which they had quitted with so much difficulty. They proceeded to the opposite shore, and there fastened their boat, intending to wait for the return of day to assist them in finding out the sailors. They soon appeared; for, missing the boat, they swam to the opposite shore, and quickly obtained the necessary information. On their approach, Sonnini's companions, to shew their disapprobation of their negligent conduct, saluted them with some serious blows with the oars. The master, who was at some distance behind, hearing the roaring lamentations of the sufferers, had recourse to an active pair of heels to effect his escape. The threatened punishment, however, was afterwards withheld, on condition that he would voluntarily return to the boat.

‡ The Emir generously offered Sonnini a safe conduct to the ruins of Tentyris, and made honourable mention of several Europeans whom he had seen. Being asked by a person why foreigners were so desirous of visiting ruins, he informed him, that the ancestors of the Francs were once in possession of all Egypt, and that from respect to their forefathers, they now came in search of paintings and fragments, which effectually reminded them of their ancient power. An answer well calculated to combat the absurd prejudices of barbarians against an enlightened traveller.

clined

clined accepting, but thanked the emir for his obliging offer. The prince then mounted his horse and departed, leaving his son, and some of his servants, with peremptory commands that no person should presume to disturb our adventurers *.

The emir expressed the greatest regret at the disorders, which he said had been committed by the Mamelucs who had taken shelter in his small dominion. He visited Sonnini one day in his boat, which served him also for a habitation, preceded by baskets freighted with delicious fruits; he also gave our author an engraved stone, and some copper medals, found in the ruins: in return for which he presented the emir with a fowling-piece, and a small quantity of gun-powder, which his delicacy would hardly permit him to accept; but on his return home, he sent him several sheep and a liberal supply of other provision for his voyage, as a small compensation.

The evening before their departure from Dendera, some robbers were discovered on the banks of the Nile, who evidently were preparing to attack our travellers. Sonnini was roused from a profound sleep by a sudden scream, expressive of alarm. The sailors, on perceiving the thieves, had adopted this terrible outcry, as the safest method of defence. Their clamours having prevented M. Sonnini's attendants from seizing two men preparing to enter, they liberally distributed some blows among the sailors. At length a discharge of musquetry was fired, which prevented the robbers from renewing the attack.

SECTION XIII.

Neguadé—Sonnini applied to as a Physician, by an Arabic Prince—Rising of the Nile—Mallum Poctor—Appolinis Parva—Cosseir, a Port on the Red Sea—Mocha Coffee—Astonishing Produce of Wheat—Pigeons, Turtle Doves, Sparrows—Flies, Bees, Wasps, Scorpions—Wives poison unfaithful Husbands—Burning Maslich—Perfidy of Montus—Kous—Grasnes—Thebes—Gournei—Pestured with Rats and Fleas—Swine's Flesh—Crocodiles.

RESUMING the voyage on the 21st of June, the boat proceeded to Abnoub, a considerable village, five leagues to the south of Dendera, on the eastern bank of the Nile. This village began the territories of Ismain Abou Ali the Arabic prince, to whom Sonnini was sent as a physician. Ballas, another village, under the dominion of the same prince, has a celebrated manufacture of earthen pots, called *Ballas;* which have two handles, and the bottom terminates in a point, like the Roman amphora. Vessels of this shape, though extemely inconvenient, have been perpetuated in Egypt from the remotest antiquity.

Proceeding on the 22d to Neguadè, a place which has been dignified with the title of city, by some travellers, they found it little more than a village, chiefly inhabited by Copts, though the

* Amidst an extensive space of ground, covered with desolate ruins, and attesting the magnificence of ancient Tentyris, a superb edifice presents itself, entire, and in high preservation. This is one of the most striking erections on which antiquity has endeavoured to impress the seal of immortality: it was a temple dedicated to Isis, the principal divinity of Egypt: the front is one hundred and thirty-two feet in length, and the height one hundred and ten feet, eleven inches. Enormous pillars, twenty-one feet in circumference, sustain a large vestibule. The interior of the edifice is divided into a number of halls; the walls of which are covered with hieroglyphics. The cielings are painted of a resplendent azure blue, strewed with figures of a bright yellow. Among a variety of representations, an exact model of a sceptre, surmounted by the fleur-de-lis, the arms of the king of France, is in many places apparent. Many rudely carved figures are on the walls and columns, representing several religious processions used in the worship of Isis, which are now inexplicable.

The form of this temple is an oblong square, and its construction is of white stones, taken from the adjacent rocks. Rubbish collected by ages, has raised the soil to a level with the roof of the building behind; which induced the Egyptians to erect a village on the very summit of the temple, as upon a more permanent basis than inconstant sands or marshy earth: this modern village was deserted and in ruins, and formed a striking contrast to the splendid remains of the ancient city of Tentyris. But there are many other proofs of the barbarism then prevailing among the Egyptians: their avowed detestation of the arts, and particularly of sculpture and painting, had induced them to destroy or mutilate every figure within their reach. They were assisted in their barbarous rage by the troops of Cairo, who indulged their brutality in firing bullets and cannon balls into several parts of the temple, the beautiful and brilliant cieling bore evident marks of their folly and ferocity.

residence

residence of a Coptic bishop. The Catholics have also a curé here, and two Franciscan Friars, who are sumptuously provided for, and possess too much scraphic pride to condescend to instruct their flock. M. Sonnini received from the chief of the mission the skin of a large hyæna, which had been killed in the neighbourhood of Néguadé. This animal is common in the mountains and woods of Upper Egypt. It approaches the habitations of man like the jackal; and, like him, prowls in the night time. The hyæna is as carnivorous as the jackall, feeding on the most disgusting prey, and he is more expert in attacking and carrying off living animals. The hyæna drags the prey it has run down to the caves near the river, and in those caverns are found the remnants of its victims. This is the only quadruped of prey that constantly inhabits these solitudes: the tyger and lion * seldom make their appearance; the hippopotamus has not been seen in Egypt for upwards of one hundred and fifty years: the use of fire-arms has been supposed to have driven away that, and several other wild animals †.

Having settled his most urgent business, he asked our author who he was? Sonnini then delivered to him the letter of Mourat Bey. Having perused it, he highly commended the attention of his friend, who had sent him a physician of wonderful skill to cure his diseases; among the principal of which he mentioned, that of being no longer a hero among the ladies. That no time might be lost in an affair of such importance, the sheich determined that his doctor should attend him in a tour through his dominions, and that he should take the necessary restoratives during the journey.

M. Sonnini was far from being pleased with his situation, as he knew he should not be able to give satisfaction to the wishes of the old chieftain. When the prince arrived, a sumptuous dinner was served up, after which his highness indulged himself with his usual nap: Sonnini availed himself of the moment to return to the house of a Catholic Copt at Luxor; but he was speedily followed by a messenger from the prince, who informed him that he must not think of leaving his highness, as he was now declared his *physician*, and was expected to be ready to set out with his patient the following day: sheep, and provisions of all kinds, accompanied the messenger, and were presented to Sonnini in the name of his illustrious patient.

Our author, finding himself much embarrassed how to act, wished to gain a little time, and therefore informed the prince, that he was willing to attend him, but wished to return to Néguadé for a few days, having occasion to take some repose. The request was readily granted, and an order was dispatched to the prince's overseer at Néguadé, to furnish his physician with every thing he required: our author immediately proceeded to that village, where he hoped to contrive some method of escaping the dangerous honour of being physician to the Arabian Court.

He was accompanied in his boat by an Italian monk, who had been collecting the alms of the inhabitants of the district, and who had loaded the vessel with their pious contributions. Reaching Néguadé on the 26th, he accompanied his seraphic guide to his habitation, where he continued for a few days. This was the eve of the rising of the Nile, prior to which the water had changed its colour, and began to swell: the inhabitants were encouraged to hope the inundation would be considerable, from the swarm of water-spinners which almost darkened the air. On the 28th, Sonnini was invited to dine with a Catholic Copt named Mallum Poctor, belonging to Kous, a village on the eastern side of the water, in which a kiaschef resided.

* Buffon in his natural history of the Lion, has proved that the Lion species is reduced to a tenth part of what it used to be, which he supposes to have been occasioned by the increase of the human race.

† On the 23d the boat quitted Néguadé, and at night the anchor was cast in the middle of the river, as each shore was known to be infested by banditti: a large stone performed the office of an anchor, and a feeble rope, formed of the rind of the palm-tree, supplied the office of a cable. During the night, an expert swimmer cautiously approached, but he was instantly discovered by the watch, and, by a musquet-shot, was prevailed on to make a precipitate retreat. On the 24th the boat proceeded to Luxor, a village on the eastern shore, built on the ruins of the ancient Thebes. Our author was there informed that the Arabic prince, Ismain Abou Ali was then encamped on the opposite shore. On receiving this intelligence, he instantly crossed the river.

Arriving at the camp, he was introduced to the prince in the tent, who was very infirm, ugly, and much advanced in years; he was wrapped up in a ragged shabby great coat, with his beard foppishly died red with henna; which, added to his age and horrid figure, rendered his appearance hideous. But, though his person was not fascinating, his head was clear, and his conversation sensible and vivacious. He was surrounded by a multitude of Arabs, and inhabitants, to whom he listened with attention, and adjusted their disputes; and at the same time dictated to his secretaries, issued several orders, and pronounced judgment with admirable precision and propriety.

He entertained our author with a sumptuous repast, accompanied with date brandy*.

In conversation with Mallum Poctor, Sonnini expressed a desire to visit the coasts of the Red Sea, when he received a promise from him of safe conduct to Cosseir: but as our author had engaged to wait for prince Ismain at Néguadé, in compliance with his own proposal, he accordingly returned thither, after having experienced the most attentive civilities from the Copt. During his residence at Néguadé, our author directed his attention to such objects of importance as naturally presented themselves: his first enquiries seem to be more particularly applied to the fertility of the lands in Upper Egypt. Though exaggerated assertions have been often blended with the truth, in this particular, yet the soil† of Egypt is certainly the most productive of any that has yet been discovered upon the globe. The produce of the wheat harvest is usually estimated, upon an average, from twenty-five or thirty for one. In extraordinary seasons, favoured by fortunate circumstances, wheat affords a produce of fifty to one; and when the earth parsimoniously admits of no more than twenty for one, the inhabitants complain heavily, and consider it as a kind of dearth. This surprising fertility is more brilliant to the south than to the north of Egypt.

The manner of sowing corn, among the Egyptians, is another source of its excessive multiplication: the sower carefully walks behind the plough, strewing in the small furrow made by that instrument, a proper portion of grain, which is regularly covered in tracing a second furrow. By this method all waste of corn is avoided, not a grain seeming to be purposely thrown down to feed the attending birds: the stalks, separately arranged in parallel lines, at a suitable distance from each other, readily admit the action of the air and sun: the seed regularly acquires due nourishment and growth, and seldom becomes abortive or diseased.

Fields enriched with such luxuriant harvests naturally attract granivorous birds; pigeons, turtle-doves, larks, and sparrows, assemble in the corn fields; where the two latter may be seen in the heat of the day, with extended bill and agitated breasts, as if panting for respiration. Swallows, and other birds, prey on the winged insects, which never quit a climate so liberally affording them subsistence and habitations‡.

A beautiful species of ichneumon fly, with a long weapon at the extremity of the body, occasionally

* Kous occupies the spot of the ancient city of Appollinis Parva; on which no other antique monument now remains than the front of a small temple dedicated to the sun, half buried; not more than ten or twelve feet of it appearing above the surface of the ground. The walls have been formerly embellished with a variety of figures and hieroglyphics, which the superstition of the inhabitants have erased: several Greek inscriptions, which have been copied by Lucas and Granger, are no longer discernible.

Cosseir, a port on the Red Sea, is three days journey from Kous: caravans are conducted to it by a road through the desert, carrying the commodities of Egypt for Arabia, and bringing back the coffee of Yemen. Most of the caravans from Cosseir arrive at Kous; though some of them go to Banoub, and others to Kenné; and it is only at one of these three places that Mocha coffee can be procured genuine. When it has reached Cairo it is mixed by the resident merchants of that city. At Alexandria it undergoes a second mixture by the factors who forward it to Marseilles, where it seldom fails to receive further adulteration. Sonnini brought away a bag of this genuine coffee, which he procured at Kous; and the trunk in which it was carried retained the perfume for several years after; and, whenever it was opened, communicated a delightful fragrance.

† "The qualities of the air" says Volney, in his travels in Egypt, "with those of the earth and the heat, give vegetation an almost incredible activity, wherever it is supplied with water. The gourd, called *kare*, in twenty-four hours will send out shoots four inches long. But it is worthy observation that the soil of Egypt is *unfavourable to all exotics*. Foreign plants degenerate rapidly, and the French merchants, who cultivated European vegetables, were obliged annually to supply themselves with seeds from Malta, &c. which, when sown, succeeded very well in producing the vegetables, but if the latter were suffered to run to seed in Egypt, that seed would produce nothing. The same happens to apricots, pears, and peaches when transplanted to Rosetta. *Volney's Tr.*

‡ But the most numerous and troublesome among the insects are the flies, by which both men and animals are cruelly tormented: their obstinate rapacity is astonishing; and their perseverance is so great, that, when they incline to fasten upon any particular part of the body, if they are driven away, they return and settle in the same instant. They particularly delight in fixing upon the corners of the eye, and on the edge of the eye-lid, tender parts which attract them by their slight humidity. But flies are not the only troublesome insects; bugs§ and lice prey upon man and beast with a rapacity not to be conceived in European countries. The inhabitants of a superior class, notwithstanding their frequent ablutions, cannot preserve themselves from their annoyance. Bees, wasps, and scorpions grow in Egypt to a very large size; and their sting occasions acute pains, swoonings, convulsions, and sometimes death.

§ The following remarks reflect no distinguished honour on the inhabitants of this country. The villages are most miserable assemblages of poor, little mud huts, flung very close together without any kind of order, full of dust, lice, fleas, bed-bugs, flies, and all the curses of Moses. The common people wear only a shirt and drawers; the children go naked: They rank infinitely below any savages I ever saw. *Ledyard's Travels.*

casionally enters the houses in Upper Egypt. Its head is of a beautiful emerald green, and the corselet and the belly are of a glittering purple tint. The drone bee, which Oliver has stiled the bee with a yellow corselet, is common here; it is not visible in the winter months*.

The monks here have acquired a considerable degree of fame for curing the venereal disease by means of sudorifics, without confining their patients to any particular regimen; but on the contrary recommend indulgence in a variety of food. For the same disease, the Arabs bury themselves up to the neck in sand, and remain in that position during the whole day, without taking any sustenance. The patient is sometimes thus partially buried for twenty or thirty days successively.

It is affirmed by the Egyptian physicians, that the smoke of the mastich, by which earthen vessels are perfumed for cooling water, has the power of instantly killing any sick person who breathes it: though this is probably only a rooted prejudice, it is so generally propagated and believed, that no person is permitted to burn mastich in the open air, till he has strictly enquired whether there is any sick person in the neighbourhood.

One day the monks of Néguadé, not imagining that any person was ill in the neighbourhood, were employed at the gate of their convent, in the act of perfuming their vessels with the smoke of mastich. In an instant a woman was observed with a child in her arms, afflicted with the small pox, running with eager haste from an adjoining house. When she had placed the child beyond the reach of danger, she screamed aloud, and endeavoured to excite the rage of her countrymen against the Franks, who, she said, intended to kill her child.

The inhabitants of Upper Egypt have a greater aversion to Europeans than the people of the Lower: this hatred was instilled by the Copts, who are very numerous above Cairo. The catholic missionaries, who came from Italy to preach against them, and consign them to damnation, naturally excited the enmity of the Copts; who, not knowing how to distinguish missionaries from other Europeans, consider the whole as dangerous beings, and exert all their influence to injure them. Hence the danger and difficulty of traveling in Upper Egypt, experienced by Europeans, may be principally attributed to the establishment of the Roman missionaries.

Sonnini frequently experienced the treachery and perfidy of these monks: while he was contriving some expedient to escape from the overabundant kindness of an Arabian prince, whom he did not wish to serve; a monk who sought every opportunity of exercising his perfidy and malignity, was equally active to dispossess the supposed physician. Hearing that Ismain was at a village, not far distant, the hypocrite procured an audience, and ventured to complain of the decline of his patron's esteem; observing that the favour which he thought his long service had deserved, was conferred on a stranger, who was no physician, but a soldier in disguise, and who might ignorantly administer medicines that would poison him, instead of procuring any beneficial effect, as it was impossible for him to judge of their nature and operations. He then took occasion to add, that, by his skill, he had often relieved the prince, and informed him that he had just discovered new medicines that would effectually restore his health and vigour. Ismain heard the monk's harangue without expressing any displeasure; but had it been addressed to a Bey, our traveller's death would have been inevitable, to expiate the fraud he had committed.

It had the effect, however, which our traveller most ardently panted for: when he came to Néguadé he no longer urged M. Sonnini's stay, though he behaved with the utmost affability. On our author's requesting his protection to

facilitate

* In proportion as the traveller advances towards the south, the complexion of the natives grows darker. The women of Neguadé are tawny, and have a very thick skin: they are usually cloathed with a shift or jacket of blue cloth, with large openings at the sides; which, by suffering the air to circulate freely, is well adapted to the heat of the climate. But in many of the southern districts, the European monks have obliged the catholic women to quit the wide easy robe, and wear a confined vesture, alledging that the former is indecent; but the monks of Néguadé permit any of them to dress according to their fancy. The women of Upper Egypt are not, in general, so tall and well proportioned as European females, but their eyes are large and sparkling. M. Sonnini was informed, that these women, when seized with jealousy, frequently administer to their husband, a particular poison, not to inflict a speedy or sudden death, but to bring on a gradual decay, more intolerable than death itself, and which is certain to put a period to his life: the symptoms attending the disorder thus produced, are similar to those which attend the scurvy; and no remedy is known to prevent their fatal termination.

facilitate the remaining travels he intended to make in the Thebias, the prince immediately gave him recommendatory letters, and the parties separated equally satisfied with each other; prince Ismain in losing his new physician, and Sonnini in having escaped the impracticable task of renovating an old infirm and emaciated debauchee.

After expostulating with the superior on the villainy of his conduct, Sonnini quitted the convent of Néguadé, the abode of treacherous hypocrisy, and crossed over to the Kous, where the Copt, Mallum Poctor, procured him a commodious apartment, in which he proposed to remain till the departure of the caravan for Cosseir*.

On the dry and almost steril plains of Upper Egypt, the true acacia is found, which yields the gum denominated Arabic; it is an useful but not an ornamental tree. Its wood is of a deep red colour, hard, and capable of receiving a beautiful polish: its seed, inclosed in a husk, yields a red colour, used in dying Morocco; and the trunk and branches distil the gum of great commercial importance, known by the name of gum-arabic. The acacia would assist greatly to restore fertility to the steril parts of Upper Egypt; for, when the root fastens in a bed of vegetable earth, the sandy layer, which might surround the bottom of the trunk, would not injure its growth†.

Sonnini continued some time at Kous, before he abandoned his intention of visiting the Red Sea: the kiaschef of Kous had frequently cautioned our traveller to be upon his guard against Mallum Poctor, as he suspected him to be capable of artifice and imposition. Of the propriety of these suspicions he was speedily convinced. Mallum, in order to plunder Sonnini, had associated with a Turkish merchant, who seems to have been perfectly qualified to enter into such a partnership. The preparations for the journey to Cosseir afforded them frequent pretences of extorting money. Sonnini had before given the Copt a telescope, a brace of pistols, and some bottles of cordials; another telescope had been sent to the Turk, which he declined accepting, intimating that an equivalent in money would be more agreeable to him. He and the Copt had already received from our author twenty-five chequins on account of the journey, without any appearance of its commencing. Sonnini was successively assured, that a caravan was preparing to set off; and that some Bedouin Arabs delayed the journey: then he affirmed there was no caravan, but some rapid camels should convey him to the Red Sea; and in this new arrangement, he was to leave his baggage to the care of the Turkish merchant, to be forwarded by the next caravan. The snare was too gross to meet with the success they had promised themselves, and M. Sonnini, fully comprehending their drift, immediately informed them that he would give up all thoughts of the journey, and peremptorily demanded the money they had extorted from him. They exclaimed exceedingly against the injustice of so extraordinary a claim, alledging that he was still indebted to them for their services; but, on his threatening to lay their complaints before prince Ismain, they returned five chequins. To avoid further trouble respecting this clandestine affair, Sonnini thought proper to give up all hopes of receiving the other twenty, resolving to be no longer exposed to the collusions of those rascals.

* The village of Kous is surrounded by beautiful orchards, and, though irregularly planted, have a very pleasing effect, the boughs of different fruit trees, mixing together without art or design, form a sweetly variegated shade; the branches flourishing with blossoms or fruits the greater part of the year. The flowers, which the warmth of the climate renders more odoriferous, exhale a fragrance which can better be conceived than expressed; the air was filled with the sweetest exhalations, among which the exquisite odour of the blossom of the citron trees most enchantingly prevailed. Our author was on this fascinating spot when the grapes are most abundant, and till then had never beheld any so large, and so delicious; and the pulp was sweet and aromatic. This fruit is much esteemed here by the opulent, who consider it as the most agreeable alleviation of the heat occasioned by the climate.

Melons of various species were sold in the streets and markets; but Sonnini remarks, that, "there is no one of all those melons of so good a quality as our choicest European melons; the greater part of them are insipid." Dates had begun to ripen.

† The sesane which distills gum-arabic, is applied to various uses in Egypt: the oil extracted from its seed is in high estimation, though it is fit only to burn in the lamps; the dregs of the oil, added to honey and citron juice, form a favourite ragoût to an Egyptian palate. Preparations from sesane are used by ladies, to acquire that *embonpoint* which they all desire, to clean the skin, give it bloom, to preserve the beauty of the hair, and to promote the increase of the milk when they become mothers. The oil of sesane is particularly recommended for its efficacy in curing diseases of the eyes; but in this country, except among women whose faces are continually covered with veils, eyes perfectly sound are seldom to be met with.

Antique Statue found at
THEBAIS.

Warren sc

He now came to a resolution to continue his route towards the ruins of the ancient city of Thebes.

Leaving Kous on the 17th of July, with the addition of four Arabs to his suite, he proceeded along the eastern bank of the Nile on horseback: about noon they stopped at Nouzarie, a village inhabited by Copts. Karnak, a small miserable village, is not far distant, whose cottages serve to heighten the magnificence of the splendid ruins which surround them.

Sonnini remained some time motionless with rapture, on seeing the objects which presented themselves on the site of the ancient Thebes, where there now remains, amid the shock of ages, and the ravages of barbarism, monuments seeming to transcend the strength and ingenuity of man. Obelisks, colossal and gigantic statues, and avenues formed by rows of sphinxes, which are still discernable, though shamefully mutilated; porticoes of prodigious elevation, immense collonades, thousands of columns overthrown, occupy a space of vast extent*.

It was with regret that Sonnini could prevail on himself to quit these interesting ruins, after taking a hasty survey, a war being daily expected to break out on the very spot: some beys of the vanquished party of Ismael, who had fled to this neighbourhood, had engaged so many partizans, that the victorious Mourat was much alarmed. The latter sent a small army, commanded by a Bey of his own family to exterminate the remainder of his enemies. Thus our author found himself between two hostile armies, both anxious for the combat. Exclusive of the confusion occasioned by the war, the robbers were active in stripping travellers, and pirates plundered the vessels in the Nile. Clans of Arabs renewed ancient quarrels, and one village waged war and vengeance against another. Amidst the riotous licentiousness attending a convulsed state of the country, a stranger could not expect protection, as authority no longer existed. No choice remained for our traveller, but instantly to return down the Nile†.

Night approaching, our traveller and his attendants were accommodated with one of the most spacious of the cottages; care had been previously taken to guard against attack or surprise from without, but no sooner had the travellers laid down, than a legion of enormous rats flocked into their apartment, danced over them, and occasionally saluted them with a bite. At the same instant a tempestuous wind arose, which blew down large portions of their frail

* Sonnini's reflections on these ruins are strikingly interesting.—" Let the so much boasted fabrics of Greece and Rome come and bow down before the temples and the palaces of the Thebes of Egypt. Its lofty ruins are still more striking than their gawdy ornaments; its gigantic wrecks are more majestic than their perfect preservation. The glory of the most celebrated fabrics vanishes before the prodigies of Egyptian architecture; and to describe them justly, a man must possess the genius of those who conceived and executed them, or the eloquent pen of a Bossuet."

† Before he began his voyage, however, he was desirous of visiting the ruins on the western bank §. This spot was perpetually infested by robbers, and had the singular reputation of being the most dangerous place in Upper Egypt; but, though advised by his attendants not to venture on so hazardous a project, Sonnini resolved upon surveying these celebrated ruins; he therefore crossed over the river to Gournei, and sent for the Sheich to come to the water-side; the Sheich immediately attended, and conducted him to the village; and a miserable village it was, consisting of only mud huts, about the height of a man, and having no other covering than a few palm leaves. The inhabitants are well suited to the village; they were half black, and almost naked; and their countenances were gloomy, haggard, and ferocious. They seemed to pay little attention to the Sheich; and the Syrian interpreter, equally base and cowardly, shed tears of dismay.

The people of Gournei, however, conducted themselves with honour and propriety: Sonnini passed the greater part of the day with them, in purchasing little idols and antique medals, which they had found among the ruins; but most of the medals he procured were of small value, many of them were copper and *Ptolemies*. Three or four gold coins were indeed purchased with the rest, but they were Arabian; beautiful cornelians were often found amidst the ruins, ready cut, and fit for the engraver. The traveller was convinced that the western part of ancient Thebes, was not inferior, in point of magnificence, to the eastern; but the monuments it contained were not in so good a state of preservation. Some specimens still remain of the astonishing solidity of the edifices that were here erected; among these are an ancient temple, entirely covered with hieroglyphics; a superb portico, and some colossal statues, as the fragments of the statue of Memnon. He could only take a cursory view of these valuable remains, the greater part of which he could but glance at from afar.

Our author was anxious to visit the sepulchres of the Theban monarchs, but no person could be found sufficiently courageous to conduct him thither; and the Sheich himself declared to his guest, that in consequence of a recent war between his subjects, and the inhabitants of some neighbouring villages, it would be imprudent to expose himself with guides, who, instead of affording him protection, would probably excite the vengeance of his foes.

§ The ancient city of Thebes was twenty-seven miles in circumference, and the Nile flowed through the midst of it.

tenement. Soon after, the wall burst outwards; a circumstance greatly in favour of our travellers, who, fearful of being crushed with the remainder, hastily quitted their miserable shelter, and passed the remainder of the night in the open air, with their muskets on their shoulders.

M. Sonnini had proceeded about one hundred and forty leagues from Cairo, when he came to a resolution of returning: he found it difficult to get away from Gournei, as the boats of the Nile avoided its shore, and the inhabitants were involved in a war with the people of Kamoulé, where a man had been recently murdered. No person could be prevailed on to become their guide to Néguadé, dreading the consequences of the resentment of the people of Kamoulé. At length, however, a man engaged to direct their course; and the Sheick furnished horses for a journey, which he had not the resolution to undertake. He accompanied them about a quarter of a league, but, turning a deaf ear to all importunity, he refused to advance farther. Another man, half naked, on foot, with a very unfavourable appearance, and only armed with a stick, then led them by a circuitous route, to avoid the neighbourhood of Kamoulé: they climbed over rocky mountains, passed through narrow straits, and irregular windings, among an accumulated heap of rocks, and traversed the wildest deserts, without meeting a trace of either men or animals; till at length, after travelling six hours, they descended into the plains near Néguadé, whence they crossed over to Kous, accompanied by their conductor, who, well pleased at having escaped his enemies, and resolved to avoid an exposure of his person a second time, drove the horses belonging to Gournei along the eastern shore of the Nile, till he arrived opposite to the place of his residence.

Our author had hardly returned to his former habitation at Kous, when Mallum Poctor came to visit him, with all the external marks of friendship and esteem. He warmly congratulated him on his relinquishing the journey to Cosseir, because the Turkey merchant, in whom he thought he might confide, had contrived a plan to get him robbed upon the road. Sonnini, however, paid but little attention to the assertions of a man, with whose treachery he was so perfectly acquainted. The Turkish merchant was now absent from Kous; but had he been there, and Poctor absent, he would have related a similar story of Poctor. Prudence induced our author to dissemble respecting this transaction, as the Copt was a man of interest in his country; and though his professions of friendship were of little avail, the effects of his enmity might have proved prejudicial *.

They are alert in that element, though they make but a slow progress on land; where they

* Mallum Poctor had numerous flocks of sheep and goats in his possession. These animals are different in appearance in Upper and Lower Egypt. The sheep are stronger and lustier; their head and tail larger in proportion, and their legs shorter. They have a thick fleece, and when they are shorn, the wool is permitted to remain on the top of the head; as this grows rapidly, a thick bushy tuft is presently formed, which hangs over their forehead, and greatly interrupts their sight. Their colour is a reddish brown, which becomes darker as their age increases; some, however, are black, and others white, but the latter inclines to the yellow. Their skins are used by the Egyptians as mattrasses; supposing themselves secure from scorpions while they are sleeping on them, it being a generally-received notion among them, that a scorpion will not alight upon wool. The goats are smaller than those of Lower Egypt, their horns are thin, and beautifully turned; their hair is long and bushy, and of a silky softness.

Swine are never seen in the farm yards of Upper Egypt. It is not reasonable to believe, that so general an aversion as that respecting the eating of hog's flesh, should have no other foundation, as some people have imagined, than a natural abhorrence to the voracious appetite which leads these animals to wallow in heaps of the vilest ordure; on that principle they would reject the flesh of fowls, which, it is well known, devour the vilest and the most disgusting aliments. The vast quantity of fat with which the hog is loaded, obstructing the perspiration in hot climates, renders the Egyptians liable to the leprosy. This was, in fact, the real cause of an aversion, which the superstition of the Jews has retained in colder climates, where the hog is nutricious to man. Abstinence from the flesh of the hog has been transmitted to the present race of Egyptians. The flesh of swine, anciently forbidden by the Egyptians, is also prohibited to the Mahometans, and the Copts never eat it.

In sailing on the Nile near Kous, crocodiles surrounded the boat, but they appeared only on a level with the surface. They never rise upon the vessels, no other danger being apprehended from them, than the risk of losing a limb from their tremendous bite when a person is swimming. In one part of Egypt, the crocodile was formerly worshipped; and, in another, furiously destroyed; but at present it is neither destroyed nor reverenced. In the southern parts they assemble in vast numbers, and impart a musky smell to the water of the Nile. When the sun is at its height, their heads appear above water, immoveable, floating slowly down the current, like so many logs of wood, basking in the heat which they delight in. The noise of musket-shot alone disturbs them. Sonnini shot at several, but he knew not whether he killed them or not; those he hit disappeared beneath the water.

are

are not readily distinguished at a distance, by the similarity of their colour to the slimy shore. On the muddy coast of the Nile they also deposit their eggs*.

Sonnini intending shortly to make his departure from Kous, his friend Poctor presented him with a bag of curious brilliant stones, which had been found among the ruins of ancient monuments. Among these was a small round flint, of a dark yellow colour, on which were scattered white spots tinged with yellow, This species has the reputation of curing the sting of scorpions. Similar virtues are attributed to many other stones, and perhaps with equal propriety. Before our traveller departed from Kous, his medical skill was completely put to the test. The kiaschef fell from his horse, and dislocated his shoulder; and, not knowing the difference between physic and surgery, demanded our traveller's professional assistance. Sonnini and his companions endeavoured to put his shoulder in its place; and the Mameluc patiently endured their awkward efforts, without perceiving their deficiency of skill. Sonnini, fearing his patient would not choose to part from him till he was restored, left him that very evening, and proceeded to Kenné, a village on the eastern bank of the Nile.

Kenné, an inconsiderable village, is the first rendezvous of the caravan of Cosseir. It is the ancient Cæna or Cænopolis; but it is no longer what it was. The monuments which adorned this ancient city are not now seen, and its commerce is almost annihilated. Between Kous and Kenné, the village of Koft is situated, on the coast, near the site of the ancient town of Cophtos, which became flourishing by the commerce with the Red Sea. Many have asserted that the canal of the Red Sea, now filled up, terminated here; but others place its boundary in the neighbourhood of Kenné.

Our author now paid a second visit to Dendera, where the emir again entertained him in the most hospitable and friendly manner, and presented him with a beautiful antique head, of white marble; but this and many other things were afterwards taken from him. Embarking on the Nile, whose waters daily assumed a greater swell, they stopped on the 25th at Reishie, a village on the western bank. From thence they proceeded to Kelhé, another village on the same side: the people of this place were in a state of rebellion against the kiaschef of Basjoura, and supposed our adventurers had been sent against them by the kiaschef. Hardly had they landed, when thirty or forty of the villagers, armed with sabres and lances, began to attack them; but, finding the strangers were peaceably inclined, the villagers desisted, and treated them with hospitality.

The travellers resumed their voyage, but soon experienced another species of danger: the violence of the current and wind rendered their situation alarming by water, and the convulsed state of the country, presented equal danger upon land; the latter, however, was resolved on, and, after much difficulty, they reached the shore at Sahet, a port of Basjoura and of Farschout. M. Sonnini sent the Reis to acquaint the Sheich that a kiaschef, who intended to sleep in the boat, ordered him to keep a strict watch that no banditti came near it. In consequence of this message, the commandant came himself, with some attendants, and passed the whole night in guarding the vessel. At the dawn of day, he sent a complimentary message to the European, accompanied with coffee for his breakfast: but Sonnini departed as speedily as possible, lest more apparent day should discover that the pretended kiaschef was *destitute of a beard.*

Arriving at Bélianā, a considerable village, on the 27th, they passed the night there: in the vicinity of which some ruins occupy a large extent of ground. On the following day they proceeded to Girge, a city next in extent to Cairo. It is the capital of Upper Egypt, and the residence of a Bey. Here was another hospital of Monks for the propagation of the faith, to which our author had a letter from Cairo. The superior, a graceful old man, with a long white beard, received the letter from his hands; but perceiving it had been written some time before, he superciliously threw the paper in Sonnini's face, telling him the letter was worth nothing. The monk, perceiving our author's

* The fecundity of the crocodile would be very alarming to the inhabitants, were not other animals industrious in the destruction of their eggs; particularly the tortoise of the Nile. Crocodiles, when full grown, attain the length of thirty, forty, or fifty feet. The Egyptian Catholics affirm that a crocodile has the sagacity to distinguish a Christian from a Mussulman, and though he may not prefer the flesh of the latter, he never attempts to attack the former. Hence the Christians bathe without fear in the places most resorted to by crocodiles, and consequently where the Mahometans dare not venture to expose themselves.

agitation

agitation at this treatment, was perfectly ashamed of his conduct, and poured forth a torrent of apologies, which Sonnini returned by turning his back upon him, and quitted the house; resolving never after to visit one of these abodes of folly and impertinence.

On the morning of the 29th, our author resumed his voyage: the north-wind blew for several days with unabated fury, and raised waves to an unprecedented height. With much difficulty the boat was safely conducted to Menshié, the site of the ancient Ptolemais Hermii. A few scattered remains, and a stone mound to restrain the waters of the river, are the only existing proofs of its former splendour. The kiaschef of this place asked our author if he had letters from Mourat Bey; and, on his answering in the affirmative, declared that was a very indifferent recommendation, as Mourat was on the point of being deposed. It appeared that a bey, named Hassan, had raised a strong party against Mourat, and this kiaschef intended to join him. In a short time afterwards he informed our author that he must accompany him as a physician to the army, to cure the wounds which Hassan might receive in battle. M. Sonnini, displeased at this intelligence, abruptly left Menshie, and arrived at Souhaje on the thirtieth.

On the 31st he ordered the Reis to proceed with the boat to Tahta, whilst he travelled to the same place on horseback, accompanied with two Arabs. This was the place where Sonnini had acquired great reputation for performing an important cure on the Copt, Mallum Mourcous; his return was therefore no sooner announced than he was attended by a multitude of real or imaginary invalids *.

During M. Sonnini's residence at Tahta, little lizards, of uncommon beauty, thronged on the shores of the river: gold and azure bespangled their bodies, and their tails were of a beautiful sky-blue. These refulgent lizards are seldom met with in the north of Egypt; sometimes, but not often, they approach the habitations of men: they are highly venerated by the people.

Having discharged his kanja at Taghta, Sonnini waited till some boat should touch in the neighbourhood that would convey him to Cairo. On the 6th of August a large vessel, called a masch, arrived with corn, so completely laden that it lay even with the water; and to prevent the entrance of that element, a bastion of fascines and mud was erected round the edges. As no other vessel could be procured, our travellers embarked in this; with the additional lading of a large number of men and sheep stowed on the top of the corn. They passed the village of Kau el Kebin on the eastern bank, near which an ancient colonade is visible, and in good preservation: the ancient city, once existing here, is supposed by some to be the Antæopolis, and by others Diospolis Minor†.

On the 8th, when the boat was on the point of departing, they beheld the village of Koum el Arab on fire, an effect of the dastardly war of the Arabs, in which neither valour nor generosity was discovered. Repairs were necessary to the boat, and it was with difficulty got into Aboutige for that purpose: an opportunity then offered of proceeding to Siout by land, which Sonnini did not neglect to embrace. Intending to set out the next morning with a Turkish collector of revenue, he passed the night in a caravanscra. He had hardly composed himself to rest, when several musket-shots were fired into the building; every one ran out but Sonnini, who, upon enquiry, was informed that the alarm proceeded from robbers, who had endeavoured to break into the house‡.

The

* The few days which our traveller remained at Tahta, furnished him with a further opportunity of observing the diseases of the country, and the practice adopted by Egyptian physicians. They bestow several appellations on the venereal disease, some of which are truly whimsical. It is most generally denominated *embarek*, or the *blessed*; sometimes it is entitled *the disease of goats;* and sometimes *the disease of camels*. For the cure, they prescribe a great quantity of meat and strong brandy; and order the body of the patient to be rubbed with oil and sulphur. But these disorders are treated more methodically at Cairo: a decoction of Sarsaparilla is administered every day for forty days successively, and the patient has then no other allowance than unleavened bread and honey: after that time, plentiful doses of brandy are prescribed.

† The master of the vessel being a native of this town, it was natural to suppose he would stop here to visit his family, and *lay in a stock of corn*. Having caused a large proportion to be conveyed to his house, he prudently mixed with the mass as much dry earth as he had pilfered of the grain, that the lading of the vessel might not appear to be diminished. Our travellers, while they were at Tomich, saw a conflict between two parties of Arabs; but, as Sonnini justly observed, it seemed to be "a slight skirmish between bad marksmen, mutually endeavouring to shun each other." At length, one of the parties rode off with the greatest composure.

‡ The journey at length commenced, when our author was surprised at seeing his Turkish companion stop, repeatedly, to pick up pieces of dirt, which he swallowed with apparent

The travellers arrived safely at Siout, and on the 11th M. Sonnini proceeded to Manfelout; and the next morning the boat from Aboutige brought his companions and his baggage. Our author then hired a small tenement at Siout, intending to wait for a more convenient vessel than that which he had quitted.

SECTION XIV.

Medicine—Curious Prescriptions—Vessel runs a-ground—Narrowly Escapes Destruction.

DISAGREEABLE and troublesome occupations now became the unavoidable lot of our adventurer. The Pacha of Cairo, who was afflicted with a lingering disease, resided at Manfelout, and dispatched a messenger to M. Sonnini, requiring his attendance as a physician. He did not, however, seem to be distressed for want of physicians, as several from all quarters were collected at his mansion, and he obediently followed all their prescriptions, in succession; and frequently at the same time.

Some of the remedies proposed were extremely curious; one in particular for a disorder in the head, directs,—That he should *walk* into the country till he should happen to find a rag of any sort, which he was to drag home with one of his naked feet: he was then to take three sticks and some alum, and burning the whole together, inhale the smoke issuing from the flame; but our author does not mention whether the patient tried this prescription, or whether it really effected a cure. Fortunately for Sonnini, however, the Pacha soon enabled him to pursue his voyage. A galley at Manfelout, which could only be navigated during the swell of the Nile, was speedily to set sail for Cairo. The vessel was laden with two hundred and fifty tons of corn; variety of bales belonging to private persons, about a hundred men, and several head of cattle. Three commodious apartments in the stern were appropriated to the use of M. Sonnini, by the desire of the Pacha.

Early on the 25th the vessel put in motion, but was soon ran a-ground near the shore, from the awkwardness or unskilfulness of the crew; and it cost them a day and a half's labour to get her off again: they afterwards stopped to take in some buffaloes, where they remained another day and night, when the wind drove the vessel from her cables, and she floated rapidly down the stream, narrowly escaping destruction by being dashed against the rocks or mountain of Aboufeda; but fortunately, after several manœuvres, she was securely fastened to her moorings*.

When the vessel arrived at Miniet, the Reis immediately landed, with about twenty of the passengers, and they all hastily proceeded to the residence of the kiaschef, exclaiming violently on the road against the Infidel who had dared to strike a believer. The populace assembled in crowds, and followed the Reis, calling aloud for the head of the *dog* who had abused a favourite of

apparent delight. Sonnini, wishing to know his reason for choosing so singular a repast, he replied that an insatiable appetite had rendered it necessary to him, which he had many times attempted to resist, but in vain. He had spent the greater part of his life in Turkey, and felt this strange propensity after a long residence in Egypt. He was about sixty years of age, corpulent, of a yellowish complexion, feeble, and languid.

* After some delay the vessel set sail on the morning of the 27th, the Reis having taken on board, among other persons, four villains who had deserted from the army; and who, having escaped the fatigues of war, set no bounds to their insolence. Finding that Sonnini and his attendants were Europeans, they more particularly directed their abuse to them, and took every opportunity to insult them: at length they carried their audacity to such unwarrantable lengths as to strike two of M. Sonnini's attendants. The blows being naturally returned, an engagement commenced. Our author hastened to the spot, with his sabre in his hand, and applied a few strokes to the shoulders of the aggressors, with the flat side. They immediately desisted, but the confusion was succeeded by an universal exclamation throughout the vessel, "an Infidel to strike a Mussulman!" "It was an unpardonable offence;" and they talked of throwing our author overboard! The Reis, instead of appeasing the tumult, was more clamorous than the rest; but Sonnini, and his attendants, retired into their apartment at the stern. The fire-arms, with which they were provided, appeared sufficiently formidable to keep them at bay; and they contented themselves, for the present, with murmuring, and threatening revenge.

Mahomet. M. Sonnini's Egyptian servants, whom he had sent after the Reis to observe his conduct, returned with intelligence that their master was to be bastinadoed on the soles of the feet, and advised him to conceal himself or make his escape; but he determined to face the danger, and endeavour to avert it. He went on shore immediately with his attendants, and passed among the crowd, still clamorous for vengeance. Arriving at the kiaschef's house, he saw the Reis preferring his complaint, who soon perceived him, and pointed him out to the kiaschef.

Is it you then, said the kiaschef, in an angry tone, that have dared to offer violence to a believing Mussulman? Pay no attention, replied our author, to these paltry slaves. I am the friend of Mourat Bey, from whom I have something to communicate to your ear,—Then, advancing towards the kiaschef, and pretending to whisper to him, Sonnini slipped a few chequins into his hand, which the commandant did not disdain to pocket. The effect was presently perceived; for, rising up, and darting strong menacing looks at the Reis, he expressed the most violent rage that he should presume to complain to him of a Frank, on whose wisdom, virtue, and power, he pronounced a most elaborate eulogium. The Reis attempting to reply, received a box on the ear from the kiaschef, who also sentenced him to undergo the discipline of the cane. The opinion of the multitude was now completely changed; they no longer demanded the life of the impious infidel, but calmly dispersed, applauding the exalted justice of the kiaschef, and expatiating on the excellent qualities of the Franks.

Notwithstanding the protection our traveller had received from the kiaschef, M. Sonnini deemed it imprudent to trust himself again on board a vessel in which he had received such outrageous treatment; and expose himself to the resentment of the Reis and his sailors. The kiaschef, however, swore by the Prophet that nothing disagreeable should befal him; and sent two officers to conduct him back to the vessel, and continue with him during the night. In the morning, the officers, by the kiaschef's command, informed the Reis, that he must answer with his head, for the safety of his passengers; and also desired a party of Mamelucs, who were then on their passage to Cairo in another boat, to take care that no violence should be offered them. It was also agreed, that if any misunderstanding should arise, Sonnini should display his schall at the poop, and the Mamelucs should instantly assist him. All these preparations might, however, have been spared; for the Reis and his companions limited their revenge to a few murmurs, which were very little regarded.

On the evening of the 30th the travellers halted near a district beautifully ornamented with date trees: as soon as they had dropped anchor, the Mamelucs visited them on board, to enquire if any of them had received cause of complaint, and obliged the Reis to apologize even for having suffered insolent expressions to have been used. Our author received his excuses with disdain, though he was highly gratified to see a man humbled who had endeavoured so essentially to injure him. Next morning the voyage was renewed. A violent north wind, during the fore-part of the day, rendered their progress dangerous, and the adjacent plains were overflowed.

Continuing to descend the Nile on the 31st, they sailed by a chain of rocks, which the waters touch for a considerable space, and which appear to have experienced some great convulsion. At the summit, a chapel announces the burying-place of a holy Mussulman, universally revered under the name of *Sheick Embarek*. The mountains to the eastward of the Nile are considerably more elevated than those to the westward: they are also much nearer the river, the shore of which is frequently formed by them. Towards the west, however, the mountains are much farther removed, and sometimes they are too remote to be perceptible from the river. Those which are washed by the Nile, project above, whilst the middle and lower parts retire; being furrowed lengthwise over the front which borders the Nile to the very summit; appearing as if the waters had flowed to this height against their declivity, and had there marked the progressive diminution of the elevation of their course. Another observation, suggested by the navigation of the Nile, is, that when these mountains, or masses of rocks towards the east, confine the current of the Nile, the shallows on the opposite shore advance also to a point, and leave an exceeding narrow channel to the river which is formidable to navigators.

The Nile now diffused over the plains her fertilizing waters: the canals were successively filling; and the part of Egypt, where our adventurer then was, seemed the most delightful country upon earth; as the eye embraced situations the most picturesque, and contrasts the most striking. Towards the west

west, the land produces an abundance which ages of cultivation have not exhausted. Villages, upon eminences surrounded with water and trees, appear like so many verdant islands, floating on the surface of a tranquil bason. Towards the east, barren mountains, and barren masses of rock, heaped one above another, and devoted to eternal sterility, present a forbidding uniformity, except where their clefts exhibit little cottages very thinly scattered, and spots of ground covered with various kinds of plants, especially with the sugar cane, whose vivid colour is beautiful to behold*.

They sailed by Feshné a market-town on the western shore, which bestows its name (*Dsjebel Fishné*) to a mountain, that renders the navigation dangerous; because, having experienced some commotion, several fragments of the rock have loosened and rolled into the river. Being arrived off Bébé the first of September, a dead calm continued them there till the 2d. The chain of mountains of *Feshné*, which had gradually diminished into little hills of sand, rises again below *Bébé*, and forms a high cape, which limits the course of the river. They call it the mountain of Abounoor from a saint of that name, whose place of interment is discernible upon the base. The vessel passed Benisouef without stopping. Here the Nile extends itself to a vast distance, and forms an immense sheet of water, above which houses, and parcels of cultivated land, appear as if they were floating.

On the approach of night the vessel was moored opposite to the village of Meimoum †, at a distance from the shore. On the opposite coast, an old Coptic convent appears; and a little lower a point of rocks, known by the name of *Dsjebel Naulti*, (the Sailor's Mountain;) an Egyptian mariner having been buried there, who was canonized by his companions. Riha was their last station before they arrived at Cairo. The inundation was extending itself to the westward, as far as the base of the immense pyramid, several leagues distant from Riha.

Water fowl were not so common now, as in that season when the Nile returns to its bed; a specious cause may be thus assigned: they do not now so frequently appear on the river, because the plains being inundated, they extend themselves over a greater space. Hardly had the morning of the 4th began to dawn, when the impatience of the crew to arrive at Cairo induced them to spread two immense sails on the boat, and they arrived in the evening off the Coptic monastery of Figs, within the distance of half a league from Old Cairo. Here the vessels from Upper Egypt disembark their passengers, and their cattle, that they may have nothing on board but their cargo, when they appear in the ports of Cairo.

The neighbourhood of Cairo was now in the greatest agitation: the Beys were encamped with their forces, and on the point of marching into Upper Egypt. M. Sonnini therefore hastened from the city, without even waiting to see his fellow countrymen. On the 6th of September he

* The following lines, by Mr. *Gray*, are so beautifully descriptive of the face of the country in Egypt, during the inundation of the Nile, that the reader will, it is presumed, pardon us for inserting them:

> What wonder in the sultry climes, that spread
> Where Nile, redundant o'er his summer bed,
> From his broad bosom life and verdure flings,
> And broods o'er Egypt with his watr'y wings,
> If with advent'rous oar and ready sail,
> The dusky people drive before the gale,
> Or on frail floats to neighbouring cities ride,
> That rise and glitter o'er the ambient tide?

† Some pelicans were observed skimming along the surface of the water, the flight of which appeared to be much interrupted: particularly observing one of them, it flapped its wings about eight or nine times in succession; after which it hovered in the air, and again beat its wings: thus it alternately proceeded during the continuance of its flight.

But there are no birds of passage which arrived here in greater numbers than quails. They assemble on the sandy shore of Egypt in very large flocks. It is difficult to conceive how a bird which is so heavy in its flight, that it cannot move to any considerable distance, and which alights in our fields almost as soon as it had taken wing, should venture to traverse a great extent of sea. The islands scattered over the Mediterranean, and the vessels sailing along its surface, serve them indeed for places of rest and shelter, when the winds become boisterous, or contrary to the direction of their route. But these asylums, which the quails have not always sufficient strength to attain, and the distance of which is frequently fatal to them, likewise prove places of destruction to them. Too much exhausted to fly, they suffer themselves to be caught without difficulty upon inhospitable shores: they are also easily taken by hand upon the rigging of ships; and when excess of fatigue prevents them from rising to that height, they strike with violence against the vessel's hull, fall back stunned by the shock, and disappear in the waves. Whatever may be the dangers of the long voyage to which these birds do not seem destined; whatever losses these feeble travellers may sustain in the course of the passage, there still arrives so great a multitude in the environs of Alexandria, that the number to be seen there is incredible. The Egyptian fowlers catch them in nets. During their first arrival, such quantities are exhibited for sale in the markets, that three or four were sometimes purchased for a medine. The crews of merchant-ships lived upon them; and at the consul's office at Alexandria, complaints were exhibited by sailors against captains of vessels, for giving them nothing to eat but quails.

embarked

embarked at Beissons to proceed to Rosetta, where he arrived on the 7th, at six o'clock in the morning, and was politely received, by those whose favours he had before experienced. On the 22d. began the Ramadan, or Fast of the Mussulmen; and our traveller attended the ceremony of its opening. In the evening, all the tradesmen in Rosetta* assembled in companies, and marched in procession through the town, by the light of burning chips of resinous wood, contained in iron pots carried upon the point of long poles†. The principal of each corporation, splendidly dressed, was mounted on a fine horse: several of them wore masks, which excited much mirth among the populace. The chief Nightman assumed the character of an European; at whose appearance the expressions of joy among the spectators were particularly audible. Hence an idea may be formed of the respect shewn to the natives of that country, by Egyptians.

During the month appropriated to the Ramadan, it is not only unlawful to eat or drink from the rising to the setting of the sun; the use of tobacco is also prohibited. But on the setting of the sun, the rigid abstinence of the day is succeeded by feasting, dancing, music, and every species of entertainment that can be devised.

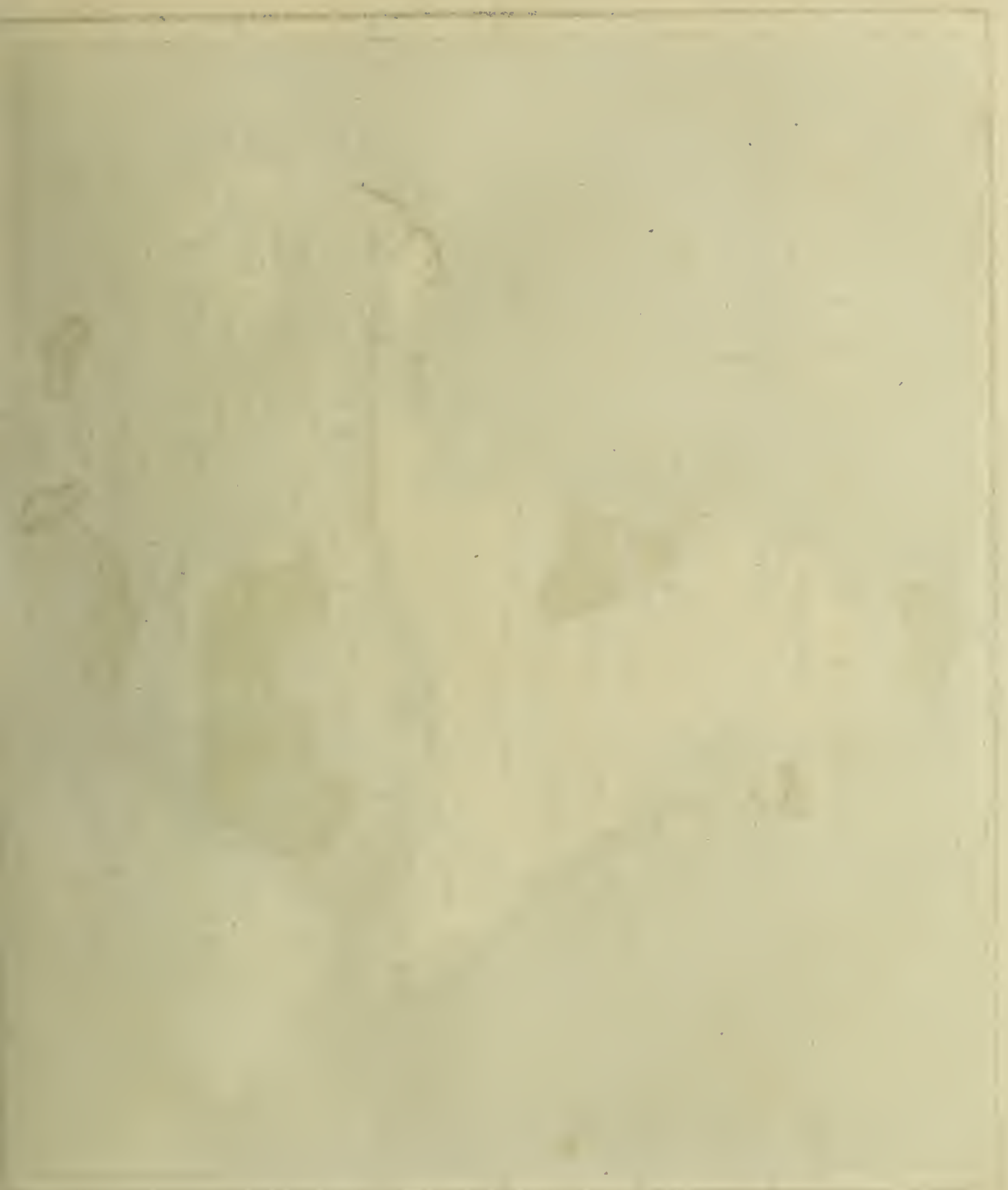
After having rested a few days at Rosetta, M. Sonnini proceeded to Alexandria, where he resumed his native dress, to which it was some time before he could again accustom himself. A vessel among those which were appropriated to supply caravans, or to the coasting trade along the seas of the levant, was preparing to sail for Smyrna, and he embraced an opportunity of finding his way into Greece and Turkey. He separated from all his companions, whose task was to finish with the expedition through Egypt, excepting the person who was particularly attached to him. The vessel in which he embarked sailed from the new port of Alexandria on the 17th of October 1778, and he soon lost sight of the regions of a country, where the prodigies of art attempted to vie with the exuberance of nature.

* In walking about the gardens of Rosetta, Sonnini was shewn a hedge-hog. This quadruped is common in Lower Egypt, but it is not to be found in the Saïd. The pools of water in the environs were filled with thousands of frogs, which make a terrible noise. The reeds, under which these animals conceal themselves at the bottom of the water, serve for making ropes of general use.

† The same idea prevailed at Rosetta as in the Saïd, respecting the property attributed to the mastic; but in Upper Egypt it was considered as mortal to the sick who inhaled it; whereas at Rosetta it was only said to be pernicious. Accordingly the sick, in order to avoid the danger of breathing it in a country where mastic is frequently burnt, take the precaution of holding continually under their nose an onion; the odour of which, if it be more wholesome than that of mastic, is undoubtedly far less agreeable. All the mastic that is consumed in Egypt, comes from the island of *Scio*, in the Archipelago. The women are constantly chewing small pieces of it melted with wax; it is used in *ragouts*; and the vessels employed for cooling water are perfumed with it, as well as almost every household utensil.

THE END OF SONNINI's TRAVELS.

TRAVELS



AFRICA.
Tropic of Cancer
Tropic of Capricorn
EQUATOR
SAHARA OR GREAT DESERT
SOUDAN OR NIGRITIA
ATLANTIC OCEAN
INDIAN OCEAN
ARABIA
Mountains of the Moon
Mountains of Lupata
Meridian of Greenwich
Longitude West 20 from Greenwich
Longitude East 60 from Greenwich
London Published Sep.r 1800 by J. Stratford N.o 112 Holborn Hill

TRAVELS

INTO THE

INTERIOR DISTRICTS OF AFRICA.

By MUNGO PARK, *Surgeon.*

Performed in the Years 1795, 1796, and 1797,

By the Direction of the African Association.

SECT. I.

Mr. Park's Motives for undertaking the Voyage—His Instructions—Arrival at Jillifree, on the Gambia—Arrival at Dr. Laidley's—Some Account of Pisania, &c. The Country described —Proceeds to the Interior—Description of the Feeloops, the Jaloffs, the Foulahs, and Mandingoes —Some Account of the Trade between the Europeans and Africans.

THE necessity of prosecuting discoveries on the African continent, induced the noblemen and gentlemen of the African association to engage a person to undertake so laudable an enterprise; and to explore the interior country by the way of the Gambia river. Mr. Park, stimulated by an anxious desire to examine into the productions of a country so little known; and presuming, from his youth and excellent constitution, that he should be able to endure fatigue and encounter perils, he offered himself to the society for that important service.

After submitting to a minute examination, which terminated greatly to Mr. Park's honour, the committee unanimously acceded to his wishes, expressing perfect satisfaction with respect to his qualifications. They proposed an annual salary of two hundred pounds, which he acknowledged to be sufficiently large, making no stipulation for a future reward, relying on the honour of those by whose indulgence he was destined to the arduous but delightful task*.

He left Portsmouth on the 22d of May, 1795, and saw the mountains of Magradore on the African coast on the 4th of June. After a pleasant and expeditious voyage, he anchored at Jillifree on the northern bank of the Gambia, opposite the spot distinguished by the appellation of James's Island. Barra, the kingdom in which this town is situated, produces the necessaries of life in great abundance; but the inhabitants trade principally in salt, which they convey up the river in canoes to Barraconda, where they barter it for Indian corn, cotton, elephants' teeth, and gold dust. The sovereign of Barra, who has imposed enormous duties, which fall indiscriminately on all vessels, is universally dreaded by Europeans. These duties, or customs, which amount to about twenty pounds, on every vessel, great or small, are rigidly collected in person by the governor of Jillifree, with a numerous train of insolent dependents, who are very rapacious. Having acquired a smattering of the English language by their intercourse with the British sailors, they clamorously beg for any thing they behold which engages their fancy, and are so very earnest and pressing in their importunities, that it is almost impossible to refuse them their unreasonable requests.

Proceeding from Jillifree he arrived at Vintain on the twenty-third; this town is situated about

* Procuring from Mr Beaufoy, the secretary of the association, a recommendation to Dr. Laidley who had been long resident at an English factory on the banks of the Gambia; together with a letter of credit on that gentleman for two hundred pounds; he took his passage in the brig Endeavour, a small vessel trading to the Gambia for ivory and bees-wax, commanded by captain Richard Wyatt. By a memorial delivered to Mr. Park, he was directed, on his arrival in Africa, to proceed to the river Niger, either by Bambouk, or some other convenient route; and endeavour to ascertain the course, the rise, and termination of that river: that he should, if possible, visit Tambuctoo, Houssa, and the principal towns or cities in the neighbourhood; and afterwards return to Europe by the most convenient route that the then existing circumstances should render most adviseable.

Mr. Pinkerton, in his modern geography, lately publish-

two miles up a creek on the southern side of the river; a place frequently resorted to by Europeans, as a mart for bees-wax, which is carried thither for sale in great quantities. This commodity is collected in the woods by the Feloops, a savage race of people, who inhabit a country of considerable extent, abounding in rice; where goats and poultry are also to be procured on reasonable terms. With their honey they produce a beverage of an intoxicating quality, resembling that which is fabricated from the same article in England, usually denominated Mead*.

Leaving Vintain on the 26th of May, Mr. Park continued his course up the river, which is both deep and muddy, and abounding with fish; some species of which, though unknown in Europe, are very excellent food. Impenetrable thickets of Mangrove cover the adjacent country, which is flat and swampy: Plenty of sharks present themselves at the entrance from the sea; and higher up, the hippopotamus, or river horse, are very numerous. The latter might more properly be named the river elephant, being of enormous bulk, and his teeth producing excellent ivory. This amphibious creature, with short legs, and cloven hoofs, is perfectly inoffensive; feeding on grass, and such shrubs as the banks of the river afford, seldom venturing to go any distance from the water; in which he always seeks protection on hearing the approach of man.

He next proceeded to Jonkakonda, a place of much commerce, expecting to receive some lading for the vessel, where he arrived at the end of six days. Different European traders came the next morning from their different factories, expecting letters addressed to them, and regular information of the particulars of the cargo; when the captain dispatched a messenger to Dr. Laidley, informing him of Mr. Park's arrival. He repaired to Jonkakonda the ensuing morning, and gave him Mr. Beaufoy's letter; when the doctor politely invited Mr. Park to continue at his house in Pisania, till an opportunity should present itself of prosecuting his journey. This invitation was too agreeable to be refused; and, being furnished by the doctor with a horse and guide, he left Jonkakonda on the morning of the 5th of July, and arrived at Pisania at eleven o'clock the same evening, where he was accommodated with a handsome suite of apartments †.

About this time a violent fever attacked our traveller, occasioned by the descending dews to which he had imprudently exposed himself, in observing an eclipse of the moon, to enable him to ascertain the longitude of the place: a delirium accompanied the fever, and, after the crisis, his convalescence advanced so deliberately that he was confined to his apartment almost the whole of the month of August. Thinking his health at that time in a considerable degree restored, he occasionally ventured to walk out to examine the productions of the country. In one of these excursions, having exceeded his usual jaunt on a sultry day, the fever returned, and he was again confined to his bed on the 10th of September. The malady, however, was less violent than before, and, after a farther confinement of about three weeks, he found himself in a condition to renew

ed in two volumes quarto, mentions Mr. Park's travels in the highest terms of approbation. After prefacing an extract from them in these words—"This enterprizing and ingenious traveller"—He farther observes, that, "We are indebted to Mr. Park for the Moorish kingdom of Ludamar, and for another called Beero, the capital of which is Walet. Not to mention curious and interesting information concerning the manners, and present state of the countries through which he passed."—Vol II. 770.

* In trading with Europeans the Feloops usually employ a factor of the Mandingo nation, who knows a little of the English language, and is conversant with the trade of the river, to make their bargains, and receive their money. The broker, conniving with the European, receives a part of the sum agreed upon, which he presents to his employer, as the whole: the remainder, which is properly denominated the *cheating money*, is delivered to him when the Feloop is gone, which he pockets as his regular fee. Though the language of the Feloops is appropriate, they find little inducement to learn it, while their trade is thus conducted by the Mandingoes.

† Pisania is a small village on the banks of the Gambia, about the distance of sixteen miles from Jonkakonda. It was established by the subjects of Great Britain, as a factory for trade, and solely inhabited by them and their black subjects. It is under the sovereignty of the king of Vany. It was here that Mr. Park began to study the Mandingo language, which is generally understood throughout this part of Africa. In this commendable pursuit he received important assistance from Dr. Laidley: and, anxious to obtain some knowledge of the country he had undertaken to visit, he was referred to certain traders, called slatees, a class of free black merchants, who are much respected in this part of Africa, who come from the interior countries with enslaved negroes for sale. Mr. Park, however, soon discovered that their accounts were not to be regarded, as they palpably contradicted each other in the most important particulars; and all of them endeavoured to dissuade him from prosecuting his design. He was therefore the more anxious to ascertain the truth from his own personal observations.

his

his botanical amusments; devoting the rainy days to the exercise of drawing plants, &c. in his chamber.

While he was labouring under this grievous malady, in a climate extremely gloomy at that season of the year, when the black clouds discharge their collected waters in torrents; while suffocating heats oppress by day, and the night is rendered hideous by the croaking of myriads of frogs, the shrill cry of the Jackall, the hyæna's ferocious howl, the dismal concert is only interrupted by the roar of the most tremendous thunder. But the care and attention of Dr. Laidley in some degree alleviated Mr. Park's distress, and the heavy hours were beguiled by his company and soothing conversation.

No romantic scenery delights the eye of the traveller in surveying this extensive level country, embrowned with numerous woods; a gloomy uniformity admits no pleasing landscape: but if nature has been sparing in her charms of variety, she has bestowed the more important blessings of fertility and abundance: a moderate degree of cultivation produces a luxuriant harvest, furnishing more than a sufficiency of corn for the consumption of the respective inhabitants; the cattle are plentifully supplied from the pastures, and the rivers of Gambia and Walli abound with delicious fish *.

The domestic animals resemble those of Europe. Swine are found in the woods, but their flesh is not esteemed, the prejudices of the Mahometans having possibly spread among the pagans. Antelopes are also dispersed in the woods, which afford delicious venison. Poultry of all kinds, the turkey excepted, are extremely plentiful. The Mandingo country also produces several wild animals, as the panther, the hyæna, and the elephant; the latter of which, these Africans have never attempted to subjugate to their service, for which they are so eminently qualified. The negroes sometimes destroy the elephants by fire-arms, and hunt them down in hopes of being rewarded by their teeth; a valuable acquisition which they barter for other articles from the Europeans. As an additional reward, their flesh supplies them with food, of which they are extremely fond.

The ass is the only beast of burden in these territories: in agriculture no animals are required: the plough is unknown among them; the sole instrument employed in husbandry is the hoe; and slaves are the only labourers.

A surprising swell of the Gambia occurred on the 6th of October, when the water rose fifteen feet above the high-water mark of the tide. It, however, gradually, but not regularly, subsided; sometimes sinking upwards of a foot in twenty four hours. By the beginning of November the river acquired its former level, and submitted to its accustomed ebb and flow. A material change in the atmosphere succeeded the abatement of the flood, and Mr. Park experienced a perfect restoration of his health. Conceiving it a proper season for travelling, as the natives had completed their harvest, and provisions were abundant, he thought a moment was not to be lost, and resolved upon a speedy departure. Dr. Laidley being at this time engaged at Jonkakonda, Mr. Park wrote to him to desire he would use his interest to procure him the first caravan; that he should leave the Gambia for the interior country; and also to procure for him a horse and two asses. Discovering, however, that he had been trifled with by the Slatees, and that their promises were not to be regarded, he declined entering into any positive engagement with them; and, the time of their departure being also uncertain, he resolved to avail himself of the dry season, and proceed without them. Dr. Laidley approved of his determination

* Rice, and Indian wheat, is plentifully produced here, with several varieties of the holcus: and the gardens in the vicinity of the towns and villages, afford a multiplicity of esculent plants, as onions, cavalances, yams, cassavi, ground nuts, pompions, and gourds. Cotton and indigo are also cultivated in these situations; the former supplying them with clothing, and the latter forming a most excellent blue colour, to be used in dyeing.

In the preparation of their corn for food, a large wooden mortar, called a paloon, is used in bruising the seed till it is separated from the husk. It is then judiciously exposed to the wind, to procure a more perfect separation, and clear it entirely from the chaff. The corn is then beaten into the consistence of meal, and variously dressed, according to the prevailing custom of different countries. But, among the nations of Gambia, it is formed into a kind of pudding called *kouskous*, as follows: after moistening the flour with water, it is completely stirred or shook about in a large calabash, till it assumes the appearance of sago: two vessels are then luted together, either with cow-dung, or a sort of paste made of meal and water; the lower vessel usually containing also some animal food and water, the steam of which ascends through several holes, which are perforated through the bottom vessel for that purpose; the composition, thus softened, was esteemed in all the countries which were visited by Mr. Park. Though this is the usual method of making a pudding, other modes of cookery are adopted, of which corn is the principal ingredient. Vegetable food is abundant, but the natives are sparingly supplied with animal food, though it is not absolutely withheld from them.

termination, and offered him every accommodation in his power to contribute to his ease and safety.

Mr. Park having thus come to a resolution of taking leave of his hospitable friend, and being under the necessity of remaining at Pisania, he embraced that opportunity of giving a concise description of the people who inhabit the borders of the Gambia.

The natives of these countries may properly be divided into four general classes: the Jaloffs, the Feloops, the Foulahs, and the Mandingoes: among all these, the religion of Mahomet has made considerable progress. The body of the people, however, whether free or enslaved, persevere in maintaining the blind and innocent superstitions of their ancestors, and are denominated infidels by the Mahometans.

The Jaloffs are war-like, vigorous, and martial, inhabiting a considerable part of the tract between the river Senegal and the Mandingo states on the Gambia. Though extremely black, they have not that protuberance of lips, nor that depression of the nose, so frequently prevalent among the Africans: they are therefore considered by the white traders to be superior in their persons to any negroes in the surrounding continent. They have divided their territory into several independent kingdoms, whose chieftains are often hostile to their neighbours. In their manners and government they resemble the Mandingoes, more than any other nation, but they excel them greatly in the manufacture of cotton cloth. Their language is comprehensible and significant.

The Feloops are gloomy, and seldom forget an injury, frequently transmitting their quarrels to posterity with the most vindictive malice. A son considers it his duty to be the avenger of his deceased father's injuries, and succeeds to all his animosities. If a man is slain in any of these sudden contests, which frequently occur at their feasts, when the whole party is inebriated by their essence of honey, the eldest of his sons, if more than one exists, procures the sandals of his departed father, which he wears once a year, on the aniversary of the tragic accident, till a proper opportunity for revenge presents itself. But, notwithstanding this fierce and unrelenting disposition they possess some excellent qualities, being singularly grateful to their benefactors, and faithful to those who place a confidence in their integrity. British property of great value, has frequently been left at Vintain for a considerable time, under the care of the Feloops, who have uniformly manifested the strictest honesty and punctuality.

The Foulahs, who reside near the Gambia, delight in a pastoral life, and have introduced themselves into all the kingdoms on the windward coast, where, by paying a tribute for their lands, they follow the occupation of husbandmen or herdsmen. Not having had many opportunities, during his residence at Pisania, Mr. Park thought proper to omit further particulars respecting these people, till he had acquired a more perfect history of them. Their complexions are tawny, their hair silky, and their features pleasing.

The Mandingoes, who derive their name from the republic of Manding, are the most numerous of all the natives in the African interior, and their language is generally understood and spoken by the inhabitants. They are mild, affable, and obliging: the men are tall, robust, and capable of laborious employments; the women are vivacious, docile, and agreeable. The dress of both sexes consists of cotton cloth, manufactured by themselves: that of the men is a kind of loose frock, with drawers descending below the calf of the leg; white cotton caps on their heads, and sandals on their feet, complete their masculine attire. The waists of the women are encircled with two pieces of cloth, of the length of about six feet, and the breadth of three; one of them reaching to the ancles, serves as a kind of petticoat; and the other forms a sort of upper robe, and is thrown negligently and loosely over the neck and shoulders. This is the general mode of dressing among the natives of these districts; but the head-dresses of the women vary with the caprice of national fashion. In the countries near the Gambia, a kind of bandage, called *jalla*, decorates the forehead which it encircles: another taſte prevails in Bondou, where a small plate of gold is worn on the middle of the forehead, secured with strings of beads. At Ludamair and Kaerta, the hair is artificially raised to an immoderate height, and decorated with a coral, brought from the Red Sea by pilgrims on their return from Mecca. This African method of adorning the head was adopted by the Engliſh ladies about half a century ago. The ladies of Kasson display their ingenuity in tastefully ornamenting their heads with sea-shells.

The government of all the Mandingo states is monarchial, but the power is subject to certain limitations. On important occasions, the principal

pal men or elders are convened, by whose advice their conduct must be regulated, and without whose concurrence they cannot engage in war, or conclude a pacific treaty. A chief magiſtrate, who bears the title of Alkaid, is established in every town, to preserve decorum, levy duties on travellers, and preside in courts exercising local jurisdiction. The proceedings of their courts are solemnly conducted in the open air, being composed of free elders of the town, who are denominated Palavers.

The negroes having no written language, generally decide according to *ancient customs*, therein imitating the Common Law of England; but since the rapid progress of the Mahometan religion among them, they have admitted, with their religious tenets, many of the civil institutions of the prophet. Where the koran is not sufficiently explicit, recourse is had to *al sharra*, a kind of exposition and digest of the Mahometan laws*.

The habitations of the Mandingoes are small and incommodious; a conical roof, composed of bamboo cane, thatched with grass, is usually supported by a circular wall of mud of the height of about four feet. Such are the palaces of the kings, and the hovels of the slaves. Their domestic furniture is proportioned to their architecture: a hurdle, sustained by several upright stakes, about two feet from the ground, on which a mat, or some skins are placed, forms a bed for the occupiers to repose on; some earthen pots for culinary purposes, a jar for water, a few wooden bowls and calabashes, and a couple of low stools compose the rest†.

It may be necessary to observe here, that these remarks on the natives of this country are chiefly applicable to those of a *free condition*, and constitute no more than about a fourth of the inhabitants at large. The remainder are slaves by birth, or occupation, who derive no consolation from the idea of a future emancipation; and are employed in the cultivation of the land, in attending the cattle, and other servile offices. Mr. Park, however, was informed, that the Mandingo master cannot deprive his slave of life, nor dispose of him to a stranger; but this degree of protection extends no farther than to a domestic slave: captives taken in battle, or condemned to slavery for crimes or insolvency, are wholly in the power of their owners. Sometimes indeed it happens, when no ships are on the coast, that a humane master incorporates his purchased slaves with his domestics, thus conveying to the children, if not the parents, the privileges of the native class.

The Portuguese were the first Europeans who established a factory on the Gambia; after which it was successively possessed by the French and the English, by the latter of whom the trade was wholly engrossed; but was afterwards almost annihilated by laying it open to the general commerce of Europe. Only two or three annual ships are now supported by this commerce, and the value of British exports does not exceed

* The frequency of appeal to written laws, with which the Pagan natives were unacquainted, occaſioned the introduction of *palavers*, or profeſſional pleaders, who were permitted to appear in behalf of the reſpective contending parties, in the ſame manner as in the English courts of law. While Mr. Park was at Piſania, a cauſe was litigated which furniſhed the Mahometan lawyers with an excellent opportunity of displaying their legal abilities.—An aſs, the property of a Serawoolli negro, had forcibly entered a field of corn belonging to a Mandingo, and committed great plunder and devaſtation. The proprietor, having detected the animal in the fact, drew his knife and inſtantly cut his throat. The Serawoolli called a *palaver*, or in European terms, commenced an action to recover the damages he had ſuſtained by the loſs of his aſs, which he declared was very conſiderable. The defendant acknowledged he had ſlain the beaſt, but pleaded a *ſet-off*, inſiſting that he ſuffered by the animal's ravages, a loſs as conſiderable as the ſum demanded for the unfortunate treſpaſſer. To aſcertain this fact was found ſo extremely difficult, the cauſe having been rendered ſo intricate by the chicanery of the learned advocates, that after a hearing of three days, the court broke up without making a decree, and a ſecond palaver was recommended.

† A plurality of wives being allowed to every man of free condition, it is thought eſſential to accommodate the ladies with a ſeparate habitation, ſuppoſing altercations would frequently ariſe through the jealouſy of the ladies who partook of the endearments of the huſband. All places of this deſcription, belonging to one maſter, are incloſed with a ſort of wicker fence, formed of ſplit bamboo, and named a Surk. Several of theſe Surks, having narrow paſſages between them, compoſe a town; though in theſe erections no regard is had to regularity. It ſeems, however, to be an invariable rule to place the front-door to the ſouth-weſt, to admit the ſalutary breeze from the ocean. In every large town, a ſtage called the Bentang is erected, compoſed of interwoven canes, and generally ſheltered from the ſun by the ſhade of a large tree, which anſwers the purpoſe of a Town Hall. Here juſtice is adminiſtered, and public affairs tranſacted; and here the indolent aſſemble to enjoy the fumes of their tobacco, and collect the intelligence of the day. In the principal towns the Mahometans have alſo a moſque, appropriated to the celebration of their worſhip.

twenty thousand pounds. France and Denmark have still a small share in this traffic, and the Americans, by way of experiment, have lately sent a few vessels to the Gambia.

The European exports to the Gambia, chiefly consist of broad cloth, Manchester and India manufactures, cotton-caps, ammunition, iron ware, fire-arms, glass beads, amber, spirituous liquors, and some other trifling articles. For these are taken in exchange, gold-dust, ivory, bees-wax, hides, and slaves. Though the latter may be considered as the most considerable, including the annual purchase of all nations, the number of them seldom exceeds one thousand. The greater part of these unfortunate creatures are brought from the remote inland countries in periodical caravans, to be distributed among the neighbouring villages near the coast, where they are secured till the arrival of a slave-ship, or till they are purchased by the black traders. In the mean time these miserable wretches, who are unacquainted with the language of the maritime districts, are kept constantly fettered, and laboriously employed by their temporary task-masters, by whom they are as scantily fed as they are otherwise unnaturally treated. The price is generally regulated by the eagerness or indifference of the purchasers; but a young healthy male, from sixteen years of age to twenty-five, will produce eighteen or twenty pounds to his owner.

Exclusive of their human merchandise, the Slatees supply the natives with a commodity called *shea-toulou*, an article extracted from the kernel of a nut: it perfectly resembles butter, and is an admirable substitute for that excellent food. It enters into the composition of those provisions which are appropriated to domestic uses, and is therefore coveted with avidity. They also supply the inhabitants with native iron, frankincense, and odoriferous gums. In return for which they receive considerable quantities of salt*, an article not easily procured in this part of the country, as our traveller too frequently experienced. The inland natives are, however, occasionally supplied with it by the Moors, who procure it from pits in the Great Desert, and are gratified in return with cotton, cloth, and slaves†.

SECTION II.

The Author proceeds to Jinday—Story related by a Mandingo Negro—Proceeds to Medina—Interview with the King—Saphies or Charms—Description of Mumbo Jumbo—Wrestling Match—Crosses the Wilderness to Fallika—Inhabitants of—Proceeds for Fatteconda—Crosses the Neriko—Interview with Almami, Sovereign of Bondou—Visits the King, arrives, &c.

MR. PARK took his departure from Pisania, and the hospitable mansion of Dr. Laidley, on the 2d of December, 1785, having been furnished with a horse for himself, and two asses for his interpreter and servant. The former, who was a negro, spoke the English and Mandingo languages, was a native of this part of Africa, and had received the name of Johnson. Dr. Laidley had also supplied him with a negro boy of his own, named Demba, a sprightly youth, who was also acquainted with the Mandingo tongue, as well as that of the Serawoollies: to induce him to behave well, the doctor promised him his freedom on his return, if a favourable report should be made of his fidelity and conduct.

* Dr. Shaw, in his travels through Barbary, informs us, that salt-pits are frequent in the desert, and the more northern parts of Africa: and the same author, in his description of Algiers, near the coast, says, "five miles to the southward of Arzew is a large space of ground full of salt-pits, which in any other country, where commerce was understood, would bring in a considerable revenue to government. These salt-pits take up an area of about six miles in compass, and are environed with mountains. In winter the whole space appears like a lake; but in summer, the water being exhaled by the heat of the sun, the salt left behind is crystallized, and dug up with amazing facility." Salt is the staple article of the trade carried on by the Moors with the Negroes.

† In bartering one commodity for another, many inconveniences have arisen from the absence of coined money, to adjust the balance precisely between the respective articles; in consequence of which the natives of the interior made use of small shells, which they denominated *kowries*. In their early intercourse with Europeans, iron attracted their notice in a very particular manner, it being so essential an article in husbandry, and in forming the instruments of war; it therefore soon became the medium by which the value of all other commodities was estimated.

Our tourist did not incumber himself with baggage. It consisted principally of provisions for two days, some changes of linen, a pocket sextant, a magnetic compass, a thermometer, two fowling pieces, an umbrella, two pair of pistols, some tobacco, a small quantity of beads, &c. A freeman named Madiboo, with two slaves, and Tamé, the late blacksmith to Dr. Laidley, accompanied him on foot, preceded by their respective animals. Thus, our traveller had no less than six attendants, all of whom had been taught to regard him with the most profound respect. The doctor himself, two of his friends, and several of their domestics, escorted him on his journey the two first days in grand procession. They arrived at Jinday on the evening of the first day, and were accommodated at the house of a negro lady, whose sable charms had formerly captivated Mr. Hewett, an European trader. From this amour the lady had acquired the honourable appellation of *Seniora*. In the evening they repaired to an adjoining village belonging to Jemaffoo, the most opulent of the Gambia traders. Thinking it a particular honour conferred upon him by this unexpected visit, he presented them with a fat bullock, which was immediately slaughtered, and, part of it being roasted, furnished a delightful evening's repast. As the Negroes sup at a late hour, some amusement was thought necessary, to prevent a kind of lassitude too often experienced by those who wait in anxious expectation of some truly gratifying enjoyment; some stories were indirectly requested from a Mandingo, who very politely complied with the intimation, in the following or similar language *.

" A long time ago," said the narrator, " the people of Doomasansa were extremely annoyed by a lion that nightly robbed them of some of their cattle; by a constant repetition of these depredations, the natives of that country having suffered great injuries from the rapacity of this voracious monster, a party of them formed a resolution to hunt him down, and put a period to his enormities. They accordingly proceeded in search of the common enemy, and discovered him in a thicket where he had attempted to conceal himself. An expert marksman instantly firing on him, brought him to the ground, while he was springing from the thicket towards his assailants. The animal, though much wounded, displayed such evident tokens of vigour and revenge, that no one dared singly to attack him; a conversation was therefore held, whether it would not reflect more honour on their prowess, to take the atrocious enemy alive. Many different plans were proposed among the multitude of counsellors; at length, an old man submissively requested them to attend to a scheme which he should take the liberty to propose Strip the roof of a house of its thatch, and convey the bamboo frame, (well secured together by thongs) and throw it over the lion; but if, on your approach, he should endeavour to spring upon you, you need only let down the roof upon yourselves, and fire at the animal through the rafters."

" This speech had the effect that might be expected; a hut was instantly dismantled of its covering, and the hunters, supporting the proposed den on their shoulders, marched with great intrepidity towards the wounded malefactor. But the beast, having now in a great degree recovered his strength, assumed a ferocious countenance, and the intimidated hunters, instead of proceeding any further, resolved to provide for their own safety by covering themselves with the roof; but the business was conducted in such an injudicious manner, that both the beast and his pursuers were taken in the same trap, and the lion devoured his antagonists at his leisure, to the great mortification and astonishment of the people of Doomasansa. The inhabitants of this place are, at this day, so much ashamed of this transaction, that the bare mention of catching *a lion alive*, incurs their heaviest displeasure."

On the following day Mr. Park took his leave of Dr. Laidley and his friends, and rode slowly into the woods. Being now in the midst of a boundless forest, the inhabitants of which were wholly uncivilized, he began to meditate on the perils to which he must inevitably expose himself. These considerations cast a gloom over his mind, and while he was ruminating on his

* Though these stories bear some analogy to those in the Arabian Nights Entertainments, they are generally of a more ludicrous turn.

This mode of amusement is not peculiar to the Negroes, but has been resorted to by all nations, previous to the extensive circulation of literature; but among the indolent and feeble Africans, no great intellectual or moral exertions can be expected.

fate,

fate, he was roused from his reverie by a body of people, who abruptly informed him, that he must either pay them the usual customs, or accompany them to the king of Walli. After endeavouring to convince them that the object of his journey was different from that of trade, and therefore he was not amenable to taxation like the Saltees, he soon experienced that his arguments were ineffectual, and prudently complied with their demand: he accordingly delivered four bars of tobacco into their hands, declaring it for the king's use; immediately after which he was permitted to proceed to a village near Kootacunda, where he passed the night. On the 4th of December, he passed Kootacunda, the last town in the kingdom of Walli, and stopped to pay customs at a village adjoining. On the subsequent day Mr. Park reached Medina, which is the king of Woollis's capital. The dominions of this sovereign are bounded by the Walli, west, and the Gambia on the west and south; by the little river Walli and Bondou, on the north, and north-east; and by the Sirubani wilderness on the east*.

Medina†, at which our traveller was now arrived, is the capital of the kingdom, a large town, consisting of about a thousand houses, fortified in the African style by a surrounding high wall, composed of clay, with an exterior defence of pointed stakes and thorny bushes; but this boundary seems rapidly decaying, and the outward fence has suffered materially from the petty depredations of house-wives, who pillage the stakes for fuel. Obtaining a lodging at the house of one of the king's near relations, Mr. Park was cautioned, on his introduction to his Majesty, not to presume to *shake hands with him*, it being unusual, it was alledged, to allow this liberty to strangers. Thus instructed, he waited on Jetta, the king, requesting his permission to pass the Bondou. He was the same venerable personage of whom Major Houghton made such honourable mention in the account transmitted by him. The sovereign was seated before the door of his humble palace, while several men and women, arranged on each side of him, were employed in clapping their hands and singing. After saluting him respectfully, the traveller acquainted him with the object of his visit. The monarch courteously replied, that he would not only permit him to proceed, but he would also offer up prayers for his safety. On this declaration one of Mr. Park's attendants, to manifest his sense of the king's courtesy, began to sing an Arabic song; at every pause of which the king and his retinue, pathetically answered, *Amen, Amen*, solemnly striking their hands against their foreheads. The king also assured him, that a guide should be ready, on the following day, to conduct him to the frontier of Bondou. Having taken his leave, he sent the king an order upon Dr. Laidley, for three gallons of rum, in return for which he received a large quantity of provisions.

Early in the morning, on the 6th of December, our traveller re-visited the rustic palace, to enquire if a guide might then be permitted to attend him. He found Jetta, his majesty, seated on a bullock's hide before a large fire‡. Jetta received his visitant with a benevolent countenance, but earnestly entreated him to relinquish his intentions;

* The country is generally woody, and the towns are usually seated in valleys surrounded by cultivated spots, whose produce affords an adequate supply to the inhabitants. The soil is abundantly fertile, excepting near the tops of the ridges, where stunted shrubs proclaim its barrenness. The natives are plentifully supplied with esculent vegetables, tobacco, cotton, &c. while the surrounding country is universally covered with impenetrable woods and extensive forests. The natives, who are Mandingoes, consist of two religious sects; the Mahometans, who are called *Bushreens*; and the Pagans, who are indiscriminately known by the appellation of *Kafirs* and *Sonakees;* the former signifying *unbelievers*, and the latter *lovers of strong liquors*. The Pagans are much more numerous than the Mahometans, and the management of the state is under their guidance. The converts to the Koran are indeed consulted on business of public importance; but the executive power is vested exclusively in the hands of their *Mansa*, or King, and the great officers of state by him appointed; but, in every class, particular respect is paid to the authority of aged men. On the death of a sovereign, the eldest son, if at the years of discretion, succeeds to the regal authority. If there is no son of a competent age, a meeting of the great men is convened, and the late king's nearest relation is exalted to the government, in his own right, to the exclusion of the minor, if with the approbation of the council. The expences of the government are defrayed by tributes from the people, and by taxes on travellers, on goods conveyed across the country. Those who pass from the Gambia towards the interior, pay the customs in European merchandize; on their return they pay in African; which are regularly demanded and collected in every town.

† In the Arabic, a city, a common name among the Negroes, having been borrowed from the Mahometans.

‡ Africans are sensible of the smallest variation in the temperature of the air, and often feel cold when an European is oppressed with heat.

assuring

assuring him that Major Houghton lost his life in the course of this journey; adding, that if our traveller exposed his person in the same unknown country, it was much to be apprehended that he might meet with a similar fate. He said the people of the eastern country were not like those of Woolli, who were acquainted with white men, and respected by them; but the eastern inhabitants had never seen a man of that colour, and would certainly destroy the first they beheld. The tender solicitude of the king demanded the warmest gratitude of Mr. Park: he thanked him for his affectionate concern, but professed a resolution to proceed, notwithstanding all the dangers that might present themselves. The sovereign shook his head, and desisted from further importunity; ordering the guide to hold himself in readiness. The conductor appearing about two o' clock, our valiant traveller bade a final adieu to the venerable sovereign; and, after three hours moderate riding, arrived at Konjour, a small village, where he and his suite intended to repose for the night. With some beads they purchased a fine sheep, which his attendants killed with all the ceremonies prescribed by their religion. Part of the animal having been dressed, an altercation arose between one of the negroes and the interpreter, respecting the horns. The former claimed them as his perquisite, he having performed the office of a butcher: Johnson controverted the claim. To adjust this dispute, the traveller gave a horn to each of the litigants. Enquiring further into the particulars respecting the proper disposal of these horns, it appeared that they were held in the greatest estimation as portable sheaths, or cases for preserving certain charms or amulets called *saphies**, which the negroes constantly wear about their persons.

These saphies are sentences from the Koran, written on small pieces of paper, which are sold by the priests, like Popish indulgences, to the natives, who suppose them to possess virtues of the superlative kind. By some they are worn as preservatives against the bite of snakes or alligators; by others to protect their persons against hostile weapons; others to prevent or cure diseases. Some ridiculously imagine that hunger and thirst may be prevented, by the possession of these wonderful papers. They are also supposed to conciliate the favour of superior powers. Even the art of writing, in this part of the continent, is considered as bordering upon magic; and they rely not, in this case, on the doctrines of the prophet, but on the arts of the magician.

Departing from Konjour, and passing through Malla, Mr. Park arrived at Kolor, a town of some magnitude, on the 8th: near the entrance of which Mr. Park saw a fantastic kind of dress hanging from a bough. It was formed of the bark of a tree which the natives informed him belonged to *Mumbo Jumbo*†.

Leaving Kolor on the 9th, Mr. Park proceeded through Tambacunda, and on the 11th arrived at Koojar, the frontier town of Woolli, near Bondou. King Jetta's guide being now destined

* Similar charms, or amulets, are common in other parts of Africa.

Credulity, respecting magic, has ever prevailed in ignorant ages and countries, not only among the uninformed, but even in learned and civilized nations, and frequently among the learned themselves. Fear appears to be the predominant passion among the Negroes, their saphies are therefore principally applied towards the objects of that passion. In Greece, Rome, and other European countries, witchcraft and magic take a much wider range, and seek materials for gratifying variety of passions. A Thessalian enchantress not only employed charms against the bite of scorpions and vipers, objects of fear; they also used them to lure from their rivals the objects of their love.

† This whimsical exhibition, which is common in the Mandingo towns, was invented by the Pagan natives to keep their wives in awe; among whom, as the number is unlimited, quarrels frequently arise to such a height that the husband can no longer preserve tranquillity in his household. In these cases, *Mumbo Jumbo* is called in; to whose decision the African ladies must invariably submit. This strange arbiter, who is generally suspected to be the husband himself, or a friend of his instructed for this purpose (thus disguised and armed with a rod of authority) announces his approach by dismal screams in the neighbouring woods; and when day-light is fled, and "darkness visible" presents itself, the tremendous judge enters the town, and proceeds to the Bentang, where the inhabitants have assembled. This ceremony affords no gratification to the women; the person in disguise being unknown to them, every married female suspects she may be the principal person in the pantomime. When summoned, however, they dare not refuse to make their appearance, and the rites are commenced with songs and dances, to amuse the company till the hour of midnight, when the culprit is seized by the implacable Mumbo. The devoted victim is instantly stripped naked, tied to a post, and unmercifully scourged with *Mumbo's* rod, amidst the deriding shouts of the assembly; and it is equally strange and true, that the rest of the women were more outrageous than the men, in pouring forth their exclamations against their offending sister. Day-light at length put a period to this humiliating scene.

to return, our traveller rewarded him for his trouble with some amber. Being informed that it was sometimes difficult to procure water in the wilderness, he engaged three elephant-hunters to serve him in the double capacity of guides and water-bearers. The inhabitants of Koojar beheld the white man with surprise and veneration, and civilly invited him to a wrestling match in the evening in the Bentang. At this exhibition, which is very common in all these countries, the spectators formed a ring round the wrestlers, who were athletic and active young men, full of emulation, and accustomed to such contests. Being stripped to a short pair of drawers, and having their skin anointed with oil, the combatants approached each other on their hands and knees, parrying for some time; till at length one of them sprang forward, and grasped the knee of his antagonist. A great degree of judgment and dexterity were then displayed, but the contest was principally decided by superior strength. The music of a drum gave considerable animation to the wrestlers. After this grand display of power and agility, a dance commenced, in which the performers were distinguished by a number of little bells, fastened round their arms and legs, and in this amusement the motions of the dancers were also regulated by the drum. The same instrument of music keeps order among the spectators, by imitating the sound of certain arbitrary sentences, which is generally understood among them.

In the evening Mr. Park was presented with a liquor which much resembled the British beverage of strong beer; and, on enquiring into its composition, was informed that it was produced from corn, which had previously experienced the operation of malting. A root producing a grateful bitter, supplied the place of hops.

Here it may be necessary to observe, that, when our traveller engaged the three elephant-hunters in his service, he paid each of them three bars in advance. In the morning of the 12th one of these negroes absconded, with the money he had received from our traveller in part of wages; when, to prevent the desertion of the other two, he caused their calabashes to be filled. Before he had travelled a mile, his attendants halted to prepare a saphie to insure them a safe and prosperous journey. A stone was therefore spit upon, and thrown on the road, whilst they muttered a few incoherent sentences. Having repeated this operation, three times, the negroes confidently proceeded: Our tourist's surprise was next excited by the appearance of a large tree, called by the natives *neema taba*. It was decorated with innumerable rags of cloth, which travellers across the wilderness had at different times fastened to the branches*.

Tallika, which is the frontier town of Bondou towards Woolli, is principally the residence of Mahometan Foulahs, who, by their great traffic in ivory and provisions with travellers, acquire great affluence, and live in elegance and ease. The king of Bondou has an officer stationed here, whose employment consists in giving early intimation of the caravans that arrive, which are taxed according to the number of loaded asses that accompany them. Beneath his roof, our traveller accepted a temporary accommodation, and was attended by him to Fateconda, the king's residence, for which our traveller rewarded him with five bars. From hence Mr. Park dispatched a letter to Dr. Laidley by the master of a caravan on his route to the Gambia. This caravan con-

* This practice was perhaps at first adopted to inform the traveller that water was near the spot, but the custom is now so prevalent that hardly a person passes without bestowing his tributary rag. Mr. Park followed the example, and suspended a piece of cloth on one of the boughs. In Ireland, and the northern parts of Britain, a similar custom prevails; and rags are there deposited round the borders of the walls.

A more important object now demanded their attention; a supply of water being necessary, our traveller dispatched one of the guides in search of that essential article, while the asses were unladen and refreshed with provender: a pool was found, but the liquid it contained was thick and muddy; and near it were discovered the remnants of a fire, recently extinguished; clearly manifesting that it had been lately visited either by travellers or banditti. The attendants apprehending the latter, and supposing the robbers were at no considerable distance, Mr. Park proceeded to another watering-place, where he arrived late in the evening, after the fatigue of a long day's journey. In this situation he kindled a large fire, and lay down at more than the distance of a gun-shot from any bush, surrounded by his cattle; the negroes agreeing to keep alternate watch to prevent surprise. As soon as day-light appeared, the calabashes were filled at the pool, and the whole company set out for Tallika, the first town in Bondou, where they arrived about eleven in the forenoon.

Mr. Park gratefully acknowledges that he was every where well received by the natives, and that the fatigues of the day were generally compensated by the indulgences of the evening. Even the African mode of living, which was at first unpleasant to him, he began at length to be reconciled to, having conquered many of those prejudices which originally at first appeared insurmountable.

sisted

sisted of five asses laden with ivory. On the road from Tallika to the royal mansion, a quarrel arose between two of the suite, one of whom was a smith, and the other his companion; and many opprobrious epithets were liberally bestowed upon one of them. This language to an African, is considered as a greater offence than a blow; and consequently it enraged the other to such a degree, that he drew his cutlass on the calumniator; and would doubtless have wounded him, had not Mr. Park desired the smith to be silent, and warned the other that if he again presumed to draw his weapon, or assault any of his fellow travellers, he should consider him as a robber and an assassin. He was quieted by this threat, and the company marched on till they arrived at a kind of assemblage of small villages, scattered over a fertile plain. At Ganado, one of these rustic hamlets, they halted for the night, where a comfortable supper, and mutual presents restored tranquillity to the late contending parties. An itinerant *singing-man* presented himself, who amused them with entertaining stories, and performed some pleasant airs, by breathing on a bow-string, accompanied by a stroke with a stick*.

At day-break on the 15th, Mr. Park's fellow travellers took leave of him, pouring forth fervent prayers for his preservation, and crossed the Neriko, a respectable branch of the Gambia. The declivities of its banks were covered with *mimosas;* and fine muscles, a shell-fish not eaten by the natives, were observeable in the mud. To avoid the fervour of the meredian sun, they reposed two hours beneath a spreading tree, and were regaled with pounded corn and milk. In the evening they arrived at Koorkarany, where the smith had some relations, and where they continued two whole days. This is a Mahometan town containing a mosque, and encircled with a high wall. A number of Arabic manuscripts were here shewn to Mr. Park, particularly the copy of a book called *Al Shara*. A priest explained to him in Mandingo, the most remarkable passages; and he, in return for his civility, agreeably surprised him with a sight of Richardson's Arabic grammar.

Leaving Koorkarany, he accompanied a young man who was going to Fattaconda for salt, and at night arrived at Dooggi, a small village three miles distant from Koorkarany, where he purchased a fine bullock for six little stones of amber. Departing from Dooggi the following morning, a number of Foulahs and others joined him, which, added to his former associates, formed a considerable body, and dissipated all apprehensions of plunder from the inhabitants of the woods. One of the asses now becoming refractory, the following singular method was adopted to render him obedient. The negroes cut a forked stick, and putting the forked part into the animal's mouth, like the bit of a bridle, tied the two smaller parts together above his head, leaving the lower part of the stick long enough to strike the ground, if the ass should attempt to put down his head. Finding the inconvenience that attended his obstinacy, the ass afterwards carried his neck in a proper position, and quietly proceeded with his drivers. Though this contrivance produced a ludicrous appearance, it perfectly answered the purpose for which it was intended.

In the evening they arrived at Buggill, a small village, and passed the night in a wretched hovel, where their bed consisted of a bundle of corn-stalks, and their evening's repast was as little gratifying as the scene of their repose. The wells here are deep and curiously contrived. Proceeding from hence they came to a large village, where they intended to remain during the night. Many of the female inhabitants were dressed in a thin French gauze, extremely well calculated to display their persons to advantage. Their behaviour however did not correspond with the elegance of their drapery, for they were extremely rude and troublesome, surrounding the travellers in great numbers, begging for amber, beads, &c. They tore Mr. Park's coat, forcibly cut the buttons from his boy's clothes, and were proceeding to other extremities; to avoid which he instantly mounted his horse, and proceeded on his journey.

Entering Soobrudooka in the evening, his company then consisting of fourteen persons, Mr. Park purchased a sheep and a quantity of corn for supper. After regaling themselves with this repast, they all passed an uncomfortable night, by sleeping in a heavy dew. On the following day, about noon, they arrived at a considerable village on the banks of Falemé, a rapid rocky river. The circumjacent country, however, was beautiful and fertile fields of rich grain, called by the natives *manio*, but of a different species from that cultivated on the Gambia, delight the eye of the beholder. It grows, in the dry season, in great abundance, and

* These are travelling bards, who sing extempore songs in praise of their employers.

and is reaped in January; botanical writers name it *holcus cernuus*. The inhabitants were attentively employed in procuring fish from the rapid stream, by a variety of methods. The largest were taken in long baskets of split cane, placed in the midst of an impetuous current, formed by a ridge or wall of stone built almost across the stream, leaving certain places open, through which the water rushed, and prevented the fish from returning after they had once entered. The smaller sort were easily caught in cotton hand-nets, manufactured by the people, and used by them with astonishing dexterity. The latter species of this fish resemble sprats in size and form; and their usual method of preparing them for sale is to pound them in wooden mortars, and then expose them in heaps to the sun, that they may be dried by his benign influence. Though the smell of this preparation is not very inviting, it is thought a great luxury in the Moorish countries to the north of Senegal. A piece of it is usually cut off by the natives, and dissolved in boiling water, after which they mix it with their *kouscous*.

Returning to the village after this excursion, to survey the fishery, Mr. Park received a visit from an old Moorish Shereef, in order to bestow his blessing upon him, and request some paper to write saphies upon. Finding that this petitioner had seen Major Houghton in the kingdom of Kaarta, he gave him a few sheets of paper, that he might indulge his superstition. Proceeding northward along the banks, Mr. Park arrived at Mayemow in the evening; when the hospitable master of the town presented him with a bullock, and the favour was compensated by a present of beads and amber. Crossing the river, they arrived at Fatteconda, the capital of Bondou; in which he was politely accommodated by a respectable Slatee*. Soon after Mr. Park was respectfully conducted to the king, who expressed a desire of seeing him immediately, if he was not too much fatigued. Taking his interpreter with him, he instantly followed the messenger till they were out of town: thinking some imposition was intended, he asked the guide whither he was going? receiving a satisfactory answer, he followed his Majesty's servant to a large tree, which served as a canopy to a man who sat beneath it on a mat. When he advanced, the king desired him to come and sit by him. After hearing what he had to say, he only asked Mr. Park if he wished to become a purchaser of any gold or slaves; being answered in the negative, he seemed astonished, but desired he would come to him again in the evening, that he might be supplied with some provisions.

The name of this prince was Almami, and he was a Pagan. Our traveller was told that he had acted unkindly towards Major Houghton, and had caused him to be plundered. His behaviour to Mr. Park, at the first interview, though he shewed him more civility than he expected, did not remove the fears he entertained, that some improper measure might be taken, now he was wholly in his power. Thinking a handsome present might be advantageously employed in this dilemma, he took with him in the evening some tobacco, amber, an umbrella, and a cannister of gun-powder: Supposing his bundles would be searched, he concealed some articles in the roof of the hut where he lodged, and put on his new blue coat that he might preserve it.

All the apartments of the royal family are surrounded by a lofty mud wall, which gives the whole an appearance of a kind of citadel; and the interior is separated into several distinct courts. At the first place of entrance, Mr. Park found the door guarded by a man standing with a musket on his shoulder, and the avenues remarkably intricate which led to the presence-chamber. When he entered the court in which the king resides, the guide and interpreter, according to custom, took off their sandals: the former pronouncing the king's name aloud, and repeating it till he was answered from within. Mr. Park found the monarch seated on a mat, attended by two of his officers: he repeated what he had before asserted, concerning the object of his journey; of the truth of which his Majesty intimated a doubt, declaring he thought it impossible that any man in his senses would undertake so dangerous a journey, merely to take a view of the country and its inhabitants†. Having deli-

* As there are no inns in Africa, strangers repair to the Bentang, till they are invited to accept of a lodging by some of the inhabitants.

† The same absence of curiosity appears in the islands of the Pacific Ocean, in the torrid latitude, at Ohaheite, the Friendly Islands, and others, visited by Captain Cook, and subsequent navigators. The same inertness of intellect is manifested by Jetta and the king of Bondou; the latter supposing the idea of travelling from curiosity as totally impossible.

vered his presents, which were graciously received, the umbrella gave infinite delight to his majesty; this he repeatedly furled and unfurled, to the admiration of himself and his attendants. He was particularly desirous of learning the use of this wonderful machine, which was minutely explained, to the satisfaction of the sable prince *.

Being again desired to attend the king, a little before sun-set, he presented to his Majesty some beads and writing paper, as an offering on taking leave. The king politely signified his approbation of the traveller's conduct, by a present of five drachms of gold, accompanied with a still greater act of kindness, that of suffering his baggage to pass *without examination*, and the owner to depart whenever he thought proper.

On the morning of the 23d, the travellers left Fatteconda, and soon arrived at a small village which was the boundary between Bondou and Kajaago. Hearing the road was dangerous for travellers, they resolved to proceed by night till they came to a more respectable part of the country. Two persons were instantly hired to conduct them through the woods; and, when it was supposed that the inhabitants were asleep, they set out. The stillness of the air, the howling of wild beasts, and the deep solitude of the forest, added solemnity to the scene. Not a syllable escaped the lips of any of them, but in a whisper; all were attentive, and seemingly sagacious. Some amused themselves by pointing at the wolves and hyænas, as they glided like shadows from thicket to thicket. On the following day they arrived at Joag, in the kingdom of Kajaaga.

In this place Mr. Park thought proper to introduce some account of Bondou † and its inhabitants. The boundaries of Bondou are Bambouk on the east; Tendu, and the Simbani wilderness, on the south; Woolli, on the south-west; Foota Torra, on the west; and Kajaaga on the north. This country is generally covered with a profusion of forest-scenery, but the land is more elevated than that of Woolli; in richness and fertility the soil is not inferior to any tract in Africa. From its central situation, between the Gambia and Senegal rivers, it is much resorted to by the Slatees, and others who come from the interior countries to purchase salt. The different branches of commerce are principally conducted by the Mandingoes and Serawoollies, who have settled in this part of the world, and trade with Moorish countries, bartering corn and cotton cloths for salt; which they again barter in other districts for iron, shea-butter, and gold-dust, they also deal in a variety of fragrant gums, with which the

* Mr. Park attempting to withdraw, the king desired him to stop a short time, to hear him pronounce an eulogium on white men. He then expatiated on our traveller's blue coat and yellow buttons, which seemed particularly to please his fancy. He concluded by requesting it as a present, and assuring him, that he would wear it on all public occasions; and acquaint every one who saw it of the white man's great liberality. The request of an African prince, in his own capital, has the force of a command: the coat was instantly taken off, and laid at his Majesty's feet, though it was the only good one that he was master of; in return, our traveller was presented with abundance of provisions, and the king requested his attendance in the morning.

Obedient to the will of the African prince, Mr. Park attended him the next day, when he found his Majesty confined to his bed by indisposition. He informed our tourist, that he thought the loss of a little blood would contribute to his recovery; but when that gentleman had tied up his arm, and displayed the lancet, his courage abated, and he was desired to postpone the operation. He then informed Mr. Park, that his women wished to see him, and begged he would indulge them with a visit. Being conducted to the court appropriated to the ladies, the whole seraglio surrounded him in an instant; some begging for physic, others for amber, and all of them requesting to experience the salutary effects of blood-letting. These females, amounting to about ten or twelve, were principally young and handsome; having their heads adorned with a profusion of gold and amber. They rallied Mr. Park, with some pleasantry, on the prominence of his nose, and the whiteness of his skin, both of which they declared were artificial: the first was produced by dipping him in milk when he was an infant; and the latter acquired its grotesque appearance by continual pinching. He admitted the propriety of their remarks upon his own deformity, and was lavish in his compliments on African beauty; praising the amiable glossy jet of their complexions, and the divine depression of their noses. Thinking him rather too extravagant in his commendations, they thought proper to check him in his career; assuring him that flattery (or *honey-mouth*, as they emphatically termed it) was not fashionable in Bondou. It is evident, however, that the ladies were not displeased, for they immediately presented him with some fish, and a jar of honey.

† Bondou is inhabited principally by Foulahs, a race of negroes who lead a wandering life, and employ themselves chiefly in the pasturage of cattle; there are, however, a great number of Mandingoes among them, by whom the trade of the country is chiefly conducted. The king was a Sonikee, or Pagan, like the king of Woolli, but he had adopted the Moorish name of Almami; and, with the name seems to have imbibed also somewhat of the Moorish disposition; for, though our traveller had presented to him his umbrella, and some other articles, he compelled him to strip in his presence, and surrender his coat; which, he said, he would reserve for his own wearing, on great and public festivals. *Proceedings of the African Association*, 5.

Mandingoes delight in perfuming their apparel and habitations. Travellers are burdened with very heavy duties, from which the king derives a greater revenue than any of the neighbouring states; in consequence of which he is well supplied with arms and ammunition *.

The industry of the Foulahs is obvious, even on the banks of the Gambia, where their corn is finer, and their flocks more numerous than those of the Mandingoes; but in this, their native country, they accumulate abundance of wealth from their pastoral occupations, while a glorious harvest rewards the exertions, and the cattle multiply through their kindness, attention, and familiarity. In the evening they are collected from the woods, and secured in folds in the different villages. In the center of each fold, a small hut is erected, in which a herdsman attends to keep watch during the night, to preserve the cattle from thieves, and to keep up several large fires round the premises, to alarm the savage tenants of the forests. They milk their cattle in the morning, and in the evening; but the produce from a single cow is much less in quantity, than is given in Europe. It is, however, very excellent, and the Foulahs use it principally as an article of diet, but not till it is sour. The cream, which is very thick, is converted into butter, by shaking it violently in a calabash; after which it is dissolved over a gentle fire, and preserved for use in earthen pots. This article forms a part of many of their dishes; and they liberally anoint their faces, heads, and arms with it. But the Foulahs, and all the inhabitants in this part of Africa, are totally ignorant of the formation of cheese.

The Foulahs also possess some very excellent horses, which are probably a mixed breed of the original African with those of Arabia.

SECTION III.

Account of the Kajaaga—Serawoollies—Their Manners and Customs—The Author is robbed by Order of the King—Charity of a Female Slave—Proceeds to Kayee—Crosses the Senegal—Arrival at Teesee—Interview with the King's Brother—The Author detained at Teesee—Rapacity of Tiggity Sego—The Author arrives at Kooniakary.

THE travellers were now arrived at Kajaaga, which the French distinguish by the name of Gallam. The climate is healthy, and the air salubrious; and the face of the country beautifully diversified with hills and vallies. The meandering of the Senegal river renders the scenery on its banks extremely picturesque. The complexion of the inhabitants, who are called Serawoollies, is a deep glossy black. They are habitually a trading people, having formerly supplied the subjects of France with gold and slaves, and still continue to trade with the British factories on the Gambia. Though ardent in their pursuit of riches, they are said to be fair and honourable in their mercantile transactions †.

About two o'clock the next morning several horsemen

* The inhabitants differ in their complexions and national manners from the Mandingoes and Serawoollies. The Foulahs, as already observed, have small features, soft silky hair, and are tawny. Next to the Mandingoes, the Foulahs are the most considerable of all the nations in this part of Africa. Those of Bondou are naturally mild and gentle; but the ungenerous maxims of the Koran have rendered them less hospitable to strangers, and more reserved and cautious. They consider all the negro-natives as their inferiors. The principal men, (the sovereign excepted) and a majority of the inhabitants of Bondou, are Mussulmen, but they are by no means bigotted. Religious persecution is unknown among them. Small schools are established in the different towns, where many of the Pagan, as well as the Mahometan children are taught to read the Koran, and instructed in the tenets of the prophet. The Arabic language is also introduced among the Foulahs, of which they have acquired some knowledge. Their native tongue, which abounds in liquids, is unpleasant to the ear.

† When a Serawoolli merchant has completed his trading expedition, he returns home and receives the congratulations of his neighbours, who assemble on the occasion. If the traveller has been successful in his peregrination, he displays his wealth and liberality by making appropriate presents: if, on the contrary, fortune has proved unkind to the adventurer, they instantly desert him, pronouncing him a man of no understanding, who, (as they express it) after so long and perilous a journey, could bring back nothing *but the hair upon his head.*

Their language, though inharmonious, is worth acquiring by those who travel through these regions, it being generally understood in the interior kingdoms.

Reaching Joag, the frontier town, the travellers took up their abode at the house of the chiefman, called the Dooty; who,

horsemen entered the town, who, after paying their respects to the Dooty, repaired to the Bentang, on which Mr. Park had made his bed. One of them, supposing he was asleep, attempted to purloin his musquet, but perceiving that he could not effect his purpose undiscovered, he thought proper to desist. Mr. Park discovered, by the countenance of his interpreter, that something unpleasant was in agitation. He was also alarmed to see Madiboo, and the smith, so soon returned. On requesting the particulars, Madiboo informed him, that while they were dancing at Dramanet, ten horsemen belonging to Batcheri the king, with his second son at their head, had enquired if the white man had passed. At this instant the ten horsemen arrived, and, coming to the Bentang, dismounted, and seated themselves among those who had come before, increasing the number to about twenty, forming a circle round the amazed European, and each man holding a musquet in his hand. Mr. Park informed his landlord that he did not understand the Serawoolli tongue, and therefore requested them to explain their business in the Mandingo language. To this they agreed, and the diminutive man mentioned the business to the following effect:—that the king had ordered them to conduct him to Maana, as he had dared to enter the king's town without paying the accustomed duties, or causing any present to be delivered to him; for which omission, according to the laws of the country, himself and his attendants were forfeited, together with his cattle and baggage. He concluded a long harangue, by observing that he had received orders from his sovereign to conduct him to Maana, and desired to know if he was ready to depart; at the same time assuring him, that it would be equally vain and imprudent to resist an irritated body of men.

Our author expressed a willingness to comply with their commands, but entreated a short delay, to give the horse a little corn, and to adjust accounts with his landlord. Taking the Dooty aside, and making him a small present of gunpowder, he requested his advice in so critical a situation; the Dooty was decidedly of opinion, that our traveller ought not, on any consideration, to approach the king; assuring him, that if he should observe any thing valuable in his possession, he would demand it without ceremony. From this declaration of the landlord, Mr. Park became more solicitous to accommodate matters with the king's officers; he admitted, indeed, that he had entered his Majesty's frontier, but denied that he knew it was his duty to pay the necessary taxes before-hand, and was ready to pay them at that moment; he then tendered, as a present to the king, the five drachms of gold he had received from the king of Bondou. This tender was accepted, yet notwithstanding Mr. Park's resistance, the bundles were opened; but the men were greatly disappointed at not finding in them such a quantity of gold and amber as they expected; and continued wrangling with each other, and our traveller, till sun-set, when they departed, having first pilfered from him about half his goods.

These proceedings dispirited Mr. Park's attendants, and Madiboo entreated him to return. Johnson ridiculed the idea of proceeding without money; and the smith was afraid of speaking, or being seen, lest he should be recognised as a native of Kasson. In this disposition they passed the night, by the side of a dismal fire, resolving to combat hunger the following day; when, towards the evening, as Mr. Park was amusing himself with chewing straws upon the Bentang, an old female slave, with a basket on her head,

who, though a Mahometan, was distinguished for his hospitality. The town is surrounded with a high wall, through which a number of port-holes for musquetry have been perforated. Every private habitation is also encompassed with a wall, in consequence of which, the place has the appearance of an assemblage of little citadels, strongly fortified. West of the town a small river glides along, the banks of which produce onions and tobacco, amply repaying the natives for their skill and labour.

In the evening Madiboo, the Bushreen, from Pisania, visited his father and mother at Dramanet, a neighbouring town. The blacksmith accompanied him; and when it was dark, Mr. Park accepted an invitation to partake of the sports of the inhabitants, it being customary to welcome strangers. A great crowd surrounded a party who were dancing by some large fires, to the music of four drums beat with great regularity and uniformity. The dances, however, consisted more in lascivious gestures, than in muscular exertion, or graceful agility; the ladies, in particular, strove who should most distinguish herself in the science of displaying voluptuous attitudes.

This species of movement is also prevalent among the women of Otaheite, and other islands discovered in the Pacific. In the oriental islands of India, among the dancing girls of Hindostan; and in all those countries in which there is not liberality of sentiment, and wisdom enough to elevate women to their proper sphere in society, and where they are considered as mere objects of sensual dalliance, their opinions and amusements correspond with their condition of unjust degradation.

accosted him, and asked if he was *provided with a dinner?* Supposing she was jeering him, he made no reply; but his boy, who was sitting near him, answered for him, and assured her that the king's officers had robbed him of all his money. Hearing this declaration, the good old woman, with a look of genuine benevolence, taking the basket from her head, presented him with several handfuls of ground nuts, and walked away without giving him time to make his acknowledgments for so seasonable a supply. This trifling circumstance, says Mr. Park, afforded me infinite satisfaction, and induced me to reflect with pleasure on the conduct of one, who, without entering into the particulars of my distresses, listened implicitly to the dictates of her own feelings. Taught by experience that hunger was a misfortune, she commisserated that misfortune in others.

Soon after the old woman had left our traveller, he received intelligence that a nephew of Demba Sego Jalla, the Mandingo king of Kasson, was coming to visit him. This prince had been dispatched on an embassy to Balcheri, king of Kajaaga, to accommodate some disputes that had arisen between his uncle and the latter. Not having succeeded in his endeavours, he was on his return to Kasson; and, having been informed that a white man was at Joag, curiosity induced him to take the liberty of paying his respects to him. Mr. Park represented his situation as deplorable, and the prince frankly offered him his protection; he even undertook to conduct him to Kasson, and be answerable for his safety, if he would accompany him the following morning. Our author gratefully accepted the favour, and was ready with his attendants, to proceed on their journey*.

About noon the travellers stopped at Gungadi, a considerable town, containing a large number of date-trees, and a clay mosque, with six turrets, the pinnacles of which were respectively crowned with ostrich-eggs. Towards the evening they arrived at Samee, a village pleasantly situated on the banks of the Senegal, a beautiful but shallow river, gently gliding over a sandy bottom, the margins of which are covered with verdure. In the afternoon of the following day, they reached Kayee, a spacious village, erected on the sides of the river. A remarkable cataract in its vicinity, passed impetuously over a rock of whin-stone, precipitating itself into the bason of a deep and muddy stream. Mr. Park supposed it impracticable to get the cattle down the bank, which was upwards of forty feet above the water; but the negroes forced the animals along a path almost perpendicular, and the travellers cautiously followed to the canoe, which waited to receive the baggage. The asses, indeed, were extremely troublesome; their natural stubbornness of disposition prompted them to endure the utmost severity of the drivers, rather than commit themselves to the danger of the watery element, into which they, however, were at length compelled to enter, and eventually arrived at the opposite shore. Two hours were spent in getting the cattle over, and another hour in transporting the baggage.

Towards evening Mr. Park and Demba Sego embarked in the canoe, the latter thinking this a proper opportunity to have a peep into our author's tin box, which stood in the fore-part of the canoe; and in extending his arm for this purpose, he unfortunately destroyed the equilibrium of the crazy vessel, and overset it. Being at no great distance from the shore, they only experienced a complete immersion, and returned without much difficulty; where, after wringing the water from their apparel, they took a fresh departure, and were safely conveyed to Kasson.

On their arrival at Kasson, Demba Sego immediately informed Mr. Park that they were now in his uncle's dominions; and that a token of gratitude would be expected in consideration of favours so liberally bestowed on a stranger. This proposition rather startled our traveller, who began to fear; but thinking it would have been folly to expostulate, he gave the prince some tobacco, and seven bars of iron, with which he seemed perfectly satisfied. After a long and tedious journey, they arrived at Teesee, on the evening of December 29th, and were entertained in Demba Sego's hut. The next morning Mr. Park was introduced by the prince to his father, Tiggity Sego, brother to the king of Kasson, who received him with great respect; observing, however, that

* Our traveller's new protector, Demba Sego, had a grand retinue; and the whole company, at their departure from Joag, consisted of thirty persons, with six loaded asses. Having rode on cheerfully for some hours, they came to a tree for which Johnson, the interpreter, made frequent enquiry. Here he desired them all to stop; and producing a white chicken, he tied it by the leg to a branch of the tree: he then assured the company they might proceed in safety. This ceremony he meant as an offering to the spirits of the woods, who were a powerful race of beings of a white complexion, with long flowing hair.

he

he had never seen but one white man before, which Mr. Park conjectured must have been major Houghton. In answer to the king's enquiries, he mentioned the motives which induced him to explore the country, but the truth of his declarations did not seem to be admitted. Tiggity Sego then informed him that he must repair to Kooniakary, to pay his respects to that prince, but desired to see him before he left Teesee.

In the afternoon a slave belonging to the old king eloped, and on a general alarm being given, every person who was possessed of a horse rode into the woods in search of him. Demba Sego borrowed our traveller's courser for the same purpose; and in less than an hour they all returned with the unfortunate culprit, who was severely scourged and ironed.

Mr. Park lent his horse a second time to Demba Sego, and during the absence of the animal, amused himself in walking about the town of Teesee, and conversing with the natives who treated him with great respect, and supplied him with milk, eggs, and other provisions on very reasonable terms*.

An assembly of the people was summoned the following day, to hear the purport of a message from Almani Abdulkader, king of Foota Torra, threatening hostilities in the name of this powerful monarch, "Unless all the people of Kasson would embrace the Mahometan religion, and evince their conversion by saying eleven public prayers." This message created great alarm among the inhabitants; and, after some consultation, they agreed to conform to his pleasure, and actually offered up eleven prayers, which were considered as a sufficient testimony of their having embraced the doctrines of the Prophet.

Demba Sega having now returned with our traveller's horse, he began to make preparations for setting out for Kooniakary the next morning: but the old man gave him several broad intimations that he must not think of departing, till he had paid him the duties he was entitled to from all travellers; and he had an additional claim on him for the extraordinary kindness he had shewn him: he even went, accompanied by several of his people, to know of Mr. Park what recompence he intended to make him? When the latter offered him seven bars of amber, and five of tobacco: but Demba rejected the present as unworthy the acceptance of a prince, and threatened to convey the whole of the baggage to court, that the

* Some description of Tessee may not be thought intrusive: it is a large unwalled town, having no other security against the attacks of an enemy than a sort of citadel, in which Tiggity Sego and his family reside. Its extent is considerable, and some of its customs singular. This place was formerly inhabited only by some Foulah shepherds, who lived in affluence by rearing herds of cattle in the neighbouring luxuriant meadows: but their prosperity exciting the envy of some Mandingoes, the latter forcibly took possession of the lands, and dispersed the shepherds. The present inhabitants, though affluent, are far from being particular with respect to their food, often feasting upon rats, moles, squirrels, locusts, snakes, &c. A strange custom prevails here, which is rigidly adhered to, that no woman is permitted to eat an egg; and nothing will be a greater insult to a female of Teesee than to offer her such an article of food. It is the more extraordinary, as men eat eggs without scruple in the presence of their wives. Mr. Park observes, that he believes no such prohibition is enforced in any other of the Mandingo countries. Our author attended a palaver here, held by Tiggity Sego, in which the debates were conducted with much warmth and ingenuity. A young wealthy Pagan, having lately married a beautiful woman, requested some saphies from a Mahometan priest, to shield him from accident during the expected war. The priest yielded to his solicitation, and to render the saphies more efficacious, enjoined the young husband to avoid all nuptial intercourse with his bride for the space of forty-two days. This injunction was submitted to, and punctually obeyed. Without acquainting his wife with the real cause, the Pagan absented himself from her company. In the mean time a report was propagated in the neighbourhood, that the priest was too officious in his visits, and more intimate with the young wife than he ought to be. Hearing frequent repetitions of these surmises, the husband interrogated his wife on the subject, who candidly acknowledged that the Bushreen had seduced her. A palaver being called, in consequence of this confession, the fact was proved against the Bushreen, and he was sentenced to perpetual slavery, or to procure two slaves for his redemption, at the election of the complainant. The injured husband, however, rather chose to have him publicly whipped before Tiggity Sego's gate. This was acceded to, and the sentence immediately executed. The number of stripes to be inflicted on the offender, was, according to the Mosaic law, *forty, save one.*

As Teesee was a frontier town, and consequently would be much exposed, during the war, to the excursions of the Moors; Tiggity Sego had sent round to the neighbouring villages, to endeavour to procure a sufficient quantity of provisions for the consumption of one year, exclusive of the growing stock, which the enemy might probably destroy. Persons were accordingly delegated to conduct this business; with orders to procure these supplies either by purchase or solicitation. The project being approved by the country people, on the 4th of January 1796, Mr. Park went to meet the escort with the provisions. It was composed of about 400 men, marching in regular order, having corn and ground-nuts in large calabashes upon their heads. They were preceded by a strong guard of bowmen, and followed by eight musicians, or singing men. When they approached the town, some vocal strains were poured forth, which were answered by a few strokes on their large drums. Thus they proceeded till they arrived at Tiggity Sego's gate, where he provisions were delivered; and from thence repaired to the Bentang-tree, and concluded the day with festive recreations.

sovereign might choose for himself. Without waiting for a reply, Demba began to unpack the goods, and with the assistance of his attendants, spread them over the floor. Every article that pleased their fancy, was taken without ceremony or scruple. Even the tin box, which had so much attracted Demba's attention in crossing the river, was eagerly seized. On collecting the scattered remains of his wealth, Mr. Park perceived, that, as he had been robbed of half his property at Joag, so here he had been plundered of half the remainder. Having been under some obligation to Demba Sego, he did not reproach him for his rapacity, but resolved, at all events, to take his leave of Teesee the next morning. To recruit his drooping spirits, he purchased a fat sheep, with which he and his associates regaled themselves.

Quitting Teesee on the 10th of January, they had a distant prospect of the hills round Kooniakary; and passed through Madina, a town of considerable extent. Soon after which they came in sight of Jumbo, the blacksmith's native town, from whence he had been absent about four years. Hearing of the smith's approach, he was welcomed by his brother, accompanied by a singing-man. He had provided him a horse, that he might make his entry in a dignified manner; while the travellers were earnestly requested to charge their pieces. The procession now took place: the singing-man led the way, followed by the two brothers; a number of the inhabitants of the town assembled, expressing great joy at seeing their old acquaintance the blacksmith. On entering the town, the singing-man repeated some extempore stanzas on the valour of his countryman, who had surmounted many difficulties; and strictly enjoined his friends to procure him a suitable entertainment on his return. Arriving at the blacksmith's residence, the company dismounted, and, having discharged their musquets, gave place to the relations, whose emotions of joy were strongly displayed on the event. The aged mother of the smith was led forth, leaning on a staff, to bid him welcome: being totally blind, she deliberately stroked his hands, arms, and face, and expressed her happiness that her latter days were blessed by his return.

During these congratulations, Mr. Park seated himself by the side of one of the huts at a little distance, fearing his presence might interrupt the flow of filial and parental tenderness: and the attention of the company was so much engrossed by the blacksmith, that he remained wholly unobserved. When the people present had seated themselves, the smith was requested, by his father, to relate his adventures. He dutifully complied with the request, and mentioned the material occurrences of his life, with the dangers he had encountered in returning to his native country. Towards the conclusion of his narrative, he had frequently occasion to mention the name of Mr. Park; and after many acknowledgments of his kindness, suddenly pointed to the place where he was seated, exclaiming *affille ibi siring !*—"Behold him sitting there!"—All eyes were instantly directed to him, whom they seemed to regard as a superior being: every one expressing his regret that he had not seen him before; and some of them were exceedingly alarmed at being so near a being of so wonderful an appearance. Their apprehensions, however, subsided by degrees, the blacksmith having satisfied them by assurances of his being perfectly inoffensive. Encouraged by this declaration, some of them ventured to feel the texture of his apparel, but not without fear and suspicion; and when he moved himself to look at the young children, their mothers precipately ran away with them. In a few hours, however, they all became reconciled to him. The remainder of that, and the whole of the succeeding day, was spent in mirth and feasting.

The blacksmith declared he would not quit our traveller while he remained at Kooniakary, for which place they set out on the 14th of January, and arrived about noon at Soolo, a village in its vicinity. Mr. Park had deviated from the direct road to visit a Slatee named Salim Daucari, a wealthy Gambia trader. He was acquainted with Dr. Laidley, who had given him credit to the amount of five slaves, and had favoured our traveller with an order for the whole of the debt. The Slatee was at home, and received his visitors with attention and respect.

By some extraordinary means the king of Kasson had been apprized of Mr. Park's motions; for he had been at Soolo only a few hours, when Sambo Sego, the second son of the king of Kasson, came thither with a party of horse, to know why he had not been to Kooniakary, to visit the king, who was very impatient to see him. Salim Daucari apologized for Mr. Park, and agreed to accompany him to Kooniakary the same evening. They proceeded immediately to the royal residence: but as the king was taking his repose, the interview was deferred till the next morning; and the travellers were entertained in the hut of Sambo Sego.

SECTION IV.

The Author has an Audience of the King of Kasson—Departs for Kemmoo—Is received kindly by the King of Kaarta, who dissuades him from proceeding—Takes the Path to Ludamar—To Jarra—Journey from Kemmoo to Funiskedy—Murder of a Youth by the Moors—The Author arrives at Jarra—Situation of the surrounding States.

ON the ensuing day our traveller obtained an audience of the king (Demba Sego Jalla;) but the concourse of people assembled to see the *White Man* was so great, that it was with difficulty he could approach the regal hut. At length, however, he arrived in the presence of the monarch, whom he found sitting on a mat; and appeared to be about sixty years of age: His success in war, and his amiable conduct in time of peace, had gained him full possession of the affections of his people. After a respectful salutation from Mr. Park, which he courteously returned, he surveyed that gentleman with great attention; and being made acquainted with the object of his journey, the sovereign appeared perfectly satisfied, and promised him his aid and protection. He said he had seen Major Houghton, and presented him with a white horse; but, in crossing the kingdom of Kaarta, he had by some means lost his life among the Moors.

The audience being ended, Mr. Park returned to his temporary abode, where he packed up a small present for the king; which, though trivial in itself, was well received by him; and our traveller in return was complimented with a large white bullock. But though the king acted with politeness and even generosity to Mr. Park, that gentleman soon discovered that considerable obstacles would probably impede his progress. The king himself deigned to favour him with the particulars which would be too minute to be admitted in an abridgment.

Desirous of proceeding as soon as possible, Mr. Park requested Daucari to intercede with the king to procure him a guide by the way of Fooladoo, it having been rumoured that war had already commenced between the monarchs of Bambarra and Kaarta. In consequence of this solicitation, Daucari set out for Kooniakary on the 20th of January, and returned the same evening with the king's answer, stating that he had agreed with the king of Kaarta to send all merchants and travellers through his dominions: but if Mr. Park wished to prefer the route through Fooladoo, he would not withhold his permission, though he could not, without a breach of his agreement, supply him with a guide. Duly reflecting on this answer, and having experienced the want of regal protection in the former part of his journey, he formed a resolution to wait till he could pass through Kaarta without danger.

A rumour was now propagated that our adventurer had received a large quantity of gold-dust from Salim Daucari; and on the morning of the 23d, Sambo Sego, with a number of horsemen, came to demand an account of the particulars. He insisted upon knowing the exact amount of the money he had received; declaring that half of it belonged solely to the king; and that he himself, as the king's son, with the king's attendants, who were his relations, was entitled to a considerable present. Mr. Park had almost prevailed on himself to submit to this arbitrary exaction, when Salim Daucari kindly interposed, and induced Sambo to accept of sixteen bars of European merchandize, and some powder and ball, as a complete discharge of every demand made upon him in the kingdom of Kasson*.

* From the top of a high hill, to the south of Soolo, Mr. Park enjoyed a most enchanting prospect of the country. The number of towns and villages, and the state of cultivation around them, surpassed any thing he had then seen in Africa. A gross calculation of the population of this part may be formed, when it is considered that the king of Kasson can collect four thousand fighting men by the beating of his war-drum. This country abounds in wolves and hyænas, who take refuge during the day in the crevices and fissures of the rocks. Some of these animals entered Soolo in the night of the 27th. Their approach was announced by the dogs of the village, which howled most tremendously. The inhabitants, knowing the cause, assembled with proper weapons of defence, at the inclosures of cattle, when by lighting bunches of grass, and waving them to and fro towards the hills, uttering repeated shouts, they had the good fortune to disperse the savage intruders; though, on examination, it was found that five of the cattle were killed, and many others torn and wounded.

The

The king of Kasson received intelligence that the war had not yet taken place between Bambarra and Kaarta, and that our author might probably pass through Kaarta, before the Bambarra army invaded that country; two guides on horseback were therefore sent from Kooniakary, to conduct him to the frontiers of Kaarta. In consequence of which he took leave of Salim Daucari, and, for the last time, parted from his worthy fellow-traveller the blacksmith, quitting Soolo about ten o'clock. Proceeding through the village of Soome, where they slept, they continued their route along the banks of the Krieko, a fertile and populous neighbourhood. A number of people, at this time, had fled from Kaarta and sought refuge here on account of the Bambarra war. In the afternoon they reached Kimo, where the guides appointed by the king of Kasson left Mr. Park. Though the Krieko is here but a small rivulet, it descends with an impetuous current from the east of Kangee, down the eminence of Tappa, where it assumes a more placid appearance; and then meanders gently through the delightful plains of Kooniakary; till uniting with another stream, it is received in the Senegal, near the Falls of Felow.

After taking a cursory view of Kangee, which is a considerable town, they passed a number of villages, and arrived in the afternoon at Lackarago. In their route they met multitudes of people flying from Kaarta, with their families and effects. They left Lackarago the next morning, and soon perceived the mountains of Fooladoo. Proceeding down an abrupt precipice, they continued their way in a dry bed of a river, where the trees over head met and were delightfully umbrageous. The sandy plains of Kaarta next presented themselves; and at noon they arrived at a watering-place, where they procured as much milk and corn-meal as they could eat, for a few strings of beads. Provisions are so plenty in this quarter, that the natives seldom require any payment for the refreshments of travellers.

They reached Feesurah about sun-set, and remained there all the following day, to inform themselves of the situation of affairs before they proceeded any farther. The landlord made so exorbitant a demand for his lodging, that Mr. Park refused to pay it; but his attendants, terrified at the reports of approaching war, prevailed on him to discharge the extravagant claim. This was accomplished with some difficulty, chiefly by the present of a blanket which Mr. Park presented to the host. Matters being thus adjusted, the landlord mounted his horse, and undertook the post of leader: This man, was one of those Negroes who observe the ceremonial part of Mahometanism, but retain all their pagan superstition, and even drink strong liquors: They are called Johars, and are very numerous in Kaarta*.

About noon our traveller entered the capital of Kaarta, seated on an extensive plain. Here the monarch ordered a lodging for the stranger, and promised to grant him an audience in the evening. In the mean time Mr. Park was much incommoded by the natives, who rushed into his abode in crowds, though a person was appointed to defend it, till their curiosity was fully gratified. At the hour appointed, he was conducted by the messenger to Daisy Koorabarri, King of Kaarta. He was not distinguished from his subjects by his apparel: a bank of earth about two feet high, upon which was spread a leopard's skin, proclaimed the royal dignity. Mr. Park was, however, astonished at the number of the king's attendants. The fighting men were all seated on his majesty's right

* When the company were in the midst of a lonely wood, he desired them to halt; and, with a hollow piece of Bamboo that was suspended from his neck, whistled loudly three times. Mr. Park was startled; supposing it might be a signal for some of his associates. But the landlord assured him, that nothing more was meant than to ascertain the successful event of their journey. He then dismounted, laid his spear across the path, and after having pronounced a few unintelligible prayers, again gave three loud whistles. After which he appeared to be attentively listening, as if in expectation of an answer: but as no answer was returned to his magic calls, he said their journey would be safe and unmolested.

Quitting Karankalla, they directed their course to Kemmoo. As this was but a short day's journey, they loitered their time away in gathering delicious fruits near the road side. Thus amused, Mr. Park wandered a little from his people, when two Negro horsemen, armed with muskets, came galloping from the thickets: on seeing them he stopped, the horsemen followed his example, and all three appeared to be equally astonished and confounded. As he approached them their terror increased, and, viewing him with horror, rode off at full speed; while the other, in a panic of fear, covered his eyes with his hand, and continued muttering prayers, till his horse slowly conducted him after his companion. Soon after they fell in with Mr. Park's attendants, to whom they related a terrifying story: their fears had represented our author as dressed in the flowing robes of a tremendous spirit, and one of them declared that, when he had made his appearance, a blast of wind, cold as water, poured down upon him from the sky.

right hand, and the women and children on the left. Mr. Park, seating himself on the ground before him, stated his reasons for wishing to pass through his country, and entreated his protection. The king replied, that he was unable to afford him much assistance; all communication between Kaarta and Bambarra being cut off. He therefore advised the European to return to Kasson till the conclusion of the war. But as Mr. Park dreaded the idea of passing the rainy season in the interior of Africa, and was unwilling to return to Europe till he had made further discoveries, he formed a resolution to go forward. In consequence of which he begged his majesty would permit a man to accompany him, as near the frontiers of his kingdom as might be consistent with safety.

This conversation was interrupted by the arrival of a Moorish horseman, whose steed was covered with sweat and foam, and who requested an audience, having something of importance to communicate to his majesty. The king immediately, as a token for strangers to withdraw, took up his sandals, and our traveller returned to his lodgings*. In the evening the king sent our traveller a fine sheep; a very acceptable present as they had all fasted the whole day, and while he was partaking of the royal gift at supper, prayers were announced by the beat of a drum, and the sound of wind instruments, composed of elephant's teeth: the tone of which was melodious and nearly resembling that of a human voice. Daisy's army being now at Kemmoo, the mosques were very much crowded; whence it appeared that about half of them were Mahometans.

On the following morning Mr. Park sent his horse-pistols and holsters as a present to the sovereign, and begged the messenger to inform him that he was inclined to quit Kemmoo as soon as he could procure him a guide. In about an hour afterwards the king returned thanks for the present, and sent eight horsemen to conduct him to Jarra: three of the horsemen were his majesty's own sons.

The following night the travellers slept at a village named Marina. During the night some thieves broke into the hut where the baggage was deposited, cut open one of Mr. Park's bundles, and stole a quantity of beads, amber, gold, and apparel. Extreme heat retarded their progress the next day, but about four in the afternoon, they saw two Negroes sitting among some bushes, at a little distance from the road. The royal party, supposing them slaves who had run away from the service of their masters, hastily prepared their pieces, and surrounded the spot to prevent their escape; but on their near approach, the strangers, fitting an arrow to each of their bows, and holding others between their teeth, gave a signal for the horsemen to stop, who, on demanding some account to be given of themselves, found they were inhabitants of Toorda, a neighbouring village, and were employed in gathering *tomberongs* †. Of these they shewed two large baskets full, which they had collected: These berries are much esteemed by the Africans, and are converted into a substance resembling gingerbread, by being dried in the sun, and pounded in a mortar. The stones are afterwards shaken in a vessel of water, to separate the meal that adheres to them. The fruit is collected by spreading a cloth, or something, to receive it, and beating the branches.

Arriving in the evening at Toorda, all the king's people returned, except two who remained to conduct Mr. Park and his attendants to Jarra. A party of Moors, in the absence of the Bushreens and opulent people in Funingkedy had already gone to Jarra, and a party of Moors, in their absence, had stolen some of their cattle. About two o' clock, on the 16th, five of these thieves came again with the same rapacious purpose, and selecting sixteen of the finest bullocks, drove them off at a full gallop. The inhabitants, to the number of about five hundred, saw this transaction, without attempting to rescue their property: five musquets indeed were fired at the plunderers, but, being loaded with gunpowder of their own manufacture, did no execution ‡.

Quitting

* This messenger was a scout belonging to the king, each of whom has his particular situation on an eminence, to watch the motions of the enemy.

† These are small farinaceous berries of a yellow mealish substance and delicious flavour, the same with the fruits of the *rhamus lotus* of Linnæus.

The lotus is very common in all the kingdoms which Mr. Park visited, and is particularly plentiful in the sandy soil of Kaarta, Ludamar, and the northern parts of Bambarra, where it is one of the most common shrubs of the country. It is also found at Tunis and in the Negro kingdoms. Little doubt can be entertained of its being the *lotus* mentioned by Pliny, as the food of Libian Lotophagi.

‡ One of the herdsmen, attempting to throw his spear, was wounded by a shot from one of the Moors, and a number of people conducted him slowly towards the town. His mother,

Quitting Funingkedy, Mr. Park and his attendants, accompanied by about thirty people, resolved to travel all night to avoid the Moorish banditti. At eight o'clock the next morning they passed Simbing, the frontier village of Ludamar. From this village major Houghton sent his last letter, written with a pencil to Dr. Laidley. Though it is uncertain whether this brave but unfortunate man lost his life by famine, or the weapons of the savages; we have authentic intelligence of his having been plundered by the Moors of all his property, and suffered the extremity of hunger for several days. After his death, however, his body was dragged into the woods, and Mr. Park was shewn the spot where his remains were left to perish. About four miles from Simbling, near a small stream of water, the travellers observed a number of wild horses, all of one colour. They are hunted for food by the Africans, by whom their flesh is thought delicious.

Mr. Park then enters into a long digression respecting a war which desolated Kaarta, and spread terror into many of the neighbouring states. But, as we do not conceive ourselves justified in digressing to such an extent, we shall follow that gentleman to Jarra, a large town, built of clay, and stone intermixed: the clay is intended to answer the purpose of mortar. It is situated in the Moorish kingdom of Ludamar; but the inhabitants are principally negroes, who purchase a precarious protection from the Moors by tribute, to avert their depredations*.

When Mr. Park arrived at Jarra, he procured an apartment at the house of Daman Jumma, a Gambia Slatee, on whom he had an order from Dr Laidley for the value of six slaves. Daman acknowledged the debt, but said he was unable to pay more than the value of two slaves. He was, however, extremely useful to our traveller, by procuring an exchange of his beads and amber for gold, which, being more portable, was more easily concealed. The difficulties they had already encountered, and the savage deportment of the Moors, had so completely terrified Mr. Park's attendants, that they declared they would not proceed a step farther to the eastward. Thus situated, our traveller applied to Daman, to obtain from Ali, king of Ludamar, a safe conduct into Bambarra; and he hired one of Daman's slaves to conduct him thither, as soon as the passport should be obtained. A messenger was dispatched to Ali, who was then encamped near Benown, and Mr. Park complimented that prince with a present of five garments of cotton cloth, which he had purchased from Daman. In a few days, a slave arrived from the monarch, to escort Mr. Park to Goomba, and demanded a garment of blue cotton cloth for his attendance. About this time, Demba, the Negro boy, declared he would attend our traveller, adding, that, though he wished his master to turn back, he never would desert him; but he had been induced by Johnson to pretend he would do so, to prevail on him to return.

Having taken some necessary precautions, and adjusted his concerns as well as he was able, he quitted Jarra, accompanied by his boy, the slave sent him by king Ali, and one of Daman's slaves.

mother, frantic with grief, walked on before, clapping her hands and relating the perfections of her son. *Ee Maffoo fonio,* (he never told a lie). And when the wounded son was taken in at the gate, the disconsolate mother exclaimed *Ee Maffo fonio abada*—" He never told a lie, no never." When conducted to his hut, and laid upon a mat, the most piteous screaming and howling assailed the ears of the lamenting spectators. When their grief had in some degree subsided, Mr. Park examined the wound: he declared the ball had passed through his leg, having fractured both bones a little below the knee. He added, that the only possible chance of recovery, was to cut off his leg a little above the knee. They stared with horror at the idea, having never heard of so strange a method of cure, and would by no means give their consent to such an operation. The patient was therefore committed to the care of some old priests, who pretended to secure his passage into Paradise, by desiring him to repeat some Arabic verses, which they whispered in his ears. After many unsuccessful attempts the poor boy, exhausted with pain and loss of blood, uttered with extreme difficulty, *La illa el-allah, Mahamet rasowl allahi*—" *There is but one God, and Mahomet is his Prophet.*" The Bushreens, after this evidence of his faith, declared he would be happy in a future state. He died the same evening.

* The Moors of this part of Africa strongly resemble, in their persons, the Mulattoes of the West Indies, and appear to be a mixed race between the Moors of the north, and the Negroes of the south; possessing many of the worst qualities of the two nations. Before the Arabian conquest in the 7th century, the whole of the inhabitants of the continent of Africa then known, were generally called *Mauri* or Moors; and were converted to the religion of Mahomet during the reigns of the Caliphs. Many of the Numidian tribes retired southward over the Great Desert, to avoid the fury of the Arabians: and by one of those tribes were discovered and conquered the Negro nations on the Niger.

By the Niger, the river Senegal is certainly meant, as in the Mandingo language it is called *Basing* or the *Black River.* To what extent these people are now spread over the African continent, is not precisely known; but it is supposed that their dominion extends from west to east, in a narrow line, from the mouth of the Senegal to the confines of Abyssinia.

After

After a fatiguing journey over the sands, they arrived at the Moorish watering-place of Compe, and afterwards continued their route to Deena, a large town, inhabited more by Moors than Negroes. Mr. Park was received in a hut belonging to one of the latter. The Moors assembled round the hut he occupied, and treated him with the greatest insolence and indignity, hoping to irritate him to an immoderate degree of rage, and afford them a pretence for pillaging his baggage; but finding such insults ineffectual, they at last declared that he was a christian, and therefore his property became lawful plunder to the followers of Mahomet. In consequence of which they opened his bundles, and robbed him of every thing that they thought the most alluring. This outrage intimidated Mr. Park's attendants to such a degree, that they positively refused to accompany him beyond this town; and, on the following morning, about two o'clock, he departed from Deena. Though it was then moon-light, the roaring of wild beasts was intimidating, and pointed out the necessity of proceeding with great caution.

On a piece of rising ground, about half a mile from the town, he heard somebody hallo! and, looking back, saw his faithful boy running after him; he informed him that Ali's man had set out for Benown, but Daman's negro was still at Deena; and, if his master would stop a little, he expected to persuade the latter to join him. Seeing some water at a little distance, he dispatched the boy to fill a soofroo; but, on examining the place for that desirable beverage, the roaring of a lion (perhaps also in search of that element) occasioned his precipitate return; and they submitted patiently to the disappointment.

In the afternoon they reached Samaminkous, a town chiefly inhabited by Foulahs*.

Mr. Park stopped at Dalli on the 6th, in order to have the company of some of the inhabitants who were going to Goomba the following day; but to avoid the crowd, which curiosity had gathered round him, he visited in the evening a Negro village, named Samea, where the hospitable Dooty kindly received him, and killed two sheep for the entertainment of himself and his friends. On the following day his landlord requested him to stay till the cool of the evening, at which time he promised to conduct him to the next village. He accepted the invitation, and passed the forenoon very agreeably with the poor Negroes, the mildness of their manners forming a striking contrast to the rudeness and ferocity of the Moors. In the midst of this harmless festivity, when Mr. Park had abandoned all disagreeable apprehensions, a Moorish party unexpectedly entered the hut, who seizing on our author, commanded him, in the king's name, to attend them quietly to the camp, where Fatima, the favourite lady of their sovereign, expected him with impatience. She had heard much about christians, and was therefore extremely anxious to see one.

Supposing entreaty and resistance would be equally ineffectual, our traveller prepared to follow the meffengers; he reluctantly took leave of his landlord and the company, and, attended by his Negro boy (for Daman's slave escaped on perceiving the Moors) they arrived at Dalli in the evening. Mr. Park and his boy were conducted through the woods to Dangali, where they slept.

On the 10th of March they set out for Sa-

* Continuing their journey the following day, they observed such a quantity of locusts, that the trees appeared black with them. These insects devour every vegetable that presents itself to their voracious jaws, and speedily deprive the tree of its verdure. In their flight they are directed by the current of the wind, which at this season is always from the north-eaft. About noon they reached Sampaka, a large town, which, when the Moors and Barbarrans were at war, was thrice attacked by the former; but they were driven off with great lofs, though the king of Bambarra afterwards gave up this, and several other towns. Here Mr. Park lodged at the house of a Negro, who practised the art of making gun-powder. He shewed that gentleman a bag of nitre, very white, but the crystals were much smaller than common. It is procured from ponds which are filled with water during the rainy season. When that is evaporated, a white efflorescence is observed on the mud, which the natives collect and purify. The Moors procure sulphur from the Mediterranean, and the different articles are pounded together in a mortar. The sound of its explosion is less sharp than that of European gun-powder.

After their departure from Sampaka, our travellers saw two herds of camels feeding, each having a fore-leg tied up to prevent its straying. Arriving at Dalli, it was instantly proclaimed that the *white man* was come into the town; when the people who had been dancing, terminated their pastime, and walking in regular order, preceded by the music, advanced towards Mr. Park. Their principal instrument is a flute, which they blow obliquely over the end, regulating the sounds by a judicious application of the fingers to the holes, perforated for that purpose on the sides. Some of their airs are plaintive and simple.

mam-

mamingkoos, and, on the road, overtook a woman and two boys, with an ass. She said, that, in attempting to go to Bambarra, she had been robbed by a party of Moors of some gold, and a considerable quantity of her clothes. The same evening the new moon ushered in the month of Rhamadon.

Large fires were kindled in many parts of the town, and an unusual quantity of victuals was dressed to celebrate the day. Mr. Park ordered his boy to fill a soofroo of water for his own use, the Moors having assured him that they should not taste meat or drink till sun-set; but the excessive heat of the sun overcame their scruples, and constituted the soofroo a very essential part of their baggage. Having arrived at Deena, Mr. Park paid a respectful visit to one of Ali's sons, whom he found sitting in a low hut, with five or six of his companions, washing their hands, feet, and mouths. He had no sooner seated himself, than the prince handed him a double-barrelled gun, directing him to dye the stock of a blue colour, and repair one of the locks. Mr. Park endeavoured to convince him that he knew nothing about gun-making. Then, replied he, you shall instantly make me a present of some knives and scissars. And when the boy, who acted as interpreter, declared Mr. Park had no such articles, he eagerly snatched up a musket, and would certainly have killed the boy on the spot, had not the Moors interfered, and induced the strangers to retreat.

Intimidated by this treatment, the boy attempted to make his escape in the night, but the vigilance of the Moors prevented him from carrying his project into execution.

On the 12th of March Mr. Park and his guards departed from Deena towards Benown. About one the intense heat of the sun obliged them to stop; when their supply of water being expended, they could not venture to wait longer than a few minutes, to collect a little gum, that being an excellent substitute to moisten the mouth. Reaching the camp of Ali at Benown a little before sun-set, they observed it was composed of an irregular number of dirty tents; and, among the tents appeared large herds of cattle, camels, and goats. On Mr. Park's arrival he was instantly sursounded by such an immense crowd of people, that it was with difficulty he could move. One pulled him by his clothes, another seized his hat, a third examined his waistcoat buttons, and a fourth exclaiming, *La illa el allah Mahamet rasowl alabi;* signifying, in a menacing tone, that Mr. Park must repeat those words. At length he was conducted to the king's tent, where numbers of both sexes were waiting his arrival. Ali was sitting on a black leather cushion, and employed in clipping some straggling hairs from his upper lip; a female attendant holding up a looking-glass to assist him in the operation. He appeared to be an old man of the Arab cast, with a long white beard, and a sullen indignant aspect. Surveying our traveller with attention, he enquired of the Moors whether he could speak Arabic. Being informed that he could not, he seemed surprised, but made no remarks. The ladies were extremely inquisitive, inspected every particle of our traveller's dress, searched his pockets, and obliged him to unbutton his waistcoat to display the whiteness of his skin. They even counted his toes and fingers, seeming very much to doubt whether he was in reality a human being*.

At sun-rise the king, with a few attendants, visited Mr. Park, and informed him that he had appointed a hut for his future abode, in which he might be defended from the sun. To this place he was conducted by the sovereign's order: it was composed of corn-stalks, strengthened by stakes, and covered with a level roof. To deride the christian, Ali had ordered a wild hog to be pro-

* About this time the prieſt announced evening prayers, but, before the aſſembly was dispersed, a Moorish interpreter informed Mr. Park that his Majesty had sent for some provisions on his account: immediately a wild hog was brought in by some boys, who fastened it to the strings of the tent; and the sovereign, by signs, directed our author to kill and prepare it for his own repast. Though he was very hungry, he did not think it prudent to eat any part of an animal held in such abhorrence by the Moors, and therefore replied, that he never ate the flesh of swine. The hog was then untied, and the Moors supposed he would instantly run at Mr. Park, having imbibed an idea, that a great enmity ſubſiſts between hogs and chriſtians; but in this they were diſappointed, for the animal was no sooner liberated than he indiscriminately began to attack every one he came near, and finally sought a shelter beneath the Mahometan throne. Mr. Park was then conducted to the tent of Ali's chief slave, but was not permitted to enter, or defile any of its appurtenances by the touch. A little boiled corn, salt, and water, was produced in a wooden bowl for his refreshment, and a mat was ſpread upon the sand, on which he passed the night, surrounded by the curious multitude.

duced and tied to one of the stakes, which drew together a number of mischievous boys, who amused themselves by beating and irritating the animal. Our author was also again exposed to the tormenting curiosity of the Moors. To oblige them, he was compelled to take off his stockings, and display his feet; and even his jacket and waistcoat, that they might be able to form a general notion of his wardrobe. This exercise he was under the necessity of repeating the whole day: they were particularly delighted with the curious contrivance of his buttons. About eight o'clock in the evening he received a supply of kouskous, and salt and water for his supper, a very desirable repast, as he had not tasted food since the morning.

The Moors kept regular watch during the night, and frequently peeped into the hut to see if he was asleep. About two in the morning a Moor entered the hut, probably with a view of pilfering something; and groping about, laid his hand upon Mr. Park's shoulder. Mr. Park immediately started up, and the Moor, in his confusion, fell upon the wild hog, which returned the attack by biting his arm. His Majesty, supposing the white man had escaped, now galloped to the hut on a white steed; but hearing the cause of the alarm, he instantly retired, leaving his prisoner undisturbed till morning. With the returning day, the series of insult and irritation was renewed. The boys assembled to torture the hog, and the men and women to calumniate and revile the chriſtian *. The Moors, though indolent themselves, are rigid task-masters, and keep every person under them perpetually employed. Demba, our author's boy, was sent into the woods to procure withered grass for the king's horses; and, after a variety of projects respecting Mr. Park, they at last resolved to employ him in the respectable office of a barber. His first display of official skill was in shaving the head of the prince of Ludamar, in the presence of his father; but, either from ignorance of the art, or the improper shape of the instrument, he made a slight incision in the boy's head. This circumstance alarmed the king, who instantly commanded him to resign the razor, and walk out of the tent. This disgrace was considered by Mr. Park as a fortunate event, as he had resolved to become as insignificant as possible, to afford an inducement to the restoration of his liberty.

On the 18th of March four Moors arrived from Jarra, with Johnson, our traveller's interpreter, having arrested him before he knew of Mr. Park's confinement; and brought with them the bundle that had been left at Daman Jumma's house. Johnson was conducted into Ali's tent for examination. The bundle being opened, Mr. Park was summoned to explain the use of the contents. When he had satisfied Ali's curiosity respecting the articles of apparel, the bundle was again tied up, and covered with a kind of cow-skin bag. The same evening Ali sent some of his people to inform Mr. Park that there were thieves in the neighbourhood, and that to prevent my valuable articles from being stolen, it was necessary to convey them into his tent. Every thing was accordingly taken away; nor was he permitted to retain a single shirt. Ali was indeed greatly disappointed, at not finding among the effects, so large a quantity of gold and ambér as he had expected, and sent his myrmidons the next morning to examine whether any thing was concealed about his person; they searched every part of his apparel, and took from him his gold, amber, a watch, and a pocket compass. In the night he had fortunately buried another compass in the sand; and this, with the apparel on his person, was the whole now left him by this rapacious and inhospitable savage †.

Mr. Park, anxious to know his destiny, went to

* The rudeness, ferocity, and fanaticism which distinguish the Moors from the rest of mankind, had now an opportunity of gratifying their propensities. Mr. Park was *a ſtranger, unprotected*, and a *chriſtian*; each of these circumstances is sufficient to extinguish every spark of humanity from the heart of a Moor; but, added to all these heavy charges, he was strongly suspected by them of being a *spy*; in such a situation he certainly had every thing to fear.

† The pocket-compass excited much curiosity and superstition, and induced the king himself to enquire why the little piece of iron, meaning the needle, always pointed to the great desert. Though this question somewhat puzzled our adventurer, to plead ignorance he thought would appear evasive; he therefore immediately replied, that it pointed to the residence of his mother, who lived beyond the sands of Schara, and that it would conduct him to her whilst she was living, and would point to her grave after her decease.

This solution added to the surprise of the sovereign, who,

to the king, and entreated permission to return to Jarra; a request which met with a peremptory refusal. The queen, he alledged, had not yet seen him, and he must wait till she arrived; after which his horse would be restored, and he would be at liberty to leave Ludamar. The adventurer appeared pleased, and entertaining no hopes of making an immediate escape, on account of the heat, which was at that time excessive, he resolved to wait patiently for the rainy season. Filled with melancholy at this tedious procrastination, and having endured a restless night, a violent fever attacked him the next morning. He had muffled himself up in his cloak to promote perspiration, and was asleep, when a party of Moors entered the hut, and with their accustomed barbarity pulled away his cloak. By signs as well as gestures he informed them that he was sick, and wished to be permitted to sleep; but his distress was a subject of mirth to these savages. Wearied out with such continued insults, and perhaps rendered a little peevish by his illness, he feared he might be induced, in an unguarded moment, to overleap the bounds of prudence, and manifest some sudden act of resentment, when death must be the inevitable consequence.

In this deplorable situation he quitted the hut, and laid down under the shade of some spreading trees, at a little distance from the camp; but even here their cruelty pursued him, for Ali's son, with a party of horsemen, came galloping to the place, and ordered him to follow them to the king. His supplications for a few hours rest were renewed, but in vain; and after much abusive language, one of them presented a pistol towards him, and snapped it twice; he cocked it a third time, when the dejected invalid begged him to desist, and consented to return with them to the camp. When arrived there, Ali seemed much out of humour, and after repeatedly opening and closing the pan of the pistol, said something to him in Arabic, to the following effect. "It clearly appears that you have been contriving an escape, and if in future you are seen without the limits of the camp, orders have been issued that you shall be shot by the first person that happens to discover you*."

A few days having elapsed, Ali sent a slave to our traveller to order him to be in readiness for an excursion with the monarch in the afternoon, as he intended to gratify his women with the sight of the extraordinary stranger. The message was hardly delivered, when the king, with several attendants, came riding to the hut. A new difficulty now occurred; the Moors could not be reconciled to the European's *nankeen breeches*, which they condemned as inelegant and indecent, especially in the presence of ladies. The difficulty, however, was at length removed; the king having ordered him to wrap his cloak around him. They visited four different ladies in their tents, by each of whom Mr. Park was presented with a bowl of milk and water, while they examined his hair and skin with the minutest attention, though they seemed to shudder at his strange complexion; they even affected to consider him as a being inferior to themselves. All these ladies were extremely corpulent, which is here considered as the criterion of beauty.

In the course of the excursion, the dress and

after turning it round repeatedly, was convinced that it always pointed the same way, he returned it to the European, supposing something magical was contained in it, and that it was dangerous to have such an instrument under his roof.

A council was soon after held in Ali's tent respecting Mr. Park, and their decisions, which were all unfavourable to him, were differently related by different persons. Some affirmed that he was sentenced to death, others that he was only to suffer the amputation of his right hand; while the prince, a youth of nine years of age, assured him, that his uncle had persuaded his father to put out his eyes. He thought proper, however, to delay this operation till the queen, Fatima, who was then in the north, had seen his curious prisoner.

* A sand-wind commenced on the morning of the 22nd, which continued for two days; during which, though its force was not very considerable, it raised a sufficient quantity of sand to darken the whole atmosphere, sweeping from east to west in a thick and constant stream. The Moors, on these occasions, cover the face with a cloth, to prevent them from inhaling the sand.

About this time the women of the camp had stained their feet, and the ends of their fingers, of a dark saffron colour; but whether it was from a religious motive, or merely to ornament their persons, was not precisely known. A party of these ladies visited Mr. Park in his hut, to ascertain by *actual inspection*, whether the rite of *circumcision* extended to christians as well as to the followers of Mahomet. Though a little surprised at this strange request, Mr. Park thought proper to treat the business jocularly, and informed them that it was not usual in his country to give *ocular demonstration*, in such cases, before so many beautiful women; but if all would retire, except one young lady, to whom he pointed, (selecting one of the handsomest among them) he would satisfy her curiosity. The ladies relished the joke, and retired laughing, and the damsel to whom he had given the preference (though she did not claim the privilege of inspection) seemed to approve of the compliment, by sending him some meal and milk for his supper.

appearance of the European afforded infinite mirth to the company, who galloped round him, exhibiting various feats of equestrian activity. The Moors are excellent horsemen; they ride without fear; their saddles are so constructed as to afford them a secure seat; and their roads, which are soft and sandy, are preservatives against fatal accidents from falling. The Moors hold their horses in great estimation, as their fleetness enables them to plunder the Negro countries: they feed them plentifully and frequently, and indulge them with a quantity of sweet milk in the evening. A child having died in the camp, the mother and the relatives assisted in the dead howl, in which they were joined by many female visitors. In the evening the body was committed to the grave, and a shrub planted thereon, which no stranger's fingers are permitted to defile.*

SECTION V.

Mr. Park has a short Allowance of Provision, Christian Captives being required to keep Mahometan Lent—Advised by the Shereef not to travel to Tombuctoo, assuring him that Christians were there considered as the Devil's Children—The Bambar Army approach Ludamar—Mr. Park is introduced to Queen Fatima—Suffers greatly from Thirst—Partakes of Water with the Cows—Some Account of the Moors.

AFTER a month's captivity in Ali's camp, and daily experiencing new distresses, his cruel oppressors permitted our traveller to pass one sultry evening in solitude and reflection. At midnight, a bowl of kouskous, with salt and water, was served up for himself and his two attendants, intended as a full allowance for the following day; for, as this was the Mahometan Lent, the Moors not only fasted themselves, but required a similar abstinence from a Christian captive. Time, at length, had rendered his situation more tolerable, and he began to be better reconciled to the sufferings of hunger and thirst. In order to beguile the tedious hours, he amused himself by learning to write Arabic. From the people who came to see him, he became acquainted with the characters.

Ali proposing to go two days' journey to the north to meet his queen Fatima, a bullock was killed, cut in slices, and dried in the sun: this, with a moderate quantity of dry kouskous, furnished provision upon the road. The tyrant, apprehensive of poison, never partook of any food that was not dressed under his immediate inspection. Soon after the departure of Ali, a shereef arrived with salt and other merchandize from Walet, the capital of Biroo. He resided in the same hut with Mr. Park. Acquainted with the Arabic and Bambarra tongues, he had travelled commodiously through several kingdoms; he had visited Housa, and resided many years at Tombuctoo. In the course of conversation, our traveller mentioned an inclination to travel to the last mentioned city, but the shereeff endeavoured

* On the 7th, a whirlwind overturned three tents, and greatly injured our traveller's hut: the heat of the air, at the same time, was almost suffocating, and the naked feet of the Negroes were violently scorched by the sand. About this time a Moorish wedding was celebrated; the ceremony of which is thus described by Mr. Park:—"In the evening, the tabul, or large drum was beat, to announce a wedding, which was held at one of the neighbouring tents. A great number of people of both sexes assembled, but without that mirth and hilarity which takes place at a Negro wedding: here there was neither singing nor dancing, nor any other amusement that I could perceive. A woman was beating the drum, and the other women joining at times, like a chorus, by setting up a shrill scream; and, at the same time, moving their tongues from one side of the mouth to the other, with great celerity. I was soon tired, and had returned into my hut, where I was sitting almost asleep, when an old woman entered, with a wooden bowl in her hand, and signified that she had brought me a present from the bride. Before I could recover from the surprise which this message created, the woman discharged the contents of the bowl full in my face. Finding that it was the same sort of holy water, with which, among the Hottentots, a priest is said to sprinkle a new-married couple, I began to suspect that the old lady was actuated by mischief or malice; but she gave me seriously to understand, that it was a nuptial benediction from the bride's own person; and which, on such occasions, is always received by the young unmarried Moors, as a mark of distinguished favour. This being the case, I wiped my face, and sent my acknowledgments to the lady. The wedding drum continued to beat, and the women to sing, or rather whistle, all night. About nine in the morning, the bride was brought in state from her mother's tent, attended by a number of women, who carried her tent (a present from the husband) some bearing up the poles, others holding by the strings; and in this manner they marched, whistling as formerly, till they came to the place appointed for her residence, where they pitched the tent. The husband followed, with a number of men leading four bullocks, which they tied to the tent-strings; and having killed another, and distributed the beef among the people, the ceremony was concluded."

to

to deter him from so imprudent a journey; assuring him that *Christians* were there considered as the devil's children, and enemies to the Prophet. The shereeff then communicated to him the following particulars—" that Houssa was the largest town he had ever seen; that Walet was larger than Tombuctoo, but was less resorted to by strangers; that between Benown and Walet was ten days' journey; but the road not leading through any considerable places, travellers supported themselves by purchasing milk from the Arabs, who kept their herds near the watering places: two days were consumed in passing over a sandy country without water: from Walet to Tombuctoo was eleven days' more, but water was plentiful, and the journey was performed upon bullocks: that many Jews are seen at Tombuctoo, but that all spoke Arabic, and used the same prayers as the Moors." *

Johnson and Demba, the two attendants, lay stretched upon the sand in a sort of torpid slumber; and even on the arrival of some kouskous could not be aroused without difficulty. Mr. Park experienced no inclination for sleep, but was affected with a deep convulsive respiration, like perpetual sighing, a dimness of sight, and a propensity to faint, when he attempted to sit up; and these symptoms continued till some time after he had taken nourishment.

A messenger arrived at Benown with the unwelcome intelligence that the Bambarra army was approaching the frontiers of Ludamar. This alarm threw the whole country into confusion, and in the afternoon, Ali's son arriving with about twenty horsemen, ordered all the cattle to be immediately driven away, all the tents to be struck, and the people to depart. In obedience to these orders, the baggage was carried upon bullocks. The king's favourite concubines rode upon camels, with a commodious saddle, and a canopy to ward off the scorching rays of the sun. Proceeding northward, they arrived in the evening at the Negro town of Farani, near which they pitched their tents. The confusion which attended this encampment obliged our travellers to undergo another day of fasting and humiliation.

Two of Ali's household slaves, a man and a woman, who had come with the tents, went to water their cattle at the town wells, at which there began to be a great scarcity: when some Negro women observed the cattle approaching, they ran with their pitchers towards the town, but before their arrival at the gate, they were stopped by the slaves, who compelled them to pour the water, intended for their own families, into the troughs for the cattle: they were also obliged to draw water till all the cattle had drank; and the Moorish female slave actually broke two wooden bowls over the heads of the negroes, for being dilatory in obeying her commands.

Arriving at Ali's camp, Mr. Park immediately waited upon Ali, and saw queeen Fatima in his presence. Ali seemed well pleased with his coming, and familiarly shook hands with him, at the same time informing his consort that he was *the Christian.* She was of the Arab cast, with long black hair, and remarkably corpulent. At first she seemed shocked at having a Christian so near her; but when Mr. Park, (by the assistance of a Negro boy) had gratified her curiosity by answering many questions, she seemed reconciled, and presented him with a bowl of milk. The heat was now excessive, and the scarcity of water was greater here than at Benown; and this scarcity was felt by none more severely than by our unfortunate adventurer, whose boy was repeatedly driven from the well by the unfeeling Moors, when attempting to fill the skin which Ali himself had given him for that purpose; astonished that the slave of a Christian, should have presumed to draw water from wells dug by the followers of the Prophet.

Mr. Park was so indifferently supplied with water, that he frequently passed the night in the situation of Tantalus †. Once in particular, having solicited in vain for that fluid at the camp, he

* Being thus amused, Mr. Park passed his time with less uneasiness than formerly; but as his supply of victuals was left to the direction of slaves, over whom he had no control, his sufferings were more severe than in the last month: for two successive nights they neglected to furnish the accustomed meal; and though the boy begged for sustenance from hut to hut in a small Negro town near the camp, he could only procure a few handfuls of ground nuts, which he readily shared with his master. Mr. Park was now too sensible that when hunger has been endured for some time, it will produce languor and debility; but a draught of water, by keeping the stomach distended, will afford a temporary relief.

† As soon as he had shut his eyes, fancy conveyed to him the streams and rivers of his native land; there, as he wandered along the verdant brink, he surveyed the transparent stream with transport, and hastened to swallow the delightful draught; but, alas! disappointment awakened him, and he found himself a lonely captive, perishing with thirst, amidst the wilds of Africa.

resolved

resolved to try his fortune at the wells, to which he was guided by the lowing of the cattle. He found the Moors very busy in drawing water, and requested permission to drink; but they drove him away with abusive contempt. Arriving at a well, where there was only an old man and two boys, he repeated the same request; the old man instantly drew up a bucket of water; but when the traveller was stooping to take hold of it, he recollected that Mr. Park was a Christian; and, fearing that the bucket might be polluted by his lips, he dashed the water into the trough. Though this trough was small, and three cows were then slaking their thirst at it, Mr. Park was anxious to come in for his share, and pushing his head between two of those valuable animals, drank with them till the water was nearly exhausted.

In this manner passed the sultry month of May, during which time no alteration took place in the traveller's situation. Ali still considered him as a lawful prisoner; and though Fatima allowed him a larger supply of provisions than he received at Benown, no mention had been made of his release. The wet season, however, was approaching, when the Negroes usually return to the environs of the Great Desert; but a concurrence of circumstances produced a change in his favour more suddenly than he expected.—The fugitive Kaartans, who had taken refuge in Ludamar, finding the Moors intended to leave them, and dreading the resentment of their own sovereign, whom they had so basely deserted, offered to treat with Ali for a number of Moorish horsemen, to co-operate with them in expelling Daisy from Gedingooma; for till Daisy should be humbled, they could not return to their respective towns, nor live securely in the neighbouring kingdoms. To extort money from these people, Ali dispatched his son to Jarra, and followed him in a few days.

This was too favourable an opportunity to be neglected by our traveller. He immediately applied to Fatima, whose power was absolute in all important affairs, and begged her interest with Ali to obtain permission for him to accompany him to Jarra. After some consideration, the request was favourably received. Fatima looked kindly on him, and seemed to pity his distresses. His bundles were brought into the presence of the royal consort, and he was ordered to explain the use of the respective articles for her amusement. He was also required to shew the manner of putting on the boots, stockings, &c. with all which he cheerfully complied, and received the promise of permission to depart in the course of a very few days.

Here Mr. Park interrupts the narrative of his adventures, by collecting into one point of view, such observations on the Moorish country and character, as naturally occurred to him in his situation:

The Moors of this part of Africa consist of many tribes, the most powerful of which inhabit the northern banks of the Senegal, and are known by the names of Trasart and Il Braken. The tribes of Gedumah, Jafnoo, and Ludamar, though less numerous than the former, are next in power. Each is governed by a king, who exercises absolute jurisdiction over his own horde. Their employments in time of peace are chiefly pastoral, and their sustenance is principally derived from milk and the flesh of their cattle, which they sometimes devour voraciously, and sometimes practice the most austere abstinence. When enjoined by their religion, or engaged in their journies across the Desert, they endure hunger and thirst with surprising fortitude; but when opportunities occur of indulging their appetites, they swallow more at one meal than an European does in three.

Agriculture is but little practised among them, and the materials for manufacture are scantily produced. They purchase cotton-cloth, and other articles, from the Negroes, in exchange for salt, which they dig from pits in the Great Desert.—They contrive, however, to weave a strong cloth, with which they cover their tents, the thread of which is spun by the women from goats' hair; and from the hides of their cattle they manufacture saddles, bridles, &c. Their knives and spears are formed of the native iron, but sabres, firearms, and all their other weapons, are purchased from Europeans, in exchange for Negro slaves. Their chief commerce is with the French traders on the Senegal. They practice Mahometanism with all its bigotry, superstition, and intolerance: not having a mosque at Benown, their devotions are performed in an open shed, or an inclosure made of mats. The priest, who is also a schoolmaster, is attended every evening by his pupils, who learn from him a few sentences of the Koran, by the light of a large fire. When these lessons have been read and transcribed, and a few prayers committed to memory, the scholar's education is

deemed complete; and with this slender stock of learning he enters his career of life: glorying in his acquirements, he surveys with contempt the unlettered Negro.*

The usual dress of the women is a piece of cotton cloth, wrapped round the middle, and descending like a petticoat almost to the ground.—To this are sewed two square pieces of the same manufacture, which are united over the shoulders. The head is encircled with a plain bandage, which is occasionally extended to defend their features from the sun. Sometimes, when they go out to take the air, they are veiled from head to foot.

Their employments are regulated by their situation: queen Fatima and her ladies of the first degree, devote their hours to the conversation of visitors, performing devotions, or contemplating their charms at the looking-glass. Though the lower females attend to their domestic duties, they maintain a petty despotism over their slaves, and are as vain, as voluble, and as capricious as their betters. The condition of the captives is truly wretched; they are obliged to labour excessively in the most servile offices; and to heap the measure of their misfortunes, they are miserably fed, and unmercifully punished.

Among the Moors of Ludamar, the dress of the men differs but little from that of the Negroes, excepting that they all wear the turban, which is universally made of white cotton cloth. Such of them as have long beards,† display them with ostentatious satisfaction, as denoting an Arab ancestry. But among the generality of the people the hair is short, bushy, and black. The diseases most prevalent among them are the intermittent fever, and the dysentery, when Nature is generally left to herself, though nostrums are sometimes administered by old women. Many of the Moors, in the southern states, are subject to the small pox; and the Negroes, who reside near the Gambia, practise inoculation. The administration of criminal justice is prompt and decisive: on such occasions the offender is brought before the king, who pronounces, of his sole authority, what judgment he thinks proper; though capital punishments were seldom inflicted on any but the Negroes.

The wealth of the Moors consists in their numerous herds of cattle; but as their time is not wholly engrossed by pastoral employments, they spend the rest of the day in trifling conversation, or in planning schemes of depredation on the Negro villages. The king's tent is the scene of general rendezvous, where great liberty of speech is tolerated among the subjects; but in speaking of their sovereign, they are all unanimous in his praise. Songs are composed in honour of him; but they are so replete with adulation, that a Moorish monarch only could hear them without blushing. The king surpasses his subjects in the elegance of his apparel; but in his intercourse with them, all distinctions of rank are frequently forgotten. He even condescends to eat of the same bowl with his camel-drivers, and reposes himself on the same bed during the heat of the day ‡.

Mr. Park could not form any correct estimate of the number of the king of Ludamar's Moorish subjects; but the cavalry, amounting to about two thousand, formed a very small proportion of the population. Each soldier furnishes his own horse, together with his accoutrements: he has no other pay than the produce of his plunder.—The horses are so beautiful, and so highly esteemed,

* Of feminine perfection the Moors have singular ideas; for in their estimation the *most corpulent* is the *greatest beauty*. A perfect beauty is so ponderous as to be a load for a camel; and a woman of moderate pretensions must not be able to walk without a slave under each arm to support her. From this astonishing taste in the men, the girls are compelled by their mothers to acquire this perfection early in life, by swallowing a vast quantity of kouskous, and a similar portion of camel's milk every morning. Whether the girl has an appetite or not, the injunction must be complied with; the kouskous and the milk must be swallowed, though blows are sometimes required to enforce obedience. "I have seen," says Mr. Park, "a poor girl sit crying, with the bowl at her lips, for more than an hour, and a mother, with a stick in her hand, watching her all the while, and using the stick without mercy, whenever she observed that her daughter was not swallowing." This strange practice, instead of producing indigestion and disease, soon occasions that excess of plumpness which is so captivating in the eye of the Moor.

† Mr. Park was, at one time, inclined to suppose that the Moors were willing to favour him, by their approbation of his beard, which was now grown to an enormous length, and was always beheld by them with a mixture of envy and admiration. He jocularly adds, "I believe in my conscience, they thought it too good a beard for a Christian."

‡ His revenues arise from a tax on his Negro subjects; a tax upon korrees, or watering places; and another upon all merchandize passing through his kingdom. It should not be omitted, however, to mention, that a very considerable part is acquired by the plunder of individuals. Many are afraid of being thought rich, as the king has several spies stationed in every town, to collect information respecting the wealth of his respective subjects; and where the temptation of wealth is strong, he is capable of inventing a plausible plea of seizing it for his own emolument.

that

that twelve or fourteen slaves are sometimes given by Negro princes for one of them.

Ludamar has, for its northern boundary, the Great Desert of Jarra, which is an amazing tract of sand, almost destitute of inhabitants, except where the scanty vegetation is observable in particular parts, to supply with pasturage the flocks of a few poor itinerant Arabs. In other places, where they are better supplied with water and pasturage, small parties of Moors have fixed upon a residence, where they live in independent poverty, secure from the government of Barbary. In other parts, the disconsolate wanderer sees nothing around him but a vast expanse of sand and sky, and a gloomy and barren void; and the mind is tortured with apprehensions of perishing with thirst. Surrounded by this dreary solitude, the traveller beholds the dead bodies of birds, driven by tempestuous winds from happier regions, and ruminating on the dreadful length of his passage, listens with horror to the voice of the driving blast *.

Though the Moors resemble the Mulattoes with regard to complexion, the expression of their features display a disposition to cruelty and artifice. A staring wildness in their eyes gives them the appearance of being in a state of lunacy. Innumerable instances might be drawn of their treachery and malevolence from their conduct to the Negroes. Without provocation, and sometimes under the fairest professions of friendship, they will suddenly seize upon the Negroes' cattle, and sometimes upon the inhabitants themselves. The Negroes never retaliate; the fleetness of the horses of the Moors render them so formidable, that resistance is hardly thought of.

Like the roving Arabs, the Moors are frequently removing from place to place, influenced by the season of the year, for the convenience of pasturage. In February they strike their tents, and approach the Negro country to the south, where they remain till the rains commence in July: they then return to the Desert, where they continue till the month of February. Inured to hardships by this wandering life, and linked in the bonds of unity with their associates, they harbour an insurmountable aversion towards strangers. Deprived of all intercourse with civilized nations, and boasting a superiority to the Negroes, by a very superficial knowledge of letters, they combine, in their character, the superstition of the Negro, with the cruelty and treachery of the Arab; and are the vainest, the most bigotted, ferocious, and intolerant of all the nations on the earth.

If Mr. Park has not given so copious an account of the manners of this singular and secluded people, as might be expected, the extreme wretchedness of his situation will operate as a sufficient apology, as he had but few opportuities of collecting information. He now ventures, however, to resume his narrative.

SECTION VI.

Ali departs from Jarra—Demba seized and sent into Slavery—Ali returns to his Camp—Daisy, King of Kaarta, approaches Jarra—Inhabitants quit the Town, &c.—Author proceeds through the Wilderness—Suffers from Thirst, and the Sands—Providentially relieved—Obtains Food from a poor Woman—Continues his Journey through the Wilderness—Arrives at Wawra.

HAVING obtained permission to accompany Ali to Jarra, our traveller took a ceremonious leave of queen Fatima, who graciously condescended to restore him part of his apparel; and on the evening before his departure, he received his horse and accoutrements by Ali's order. Early on the 25th he quitted the camp of Bubaker, accompanied by Johnson and Demba, and a number of Moorish horsemen. Ali, with fifty horsemen, retired privately from the camp, during

* In these melancholy regions, the only wild animals to be found are the antelope and the ostrich; but on the skirts of the Desert, where water is more plentiful, lions, panthers, elephants, and wild boars make thier appearance. Of domestic animals, the camel only can endure the fatigue of crossing it; being enabled, by the particular conformation of his stomach, to carry a supply of water for ten or a dozen days. On this, and other accounts, he is the only beast of burthen employed by the trading caravans. The flesh of this animal is preferred by the Moors to any other, and the milk of the female is nutritive and pleasant.

the

the night. In the afternoon the travellers overtook Ali, and his fifty horsemen at a watering-place in the woods. The company reposed, for the night, in the tents of some shepherds near the wells; but as there was not accommodation for the whole party, Mr. Park was ordered to continue in the open space in the centre of the tents. During the night there was much lightning, and at day-break so heavy a sand-wind commenced, that it was impossible to look up: the cattle were so tormented with the particles of sand lodging in their eyes and ears, that they ran about like mad creatures, insomuch that our traveller apprehended he should be trampled to death.

In the morning, however, he was ordered to get ready to depart; and Ali's chief slave informed the Negro boy, that Ali was to be his master in future. Then turning to Mr. Park, he said, "The boy, and every thing but your horse, must go back to Bubaker; but you may take the old fool (meaning Johnson) with you to Jarra." Mr. Park, shocked beyond description at the idea of losing the poor boy, expostulated with Ali, and observed that though he had been imprudent in coming to Ludamar, he had been sufficiently punished for such imprudence by being so long detained, and afterwards plundered of all his little property. But the threat which he had now denounced was intolerable; the boy, whom he had now seized upon, was not a slave, nor accused of any offence. His fidelity to his master has plunged him into his present situation. "As his protector," added Mr. Park, "I cannot see him deprived of his liberty, without remonstrating against the cruelty and injustice of the act."

Ali, with the haughty and malignant smile of a tyrant, assured his interpreter, that if he did not instantly depart, he would also send our traveller back. Poor Demba was not less affected than Mr. Park, who finding it in vain to expect redress, shook hands with the unfortunate youth; and having blended his tears with those of the boy, assured him of his utmost endeavours to procure him his release. He then experienced the torment of seeing poor Demba led off by Ali's slaves towards the camp at Bubaker.

The Moors, and Mr. Park, after a fatiguing journey, arrived at Doombani, a large walled town, where they were joined by some horsemen from the northward. On the 1st of June they proceeded towards Jarra; the company consisting of two hundred men, all on horseback. At Jarra, our traveller was accommodated at the house of his old acquaintance Daman Jumma, to whom he related the most extraordinary passages of his late adventures. He then requested him in the most pressing terms, to procure a ransom for the boy, and promised a bill upon Dr. Laidley, for the value of two slaves. Daman undertook the business, but Ali deferred the matter from day to day; telling Daman that if he wished to purchase the boy for himself, he should have him, at some future time, at the price of a common slave. To this proposal he agreed, and the money was to be paid whenever the boy was sent to Jarra.

Ali's object in visiting Jarra, was to procure money from the fugitive Kaartans, who, taking refuge in Ludamar, had resolved to attack from thence their lawful sovereign Daisy. Ali, with the warmest professions of friendship, agreed to furnish them with two hundred horsemen, on condition that they should previously supply him with four hundred head of cattle, two hundred garments of blue cloth, and a stipulated quantity of beads, &c. In order to procure the cattle, they persuaded the king to demand half what was required from the people of Jarra, promising shortly to make a suitable return. The next day a proclamation was made by the drum and the crier, that if any person should suffer his cattle to go into the woods the next morning, before the king had made a selection from them, his house should be plundered, and his slaves arrested for the service of his majesty. Paying due obedience to this proclamation, two hundred of the best cattle were delivered to the Moors the next morning; and the full compliment was afterwards made up by the same arbitrary means.

On the 8th of June Ali returned to Bubaker, to celebrate a certain festival, and permitted Mr. Park to remain with Daman till his return. The next morning all the Moors departed from the town. During their stay they had committed many robberies; and, with the most unparalleled audacity, had seized upon three girls, who were bringing water from the wells, and carried them away into slavery. Two people, dreadfully wounded, were discovered on the 12th at a watering-place in the woods: one of them was already dead, but the other was brought alive to Jarra. Before he breathed his last, he said he had fled through the woods from Kasson: that Daisy had commenced hostilities against Sambo Sego, surprised

prised three of his towns, and slain the inhabitants. He named many who had been slaughtered in Kasson; in consequence of which the death howl was universal in Jarra for two days.

Some fugitive slaves from Kaarta reported that Daisy, hearing that hostile preparations were making against him, intended to visit Jarra. On this intelligence the Kaartans demanded of Ali the two hundred horsemen which he had contracted to furnish; but Ali plainly informed them that his cavalry were otherwise employed. The Negroes, thus deserted by the Moors, and expecting no clemency from the king of Kaarta, resolved to collect their forces, and hazard a battle with the king, who was now almost destitute of provisions: eight hundred effective men were therefore instantly produced, who entered Kaarta on the 18th. On the following day a thunder storm, accompanied with rain, revived the face of nature, by producing a pleasant coolness in the air: no rain having fallen for many months before.

Mr. Park, finding his endeavours to recover the boy ineffectual, began to think of his own safety before the commencement of the periodical rains. After mature consideration, he resolved to avail himself of the first opportunity of escaping, and to proceed alone to Bambarra, Johnson having refused to proceed any farther. Such was his perplexing situation when the Jarra army, returning from their expedition, fired their musquets as a testimony of joy; but the detail of the expedition did not relieve the people of Jarra from their fears and apprehensions. Daisy was at a town near Joka, surrounded by so numerous an army, that all attempts to attack him were abandoned: two of Daisy's towns were, however, seized, and the whole of the inhabitants carried off, but lest the king should hear of this circumstance, and be induced to cut off their retreat, they returned through the woods by night with all their booty*.

Mr. Park arrived at Quaira, on the evening of the 28th; where he remained a few days to recruit his horse, and wait for the arrival of some Mandingo Negroes who were going to Bambarra. In a few days Ali's principal slave, and four Moors arrived at Quaira. Johnson, the interpreter, suspecting their intention, deputed two boys to listen to their conversation, from which they discovered that our traveller was to be conveyed back to Bubaker. In the evening two of the Moors were convinced, by privately inspecting his horse, that he could not effect his escape upon so wretched an animal; and having enquired where he slept, returned to their companions. Fully perceiving their intentions, our traveller resolved instantly to set off for Bambarra, to avoid a second captivity. Johnson applauded his resolution, but refused to accompany him, having agreed with Daman to assist in conducting a caravan of slaves to the Gambia, as it furnished him with an opportunity of returning to his wife and family.

Thus circumstanced, Mr. Park determined to proceed by himself, and lost no time in getting ready for his departure. His wardrobe consisted of two shirts, two waistcoats, two pair of trowsers, a hat, a pair of boots, and two pocket-handkerchiefs: he had not a single bead, nor any other article of value belonging to him, to purchase provision for himself, or for his horse. At day-break Johnson informed him that the Moors were all asleep: sensible of the danger of deliberating, he instantly stepped over the Negroes, who were sleeping in the open air; and, having mounted his horse, took leave of Johnson, requesting him to take care of the papers which he had delivered to him, and inform his friends on the Gambia that he had left him in good health, on his road to Bambarra.

* A spy from Kaarta brought intelligence that Daisy had taken Simbing, and intended to be in Jarra the ensuing day. A number of persons were stationed on the tops of rocks, and all the avenues to the town, to give early intelligence of Daisy's motions. The women prepared for quitting the town, with all the expedition that circumstances seemed to require: at day-break, about half the people took the road for Bambarra, by the way of Deena. Their departure was afflicting to the beholders. The women and children crying, and the men, with dejection stamped upon their countenances, looking back with regret on their native town, which they were now compelled to abandon. On the following day information was brought from the centinels, that Daisy was on his march to Jarra, and that the opposing army had fled, without attempting to resist. Great was the terror of the inhabitants at this alarming intelligence. Mr. Park, though he had every reason to be pleased with Daisy's behaviour to him when at Kemmoo, did not wish to expose himself to the mercy of his army, fearing he might in the general confusion be mistaken for a Moor: he therefore mounted his horse, taking a large bag of corn before him, and rode out of the town with the disconsolate inhabitants. Our traveller halted at a small farm called Kadeeja, where he saw Daman and Johnson employed in filling large bags of corn, to be carried on bullocks, for the sustenance of Daman's family on the road.

He proceeded with extreme caution, surveying the bushes, and frequently listening, till he had got about a mile from the town, when he unexpectedly found himself in the neighbourhood of a Moorish watering-place. The shepherds followed him, giving him insolent language; and when he afterwards congratulated himself that he was perfectly out of their reach, he was alarmed by a loud shout; when, looking back, he saw three Moors on horseback, galloping at full speed, and brandishing their fire-arms. Knowing it would be in vain to attempt to escape, he turned to meet them. Two of them immediately caught hold of his bridle, and the other, presenting his musquet, said he must go back with them to Ali. Mr. Park accordingly rode back with the Moors, with apparent unconcern; when, in passing among some thick bushes, one of them commanded him to untie his bundle, and shew them the contents: but finding nothing valuable, one of them seized his cloak, and wrapped it about himself. This was an article of importance to our traveller, as it defended him from the rain by day, and from the musketoes in the night; he therefore entreated them to return it, but in vain: two of them rode off with the prize, and the third, when Mr. Park attempted to follow, struck his horse over the head, and, presenting his musquet, ordered him to proceed no further.

Perceiving that these men were not sent by authority to apprehend him, but merely to rob and plunder him, he turned his horse's head once more towards the east. The Moor followed his confederates, and Mr. Park, that he might not again be overtaken, struck into the woods, and after some time and observation, found himself in the proper road.

Great was the joy of our traveller, when he conceived himself perfectly out of danger; but soon his situation became truly deplorable, and deprived him of the prospect of procuring food or water. Having taken a circuitous route to avoid being seen, he directed his course through the wilderness, east-south-east towards some town or village in the kingdom of Bambarra. Oppressed with extreme thirst, when the burning heat of the sun was reflected with violence from the hot sand, he travelled on without having seen a human habitation. About four, he saw a large herd of goats, attended by two Moorish boys, who informed him that the goats were the property of Ali, and that they were going to Deena, where water was plentiful, and where they intended to stay till the pools in the Desert had been filled by the rain. Then, shewing him their empty water-skins, assured him they had seen no water in the woods*.

Determined to make another effort to prolong his existence, and the evening being cool, he resolved to travel as far as his feeble limbs would carry him, in hopes of discovering a watering-place. Putting the bridle on his horse, and driving him before him, they went on slowly for about half an hour, when some rays of lightning darted from the east, which he deemed a delightful sight, as it proclaimed the approach of rain. The wind roared, and the dust for a time was suffocating; but when the fury of the wind abated, a plentiful shower of rain ensued. The poor traveller spread his cloaths to receive it, and allayed his thirst by wringing and sucking out the delicious fluid.

The darkness of the night obliged him to lead his horse, and he guided him by the compass, which the lightning enabled him to observe. About two o'clock the animal started, and, looking round, he saw a light at a short distance among the trees: proceeding cautiously towards the spot from whence it proceeded, he saw many other lights in different places; and by the lowing of the cattle, and the clamour of the herdsmen, he concluded that it was a watering-place, and probably belonging to the Moors. Delightful as the sound of the human voice was to him, he resolved once more to strike into the woods; but being still thirsty, and dreading the approach of a burning sun, he ventured to search for the

* Little consolation could be afforded to our adventurer by this representation: his thirst was now become intolerable; his mouth was parched, a sudden dimness frequently impaired his sight, and he began to apprehend that he should absolutely perish with thirst. Towards the evening he ascended a high tree, from the uppermost branches of which he took a melancholy view of the barren wilderness, where he perceived only a dismal uniformity of sand and shrubs. Descending from the tree, he saw his horse agreeably engaged in devouring the brushwood and stubble. Unable to attempt walking, and his horse being too much fatigued to carry him, he thought it would be the last act of humanity he should have it in his power to perform, to take off his bridle, and permit him to shift for himself. In attempting this commendable deed, a sudden giddiness and sickness seized him, and he supposed the hour of death approaching. Nature, however, at length resumed her functions; and on recovering his senses, he found the bridle remaining in his hand.

wells;

wells; when, approaching too near one of the tents, he was perceived by a woman, who immediately gave an alarm: two persons came to her assistance; but he hastened again into the woods, and eluded pursuit*.

Whilst the horse was feeding, and our traveller's heart was elevated in silent praise to him, who had so bountifully spread a table for him in the wilderness, one of the natives communicated something to our hostess in a whisper, which evidently excited her astonishment; and from which it oppeared that a resolution had been formed for seizing our traveller, and carrying him to Ali. He therefore prudently tied up his corn, and that he might not be suspected of having ran away from the Moors, pursued his journey in a northerly direction, attended by a vast concourse of the people.

Getting rid of his troublesome attendants, he again had recourse to the woods, and slept under a large tree; having a bundle of twigs for his bed, and his saddle for a pillow. He was awakened in the morning by three Foulahs, who, supposing him to be a Moor, pointed to the sun, reminding him that it was time to offer up their prayers. Without attending to this admonition, Mr. Park arose, and continued his journey over a level country. Pursuing a certain path, he arrived, about midnight, at a small pool of rain-water. Remaining here for the night, his sleep was much interrupted by the howling of wild beasts, and the tormenting assiduities of muskitoes and flies.

Pursuing his course on the 4th of July, he saw a vast number of wild hogs, antelopes, and ostriches, and met with some Foulah shepherds; one of whom invited him to come into his little tent, and partake of some dates. Crawling into this hospitable place, upon his hands and knees, he found a woman, and three children. A dish of boiled corn and dates was produced before them. While Mr. Park was eating, the children gazed at him with astonishment; and, on the shepherd's exclaiming a Nazarine! they all began to cry, and instantly followed the mother, who cautiously crept towards the door, and ran from the tent as rapidly as they could; so terrified were these creatures at the very name of a Christian. Here our adventurer procured some corn for his horse, in exchange for some brass trinkets. Sleeping at night under a tree, he was disturbed by wolves, which prompted him to set forward before day; and about ten o'clock, on the 5th of July, he arrived at Wawra, a Negro town, but tributary to the king of Bambarra.

SECTION VII.

The Author proceeds to Wassiboo—Accompanied by some fugitive Kaartans to Bambarra—Discovers the Niger—Account of Sego—Hospitality of a Negro Woman.

RELIEVED from the persecutions of the Moors, and being much fatigued with his journey, Mr. Park resolved to recruit his exhausted powers by sleep; and meeting with a hearty reception from the Dooty, he enjoyed a refreshing repose of two hours upon a bullock's hide. The people assembled in crowds to learn who the stranger was, and from whence he came; some declared him to be an Arab; others insisted upon his being a Moorish sultan; and their different opinions were supported with so much energy that the noise awoke him. The Dooty at length interposed, and assured them he was a white man, but that, from his appearance, certainly was

* The croaking of frogs now attracted his attention, and following the sound, he arrived at some shallow muddy pools, where he and his horse allayed their thirst. Ascending a tree in the morning, he saw the smoke of the watering-place he had passed in the night: he also perceived another pillar of smoke to the east, at the distance of about twelve or fourteen miles. Thither directing his course, he was informed by some Negroes, who were planting corn, that he was near a Foulah village, belonging to Ali, the name of which was Schrilla. After some hesitation, Mr. Park ventured to enter it, and accordingly rode up to the Dooty's house, where admittance was denied him, and where he could not obtain a handful of corn for his unfortunate horse. Quitting this inhospitable door, he rode slowly out of the town to some low scattered huts in the vicinity: at the door of one of these humble dwellings, he saw an elderly woman employed in spinning; he petitioned her, by signs, for some food; endeavouring to convince her that he was extremely hungry. The benevolent creature immediately abandoned her distaff, welcomed him to her little habitation, and provided for him a dish of kouskous, of which he made a comfortable meal: and in the European manner expressed his gratitude, by giving her one of his pocket-handkerchiefs.

a very

a very poor one. Several women came to see him in the course of the day, and begged him to enquire of king Mansong what was become of their children: one of them told him, that her son's name was Manadee, and that he had been taken from her three years ago by Mansong's army; and entreated Mr. Park, if he should happen to see him, that his mother and sister were still alive. In the afternoon, the Dooty examined Mr. Park's leather bag, but, finding nothing valuable in it, he returned it, and ordered him to depart in the morning.

At day-break, on the 6th, Mr. Park departed, in company with a Negro; but the Negro's ass took an early opportunity of kicking him off, and he returned, leaving our traveller to prosecute the journey by himself. About noon he reached Dingyee, where his landlord requested a lock of his hair to make a saphie, which he said would convey to its possessor all the knowledge of a white man. Mr. Park complied with the request, but finding his head pretty closely cropped, he put on his hat, for which he apologized, by observing, that he wished to preserve some part of this valuable merchandise for a future occasion.

He proceeded to the small town of Wassiboo, where he remained four days at the Dooty's house. Cultivation, in this neighbourhood, is carried on with ardour; and the land is so abundantly fertile that, as the natives themselves express it, *Hunger is never known:* But, being continually in fear of the Moors, they find it necessary to carry their arms with them into the field.

A few days afterwards eight fugitive Kaartans arrived at Wassiboo: finding it impossible to exist under the tyrannical government of the Moors, they were resolved to transfer their allegiance to the king of Bambarra: at their request, Mr. Park accompanied them as far as Satilē, in the neighbourhood of which they arrived in the evening. The people, labouring in the corn fields, surprised at the sight of so many horsemen, took the travellers for a party of Moors, and ran screaming away from them. One of the company rode among them, to convince them that they were in an error, which alarmed them still the more; but after a full explanation at the gates, the travellers were permitted to enter. Setting forward the next day, the roads were found wet and dirty, but the country was beautiful, and watered with transparent rivulets.

About noon, our traveller's horse became so much fatigued that he was unable to keep up with the company; he therefore dismounted, and desired them to proceed, declaring he would follow them as soon as his faithful animal had taken a little rest; but the worthy Negroes, fearing Mr. Park might be attacked by the lions, which were very numerous in that quarter, if he continued alone, left one of the company to assist in driving the horse, whilst the others proceeded to Galloo. Joining the party at that place, they were well entertained by the Dooty *.

Leaving Moorja, and passing through Datliboo, they came to a large village, where they intended to pass the night. They proceeded to Fanimboo, where the Dooty, hearing there was a white man in company, brought out three old musquets, and was much disappointed at finding that Mr. Park could not repair them. As the travellers proceeded, they found the towns more numerous than before, but the people were less hospitable to strangers: even a little corn was solicited in vain; and Mr. Park, being under the necessity of driving his horse before him, did not reach Geosorro till after it was dark. He there found his companions wrangling with the Dooty, who absolutely refused to give or sell them any provisions: and as none of them had tasted food for the last twenty-four hours, they were not disposed to fast another day if they could avoid it. Our traveller, finding entreaties ineffectual, and being extremely fatigued, he fell asleep. About midnight, however, he was aroused with the joyful intelligence of the arrival of food, by which they were enabled to pass the remainder of the night with comfort †.

In the morning of the 20th our traveller petitioned,

* Next morning, thanking their landlord for his hospitality, the travellers set out for Moorja, a large town, famed for dealing extensively in salt. The inhabitants, being chiefly Mahometans, permit kafers to drink beer (corn spirit) in certain houses. Our traveller saw about twenty persons sitting round large vessels of this beer, all of them convivial, and many of them inebriated.

† They resumed their journey at the dawn of day; when Mr. Park, from the inability of his horse to travel, was again left behind his companions. Walking barefoot on the road, he was met by about seventy slaves coming from Sego: they were tied together by their necks with thongs of a bullock's hide. After them came Sidi, Mahomet's servant, whom Mr. Park had seen at Benown, and by whom he was informed that these slaves were going to Morocco, by the road of Ludamar and the Great Desert. Some time after our traveller met with about twenty Moors on horseback, who were the owners of these slaves. Arriving

titioned, in vain, for food; but, in the absence of the Dooty, he prevailed on his wife to indulge him with a handful of meal; which, mixed with water, was no unwelcome breakfast. Having departed from Doolinkeaboo, he stopped at a Korree, and was gratified with some milk by the Foulahs. Joining company with two negroes, who were going to Sego, they stopped at a little village, where a friend of one of the Negroes invited them to a sort of public entertainment. A dish called Sinkatoo, composed of sour milk, meal, and beer, was liberally distributed; and the women formed a part of the society; a circumstance which Mr. Park had never before observed in Africa. No compulsion was exercised, every one drank as he pleased; they nodded to each other before they drank, and on setting down the calabash, generally said *berka* (I thank you.) The men and women drank till they were almost intoxicated, but none of them were quarrelsome.

Mr. Park, and the two Negroes, proceeded on their journey, and passed several villages, where the European was constantly taken for a Moor, and became the subject of considerable mirth to the Bambarrans. Seeing him drive his horse before him, they were much diverted at his appearance—" He has been at Mecca," says one; another asked if his horse was sick, &c. They were accommodated that night at a village, where Mr. Park procured victuals for himself, and corn for his horse, at the moderate expence of a Button; and was informed that he should see the Niger the following day. The idea of seeing the Niger, and the buzzing of musketoes, would not permit the traveller to repose during the night; he therefore had saddled his horse, and was ready by day-light; but the gates of the village being shut, to avoid the intrusion of wild beasts, he was obliged to wait till the inhabitants were stirring.

Having at length departed, they proceeded towards Sego, the capital of Bambarra. As they approached the town, they fortunately overtook the fugitive Kaartans, to whom Mr. Park had been so much indebted in his journey through Bambarra: they readily agreed to introduce him to the king, and as they were passing through some marshy ground, one of them exultingly exclaimed, *Behold the water!*—and, looking forwards, he saw with infinite pleasure, the great object of their mission, the majestic Niger!—Hastening to the margin, and drinking some of that valuable fluid, he fervently rendered thanks to the Great Ruler of all things, for having thus far crowned his endeavours with success*.

When Mr. Park arrived at the ferry, the people, who were waiting for a passage, looked at him with astonishment. He had continued upwards of two hours on the bank, without having an opportunity of crossing; in the course of which time, information was communicated to Mansong, that a white man was coming to see him. A messenger from Mansong informed Mr. Park, that he could not possibly admit him, till he knew what had induced him to visit his country; and that he must not presume to cross the river, without the king's permission. He then pointed towards a distant village, desiring the traveller to procure accommodations there, and promised him further instructions in the morning.

However discouraging this reception, our traveller set off for the village, where, to his farther mortification, no person would admit him into his house: every one beheld him with astonishment and fear, and he sat the whole day without food in the shade of a tree. Towards evening the wind arose; and as a heavy rain was expected, he resolved to pass the night among the branches of the tree, to secure himself from destruction by wild beasts. About sun-set, however, when he was turning his horse loose to graze, a woman

riving at Doolinkeaboo, he was informed that his fellow travellers had gone on. The Dooty, at his request, furnished him with a draught of water, which is generally considered as a presage of greater hospitality; he therefore ventured to promise himself a good supper, and undisturbed repose. But he was unfortunately mistaken; a tempestuous night ensued, and the Dooty's hospitality was limited to the glass of water.

* Sego, at which he had arrived, consists, properly speaking, of four distinct towns, two on the northern bank of the Niger, and two on the southern bank. They are all surrounded with mud-walls of considerable height; their houses are formed of clay, with flat roofs, and of a square form; some of them have two stories, and many of them are white-washed. Moorish mosques are numerous, and the inhabitants are estimated at about thirty thousand: here the king of Bambarra has fixed his residence; and here many slaves are employed to convey people over the river; and, though the fare paid by each individual is trifling, it produces a considerable revenue. The canoes are of a singular construction, being formed of the trunks of two large trees, rendered concave: in consequence of which they are long, and disproportionably narrow. The view of this large city, the quantity of canoes upon the river, the crowded population, and the cultivated state of the surrounding country, formed altogether a prospect of civilization and magnificence, which our traveller little expected to find in the Bosom of Africa.

returning from the labours of the field, stopped to observe him; and, struck with his dejected appearance, enquired from what cause it proceeded; which he briefly explained to her: with a look of commisseration, she took up his bridle and saddle, and desired him to follow her. Having conducted him into her hut, and lighted up a lamp, she spread a mat on the floor, and told him he should be welcome to repose there till the morning. Understanding he was hungry, she caused some fish to be broiled upon the embers, and served them up for his supper. After assuring him that he might sleep without apprehension, she ordered the female part of the family, who stood gazing on him with astonishment, to resume their task of spinning, which occupied them the principal part of the night, whilst their labour was sweetened by songs; one of which was an extempore effusion, as their guest was the subject of it. It was sung by one of the young women, and the rest assisted in the chorus; the air was remarkably sweet and plaintive, and the words, literally translated, were these:

> The winds roared, and the rains fell,
> The poor white man, faint and weary, came
> and sat under our tree.
> He has no mother to bring him milk, no wife
> to grind his corn,
> Let us pity the white man, no mother has he, &c.

Trifling as this circumstance may appear, our traveller was extremely affected and oppressed by this unexpected kindness, which he was unable, in any proportionate degree to return, and sleep fled totally from his eyes. In the morning, he presented to his beneficent landlady, two of the four buttons which remained upon his waistcoat. He continued in this village the whole of July 21st, in conversation with the natives, who came in crowds to see him. As the evening approached he became uneasy, no message having arrived from the king. To add to his chagrin, he had been informed by the villagers that Mansong had received some unfavourable accounts of him, from the Moors and Slatees residing at Sego, who had formed many conjectures concerning the motives of his journey; that consultations had been held respecting his reception and disposal; that he had many enemies, and consequently must expect no favour.

About eleven o'clock, however, a messenger arrived from the king, which afforded very little satisfaction. He enquired if Mr. Park had brought him any present? and seemed very much disappointed on being informed that he had been robbed of all his property by the Moors. Mr. Park expressing a desire to go to court, was informed that he must wait till the afternoon, when the sovereign would send for him. In the afternoon of the following day, another messenger arrived from Mansong, who said it was the king's order that our traveller should instantly depart from the neighbourhood of Sego; but that Mansong, wishing to relieve the distresses of a white man, had sent him five thousand kowries*, to enable him to proceed on his journey: and if Jennē was his place of destination, he (the messenger) would conduct him to Sansanding.

Mr. Park was at first puzzled at the king's behaviour, but after some conversation with the guide, he had reason to believe that Mansong would have had no objection to admitting him into his presence at Sego, had he not been apprehensive that he might not have been able to protect him against the inveterate malice of the Moorish inhabitants: his conduct therefore was prudent and liberal. This benevolent prince thought it sufficient, that a white man was found in his dominions in great distress, and that no other plea was necessary to entitle the sufferer to his bounty.

SECT. VIII.

Departure from Sego to Kabba—Description of the Shea or Butter Tree—The Traveller proceeds to Sansanding—Arrives at Modiboo—Kea—Embarks for Moorzan—Conveyed across the Niger to Silla.

HAVING been compelled to leave Sego, Mr. Park was conducted, the same evening, to a village at the distance of about seven miles, where he and his guide were favourably received.

* Kowries are small shells, which pass current as money in many parts of the East Indies as well as in Africa. Mr. Park estimates about two hundred and fifty kowries equal to one shilling.

Our

Our traveller had acquired a considerable knowledge of the Bambarra tongue, and could speak it with a tolerable degree of fluency. The guide, who was friendly and communicative, expatiated on the hospitality of his countrymen, but informed our traveller, that if he was determined to go to Jennē, he had undertaken a very dangerous enterprize; that the town, though nominally a part of Mansong's dominions, was in reality a city of the Moors, and that the governor and principal inhabitants were Bushreens. He further informed him, that the places beyond Jennē were still more under the Moorish influence; and that Tombuctoo was wholly in the possession of these savages, who permitted no Christians to reside among them. But not choosing to return on such vague information, he proceeded with his guide on the 24th, and passed a large town named Kabba, situated in the midst of a fine cultivated country. The people were employed in collecting the fruit of shea-trees, from which they prepare the vegetable butter: these trees grow naturally in the woods, and in very great abundance; they resemble the American Oak, and the fruit, of which the butter is prepared, is not unlike a Spanish olive: "The kernel," says Mr. Park "is enveloped in a sweet pulp, under a thin green rind; and the butter produced from it, besides the advantage of its keeping the whole year, without salt, is whiter, firmer, and, to my palate, of a richer flavour than the best butter I ever tasted made from cow's-milk. The growth and preparation of this commodity, seem to be among the first objects of African industry, in this and the neighbouring states; and it constitutes a main article of their inland commerce."

After passing through several villages, Mr. Park and his conductor arrived at Sansanding, a very large town, containing about ten thousand inhabitants, much resorted to by the Moors, who get gold dust and cotton cloth, in exchange for coral, beads, and salt. Our traveller requested his guide to conduct him, in the most private manner, to a temporary abode: in consequence of which they rode between the town and the river. He was happy to find that all the Negro inhabitants took him for a Moor, under which character he would probably have passed unmolested, had not a Moor, who was sitting by the river-side, discovered the mistake; and, making a loud exclamation, occasioned many of his countrymen to assemble.

When our traveller arrived at the house of the Dooty, numbers of people surrounded him, speaking a variety of dialects. When the substance of what had been spoken was mentioned by the guide, who acted as interpreter, it appeared, that one of the Moors pretended to have seen him at one place, and another at some other place. A Moorish woman even swore that she had kept his house three years at Gallam, on the river Senegal. Mr. Park, supposing they had mistaken him for some other person, requested he would point towards the place where they had seen him. They pointed south. After a number of assertions and observations, one of the multitude started up, and swore by the prophet, if Mr. Park refused to go to the mosque, he would assist in carrying him there.

At length the Dooty interposed in our traveller's behalf, and informed the Moors that he would not suffer the king's stranger to be ill treated, whilst he was under his protection, but in the morning he should be dismissed. Their clamour was somewhat silenced by this address, but they insisted upon Mr. Park's ascending a high seat near the door of the mosque, that he might be exposed to every one. Here he sat till sun-set, when he was conducted to a small hut, the door of which was shut, that he might not be disturbed by the Moors. Many of them, however, climbed over the mud-wall, expecting to see the white man eat eggs, and perform his evening devotions. Convinced, at last, of the falsity of many improbable tales which had been insisted on, the Dooty admitted that Mr. Park would willingly partake of any proper food that might be offered him, and ordered a sheep to be killed, that part of it might be dressed for his supper.

About midnight, when the Moors had left our adventurer, this hospitable man visited him, and entreated him to write him a saphie, observing, that "If a Moor's saphie is good, a white man's certainly must be better." Mr. Park furnished him with one containing the Lord's Prayer, with a reed for a pen, ink manufactured from charcoal and gum-water, and instead of paper, a thin board was substituted.

Early in the morning Mr. Park left Sansanding, after which nothing particular occurred till the 27th, when he arrived at Nyara, where the Dooty resided in a house two stories high. He produced to Mr. Park some gun-powder of his own manufacturing, and exhibited, as a curiosity, a little

a little brown monkey, which he said had been conveyed to him from a distant country, called Kough. Reaching Nyamee on the 28th, the Dooty sent his son on horseback to conduct our adventurer to Modiboo, a town at no considerable distance. Riding through the woods, the guide frequently stopped to examine the bushes; assigning as a reason, that the lions were very numerous, and frequently attacked travellers. A large animal of the camelopard kind, was about this time perceived by Mr. Park, standing at a little distance; the neck and fore-legs were very long, the head was furnished with two short horns, turning backwards; and the tail, extending to the ham joint, had a tuft of hair at the end; the colour resembling that of a mouse. The animal moved from them with a slow trot, occasionally turning its head to see if it was pursued. Shortly after, as the travellers were advancing, they saw a large red lion at a short distance, with his head couched between his fore-paws. The Foulah suddenly exclaimed, "God preserve us!" and Mr. Park, expecting he would instantly spring upon him, prepared to throw himself on the ground, that his horse might become the victim rather than himself; but, from his not being hungry at that time, or some other cause, he suffered the terrified beholders to pass without molestation. To avoid any more of these alarming encounters, they took a circuitous route through some swampy ground, and at sun-set arrived at Modiboo *.

Early in the morning Mr. Park was hurried away by the Dooty, but not without furnishing him with a guide to Kea. Though weak, and incapable of walking, his horse was still less capable of carrying him; after proceeding about six miles, in crossing some clayey ground, he fell, and was unable to rise. His master, finding all endeavours to get him on his legs entirely useless, took off his saddle and bridle, and placed some grass before him; at the same time indulging the melancholy apprehension, that he should speedily be in as miserable a state; he then left the poor animal to his fate, and reluctantly followed his guide on foot. Proceeding along the bank of the river till about noon, he arrived at Kea, a small fishing village, where the Dooty, a surly old man, gave him a very cool reception. When Mr. Park solicited his protection with great humility, and mentioned the circumstances of his unfortunate situation, he laconically replied, that he was not to be won by fine speeches, and that he should not enter his house.

In this dilemma, and without an apparent chance of procuring a place of rest, a fishing canoe came down the river; when the Dooty condescended to wave his hand to the fisherman, and desired him to conduct the stranger to Moozan. The fisherman having no objection, Mr. Park embarked in the canoe with him, his wife, and a boy. The guide returned to Modiboo. When the canoe had proceeded about a mile down the river, the master of it paddled to the bank, and desired our traveller to get out; he then tied the canoe to a stake, stripped, and dived under the water, where he continued such a length of time, that the European supposed he had actually drowned himself, and was astonished that his wife was so patient an observer of such a calamity; but he suddenly raised up his head astern of the canoe, and called for a rope. With this rope he plunged a second time into the water, and then placed himself in the canoe, and the boy assisted him in pulling. At length a large basket made its appearance; it was about ten feet in diameter, and contained two fine fish, which the fisherman took ashore, and concealed in the grass.

After returning the basket into the water, they proceeded a little further down, and took up another basket, containing one fish. The fisherman now left them that he might take his prizes to market; and the woman, the boy, and Mr. Park, went down the river in the canoe. About four they reached Moorzan, a town on the northern bank; whence Mr. Park was conveyed across the river to the large town of Sylla. Here he continued under a tree till it was quite dark, surrounded by many hundreds of people; when, after much entreaty, the Dooty permitted him to enter his balloon, that he might be sheltered

* This is a delightful village on the banks of the Niger, commanding an extensive view of that river. Here fish are caught in great abundance, with large cotton nets, which are used like the common nets in Europe. Crocodiles also are found here, that are not often dangerous; but swarms of musketoes, arising from the swamps and creeks, harass the most torpid of the natives; Mr. Park usually passed the night without shutting his eyes, these tormenting insects were so intolerable; their stings occasioned immoderate blisters on the arms and legs.

from

from the rain, but the place was so extremely damp, that the symptoms of fever he had before experienced were now increased.

Exhausted with sickness, hunger, and fatigue, half-naked, and destitute of every article of value to barter for provision, clothes, or lodging, he began seriously to reflect on his situation; he was now convinced that the obstacles to his further progress were insurmountable. The kowries which remained of the king of Bambarra's present, would not enable him to hire a canoe for any considerable distance, and he had little hopes of supporting himself by charity in a country where the Moors have so much influence. He had made every effort to execute his mission in its fullest extent, which prudence could justify. Had there been the most distant prospect of a successful termination, neither the hardships of the journey, nor the dangers of a second captivity, would have forced him to desist.

Having determined to return, our traveller collected what information he could obtain of the further course of the Niger eastward, and the kingdoms in its vicinage, from the Moorish and Negro traders. The particulars of which Mr. Park mentions, but as he could not possibly vouch for their authenticity, they cannot with propriety be admitted here.

SECTION IX.

The Author arrives at Modiboo—Is much incommoded in Travelling—King of Bambarra sends Persons to apprehend him—Incidents on the Road—Arrives at Taffara, &c.

MR. PARK now informed the Dooty of his intention to return to Sego, and signified his determination of travelling along the southern side of the river; but the Dooty informed him that the number of creeks and swamps on that side, would not permit him to take that route; and even the route on the northern bank was then impassable, from the overflowing of the river. By the Dooty's recommendation, however, our traveller was conveyed to Moorzan in a canoe. Here he hired another for sixty kowries, which conducted him to Kea, where, for forty kowries more, he was permitted to sleep in the same hut with one of the Dooty's slaves. This poor Negro, perceiving the emaciated and ragged state of his companion, humanely lent him a large piece of cloth to cover him during the night *.

Passing on, in friendly conversation, they soon perceived the footsteps of a lion in the mud; when the Negro insisted that Mr. Park should walk before him. The latter begged to be excused, and afterwards absolutely refused, alledging that he was unacquainted with the road. Displeased at our traveller's behaviour, the Negro, after some menacing language, accompanied with looks of vengeance, threw down the saddle, and left him. Mr. Park, giving up all hopes of ever obtaining a horse, threw the saddle into the river. The Negro seeing this transaction, jumped into the river, brought out the saddle, and ran away with it. Mr. Park continued his course alone, and reached Modiboo in the afternoon, when he perceived that his guide had got there before him; who, expecting his conduct would be censured, restored the saddle he had taken. Our traveller had also the satisfaction of finding his horse alive.

Departing from Modiboo on the first of August, Mr. Park proceeded to Nyamee, driving his horse before him. There he remained three days, on account of the incessant rain. On the 5th he set out, but the country was so deluged, that he was continually in danger of losing the road, and was obliged to wade across creeks for miles together, knee-deep in water. In the evening

* The next morning Mr. Park accompanied the Dooty's brother to Modiboo, who engaged to carry his saddle, which he had before left at Kea. Proceeding about a mile to the westward, they observed a considerable number of earthen jars, piled up on the bank of the river; they were ingeniously formed, but not glazed. Approaching them, the Dooty's brother plucked up a handful of grass, which he threw upon them, intimating that our traveller ought to do the same, which he accordingly did. The Negro then informed him, with a very serious countenance, that these jars belonged to some supernatural power, and were first seen on the spot they now occupied about two years ago; and that every traveller as he passed them, manifested his respect to the invisible proprietor, by throwing some herbage on them to protect them from the rain.

he arrived at Nyara, from whence he departed on the 7th, and reached the small village of Nemaboo.

Mr. Park was anxious to procure a fellow-traveller, and, after many enquiries, a Moor and his wife who were going to Sego, agreed to take him with them. They set out on the morning of the 9th, riding on bullocks, but they were wholly unacquainted with the road. Instead of wading before the animals to examine if the ground was solid, the woman boldly entered the first swamp, riding upon the top of the load, but before she had proceeded two hundred yards, the bullock sunk into a hole, and threw both the load and the woman among the reeds; the husband seemed to feel for the misfortune of his wife, but was not very active in yielding her assistance. About sun-set they arrived at Sibity, but the Dooty received our traveller very cooly; and when he solicited for a guide to Sansanding, he received an insulting answer, signifying that his people were better engaged. He passed the night in a damp old hut, which he expected would fall in upon him in the course of the night, the walls and roof being so softened by the rain, which still continued. Our adventurer being now refused provisions by the Dooty, purchased some corn for himself and his horse to feed upon.

Being compelled to leave Sibity, he set out for Sansanding, expecting to receive no better treatment, it being generally supposed that he had come to Bambarra as a spy; and as Mansong had refused him audience, all the Dooties were at liberty to treat him as they pleased. He reached Sansanding at sun-set, where his reception was such as he predicted. Counti Mamadi, who had formerly been so kind to him, saw him with indifference, and every one endeavoured to avoid him. Counti Mamadi himself came to him privately at ten o'clock, and informed him, that Mansong had dispatched a canoe to Jenné to bring him back; he therefore advised him to quit Sansanding before day-break, and not to stop at any town near Sego. He accordingly left that place on the 12th, and proceeded to Kabba.

On approaching the town, he saw a number of people assembled at the gate, one of which ran towards him, and taking his horse by the bridle, led him round the walls of the town; then pointing to the west, ordered him to go along, if he regarded his safety. Our traveller hesitating at this intelligence, several other persons advanced, and urged his departure in the strongest terms. He now began to suspect that some of the king's messengers were in the town in search of him, and that these Negroes, from motives of humanity, were anxious for his escape; he therefore took the road for Sego, and passing a small village, where he was refused admittance, and threatened with flagellation, he proceeded to another, where the Dooty permitted him to sleep in a large balloon. In the corner of this place a kiln was constructed for drying the fruit of the shea tree: it contained a considerable quantity of fruit, under which a clear fire was kept, which, it was said, would be ready for pounding and boiling in three days. The butter thus manufactured is preferred by some to that prepared from fruit, and dried in the sun.

About ten on the 13th, Mr. Park arrived at a small village near Sego, where he petitioned, in vain, for provisions. He was again treated with contempt, and informed that Mansong had dispatched persons to apprehend him; and the Dooty's son assured him that he had no time to lose if he wished to escape. Our traveller was now fully convinced of the danger of his situation, and resolved to keep at a distance from Sego. He mounted his horse, and taking the road to Diggani till he lost sight of the village, struck to the westward. About noon he halted under a tree, to consider of some plan of proceeding, and formed a resolution of passing along the Niger, to observe how far that river was navigable. A little before sun-set he arrived at the Foulah village of Soobo, where, for two hundred kowries, he purchased a lodging for the night. On the 14th he passed a walled town called Kamalia, and rode through a large market-town named Samee: he passed through the midst of the multitude without being particularly noticed, every one supposing him to be a Moor. In the afternoon he reached Binni, a small village, where the Dooty's son, in consideration of one hundred kowries, agreed that he should remain for the night; but the Dooty afterwards insisted upon his leaving the place immediately; and had not the wife and son exerted themselves in his behalf, he must certainly have complied.

About noon Mr. Park entered the village of Kaimo,

Kaimo *, on the bank of a river, where he unsuccessfully endeavoured to purchase some corn, that article having become extremely scarce throughout the country; but when he was about to depart, a villager brought him some as a present, asking in return his blessing upon him. With this request our adventurer readily complied, and the villager received it with many grateful acknowledgments. Upon this corn our traveller made a meal, though it was the third successive day that he had lived entirely upon that article. In the evening he arrived at Song, a small village, where the unfeeling inhabitants would not permit him to enter the gate; but hearing that lions were numerous in the adjoining woods, he resolved to pass the night in the vicinity of the town, and took his repose under a tree near the entrance. In the night he was alarmed with the hollow roar of a lion at no considerable distance, and climbed the tree for safety. He had before attempted to open the gate, and on being ordered to desist, informed the people of his danger. Moved by compassion, however, they at length permitted him to come in.

On the 16th Mr. Park proceeded on his journey, and passed a town called Jabbee, in which there was a mosque. He found it very disagreeable travelling, occasioned by the overflow of the river, and in crossing a swamp, sunk suddenly into a deep pit, from which he could with difficulty recover himself; both the horse and the rider were completely covered with mud. About noon our adventurer stopped at a village near Yamina, where he purchased some corn, and dried himself. Yamina was formerly a conſiderable town, and is now a place of some importance, but as it is much frequented by the Moors, he did not think it safe to lodge in it, and rode briskly through it: the people indeed looked at him with astonishment, but he did not give them time to ask many questions; he arrived at Farra in the evening, where he procured a lodging. The next day he passed Balaba, a small town, and afterwards beheld the ruins of three other towns, the inhabitants of which had been carried away by Daisy, king of Kaarta. In the evening he reached Kanica, where the Dooty, sitting on an elephant's hide, received him kindly, and gave him some milk and meal for his supper.

Mistaking his road on the 18th, he discovered his error when he ascended an eminence, and observed the Niger considerably to the left. Directing his course towards it, through bushes and long grass, he came to a small rapid stream, which he supposed to be a branch of the Niger; but on examining it more attentively, he found it to be a distinct river, which the road evidently crossed (a pathway appearing on the opposite side). He sat down on the bank, expecting some traveller might arrive, and explain to him the situation of the ford. No traveller, however, arriving, and the clouds menacing rain, he resolved to enter the river a little above the pathway, in order to reach the farther side before the stream had impelled him too far down. He then fastened his clothes upon the saddle, and standing up to his neck in the water, was pulling the horse by the bridle to make him follow; when a man, who accidentally arrived, exclaimed with great vehemence, "come out! or you and your horse will be devoured by the alligators!"

Mr. Park obeyed, and the stranger, who had never before seen a white man, seemed exceedingly astonished, saying in a low tone of voice, "God preserve me! who is this?" But finding he could speak the Bambarra tongue, and that he was travelling the same way with himself, he promised to assist him in crossing the stream, the name of which was Frina. Then calling aloud to some person, who answered from the other side, a canoe conducted by two boys appeared, advancing from among the reeds. Mr. Park and himself, in consideration of fifty kowries, was ferried over the river, and in the evening arrived at Taffara, where he found the language of the people was pure Mandingo, without any mixture of the corrupted dialect of Bambarra.

SECT.

* On the 15th, he passed Sai, a large town, surrounded with two very deep trenches. On the top of the trenches are a number of square towers, and the whole appeared like a regular fortification. Desirous of knowing the meaning of this extraordinary entrenchment, Mr. Park obtained the following particulars. About sixteen years ago, when the king of Bambarra's father desolated Maniana, the Dooty of Sai had two sons slain in the battle, fighting in his service. He had a third alive, and when the king demanded a further reinforcement, this youth, among the rest, was demanded, and the Dooty refused to send him. This conduct so irritated the king, that when he returned from Maniana, and found the Dooty protected by the inhabitants of Sai, he sat down before the town with his whole army, and surrounded

SECTION X.

Inhospitable Reception at Taffara—A Negro Funeral at Sooha—The Author proceeds to Koolikorro—Supports himself by writing Saphies—Reaches Maraboo—Kindly treated at Kooma—Is robbed and stripped by Banditti.

ON his arrival at Taffara, Mr. Park was informed that the Dooty had died a few days before, and that the principal inhabitants were then electing another. He assured them that he should continue there but one night, and that Mansong had furnished him with kowries to pay for his lodging. No attention was, however, paid to his application, no person invited him in, and he was obliged to sit alone under the Bentang tree, exposed to a violent tornado, which continued till midnight; when the stranger, whose information had enabled him to cross the water, paid him a visit, and invited him to supper, producing provision which he had brought to the door of the hut. After partaking of this friendly repast, our traveller slept upon some wet grass in the corner of a court. His horse was less fortunate than himself, for his corn was all consumed, and he could not procure a supply *.

Proceeding on his journey the 21st, he passed the villages of Kayoo and Toolumbo, and arrived at Maraboo. He was accommodated at the house of a Kaartan, who, from his hospitality to strangers, acquired the name of *Jatee*, the landlord, and his house was considered as a public inn for the reception of all travellers. Those who had property were well lodged and attended, and they were liberal in their acknowledgements; but those who had nothing to give, were satisfied with what he thought proper to afford them; and, as Mr. Park could not reckon himself a monied man, he took up his lodging in the same hut with seven poor fellows who had arrived from Kanaaba in a canoe; their landlord, however, indulged them with some provision.

On the 22d Mr. Park was misled, either from ignorance or design, by relying on an erroneous direction; and the mistake was not discovered till the day was far advanced, when coming to a

it with the trenches that he had now seen. After a siege of two months, the people of the town were oppressed with famine; aad the king's army, feasting in the trenches, faw the wretched inhabitants of Sai devour the leaves and bark of the bentang tree, that stood in the middle of the town. Finding, however, that the besicged would rather perish than surrender, recourse was had to treachery. The king assured them that if they would open the gates, no person should be slain or injured but the Dooty. The poor old man, willing to sacrifice himself for his fellow citizens, calmly walked over to the king's army, where he was instantly put to death. His son, attempting to escape, was taken and murdered in the trenches, and the people of the town were sold to the different Negro traders.

* Passing the town of Jeba on the 20th, he stopped at a village named Sominoo, where he procured some coarse food, prepared from the husks of corn, called Boo. About two he arrived at Sooha, where the Dooty refused either to give or sell him provisions. Mr. Park had the curiosity to stop a short time, to survey the countenance of this inhospitable man, to learn the cause of his malignity. The Dooty ordered his slave to dig a hole in the ground, and while he was performing this task, the Dooty kept muttering and talking to himself, repeatedly pronouncing the words, "good for nothing,"—"a real plague," &c. Our traveller, supposing these expressions could only be applied to himself, and as the pit resembled a grave, he thought it prudent to mount his horse; and was preparing to decamp, when the slave, who had just repaired to the village, returned with the dead body of a boy about nine years of age, holding it carelessly by a leg and an arm, and with a savage indifference threw it into the pit. While he was covering the body, the Dooty often repeated, "money lost," which induced our traveller to suppose that the boy had been one of his slaves.

Departing from this strange scene, Mr. Park arrived at Kollikorri, a large town, and a considerable market for salt. Here he was admitted into the house of a Bambarran, who had formerly been the slave of a Moor, and in that character had travelled through many parts of Africa. His knowledge of the world had not banished all the superstitious notions respecting saphies and charms; for, when he heard that his guest was a christian, he brought out his writing board, and promised to dress Mr. Park a delicious supper of rice, if he would write him a saphie to protect him from wicked men. Our traveller instantly began to write, and completely filled the board with the composition; and the landlord, to entitle himself to the whole force of the charm, washed the writing off into a calabash with some water, and having repeated several prayers over it, drank this potent draught, licking the board quite dry after this wonderful beverage. As saphie writing was of too much consequence to be long concealed, information was conveyed to the Dooty that such a man was in town, in consequence of which he dispatched his son with half a sheet of writing paper, requesting Mr. Park, to write him a charm to procure wealth. He brought as a present, some meal and milk; and when the saphie was finished, and read aloud to him, he appeared much delighted with his bargain, and furnished our traveller with milk for breakfast the next morning.

deep

deep creek, and foreseeing that he could not possibly reach Bammacoo before night, he resolved to cross it; and, leading his horse to the brink, he pushed him into the water, having first taken the bridle between his teeth, and swam to the other side. He continued travelling, through high grass, and without any regular road, till he came to the river, the banks of which were rocky, and the roar of the water tremendous. The king of Bambarra's canoes, however, frequently pass by, keeping close to the bank, where persons on shore are stationed with ropes fastened to the canoe, and others push it forward with long poles. Quitting the banks, and passing on towards the mountains, our traveller arrived at Frookaboo, where he slept.

The next day he reached Bammacoo, a small town, but inhabited by wealthy persons: when the Moors bring their salt through Kaarta and Bambarra, they usually stop at this place, and the Negro merchants purchase it in large quantities, deriving great profits from retailing it. Here Mr. Park slept at the house of a Sera-Woolli Negro, and was visited by several Moors, who treated him with great civility. One of them, who had travelled to Rio Grande, spoke very respectfully of the christians, and in the evening sent our traveller some boiled rice and milk; he was also very communicative respecting the road, and enumerated several places that lay in the way to the Gambia; but positively asserted that the road was impassable at this season of the year, and as there were no canoes large enough to receive our adventurer's horse, he could not possibly get him over for some months to come.

This was very unwelcome intelligence to Mr. Park, who had no money to maintain himself even for a few days. He consulted with his landlord on the disagreeable dilemma to which he was reduced; his host informed him there was another road, deemed almost impassable, through Sibidooloo, which might be ventured upon with a careful guide. Being afterwards informed that a singing man was about to set out for Sibidooloo, our traveller agreed to accompany him. But the musical fellow-traveller conducted him a wrong way, the horse-road being on the other side of the hill; Mr. Park therefore rode back to the level ground, leaving his singing guide to proceed to Sibidooloo by the rocky foot-path.

Soon after Mr. Park had returned to the place of starting, and entered upon what he supposed to be the proper road, some shepherds confirmed him in his opinion, that he was in the regular road to Sibidooloo. In the evening he arrived at a romantic village called Kooma, situated in a delightful valley; and is the sole property of a rich Mandingo merchant. The harmless villagers surrounded Mr. Park, proposing a number of questions about his country, and supplied him with milk and corn for himself, and grass for his horse; their kindness was so boundless, that they even kindled a fire in the hut destined for his repose. On the 25th he left Kooma, accompanied by two shepherds, who were pursuing the same route; but as his horse was slow and feeble, the shepherds walked forward, and were considerably advanced. At about eleven o'clock, as Mr. Park stopped to drink a little water at a rivulet, he heard some people calling to each other, and afterwards a loud screaming, as from a person in extreme distress: he directed his course to the spot whence the noise proceeded, and saw one of the shepherds lying near the road, on the long grass. When our adventurer came close to him, he informed him, in a whisper, that an armed party had seized upon his companion, and two arrows had been levelled at him as he was attempting to make his escape.

Under these circumstances, Mr. Park began to consider what course it would be prudent for him to take; and, looking round, saw a man sitting on the stump of a tree, and near him six or seven persons more on the grass, with musquets in their hands. Seeing no chance of escaping, he rode towards them, hoping they were elephant hunters. Without seeming to be alarmed, he asked if they had shot any thing? Instead of answering this interrogation, one of them ordered him to dismount, but suddenly recollecting himself, permitted him to proceed. He accordingly rode on, but was soon followed by those whom he had taken for elephant-hunters, who summoned him to stop, and informed him that the king of the Foulahs had sent them to convey him, his horse, and all that belonged to him to Fooladoo. Without hesitation, Mr. Park committed himself to their custody, and they travelled together for some time before a syllable was spoken. When they came to a gloomy part of the wood, one of them said, in the Mandingo language, "This

place will do," at that instant snatching the hat from his head; another seized upon a metal button which remained upon his waistcoat, cut it off, and conveyed it to his pocket. Their intentions were now obvious: they searched Mr. Park's pockets, and examined every part of his apparel; and, to complete the business, stripped him quite naked. Whilst they were examining the plunder, he earnestly entreated them to return his pocket compass; but when he pointed it out to them on the ground, one of the banditti cocked his musket, and swore he would instantly kill him if he presumed to touch it.

One of them departed with his horse, and the remainder held a consultation whether they should leave him absolutely naked, or allow him something to shelter him from the sun. Humanity at length prevailed, they returned a pair of trowsers, and the worst of the two shirts; and, on their departure, one of them threw back his hat, in the crown of which his memorandums were contained *.

Mr. Park, without regarding hunger and fatigue, cheerfully travelled forwards, confident that relief was at hand: and he was not disappointed. Arriving at a small village, he overtook the two shepherds who had set out with him from Kooma. They were much astonished at seeing him, not doubting that the Foulahs had murdered as well as robbed him. From this village the travellers passed over some rocky ridges, and arrived at Sibdiooloo about sun-set.

SECTION XI.

Government of Manding—The Author's Reception by the Mansa—Recovers his Horse and Clothes—Journey to Kamalia—The Author's kind Reception by Karfa Taura—Determines to remain and accompany Karfa.

SIBIDOOLOO, the frontier town of Manding, is situated in a fertile valley, environed with rocky hills. When Mr. Park entered the town, the people gathered round him, and he was presented to the Dooty, or chief man, who is here called Mansa. He related to him the circumstances of the robbery, and the story was confirmed by the two shepherds. The Mansa, after attentively listening to the particulars of this charge, desired our traveller to sit down, and he should have every thing restored to him—I have sworn it. Then addressing himself to an attendant, he said, " Give the white man a glass of water; and at the dawn of day go over the hills, and inform the Dooty of Bammakoo, that a poor white man, the king of Bambarra's stranger, had been robbed by the people of Fooladoo."

He thanked the Mansa for his kindness, and accepted his invitation to remain with him till the return of the messenger; but receiving no intelligence of his horse or clothes in the course of two days, and provisions being extremely scarce, he was unwilling to be any longer an incumbrance to his host, and begged permission to depart. The Mansa advised him to go to a town called Wonda, and remain there till he had heard some account of his horse and his other property. He accordingly repaired to Wonda, which is a small town surrounded with a high wall, and containing a mosque. Here he obtained a lodging in an open shed; which served also as a school for the Mansa, who was himself a Mahometan teacher †.

On the 6th of September our adventurer received

* After the banditti disappeared, our adventurer sat for some time in silent terror and amazement. Nothing but dangers and difficulties now presented themselves. He saw himself in the midst of a vast wilderness, in the rainy reason, naked and alone, encompassed by savage animals, and men still more savage. To heighten his distress, he was five hundred miles from the nearest European settlement: all these circumstances at once crowding upon his imagination, his spirits began to fail him. He could not perceive a glimpse of consolation; he considered his fate as certain, and that he had no alternative but to lie down and perish. The influence of religion, however, supported him. Though a stranger in a strange land, he was still under the protecting eye of that providence who has declared himself the stranger's friend.

† All the little apparel that he was possessed of, would not protect him from the sun by day, nor the dews and musketoes by night. His fever returned with great violence, ac-

ceived his horse and clothes, from two persons arrived from Sibidooloo; but the compass was broken to pieces. As the horse was grazing near the brink of a well, the ground gave way, and he fell in; but, by the assistance of the inhabitants of the village, he was recovered, and restored to the owner. The poor annimal was now a mere skeleton, and incapable of further labour; he therefore presented him to his landlord, requesting him to send the saddle and bridle to the Mansa of Sibidooloo, as an acknowledgment for his kindness and attention. On the 7th, he thought it necessary, infirm as he was, to take leave of his hospitable landlord, who presented him with a spear, as a token of remembrance, and a leather bag to contain his clothes.

Converting his boots into sandals, being more suitable to his pedestrian journey, he slept that night at a village named Ballanti. On the 9th he reached Nemacoo, where no provision was to be obtained, the inhabitants themselves being actually on the point of starving. On the 10th a Negro trader, named Modi Lemina Taura, brought him some food, and promised to conduct him to his residence at Kennyetoo, the following day. In the journey to Kennyetoo, Mr. Park sprained his ancle, and was unable to proceed; in consequence of which the trader kindly invited him to stop a few days with him. He accordingly remained at his house till the 14th, when he found himself considerably relieved: On the 15th he arrived at Dosita, where he remained one day; and on the 17th proceeded to Mansia, a town of some importance, where small quantities of gold are sometimes collected. The Mansa of this town, though reputed to be inhospitable, sent him a supper of corn; from whom, however, he demanded a present in return; and on Mr. Park's assuring him he had nothing valuable in his possession, he jocularly replied, that his white skin should not protect him if he told him lies. He then conducted him to a small hut, in which he might repose for the night; but, taking away his spear, promised it should be returned in the morning.

This circumstance giving birth to our traveller's suspicion, he secretly prevailed upon one of the inhabitants to sleep with him, and bring his bow and arrow. The request was complied with, and about midnight several attempts were made to enter the hut; but were prevented by Mr. Park and the Negro; the latter, on looking out, saw it was the Mansa himself. In the morning, as soon as it was light, the Negro went to the Mansa's house, and brought away the spear; after which, fearing the Mansa should devise some means to detain him, he departed before he was awake.

About two on the 16th, Mr. Park reached Kamalia, a small town, in the neighbourhood of which gold is collected in considerable quantities. The Bushreens live apart from the Kafirs, and have built their huts in a scattered manner at some distance from the town. The mosque, or missura, is nothing more than a square piece of ground, levelled, and surrounded with trunks of trees projecting towards the east, where the Marraboo, or priest stands when he calls the people to prayers. Such mosques are common among the converted Negroes; but, having neither walls nor roof, can only be used in fine weather.

Mr. Park proceeded to the house of a Bushreen, named Karfa Taura, the brother of his hospitable landlord at Kennyetoo, who was employed in collecting slaves to sell on the Gambia; to whom he was reading from a book written in the Arabic tongue. He asked our traveller if he understood it, and being answered in the negative, desired one of the slatees to fetch the little curious book, which had been conveyed thither from the western

accompanied by many alarming symptoms, and he could procure no medicine to impede its progress. He remained at Wonda nine days, and endeavoured to conceal his illness and distress from his landlord, and frequently lay down the whole day, yet he knew that the Mansa was no stranger to his situation; for one morning, when he pretended to be asleep as he sat by the fire, he heard the Mansa say to his wife, that they should probably find him a very troublesome guest; for that, in his present deplorable state, they must be obliged to maintain him till he recovered or died, or forfeit their good name.

The scarcity of provisions was now severely felt by the poor: the Mansa was generally attended by five or six women in an evening, who came to receive a certain quantity of corn, which Mr. Park at first imagined was delivered out from motives of charity. He enquired of the Mansa whether he supported these women from pure bounty, or whether he expected a return after the next harvest. "Observe that boy," replied the Mansa; pointing to a child, who appeared to be about five years of age, "His mother has sold him to me for forty days' provision, for herself and the rest of the family, and I have purchased another boy on the same terms." Our traveller was much affected with this melancholy circumstance; but afterwards observing, that when the mother came to receive her corn, she conversed with her boy with as much cheerfulness as if he had still been the sole object of her tenderness, his astonishment abated.

country.

country. The man accordingly obeyed, and our traveller was equally surprised and delighted to find this little volume, the "Book of Common Prayer," which is used in the English establishment. Kafir expressed much satisfaction at Mr. Park's being able to read it, as some of the slatees who had seen Europeans on the coast, observing a yellow tinge upon his skin (which was merely the effect of illness) would not admit that he was a white man, but suspected him to be some Arab in disguise. Karfa, however, was perfectly convinced that our traveller was no impostor, and promised him every assistance in his power: at the same time he thought it necessary to inform him, that it would be impossible to cross the Jalonka wilderness for some months, as no less than eight rapid rivers lay in the way.

He added that he himself intended to set out for Gambia with a caravan of slaves, as soon as the rivers were fordable, and the grass burnt; and invited Mr. Park to stay and accompany him, observing that when a caravan could not travel through the country, it would be an act of insanity for a single man to attempt it. Our traveller admitted the propriety of his remark, but assured him he had no alternative; for, being destitute of money, he must either support himself by asking alms of the benevolent from place to place, or absolutely perish for hunger.

Karfa now looked earnestly upon him, and asked him if he could eat the common food of the country? Humanely adding, that if he would continue with him till the rains were over, he would safely conduct him to the Gambia, and procure him food and lodging: and after their arrival there, he would be satisfied with any return he might be able to make. Mr. Park readily agreed to give him the value of one prime slave. Karfa then ordered a hut to be immediately swept for his accommodation. Thus was he delivered, by the benevolent attention of this Negro, from a situation truly deplorable. In the hut, destined for the repose of our traveller, a mat was provided to sleep on, an earthen jar for holding water, and a small calabash to facilitate his drinking: Karfa regularly supplied him with two meals a-day from his own habitation; and ordered his slaves to furnish him with fire-wood and water. A return of his fever, however, alarmed him considerably, and even his life was rendered precarious for about six weeks; during which time, his benevolent landlord came daily to enquire after his health, and to console him.

When the rains became less frequent, the fever left him; but in so debilitated a state, that he could hardly stand upright. With great difficulty indeed he carried his mat to the shade of a Tamarind-tree, not far from his abode, where he enjoyed the refreshing fragrance of the corn-fields, and delighted his eyes with a prospect of the country. At length he found his health gradually recovering, for which he was materially indebted to the generosity and kind endeavours of his host, and his attendants *.

About the middle of December, Karfa went to collect the money due to him in his own country, to enable him to complete his purchase of slaves. For this purpose, he departed for Kancaba, a large town on the banks of the Niger, and a great slave-market. When Karfa quitted Kamalia, he proposed to return in the course of a month, and during his absence, Mr. Park was left to the care of a good old Bushreen, who was school master to the youth of Kamalia.

Mr. Park being now left alone, and at leisure to indulge his own reflections, embraced the convenient moment of extending and augmenting the observations he had before made, on the climate and productions of the country; for, having become stationary among them, he had acquired a more perfect knowledge of the natives, than it was possible for him to obtain during a transient survey in his perilous journey. He intended also to collect what information he could, respecting those im-

* Many of the slatees who resided at Kamalia, having dissipated their wealth by extravagance, became now dependent upon Karfa's bounty; in consequence of which they beheld our adventurer with an envious eye, and fabricated ridiculous and degrading stories to lessen him in Karfa's esteem; but the hospitable landlord, wisely conceiving from what source these malicious calumnies proceeded, treated them with contempt, and pursued his plan with unabated kindness. Being one day conversing with some slaves which this slatee had brought, one of them asked Mr. Park to give him some victuals. The latter replied, that he was a stranger, and had none to give. "I gave you food," says the slave, "when you was hungry. Have you forgot the man who brought you milk at Karrankalla. But (added he with a sigh), *the irons were not then upon my legs!*" Mr. Park immediately recollected him, from this circumstance, and procured some ground nuts for him from Karfa, as a poor acknowledgment of his former kindness. The wretched captive informed our traveller that he had been taken by the Bambarrans, after the battle at Joka, and sent to Sego; where he had been purchased by his present master, who was conveying him to Kaajaga.

portant

portant branches of African commerce, the trade for gold, ivory, and slaves. Such was his employment during the remainder of his residence at Kamalia, the result of which he has faithfully communicated in the following pages.

SECTION XII.

The Climate, and Seasons—Winds, Vegetable Productions—Population—Character and Disposition of the Mandingoes—Their Manners, Customs, Marriages, &c.

IN Mr. Park's route, both in going and returning, he found the climate extremely hot, but no where did he find it so intense as in the camp of Benown, though the very northern extremity of his travels in Africa. In some parts, indeed, where the country rises into acclivities, the air is comparatively cool; but none of the regions he visited could properly be called mountainous. About the middle of June, the sultry atmosphere is agitated by violent gusts of wind, called Tornadoes, accompanied with rain and thunder. *The rainy season* is thus ushered in, which continues till the month of November; the diurnal showers being very heavy, and the prevailing winds are from the south-west. The termination of this season also experiences these violent Tornadoes; after which the wind shifts to the north-east, and blows from that quarter during the remainder of the year. When the wind sets in for the north-east, a wonderful alteration is rapidly produced in the face of the country; the rivers quickly subside, and many of the trees are stripped of their verdant foliage*.

Though many species of the edible roots which grow in the West-India Islands, are found in Africa, our traveller declares, that he never saw the sugar-cane, coffee, or cocoa-tree; with the pine-apple, and other delicious fruits. A few orange and banane trees were observed near the mouth of the Gambia, which were probably introduced by the Portuguese.

The banks of the Gambia, Senegal, and many

* The *Harmatan*, a dry parching wind, is usually the consequence of this season, attended with a smoky haze, through which the colour of the sun appears as a cloudy red. In passing over the Great Desert this wind parches up all the moisture which lies within its current. It is, however, found extremely salutary, particularly to Europeans. Mr. Park found considerable relief, both at Dr. Laidley's, and at Kamalia, during the *Harmatan*. The air, during the rainy season, has so much humidity, that clothes, trunks, and every article at any distance from the fire, becomes damp and mouldy: but this extraordinary wind braces up relaxed solids, produces a cheerful flow of spirits, and facilitates respiration. It is, indeed, accused of occasioning chaps in the lips, and of afflicting many of the natives with sore eyes.

Whenever the grass is sufficiently dry, the Negroes usually set it on fire: but in Ludamar, and some other Moorish countries, this practice is prohibited; for on this withered stubble the Moors feed their cattle till the return of rain. In the Negro countries, the grass in flames exhibits a sublime and terrific scene. In the middle of the night, which being in that latitude very dark, it represents the plains and mountains as far as the eye can reach, variegated with lines of fire; and the light reflected upon the sky, exhibited the vault of heaven as in a blaze. In the course of the day, pillars of smoke were seen in every direction; while the birds of prey, hovering around, pounced upon the lizards, snakes, and other terrified reptiles, which strove to escape from the terrors of the conflagration. By this annual burning, the air is greatly purified, a fresh verdure succeeds, and the country is rendered salubrious.

The property in the soil belongs to the king, or, in a republic, to the state. When any free individual is able to cultivate more land than he possesses, he applies to the chief man of the district, to be allowed a further quantity, who readily complies with his request, on condition that the grant shall be forfeited, if the lands are not properly cultivated within a limited time: if the condition is fulfilled, the land becomes vested in the possessor, and probably descends to his heirs. The population of Africa is inconsiderable, considering the extent and fertility of the soil, and the ease with which the land may be acquired: many extensive and beautiful districts are destitute of inhabitants. The frontiers of many of the kingdoms are either thinly inhabited, or almost in a state of desolation, The insalubrity of the air occasions many districts to be avoided.

The Negroes, though of various nations, are remarkably similar in their dispositions: The Mandingoes are a gentle race, cheerful, credulous, simple, inquisitive, and delighting in flattery: but their character is materially blemished by their propensity to stealing; they are, however, generally honest among themselves. For this part of their conduct, little can be said in extenuation, because theft is a crime in their own estimation. Let it not be forgotten, however, that the laws of the country afford no protection to *strangers* from these peculations. On this article of the Mandingan code, Mr. Park makes the following judicious remark—"If a black merchant of Hindostan were, with a box of jewels, to travel through the heart of England, and if the *laws did not protect the property of the stranger*, the wonder would not be that he was robbed of any part of his riches, but that *the first who robbed him did not rob him of all.*"

other rivers are peculiarly noxious by the swamps adjoining. The interior countries are better inhabited than the maritime.

Though our traveller suffered, in many instances, from the peculations of these people, he kindly considers them to be less a departure from their natural sense of justice, than a want of resolution to resist so very powerful a temptation*. To counterbalance this seeming depravity in their nature, he says, "It is impossible for me to forget the disinterested charity, and tender solicitude, with which many of these poor heathens sympathized with me in my sufferings, relieved my distresses, and contributed to my safety."—This last acknowledgment he admits to be "more particularly due to the female part of the nation."

The men were generally kind, though sometimes otherwise: Avarice in some, and bigotry in others, had closed up the avenues to compassion; but our traveller remembers not a single instance among the women, of unfeeling attention to the recital of his woes. In all his wretchedness, he found them uniformly kind and compassionate. He repeats what Mr. Ledyard had often said before him —"To a woman I never addressed myself, in the language of decency and friendship, without receiving a decent and friendly answer. If I was hungry, or thirsty, wet, or sick, they did not hesitate, like the men, to perform a generous action. In so free and so kind a manner did they contribute to my relief, that, if I was dry, I drank the sweetest draught, and, if hungry, I ate the coarsest morsel with a double relish."

Such amiable qualities operate, as may be imagined, more forcibly in the exercise of maternal feelings. Maternal affection is every where conspicuous among them, and ensures a correspondent return of tenderness in the child. The system of Polygamy, while it weakens the father's attachment, by dividing it among the children of several wives, concentrates all the mother's tenderness to the protection of her own offspring. Mothers are attentive to the growth, security, and vigour of the child's person; and, as far as their ideas will permit, to the improvement of its mind and heart. One of the first lessons in which the Mandingo women instruct their children, is the *practice of truth*. We have noticed the mother's consolation, on the murder of her son by a banditti, that, the poor boy in the course of his blameless life, had *never told a lie*." Such testimony, on such an occasion, must have had a powerful operation on the youthful part of the auditors†.

If, during the celebration of circumcision, or at any other time, a youth should be enamoured of one of the young damsels, his first business is to apply to her parents, and agree with them respecting the recompence to be given for the loss of their child, whose company and services they have hitherto enjoyed. The value of two slaves is a common price upon these occasions, but if the ladies should be transcendantly beautiful, the demands of the parents will proportionally increase. If the lover is able and willing to afford the sum required, he addresses the maiden with the soft accents of love, and declares his approbation of the proposed union; but her consent, on these occasions, is not required; for if her parents, in token of agreement, eat a few kolla-nuts, presented by the intended son-in-law as a ratification of the bargain, the daughter must either have the man of their choice, or endure a life of perpetual celibacy. The parents cannot even give her to any other person; should such an attempt be made, the first lover is permitted to seize her as his slave, by the laws of the country.

When the wedding-day is appointed, a select

party

* Should the reader be inclined to laugh at the temptation of brass buttons, tell him it will be a difficult task to prove that pearls and diamonds are intrinsically more valuable than brass buttons. They are merely articles of glare and gaudiness, affording no solid gratification.

† The Negro women suckle their children till they are able to walk: three years nursing is not uncommon among them; during which period the husband devotes his attention to his other wives. To this cause it may perhaps be attributed, that the family of each wife is not often numerous, rarely exceeding five or six children. The mother is not remarkably solicitous to preserve her offspring from slight falls or trivial accidents: practice soon enables the child to take care of itself, and experience supplies the place of a nurse. As the children advance in years, the boys are instructed in the labours of husbandry, and the girls are taught to spin cotton, to beat corn, and to perform all the other domestic duties. On attaining the age of puberty both sexes are circumcised, whether they are Bushreens or Cafers. The Pagans consider this painful operation less as a religious ceremony, than as an useful operation, contributing to render the marriage state prolific. A number of young persons usually submit to the performance of this rite at the same time, who for two months afterwards are exempted from all labour, and unite themselves in a society called Solimana. Parties belonging to that society visit the neighbouring towns and villages, where they enjoy themselves in festive amusements, and are regaled by the inhabitants. Mr. Park saw frequent parties of this description, who were all males; but he once beheld a female *Solimana* at Kamalia.

party are invited to be present at its celebration; when a goat or bullock is killed, and abundance of other food provided upon the occasion. At the approach of darkness, the bride is conducted into a hut, where a company of matrons assist in the arrangements of the wedding-dress, which is composed of white cotton, in such a manner, as completely to conceal the form of her whole person. Thus arrayed, she is seated upon a mat in the centre of the floor, surrounded by these friendly assistants, who instruct her, with great gravity and propriety, in the duties of the state into which she is about to enter. But this scene of instruction is frequently interrupted by girls, who entertain the company with singing and dancing, in strains and attitudes more applicable to the special occasion of their meeting, than to delicacy, chastity, and propriety.

When the bride is engaged with the matrons, the bridegroom is hospitably employed in performing offices of civility and kindness to his guests of both sexes without doors; and particularly in distributing among them small presents of *kolla-nuts*. About midnight the new-married lady is privately led by her companions, to the hut intended for her future abode; and the bridegroom, on an appointed signal, withdraws from the circle of his friends. In the morning the new-cemented pair are disturbed by the women, who assemble to inspect the nuptial sheet, and dance around it. This ceremony is so indispensably necessary, that a marriage without it is deemed invalid *.

The children of the Mandingoes are not always named after their relations, but often in consequence of some particular quality, or remarkable occurrence. A child is named when he is seven or eight days old, the ceremony of which commences by shaving the infant's head; and a dish called dega, composed of pounded corn and sour milk, is prepared for the company; if the relatives are opulent, a goat or sheep is usually added. The feast is called *Ding koon lee*. "The child's head shaving." Mr. Park was present at four feasts of this kind during his stay at Kamalia, and the ceremony was the same in each, whether the father was a Bushreen, or a Kafir. The school-master, who acted as priest on this occasion, and was a Bushreen, said a preliminary prayer over the *dega*, every person taking hold of the brim of the calabash at the same time, with his right hand; the schoolmaster then, taking the child in his arms, preferred a second prayer, imploring the blessing of God upon the child, and every person present. At the conclusion of this earnest and solemn request, he whispers a few sentences in the child's ear, spits thrice on its face, proclaiming its name with an audible voice, and returns the infant to the mother. After this ceremony was ended, the father of the child divided the dega into little balls, which he distributed among the persons present.

Besides his own proper name, every individual among the Negroes has a surname, to denote the tribe or clan to which he belongs. Salutations among the Negroes, when they meet, are punctually observed, as *are you well? good morning—my friend, &c.* and many other synonimous terms.

* The Pagan Negroes are not limited in the number of their wives. The Mahometans are, by their religion, confined to four, independent of concubines: as the husband purchases them, he generally treats them like hired servants, and exacts from them the utmost deference and submission. But though African husbands have great power over their wives, they seldom treat them with cruelty. Though the female Negroes are cheerful and unreserved, instances of infidelity among them are extremely rare. Quarrels sometimes arise among the wives, when the husbands find it necessary perhaps to administer a little corporal chastisement; but if the lady supposes herself unjustly punished, she may appeal to the chief of the town. A public trial is the consequence, on which the husbands compose the jury, who having different ideas of severity from the woman, generally make a partial award, and frequently convict the appellant of contention and strife. If she murmur at the decision of the court, recourse is had to *Mumbo Jumbo*.

SECTION XIII.

Account of the Mandingoes continued—Their Ideas respecting the Planetary Bodies—Of their religious Tenets, and particularly on a Future State—Their Diseases, and Methods of Treatment—Funeral Ceremonies—Employments—Amusements—Food—Arts, Manufactures, &c.

THE differences of the climate not inducing the natives to divide the year into four quarters, they divide it into the *dry* and *rainy seasons*, subdivide it into *moons*, and reckon the days by so many *suns*; and these are again divided into *morning*, *mid-day*, and *evening*. They declined entering upon the consideration of the sun, considering that subject beyond the reach of human investigation. But the moon, by varying her form, has much attracted their attention. On the first appearance of a new moon, both Pagans and Mahometans whisper a short prayer, the party holding up his hands before his face, implying a thanksgiving to God for his kindness during the last moon, and soliciting a continuation of it during the existence of the new one. This ceremony ended, they spit upon their hands, and rub them over their faces. The Negroes pay particular attention to the changes of the moon, and never undertake a journey, or any matter of importance in the last quarter. Eclipses they suppose to be produced by witchcraft, and that astronomy can only be studied for magical purposes. Their notions of geography are puerile; but of all countries in the world, they believe their own the best, and of all people, themselves the happiest. They lament the state of those who inhabit other less fortunate climes.

The belief of one God, and of a future state of reward and punishment, Mr. Park affirms, is universal among them. They represent the Deity as the creator and preserver of all things, but of too exalted a nature to attend to the feeble supplications of insignificant mortals. The affairs of this world they suppose are committed by him to the care of subordinate spirits, over whom certain magical ceremonies are supposed to have great influence. A white fowl, exhibited on the branch of a particular tree, a snake's head, or a small quantity of fruit, are offerings frequently presented by superstition to deprecate the wrath, or conciliate the favour of these inferior agents.

Religion is seldom the subject of their discourse, and if their opinion is requested, respecting the ideas of a future state, the question is generally evaded by the following observation, "no man knows any thing about it." The Mandingoes seldom attain a very advanced age; few among them live longer than fifty-five or sixty years; many of them are grey and wrinkled at forty. But though their lives are comparatively short, they are not subject to many diseases; simple diet and active life prevent the approaches of those disorders which are bred by luxury and idleness. Fevers and fluxes are the most common, and the most fatal. For the cure of which they apply saphies and perform superstitious ceremonies. The cure of the dysentery is usually attempted by the bark of various trees, which is pounded, and mixed with the patient's food. But this practice is seldom attended with success.

The yaws, the elephantiasis, and a horrid species of leprosy are also prevalent in this country; the latter disease commencing by scurfy spots on various parts of the body, which finally settle upon the hands or feet, occasioning the skin to wither and crack; the ends of the fingers swell and ulcerate, producing a fetid discharge, the nails drop off, the finger bones putrify, and separate at the joints; the disease frequently extending till the patient loses all his fingers and toes. This malady, which sometimes deprives the unhappy sufferer of even his hands and feet, is called by the Negroes, *balla jou*, "incurable."

The *Guinea-worm* is common in several places, at the beginning of the rainy season. It is a glandular swelling of the neck, supposed by the Negroes to originate from drinking bad water; those who drink from wells are more subject to it than those who make river-water their beverage. In the interior countries Mr. Park saw a few instances of simple *gonorrhea*, but never the confirmed *lues*.

The Negroes in general, are better surgeons than physicians, often managing dislocations and fractures with skill and success; their splints and bandages are simple, and may be easily removed.

In the case of fracture, the patient is laid upon a soft mat, and the limb repeatedly bathed with cold water. They open all abscesses with the actual cautery, and the dressings consist of either a composition of soft leaves, shea-butter, or cows' dung. Towards the coasts, where lancets can be procured, they also practise plebotomy, and occasionally perform a kind of cupping *.

The domestic amusements, occupations, diet, and other subordinate particulars, are next entitled to attention. Their principal musical instruments are, the *koonting*, a kind of guitar with three strings; the *korro*, resembling a large harp, furnished with eighteen strings; the *simbling*, a sort of small harp, with seven strings; the *balafou*; the *tantang*; and the *tabula*: the two last resemble drums. They also use bow-strings, elephant's teeth, and bells. Clapping of hands seems to be essentially necessary to the full chorus of their dances or concerts. With the love of music, a taste for poetry is naturally connected. Two classes of singing men are to be met with in Africa. The first of which are itinerant Mahometans, traversing the country, and singing their pious effusions in honour of the prophet. The other class may be found in every town: they sing extempore songs in honour of their chief men, or others who are willing to give solid encouragement to empty flattery.

The diet of the Negroes is not entirely the same in different districts, but the free natives usually breakfast upon gruel made of mead and water, with a little of the fruit of the tamarind to give it an agreeable acid flavour; this meal generally commences about the dawn of day. Dinner, which is usually served about two o'clock, consists of a sort of hasty pudding, meliorated with shea-butter; but supper, which is their principal repast, is seldom prepared till night, when they universally feed on kouskous, with some animal food, or shea-butter. In eating, the Negroes use only the right-hand. Beer, or mead, is the usual beverage of the Negroes, in each of which they often indulge to excess. The Mahometans drink nothing but water. Snuff and tobacco are used indiscriminately by Pagans and Mahometans; their pipes are formed of wood, having an earthern bowl curiously ornamented †.

During the rains the Mandingoes are employed in agricultural labours; and in the dry season, those who inhabit situations near the rivers, employ themselves in fishing: the fish, when taken, are dried in the sun, and afterwards rubbed with shea-butter, to prevent their imbibing fresh water. Many of the Negroes engage in the pursuit of hunting, and are deemed excellent marksmen. Their weapon is the bow and arrow, but the arrows generally used are not poisoned. While the men are occupied in their pursuits, the women are industriously engaged in manufacturing cotton cloth. The women prepare the cotton for spinning, and spin it with the distaff; though the thread is not fine, it is well twisted, and durable cloth is made from it. The weaving part is performed by the men, with a loom on the European principles; the shuttle is also of European construction, but the thread being coarse, the chamber is rather larger. The women dye the cloth of a rich durable blue colour, by the following simple process. The leaves of indigo, when fresh gathered, are bruised in a wooden mortar, and then mixed with a strong ley of wood-ashes and chamber-ley in an earthen vessel; the cloth is then steeped in this mixture till it acquires a proper shade. Where the indigo is not plentiful, they dry the leaves in the sun, and when wanted for use, the necessary quantity is reduced to a powder, and mixed with the ley. Garments of this cloth are sewed with needles of African manufacture.

The arts of weaving, dying, &c. being easily acquired, they are not considered as distinct professions; every slave can weave, and every boy can sew. The manufacturers of *leather* and

* On the death of a respectable person, his relations and neighbours assemble, and express their grief by loud and dismal howlings. The funeral ceremony generally takes place on the evening of the day on which the person expired; when all those who assist upon the solemn occasion, are feasted on a goat or bullock slain for that express purpose. The Negroes, having no appropriate burying-places, sometimes dig a grave beneath some favourite tree; and the body, clad in white cotton, and wrapped up in a mat, is conveyed to the grave by the relations. If buried at some distance from the town, and on that account thought necessary, the spot is covered with prickly bushes, to defend the body from the wolves; but our traveller never saw any monumental stone placed over a grave, as a memorial of the deceased.

† Salt, however, appears to be the greatest luxury in Africa; Mr. Park says he has frequently seen a child suck a piece of rock-salt as if it had been sugar. So highly is it estimated in Africa, and so difficult to procure, that to say *a man eats salt with his victuals*, amounts to an affirmation, that he is an opulent man. Our traveller suffered great inconvenience from the scarcity of this article.

iron are indeed considered as professional artists. They are found in almost every town, and frequently travel through the country, in the exercise of their calling. Leather is dressed or tanned with great expedition; they steep the hide in a mixture of woodashes, till the hair separates from the skin, and then apply the bruised leaves of the goo tree as an astringent; after which it is repeatedly rubbed between the hands, and beaten upon a stone, to render it soft and pliant. Of the hides of bullocks they usually form sandals, less attention is therefore required in their manufacture, than in those of sheep or goats, which furnish coverings for quivers and saphies, sheaths for swords and knives, cases, &c. These skins are usually died of a red or yellow colour.

The manufacturers in iron are expert in their business; the European traders supply the Negroes of the coast with that valuable metal; but in the interior of Africa the natives smelt in an extensive way, as well as form, for their own use, every necessary instrument or weapon, making it a principal article of trade with the different states. During Mr. Park's residence at Kamalia, he visited a smelting furnace there, and amused himself with observing their process. Various instruments of the metal, when melted, are formed, by means of a forge, which is actuated by a pair of double bellows of very simple construction; as are the hammer, forceps, and anvil. In the formation of the knives and spears, the workmanship is not destitute of merit. Let it be noticed, however, that the iron is hard and brittle, and requires much labour to render it properly malleable.

Many of the African blacksmiths are acquainted with the method of smelting gold: they also draw the gold into wire, and form it into a variety of ornaments, with great taste and ingenuity. Many useful and ornamental articles are manufactured from rushes in Africa, particularly in Bambarra and Kaarta; among these are a variety of baskets and hats, beautifully stained of different colours. They also cover their calabashes with interwoven cane, executed with great taste, and died in a similar manner.

It is worthy of remark, that in all the occupations above enumerated, the master and his slaves labour together, without distinction of superiority. Hired servants or labourers, including all such as voluntarily work for pay, are unknown in Africa.

SECTION XIV.

Sources of Slavery, &c.

WHEN the persons and services of one part of the community, are entirely at the disposal of another part, they are certainly in a state of slavery; and in this condition of life, a great body of the Negro inhabitants of Africa have continued from the most early period of their history; and their state has at all times been aggravated with this reflection, that their children are born to no other inheritance.

The slaves in Africa are nearly in the proportion of three to one to the free men: they claim no reward for their services but food and cloathing; and, according to the disposition of their masters, kindness or severity becomes their lot. Custom, indeed, has established certain rules for the regulation of the conduct of those who possess slaves, which it is thought dishonourable to violate. Domestic slaves, for instance, such as are born in the house of their master, receive kinder treatment than those which have been purchased: the master's authority over such a man extends only to moderate correction; nor can he sell him till he has been tried before the chief men of the place. But such unhappy creatures as are purchased or taken captive in war, must be subject to the caprice of their owners, and may be sold by them to any foreign master. Regular markets are established for this inhuman traffic. A slave is more or less valuable to an African, as he is more or less distant from his native country. If the distance from his native spot is very considerable, there is less danger of his attempting to run away, and thus rob his master of himself, who is indeed his property.

Slaves may, with some few exceptions, be divided into two classes; first, such as were born slaves, being the children of enslaved mothers: secondly, such as were born free, but became

slaves

slaves by some accidental occurrence. Prisoners taken in war are, indeed, principally those who are born slaves, for the following reason; freemen are better armed than slaves, and well-mounted, and consequently can fight or escape with a greater chance of success; but slaves, who have only their spears and bows, and many who are loaded with heavy baggage, fall an easy prey; besides, when a freeman is taken prisoner, his friends may ransom him for two slaves; but a slave has not the most distant hope of redemption. It is also certain that the Slatees, who purchase slaves in the interior, give a preference to those who have been so from their birth; for, having been long enured to hunger and fatigue, they are more capable of performing the tedious journey to the coast; and, till an opportunity offers of selling them advantageously, they can more easily support themselves, and are much less likely to make their escape, than men who have once enjoyed the blessings of liberty.

Men who are born free may become slaves from the following causes. Captivity, famine *, insolvency, crimes. War † was probably the origin, and certainly the most productive source of slavery. Prisoners of war, however, are at present the slaves of their capturers; and if the weak or unsuccessful warrior asks for mercy beneath the up-lifted spear of his conqueror, if his life is granted he forfeits every claim to liberty, purchasing his existence at the expence of his freedom.

An African having once subdued his enemy, will seldom give him an opportunity of lifting up his hand against him at a future period. Prisoners are generally disposed of according to the rank they held in their native kingdom. Such domestic slaves as are of a mild disposition, and particularly docile young women, are retained in the house of the conqueror; but those who appear uneasy and dissatisfied are disposed of in a distant country. Not only the slaves, but even the freemen, who have been active in the war, are either sold to the Slatees or put to death: war is therefore incontestibly the most productive source of slavery ‡.

The commission of crimes is the fourth cause of slavery. The crimes which incur this heavy penalty, are murder, adultery, and witchcraft. Offences not very common, as Mr. Park supposes. In cases of murder, the next of kin to the deceased may either kill the offender, or dispose of him for a slave. For adultery, the injured person may either sell the culprit, or accept of an equivalent ransom for the offence, according to his own estimation of the injury he has sustained.

Witchcraft is classed among the causes of slavery; but Mr. Park assures his readers, that no trial for this offence took place during his residence in Africa. When a freeman has become a slave from any of the causes above-mentioned, he usually continues so for life; and his children, if born of an enslaved mother, are also destined to servitude. But where a slave has performed signal services, or taken two captives in battle, his master rewards him with his liberty. Escape is, however, the more common way of regaining freedom; for when slaves have formed a resolution to abscond, they frequently succeed; some of them will wait for years, with apparent satisfaction and content, till a favourable opportunity shall present itself, which they eagerly embrace §.

SECT.

* In times of scarcity or famine the master may sell one or more of his domestic slaves, to enable him to purchase provisions for his family; and if the master becomes insolvent, the domestic slaves may be seized and sold by his creditors; but they are not liable to be sold in any other instance, unless for their own demerits.

† As the greater number of persons captured in war have been originally slaves, and as prisoners at all times find purchasers, it is, on the whole, an advantage, that the trade with Europe affords such powerful motives to conquerors to restrain their sanguinary dispositions, and spare the lives of their fellow creatures. However paradoxical the assertion may appear, the slave-trade really promotes the purposes of humanity, as it preserves many lives which would otherwise be destroyed.

‡ Famine may be considered as a second cause of slavery, when it induces a free man to become a slave to avoid a greater calamity. A philosopher may prefer death to slavery, but the poor Negro who will not adopt the generous sentiments of Greece or Rome, has very different feelings. Instances are common of free men surrendering their liberty to preserve their lives. During a scarcity of provision for three years, in the countries near the Gambia, many free men petitioned Dr. Laidley to be *admitted upon his slave-chain*, that they might not perish of hunger. When large families in Africa are reduced to absolute want, some of the children are usually sold to procure subsistence for the rest of the family.

Insolvency is the third cause of slavery, according to African laws: if an African trader, on some mercantile speculation, contracts debts, agreeing to make payment in a limited time; if he should be unable to fulfil his engagements, his person and services are at the disposal of another; for in Africa, not only the effects of the insolvent, but even the insolvent himself, is sold to satisfy the lawful demands of his creditors.

§ The doctrine of Mr. Park is totally different from that of Mr. Wilberforce in the House of Commons: He says, the

SECTION XV.

Of Gold Dust—Ivory—Hunting the Elephant.

GOLD and ivory have probably been found in Africa from the most remote periods of its history; and they are reckoned among the most important of its productions. Gold is found in considerable quantities throughout Manding and Jallonkadoo. It is collected, nearly in a pure state, from the size of a pin's head to that of a pea, among masses of sand or clay, which the Mandingoes call *gun powder*. It is supposed to have been washed down from the mountains by successive rains, and is thus collected: The harvest being over, and the waters having subsided, the Mansa appoints a day to begin "gold washing" when the women attend for that purpose. On the morning of their departure a bullock is killed, and prayers and charms resorted to, in order to ensure success. A failure of success on the first day is considered as an evil omen. Mr. Park informs us the Mansa of Kamalia, and his people, were so much disappointed on their first day's washing, that few of them would persevere. The implements required for this employment are, a hoe, two or three calabashes, and a few quills for containing the gold dust.

To wash the sands of the streams is the most effectual method of procuring gold; but this practice is so frequently adopted, that many are of opinion it is more advantageous to employ themselves farther up the torrent, where the rapidity of the stream has carried away the clay, sand, &c. and left only small pebbles. This search is attended with much trouble, and the women often get the tops of their fingers lacerated in the employment. Sometimes, however, they discover pieces of gold, denominated "gold stones," which amply reward them. A very profitable method of washing is also effected by digging a deep pit like a draw-well, near some hill which is reputed to contain gold. A person, with moderate application, may collect, during the season, as much gold as is equivalent to the value of two slaves. M. Park very properly observes, that, "were th gold-bearing streams to be traced to their fountains, and the hills from whence they spring properly examined, the sand in which the gold is there deposited would, no doubt, be found t contain particles of a much larger size; and even the small grains might be collected to considerable advantage by the use of quick-silver, and other improvements, with which the natives are at present unacquainted*.

The ornaments made of this valuable metal are massy and inconvenient, particularly the earrings, the weight of which pull down and lacerate the lobe of the organ of hearing; to avoid which, a leather thong extends over the crown of the head, from one ear to the other. More elegance, as well as fancy is displayed in the necklace. The golden ornaments of a lady of consequence, when in full dress, is estimated from fifty to eighty pounds sterling in England.

The Slatees, in defraying the expences of their journies, consume but a small quantity of gold: a considerable part is carried away by the Moors, in exchange for salt, and other merchandize. During Mr. Park's stay at Kamalia, the gold collected by the traders of that place, for salt alone, exceeded in value one hundred and ninety pounds, sterling. And as Kamalia is but a small town, and has no extensive traffic with the Moors, this must have borne but a very small proportion to the gold collected at Kancaba, Kankaree, and several other large towns.

The Negroes weigh the gold in small balances, which they always carry about them; and gold-dust is held by them in equal estimation with the wrought gold. In bartering, the person who receives the gold, weighs it with his own *teele-kissi*, or bean, six of which make one minkalli. These beans, however, are sometimes fraudulently soaked in the shea-butter to make them more ponderous. Mr. Park once saw a pebble, which had been

"the abolition of the slave-trade would produce great carnage and cruelty, which its existence most frequently prevents, by affording the strongest motives to conquerors to exercise mercy towards their vanquished enemies."

* The gold mine near Wicklow, in Ireland, which was discovered in 1795, is near the top, and upon the steep slope of a mountain. Here pieces of gold, weighing several ounces, were frequently discovered. What would have been gold-dust two miles below, was here golden gravel, each grain being equal to the size of a small pebble. One piece was found which weighed near twenty-two ounces troy.

been formed into an exact resemblance of one of them, probably for the purpose of deception; but such wily tricks are not often practised.

In the dry season the elephants traverse the country in large herds, in search of food and water, and when they cannot find a supply of the latter in the pools of the woods, they approach the banks of the Niger, where they remain till the commencement of the rainy season; and during this time they are frequently hunted by the Bambarrans. The hunters usually go out in small parties of four or five persons, furnished with powder and ball, and provisions for five or six days. They penetrate the unfrequented parts of the wood with great care, and examine the foot-marks, and scattered dung of the animal, as well as the broken branches, or any other particulars which may lead to a discovery of his haunts. When a herd is discovered, the hunters follow them at a distance, till one of the animals is observed to stray from the rest, in a situation where he can conveniently be fired at: then, cautiously approaching till they are sure of their aim, the hunters discharge their pieces, and throw themselves upon their faces in the high grass. The elephant applies his trunk to his numerous wounds, but being unable to extract the balls, he becomes furious, and runs about among the bushes, till faint and fatigued with the loss of blood; when his pursuers again fire at him and terminate his life*.

The skin, when stripped off, is extended on the ground with pegs, that it may be properly dried; while several parts of the flesh which are most esteemed are cut into slices, and dried in the sun: the teeth are struck out with a light hatchet, with which the hunters always furnish themselves, as well for that particular purpose, as to enable them to cut down such trees as contain honey. When the hunters are successful, they continue in the woods for some months, subsisting wholly on the flesh of elephants and wild honey. The ivory is generally sold to itinerant merchants, who come annually to the coast, to purchase arms and ammunition with this commodity. Considerable quantities of ivory are also brought by the slave-coffles; but some Mahometan Slatees, from superstitious prejudices, will not traffic in ivory, nor eat of the flesh of an elephant, if killed in any other manner than by a spear.

After this interesting digression, Mr. Park returns to his situation at Kamalia.

SECTION XVI.

Occurrences at Kamalia resumed—Arabic MSS. used by the Mahometan Negroes—Conversion of Negro Children—Return of Karfa—Farther Observations on Slaves and Slavery—Fast of Ramandan—The Author's Anxiety to depart—Account of the Caravan, and its Departure—Proceedings on the Road to Kinytakoora.

TO return to the narrative of Mr. Park, we must recollect, that the school-master, his protector, to whose care he was committed during the absence of his host, was of a gentle disposition, and amiable manners; and, though a Mahometan, not intolerant in his principles; his name was Fankooma. Much of his time was devoted to literary studies, and he derived great satisfaction in communicating knowledge to his pupils. Seventeen boys, and two girls composed his little seminary. The girls received their instruction by day-light; the boys early in the morning, or late

* The Negroes express great astonishment at the eagerness manifested by Europeans for elephant's teeth, as they cannot form an adequate idea of their use. Though they have seen articles made of ivory, and been convinced that they were parts of a tooth, they suspect that this commodity must be taken to Europe for more important purposes. They cannot be induced to believe that such long voyages would be undertaken merely for procuring handles to knives, combs, and toys, when pieces of wood would answer all these purposes as well. Elephants are numerous in Africa, but apparently of a distinct species from those of Asia, the former of which are said to be untameable: but the barbarous practice of hunting the elephants for the sake of their teeth, has rendered them more untractable and savage than they were in former ages. The interior districts produce the principal part of the ivory, which is sold on the Gambia and Senegal. Scattered teeth, indeed, are often found in the woods: The animal thrusts his teeth between the roots of bushes, and raises the plants from the earth, that he may select the most tender and juicy parts to feed upon; but when the roots are permanently fixed, or age has decayed his teeth, they are often broken. When an elephant is killed in hunting, where his death is not occasioned by a fall from a precipice, his teeth are always extracted entire.

in the evening; for being considered, while they were pupils, as slaves of the master, they were employed by him throughout the day in various avocations, as planting corn, bringing fire-wood, &c.*

On the 24th of January, Karfa, accompanied by a number of people, returned to Kamalia, with fifteen slaves whom he had puschased. He also brought, as a fourth wife, a young girl whom he had married at Kancaba; having purchased her for three prime slaves. She was kindly received at the door of the baloon by Karfa's other wives, who had swept and white-washed one of the best huts for her accommodation†.

The slaves are constantly kept in irons, and closely watched to prevent their escape. The better to secure them, the right leg of one, and the left of another, are usually secured by the same pair of fetters: every four slaves are also fastened together by twisted thongs: and during the night their hands are fettered, and their necks encircled by a chain. Greater severities, and more cruel precautions, are exercised against those who are suspected of harbouring an idea of escaping.

In other respects, the treatment of the slaves at Kamalia was far from being harsh or cruel: they were led every morning to the shade of the Tamarind tree, where they were encouraged to sing and be cheerful, and to amuse themselves at certain games of hazard. But though some of them sustained their fate with fortitude, the greater part of them were much dejected, and with a sullen melancholy fixed their eyes upon the ground. In the evening, after examining their irons, and pursuring other methods of securing them, they were conducted into two large huts, and guarded by Karfa's domestic slaves during the night. But, notwithstanding their vigilance and care, one of the slaves had the address to procure a small knife, with which he opened the rings of his fetters, cut the rope, and effected his escape: many more of them would probably have got off, had not the slave, who had thus procured his own liberty, refused to stop to liberate his companions.

All the merchants and slaves who composed the coffle were now assembled at Kamalia, or the neighbouring villages: the day of their departure for Gambia was frequently fixed, and afterwards postponed. Some of the people had not prepared their dry provisions, others were visiting their friends, or collecting their trifling debts; and, last of all, it was thought necessary to consult whether the day would be a lucky one. The departure was thus delayed till February was far advanced; when the Slatees came to a determination to wait till the *Fast Moon was over*. Here let it be observed, that the loss of time is a matter of no importance to a Negro. If he has any thing of consequence to perform, it is indifferent to him whether he does it to-day, to-morrow, or a month or two hence: while he can enjoy the present moment, he thinks nothing of the future.

The fast of *Rhamadan* was strictly observed by the Bushreens: instead of compelling Mr. Park to follow their example, Karfa said he was at liberty to pursue his own inclination; but, to shew

* Exclusive of the Koran, and a few books of Commentaries thereon, the school-master possessed many curious manuscripts, and he was careful to stimulate his scholars by emulation. When the pupil has read through the Koran, and repeated a stated number of devotions, he is examined by the Bushreens, who, when satisfied of his learning and abilities, desire him to read the last page of the Koran; and on this occasion, a feast is prepared by the school-master. When the boy has finished this lesson, he presses the paper against his forehead, and pronounces the word *Amen;* on which the Bushreens instantly rise, affectionately shake him by the hand, and bestow on him the title of Bushreen. The parents then complete his education, by redeeming their son, that is, by paying his master the stated value of a slave: if they cannot afford to compass this desirable purpose, the boy remains the domestic slave of the schoolmaster, till he can ransom himself by his own industry.

† On the day after his arrival, Karfa, observing Mr. Park's apparel extremely out of repair, he presented him with such a garment, &c. as was generally worn in that country. The slaves which Karfa had brought with him were all prisoners of war, who had been taken by the Bambarra army: some of them had been conveyed to Sego, where they had remained three years in irons; whence they were sent, with other captives, to Yamina, Bammacoo, and Kancaba, and bartered for gold-dust. Eleven of them acknowledged to Mr. Park that they had been slaves from their birth, but the other two declined giving any account of their former condition to Mr. Park, whom they beheld with looks of horror. They were remarkably inquisitive, and repeatedly and anxiously asked him if his countrymen were cannibals? They wished to know what became of the slaves after they had crossed the salt-water: he assured them they were employed in cultivating the land, but they disbelieved this assertion; and, one of them placing his hand upon the ground, with much simplicity said, "Have you really such ground as this to set your feet upon?" A fixed idea that the whites purchase Negroes for the purpose of devouring them, or for selling them to others, that they may be devoured hereafter, induces the slaves to regard with terror the idea of a journey towards the coast.

his

his respect for their religious observances, he voluntarily fasted three days; a circumstance which exempted him from the reproachful title of Kafir. During the fast, all the Slatees assembled every morning at Karfa's house, to hear the schoolmaster recite some lessons from a large folio volume, the author of which was Sheiffa, an Arab. In the evening, the women who had embraced Mahometanism performed prayers at the Misura, all in white apparel. During the fast, the meekness and humility of the Negroes, formed a striking contrast to the bigotry and savage intolerance of the Moors.

Towards the conclusion of the Rhamadan, the Bushreens met at the Misura to watch for the new moon; but as the evening was cloudy, they were at first disappointed, and several of them had returned home with a resolution to fast another day. The clouds, however, suddenly disappearing, the object of their wishes appeared, and was welcomed by clapping of hands, beating of drums, and other demonstrations of joy. This moon being thought extremely lucky, Karfa ordered the people of the Coffle to prepare immediately for their journey; and the Slatees held a consultation, when they determined on the 19th of April as the day of their departure.

An event, however, took place which was wholly unexpected. On the morning of the 17th, the three trading Moors, who had lodged under Karfa's protection, suddenly packed up their effects, and marched over the hills to Bala. The same evening their creditor for the salt, a Fezzan merchant, who resided at Kancaba, arrived at Kamalia, and informed Karfa that these Moors had sent him to receive payment for the salt. Receiving intelligence that they were fled to the westward, he wiped a tear from each eye, with the sleeve of his coat, and exclaimed, "These robbers are Mahometans, but they are not men; they have robbed me of two hundred minkallies."

On the 19th of April, as agreed on, the coffle commenced its journey: on its departure from Kamalia, it consisted of twenty-seven slaves for sale, the property of Karfa, and four other Slatees; but they were afterwards joined by several persons at Maraboo, and three at Bala; making in the whole seventy-three persons, thirty-five of whom were slaves for sale. The number of freemen was fourteen; but several of them had wives and domestic slaves; and the school-master, who was now returning to Woradoo, the place of his nativity, had with him eight of his pupils. Several of the inhabitants of Kamalia accompanied them about half a mile out of the town, some crying, others shaking hands with their relations who were on the point of leaving them. Reaching a rising ground, from whence they had a prospect of the town, all the people of the coffle were ordered to sit down, with their faces towards the west; and the people of the town with their faces towards Kamalia. The school-master, and two of the principal Slatees, then placed themselves between the two parties, pronouncing a long and solemn prayer, at the conclusion of which they walked three times round the caravan, pressing the ground with the end of their spears, and muttering a secret charm. All the travellers then arose, and proceeded on their journey, without taking a formal leave of their relations and friends.

The slaves had heavy loads upon their heads; and many of them having been long in irons, the exertion of walking quick occasioned spasmodic complaints in their legs. Having advanced about a mile, two of them were obliged to be taken from the rope, and permitted to walk slowly. The coffle, after resting two hours at Maraboo, proceeded to Bala, which town they reached about four in the afternoon; and thence on the 20th to Worumbang, the frontier village of Manding, towards Jallonkadoo. Here they procured a stock of provisions, intending shortly to enter the Jallonka Wilderness. The road to Kinytakooro, a town in Jollonkadoo, was agreed on; and this being a long day's journey distant, they halted to refresh themselves. Every one conveyed a handful or two of meal from his provision bag, to the place where Karfa and the Slatees were sitting, and the whole was arranged in small gourd-shells; the schoolmaster then pronounced a short prayer, that God and the Holy Prophet might preserve us from robbers, and all wicked people; that our provisions might never fail us, nor our limbs become fatigued.

This ceremony being ended, each partook of the meal, and drank a little water; after which they expeditiously set forward till they came to the river Kokoro, a branch of the Senegal, and in the evening arrived at Kinytakooro, a large square town, situated in the middle of an extensive cultivated plain. In this day's journey a woman and a girl, two slaves belonging to a Slatee of Bala, were so greatly fatigued that they could not keep up with the coffle. They were whipped and

and dragged along till about three in the afternoon, when the severity, added to the fatigue, brought on a vomiting; and by the discharge from the stomach, it was discovered that they had *eaten clay*. This practice is frequent among the slaves, but whether it proceeds from a vitiated appetite, or from a resolution to destroy themselves, is uncertain. Guarded by three people, the slaves were permitted to lie down in the woods, till they were a little recovered; but they did not arrive at the town till midnight, and were then so much exhausted, that their master resolved to return with them to Bala, and wait for another opportunity.

As Kinytakooro was the first town beyond the limits of Manding, great etiquette was required on entering it. The coffle marched towards it in a sort of procession, as follows: Five or six singing men in front, all belonging to the coffle; the other free people followed next; then came the slaves, ignominiously fastened in the usual way; a man with a spear taking his station between every four. Next came the domestic slaves, the women of free condition, the wives of the Slatees, &c. Arriving within a hundred yards of the gate, the singing men began a loud song, extolling the hospitality of the inhabitants to strangers, &c. When they arrived at the Bentang, the people were assembled to hear their history, which was pronounced by two of the singing men. They began with the events of the day, and related every thing in a backward series, till they reached Kamalia. When this recital was ended, the chief man of the town gave them a small present; and every individual of the coffle, whether free or enslaved, received an invitation from some person or persons, to accept of provisions, and an accommodation for the night.

SECTION XVII.

The Coffle crosses the Jallonka Wilderness—Deplorable Fate of a Female Slave—Sooseta, Manna—Some Account of the Jallonkas—Crosses the Senegal—Remarkable Bridge—Arrives at Malacotta—Conduct of the King of the Jalloffs.

SOON after day-break on the 23d, the coffle entered the Jallonka wilderness, and passed the ruins of two small towns which the Foulahs had lately burnt: the fire which consumed these premises must have been extremely intense, as the walls of the huts were vitrified. About ten o'clock they came to the river Wonda, a larger stream than that of the Kokoro, but rather muddy, on account of the amazing shoals of fish which it contained; they were indeed seen in all directions, and in the greatest abundance. Having crossed this river, Karfa ordered the guides and young men to place themselves in the front, the women and slaves in the centre, and the freemen in the rear; and in this order they travelled through a beautiful woody country, abounding with deer, partridges, and Guinea fowls, till sunset; when they arrived at the romantic stream of Co-meissang.

Mr. Park, in the course of the day, had been so much exposed to the sun, that blisters appeared on his skin; and, to diminish the inflammation, he came to a resolution of bathing himself in this river, while the coffle rested on its bank. About three miles to the westward of the Co-meissang, they halted in a thick wood, and kindled their fires for the night: the company were greatly fatigued, having travelled about thirty miles, but not a person was heard to complain. Whilst supper was preparing, Karfa ordered one of his slaves to prepare a bed for Mr. Park, from some of the branches of the trees. Having supped upon Kouskous, and secured the slaves in irons, they all laid down; but were very much disturbed in the night by the howling of wild beasts, and the biting of little brown ants.

The next morning many of the free people regaled themselves with *moening;* some of which was also given to those slaves who appeared least able to endure fatigue: but one of Karfa's female slaves named Nealee, refused to partake of this refreshment, and was extremely sullen. The coffle proceeded over a wild and rocky country, when Nealee, the woman slave, soon overcome by fatigue, began to lag behind, complaining dreadfully of pains in her legs; her load was therefore taken

taken from her, and given to another slave, and she was enjoined to keep in the front.

While the coffle rested near a small rivulet, a large hive of bees was discovered in a hollow tree, and some Negroes were active in endeavouring to obtain the honey; when an enormous swarm flew out, and attacking the people of the coffle, obliged them to fly in all directions. Mr. Park took the alarm, and was almost the only person who escaped with impunity. The Negroes who had been dispersed by the attack of these insects, collected together at some distance from this distressing scene; but Nealee was not to be found, and many of the bundles were missing. To recover these with safety, they set fire to the grass eastward of the hive, and the wind driving the flames furiously along, they passed through the smoke, and regained the bundles. They also brought with them poor Nealee, whom they found lying by the rivulet, much exhausted. She had with great difficulty crept to the stream, hoping to protect herself from the bees by throwing water over her person; but she was stung most dreadfully. The stings were carefully picked out, and she was washed with water, in which bruised leaves had been steeped; but she refused to proceed any farther, declaring she would rather die than walk another step.

Entreaties and threats being no longer regarded, the whip was applied by the Slatees: after bearing patiently a few strokes, she started up, and walked a tolerable pace for four or five hours longer, when attempting to run away, she fell down in the grass through extreme weakness. Again was the whip applied, but in vain. They placed her on an ass which carried their dry provisions, but she could not sit erect, and the ass was refractory. A litter of bamboo canes was then made for her, and she was carried on the heads of two slaves for the remainder of the day. In this manner the unhappy woman was conveyed forward till it was dark, when they halted at the foot of a hill called Gankaran-kooroo. The travellers had only ate a handful of meal each, during the day's journey in a hot sun, and many of the slaves had heavy loads upon their heads; they were, indeed, so much dissatisfied, that some of them *snapt their fingers*, which among the Negroes is a certain sign of desperation. They were all immediately secured in irons, and those who had displayed the most unequivocal proofs of despondency, were separated from the rest.

In the morning many of them were much recovered, but poor Nealee was unable to walk or stand: she was therefore lifted, like an inanimate creature, upon the back of an ass, her hands being fastened together under the neck, and her feet under the belly: the ass, however, was so unruly that he could not be induced to proceed with his load; the wretched slave was instantly thrown off, and one of her legs much bruised. Every attempt to carry her being found ineffectual, many of the coffle exclaimed aloud, *kang-tegi! kang-tegi! cut her throat! cut her throat!* an operation which Mr. Park had no inclination to see performed; he therefore marched onwards with the foremost of the coffle; but he had not proceeded above a mile, when one of Karfa's domestic slaves came to him, having Nealee's garment upon the end of his bow, and exclaimed *Nealee affeeleeta* (Nealee is lost!) Our traveller asked him if the Slatees had rewarded him with the garment for cutting the unfortunate woman's throat? he replied that Karfa and the schoolmaster would not consent to have her killed, but ordered her to be left upon the road, where she must shortly perish, or become a prey to ferocious animals.

Her fate was lamented throughout the whole coffle, notwithstanding the unfeeling outcry which preceded it; the schoolmaster fasted the whole day in consequence of it. The coffle soon after crossed the river Furkoomah, and travelled so expeditiously that Mr. Park found it difficult to keep pace with it. About noon they saw a large herd of elephants, but they were suffered to pass unmolested; in the evening they halted near a thicket of bamboo, but, finding no water, they proceeded four miles further to a small stream, after having travelled twenty-six miles that day.

On the 26th of April the coffle ascended a rocky hill, called Boki-kooro, and, entering a valley in the afternoon, forded the Boki, a smooth transparent river. About a mile to the westward of the river, observing the marks of many horses' feet on the soft sand, the Slatees apprehended that a party of plunderers had lately been in that quarter; and, to avoid discovery and pursuit, the coffle separated, and travelled irregularly

through the high grass and bushes. When it was almost dark, they crossed a ridge of hills to the westward of the river Boki, and rested for the night at a well called *cullong qui*. On the following day they passed expeditiously through extensive thickets of dry bamboos. At a stream called Nunkolo, about two o'clock, each of them were regaled with a handful of meal, moistened with water from this stream, in compliance with a superstitious custom; in the afternoon they reached Sooseeta, a village in the district of Kulla, a tract of country extending along the banks of the black river, or principal branch of the Senegal. These were the first human habitations they had seen in the course of five successive days, in travelling upwards of a hundred miles. Here, after much entreaty, they were provided with huts to sleep in, but they could procure no provisions, a great scarcity having taken place before the crops were gathered in; during which time the inhabitants of Kulla had lived on the yellow powder of the *nitta*, and the seeds of the bamboo *.

On the 28th of April the coffle arrived at Manna, where they found the inhabitants employed in gathering the fruit of the nitta-trees. The pods, which are long and narrow, contain a few black seeds, enveloped in a mealy yellow powder, which, when mixed with milk or water, is a pleasant and nourishing food. The language at Manna resembles the Mandingo; but the natives themselves consider it as a distinct language. The Jolonkas, like the Mandingoes, are governed by several petty chiefs, nearly independent of each other.

The chief of Manna, with several of his people, accompanied the coffle to the banks of the basing, or black river (a principal branch of the Senegal) which they crossed upon a bridge of bamboos, of a very singular construction. Several tall trees are fastened together by the tops, which float on the water, the roots resting on the rocks on each side of the river; these are covered with dry bamboos, and the whole forms a passage sloping from each end towards the middle, so as to resemble an inverted arch. The swell of the river, at the rainy seasons, annually destroys this convenience; but the inhabitants of Manna constantly rebuild it, to defray the expences of which, a small tribute is exacted from every passenger.

Being informed that two hundred Jallonkas had assembled near Melo, to intercept and plunder the coffle, they altered their course, and proceeded to a town called Koba. Before they entered Koba, the names of the coffle were called over, by which a discovery was made that a freeman and three slaves were missing; hence it was generally concluded that the slaves had murdered the freeman, and effected their escape; and six persons were ordered to go back to the last village, to endeavour to procure certain information. The people of the coffle were, in the mean time, ordered to lie concealed in a cotton-field, and no person permitted to speak but in a whisper; towards morning the six messengers returned, but had obtained no satisfactory information. The coffle then entered the town, and purchased a considerable quantity of ground nuts, which were roasted for breakfast; they were then provided with huts, and continued there during the remainder of the day *.

The slaves being much fatigued, the coffle only proceeded nine miles on the following day; where at a small village, they procured some provisions through the interest of the schoolmaster, who sent a messenger forward to Malacotta, his native town, to inform his friends of his arrival, and

* The dry provisions not being yet exhausted, a sufficient quantity of kouskous was dressed for supper, and many of the villagers invited to the repast; but they made a very improper return for this kindness, for in the night they seized on one of the schoolmaster's boys, when asleep, and carried him away; the youth fortunately awoke, and screamed aloud, but the man placing his hand upon his mouth, ran with him into the woods; finding afterwards that he belonged to the schoolmaster, and that he could not detain him without his knowledge, he only stripped the boy of his apparel, and permitted him to return naked.

† At length the companions that had been missing entered the town, and were joyfully received; it now appeared, that one of the slaves had bruised his foot, and from the darkness of the night they lost sight of the coffle. The freeman, finding himself alone with the slaves, was aware of his own danger, and insisted on putting them in irons; finding them refractory, and unwilling to submit to this restraint, he threatened to stab them with his spear, when they at last complied, and in the morning followed the coffle to Koba. In the course of the day, the information respecting the Jallonka plunderers was confirmed; and Karfa, after remaining at Koba till the 30th, hired a number of persons as protectors, and proceeded to Tinkingtang, a small village. Departing from thence the following day, they crossed a high ridge of mountains, and, at sun-set arrived at Lingicotta, a small village of Woradod. Here they shook out the last handful of meal from their provision bags, this being the second whole day that they had travelled without tasting a single morsel of sustenance.

request them to collect provisions for supporting the coffle for two or three days. They stopped at another village farther on, waiting for the return of the messenger from Malacotta: here is a considerable stream, which flows to the westward; and, as the natives assured Mr. Park there were no crocodiles in it, he ventured to bathe himself in it. Very few people in this part of the country can swim; and the natives earnestly entreated him not to venture into a pool where the water would come over his head. About two o'clock the messenger returned from Malacotta, accompanied by the elder brother of the schoolmaster. The interview between the two brothers, after an absence of nine years, was truly affecting, and such as might naturally be expected; some moments elapsed before either of them was able to speak. The schoolmaster having a little recovered himself, he took his brother by the hand, and turning round, "this is the man," said he, pointing to Karfa, "who has been my father in Manding: I would have pointed him out sooner to you, but my heart was too full."

Reaching Malacotto in the evening, they met with a very favourable reception, and were splendidly entertained for three days; a bullock being each day presented by the schoolmaster. Malacotto is an unwalled town, the huts of which are formed of split cane, twisted in imitation of wicker-work, and plastered over with mud. The inhabitants are industrious, and make very good soap by boiling ground-nuts in water, and adding a ley of woodashes. They also manufacture iron, which they barter for salt at Bondou. Returning from an expedition of this kind, a party of traders brought intelligence of a war between Abdulkader king of Foota-Torra, and Damel, king of the Jaloffs, which soon became the general topic of conversation in all the kingdoms bordering on the Senegal and Gambia*.

Abdulkader instantly invaded Damel's dominions with a very powerful army; at his approach the towns and villages were abandoned, the wells filled up, the provisions destroyed, and the effects carried off by the inhabitants. He proceeded three days into the country of the Jaloffs, without having been opposed, but his army had suffered so severely from the scarcity of water, that many perished daily from the absence of that salutary fluid. This consideration induced him to march to a watering-place in the woods, where his men, after allaying their thirst, carelessly laid down to repose among the bushes, to recruit their exhausted strength. In this incautious situation they were attacked by Damel's forces in the night, and completely routed; king Abdulkader himself, with a great number of his followers, were taken prisoners. The behaviour of Damel, on this occasion, was mentioned by the singing men in terms of the highest approbation. The magnanimous Damel, instead of setting his foot upon his neck, and piercing him with his spear, according to the usual practice, addressed him as follows,—"Abdulkader, answer me this question.—If the chance of war had reduced me to your situation, how would you have treated me?" "I would have thrust my spear into your heart," replied Abdulkader, with great firmness, "and I know that a similar fate will be my portion."—"Not so," resumed Damel, "my sword indeed is red with the blood of your subjects slain in battle; and I could give it a deeper tinge by dipping it in your own; but this would not rebuild my towns, nor restore to life the thousands who fell in the woods. I will not therefore kill you in cold blood; but I will retain you as my slave, till I perceive that your presence in your own kingdom will be no longer dangerous to your neighbours; and I shall then determine on some proper method to dispose of you."

Damel, as he proposed, retained the captive prince, and employed him in the character of a slave for about three months; at the expiration of which period Damel lent a favourable ear to the solicitations of the inhabitants of Foota Torro, and restored to them their king.

* The circumstances may be thus related,—Almami Abdulkader, king of Foota Torra, zealous in the propagation of the religion of the prophet, dispatched an ambassador to Damel, king of the Jaloffs. The ambassador, on this occasion, was accompanied by two of the principal bushreens, each carrying a large knife fixed upon the top of a long pole. As soon as he had procured admission into the presence of Damel, the ambassador ordered the bushreens to present the emblems of his mission. The two knives were then laid before Damel, and the ambassador thus explained himself. "With this knife," said he, "Abdulkader will condescend to shave the head of Damel, if Damel will embrace the Mahometan faith; and with this other knife Abdulkader will cut the throat of Damel, if Damel refuses to embrace it;—take your choice." Damel coolly informed the ambassador that he had no choice to make; he was not inclined either to have his head shaved, or his throat cut, and the ambassador was civilly dismissed.

SECT.

SECTION XVIII.

The Caravan to Konkadoo, crossing the Falemé River—Proceeds to Baserile, Kirwani, &c.—A Matrimonial Case—The Caravan arrives on the Banks of the Gambia—The Traveller accompanied by Karfa, proceeds to Pasania—Takes his Passage in an American Ship—Voyage to Great Britain.

THE coffle departed from Malacotta on the 7th of May, and, having crossed the honey river, which is a branch of the Senegal, arrived at Bintingala, a walled town, where they rested two days. From thence they proceeded to Dindikoo, a town at the bottom of a ridge of hills, which produces considerable quantities of gold. Here was to be seen a Negro, whose hair and skin were of a dull white; he was one of those who in the Spanish West-Indies are called white Negroes. He had a cadaverous unpleasant complexion, which our traveller supposed to be the effect of disease.

After a toilsome journey, the coffle arrived at Satadoo on the 11th of May; it had been a town of considerable extent, but many inhabitants had quitted it on account of the rapacious incursions of the Foulahs of Foota Jalla, who made it their common practice to carry off people from the corn-fields and wells in the vicinity of the town. Crossing the Falemē river on the 12th, the coffle halted at Medina, an elegant village built in the European taste, and the sole property of a rich Mandingo merchant. The next morning they departed, in company with another coffle of slaves belonging to some traders of Serawoolli; they travelled with great expedition through the woods till noon, when one of the Serawoolli slaves dropped the burthen from his head, for which he suffered a severe whipping, and the load was instantly replaced. He had not proceeded above a mile further, when he let his load fall to the ground a second time, when the same punishment was repeated. After this he travelled in great anguish till about two; and when the coffle rested near a pool of water, the poor captive was so completely exhausted, that he lay motionless on the ground; he was therefore released from the rope, and a Serawoolli ordered to remain with him, to bring him to the town during the cool of the night. Proceeding on their route, in the mean time, they arrived at Beniserile*.

In the evening the Serawoolli who had been intrusted with the care of the exhausted slave, brought intelligence that he was dead; but as the Serawoollies are stigmatized for their cruelty to slaves, it was generally supposed that he had either killed him, or left him to perish on the road. The coffle remained at Baniserile two days, to purchase iron, shea-butter, and other articles of general consumption for sale on the Gambia; but Mr. Park's friend, the Slatee, who was anxious to complete his nuptials with the damsel already mentioned, resolved to proceed no further. He had been informed that the price of slaves on the Gambia was extremely low, and declared he would remain, with his three slaves, where he was, till he could part with them on more advantageous terms.

Departing from Baniserile, they proceeded to a large town named Kirwani, where they arrived about four in the afternoon. It is situated in a well-cultivated valley, and the inhabitants have shewn more knowledge of agricultural labour than in any part of Africa which our traveller had seen; they collect the dung of their cattle into large heaps, during the dry season, to manure the land at a proper time; he saw no other specimen of this mode of husbandry in any other part of Africa. This town is also supplied with several large furnaces from which the natives obtain good iron.

A Slatee of this place having purchased, among

* One of the Slatees, who was a native of this place, from which he had now been absent about three years, invited Mr. Park to his residence, at the gate of which he was met by his friends with many expressions of joy, embracing him, and singing and dancing before him. Having seated himself on a mat, near the threshold of his door, a young woman (his intended bride) brought him some water in a calabash, and, kneeling before him, requested he would wash his hands. This operation being finished, the girl drank the water, while the tear of affectionate joy trembled in her eye, testifying the most unequivocal proof of her fidelity and attachment.

other

other slaves, a native of Foota Jella, was apprehensive, as that country was at war, of his effecting his escape, and therefore proposed to exchange him for another slave, and offered liberal terms. The slatee accordingly sent for the slave, who, finding what sort of bargain was in agitation, attempted to escape, but was overtaken by the Slatees, who safely secured him in irons: after which one of Karfa's slaves was released, and delivered in exchange. The unfortunate captive was at first extremely dejected, but his melancholy gradually subsided, and in the course of a few days he became as cheerful as any of his companions.

Departing from Kirwani, they entered the Tenda Wilderness, the woods of which were thick, and the country extremely rocky. About ten o'clock they met a coffle returning from the Gambia, consisting of twenty-six persons, and seven loaded asses. The men had musquets, broad belts of scarlet cloth over their shoulders, and wore European hats. They remarked that there was little or no demand for slaves on the coast, as no vessel had arrived for a considerable time. Attending to this conversation, the Serawoollies deserted the coffle, and took their course for Kajaaga. Karfa, and his followers, continued their route through the Wilderness, and at sunset arrived at a pool of water, named Tabba-gee, where they rested a few hours. The days being immoderately hot, Karfa proposed to travel during the night; in consequence of which they proceeded about ten o'clock, with strict orders for the coffle to keep close together, as well to hinder the slaves from escaping, as for a preservation from the attack of wild beasts. They travelled with great alacrity till day-break, when it was discovered that a free woman was missing: her name was called till the woods resounded, but no answer being given, it was conjectured that she had either mistaken the road, or that a lion had seized her unperceived.

Four persons, however, were sent back in search of her, the coffle waiting till their return. She was found, lying fast asleep, near a rivulet where the coffle had stopped to refresh, and was arrived in safety. Pursuing their journey, they reached the walled town of Tambacunda, where they were favourably received, and where they were amused by a *palaver*, which continued four days. The particulars may be thus related:—Modi Lemini, one of the Slatees belonging to the coffle, had formerly married a woman of this town, by whom he had two children: he then repaired to Manding, where he resided eight years, without acquainting his deserted wife with any particulars relating to himself. After the expiration of three years, the lady married another man, by whom she also had two children. Lemini now claimed his wife, but the second husband refused to relinquish her; insisting, that according to the laws of Africa, a man who has been three years absent from his wife, without acquainting her that he is still living, the wife so deserted is at liberty to marry again. All the circumstances being investigated by the chief men, it was decided that the woman should take her choice, whether she would return to the first husband, or continue with the second. Favourable as this determination appeared, the lady required time to deliberate on this important business.

Leaving Tambacunda early on the 26th, they reached the village of Sibikillin about noon, but did not enter the gate, having been informed that the inhabitants were not only inhospitable, but had also a strong propensity to pilfering. After resting a short time under a tree, they continued their route, and at night halted by the side of a stream which was conveying its tributary aid to the Gambia. Next day, after a fatiguing journey over a wild and rocky country, much infested with monkeys and wild beasts, they approached the village of Koomboo; but as the inhabitants were reputed to be of a disposition allied to that of the natives of Sibikillin, they rested for the night in the fields, having first erected temporary huts for their protection from the rain*.

* In the morning they proceeded to a Foulah town; and the following day, crossing a branch of the Gambia, reposed at Koba Tenda, where they procured provisions for supporting themselves while they were traversing the Simbani woods. On the 30th of May the coffle arrived at Jalacotta, a large town which had been often plundered by Foulah banditti, who had lately stolen twenty head of cattle; but, on making a second attempt the following day, they were overcome, and one of them taken prisoner. Here one of the singing men, who had a slave in the coffle so exhausted with fatigue as to be unable to proceed, exchanged him for a young female slave. The poor girl was ignorant of her fate till the coffle was on the point of departing, when the master, taking her by the hand, delivered her to the singing man: a face of perfect serenity was instantly clouded with unutterable distress: the manner of her submitting to have a ponderous load placed upon her head, and to have the rope unmercifully fastened round her yielding neck; with the genuine sorrow expressed to her friends on their taking a final adieu, were truly affecting.

The coffle proceeding on its journey, crossed the river Nerico, a branch of the Gambia: at this moment the stream was small and gently flowing, though in the rainy season it is rapid and violent, and often dangerous to travellers. Having crossed the current, the singing man vociferated a song, expressive of their joy on their arrival in the west country, or, as they emphatically expressed it, the land of the setting sun. As the rain fell with violence in the afternoon, the travellers had recourse to the Negro umbrella, a large Ciboa leaf, one of which, being placed upon the head, protects the whole body from the rain.

The coffle rested, during the night, under the shade of a large tabba tree, near a village: in the morning they reached the banks of the Gambia, in a place where it was deep, smooth, and navigable. Opposite to this place, a large plain presents itself to view, being a sort of morass, in crossing which travellers are sometimes lost; it is called Toombi Toorila. In the evening, a little before it was dark, they arrived at Seesukunda, a village in the kingdom of Woolli. The slaves, in passing along, here saw plenty of nitta trees, and gathered large bunches of the fruit; but the inhabitants, from superstitious motives, would not suffer any of this fruit to be brought into the village; prepossessed that some dire catastrophe would befal the place, if the people subsisted upon nittas, and neglected the cultivation of the corn.

On the 2d of June they quitted Seesukunda, and passed through several villages; and, in the afternoon, reached Baraconda, where they halted a day. Departing from Baraconda, they reached Medina on the 4th. Here Mr. Park enquired immediately concerning the health of his good old benefactor king Jatta; and heard, with great concern, that he was dangerously ill. As the coffle did not stop here, Mr. Park could not personally pay his respects to the king, but informed him by an officer of his majesty's customs, that his prayers for the white man's safety had not been ineffectual. On the following day the coffle reached Jindey, where, eighteen months before, Mr. Park separated from his friend Dr. Laidley; during which interval he had not beheld the face of a Christian, nor been delighted with the accents of his native language*.

Anxious to get forward, Mr. Park and his companions reached Tendacunda in the evening, and were hospitably received at the house of Signiora Camilla, an aged black female who understood English, and with whom our traveller was acquainted; but his dress and figure were now so different from what she had hitheto seen of Europeans, that she at first mistook him for a Moor, and could not immediately recollect him. At last, giving credit to the testimony of her senses, she assured him that none of the traders on the Gambia ever expected to see him again, hearing he had been long ago murdered by the Moors at Ludamar; and when he enquired for Johnson and Demba, his two attendants, he had the mortification to be informed that neither of them had returned.

Karfa listened attentively to hear Mr. Park and his hostess converse in English; the furniture, beds, curtains, chairs, &c. were objects of his admiration. His astonishment was excited at every thing he saw. He asked a thousand questions on the utility of almost every thing that presented itself, concerning which it was difficult to give a satisfactory answer.

Mr. Robert Ainsley having been informed that Mr. Park was at Tendacunda, came to meet him, and politely offered him the use of his horse. He informed him that Dr. Laidley had removed to a place called Kaye, a little further down the river, and that he was then gone to Doomasansa to purchase rice, but would return in the course of a day or two: our traveller was therefore invited

* Finding that his friend Karfa had but little chance of selling his slaves on the Gambia, he suggested to him that it would be his most prudent measure to leave them at Jinkey till a proper opportunity should occur. Karfa, approving of this advice, hired a piece of ground of the chief man of Jindey, to employ his slaves in raising corn, and other provisions till such an event should take place. The good old man assured our traveller that he would not quit him till his departure from Africa; and accordingly Mr. Park, Karfa, and a Foulah belonging to the coffle, left Jindey on the morning of the 9th. But though Mr. Park was drawing near the conclusion of a toilsome journey, and shortly expected to meet with his countrymen and friends, he could not take a last farewel of his unfortunate fellow travellers, devoted as many of them were to captivity and slavery, without great emotion. Though exposed to the burning rays of a tropical sun, these poor slaves commisserated his sufferings, regardless of their own which were infinitely greater, frequently bringing water to quench his thirst, and at night collected branches and leaves to make a bed comfortable for him in the wilderness. Hence they parted with reciprocal expressions of regret and benediction. Mr. Park had nothing to bestow on them but his prayers and good wishes, and it afforded him some consolation to be assured, that they knew he had no more to give.

to reside at Pisania till the doctor returned: he accepted the invitation, and, accompanied by his friend Karfa, repaired to Mr. Ainsley's mansion.

Here that gentleman's schooner was lying at anchor before the place, which astonished Karfa more than any thing he had before seen. He could form no adequate idea of the masts, sails, and rigging; nor could he suppose it possible by any sort of contrivance, to move so large a body forwards by the force only of the wind. He carefully inspected the construction of the vessel, and the filling up the seams to exclude the water; which, added to his surprise on viewing the cable and anchor, kept him in deep meditation for the remainder of the day.

On the 12th about noon, Dr. Laidley returned from Doomasansa, and received Mr. Park with equal astonishment and pleasure. Finding his wearing apparel had not been sent to England, our traveller now resumed his English dress, and caused his chin to be deprived of its venerable incumbrance. Karfa surveyed him with delight in his British apparel, but appeared chagrined at the loss of his beard, which he said had transformed him from a man to a boy. Mr. Park had before given this worthy old man a bill upon Dr. Laidley for the value of one prime slave, before they left Kamalia, to prevent his being a loser by his kindness if he should die on the journey. But our traveller now thought double that sum almost too poor a recompence: Dr. Laidley therefore undertook to deliver him goods to that amount, whenever he thought proper to send for them; and also to discharge all the other pecuniary engagements Mr. Park had entered into since his departure from the Gambia; taking his draft upon the African Association for the amount of the whole. Mr. Park also committed to the care of Karfa a handsome present intended for the good old schoolmaster, Fancooma at Malcotta; and Dr. Laidley promised to assist him in the advantageous disposal of his slaves.

These, and many other instances of kindness and attention, shewn by Dr. Laidley, were not thrown away upon Karfa. Often did he declare to our traveller, "My journey has indeed been prosperous." Observing the excellence of our manufactures, and our wonderful superiority in the arts of civilized life, he would sometimes exclaim, with an involuntary sigh, "Black men are nothing!" On other occasions he frequently expressed his surprise that any consideration could have induced Mr. Park, who was no trader, to think of visiting so wretched a country as Africa? Intimating, that, after what he must have known of his country, nothing in Africa could deserve a moment of his attention. These little traits of character in the worthy Negro are thus minutely given, to demonstrate that he possessed a mind above the sphere of his condition. To such as delight in contemplating human nature in all its varieties, and to deduce its progress from rudeness to refinement, it is presumed, the account of this progress of the poor African will not be unacceptable.

As the rainy season was now setting in, Mr. Park persuaded Karfa to return to his people at Jindey; and they parted from each other on the 14th with unaffected tenderness, but as our traveller had little hopes of quitting Africa during the remainder of the year, he informed him, as the fact really was, that he expected to see him again before his departure. In this, however, he was fortunately disappointed; a circumstance happening which hastened our traveller's narrative to a conclusion; for on the 15th the ship Charles-Town, an American vessel, commanded by Mr. Charles Harris, entered the river; and on the 17th of June, he embarked on board that vessel at Kaye, to return by a circuitous route to his own country. She came for slaves, intending to touch at Goree to fill up; and to proceed from thence to South Carolina. As the European merchants on the Gambia, had now a great many slaves on hand, they agreed with the captain to purchase the whole of his cargo, consisting principally of rum and tobacco; and deliver him slaves to the whole amount in the course of two days. This afforded him such an opportunity of returning, (though by a circuitous route) to his native country, as he could not think of neglecting; he therefore immediately engaged his passage in this vessel for America; and having taken leave of Dr. Laidley, to whose kindness he was largely indebted, as well as his other friends on the river, he embarked at Kaye on the 17th of June.

The passage down the river was tedious and fatiguing, the weather hot and unhealthy: before the ship arrived at Goree, the surgeon, four of the seamen, and three of the slaves were taken off by fevers; and six or eight while it continued there, having waited till the beginning of October to take in provisions, and more slaves on board. The whole number was one hundred and thirty; among

among whom twenty-five had probably been of free condition, as most of them could write a little Arabic: nine of them were captives taken in the religious war between Abdulkader and Damel; two of them had seen Mr. Park at Bondou, and many others had heard of him in the interior.

The surgeon being dead, Mr. Park occupied his place; and his humane treatment, with the additional advantage of being able to converse with them in their native language, afforded the poor captives the greatest consolation. They certainly required every consolation in his power to bestow; not that he observed any acts of wanton cruelty practised, either by the master or the seamen, towards them; but the mode of confining and securing the Negroes in the* American slave ships, being abundantly more rigid and severe than in British vessels employed in the same traffic, occasions a general sickness among the poor creatures. Beside the three who died on the Gambia, and six or seven while they remained at Goree, eleven perished at sea, and many of the survivors were reduced to a weak and emaciated condition. After having been three weeks at sea, the vessel became so leaky that constant exertion was required at the pumps. The ablest of the Negroes were exonerated of their irons, and indulged with this employment, in which they frequently laboured to excess, and far beyond their strength. The leak increasing, notwithstanding their utmost efforts to clear the vessel, the seamen insisted on bearing way for the West Indies, as the only method to be taken for the preservation of the lives of the crew. Accordingly, after some objections on the part of the master, they directed their course for Antigua, and fortunately made that island, in about thirty-five days after their departure from Goree; yet, even in this trip, they narrowly escaped destruction; for, on approaching the north-west side of the island, they struck on the Diamond rock, and it was with the utmost difficulty that they got into Saint John's Harbour. The vessel was afterwards condemned as unfit for sea, and the slaves were ordered to be sold for the benefit of the owners.

Here our traveller remained ten days, when the Chesterfield packet, homeward bound from the Leeward Islands, touching at Antigua for the mail, he took his passage in that vessel, and sailed on the 24th of November; and, after a short tempestuous voyage, arrived at Falmouth on the 22d of December 1797, after an eventful absence of two years and seven months.

* The continuation or abolition of the slave trade has occasionally, for a series of years, been a theme of discussion for the members of the two British houses of parliament. Each side of this question has hitherto had a number of advocates, but the present moment seems to countenance the idea of an annihilation of that long-tolerated practice. Its advantages and disadvantages have frequently been enumerated, but many of the haranguers on that subject are to be suspected of interested motives.

THE END OF MUNGO PARK'S TRAVELS IN AFRICA.

STRICTURES

STRICTURES ON THE LIFE

OF

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK;

AND ON

HIS FIRST AND SECOND VOYAGES

TO THE

SOUTHERN HEMISPHERE.

Undertaken chiefly with a View of exploring that Hemisphere, and to observe the Transit of Venus over the Sun's Disk.

THIS celebrated circumnavigator was born at Marton, near great Ayton, in Yorkshire, on the 27th of October, 1728. His father, who moved in the humble sphere of a farmer's servant, married a young woman in a similar situation, and both were highly respected by their neighbours, for their honesty, industry, and sobriety. About the time that our navigator had completed the second year of his age, his father was appointed superintendent of a considerable farm named Airyholm, at Great Ayton, belonging to Thomas Scottowe, Esq. The terms of his new appointment being thought advantageous to the agriculturist, he quitted Marton, and repaired to Great Ayton, taking his family with him.

As his father continued long in this employment, his son naturally acted under his directions, with as much ability as his tender years would permit him; but the early part of his education appears to have been very inconsiderable. At the age of thirteen, however, he was under the tuition of Mr. Pullen, schoolmaster at Ayton, where he received the rudiments of Arithmetic and book-keeping, and is said to have made a very rapid progress in the science of numbers.

Early in the year 1745, when our young navigator was seventeen years of age, his father bound him an apprentice to William Sanderson, at Snaith, near Whitby, for the term of four years, to learn the grocery and haberdashery business. But this situation not suiting his natural propensity, and having a strong predilection for a maritime life, a year and a half's servitude terminated his engagement as a shopkeeper; and a trivial disagreement with his master occasioned the indentures to be cancelled. A circumstance that gave the young man great satisfaction, as it enabled him to follow the bent of his inclination.

In July 1746 he engaged in the service of Messrs. Walker of Whitby, for the term of three years, which he faithfully served to the perfect satisfaction of his masters. His first voyage was on board the Freelove of four hundred and fifty tons, principally employed in the coal trade from Newcastle to London.

In May 1748, his master employed him in rigging and fitting for sea, a new ship of six hundred tons, named the Three Brothers. This was done on the generous principle of improving him in his profession, and to qualify him for a better birth, when his articles of agreement should expire. Two coal voyages having been performed in this vessel, she was engaged in the service of government, and sent as a transport to Middleburgh, to convey troops to Dublin. These being landed at their destination, another corps was taken on board, and conveyed to

Liverpool. The ship then proceeded to Deptford, where she was paid off in April 1749. The remaining part of the season our navigator served on board her in the Norway trade.

Having honourably performed his engagements, he entered on board a ship in the Baltic trade, in which he continued about two years. In 1752, his old master appointed him mate of one of his ships, called the Friendship, in which he conducted himself for some time so much to the satisfaction of his owners, that he was offered the situation of captain, which he thought proper to decline.

In 1755, when hostilities commenced between Great Britain and France, Mr. Cook lay in the Thames. As press-warrants were then issued, he, at first, conceived an idea of endeavouring to conceal himself; but afterwards reflecting on the difficulty of adopting such a measure, he formed the resolution of entering as a volunteer in the royal navy. He went to a house of rendezvous at Wapping, and engaged in the king's service on board the Eagle, a sixty-gun ship then commanded by Captain Hamer. Captain, afterwards Sir Hugh Palliser, being appointed in the October following. Cook's extraordinary merit could not escape the attention of that intelligent commander, and he speedily advanced him to the quarter deck.

Cook's great merit having been frequently mentioned in the highest terms of panegyrick, several persons interested themselves in his behalf, and procured a letter of recommendation to his captain, from Mr. Osbaldeston, member for Scarborough, in which it was requested that he would point out in what manner they could contribute to his promotion. In consequence of Captain Palliser's recommendation and support, interest was made for a master's warrant, which he obtained to the Grampus sloop, in May 1759; but this appointment did not take place, the master having unexpectedly returned. In a few days, however, he was made master of the Garland, but in this he also met with a disappointment; for, on enquiry, it appeared that the ship had already sailed. At last he was appointed to the Mercury, destined for North America, under the command of Sir Charles Saunders, who, in conjunction with General Wolfe, was then engaged in the memorable siege of Quebec.

At the siege of Quebec he was intrusted by Sir Charles Saunders with the execution of important services, in the naval department. He was the pilot who conducted the boats to the attack of Montmorency; managed the embarkation to the heights of Abraham; and pointed out, by buoys, how the large ships might securely proceed up the river. The manner in which he acquitted himself in these important services, procured him the esteem and friendship of Sir Charles Saunders, and Lord Colville, who continued his zealous patrons during the remainder of their lives *.

Before this period Mr. Cook was supposed to be wholly unacquainted with the principles of drawing; but such was the vigour of his mind, and so great his aptitude to acquire knowledge, that he presently mastered every object to which he applied; and notwithstanding the disadvantages under which he laboured, he furnished the admiral with a very accurate and complete draught of the channel and its soundings.

When he was appointed master of the Northumberland, Lord Colville's flag-ship, who then commanded the squadron stationed on the coast of America, he devoted his leisure hours to the study of the mathematics. At Hallifax he first read Euclid's Elements, and studied astronomy. With the assistance of only a few books, and his own industry, he found means to cultivate his understanding, and supply, in some degree, the deficiencies of an early education.

On the 1st of April, 1760, he received a lieutenant's commission, and daily advanced in the career of glory. In September 1762, he assisted at the recapture of Newfoundland; after which the English fleet continued some time at Placentia, to restore that place to a better state

* During the siege of Quebec, the soundings of the river St. Lawrence were required to be taken, opposite to the French camp of Montmorency and Beauport. As this was a very difficult and a very dangerous service, and as Cook's sagacity and intrepidity were well known, Captain Palliser recommended him for the arduous task; and he executed his office in the completest manner, much to the satisfaction of his superiors, but not without encountering the most imminent danger. Being engaged in this pursuit for several successive nights, he was at length discovered by the enemy, who caused him to be surrounded with canoes, filled with Indians, when he had no other alternative than to make for the Isle of Orleans, where he was so closely pursued, that he had hardly leaped from the bow of the boat, before the Indians entered the stern, and carried her off in triumph.

of

of defence. Here our navigator had another opportunity of displaying his diligence and zeal in the service of his country. By surveying the harbour and heights of that place, he attracted the notice of captain, afterwards admiral Graves, at that time governor of Newfoundland. By entering into conversation with him, he found him possessed of so much judgment and intelligence, that he conceived a very high opinion of his abilities in general, and particularly of his nautical skill; and by cultivating a longer acquaintance with him, he daily became more prepossessed in his favour.

His frame and constitution were robust, and qualified him for the severest hardships. When necessity required it, he could feed on the coarsest and most unpalatable food; and submit to every kind of self denial with the greatest composure and indifference. Nor were the qualities of his mind less vigorous than those of his body. His understanding was strong and perspicacious: his judgment, especially in those matters in which he was more particularly engaged, quick, and infallible. His designs and operations were the natural result of a great original genius. His valour was cool, deliberate, and determined; accompanied with a most astonishing presence of mind on the approach of danger. His manners were plain, easy, and unaffected. His temper was, however, too much under the influence of hastiness and passion; but it must also be remembered, that his disposition was the most benevolent and humane.

These are a few outlines of the character of Captain Cook; but its distinguishing feature was, the most unremitting perseverance to accomplish his design, in opposition to dangers, difficulties, and discouragements. During all his long and perilous voyages, his eagerness and activity were never in the least abated. No alluring incitement could detain him for a moment: even those intervals of recreation, which unavoidably occurred in the course of his services, and were gladly embraced by many of his officers, were submitted to by him with indifference, if they could not be made subservient to the more effectual prosecution of his designs.

The result of his services we shall briefly touch upon, under two principal heads, *viz.* Geography and Navigation, placing each in a distinct and separate point of view. No science, it is presumed, has ever received greater additions from the labours of one man, than geography has done from those of Captain Cook.

His *First Voyage* was undertaken chiefly with a view of exploring the Southern Hemisphere, and to observe the transit of Venus over the Sun's Disk. It having been long calculated that the planet Venus would pass over the Sun's Disk in 1769, it was the general opinion of the scientific world, that the most proper place for observing this phenomenon, would be either at the Marquesas, or at one of those islands to which Tasman has given the several appellations of Amsterdam, Rotterdam, and Middleburgh; but which are now better known under the general title of the Friendly Isles. This being a matter of much importance in the science of Astronomy, the Royal Society, with a laudable zeal for its advancement, presented a memorial to his Majesty, requesting, among other things, that a vessel might be fitted out at the expence of government, to convey proper persons to observe this transit at one of these places.

Mr. Stephens having recommended Lieutenant Cook to superinted this expedition; and that recommendation being strengthened by the testimony of Sir Hugh Palliser, who was well acquainted with Mr. Cook's merit and abilities for the discharge of such a trust, he was appointed to this distinguished post by the lords commissioners, and promoted to the rank of lieutenant of the Royal Navy.

This appointment having taken place, Sir Hugh Palliser was commissioned to provide a vessel adapted for such a voyage. After examining several ships then lying in the Thames, in conjunction with Mr. Cook, he at last fixed on the Endeavour, a vessel of three hundred and seventy tons, which had been built for the coal trade.

Captain Wallis returned, about this time, from his voyage round the World; and, having signified to the Royal Society, that Port Royal Harbour in King George's Island, now called Otaheite, would be the most convenient place for observing the transit, his opinion was adopted, and the observers were ordered to repair thither.

Mr. Charles Green, the coadjutor of Dr. Bradley, the Astronomer Royal, was nominated to assist Captain Cook, in conducting the astronomical part of the undertaking. He was also accompanied by Joseph Banks, Esq. whose elevation to a baronetage, has since reflected honour on his sovereign and the order. This friend of science,

science, at an early period of life, possessed of an opulent fortune, and zealous to apply it to the best purposes, embarked on this hazardous enterprize, animated with the wish of improving himself, and extending the bounds of knowledge: two draughtsmen, a secretary, and four servants composed his retinue. Dr. Solander, an ingenious and learned Swede, also joined the expedition. The complement of the Endeavour consisted of eighty-four persons: she was victualled for eighteen months, and ten carriage and twelve swivel guns, with abundance of ammunition, and all manner of stores were taken on board.

In this First Voyage, Captain Cook discovered the Society Islands; ascertained the insularity of New Zealand; and discriminated the straits which separate the two islands, and are called after his name. He explored the eastern coast of New Holland, till then unknown; an extent of twenty-seven degrees of latitude, and upwards of two thousand miles.

The *Second Voyage* of Captain Cook, was to complete the discovery of the Southern Hemisphere; which had for ages been considered, by some of the ablest geographers, as containing another continent. To ascertain this fact, two ships were fitted; and that nothing might be omitted which could facilitate the enterprise, they were furnished with every requisite, which a liberal attention to the health and happiness of the crew could devise.

These vessels, which were built upon a particular construction, were purchased of Captain Hammond of Hull. The largest was named the Resolution, of four hundred and sixty-two tons burthen, Captain James Cook, commander: the other was named the Adventure, of three hundred and thirty-six tons, Captain Tobias Furneaux, who had been promoted from the rank of lieutenant. The Resolution had one hundred and twelve persons on board, officers included; and the Adventure eighty one. Mr. Forster, and his son, both eminent naturalists; and Mr. Wales, mathematical master of Christ's Hospital, accompanied them. On the 13th of June 1772, the two ships sailed from Plymouth Sound; and on the evening of the 29th, anchored in Fanchiale Road, in the island of Madeira.

In this *Second Expedition,* Captain Cook gave a resolution to the great problem of a southern continent; having so completely traversed that hemisphere, as not to leave a possibility of its existence, unless it is so near the pole, as to be beyond the reach of navigation. New Caledonia, the largest island in the Southern Pacific, except New Zealand, was discovered in this voyage. Also the island of Georgia; and an unknown coast, on which the captain bestowed the appellation of Sandwich land; and, having twice visited the tropical seas, he settled the situations of the old, and made several new discoveries.

Captain Cook judiciously concludes his account of this second voyage round the World, in the following words, "It doth not become me to say how far the principal objects of our voyage have been obtained. Had we found out a continent there, we might have been better enabled to gratify curiosity; but we hope our not having found it, after all our persevering researches, will leave less room for future speculation about unknown worlds remaining to be explored.

"But, whatever may be the public judgment about other matters, it is with great satisfaction, and without claiming any merit but of attention to my duty, that I can conclude this account with an observation, which facts enable me to make, that our having discovered the possibility of preserving health amongst a numerous ship's company, for such a length of time, in such varieties of climate, and amidst such continued hardships and fatigues, will make this voyage remarkable in the opinion of every benevolent person, when the disputes about a southern continent shall have ceased to have engaged the attention, and to divide the judgment of philosophers."

As the first and second voyages of Captain Cook were undertaken chiefly to explore the Southern Hemisphere, and to observe the transit of Venus over the Sun's Disk, objects which are now accomplished; and as those subjects, though fully investigated and explained, are not sufficiently interesting to be entitled to a circumstantial repetition at this period, a minute detail has been purposely avoided, in conformity to the necessary brevity of our proposed plan: but

THE THIRD VOYAGE OF CAPTAIN COOK,

For making Discoveries in the Northern Hemisphere,

Will be fully and circumstantially narrated, as its importance deserves.

NORTH AMERICA
ASIA
NORTH PACIFIC OCEAN
ATLANTIC OCEAN
GREENLAND
BAFFINS BAY
HUDSONS BAY
LABRADOR
NEWFOUNDLAND
SOUTH WALE
LOUISIANA
GEORGIA
KENTUCKY
PENSYLVANIA
VIRGINIA
NEW YORK
NEW MEXICO
NEW HAVARRA
CALIFORNIA
GULF OF MEXICO
CARIBBEAN SEA
BAHAMA ISLES
CUBA
JAMAICA
HONDURAS
SOUTH AMERICA
Longitude West 100 from London.
Drawn & Engraved by J. Russell Camden Town.
London. Published Dec.r 2d 1809, by J. Stratford, No. 112 Holborn Hill.

A

VOYAGE

TO THE

PACIFIC OCEAN,

FOR

MAKING DISCOVERIES IN THE NORTHERN HEMISPHERE.

PERFORMED UNDER THE DIRECTION OF

CAPTAINS COOK, CLERKE, AND GORE.

In the Years 1776, 1777, 1778, 1779, and 1780.

SECTION I.

Captains Cook and Clerke appointed to the Resolution and Discovery—Prepare for the Voyage—Sail from Deptford—Proceed to Plymouth—Employment there—Departure of the Resolution—The Resolution proceeds to Teneriffe—Captain Cook visits the Governor—Some Account of Santa Cruz Road—Supplies to be procured in Abundance—The Cities of Santa Cruz and Lagana described—Agriculture—Natural History, Climate, Produce, &c.

ON the 10th of February 1776, captain Cook hoisted the pendant on board his Majesty's sloop the Resolution, having received a commission to command her the preceding day. Captain Clerke was at the same time appointed to the command of the Discovery, of three hundred tons, prepared for that purpose. It may not be unnecessary to observe, that captain Clerke had been captain Cook's second lieutenant on board the Resolution, in his second voyage round the World.

Both ships being abundantly supplied with every thing requisite for such a voyage, sailed on the 29th of May, and arrived the following day at Long Reach, where they received their powder and shot, and other ordnance stores. On the 8th of June, they had the honour of a visit from the earl of Sandwich, Sir Hugh Palliser, and others of the board of Admiralty, to examine whether their orders had been strictly complied with in the equipment. This respectable party also dined with captain Cook on that day, and were saluted, on their arrival and departure, with seventeen guns and three cheers.

To afford permanent benefit to the inhabitants of Otaheite, and other islands, his Majesty commanded some useful animals to be taken out. On the 10th they took on board a bull, two cows accompanied with their calves, and several sheep; with hay and corn for their support. They were also supplied with a sufficient quantity of valuable European seeds, to add to the vegetable productions of the newly-discovered islands. Both ships were also amply provided with a general assortment of iron tools and trinkets, to enable them to carry on a friendly commerce and intercourse with the inhabitants, to their mutual advantage and convenience*.

Mr. Anderson, surgeon to captain Cook, added to his professional abilities, a competent knowledge of natural history. The necessary preparations being completed, captain Cook was ordered to proceed to Plymouth, and to take the Discovery under his command; in consequence of which he directed captain Clerke to take his ship also round to Plymouth.

The Resolution and Discovery sailed from Long Reach on the 15th of June, and anchored

* They also received on board a variety of mathematical and nautical instruments, which the board of longitude intrusted to captain Cook and Mr. King. The board likewise furnished them with the time-keeper, which captain Cook had taken out in his last voyage, and which had performed so well.

at the Nore the same evening. The Discovery proceeded the next day, and the Resolution continued at the Nore till captain Cook, who was then in London, should join her. As they intended to touch at Otaheite, and the Society Islands, they engaged to take Omai back to his native country: accordingly captain Cook and he set out from London on the 24th, and proceeded to Chatham; from whence commissioner Proby ordered his yacht to convey them to Sheerness, where the captain's boat was ready to take them on board the Resolution*.

On the 25th they weighed anchor, and made sail for the Downs; in the evening they anchored, with the North Foreland bearing south by east, and Margate point south-west by south. On the 26th they weighed , and anchored in the Downs in the forenoon; when Captain Cook received two boats on board, which had been built for him at Deal. At ten in the evening they weighed again, and proceeded down the Channel.

In the afternoon of the 30th they anchored at Plymouth Sound: the Discovery having arrived there three days before. They saluted Admiral Amherst, whose flag was flying on board the Ocean, who instantly returned the compliment. Having taken in an additional quantity of water and provisions to supply what had been expended, Captain Cook received instructions to proceed to the Cape of Good Hope with the Resolution; after having left directions for Captain Clerke to follow him, as soon as he should join his ship, he being at that time in London. The number of men on board the Resolution, (including officers and marines) was one hundred and twelve; the Discovery had only eighty men. On the 10th of July the officers and crew were paid up to the 30th of the preceding month: the petty officers and seamen also received two months wages in advance.

In the morning of the 11th, Captain Cook delivered to Mr. Burney, first lieutenant of the Discovery, Captain Clerke's sailing orders; a copy of which was also left at Plymouth to be delivered to the captain on his arrival. In the afternoon they weighed, and got out beyond all the shipping in the Sound, where they were detained the greater part of the following day. In the evening they weighed again, and stood out of the Sound, with a gentle breeze at north-west by west.

Proceeding from Plymouth Sound, they were off the Lizard at eight in the evening on the 14th. On the 16th at noon, the light-house of St. Agnes, on the isles of Scilly, bore north-west by west, and on the 17th and 18th they were off Ushant. On the 22d in the morning, they saw Cape Ortegal about four leagues distant; and passed Cape Finisterre, with a fine gale at north north-east. They saw Teneriffe on the 31st of July in the afternoon; and on the 1st of August they anchored on the south-side, in the road of Santa Cruz.

Soon after they had anchored, they were visited by the master of the port, who asked the name of the ship. Captain Cook having presented his respects to the governor, and solicited his permission to take in water and other necessaries, the governor politely complied with his request, and sent an officer on board to compliment him on his arrival. Captain Cook waited personally on the governor in the afternoon; and before he returned to the ship, contracted for some corn and straw, and a quantity of wine; he also made an agreement for a sufficient supply of water. The water for the shipping, and for the use of the inhabitants of Santa Cruz, is derived from a rivulet running from the hills, which is conveyed into the town in wooden troughs; and as those troughs were at that time repairing, fresh water was procured with additional difficulty and expence.

From the appearance of the country near Santa Cruz, it might be taken for a very barren spot; but ample supplies were produced to furnish the inhabitants with provisions, and other necessaries, and to answer the demands of visitors. Though wine is the principal produce of the island, beef might be purchased at about three pence sterling per pound; but the oxen are small,

* Though Omai left London with some regret, reflecting on the indulgences he had received there; yet when any mention was made of his own islands, his eyes sparkled with joy. Though he entertained the highest idea of this country and its inhabitants, he enjoyed the more pleasing prospect of returning home, fully expecting to obtain a most distinguished superiority among his countrymen: he appeared to be extremely happy on his entrance into the ship which was destined to convey him to his native wilds. He was furnished by his majesty with every article, that could be supposed to be held in estimation at Otaheite, and lord Sandwich and Mr. Banks made him presents of many others.

lean,

lean, and bony. Sheep, goats, hogs, and poultry may be had on reasonable terms, and great variety of fruits are plentiful and cheap. The potatoes, pumpkins, and onions produced here, are remarkably excellent. Indian corn, the produce of this island, was sold at about three shillings and six-pence per bushel. The road of Santa Cruz is situated on the south-east side of the island, before the town of the same name; and is reputed to be the principal road to Teneriffe for shelter, extent, and the goodness of its bottom.

Teneriffe is a much more eligible place than Madeira, for ships to touch at which are destined to long voyages; but the wine of the latter greatly excels that of the former; their qualities may indeed be estimated from the difference of the respective prices: the best Teneriffe wine was sold for twelve pounds a pipe; when a pipe of the best Madeira produced more than double that sum.

Behind the town of Santa Cruz, the country at first rises gradually, and afterwards continues to rise towards the celebrated pic of Teneriffe*. Santa Cruz is a well-built city, but not large. Their churches are not magnificent externally, but they are neat and tolerably handsome within. Almost facing the stone pier, which extends from the town to the sea, a marble column has lately been erected, enriched with human figures which reflect honour on the statuary.

The city of Laguna, situated at the distance of four miles from Santa Cruz, hardly deserves the dignified appellation of city; though it is extensive, and contains some good houses: the disposition of the streets is extremely irregular. The corn in the neighbourhood is not produced without great labour, the soil being so much encumbered with stones: hardly any thing else is to be perceived, except a few aloe plants in flower on the side of the road.

Laborious work is chiefly performed here by mules, horses being generally reserved for the use of officers. Oxen are much employed. Hawks and parrots, which were natives of the island, were sometimes seen; as well as sea-gulls, partridges, swallows, black-birds, and canaries. Lizards, locusts, and several sorts of dragon flies were also observed. A shrub is common here, corresponding exactly with the description given by Linneus, of the tea-shrub growing in China and Japan. It is considered as a weed, large quantities of which are annually rooted out of the vineyards. The Spaniards, however, who inhabit the island, often use it, and ascribe to it all the qualities of the tea imported from China †.

The trade at Teneriffe is considerable, forty thousand pipes of wine being annually made there. The inhabitants found here, when the Spaniards first discovered the Canaries, are no longer a distinct race, having uniformly intermarried with the Spanish settlers; their descendants, however, are recognised by their being remarkably tall, strong, and bony. The men are tawny, and the women pale. The inhabitants of Teneriffe, in general, are decent, grave, civil, and solemn.

* A modern traveller, (the Chevalier de Borda) who measured the height of this mountain in August 1776, makes it 12340 English feet.

' This celebrated mountain cannot be ascended, on account of the snows, except from the middle of July to the end of August. First occur pumices, interspersed with obsidian of beautiful and various colours, followed by broken lava. The summit resembles a cone placed on a table, or rather small base, and can only be ascended by a zig-zag path on the south. The cold is extreme, the nails become black, and the hands and feet swell. In the middle of the summit is a deep reversed cone, called a cauldron, about fifty fathoms in diameter, and bordered with hideous calcined rocks, mostly red or white, the perpendicular depth being one hundred and fifty feet: at the bottom are perceivable reddish spots, upon a kind of white earth like plaster, and mingled with sulphur, which is sometimes so volatile as to evaporate from paper, and if folded up will escape, after burning the paper and the pocket. Around are many little mouths, from one to four inches in diameter, which at short intervals respire, as it were, a thick hot fetid smoke. The largest hole, about eight inches in diameter, is within the crater, exhaling with a sound like the bellowing of a bull; and the smoke is so hot as instantly to burn the hair of the hand. *Pinkerton's Mod. Geo.* II. 765.

† A sort of grape is produced here which is deemed an excellent remedy in phthisical complaints. The air and climate are particularly salutary for persons afflicted with such maladies. By the choice of different heights in the island, a rational person may procure a temperature of air adapted to his constitution: he may select a mild and salubrious air, or ascend progressively higher till the climate becomes intolerably cold. No one, it is said, can exist comfortably within a mile of the perpendicular height of the pic, after the month of August. Smoke continually issues from near the top of the pic, but no earthquake or eruption has happened since 1704, when the port of Garrachia was destroyed. Rivers of burning lava then flowed into it, and houses are now erected where ships formerly lay at anchor.

SECT.

SECTION II.

Departure from Teneriffe—Danger apprehended from sunken Rocks—Isle of Mayo—Precautions against Rain and Heat near the Equator—Coast of Brazil—Arrival at the Cape of Good Hope—Captain Cook loses some Sheep—Joins the Discovery—Mr. Anderson's Excursion up the Country—Leave the Cape of Good Hope—See Prince Edward's Islands—Some Account of them—Visit Kerguelen's Land—Christmas Harbour—Description of Christmas Harbour.

HAVING taken a supply of water and other articles on board, they weighed anchor on the 4th of August, departed from Teneriffe, and proceeded on the voyage. On the 10th in the evening, they saw the island of Bonavista at the distance of about a league: they supposed indeed they were further off, but after hauling to the eastward, to avoid the sunken rocks near the south-east point of the island, they found themselves so close upon them that it was with difficulty they weathered the breakers. Their situation was for some minutes so alarming, that Captain Cook did not choose to sound, as it might have increased the danger without a possibility of lessening it.

The rocks at length being cleared, they steered between Bonavista and the island of Mayo, intending to look into Port Praya for the Discovery, as Captain Cook informed Captain Clerke he should touch there. On the 12th, at six in the morning, the isle of Mayo bore south south-east, distant about four leagues; on sounding, they found ground at sixty fathoms. They saw nothing on this island that had the appearance of vegetation; a lifeless brown only presented itself to their view, the uniform vesture of unwooded countries under the torrid zone. While they continued among these islands, they experienced gentle breezes of wind, and some calms: on the 13th they arrived at Port Praya, in the island of St. Jago; but the Discovery not being there, they declined going in, and stood to the southward.

The wind, during this interval, was principally in the south-west quarter: it generally blew a gentle breeze, but sometimes fresh and squalli; calms were rather uncommon. Sometimes the weather was very gloomy, and so rainy, that they were enabled to fill the greatest part of their empty casks with water. Disagreeable consequences are to be apprehended from these rains, when they are accompanied with sultry weather. Commanders of ships should carefully purify the air between decks, with fire and smoke, and cause the people to change their clothes as often as possible*.

A fresh gale from the north-west arose, and continued two days: this was succeeded by variable light airs for about twenty-four hours, when the north-west wind again blew fresh. On the 17th they saw the Cape of Good Hope, and on the 18th anchored in Table-Bay. After the usual visit from the master-attendant and the surgeon, Captain Cook dispatched an officer to Baron Plettenberg, the governor. Reciprocal salutes having been given and received with thirteen guns, from the ship and the governor, Captain Cook went on shore, properly attended, and waited on the governor, the lieutenant-governor, the fiscal, and the commander of the troops; from whom he received a voluntary promise of their best services.

On the 31st of October it blew extremely hard at south-east, and continued for three successive days. The storm, however, ceased on the 3d of November, and in the morning of the 10th the Discovery arrived in the bay. As that ship required caulking, Captain Cook sent all his workmen on board her, and lent every assistance to expedite a supply of provisions and water.

* On the 1st of September they crossed the equator, and in the afternoon performed the accustomed ceremony of ducking those who had not crossed it before. On the 8th they were a little to the southward of Cape St. Augustine. Proceeding on their voyage, nothing remarkable occurred for a considerable time; they had before seen albatrosses, and pintadoes, and they then observed three penguins; on sounding, they found no ground with a line of a hundred and fifty fathoms. On the 8th a bird called a noddy settled on the rigging, and was taken. It was larger than the common blackbird, and nearly of the same colour, except on the upper part of the head, which was white; it had black legs, and a long black bill; it was also web-footed.

The

The governor having permitted them to take their cattle on shore, on the night preceding the 14th, some dogs were tempted to visit the ship; and, forcing them out of the pen, killed four of them, and dispersed the rest. Six of them were restored the next day, but among those which were missing were two rams, and two of the finest ewes. At length, after much trouble and expence, they recovered all but the two ewes; but one of the rams was so miserably torn by the dogs, that his preservation was extremely doubtful.

While the ships were refitting for the prosecution of the voyage, Mr. Anderson, and some of the officers, took an excursion to survey the adjacent territory, the result of which is related by Mr. Anderson to the following effect: In the forenoon of the 16th of November, he, and five others, set out in a waggon to take a transient view of the country; they crossed a large plain to the eastward of the town, consisting wholly of white sand. At five in the afternoon they passed a large farm-house, some corn fields, and several vineyards, situated beyond the plain where the soil appeared to be worth cultivating; at seven they reached Stellenbosh, a colony next to that of the Cape in point of importance. The village is situated at the foot of a range of mountains, twenty miles to the eastward of Cape-Town, consisting of about thirty decent houses; a rivulet, and the shelter of some large oaks planted at the first settling, form a rural prospect.

Few plants appeared in flower, and insects were extremely scarce. Mr. Anderson and his companions left Stellenbosh the next morning, and repaired to the house of Mr. Cloeder, who had sent them an invitation to visit him, and treated them with the greatest politeness and hospitality. A band of music attended at their reception, and a concert entertained them while they were at dinner; the whole constituting an elegant repast in that remote situation.

Crossing the country in the afternoon, they passed some large plantations, and in the evening arrived at a farm-house called the *pearl*. From hence they had a view of Drakenstein, the third colony of the country, containing several little farms. Plants and insects were not more abundant here than at Stellenbosh, but shrubs or small trees were more numerous *.

On the 20th they set out from the Pearl, and, pursuing a different road, passed through an uncultivated country to the Tyger Hills, where several corn fields presented themselves. Stopping about noon in a valley for refreshment, they were tormented with myriads of musquitoes, and in the evening arrived at the Cape-Town.

Fearing a second disaster, Captain Cook got his sheep, and other cattle, on board as soon as possible: he also purchased two additional bulls, and the same number of heifers, stone-horses, mares, and rams. He also increased his stock with some goats, rabbits, and poultry. Both ships were supplied with a sufficient quantity of provisions, and water for the consumption of two years; and Captain Cook having furnished Captain Clerke with a copy of his instructions, they went on board on the 30th. At five o'clock they weighed and stood out of the bay, but a calm happening at nine, they anchored. At three the next morning they weighed and put to sea, with a light breeze at south, but did not get clear of land till the 3d of December.

On the 5th a squall of wind carried away the mizen top-mast of the Resolution, but they fortunately had another to supply its place; on the 6th they observed several spots of water of a reddish hue, which, on examination, appeared to be a number of very small animals resembling cray-fish. Continuing to the south-east, they were followed by a mountainous sea, which agitated the ship so exceedingly, that the cattle became troublesome: and several of the goats and sheep died in consequence of it; the cold now began to be intense.

Land was perceived about noon on the 12th, which was afterwards discovered to be two islands; one was about fifteen leagues in circumference, and the other hardly exceeding

* On the 19th they were conducted to survey a remarkable large stone, named by the inhabitants, the Tower of Babylon, or the Pearl Diamond. It stands upon some low hills, and is of an oblong shape, lying nearly south and north; the east and west sides are almost perpendicular. The south-end is its greatest height, whence it declines gently to the north part, by which this party ascended, and enjoyed an extensive prospect of the whole country. The circumference of this stone is about half a mile, and its height appears to be about equal to the dome of St. Paul's; it is one uninterrupted mass of stone, with the exception of some few fissures. It is of that sort which the mineralogists call *Saxum Conglutinatum.*

nine. Passing at nearly an equal distance from both these islands, they could not discover a tree or shrub in either of them; they seemed to have a rocky shore, and on every side except towards the south-east parts, a number of barren mountains, whose sides and summits are covered with snow, present their hoary heads to the observing traveller. These two islands, and four others farther to the east, were discovered by Captains Marion du Fresne and Crozet, in January, 1772, on their passage from the Cape of Good Hope to the Philippine islands. As they are not named in the French chart of the southern hemisphere, Captain Cook called two of them Prince Edward's islands, and the other four he denominated Marion's and Crozet's islands.

After leaving Prince Edward's islands, they shaped their course to pass to the southward of the four others, to get into the latitude of the land discovered by Kerguelen. On the 16th they saw plenty of penguins and divers, and a quantity of rock-weed floating upon the sea: on the 21st they perceived a large seal, though the weather was then so foggy, that they were hourly apprehensive of falling in with the land, and their navigation was as tedious as it was dangerous.

In the morning of the 24th the fog began to clear away, and land was seen bearing to the south-east, which afterwards proved to be an island of considerable height, and three leagues in circumference. Another of nearly equal magnitude, was perceived about a league to the eastward; and between these two, some smaller islands were scattered. Another high island was also observed, in the direction of south by east; the navigators only just weathered the island last mentioned, which was a round exalted rock, denominated Bligh's Cap. Captain Cook supposed this to be the same that Kerguelen called the Isle of Rendezvous; though he admitted that nothing could rendezvous at it but the fowls of the air, it being inaccessible to every other animal.

The weather clearing up about eleven, they tacked, and steered in for the land; they saw it soon after, and at four o'clock it seemed to extend from south-east to south-west, distant about four miles. Towards the middle of the land they thought they perceived an inlet, but on their approaching, they found it was only a bending on the shore. The coast to the southward was very much indented by points and bays, which seemed to indicate that a good harbour might be found among them; they had discovered one, into which they had began to ply, but as the weather became calm, they anchored in forty-five fathom water; the Discovery anchored there soon after. Early on the 25th they weighed, and having wrought into the harbour, anchored in eight fathoms water; the Discovery got in at two in the afternoon.

After they had anchored, captain Cook ordered the boats to be hoisted out, and the empty water-casks to be produced. He then landed to search for a commodious spot where they might be filled, and to make other necessary observations. Vast quantities of penguins, and other birds, as well as seals, were found on shore. The latter, though not numerous, were so insensible of fear, that they killed them without difficulty, appropriating their fat and blubber to feed their lamps with oil. Fresh water was extremely plentiful, but not a tree or shrub was to be perceived. In the evening they hauled the seine, but had very indifferent success. The experiment was again adopted the succeeding day, but it was equally unproductive; their only resource, therefore, for fresh provisions, was birds, which were indeed innumerable*.

This

* On the 26th they began to fill water, and to cut grass for the cattle, which they found at a little distance from the head of the harbour. The people having laboured hard for two successive days in procuring water, Captain Cook indulged them with the 27th of December, as a day of rest for the celebration of Christmas. In consequence of which many of them repaired to the shore, and made different excursions into the country, which they found extremely desolate and barren. In the evening one of them presented a quart bottle to Captain Cook, which they had found in the harbour, fastened with wire to a projecting rock: this bottle contained a slip of parchment, on which was written

Ludovico XV. *Galliarum*
Rege, et d de Boynes,*
Regi a Secretis ad res
aMritima Annis, 1772, *et*
1773.

It appears from this inscription, that they were not the first Europeans who had visited this harbour. It was supposed

* This is perhaps a contraction of the word *Domino*.

This is the first inlet on the south side of Cape François, which forms the northern side of the harbour; the head of it lies open to only two points of the compass, which are covered by islands in the offing, so that a sea cannot fall in to hurt a ship.

In the afternoon Captain Cook, accompanied by his second lieutenant, went upon Cape François, expecting from that elevation to have a distinct view of the coast, and the adjacent islands; but every object below them was enveloped in an impenetrable fog. They had a perfect view of what was even with them, or of a greater height, which had indeed a very naked and desolate appearance. On their return to the ship they found her unmoored, and ready to put to sea, but they did not weigh anchor till the morning.

SECTION III.

Leave Christmas Harbour—Cape Cumberland—Howe's Foreland—Remarkable Beds of Rock Weed—Shoals—Arrive at Port Palliser—Cape George—Natural History of Animals, Plants, &c.—Kerguelen's Land—Passage of the Ships to Van Diemen's Land—Arrival in Adventure Bay—Different Interviews with the Inhabitants—Manners, Customs, and Dress—Remarks on the Language and Natural Productions of the Country.

THEY sailed out of Christmas Harbour on the 29th of December, with a fine breeze and clear weather, though fogs had generally prevailed for several days before. They were off a promontory, afterwards called Cape Cumberland, about eight o'clock. Off Cape Cumberland, a small island presents itself, on the summit of which a rock is conspicuous, resembling a sentry box, whence the island obtained the appellation of Sentry-Box island. A group of small islands and rocks appear about two miles farther to the eastward; they sailed between these and Sentry-Box island, the breadth of the channel being about a mile.

The land which first opened off Cape François, was at first supposed to be an island, but they afterwards found it to be a peninsula, joined to the coast by a low isthmus. The bay formed by this peninsula was named Repulse Bay, and the northern point of the peninsula obtained the name of Howe's Foreland, in honour of Lord Howe. The land of this peninsula is of a tolerable height, and of a rocky substance: the coast is low, and much resorted to by sea-birds. Several seals were also observed upon the beaches *.

Seeing some inlets, Captain Clerke, by the directions of Captain Cook, discovered a harbour, in which they anchored in fifteen fathoms water. As soon as the ships were secured, the

posed by Captain Cook to have been left by M. de Boisquehenneu, who went on shore the 13th of February, 1772, the day on which Kerguelen discovered this land; but in this respect the captain appears to have been mistaken, for how could Boisquehenneu, in 1772, leave an inscription which commemorates a transaction of the following year? Captain Cook, willing to give evidence of his having been at this harbour, wrote the following memorial on the other side of the parchment:

Naves Resolution
et Discovery,
De Rege Magnæ Britanniæ,
Decembris, 1776.

Depositing the parchment again in the bottle, accompanied with a silver two-penny coin of 1772, the captain covered the mouth of it with a piece of lead, and the next day placed it in a pile of stones on an eminence, near the place where it was found. Here he also displayed the British flag, proclaiming the place Christmas Harbour, having arrived in it on that festival.

* Having cleared the rocks and islands, the sea before them seemed chequered with large beds of rock-weed which adhered to the bottom. There is frequently great depth of water upon such shoals; though the lead was continually going, they never struck ground with a line of sixty fathoms. At length they discovered a lurking rock, in the middle of one of these beds of weeds, and even with the surface of the sea, which was sufficiently alarming to render them extremely cautious. They were now about eight miles to the southward of Howe's Foreland, across the mouth of a large bay, in which there were several rocks, low islands, and beds of sea-weed, but there were several winding channels between them. They were so exceedingly embarrassed with these shoals, that they hauled off to the eastward, in hopes of extricating themselves from their difficulties, but they soon perceived that they had plunged themselves in greater, and found it necessary to secure the ship, if possible, before night, the weather being hazy, and a fog reasonably apprehended.

wind

wind blew so strong, that it was thought necessary to strike the top-gallant yards. When the weather became fair and clear, Captain Cook ordered two boats to be hoisted out, in one of which he dispatched Mr. Blith, the master, to survey the harbour, and look out for wood. Orders were also given to Captain Clerke, to dispatch his master to sound the channel south of the small isles. Mr. Gore and Mr. Bailey landed on the north point to make a further survey.

From a hill over the point they saw the coast as far as Howe's Foreland: several small islands and rocks were scattered along the coast; but they could find no better channel to convey them out of the harbour, than that by which they had entered it. While Captain Cook and Mr. Bailey were making these observations, Mr. Gore joined them where the boat was waiting for them, and saw a country as desolate as that in the neighbourhood of Christmas Harbour; there was neither food nor shelter for any kind of cattle.

In the little cove (which Captain Cook distinguished by the appellation of Penguin cove, from its being much frequented by those birds) an excellent stream of fresh water delights the eye. Some large seals, shags, and a few ducks were observed here; and a very small land bird, having acquired a transient glance from Mr. Bailey, fled among the rocks for security and vanished.

About nine they got on board, and the next morning they weighed anchor and put out to sea. They generally steered through the winding channels among the shoals, though they sometimes presumed to run over some of them, on which they never found less than eighteen fathoms water.

When they were about three or four leagues from the coast, they found a clear sea, and about nine in the morning perceived a hill strongly resembling a sugar-loaf in form, and a small island to the northward of it, distant about four leagues. This conical hill was named Mount Campbell, by Captain Cook. Most of the land here is low and level. The mountains end about five leagues from the low point, leaving a considerable extent of low land, on which Mount Campbell is situated. These mountains are composed of naked rocks, whose summits are covered with snow; the valleys display nothing but sterility.

At noon they perceived low land in the direction of south-east, which was named Cape Digby. Between Howe's foreland and Cape Digby, the shore forms an extensive bay; abundance of sea-weed grows over it, the stem of which is not much thicker than a man's thumb, though some of it grows to the astonishing length of sixty fathoms. In the direction of south. south-west, distant from Cape Digby about six leagues, a high projecting point obtained the name of the Prince of Wales's Foreland; and six leagues beyond that, in the same direction, is the most southerly point of the whole coast, now distinguished by the name of Cape George. From Cape Digby the coast trends nearly south-west by south to a low point, now dignified with the name of Point Charlotte, in honour of George's amiable consort.

Between Point Charlotte and the Prince of Wales's Foreland, they saw a deep inlet, named the Royal Sound; and advancing to the south, they saw another inlet into the Royal Sound. On the south-west side of the Royal Sound, the land to Cape George consists of hills, rising progressively to a considerable height; but they were barren, and their summits blanched with snow; not a tree or shrub was to be seen. Part of the land in the environs of Cape Digby was covered with a verdant turf, the other part was in a state of nakedness. Penguins and oceanic birds frequented the beaches, and shags innumerable paid their aerial visits *.

Another plant, growing nearly to the height of two feet, was plentifully scattered about the boggy declivities, resembling a small cabbage shot into seeds. Near the brooks two other plants presented themselves, which were eaten as

* The French navigators have supposed Cape François to be the projecting point of a southern continent; the English deny the existence of such a continent, the land in question being only an island of small extent, which from its sterility was clearly entitled to the name of the Island of Desolation. "No place hitherto discovered," says Captain Cook, "affords so scanty a field for the naturalist as this steril spot. Some verdure indeed appeared, when at a small distance from the shore, which might raise the expectation of meeting with a little herbage; but all this lively appearance was occasioned by one small plant, resembling saxifrage, which grew up the hills in large spreading tufts, on a kind of rotten turf, which, if dried, might serve for fuel, and was the only thing seen here that could possibly be applied to that purpose."

salad,

salad, one of which was hot, and the other extremely mild; the latter is a curiosity, having not only male and female, but also androgynus plants. Some coarse grass grew luxuriantly on a few spots, which they cut down for their cattle; but their whole catalogue of plants did not exceed eighteen; not a tree was visible in the whole country.

Among the animals, seals appear to be the most considerable: they are denominated sea-bears, being the sort that are called the ursine seal; they resort to the shore to repose and breed, and are so remarkably tame when they are shedding their hair, that they may be taken without difficulty. No other quadrupeds are seen, but oceanic birds are numerous; the ducks were small, resembling widgeons both in size and figure, and were pronounced delicious. Petrels of various sorts are found in abundance; that which the seamen call Mother Carey's goose, is as large as an albatross, and is carnivorous. The penguins, which are abundant, consist of three sorts: the head of the largest is black, and the upper part of the body of a leaden grey, the bill is of a reddish colour, and longer than in the other sorts. The second is about half the size of the former, being of a blackish grey on the upper part of the body; the bill and feet are of a yellowish hue. In the third sort, the upper part of the body and throat is black; the rest being white except the top of the head, which is decorated with a yellow arch, that it can occasionally erect as two crests. The sea-swallow, the common sea-gull, the tern, and the Port Egmont hen were also found here. A singular kind of white bird was common here, somewhat larger than a pigeon. It had a black bill and white feet, and the flesh had the flavour of that of a duck. On hauling the seine, only a few small fish were taken, about the size of a small haddock. Limpets and muscles were the only shell-fish that our navigators saw here.

Rain is supposed to be abundant and frequent here, the marks occasioned by vast torrents being evidently conspicuous.

Captain Cook, intending to proceed next to New Zealand, to take in wood, water, and hay, steered east by north for Kerguelen's Land. Till the 3d of January the weather was tolerably clear, with fresh gales from the west and south-west; but the wind at length veered to the north, where it continued almost eight days; during which time they ran upwards of three hundred leagues, chiefly in the dark, a thick fog prevailing almost the whole time. On the 7th, Captain Cook dispatched a boat to Captain Clerke, appointing a rendezvous at Adventure Bay, in Van Diemen's land, if the ships should happen to separate before they had reached that destination. On the 12th the northerly winds were succeeded by a calm, and afterwards a southerly wind predominated.

On the 19th a sudden squall carried away the Resolution's fore-top-mast, and main-top-gallant-mast, which occasioned some delay. On the 24th, however, they discovered the coast of Van Diemen's Land. Several islands and elevated rocks were observed along the coast, the most southerly of which was the Mewstone. Captain Cook bestowed the appellation of Eddystone to a rock lying to the eastward of Swilly, from its striking resemblance to Eddystone light-house. On the 26th a breeze sprung up at the south-east, which conveyed the ships into Adventure Bay, where they anchored at four in the afternoon, about three quarters of a mile from the shore. The captains of the two ships went in separate boats in search of commodious places for wooding, watering, and making hay. Plenty of wood and water might have been procured, but very little grass.

Parties were sent the next morning, under the conduct of lieutenant King, to the east side of the bay, to cut wood and grass, attended by some mariners to protect them. Captain Cook also sent a launch to provide water for the ships, and afterwards visited the parties he had thus employed. In the evening they drew the seine, and procured a large quantity of fish; every one now came on board with the supplies they had obtained, and the wind proving unfair for sailing the next morning, they were again dispatched on shore upon the same duty.

They had seen columns of smoke in different parts, as they approached the coast, but none of the natives had been observed till the afternoon of the 28th, when eight men and a boy favoured them with a visit at their wooding place, all unarmed; except one who had a short stick, pointed at one end: they were slender, of a middling stature, had black woolly hair, and a black skin. They were entirely naked, and had large punctures or ridges on different parts of their bodies; their lips were not particularly

thick, nor their noses remarkably flat. Their features were pleasing, their eyes tolerably good, and their teeth even and regular, though extremely dirty. The faces of some of them were smeared with a red ointment, and the hair and beards of many of them shone with the same composition. When they were offered presents, they received them with indifference, and frequently returned them, or threw them away. When birds were given them, however, they kept them. Two pigs having been brought on shore, for the purpose of leaving them in the woods, they instantly seized them by the ears, and seemed desirous of forcing them away with them.

Captain Cook desiring to know the use of the stick which was carried by one of the savages, a piece of wood was aimed at as a mark, at the distance of about twenty yards, which was missed in repeated essays. To shew the superiority of European weapons, Omai fired his musquet at it; the unexpected noise of which so alarmed the savages, that they ran precipitately into the fields; one of them was so terrified that he dropped two knives and an ax that he had received from the Europeans.

After they had retired, Captain Cook ordered the two pigs (one being a male and the other a female) to be taken about a mile within the woods; and he attended personally to see them properly conducted there, that the natives might be wholly unacquainted with the transaction. He intended also to have left a bull, a cow, some goats, and some sheep; but was apprehensive the natives would destroy them, which he supposed would be the fate of the pigs, should they happen to be perceived; but as swine became wild, they would prefer an existence in the woods to any other situation in life, which would probably tend to their preservation; the other cattle could not have remained long concealed from the savages, as they must have been exposed in an open place*.

Captain Cook having surveyed the proceedings of the wood and grass parties, returned on board. He had hardly quitted the shore, when several women and children were introduced to lieutenant King, by the men who accompanied them. These female natives had a kangooroo skin fastened over their shoulders, seeming principally intended to support their children on their backs, as it left uncovered those parts which delicacy wishes to conceal. Their bodies were black, and marked with scars like those of the men, from whom they differ in the management of their heads; some of them are completely shaved or shorn, others only on one side. Some have the upper part of their heads shaved, leaving a narrow circle of hair all round. Though their figures were far from being captivating, several of the gentlemen paid their addresses to them, and offered liberal gratuities in vain. Plenty of excellent grass having been procured on Penguin island, and the different parties supplied with what their exigences demanded, they returned on board.

This country was discovered in November, 1642, by Tasman; and Captain Furneaux touched at it in March, 1773. It is the southern point of New Holland, which is much the largest island in the known world, and is almost entitled to the name of a continent. Mr. Anderson, surgeon of the Resolution, examined the country during their continuance in Adventure Bay, and his remarks on it are to the following effect. There is a handsome sandy beach, about two miles in length, at the bottom of Adventure Bay; behind which a brackish lake presents itself, out of which the Europeans caught some bream and trout by angling; the adjacent parts are hilly, consisting of a forest of tall trees, rendered almost impassable by innumerable brakes of fern and bushes. The forest trees are principally of one kind, and remarkably straight, exhibiting clusters of small white

* A dead calm prevented their sailing on the 29th, which induced Captain Cook to send parties on shore to procure wood and grass, and accompany them in their expedition. Soon after their landing they were joined by about twenty of the natives, one of whom was distinguished by his deformity, the drollery of his gesticulations, and the apparent humour of his speeches; though they were not understood by the Europeans. Many of the savages they now saw, differed from the natives which Captain Cook saw in his first voyage, in the more northerly parts of this country. Some of these had a slip of the kangooroo skin round their ancles, and a cord made of fur encircled their necks. Iron was not held in estimation among them, but they were highly delighted with the medals and beads that were given them. Their habitations were sheds composed of sticks, and covered with the bark of trees. From several circumstances, it also appeared probable, that many of them formed a residence in the trunks of large trees, hollowed for that purpose by fire.

flowers.

flowers. Among the plants were observed wood-sorrel, milk-wort, and several varieties of fern*.

Among a variety of fish, they caught rays, nurses, bream, soles, flounders, and elephant fish; and upon the rocks they found muscles, and other shell-fish. The most troublesome of the insects were the musquitoes, and a large black ant; the bite of the latter inflicts extreme torture.

The inhabitants were mild and cheerful, and have not that ferocity of appearance which generally characterizes savages: they have little genius, or personal activity, though some contrivance in forming different lines and figures on their bodies, raised above the surface of the skin. Their indifference respecting the presents which were offered them, and their general want of curiosity, manifested no acuteness of understanding. Their complexion is a sombre black, and their hair woolly, clotted with grease and red ochre; their noses are broad and full, and the lower part of the face projects considerably; their eyes are of a moderate size, and not remarkable for expression; their teeth have no great pretensions to whiteness, and their mouths are too wide for symmetrical proportion: their beards are worn long, and clotted with paint. Their persons are tolerably proportioned, though rather too protuberant about the belly.

The natives of Van Diemen's land are clearly of the same stock of those who inhabit the northern parts of New Holland. It even seems probable, that they may have originally come from the same place with all the natives of the Pacific Ocean, from the affinity of languages eastward to Easter Island.

SECTION IV.

Course to New Zealand—Queen Charlotte's Sound—Some Account of the New Zealanders—Massacre of Captain Furneau's People—Violent Storms—Account of Kahoora—Observations on New Zealand—The Vicinity of Queen Charlotte's Sound described—Soil, Climate, Plants, and Animals—Description of the Inhabitants—Dress—Food and Cookery—Arts, Weapons, their extreme Cruelty, and various other Practices.

ON the 30th of January they weighed anchor with a light westerly breeze, from Adventure Bay. The wind soon after becoming southerly, a perfect storm arose, which in the evening abated. During the night on the 6th of February, a marine belonging to the Discovery fell overboard, and was drowned. On the 10th the coast of New Zealand was perceived, at the distance of about nine leagues. Several canoes came along-side of the ships, but very few of the natives would venture to come on board; this shyness was the more extraordinary, as Captain Cook was well known to many of them, and had treated one of them with distinguished kindness in a former voyage. It was supposed, however, that these people were apprehensive of their revenging the death of Captain Furneau's people, who had been killed here. But on the captain's assuring them of his friendship, they banished all appearance of suspicion and distrust. The next day Captain Cook ordered two tents to be pitched, and the observatories to be erected.

In the course of the day, many families came from different parts of the coast, and erected their huts near the encampment of the Europeans. They were extremely expeditious in building these temporary habitations, which are well calculated to afford shelter from the rain and wind. The same family generally associate and build together, so that their villages are usually divided by palisadoes into separate districts. They were occasionally visited by other natives, whose usual residence was more remote; their articles of traffic were fish, curiosities, and women; the two first were readily disposed of,

* The only quadruped they saw was a species of opussum, about twice the magnitude of a rat. The kangooroo may probably be a native of this region, some of the inhabitants possessing pieces of the skin of that animal. The birds in the woods are hawks, eagles, crows, pigeons, yellowish paroquets, and a species which they called *motacilla cyanea*, from the azure brightness of its head and neck. Large snakes of a blackish colour were observed, and a lizard was killed that measured fifteen inches in length, which was beautifully clouded with yellow and black.

but

but with respect to the latter, few dealers were to be found, the crew having been strongly prejudiced against them.

Among the occasional visitors, was a chief called Kahoora, who headed the party that cut off Captain Furneau's people; he was much disliked by his countrymen, many of whom importuned Captain Cook to kill him *.

Early on the 16th the Captains Cook and Clerke, with several of the officers and sailors, accompanied by Omai and two New Zealanders, set out, in five boats, to procure fodder for the cattle; they landed on the east side of the Sound, and cut a sufficient quantity of grass to load the two launches; on their return down the Sound they visited Grass Cove, where Captain Furneau's people had been massacred. Here they met with Captain Cook's old friend Pedro, who mentions him in the narrative of his second voyage. He, and another New Zealander received them on the beach, armed with the spear and patoo, though not without manifest symptoms of fear. A few presents, however, dispelled their apprehensions, and brought down to the shore two or three others of the family.

Desirous of enquiring into the particular circumstances of the massacre of his countrymen, Captain Cook fixed upon Omai as an interpreter for that purpose; his language being a dialect of that of New Zealand. Pedro, and some other natives who were present, none of whom had been concerned in that transaction, answered every question proposed to them without reserve. Their information imported, that while the Europeans were at dinner, some of the natives snatched from them some fish and bread, for which they received several blows; a quarrel ensued, and two of the savages were shot dead by two musquets; but, before a third was discharged, a number of the natives rushed furiously upon the Europeans, and destroyed them all. Pedro, and his companions, also pointed out the identical spot on which the affray, and the subsequent tragedy had happened †.

On the 21st a tribe of about thirty persons came from the other part of the Sound to visit the Europeans. The name of their chief was Tomatongeauooranuc; he appeared to be about forty-five years of age, and possessed an open cheerful countenance. By this time, about two-thirds of the natives of Queen Charlotte's Sound had taken their residence near the Europeans; many of whom resorted daily to the ships, and to the encampment on shore. The latter, however, was most frequented while the people were employed in the management of their seal blubber. The savages were so extravagantly fond of train oil, that they relished the very dregs of the cask, and feasted on the skimmings of the kettle.

A competent supply of hay, wood, and water being obtained, the tents were struck the next morning, and on the 24th they weighed out of the cove; but the wind being unfavourable, they cast anchor again near the Isle of Motuara. While they were getting under sail Tomatongeauooranuc, Matahouah, and several of the natives, came to take leave of the Europeans. These two chiefs having requested Captain Cook to oblige them with some hogs and goats, he gave Tomantongeauooranuc two pigs, a boar and a sow; and two goats, a male and female, to Matahouah, after demanding a promise from them not to destroy them. With respect to the animals which Captain Furneau had left here, they were all reported to be dead; but Captain Cook was informed by the two New Zealand youths, that Tiralou, a popular chief, had a sow, and several cocks and hens in his possession.

They had not been long at anchor near Motuara, before several canoes, filled with natives, approached them, and began to traffic

* On the 15th the Captain went in a boat to search for grass, and visited the Hippah, or fortified village, at the south-west point of the island of Motuara. He saw no inhabitants at this village, though evident marks appeared of its having been lately occupied. Not a vestige remained of the English garden seeds, which had been sown at this Hippah, in 1773, during Captain Cook's second voyage. They had probably been all destroyed to make room for buildings; for at the other gardens then planted, they found radishes, onions, purslain, potatoes, &c.

† Another account of the quarrel is also related in Captain Cook's narrative, but that which we have given above being corroborated by the testimony of many other natives, who could have no interest in disguising the truth, appears to be best entitled to belief: the party continued at Grass Cove till the evening, and then embarked to return to the ship; soon after they had quitted the shore, the wind began to blow so violently at north-west, that it was not without great difficulty that they reached the ships. It was a fortunate circumstance that they came on board when they did, for soon afterwards a perfect storm arose, though towards evening it again became fair. On the 20th they had another storm, which was more violent, but of shorter duration.

with

View of a HIPPAH or Village in NEW ZEALAND.

Cook

Sparrow sc.

with them. In one of these canoes Kahoora made his appearance, whom Omai pointed out to Captain Cook, and requested him to shoot him; he also declared that he himself would be his executioner, if he should ever dare to pay them another visit. But the menaces of Omai had so little effect on Kahoora, that he came again the following morning, accompanied by his whole family. Omai, having obtained Captain Cook's permission to invite him on board, introduced him into the cabin, exclaiming, "There is Kahoora, dispatch him," and instantly retired. Returning soon after, and seeing the chief remain unhurt, he earnestly remonstrated with Captain Cook on the subject, saying, if a man murdered another in England, he was hanged for it; and that Kahoora, who had ten times committed that crime, ought certainly to be punished with death.

These arguments, however plausible, had little effect upon Captain Cook, who desired Omai to ask the New Zealand chief why he had killed Captain Furneau's people? Kahoora, alarmed at the question, hung down his head, and seemed in expectation of immediate death; but, being promised safety, he became cheerful. Unwilling, however, to answer several questions which had been asked him, he was assured that no violence should be offered to him on that account. He then related the unfortunate transaction, with such strained palliative circumstances as an atrocious offender would naturally have recourse to; little credit was given to his defence*.

Before their arrival in New Zealand, Omai had expressed a desire of taking one of the natives with him to his own country; in consequence of which a youth named Taweiharooa, the only son of a deceased chief, offered to accompany him, and took up his residence on board. Though Captain Cook informed his friends, that if he departed with them he would never return, he was not to be intimidated from his purpose. The day before the Europeans quitted the cove, Tiratoutou, his mother, came to receive her last present from Omai, soon after which they parted from each other with all the marks of the tenderest affection. But the mother declared she would weep no more, and faithfully observed her promise; for, when she returned the next morning to take the last farewel of her son, she was extremely cheerful while she continued on board, and retired with seeming unconcern. Kokoa, a boy of about ten years of age, accompanied Taweiharooa as a servant, and was presented to Captain Cook by his own father, who parted from him with such indifference as to strip him, and leave him entirely naked.

The inhabitants of New-Zealand are under continual apprehensions of being destroyed by each other, most of their tribes conceiving they have sustained injuries from some other tribe, which they are eager to revenge; and perhaps the desire of a delicious meal may frequently be a great incitement. They usually steal upon their supposed enemies in the night, and if they find them unguarded, which is not often the case, they kill the whole of them, men, women, and children; when the inhuman massacre is completed, they feast themselves on the spot, or carry off as many dead bodies as they can, with which they regale at home with the most horrid acts of brutality. If they are discovered and attacked, they never give quarter, or take prisoners, so that the vanquished have no safety but in flight. From their perpetual hostility, and this destructive mode of conducting it, a New-Zealander acquires such habitual circumspection that he is seldom off his guard. They have indeed the most powerful motives to be vigilant, the preservation of both soul and body depending upon it; it is a part of their creed, that the soul of the man whose flesh is eaten by his enemies, is condemned to incessant fire; while the soul of one whose body has been res-

* Most of the natives expected Captain Cook would have taken vengeance on Kahoora, for his concern in the massacre; and many of them not only wished it, but even expressed their surprise at the Captain's forbearance and moderation. As the chief could have been no stranger to this, it was astonishing that he so often put himself in the power of that commander. The captain admired his courage, and was pleased with the confidence he reposed in him; for he placed his whole safety in the uniform declarations of Captain Cook, that he always had been, and would continue to be a friend to the natives; that he should think no more of their barbarous treatment of the Europeans, as that transaction had happened long ago; but if they should ever attempt a repetition of the same perfidious conduct, they might depend upon meeting with an adequate punishment.

cued from those that slew him, as well as of those who die a natural death, ascend to the mansions of the gods.

Their usual method of disposing of their dead *, is to inter their bodies in the earth; but if they have more of their slain enemies than they can conveniently eat, they throw the surplus into the sea. They have no *morais*, or other places of public worship; but they have priests who supplicate the gods to prosper their temporal affairs.

Though the natives are generally hostile to each other, travelling strangers, whose designs are honourable, are well received and entertained; but they give offence if they remain longer than their business seems to require.

The New-Zealanders having adopted polygamy, it is not uncommon for a man to have two or three wives. These people are perfectly satisfied with the little knowledge they possess, and are not solicitous to improve it. On enquiring of Taweiharooa, how many ships resembling those of the Europeans had ever arrived in the neighbourhood of Queen Charlotte's Sound, he mentioned one entirely unknown to them: he added, that this ship first introduced the venereal disease among the natives of New-Zealand; a malady now unfortunately too common among them. Another piece of information was communicated to them by Taweiharooa, importing that snakes and lizards were found here of an enormous size. Mention has been made respecting this country and its inhabitants, in the accounts of Captain Cook's two former voyages; yet the remarks of Mr. Anderson, the substance of which is given in the succeeding pages, are not to be considered as superfluous.

The land in the neighbourhood of Queen Charlotte's Sound is extremely mountainous, gradually advancing from the sea into large hills. At remote distances are vallies, terminating each towards the sea in a small cove, with a sandy beach; behind which are flat places where the natives usually erect their huts. A brook of fine water passes through every cove, and loses itself in the sea. The luxuriant growth of the productions here, sufficiently indicates the quality of the soil. The hills, except a few towards the sea, are a continued forest of lofty trees, flourishing with uncommon vigour. The extraordinary strength in vegetation, is doubtless much assisted by the fostering temperature of the climate.

Though the weather is generally good, it is sometimes windy, with heavy rain; which, however, is never excessive, nor continues longer than a day. The large trees on the hills consist principally of two sorts: one of them resembles our largest firs in size, and grows nearly after the same manner. The other sort of tree, which often becomes very large, is like a maple, and fit only for fuel: the wood of that, as well as of the preceding being too hard for masts, &c.

Several trees grow on the flats behind the beaches; two of these bear a small plum; one of them, which is called karraca, is yellow; the other, named maitao, is black; but neither of them is entitled to much praise. On eminences jutting into the sea, a species of philadelphus is found, bearing flowers almost like a myrtle. The leaves of it were used as tea, and were thought an excellent substitute for the oriental sort.

Here are a great variety of plants, as night-shade, bindweed, nettles, sow-thistles, virgin's bower, French willow, euphorbia, rushes, bul-rushes, flax, brambles, groundsel, &c. but the species of each are different from what we have in Europe. There are a great many other plants; but one, in particular, claims the attention of the curious, as the garments of the natives are made from it. A fine silky flax is produced from it, superior to any thing in this country, and perhaps as durable. It often grows near the sea, and sometimes a considerable way up the hills, in bunches or tufts, bearing yellowish flowers on a long stalk.

* Mr. Collins, to his interesting account of the English Colony in New South-Wales, has subjoined some information concerning New Zealand.—"The New Zealanders," says he, inter their dead; they also believe that the third day after the interment, the heart separates itself from the corpse, and that this separation is announced by a gentle breeze of wind, which gives warning of its approach to an inferior Ea-tooa (or divinity) that hovers over the grave, and who carries it to the clouds. Suicide is very common among the New Zealanders, and this they often commit by hanging themselves on the slightest occasions; thus a woman, who has been beaten by her husband, will perhaps hang herself immediately. It could not be discovered that they have any other division of time than the revolution of the moon, till the number amounted to one hundred, which they term "ta-ice etow," that is one etow, or hundred moons; and it is thus they count their age, and calculate all other events. *Collins*, p. 524.

The

A Man of
NEW ZEALAND.
A Woman of
NEW ZEALAND.

Warren sculp

The birds, which are extremely numerous, are most of them peculiar to the place. It would be difficult to follow them, on account of the underwood, and the climbing plants; but any person by continuing in one place, might shoot as many in a day as would support seven or eight persons. Among them are large brown parrots with grey heads, green parroquets, wood-pigeons, and cuckoos. A gross-beak of about the size of a thrush, is common; as well as a small green bird, which is the only musical one to be found here: his melody is so sweet, and his notes so varied, that any one would suppose himself to be surrounded with a hundred different sorts of birds, when the little warbler is exerting himself. From this circumstance he has obtained the name of the Mocking Bird. There are also three or four sorts of smaller birds; and, among the rocks, some sea-pies with red bills, and crested shags of a leaden colour. About the shore were seen a few sea-gulls, blue herons, wild ducks, plovers, and sand-larks.

The fish caught by the seine, were chiefly mullets, soles, flounders, and elephant fish; but the natives supplied the Europeans with a sort of sea-bream, conger-eels, and a large fish called a mogge. The natives furnished them with several other sorts of fish; but the small salmon, colefish, and mogge, were superior to the others. Muscles, in abundance, inhabit the rocks; a sort of which exceeds a foot in length. Cockles are found buried in the sand of the small beaches. Small oysters, perriwinkles, wilks, sea-eggs, star-fish, and sea-ears, are also found here *.

They have not any mineral entitled to notice, but a green jasper, or serpent stone, of which the tools and ornaments of the inhabitants are principally formed. This is held in the highest estimation among them; of the generation of which they entertain strange superstitious notions.

The natives are, in general, less perfectly formed about the limbs than the Europeans, though their stature may be nearly equal; very few among them are corpulent. Their features are various, some resembling Europeans; and their colour is of different tints, from a deepish black to a kind of olive; their faces are usually round, their lips somewhat protuberant, and their noses large towards the point; their eyes are large, and their teeth broad, white, and regular. The hair, which is generally black, strong, and straight, is cropt short on the hinder part, and the rest tied on the crown of the head. The youth have a free and open countenance, but those arrived to manhood have a serious sullen cast. The women are not distinguished by any peculiar graces, either of form or features.

Both sexes are clothed alike, having a garment made of the silky flax already mentioned, of about five feet in length, and four in breadth: this is manufactured by knotting. Two corners of it pass over the shoulders, and they fasten it on the breast with that which covers the body; they also secure it with a girdle made of mat, about the belly. And it is sometimes embellished with dog skin, or large feathers. The most common covering, however, is a quantity of a sedgy plant, attached to a string, and thrown over the shoulders; whence it descends on all sides to the middle of the thighs.

Their heads are ornamented with feathers, combs of bone and wood, pearl shell, and the inner skin of leaves. Both men and women have their ears slit, and decorated with beads, jasper, or pieces of cloth. Many have their faces stained, in imitation of various figures, of a black or dark blue colour. The women are marked only on their lips and chins; but both sexes besmear their heads with a greasy reddish paint. The women also decorate themselves with necklaces of sharks' teeth, or bunches of long beads; and some of them have small triangular aprons, adorned with feathers or pearl shells.

They live in small coves, sometimes in single families, and sometimes in companies of forty or fifty. Their huts are miserable lodging places, erected contiguous to each other. Their furniture consists of a few small bags or baskets, in which they deposit their fishing hooks and other property. They sit round a small fire in the middle, and probably sleep in the same way, without any additional covering.

* Insects are not very numerous here; some butterflies, dragon-flies, grass-hoppers, spiders, black-ants, and scorpion-flies, were, however, frequently seen. The sand-fly, which is the only noxious one, is one of the most general.

A few inoffensive lizards were the only reptiles they perceived here; no traces were seen of any quadruped, except a few rats, and a kind of fox-dogs, kept by the natives as domestic animals.

Their

Their boats are formed of planks raised upon each other, and fastened with strong withes; many of them are fifty feet in length; when two of them are fastened together with rafters, they are called a double canoe; their paddles are narrow, pointed, and about five feet long. Their sail, which is very little used, is a triangular mat.

They roast, or rather bake their fish, being totally ignorant of the art of boiling. When the weather will not admit of their going to sea, muscles and sea-ears supply the place of other fish. Sometimes they kill a few penguins, rails, and shags, which enable them to vary their diet. Considerable numbers of dogs also constitute a part of their food; but they rely principally on the sea for their subsistence. They are as filthy in their feeding as in their persons, which often emit a very offensive effluvia, from the abundance of grease about them, and from their never washing their cloaths; their heads swarm with vermin, which they occasionally eat. The inhabitants of Van Diemen's land would not even taste the bread of the Europeans, but these people devoured it voraciously, even when it was mouldy and rotten.

In point of ingenuity they are not inferior to other uncivilized nations; for, without metal tools, they make every thing by which they procure subsistence, clothing, and weapons, with neatness, strength, and convenience. Their principal mechanical tool, in some degree resembling an adze, is made of serpent stone or jasper; and their chissel and gouge are often of the same material. Carving, however, is their master-piece, in which they display much design and execution. Their cordage for fishing lines is not inferior to that in this country, and their nets are equally excellent. A shell, a bit of flint, or jasper, is their substitute for a knife; and a shark's tooth, fixed in the end of a piece of wood, is their auger. They have a saw made of jagged fishes' teeth, with which they only cut up the bodies of those whom they have slain in battle *.

Their public contentions are almost perpetual; war being their principal profession, as appears from the number of their weapons, and their dexterity in using them. Their arms are spears, patoos, halberts, and stones. The first are from five to thirty feet long, made of hard wood, and pointed. The patoo is about eighteen inches in length, of an elliptical shape, with a handle made of wood, stone, &c. and is supposed to be their principal dependence in battle. The halbert is about five or six feet long, tapering at one end, with sharp edges at the other.

Before the contest, they join in a war song, and gradually work themselves into a kind of frantic fury, accompanied with horrid distortions of their tongues, eyes, and mouths, to deter their enemies. They also mangle, and cut to pieces, even when not quite dead, the bodies of their enemies; and, after roasting them, devour the flesh with peculiar satisfaction. But though these people are capable of such an excess of cruelty, they lament the loss of their friends in the most tender and affectionate manner; piercing the air with the vehemence of their cries, and cutting large gashes in their cheeks and foreheads, with shells or pieces of flint, till the blood flows copiously, and mixes with their tears.

Their language is neither harsh not disagreeable; but it is not so comprehensive as the European languages.

* Though extremely irritable, and ready to resent an injury, they are surprisingly insolent when they apprehend there is not any apprehension of punishment. They are naturally mistrustful and suspicious; and so dishonest that they steal every thing within their reach, if they suppose they can escape detection. In trading they take every possible advantage, and are highly delighted when they have overreached.

Man of
CAPE DIEMAN.

Boy of
CAPE DIEMAN.

Warren sculp.

SECTION V.

Course of the Voyage—Conduct of the New Zealand Youths on Board—The Island of Mangeea—Account of the Inhabitants—Mourooa and his Companion described—A Mangeean Canoe—Transactions with the Natives—Description of the Island—Manners and Customs of the Inhabitants—The Island of Wateoo discovered—Visits from the Inhabitants—Description of them—Messrs. Gore, Burney, Anderson, and Omai, sent on Shore—Their Reception—Dance of Twenty Young Women—Omai's Apprehensions of being roasted—Further Description of the Natives—Trees and Plants—Omai's expedient to avoid Detention—Meets with Three of his Countrymen—Their distressful Voyage.

ON the 25th of February they left the Sound, and made sail through Cook's Straits. As soon as they had lost sight of the land, the two young New-Zealanders heartily repented of the inconsiderate step they had taken. They wept continually, and expressed the poignancy of their sorrows in a kind of song, highly extolling the country and people, from which they were probably for ever to be separated. They were in this state for several days, but by degrees they appeared less agitated, and their lamentations were less frequent. Their kindred and friends had not taken such entire possession of their minds, as to prevent their attaching themselves to the Europeans.

They crossed the Tropic on the 27th; and on the 29th, as they were standing to the north-east, the Discovery made the signal of seeing land. They soon perceived it to be a small island, and stood for it till the evening, when it was at the distance of two or three leagues. The next morning, at day break, they bore up for the west side of the island, and saw several people wading to the reef, where, as they observed the ship leaving them, they remained. But others, who soon appeared, followed her course; and some of them assembled in small bodies, making considerable shouts.

On approaching nearer the shore, they saw many of the natives running along the beach, armed with long spears and clubs, which they brandished in the air in a menacing stile. Most of them were nearly naked, having only a kind of girdle, which was brought up between their thighs. Some of them, indeed, wore pieces of cloth about their shoulders; their heads being covered with a white wrapper resembling a turban. They were robust, about the middle size, and of a tawny complexion *.

The features of Mourooa were agreeable, and his countenance pleasant; these were accompanied with gesticulations which indicated humour and good nature. He also affected a serious tone; and repeated a kind of ejaculation before he would venture to take hold of the rope at the stern of the ship. Both these men had black hair, straight and strong, tied together on the top of their heads with a piece of white cloth. They had long beards, and the inner part of their arms, from the elbow to the shoulder, were *tatooed* or punctured. The lobe of one of their ears was slit to such a length, that he stuck a knife and some beads in it. The same person had his neck ornamented with two polished pearl shells, and a bunch of human hair, loosely twisted together. They wore girdles manufactured from the *morus papyriser*, and glazed: they had a sort of woven sandals, formed of a grassy substance. The canoe they came in was the only one they had seen; it was narrow, and

* Two persons in a canoe put off with a view of reaching the ship; but, wanting resolution, they returned towards the beach. Their apprehensions being partly removed by an address from Omai, in the language of Otaheite, they came near enough to receive some nails and beads, which, being tied to some wood, were thrown into the canoe. They, however, put the wood aside without untying the things from it; for Omai observed, that when presents were offered to them, they requested something for their *Eatooa*.

On being asked by Omai, whether they were accustomed to eat human flesh, they replied in the negative, with equal horror and abhorrence. One of them, named Mourooa, being asked what had occasioned a scar upon his forehead, said, it was in consequence of a wound he had received in fighting with the natives of an island to the north-east, who sometimes invaded them. They afterwards took hold of a rope, but would not venture to come on board.

about ten feet long, but strong and neatlymade: the lower part was of white wood, and the upper part of black, and their paddles were similar in appearance. They moved, as a matter of indifference, either end of the canoe forward.

When the ships were in a proper station, Captain Cook ordered out two boats to seek a convenient place for landing. In one of them he went himself, and just as he put off from the ship, the two men in the canoe paddled towards his boat. When they were come along-side, Mouroa without ceremony or hesitation, stept into her. Omai, who was with the Captain, desired the islander to ask where they could land. He pointed out two places, but it was soon discovered that an attempt at either place would have been impracticable, on account of the surf; and they were equally unsuccessful in their search for anchorage.

While they were thus reconnoitering the shore of Mangeea, many of the natives assembled upon the reef. Mouroa, who still remained in the boat with Captain Cook, supposing this thronging multitude deterred them from landing, commanded them to retire. Many of them instantly complying, he was supposed to be a person of some consequence. Excited by curiosity, several of them swam from the shore to the boats, and came on board them without reserve. It was, indeed, a difficult task to keep them out, or prevent their pilfering whatever they could lay their hands upon. At length, seeing the Europeans returning to the ships, they all left them except Mouroa, who, notwithstanding he entertained some suspicious apprehensions, accompanied the Captain on board the Resolution *.

Those parts of the coast of Mangeea which they saw, are guarded by a reef of coral rock, against which a heavy surf is continually breaking. The island is about five miles in circumference. In the interior parts it rises into small hills, whence there is an easy descent to the shore, except in the south-west part, which is steep, but not very high. The shore on the north-west part terminates in a sandy beach. The island, upon the whole, has a pleasing appearance, and might by proper cultivation, be rendered a beautiful spot †.

Quitting Mangeea on the 30th of March, and proceeding on a northerly course, they discovered land on the 31st, at the distance of about ten leagues: the next morning they were abreast of it, and within four leagues. It then appeared to be an island of nearly the same extent as that which they had left. A smaller island was also descried right a-head; and after that a larger was perceived, which they preferred as being most likely to furnish food for the cattle; but the wind being rather unfavourable, they were about two leagues to windward at eight o'clock the succeeding morning. Captain Cook dispatched three armed boats, under the command of Lieutenant Gore, in search of a landing place and anchoring ground. Three canoes, each conducted by one man, came along-side of the Resolution; they were long, narrow, and supported by out-riggers. The Europeans gave their visitors some knives, beads, and other trifles; and they gave the Europeans some cocoa-nuts, merely because they asked for them, but

* Here he appeared to be too much occupied about his own safety, to be struck with much surprise at seeing the cattle and other objects. He seemed very uneasy, and gave them but little new intelligence; in consequence of which, after he had continued a short time on board, Captain Cook ordered a boat to take him towards the land. In passing from the cabin, he happened to stumble over one of the goats; at which he immediately stopped, gazed at the animal, and asked what bird it was? The boat having conveyed him near the surf, he leaped into the water, and swam ashore. His countrymen, eager to learn from him what he had seen, flocked round him on his landing, in which situation they remained till they had lost sight of them.

† As the inhabitants seem numerous and well fed, it indicates that articles of provision are furnished by this island in great abundance. They had no hogs nor dogs; but they had plantains, taro, and bread fruit. The birds seen by the Europeans were principally terns, noddies, white-egg birds, and one white heron. The Mangeean language is a dialect of that of Otaheite, with a more guttural pronunciation. They resemble the inhabitants of Otaheite, and the Marquesas in their persons, and in their disposition; for they are equally lively and cheerful, and are adepts in all the lascivious gesticulations so significantly practised by the Otaheiteans in their dances. From a variety of circumstances it was also conjectured, that their mode of living, and the manner of constructing their habitations, was much in the Otaheiteian taste. They salute strangers by joining noses, and seizing the hand of the person whom they accost, which they rub somewhat forcibly upon their mouth and nose. It is remarkable, that in the New Philipine, or rather Caroline Islands, though at the distance of fifteen hundred leagues from Mangeea, the inhabitants practice the same method of salutation.

not by way of exchange, as they seemed to have no idea of barter or traffic.

Three of them, after a little persuasion, came on board, seeming perfectly at their ease, and free from apprehension. After their departure, a man arrived in another canoe, bringing a bunch of plaintains as a present to Captain Cook; who, in return, gave him a piece of red cloth and an axe, which Omai afterwards informed them had been sent from the king of the island. Soon after, a double canoe, containing twelve of the islanders, came towards them, reciting some words in the nature of a chorus. Having finished this solemn chant, they asked for the chief: and when Captain Cook had made his appearance, a pig and some cocoa-nuts were conveyed into the ship; and the captain was also presented with a piece of matting*.

On the 3d of April Captain Cook detached Mr. Gore with three boats, to make trial of the experiment he had proposed. Two of the natives, who had been on board, accompanied him, and Omai was the interpreter. The ships being about the distance of a league from the island, when the boats put off, they worked up to it by about twelve, and saw their three boats within the surf, and a multitude of the islanders on the shore, a-breast of them. With a view of observing their motions, and affording them what assistance they might require, the captain kept as near the shore as he thought compatible with prudence. He was convinced, however, that the reef was an effectual barrier, between the Europeans and their friends who had landed, and put them completely out of the reach of their protection. But, after considerable solicitude for the safety of the people who had landed, Captain Cook had the satisfaction of seeing the boats return; when, upon enquiry, it appeared that Mr. Gore, Mr. Anderson, Mr. Burney, and Omai were the only persons who had landed. An account of their transactions, as related by Mr. Anderson, was to the following effect:

They rowed towards a sandy beach, where a considerable number of the natives had assembled, and came to an anchor at a hundred yards from the reef. Several of the islanders swam off, bringing cocoa-nuts with them; when Omai informed them that their people were inclinable to land. Soon after, two canoes came off; and to furnish the natives with greater confidence, Mr. Gore and his companions resolved to go unarmed. Mr. Anderson and Lieutenant Burney went in one canoe, a little before the other; and their conductors, watching the motions of the surf with great attention, landed them safely on the reef. They were conducted from the beach by a vast concourse of people; and being attended up an avenue of cocoa-palms, approached two rows of men, armed with clubs. Proceeding onward, they observed a person, who appeared to be a chief, sitting cross-legged upon the ground, and cooling himself with a triangular fan, formed of the leaf of the cocoa-palm, with a polished handle of black wood: his ears were adorned with large bunches of beautiful red feathers; but he was not otherwise distinguished from the rest of the people. The two Europeans having saluted him as he sat, were conducted successively to a second and a third chief, likewise ornamented with red feathers. This ceremony having been performed, they were desired to sit down; an injunction which they instantly complied with*.

The Europeans now hearing a noise, turned their eyes aside, and saw the people armed with clubs, who had been desired to entertain them, as they supposed, with a representation of their mode of fighting; which now took place accordingly; one party pursuing another which had run away.

Lieutenant

* These new visitors were introduced into the cabin, and conducted to the other parts of the ship. Many objects seemed to surprise them, but nothing could fix their attention. They were afraid to venture near the cows and horses, of which they had not the least conception: they admitted, however, that they knew the sheep and goats were birds.

The islanders whom they had seen in these canoes, were chiefly of the middle stature, and not unlike the Mangeeans. Their long hair either flowed loosely over their shoulders, or was tied on the crown of the head. Like the inhabitants of Mangeea, they wore girdles of glazed cloth, or fine matting, the ends of which were brought between their thighs. Their ears were bored, and a sort of broad grass was worn about their necks by way of ornament, stained with red, and strung with berries of the night-shade: many of them were curiously *tatooed*, from the middle downwards, particularly upon their legs; and they had sandals on their feet. They were cheerful in their deportment, and apparently good natured.

† The people being ordered to disperse, Messrs. Anderson and Burney saw, at a little distance, about twenty young women, adorned with red feathers like the chiefs, engaged in a solemn dance, accompanied with the singing of the whole party. The two Europeans rose up, and walked forward to observe the dancers, who proceeded in their

Lieutenant Burney and Mr. Anderson now sought for Mr. Gore and Omai, whom they at length perceived coming up among the crowd, having been introduced, like themselves, to the three chiefs; the names of whom were Otteroo, Taroa, and Fatouweera. They now endeavoured to separate the Europeans from each other, every one of whom had his respective circle to surround, and gaze at him. Mr. Anderson discovered that, at this time, several trifling things had been pilfered from his pocket; and on his complaining of this treatment to the chief, he approved and justified it.

From these circumstances, Mr. Anderson began to apprehend that they intended to detain his party among them. Mr. Burney happening to go to the place where Mr. Anderson was, the latter acquainted him with his suspicions; and to try whether they were well founded, they both attempted to get to the beach, but were prevented by the natives, who said they must return to the place from whence they came. On their coming up, they found Omai under the same apprehensions, accompanied by an additional cause of terror; for having observed that they had dug a hole in the ground for an oven, which they were now heating, he concluded that they had formed a plan of roasting and devouring the party. So prevalent were his fears, that he even asked them whether that was really their intention: at which they were much surprised, asking, in return, whether that custom prevailed among them?

Mr. Anderson, and the others, were thus detained the greatest part of the day, being sometimes separated, and sometimes together; but always in a crowd. Sometimes they were requested to uncover parts of their skin, the whiteness of which struck the islanders with admiration; though at the same time they rifled the pockets of the persons they were thus tormenting. One of them snatched from Mr. Gore a bayonet, which hung by his side; and when remonstrances were made against the aggressor, the chief was suspected of having countenanced the theft; for Omai, soon after, had a dagger stolen from him in the same outrageous manner.

A pig now lying near the oven, which had been prepared and heated, now banished Omai's fears of being put into it himself; and induced him to suppose it was intended for the repast of him and his three friends. In the mean time Messrs Burney and Anderson again attempted to get to the beach; but, on their arrival, they found themselves watched by persons stationed for that purpose; for when Mr. Anderson endeavoured to wade in upon the reef, one of them forcibly dragged him back by his clothes. They also insisted upon his throwing down some pieces of coral which he had picked up, and some plants which he had gathered. They likewise took a fan from Mr. Burney, which, on his coming ashore, he had received as a present.

Perceiving that obedience to their will, was the only method of procuring better treatment, the gentlemen returned to the place they had quitted; and the natives now promised, that, after they had partaken of a repast prepared for them, they should be furnished with a canoe to convey them to the boats. Accordingly, the second chief to whom they had been presented, seated himself on a low stool, and the multitude forming a large ring, seated themselves near him. A number of cocoa-nuts, a quantity of baked plantains, and a piece of the little hog that had been dressed, were placed before each of them. Fatigue having taken off the keen edge of their appetite, the Europeans could only eat a little to please their entertainers. It was now almost sun-set, and the islanders sent what was left of the provisions down to the beach, to be conveyed to the ships.

The party found a canoe prepared to put them off to their boats, which the natives appeared to do with great caution; but as they were in the act of pushing the canoe into the surf, one of them snatched a bag out of her, containing a pocket-pistol belonging to Mr. Anderson, who

their amusement without paying them the least attention. Though their feet were not inactive in the dance; their exercise consisted more in moving their fingers very nimbly, holding their hands at the same time in a prone position near the face, and occasionally clapping them together. They had probably been very carefully instructed, and selected for this kind of entertainment, as they greatly surpassed in beauty most of those who had mingled with the crowd. Their shape and limbs were elegantly formed, and their dress, which only consisted of a piece of glazed cloth tied round the waist, hardly extended so low as the knees: their eyes were black, and rather too full to constitute a perfect beauty; but their countenances were strongly expressive of modesty and gentleness.

calling

calling out to the thief, in terms strongly expressive of his displeasure, the terrified culprit swam back to the canoe with the bag*.

Though Omai was sent upon this expedition as Mr. Gore's interpreter, he probably performed other essential services this day. He was interrogated by the natives, concerning the Europeans, their country, their ships, and their arms. In answer to which he informed them, among other particulars, that their country had ships as large as their island; on board of which were guns of such dimensions as to contain several people within them; one of which could demolish the whole island at a single shot, and every soul would inevitably perish.

The natives of this island call it by the name of Wateeoo: it is a beautiful verdant spot, consisting of hills and plains, and is about six leagues in circumference. If we may rely on Omai's report of what information he had received from three of his countrymen, whom he almost miraculously met in this island, the manners of the people of Wateeoo, their habits of life, and their method of treating strangers, are extremely similar to those which prevail at Otaheite, and its neighbouring islands: even their religious ceremonies and opinions accord in many instances. It therefore seems indubitable that the inhabitants of Wateeoo derive their descent, from the same stock which has so remarkably diffused itself over the immense extent of the Southern Ocean. Omai assured the Europeans, that they dignified their island with the pompous appellation of *Wenooa no te Eatooa*, implying a land of Gods; esteeming themselves a kind of divinities, possessing the spirit of the *Eatooa*. Their language was equally understood by Omai, and the two New Zealanders who were on board.

SECTION VI.

Visit Otakootaia—Description of—Its Produce—Visit Hervey's Island—Find it inhabited—Inhabitants averse to coming on board—Propensity to thieving—Manners, Dress, &c.—Islets of Palmerston—Proceed to the Friendly Island—Barter with the Natives of Komango, &c. for Provisions—Arrival at Annamooka—Transactions there—Visited by Feenou, a principal Chief from Tongataboo—His Reception—Frequently dines on board the Resolution—Propensity of the Natives to pilfering—Punishments inflicted on them—Account of Annamooka—Proceed to Hapaee.

HAVING failed of receiving any effectual supply from Wateeoo, they quitted it, and steered to an island which they had discovered three days before. They got up with it about ten in the morning, when Captain Cook dispatched Mr. Gore with two boats, to learn whether they could land, and get subsistence for their cattle. Though a reef surrounded the land, and a considerable surf broke against the rocks, when the boats reached the west side of the island, they ventured in, and Mr. Gore, with his attendants arrived safe on shore. The supply procured here was about two hundred cocoa-nuts for the adventurers, and some grass and other food for the cattle. This island is situated about four leagues from Wateeoo, the inhabi-

* The restrained situation of these gentlemen afforded them very little opportunity of observing the country; their observations therefore could only be directed to the surrounding objects. What first attracted their notice, was the number of people, which at least amounted to two thousand. Most of those who came on board the ships were of an inferior class; but many which were beheld on shore had a superior dignity of demeanor, and their complexion was much whiter. In general, they had their hair, which was long and black, tied on the crown of the head. Many of the young men were perfect models in point of symmetry, and of a delicate complexion. Their general dress consisted of a piece of cloth wrapped about the waist: others wore conical caps, made of the core of a cocoa-nut, interwoven with beads. At their ears hung pieces of the membraneous part of some plant, or some odoriferous flower. The chiefs, and others of elevated rank, had two little balls, made of bone, attached to a small cord round their necks. Red feathers announce eminent distinction, and are worn only by the chiefs, and the female dancers. Some of the men and women were punctured all over the sides and back. No personal deformities were observed, except in a few individuals, who had scars of broad ulcers remaining on the face and other parts.

Many of the natives were armed with spears and clubs; the latter of which were about six feet long; the spears were generally of twice that length: some of them, however, were so short, as to seem intended only for darts. Their canoes were thought superior to any that had been exhibited in any other island in the south seas.

tants of which call it *Otakootaia;* it is supposed not to exceed three miles in circuit. This island is totally destitute of water, and cocoa-palms were the common trees found in it. A beautiful cuckoo, of a chesnut brown, variegated with black, was the only bird seen among the trees. On the shore were observed some blue and white herons, curlews, egg-birds, and a great quantity of noddies.

A lizard of a most forbidding aspect was seen running up a tree: moths and butterflies of various kinds were numerous*.

The boats being hoisted in, they made sail to the northward: they got sight of Hervey's island by day-break on the 6th, at the distance of about three leagues. They approached it about eight, and saw several canoes coming from the shore towards the ships. They were much surprised at this circumstance, as no indications of inhabitants were to be seen, when the island was first discovered by Captain Cook in 1773.

Advancing still towards the island, six or seven double canoes came near our navigators, with several men in each of them. At a little distance from the ship they stopped, when Omai could hardly prevail on them to come along-side: they absolutely refused to trust themselves on board; but they attempted to steal some oars out of the Discovery's boat, and struck a man for endeavouring to obstruct the depredators. They also cut away a net containing meat, which hung over the stern of that ship, and refused to restore it; though they afterwards permitted the navigators to purchase it of them. Those who assembled about the Resolution, behaved equally daring and disorderly. If pieces of paper, or any other trivial articles were thrown to them, they caught at them with the greatest avidity; and if any such article fell into the sea, they immediately plunged in to swim after it†.

Captain Cook dispatched Lieutenant King, with two armed boats to reconnoitre the coast: the boats returned at three, and Mr. King informed Captain Cook that he could find no anchorage for the ships, and that the boats could proceed no farther than the outer edge of the reef, which was a quarter of a mile from the dry land. That multitudes of the natives came upon the reef, armed with clubs and pikes, as if they intended to oppose his landing; though at the same time they threw cocoa-nuts at the Europeans, and solicited them to come on shore. In the mean time the women were remarkably active, in bringing down an additional supply of darts and spears.

As Captain Cook could not bring the ships to anchor, he thought an attempt to procure grass would be attended with delay and danger: he therefore pursued such measures as he thought most expedient for the preservation of the cattle. Resolving to bear away for the Friendly Islands, where he knew he could be furnished with what he wanted, he ordered Captain Clerke to keep a league a-head of the Resolution; as his ship could best claw off the land, which they might possibly fall in with in their passage. He deemed it necessary to get into the latitude of Palmerston's and Savage Islands, which he had discovered in 1774; that, in case of necessity, recourse might be had to them. To prevent the unnecessary consumption of water, Captain Cook ordered the still to be kept at work a whole day, in consequence of which fiftcen gallons of fresh water were procured.

On the 10th they had plenty of rain and thunder; some advantage was derived from the former, as a sufficient quantity of rain-water was collected to fill five of their puncheons. At day-break on the 13th they perceived Palmerston's Island, bearing west by south, but did not get up with it till the next morning at eight. Captain Cook then dispatched three boats from the Resolution, and one from the Discovery, with an intelligent officer in each to search for a convenient

* No regular inhabitants were now permanently attached to the island, but a few empty huts informed us that it was at least occasionally visited. Monuments, consisting of several large stones, were erected under the shade of trees: others of smaller stones were inclosed, where probably their dead had been interred. Mr. Gore left some nails and a hatchet in one of the huts, for the use of future visitors of the island.

† Though the distance between Hervey's Island and Wateeoo is not very considerable, the inhabitants are very different both in person and disposition. The colour of the natives of Hervey's Island, was of a deeper cast than that of the natives of Wateeoo; and several of them have a fierce savage aspect, like the natives of New Zealand. Not one of them, however, had adopted the mode of puncturing or tatooing their bodies. Their language bore a stronger resemblance of the dialect of Otaheite, than that of Mangeea or Wateeoo. They said the name of their island was Teronggemou Atooa; and that they were subject to Teerevatooeah, king of Wateeoo. Their food consists of cocoa-nuts, fish, and turtle. Their canoes are large, and well built, and resemble those of Wateeoo.

venient landing place; absolute necessity requiring immediate provender for their cattle, which would otherwise have been starved.

What is named Palmerston's Island consists of about nine or ten small islets, connected together by a reef of coral rocks, and lying in a circular direction. The boats were disappointed in their examination of the most south-easterly islet; but running down to the second, they instantly landed: Captain Cook then bore down with the ships, till they were a-breast of the place, where they kept standing off and on, no bottom being to be found to anchor upon. The island was indeed uninhabited, except by the party who had landed from their boats*.

Except a piece of a canoe found upon the beach, no traces were discoverable of inhabitants having ever been here: Some little brown rats were indeed perceived upon this island, which created no small degree of surprise among the party. The boats being laden, Captain Cook returned on board, leaving Mr. Gore and his associates to pass the night on shore, to be ready for business the next morning.

A sufficient supply of subsistence for the cattle being procured by the 15th, Captain Cook ordered all his people on board by sun-set on that day: but, having very little wind, he determined to employ the next day in endeavouring to get some cocoa-nuts for the crews, from the next island to leeward. They found plenty of them, but it was a tedious operation to convey them to the boats. Omai, who was of the party, caught with a scoop-net as many fish as were found sufficient for a repast, besides a liberal supply for each of the ships. In these excursions to uninhabited islands, Omai was infinitely serviceable: he caught the fish, and cooked them, as well as the birds they killed, after the fashion of his country, with a dexterity and cheerfulness that did him honour.

The islet they last came from is somewhat larger than the other, and abounding with cocoa-palms. On the beach two pieces of board were found, one of which was wretchedly carved, and an elliptical paddle: these were probably a part of the same canoe, the remains of which had been seen on the other beach. Crabs were not so plentiful here as at the last place, but scorpions and other insects were numerous: among the rest were some large spotted eels, which strove to raise themselves out of the water, and seemed to menace their pursuers. There were snappers, parrot-fish, and a brown spotted rock fish; and when the tide flowed, several sharks came with it, some of which were destroyed by our sailors.

The islets comprehended under the general term of Palmerston's island, appear to be the summits of a reef of coral rock, covered only with a thin coat of sand, though cloathed with a variety of trees and plants. Having left Palmerston's Island, the navigators steered west to proceed to Annamooka: they encountered variable winds, with squalls, thunder, and much rain: and as the showers produced a more plentiful supply of water in one hour, than could be procured by distillation in a month, the still was abandoned and laid aside. The heat, which had been excessive for about a month, became more disagreeable in this close rainy weather; and fears were entertained that it would soon be noxious; but it fortunately happened that not a single person was ill on board either of the ships.

They passed Savage Island, which had been discovered by Captain Cook in 1774, in the night between the 24th and 25th; and, on the morning

* About noon one of the boats returned, laden with scurvy-grass and young cocoa-trees, which proved a salutary repast for the animals on board. Mr. Gore, who commanded the party upon this expedition, informed them that the island abounded with such produce, as well as with the Wharra-tree and cocoa-nuts. A sufficient supply of these articles was therefore procured before the party quitted the station. This island is about a mile in circumference, consisting almost entirely of a coral sand, with a small mixture of blackish mould. This poor soil is, however, covered with shrubs and bushes. A great number of man of war birds, tropic birds, and boobies were seen; the latter were so exceedingly tame, as to permit any one to take them off their nests, which consist only of a few sticks loosely put together. Having been long confined to a salt diet, our people killed plenty of each sort for food, which, though not of the most delicate kind, were highly acceptable to them. Plenty of red crabs were seen creeping about among the trees; and several fish were caught, which had been left in holes upon the reef when the sea retreated.

At one part of the reef, which bounds the lake within, a large bed of coral afforded a most enchanting prospect; and this delightful scene was greatly improved by the multitude of beautiful fishes, gently gliding along, seemingly in perfect security: their colours were the most vivid that can be imagined; blue, red, black, yellow, &c. far excelling any thing that can be produced by art. Though transported with this wonderful prospect, some regret was however experienced, that a work so astonishingly elegant should be concealed in a place so seldom explored by the human eye.

of

of the 28th, saw the islands to the eastward of Annamooka, about five leagues distant. After steering to the south, they hauled up for Annamooka, and, at the approach of night, the weather being squally, and accompanied with rain, they anchored in fifteen fathoms water.

Soon after our navigators had anchored, two canoes paddled towards them, and without hesitation came along-side of them. One of the canoes contained four men, and the other three, having with them some bread-fruit, sugar-cane, plantains, and cocoa-nuts, which they bartered with the Europeans for nails. When these canoes had taken their leave, another arrived, but as night was approaching they also thought proper to depart. These visitors must have come five miles to traffic with them, as Komango, the nearest island to our European adventurers, was at least so far distant from them; a proof of the high estimation they affix even to their most trivial articles.

At four the next morning, Captain Cook dispatched Lieutenant King, with two boats to Komango, to procure refreshments; and at five made the signal to weigh to proceed to Annamooka. At day-light, six or seven canoes arrived, laden with two pigs, some fowls, wood-pigeons, rails, and violet-coloured coots; besides fruits and roots, which they exchanged for hatchets, nails, beads, &c. About noon Mr. King's boat returned with seven hogs, several fowls, some vegetables, and grass for the animals. His party was treated with great civility at Komango. The inhabitants were not very numerous, and their huts were miserable habitations. Tooboulangee, the chief, and another, came on board with Mr. King. They brought a hog, as a present to Captain Cook, and promised some more the following day *.

The Captain ordered a boat to be hoisted out, and the master to sound the south-west side of Annamooka. When he returned, he reported that no fresh water was to be had, but at a considerable distance inland; and that, even there, it was neither plentiful nor good; Captain Cook therefore resolved to anchor on the north-side of the island, where, in his last voyage, he found a convenient place for watering and landing. Though within a league of it, they did not reach it till five in the afternoon, being retarded by the multiplicity of canoes crowding round the ships, laden with the produce of their island. Several women, as well as men, appeared in the canoe, and used the paddle with as much dexterity as the males; nor were they less expert in the true spirit of bartering. They came to an anchor in eighteen fathoms water; Captain Cook resuming the station he had occupied, when he visited Annamooka three years before.

The next day Captain Cook, accompanied by Captain Clerke and others, went on shore to fix upon a spot for erecting his observatories; the natives having readily granted them permission, and accommodated them with a boat-house. Toobou, the chief, conducted Captain Cook and Omai to his pleasant habitation, in the centre of his plantation, surrounded with a grass-plat for the sole purpose of cleansing their feet, a method also much practised at the Friendly Islands. While they were on shore, they bartered for some hogs and fruit, and when they arrived on board, the ships were exceedingly crowded by the natives, who came loaded with articles of refreshment.

In the afternoon Captain Cook landed again with a party of marines, but he returned to the ship in the evening, leaving Mr. King in command upon the island. Taipa was now become the particular friend of our Europeans; and, wishing to be near their party, had a house carried on men's shoulders, to be next the shed which the party occupied: various operations began on shore the next day, hay-making, filling the water-casks, cutting wood, &c. Taipa harangued the natives in a long speech. The subject could only be guessed at, which was supposed to instruct them how to behave to the adventurers. His eloquence, however, occasioned a plentiful supply of provisions the next day.

They were visited on the 6th by a chief from Tongataboo, named Feenou; he was introduced by Taipa, as king of all the Friendly Isles. Captain Cook was now informed, that on their arrival, a canoe had been dispatched to Tongataboo with the intelligence, which occasioned his

* The boats being a-board, they stood for Annamooka; meeting with some obstacles, they found it necessary to spend the night under sail. The next morning they were farther off than they had been the preceding evening, and the wind was then right in their teeth. In the evening they anchored in thirty-nine fathoms water, four miles distant from Annamooka. Tooboulangee and his friend performed their promise of bringing some hogs for Captain Cook.

his coming to Annamooka. On his arrival, all the natives saluted him by bowing their heads as low as his feet, the soles of which they afterwards touched with the palm and back-part of each hand. In the afternoon Captain Cook went to pay a visit to this great man, having first received a present of two fish, brought on board from him by one of his attendants. When the captain landed, Feenou approached him. After the first salutation, Captain Cook requested to know if he was king; when Taipa eagerly answered for him, and enumerated one hundred and fifty-three islands, of which he was the sovereign. Soon after this grand visitor, attended by five or six servants, accompanied them on board. In the evening the captain attended them on shore in his boat, into which three hogs were ordered to be conveyed by the chief.

The following short narrative will give some idea of the authority exercised here, over the inferior people. While Feenou was on board the Resolution, an inferior chief ordered all the natives to quit the post the Europeans occupied. Some of them, however, ventured to return, when he beat them most unmercifully with a large stick. One of them, in particular, received so violent a blow, that, after lying motionless for some time, he was removed from the place in convulsions. This wanton excess of cruelty seemed to afford mirth for the author of the catastrophe *.

Though Feenou was so fond of the company of our adventurers, as to dine every day on board, he did not always partake of their fare. On the 10th his servants brought him a mess which had been dressed on shore, consisting of fish, soup, and yams, boiled or stewed in cocoa-nut liquor, instead of water. The captain tasted of the mess, and was so well pleased with it, that he afterwards ordered some fish to be dressed in the same way; but the imitation attempted by his cook, was much inferior to that prepared for Feenou.

Having almost exhausted the island of every article of food, our navigators removed from the shore the observatories, &c. intending to sail as soon as possible. Feenou, fearing that the Captain meant to proceed to Tongataboo, earnestly entreated him to alter his plan, and warmly recommended a group of islands, called Hapaee, where he assured him he could be plentifully supplied with every refreshment; and even offered to attend them thither in person: Hapaee was therefore made choice of, and, as it had not been visited by any European ships, the surveying it became an object to Captain Cook: on the morning of the 14th they got under sail, and left Annamooka †.

Our adventurers frequently amused themselves in walking up the country, and shooting wild ducks, resembling widgeons, which are very numerous on the salt lake, and on the pool where they procured their water. From occasional estimations of the inhabitants, at different times, it was conjectured that the island contained about two thousand inhabitants.

In the direct track to Hapaee, a great number of small isles are seen. They are scattered at unequal distances, and most of them are as high as Annamooka. In general they are entirely

* On the 6th and 7th Feenou dined with Captain Cook; on the last of these days he was attended by Taipa, Toobou, and some other chiefs. None but Taipa, however, was permitted to sit at table with Feenou, or even to eat in his presence; a circumstance which afforded pleasure to Captain Cook, as he had generally a larger company than he chose. A large junk axe having been stolen by one of the natives, on the day they arrived at Annamooka, application was made to Feenou for a restoration of it; who gave such peremptory orders for that purpose, that the instrument was brought on board before the repast was concluded. On the 9th of May one of the natives was detected carrying a bolt out of the ship, for which offence the Captain ordered a dozen lashes to be given him, and he was further sentenced to be confined till he should pay a hog for his liberty.

When any of them were detected in the act of thieving, their masters frequently advised the persons they were attempting to plunder, to kill them instantly; but they not choosing to inflict that punishment, they usually escaped with impunity. Captain Clerke, however, contrived a mode of treatment, which was supposed to have a good effect: immediately on detection, he ordered their heads to be completely shaved, and thus exhibited them to the ridicule and detestation of their countrymen; and put the Europeans upon their guard when such depredators were on the ot.

† This island is somewhat higher than the other small isles that surround it. In the centre of it there is a salt-water lake, about a mile and a half in breadth, though they could not trace its having any communication with the sea. Not a stream of fresh water is to be found in any part of the island. Yams and plantains form their principal plantations; many of which are extensive, and enclosed with fences of reed. The bread-fruit and cocoa-nut trees are irregularly interspersed, but principally near the habitations of the natives.

covered with trees, each having the appearance of a beautiful garden placed in the sea. In the afternoon they steered to the north, leaving Toofoa and Kao on their larboard. Being within about two leagues of Toofoa, they observed the smoke of it several times in the day. There is a volcano upon it, of which the Friendly Islanders entertain very superstitious notions. On the 15th, about ten o'clock, Feenou came on board, and continued with the navigators all day. He brought with him two hogs, and a quantity of fruit. In the course of the day several canoes happened to come to barter for the latter article, which was very acceptable to them, as their stock began to be low. In the course of the night they plainly saw flames issuing from the volcano upon Toofoa.

At day-break on the 16th they steered for Hapaee, which was in sight; at nine they saw it plainly, forming three islands, nearly equal in size; and soon after a fourth appeared to the southward of these, as large as any of the others: they are all four included under the general name of Hapaee, though the most northern of them is called Haanno, the next Foa, the third Lefooga, and the fourth Hoolaiva. By sun-set they got up with the northernmost of these isles, but found no anchorage; and had another night to spend under sail, with land and breakers in every direction. Feenou, who had been on board all day, proceeded to Hapaee in the evening, taking Omai with him in the canoe. He generously kept up a good fire the whole night by way of land-mark.

At day-light on the 17th, being then close in with Foa, they perceived it was joined to Haanno, by a reef passing from one island to the other. A boat was dispatched to look for anchorage, and a proper place was found, having twenty-four fathoms depth of water. In this station they were about three quarters of a mile from the shore, and as they lay before a creek in the reef, it was convenient landing at all times.

SECTION VII.

Arrival at Hapaee—Reception there—Taipa harangues the People—Cautions them against stealing—Presents—Combats with Clubs—Wrestling—Boxing—Marines exercised—Dance—Fire-Works Nocturnal Entertainments—Singing and Dancing by Men and Women—Captain Cook goes to Lefooga—Description of that Island—Occurrences there—A Female Oculist—Singular Mode of Shaving—A remarkable Mount and Stone—Hoolaive described—Account of Poulaho King of the Friendly Isles—The Captain accompanies him on Shore—Quit the Hapaee Islands—Kootoo described—Meeting of Poulaho and Feenou—The Ships strike against the Rocks—Arrive at Tongataboo.

THEY were no sooner anchored than they were surrounded with a multitude of canoes, and their ships were instantly filled with the natives; bringing with them hogs, fowls, roots, and fruit, which they exchanged for hatchets, beads, and cloth. Feenou and Omai having come on board to introduce Captain Cook to the people of the island, he soon accompanied them on shore for that purpose. The chief conducted the Captain to a hut on the beach, which had been prepared for his reception. In this Feenou, Captain Cook, and Omai were seated: the other chiefs, and the multitude appearing on the outside; and they also seated themselves. Captain Cook being requested to mention how long he intended to stay, answered five days. Taipa was therefore ordered to proclaim this intelligence to the people. In consequence of which he exhorted both old and young to regard Captain Cook as a friend, who meant to continue with them a few days; and that, during his stay, they would not pilfer any thing from him, or offend him in any other manner. He informed them that they were expected to bring hogs, fowls, and fruit to the ship, and enumerated the articles they were to receive in the exchange.

Soon after Taipa had thus addressed the assembly, Feenou left them; on which it was intimated to Captain Cook by Taipa, that a present was expected from him to Earoupa, the chief of the island. Without hesitation the Captain gave him such articles as far exceeded his

his expectation. This liberality occasioned similar demands from two other chiefs who were present, and even from Taipa himself. Soon after the last favour was conferred, Feenou returned, and pretended to censure so lavish a distribution of valuable articles; but this was considered as finesse. Feenou now resumed his seat, ordering Earoupa to sit near him, and harangue the people as Taipa had done; an injunction which he readily complied with.

These ceremonies over, the chief conducted Captain Cook to the three stagnant pools of what he called fresh water; in one of which that fluid was tolerable, and the situation commodious for filling their casks. On his return to his former situation, he found a baked hog and some yams, ready dressed, to be conveyed on board for his dinner. He invited Feenou and his friends to partake of the repast. Dinner being over, the captain conducted them on shore, and, before he returned, received a fine large turtle, and some yams, as a present from the chief.

In the morning of the 18th, Feenou and Omai, who now slept on shore with the chief, came on board to request Captain Cook's presence upon the island. He accompanied them, and was conducted to the place where he had been seated the preceding day, and where he had observed a large concourse of people had assembled. He supposed something extraordinary was in agitation, but could not hazard a conjecture upon the occasion, nor could Omai give him any information. Soon after he was seated, about a hundred of the natives appeared, laden with yams, bread-fruit, plantains, cocoa-nuts, and sugar canes, and their burdens were deposited on their left. A number of others arrived, laden in the same manner, whose articles were collected into two piles on the right side. To these were added two pigs, and half a dozen fowls; and to those on the left, six pigs and two turtles. Earoupa seated himself before the articles on the left side, and another chief before those upon the right. When this collection of provisions was properly arranged, the bearers of it joined the multitude, who formed a circle round the whole. A number of men, armed with clubs, then entered this circle; where they paraded about for a few minutes, and half of them retired to one side, the other half joining the other side, and seating themselves before the spectators. Soon after they successively entertained the multitude with single combats; one champion from one side challenging those of the other side, by words or gestures, to send one of their party to oppose him. The challenge was, in general, accepted, and the two combatants began; when one of them yielded, the victor squatted himself down before the chief, after which he immediately rose up and retired. Some old men, who seemed to preside as judges, concisely gave their opinion, and the multitude celebrated the glory of the conqueror in two or three loud huzzas *.

The diversions being ended, the chief informed Captain Cook that the provisions on their right hand were a present to Omai; and those on the left, making two-thirds of the whole, were intended to be taken on board for him. Four boats were loaded with the munificence of Feenou, whose favours far exceeded any that Captain Cook had ever received, from the sovereigns of any of the islands which he had visited in the Pacific Ocean. He readily embraced the first opportunity of convincing Feenou that he was not insensible of his liberality †.

The music that accompanied the dances was produced by two hollow logs of wood, by beat-

* A couple of stout wenches soon after stepped forth, and began boxing with great dexterity, but the engagement was of short duration; for in the space of about half a minute, one of them yielded. The victorious heroine was much applauded by the spectators: though our navigators expressed some disapprobation at this part of the entertainment, it did not deter two other females from entering the lists, who seemed to be very spirited girls, and would probably have given each other a good drubbing, if two old women had not interposed to part them. About three thousand spectators were present when these combats were exhibited, and every thing was conducted with the most perfect cordiality and good humour on all sides.

† Feenou having expressed a desire to see the marines perform their exercise, Captain Cook ordered them all ashore on the 20th. They went through their various evolutions, and fired several vollies, which gave great satisfaction to the numerous spectators. The chief, in his turn, entertained our Europeans with a kind of dance, performed by men, in which one hundred and five persons were engaged; each having an instrument in his hand resembling a paddle. With these instruments several flourishes were made, accompanied with a different attitude or movement of the body. After having first ranged themselves in three lines, they successively changed their stations by different evolutions. During the last movement, one of them came forward and performed an antic dance before Captain Cook, which terminated the entertainment.

ing on them with sticks, and a kind of vocal chorus, in which all the performers joined; their song being rather melodious. They preferred the drum to any of our European instruments, and even pronounced that inferior to their own. The music of the French horns disgusted them exceedingly, not only here, but at many of the other islands.

To give them a favourable opinion of the English amusements, Captain Cook ordered some fire-works to be prepared; and, after it was dark, exhibited them in the presence of Feenou, and a vast multitude of people. They were so pleased and astonished at this performance, that they admitted the scale was turned in favour of the English.

As soon as the fire-works were ended, a succession of dances began, which had been prepared by Feenou. A band of music, or chorus, consisting of eighteen men, seated themselves in the centre of a circle formed by the numerous spectators. Four or five of the performers had each pieces of large bamboo, of different length, each played on by one man, who held it almost vertically. By constantly striking the ground, though slowly, with the close end, a variety of notes are produced, according to the different lengths of the instruments, but all of them were of the hollow kind; which was counteracted by one who struck nimbly a piece of the same substance lying upon the ground, furnishing an acute tone. The whole of the band was so judiciously conducted, that the most perfect judge of the modulation of sweet sounds, could not avoid confessing the vast power and effect of this simple harmony.

About a quarter of an hour after the commencement of the concert, twenty women entered the circle, whose heads were decorated with garlands of crimson flowers. They encircled those of the chorus, and began by singing a soft air. The women accompanied their song with many graceful motions of their hands and feet. Dancing to a quicker measure now succeeded, and the rapidity of their music increased; their attitudes and gestures being varied with wonderful dexterity. This ballet was succeeded by one performed by fifteen men; and though some of them appeared old, time had not robbed them of their agility. Towards the conclusion, the rapidity of their music and dancing so much increased, that it became difficult to distinguish their different movements.

After a considerable interval, twelve other men advanced, who were not remarkable for their dexterity. Nine women then exhibited themselves, who sat down opposite the hut where the chief had placed himself. A man immediately rose, and gave the first of the women a blow on the back with both his fists joined. The second and third received the same treatment; but when he came to the fourth, he struck her upon the breast. On seeing this, a person rising up from among the crowd, knocked down this man with a blow on the head, and he was quietly conveyed away: but the other five women did not escape the extraordinary discipline, for they were all treated in the same manner by a person who succeeded him. These women having met with the disapprobation of several of the spectators, were twice compelled to repeat their dance.

The festivity of this memorable night concluded with a dance, in which the principal people assisted. In many respects it resembled the preceding one: but the two last dances in particular, were universally approved by all the spectators. They were perfectly in time, and some of their gestures were so expressive, that it might be truly said, they spoke the language that accompanied them.

On the 21st of May Captain Cook made an excursion into the island of Lefooga, on foot, which he found to be, in many respects, superior to Annamooka, and the plantations more numerous and extensive. On account of the sandiness of the soil, many parts of the country near the sea continue waste; but in the internal part of the island the soil is better, and bears evident marks of improved cultivation. Many of the plantations are so judiciously enclosed as to form spacious public roads. Large spots, covered with the paper mulberry-trees, were observed; and plants and fruit trees were very numerous. To these the captain made some addition, by sowing the seeds of melons, Indian corn, pumpkins, &c. Near the landing place, a mount presented itself, of the height of two or three feet, on which four or five little huts were erected, wherein the bodies of some persons of distinction had been interred. This island is about seven miles in length, but its breadth, in some places, does not exceed three. The shore is either a sandy beach, or a coral rock.

When the captain returned from his excursion, he found a large sailing canoe fastened to the stern

stern of the Resolution. In this canoe he recognised Latoolibouła, whom he had seen during his last voyage, at Tongataboo, and whom he then supposed to be the king of that island. He refused to come on board, and continued sitting in his canoe with an air of uncommon gravity. The islanders called him *Areekee*, which signifies king; a title which the Europeans had not heard any of them bestow on Feenou, however extensive his authority over them had appeared to be. Latoolibouła continued under the stern till the evening, when he thought proper to depart. Though Feenou was on board the Resolution at this time, neither of these chiefs took the smallest notice of each other.

On the following day some of the natives stole a tarpaulin, and other articles, when Captain Cook applied to Feenou to exert his authority to get them restored; but his application proved ineffectual. On the 23d, as the Europeans were preparing to leave the island, Feenou and Taipa came along-side in a canoe, and informed them that they were going to Vavaoo, an island to the northward of Hapaee. They said it was their intention to procure an additional supply of hogs, and begged them not to sail till their return, which would not exceed four or five days; after which Feenou would accompany them to Tongataboo*.

Captain Cook, finding few attendants to supply the ships with necessaries, resolved to change his station. They accordingly made sail on the 26th for the southward, and hauled into a bay between the north end of Hoolaiva, and the south of Lefooga, and there anchored: Mr. Bligh, having been sent to sound the bay, found in it from fourteen to twenty fathoms water, with a bottom principally of sand. Lefooga and Hoolaiva are separated from each other by a reef of coral rocks, dry at low water. One of the gentlemen, who landed in the last-mentioned island, saw no appearance of cultivation, and only one miserable hut, inhabited by a man employed to catch fish and turtle: this circumstance is the more remarkable, as it communicates so immediately with Lefooga which is well cultivated.

On the 27th, at break of day, the captain made the signal to weigh, but the wind being unsettled and variable, two persons were sent to examine the channels. About noon a large sailing canoe came under their stern, in which was a person named Poulaho, or Futtafaihe, or both; who was declared by the natives on board, to be king of Tongataboo, Annamooka, Hapaee, and the neighbouring islands; at the same time asserting that Feenou was not the king, but a subordinate chief, though he possessed great power. Poulaho was invited on board by the captain, and, being attended by two fat hogs, was not deemed an unwelcome guest. This dignified personage was not very tall, but unwieldy, and almost shapeless with corpulence. He appeared to be about forty, with straight hair, and features very different from those of the majority of the people. He was grave and sensible; and his remarks and questions concerning the objects which presented themselves on board the ship, were pertinent and judicious. Having viewed the cattle, and other novelties, he was requested to walk down into the cabin: some of his retinue objected to this proposal, lest it should happen that some of the people might walk over his head, a circumstance that could not be permitted. Poulaho, however, waved all ceremony, and descended without any previous stipulation. He sat down to dinner with our navigators, but ate and drank very sparingly, and afterwards desired Captain Cook to accompany him on shore. Omai was asked to be one of the party, but he was too faithfully attached to Feenou to be officiously civil to his competitor. Captain Cook attended the chief in his own boat, having first given and received considerable presents. The chief was carried out of the boat by his own subjects, on a board resembling a hand-barrow; after which he seated himself in a small house near the shore. The captain was placed at his side, and his attendants formed a semi-circle before them, on the

* Captain Cook consented to wait the return of this chief, and on the 25th he went into a house where a woman was dressing the eyes of a child who seemed blind. The instruments employed by her were two slender wooden probes, with which she brushed the eyes so severely as to make them bleed. In the same house a woman was seen shaving a child's head with a shark's tooth, fastened into the end of a stick: the hair was first wetted with a rag dipped in water, and then by a proper application of the instrument, she completed the business as effectually as if a razor had been employed. The natives of these islands, however, shave themselves with the assistance of two shells; and though it is attended with a tedious process, it was as common for the English sailors to go ashore to have their beards scraped after the mode of Hapaee, as it was for their chiefs to come on board to be shaved by British barbers.

outside of the house. An old woman sat near the chief, with a fan in her hand, to prevent his being incommoded by the flies. Not any of his people presumed to speak to him standing; and, just before they left him, his attendants paid him obeisance by bowing their heads down to the sole of his foot, and touching it with the upper and under side of the fingers of each hand*.

On the 29th the Europeans weighed with a fine breeze at north-east, followed by several sailing canoes, in one of which was Poulaho, the king. They were also honoured with the company of a chief named Toobouceitoa, just arrived from Tongataboo; who, as soon as he came, sent away his canoe, declaring that he and his companions would sleep on board; furnishing, in the whole, a cabin full of visitors for Captain Cook. But he did not repine at the inconvenience, as they brought with them plenty of provisions as presents to him.

On the 31st, at day-break, they stood for the channel between Kotoo, and the reef of rocks to the westward of it, but they found the wind insufficient to lead them through. It now blew fresh, with squalls and rain; and, during the night, the Resolution, by a small change of the wind, fetching too far to the windward, was near running full upon a low sandy isle, named Potooah, encompassed with breakers. The people had fortunately been just ordered upon deck, to put the ship about, and most of them being in their respective stations, the necessary movements were were judiciously and alertly performed, which preserved them from destruction.

The natives on board were so alarmed by this narrow escape, that they were anxious to get ashore; a boat was therefore hoisted out, on the return of day-light, and the officer who commanded her was ordered, after landing them a Kotoo, to sound for anchorage along the reef that projects from that island. They found it necessary to cast anchor in fifty fathoms water, the sandy isle bearing east by north, about the distance of one mile. Here they remained till the 4th of June, where they were frequently visited by the king, by Toobouceitoa, and by the people from the neighbouring islands to traffic with them. Captain Cook landed on Kotoo, to take a survey of it: it is about two miles in length, and in a tolerable state of cultivation, though thinly inhabited. On returning to the boat, they passed some ponds of dirty brackish water, and saw a burying-place.

They weighed on the 4th, and made sail towards Annamooka, where they anchored the next morning almost in the same station which they so had lately occupied. Captain Cook soon after went on shore, and saw the islanders very busy in their plantations. In the course of the day, about two hundred of them assembled on the beach, and traded very briskly. It appeared that they had cultivated large tracts since their last visit, and several places had been sown with melon and cucumber-seeds†.

On the 8th they weighed anchor, and steered for Tongataboo with a gentle breeze, accompanied by fifteen sailing vessels belonging to the islanders, every one of which outran the ships. The royal canoe was distinguished from the rest by a small bundle of red grass, attached to the end of a pole, and fixed in the stern of the canoe, like the British ensign staffs. At five in the afternoon

* After due deliberation the navigators resolved to return to Annamooka by the same route which they had so lately experienced to be a safe one; and would have sailed the next morning, if the wind had not been very unsettled. Poulaho came early on board, with a red feathered cap as a present to Captain Cook. These curious caps are composed of the tail-feathers of the tropic bird, intermixed with the red feathers of the paroquet, and have the form of a semicircle. The chief left the ship in the evening; but his brother, and some of his attendants, remained all night on board

† On the 6th Feenou arrived from Vavaoo, and propagated a report that several canoes, laden with hogs and other provisions, had been lost in coming from that island in the late tempestuous weather. The truth of this tale was very much doubted; the real reason being supposed the impossibility of procuring at Vavaoo the expected supplies. On the succeeding morning Poulaho, and some other chiefs arrived, when Captain Cook happened to be ashore with Feenou, who now acknowledged the impropriety of his conduct in assuming a character to which he was not entitled: he declared that Poulaho was the acknowledged sovereign of Tongataboo and the adjacent isles. The captain left him, and repaired to the king, whom he found sitting with a few of the natives before him; but as great numbers were hastening to pay their respects to him, the circle rapidly increased. Feenou approached, and placed himself among the rest that sat before Poulaho, as attendants on his majesty. He at first seemed abashed and agitated, but afterwards appeared to be collected. Some conversation passed between these two chiefs, who attended the captain on board to dinner, but only Poulaho sat at table. Feenou made his obeisance in the usual submissive mode, and then retired from the cabin. It was now evident, beyond a doubt, that he could neither eat nor drink in the king's presence.

Woman of Tongatabee.
Woman of Amboyna.

Warren sculp

afternoon two small islands were descried; one of which was called Hoonga Hapaee, and had only five inhabitants; the other was named Hoonga Tonga, and had no inhabitants. Steering by the direction of their pilot, they were insensibly drawn upon a large flat, on which lay innumerable rocks of coral, below the surface of the sea. With the utmost caution, they were unable to prevent the ship from striking on one of them: nor did the Discovery, though behind, keep clear of them.

Being assured by several of the natives of Tongataboo, that they should meet with deep water further in, they found their information was true, and about four o'clock found good anchoring ground. They weighed, and stood in till dark, when they anchored in nine fathoms water. While they were plying up to the harbour, the king continued sailing round them in his canoe; a number of small canoes was at the same time among the ships, two of which, not getting instantly out of the way of his royal vessel, he ran over them with the most perfect unconcern.

They arrived at their intended station about two in the afternoon, on the 10th of June. It was a convenient place, formed by the shore of Tongataboo, and two little islands. Here both the ships anchored over a sandy bottom, where the depth of water was ten fathoms.

SECTION VIII.

Reception at Tongataboo—Distribution of Pork, Yams, and Kava—The Natives flock to the Europeans from all Quarters—Excursion of the Captains—Description of the Village where the Chiefs reside—Interviews with Mareewagee and Toubou—Presents from the King's Son—A grand Haiva—Fire-Works, Wrestling, Boxing—Presents to the Chiefs—Poulaho, Feenou, &c. arrested—The King's Present and Haiva—Some Officers robbed of their Musquets, &c. by the Natives—Omai interferes—Probable Consequences of this Outrage—A Visit to Poulaho—A Eiatooka described—Entertainment at Poulaho's House—His Mourning Ceremony—Disgusting Method of preparing Kava—Account of Onevy—Messrs. King and Anderson entertained by Futtafaiha—Method of dressing and carving Hogs—Observations on the Country—Prepare for Departure—Description of the Island.

THEY had not been long at anchor off Tongataboo, when Captain Cook landed on the island, accompanied by Omai and several of the officers. The king, who was waiting to receive them on the beach, conducted them to a neat little house near the woods, having an extensive area before it, which he assured the captain was at his service during his continuance in the island. They had not been long in the house, when a great number of the natives assembled before them, and seated themselves upon the area. A root of the *kava* plant being presented to the king, he ordered it to be divided into pieces, and distributed among several persons of both sexes, who performed the operation of chewing it, preparatory to its constituting a bowl of their favourite liquor. A baked hog, and several baked yams, were also produced, and divided into ten portions. All these shares, except one, were given to some of those who were present; that which remained undisposed of, being probably reserved for the king himself. The liquor was next formally distributed: the first cup being presented to his majesty, he directed it to be given to a person who sat near him: the second was also brought to him, which he thought proper to keep: the third was tendered to Captain Cook; but as he was not much delighted with the delicate mode of preparing it, he politely transferred the intended compliment to Omai.

The remainder was portioned out to different people; several, however, withdrew, being prohibited from eating and drinking in his majesty's presence. Soon afterwards the greater part of them went away. It is somewhat remarkable, that the servants who distributed the meat and the kava, delivered it sitting, not only to the king, but to the other partakers.

Captain Cook, before he returned on board, endeavoured to find a watering-place, and at length

length discovered a pool, containing more excellent fluid of that kind than any he had ever tasted in these islands. The same morning a tent was pitched near the house appropriated by his majesty's order to their use. The horses and cattle were landed, and the observatory erected. The inhabitants, who flocked from all quarters with hogs, yams, cocoa-nuts, and other necessaries, were now become extremely numerous. Feenou residing in the neighbourhood, gave our Europeans daily proofs of his opulence and liberality, by the continuance of his valuable donations: Poulaho was equally attentive to them in this respect.

They were now informed of a person named Mareewagee, who was of very exalted rank, and equal, if not superior to Poulaho himself; but, being advanced in years, he chose a retired life, and appeared to have no inclination to honour them with a visit. This intelligence exciting the curiosity of Captain Cook, he signified to Poulaho his intention of waiting upon Mareewagee. The king agreed to accompany him; and they accordingly set out the next morning in the pinnace, Captain Clerke making one of the party in his own boat. Proceeding to the eastward of the small isles which form the harbour, they entered a spacious bay, and after rowing about three miles, landed amidst a great concourse of people, who received them with shouts and acclamations.

The crowd instantly separated, that Poulaho might pass without interruption, who took our Europeans into a small enclosure, and exchanged the piece of cloth he then wore, for a new piece folded with great delicacy: an old women assisted in this arrangement, and threw a large mat over his cloth. Being now asked where Mareewagee was, the gentlemen were astonished at the answer to that interrogation, which was, that he was gone down to the ships. He requested them, however, to accompany him to a *malaee*, or house of public resort; and, coming to a large area before it, he seated himself in the path, while they walked up to the house, and sat down in the front. After waiting, and repeating their enquiries, by the medium of Omai, whether they were to be introduced to Mareewagee; they received no answer. It was therefore suspected that the aged chief was purposely concealed from them, and they retired to their boats, much chagrined at their disappointment. But it afterwards appeared that the whole transaction originated from Omai's misunderstanding, and mistating the information which had been given him concerning the old chief*.

On the 13th, about noon, Mareewagee came within a small distance of our Europeans' temporary residence on shore, attended by a multitude of people of all ranks. In the afternoon, the two captains, and several of the other officers, accompanied by Feenou, went ashore to visit him. They saw a person sitting under a tree, with about forty yards of cloth spread before him, round which considerable numbers of people were seated. They supposed this to be the great personage, but Feenou gave them authentic information, and informed them that another, who was sitting on a piece of mat, was Mareewagee. To him they were introduced by Feenou, and he received them very graciously; requesting them to sit down by him. The name of the chief who sat under the tree, was Toobou, whom we shall hereafter call old Toobou, to distinguish him from Captain Furneau's friend. Both he and Mareewagee were venerable to behold! the latter was slender in his person, and seemed about seventy years of age. Old Toobou, though younger than Mareewagee, was corpulent, and almost blind from a disorder in his eyes.

Captain Cook, expecting to meet with only one chief, had provided but one present, which he divided between the two; but as it happened to be pretty considerable, both of them appeared perfectly satisfied. The navigators then entertained them about an hour with the music of two French horns and a drum; after which Captain Clerke fired off a pistol, which he took from his pocket, at which they seemed to be exceedingly delighted. Before the gentlemen took their leave of the two chiefs, the large piece of cloth was rolled up, and presented to Captain Cook, together with some cocoa-nuts.

Mareewagee went to see our Europeans who

* The place our gentlemen visited was a pleasant village, delightfully situated on the banks of the bay, where many of the principal persons of the island reside. Near the public roads are some large houses, with spacious grass-plats before them, which were said to belong to the king, and were probably the places where public assemblies were respectively convened.

were

were stationed on shore, and was struck with admiration at the sight of the cattle; the cross-cut saw also rivetted his attention. Towards noon, Poulaho came on board, attended by his son about twelve years of age: though the father dined with Captain Cook, the son was not permitted to sit down with him.

On the 15th Captain Cook received a message from old Toobou, requesting to see him on shore. He and Omai waited on him, whom they found sitting under the shade of a tree, with a large piece of cloth spread out before him. He desired them to approach him, and informed Omai that the cloth, some cocoa-nuts, and red feathers were intended as a present from him to Captain Cook. The latter thanked him for the favour, and requested him to go on board with him.

Being informed that young Fattafaihe, the king's son, desired to see him, Captain Cook obeyed the summons, and found the young prince and Omai seated under a canopy of fine cloth; with a large piece of a coarser kind, spread before and under them. A large boar was placed on one side, and a quantity of cocoa-nuts on the other. Many people sat round the cloth, among whom was Mareewagee, and others of eminence. As Poulaho and the captain were friends, the son requested to be comprehended in this friendship, and as a testimony of the captain's consent, that he would accept of the prince's present. Captain Cook readily agreed to this proposal, and invited them all to dine with him on board; in consequence of which the young prince, old Toobou, Mareewagee, several subordinate chiefs, and two old ladies accompanied the captain to the ship.

Mareewagee was dressed in a new piece of cloth, with six patches of red feathers on it: on his arrival on board, he put it off, and presented it to Captain Cook. Dinner being served up, not one of them would even sit down, or eat a morsel, as they were all *taboo*, intimating a prohibition. Why they were thus restrained at this time was not accounted for. Captain Cook was convinced, from several circumstances, of the supreme dignity of Poulaho and his son; he also now discovered that old Toobou and Mareewagee were brothers, aud that they were both men of immense property, and in high estimation with the people.

Captain Cook, on his landing, found Poulaho in the house near the tent, who immediately gave him a hog and a quantity of yams. In the evening a number of islanders came, and having seated themselves in a circle, sung to accompany the music of bamboo drums, placed in the centre. They burned the leaves of the *wharra* palm to produce a sufficient quantity of light*.

The Captain and Mr. Gore, happening to meet Feenou on their return from their excursion, conducted him and another chief on board to dinner; but, on its being served up, neither of them would eat a morsel, alledging that they were *taboo avy;* but on discovering that a pig and some yams had been dressed without *avy* water, they made a very hearty meal; and drank freely of wine, when they were assured that no water was in it. Hence it was inferred, that the use of water had, for some particular reason, been forbidden; or perhaps they did not like the water they then were accustomed to use, it being taken from the places where the islanders bathed.

The following day a grand *haiva* was given by Mareewagee, to which our navigators were invited. Before the temporary hut of this chief, a large space had been cleared for the express purpose. In the morning crowds of the natives came in from the country, each of which bore on his shoulder a long pole, at each end of which a yam was suspended. These poles and yams were deposited on each side of the open space, forming two large heaps, and were deco-

* In the mean time Mr. Anderson, with several others, took an excursion into the country. Westward of the tent, the soil was entirely uncultivated for about two miles, though covered with trees and bushes. Beyond this, a considerable plain extends itself, on which are cocoa-trees and small plantations. Near the creek, which runs west of the tent, the land is entirely flat, and partly overflowed every tide by the sea. When the water retires, a great number of holes of yellowish mud appear, whence issue innumerable small crabs, which are so remarkably nimble, that they instantaneously disappear, and baffle the dexterity of the natives, who endeavour to capture them. Not far from hence are the ruins of two causeways, and a kind of circus, which appear to have been of some antiquity.

On the 10th Captain Cook and Mr. Gore took a walk into the country, where they had an opportunity of seeing the whole process of making cloth. The manufacturers, who are of the female sex, fabricate the whole of this curious article from the slender stalks or trunks of the paper-mulberry, which seldom grows higher than seven feet, and does not exceed the thickness of four fingers.

rated with small fish of different kinds; they were Mareewagee's present to the Captains Cook and Clerke. About eleven o'clock the islanders began to exhibit various dances, which they call *mai*. The band of music at first consisted of about seventy men as a chorus, amidst whom were placed three instruments, somewhat resembling drums. On one of these instruments, which is named *naffa* by the natives, they sit and beat vigorously, with two cylindrical pieces of wood, as thick as the wrist, and about a foot in length, producing a rude but powerful sound. They frequently vary the strength and rapidity of their beating, and modulate the tones by striking occasionally towards the end or middle of the instrument. There were four ranks of twenty-four men each in the first dance. These had each a small thin wooden instrument, called a *pagge*, about two feet in length, with which they made variety of motions. A quicker dance was then begun, when the whole body, in a two-fold division, retreated, and then advanced, forming a kind of circular figure, which concluded the dance.

In the second dance, forty men formed a chorus, with only two drums; the performers consisting of two ranks, the foremost of which contained seventeen persons, and the other fifteen. Feenou was in the middle of the first rank; they danced, and repeated sentences with short intervals, for about half an hour, and with great exactness and regularity. Towards the conclusion, the rear-rank divided, came round, and occupied the place of the front, afterwards resuming its pristine situation.

Three drums were then introduced, and seventy men composed the chorus to the third dance. This consisted of two ranks, of sixteen men each, with young Toobou at their head, who was splendidly decorated with a garment covered with red feathers. This dance consisted of a variety of figures, which were conducted with great dexterity; and was probably considered as a capital performance, as some of the principal personages were engaged in it; one of the drums being beat by Futtafaiha, the king's brother; another by Feenou, and the third by Mareewagee himself.

In the fourth and last dance, forty men formed a chorus, with two drums, the performers consisting of sixty men. After a preliminary harangue, they recited sentences alternately with the chorus, and divided into two parties, with their backs to each other; formed again, shifted their ranks, divided, and retreated. Soon after which the dance was terminated. These amusements continued from about eleven to three o'clock; the number of spectators, among the islanders and stragglers, amounting to about ten thousand, all within the compass of a quarter of a mile.

In the evening they were entertained with the *bomai*, or night dancers, on a large area before the temporary residence of Feenou. Their performance continued about three hours; twelve persons representing such manoeuvres as were exhibited at Hapaee. In two of them, performed by women, a party of men formed a circle within theirs. In another, consisting of twenty-four men, many new motions were displayed, which drew forth general plaudits. In one of the dances Feenou himself appeared, at the head of fifty men, handsomely clad in linen, with small pictures hanging round his neck*.

While the natives were waiting for this evening's exhibition, many of them passed the afternoon in wrestling and boxing. A person desirous of engaging in the former, gives a challenge by crossing the ground in a kind of measured pace, and smartly striking on the elbow

* Though the whole entertainment was conducted with more order than could have been reasonably expected, the natives could not be deterred from exercising their plundering talents. In the middle of the day they attempted to take an anchor from off the Discovery's bows, but without effect. On the 18th an islander got out of a canoe into the Resolution, and stole a pewter bason, but being detected was brought along-side the ship; three old women in the canoe made loud lamentations over the prisoner, violently beating their breasts, but could not shed a single tear among them.

The same day Captain Cook bestowed some presents on Mareewagee, in return for those he had received from that chief the preceding day. He also ordered the marines to go through their exercise, on the spot where the dances were performed; and in the evening some fire-works were exhibited in the same place. These were intended to compensate for the variety of entertainments that had been introduced for the gratification of the Europeans. The platoon firing pleased them much, but when they saw the water-rockets, they were filled with admiration. Poulaho sat behind every one, no person being permitted to sit behind him; but, to prevent any obstruction to his view, a kind of lane was made by the spectators, from him to the space allotted for playing off the fire-works.

joint

joint of one arm, which, being bent, produces a hollow sound. If no opponent starts, he returns to his seat; but if an antagonist appears, they meet with marks of complacency and good nature, and deliberately adjust the piece of cloth that is fastened round the waist. They then sieze each other by this cloth, and he who successfully draws his opponent to him, instantly endeavours to lift him on his breast, and throw him on his back; and if he can turn round with him three times in that position, he receives great applause for his dexterity. When they are more equally matched, they close and attempt to throw each other by their extraordinary skill or exertion. When one of them is thrown, he immediately retires; while the conqueror sits down for about a minute, and then repairs to the side from which he came, where the victory is loudly proclaimed. If several antagonists afterwards appear, he may select which he pleases to engage with; and if he should throw his competitor, challenge again, till he himself is vanquished; when the people on the opposite side chant the song of victory in favour of their champion.

Those who are inclined to box, advance sideways, changing the side at every pace, having one arm stretched out before, and the other behind; and holding in one arm a piece of cord, which they wrap closely about it. Their blows are given with great vigour, and aimed principally at the head. Not only boys engage in these exercises, little girls often box with great obstinacy. Some of the English sailors contended with them in both exercises, but were generally overcome*.

Captain Cook now walked out with Omai, and during their jaunt they found six or seven women at supper together; two of whom were fed by the others. Asking the reason of this circumstance, the women replied, *taboo mattee*. On further enquiry it appeared, that one of them, about two months before, had washed the corpse of a chief, and became thereby disqualified from handling any food for five months; and the other had performed a similar office on the dead body of a person of inferior rank, and was therefore restricted for a shorter space of time.

Early in the morning of the 21st, Poulaho came on board to invite Captain Cook to an entertainment, which he intended to bestow on that day; he had already besmeared his head with pigment, to communicate a red colour for the embellishment of his hair. The Captain attended him to the shore, and found the islanders very busy in fixing four very long posts, at the distance of about two feet from each other; after which the space between the posts was filled up with yams, sticks being fastened across, to prevent the posts from separating by the weight of the inclosed yams. They continued to fasten others to them till each pile was about thirty feet in height. On the top of one of the piles they placed two baked hogs; and, on the top of the other, a living one: they tied another by the legs half way up. Having accumulated some other heaps of yams, and a quantity of bread-fruit, on each side of the area, a turtle, and a great quantity of excellent fish were added: the whole of this collection, with some red feathers, a mat, and a piece of cloth, consititued the king's present to Captain Cook†.

That

* Captain Cook came to a resolution of distributing the following animals before his departure; on the 19th he gave a bull and a cow to the king; to Mareewagee, a Cape ram and two ewes; and to Feenou a horse and a mare. Omai explained to them their respective uses, as far as his limited knowledge in those particulars would permit him. It soon appeared that some of the natives were dissatisfied with the allotment of the animals, for the next morning a kid, and two turkey-cocks were missing. To procure their restoration, Captain Cook ordered three canoes to be seized that were along-side the ships: then, going on shore, he found his majesty, his majesty's brother, Feenou, and some other chiefs in his temporary house; he immediately placed a guard over them, and intimated to them that they must continue under arrest, till the turkeys, the kid, and the other articles which had at different times been stolen, were restored to them. They assured him that they should all be instantly returned, and sat down to drink *kava* with the most perfect composure.

Soon afterwards an ax and an iron wedge were delivered to them; not a great while after, the kid and one of the turkeys were restored; and, on their promising that the other turkey should be brought back the next morning, the prisoners and the canoes were pronounced at liberty.

† About one o'clock the *mai*, or dances commenced; the first of which nearly resembled that performed at the beginning of Mareewagee's entertainment; the second was conducted by young Toobou, in which four or five women were introduced, who were not in the least inferior to the men in the exactness and regularity of their motions. Towards the end, the performers divided to make way for the introduction of two champions, who brandished their menacing

That the Captain might be present during the whole of this exhibition, he dined on shore: Poulaho sat down with him, but neither ate nor drank; a female of superior rank to himself being present: when this lady had dined, she walked up to Poulaho, who applied his hands to her feet; after which she retired. Poulaho then dipped his fingers into a glass of wine, when all the attendants paid him immediate obeisance. He requested an exhibition of the fire-works in the evening, which was readily complied with; but, as they had been considerably damaged, they did not answer the expectations of the beholders,

Poulaho's *haiva* being ended, and the populace having satisfied their curiosity, most of them repaired to their respective avocations. It was apparent, however, that some thieves were still remaining to pillage our Europeans, by the continual instances of their depredations. Some of the officers of both ships, having made an excursion into the interior parts of the island, returned on the 22nd, after an absence of two days. They had taken their muskets, some ammunition, and several of their most favourite commodities; the whole of which the natives had the dexterity to steal from them in the course of their short journey. Disagreeable consequences were expected from this outrage; for, when the plundered travellers returned, they employed Omai, without consulting Captain Cook, to complain to the king of the daring violence. Not knowing how the Captain would proceed in this affair, and fearing he might again lay him under restraint, he absented himself early the next morning, and Feenou followed his example; not a chief of authority being then remaining in the neighbourhood*.

Our navigators had now recruited their ships, and repaired their sails, and having little more to expect of the produce of the island, the captain proposed to continue no longer in it than till the 5th of July, to have the chance of observing an eclipse on that day.

Being now at leisure, Captain Cook with a party, accompanied by Poulaho, proceeded in a boat to Moo, where he, and the other men of consequence usually reside. Rowing up the inlet, they saw fourteen canoes fishing in company; in one of which was Poulaho's son. Having succeeded in taking some fine mullets, they caused about a dozen of them to be conveyed into their boat.

Landing at the bottom of the bay, they were conducted to one of Poulaho's houses, which, though of considerable magnitude, appeared to be his private place of residence, and was situated within a plantation. The king seated himself at one end of the house, and his visitors sat down in a semicircle at the other end. A bowl of *kava* was immediately prepared, and some yams ordered to be baked for them †.

After refreshing themselves with some provisions which they had brought from the ships,

menacing clubs; to these succeeded two other men with clubs, vaunting of their skill and activity. Boxing and wrestling then began, and one man entered the lists with a large ponderous club, but could find no opponent hardy enough to engage him in so rough an amusement. In the evening the *bomai*, or night dances began, in which the King himself appeared in the character of an English manufacturer; but neither of these dances afforded much satisfaction.

* The Captain was irritated at this business, and reprimanded Omai for having dared to interfere in it. This remonstrance induced him to endeavour to bring back his friend Feenou; and he succeeded in his negociation, by promising lenient measures, to procure a speedy return of the stolen articles. Relying on this declaration, Feenou came back in the evening, and was favourably received. Poulaho also made his appearance on the following day. Though the Captain adopted no measures to recover the purloined articles, the whole of them were returned, through the interposition of Feenou, except one musket, and a few other trivial articles. The tools and implements which had been stolen from the workmen were also restored.

† While these were getting ready, some of the Europeans, a few of the king's attendants, and Omai, went to take a view of a fiatooka, or burying-place, at a little distance from the habitation. It appertained to the king, and consisted of three houses, situated on a rising ground, with a smaller habitation not far off, all ranged longitudinally. The largest of the three first was the middle house, which was placed in a square: the other houses were situated on little mounts. On the floors, and on the tops of the mounts, fine loose pebbles were placed; and the whole was inclosed by large flat stones of coral rock. One of the houses was open on the side, and had two wooden busts of men, rudely carved, within it, which were said to be memorials of some chiefs who had been buried there. Such monuments, it was conjectured, were not often raised, for these appeared to have been erected many ages before.

It was said that dead bodies had been buried in each of these houses, but no marks of them were to be distinguished. The carved head of an Otaheitan canoe, which had been driven ashore on the coast, was deposited in one of them. On the rising ground many large trees were planted, some of which were named etoa: they strongly resemble the cypress, and had a very solemn effect.

they

they went farther into the country; the greater part of which was cultivated, and many of the plantations enclosed. Travelling here was very commodious, the roads being excellent, and the country level; they were conducted to several pools and springs, the waters of which were generally brackish or stinking.

The next day Captain Cook went to pay a visit to Toobou, Captain Furneau's friend, who had a handsome house in the neighbourhood. Here he found a company preparing a morning draught. The king presented the Captain with a living hog, a baked hog, a quantity of yams, and a large piece of cloth. Returning to his majesty, they found him and his attendants engaged in drinking the second bowl of *kava*. That business being dispatched, he informed Omai that he was instantly going to perform a mourning ceremony, called *tooge*, in memory of a son who had been a considerable time dead; and desired the Captain and others to accompany him, to which they readily acquiesced *.

The Europeans began to expect the mourning ceremony was now on the point of commencing, when, to their great surprize, as soon as the *kava* bowl was exhausted, they all rose up and dispersed; and Poulaho informed the party who accompanied him, that he was ready to attend them to the ships.

Our navigators had witnessed the drinking of *kava* at other islands, but no where so frequently as here. The *kava* is a species of pepper, which they cultivate and esteem a valuable article. It has large heart-shaped leaves, and jointed stalks. Only the root of it is used at the Friendly Islands: after being dug up, it is delivered to the servants, each of which chews his portion, which he aftewards spits into a piece of plantain leaf; the different mouthfuls are afterwards collected together, and deposited in a wooden bowl; about a quarter of a pint of this beverage is usually put into each cup. It has no perceptible effect on those who use it frequently, but on some of the Europeans who deigned to drink it, it operated like spirituous liquors, occasioning intoxication or stupefaction.

Receiving information from Poulaho and others, that good water was to be procured at Onevy, a small island near the inlet, our navigators landed there to taste it, but found it extremely brackish.

The next day several of the natives assaulted some of the Europeans who were sawing planks, which occasioned them to be fired on by the sentry; three of them were taken, and one was supposed to be wounded; the former were imprisoned till night, when they were punished and set at liberty. It was afterwards proved that one of them had felt the effect of fire-arms, which induced them all to behave with more decency and circumspection.

Mr. Anderson, in relating an excursion he had engaged in with Mr. King, says, that on the 30th of June, he accompanied that gentleman to Futtafaihe's house. Soon after they arrived, a hog was killed by repeated strokes upon the head, and the hair was scraped off with pieces of slit bamboo. An oven had been previously prepared for baking it, by digging a large hole in the earth, the bottom of which was covered with small stones, which were intended to be rendered red-hot by kindling a fire over them; some of these stones were then wrapped in leaves

* The king quitted the house, attended by two old women, and cloathed himself with new apparel; over which he placed a ragged mat, and his attendants were habited in a somewhat similar manner. Thus equipped they marched off, preceded by about ten persons in the same uniform; each of them also having a green bough about his neck. Poulaho, who carried the bough in his hand till he approached the principal scene of action, then also put it about his neck. They then entered a small inclosure, in which a house was observed with a man sitting before it; and, as they entered, they pulled the branches from their necks, and threw them away. The king seated himself, and others sat before him as usual; and, by the arrival of other persons, the circle increased to upwards of a hundred, chiefly old men, all habited as above described. The company being assembled, a large root of *kava* was produced by one of the king's servants, and a bowl of sufficient magnitude to contain five or six gallons. Many persons instantly engaged in the operation of chewing the root, and the receptacle was soon filled with liquor up to the brim. Others employed themselves in preparing drinking cups from plantain leaves.

The first cup that was filled being presented to the king, he ordered it to be given to another person; the second being presented to him, he drank it; and the third was offered to Captain Cook. A cup was then given to several others, till the liquor was exhausted. As the cup was emptied from time to time, it was thrown upon the ground, whence it was taken up, and carried to be filled again. During this time, the chief and his whole circle appeared extremely grave, and hardly a syllable was uttered among them.

of the bread-fruit tree, and placed in the hog's belly, stuffing in a quantity of leaves to prevent their falling out: the carcase was then placed upon some sticks laid across the stones, and covered with plantain leaves. The earth was afterwards dup up all around, and the oven being effectually closed, no farther assistance was required.

They afterwards amused themselves by walking about the country, but saw nothing remarkable, except a fiatooka of about thirty feet high; a number of etooa trees, at a small distance, being almost covered with *Ternate* bats, making a most horrible noise. On their return to Futtafaihe's house, the baked hog was produced, accompanied with cocoa-nuts and yams. The animal was cut up in a masterly manner by the person who dressed it, with a knife made of split bamboo. Dinner being ended, the party accompanied Foutafaihe, with his attendants, towards the spot where Poulaho's mourning-ceremony was performed; a kind of repetition of the same solemn rites ensued by way of condolence, which, upon enquiry, they found was performed in memory of a chief who had long since died at Vavahoo, whose departure was still to be farther commemorated.

They were entertained in the evening with a pig for supper, dressed and garnished like the hog. After they had finished their repast, a large quantity of cloth was brought for them to sleep in; but they were disturbed in their repose by a singular instance of luxury, much indulged among the superior ranks of people, that of being severely thumped while they are asleep. Two women who sat by Futtafaihe, performed this operation, which they call *tooge tooge*, by striking his body and legs with both fists till he fell asleep; and, with some intervals, continued the practice during the night: if strong symptoms are perceived of a probability of his awakening, they resume it. That such a practice should operate as an opiate, is a demonstration of what habit may effect. Nothing further occurred during this little excursion, which Mr. Anderson thought sufficiently important to be related.

Captain Cook had waited at this island on account of the approaching eclipse; but on the 2nd of July he discovered that some accident had rendered his micrometer useless; he therefore caused all his cattle, and other animals, except those that were destined to remain, to be conveyed on board. They took up their anchor the next day, and ordered the ships to be ready for the first favourable wind to take them through the narrows. The king, dining with them that day, took particular notice of the plates, which the Captain observing, offered him the choice of one, either of pewter or earthen-ware. He preferred the first, and mentioned the uses to which he intended to apply it. Whenever he should visit any of the other islands, he said he should leave this plate behind him at Tongataboo, as his representative, that people might do it homage in his absence; and added, that this singular honour had hitherto been conferred on a wooden bowl, in which he washed his hands. Another use to which he meant to apply it, was to discover a thief; expressing the most perfect conviction, that if it should be touched by the guilty person, he would drop down dead immediately; and if he refused to touch it, such refusal was a satisfactory proof of his guilt.

On the 5th of July, the day of the eclipse, occasional clouds and showers prevented an accurate observation of it. But this disappointment was the less to be lamented, as the longitude was sufficiently determined by lunar observations. The eclipse being over, the Europeans packed up their instruments, and conveyed them on board.

Mr. Anderson has given a description of this island, of which the following is the substance. Amsterdam, Tongataboo, or Tongo (as it is sometimes called by the natives) is about twenty leagues in circumference. It may with propriety be called a low island, the only eminent part to be observed from a ship, being the south-east point, notwithstanding which many gently rising and declining grounds are perceivable by those on shore. Though the general appearance of the country does not exhibit a beautiful landscape, it conveys an idea of the most exuberant fertility. The climate of Tongataboo, from the situation towards the tropic, is more variable than countries far within that line; and the winds are generally from some point between south and east. The vegetable productions never shed their foliage all at once; but every leaf, as it falls, is succeeded by another, conveying the appearance of universal spring.

A coral rock seems to be the basis of the island, that being the only sort which presents itself on

the shore. In cultivated places, it is generally of a loose black colour, apparently produced by rotten vegetables. The principal of the cultivated fruits, are plantains, the jambu, and the eeeve, the latter being a kind of plum. They have two sorts of yams, and a large root, called kappe. They have cocoa-nut trees in abundance, and three other sorts of palms; sugar-cane, gourds, bamboo, turmeri, and a species of fig called matte.

The quadrupeds of this island are hogs, dogs, and a small quantity of rats. Fowls of a very large breed are domesticated here.

Among the birds are parrots, parroquets, cockoos, king-fishers, and a green bird of the thrush kind, which has a strong melodious voice. The other land birds are small rails, large violet-coloured cootes, with red bald crowns, two sorts of fly-catchers, and three sorts of pigeons. Among the water-fowl are considered the ducks seen at Annamooka, tropic birds, noddies, blue and white herons, white terns, a large spotted plover, and a small blueish curlew*.

SECTION IX.

Solemnity at Mooa called Notche—Extraordinary Processions and Ceremonies—Manner of Supping, &c. at the King's House—Second Day's Ceremony—Captain Cook ventures himself in the Midst of the Assembly—His Reception there—Arrival at Eooa—Some Account of the Island—Quit the Friendly Islands—Refreshments in great Variety to be procured there—Keppel's Island—Boscawen's Island—Account of Vavaoo, Hamoa, and Feejee—Calculating Distances by Time—Omai incapable of accurate Information—Description of the Inhabitants—Their Diseases—Character—Puncturing and Painting—Habits—Ornaments, &c.

THOUGH the navigators were ready to sail, they had not sufficient day-light to turn through the narrows; and the morning and evening flood happening at improper times, it was thought expedient to wait two or three days, unless they should be fortunate enough to have a leading wind. This delay gave them an opportunity of attending a public solemnity, to which the king had invited them on the 8th. Poulaho had informed them that his son was then to be initiated into certain privileges; one of which was that of eating with his father, an honour which he had not hitherto enjoyed.

At about eight in the morning they arrived at Mooa, where the solemnity was to be exhibited, and saw the king, with a number of attendants sitting before him, within a small dirty enclosure. They were engaged in preparing a bowl of *kava*. They mixed with the people, to observe what preparations were making for the ceremony, which was shortly expected to begin. About ten they assembled in a large area before the great house. At the end of a road, leading into this area, several men appeared, armed with spears and clubs, perpetually reciting short sentences, in melancholy accents. While this continued, many people came down the road, each having a yam fastened to the middle of a pole, which they laid down before those who were repeating the sentences. At length the king and prince arrived, and seated themselves upon the area; when the Europeans were requested to sit down by them, to take off their hats, and to untie their hair.

The bearers of the yams afterwards formed themselves into companies of ten or twelve each, and marched rapidly across the place; each company headed by a man who had a club or spear, and defended on the right by several others, armed with different weapons. About two hun-

* Among the animals of the reptile or insect tribe, are sea-snakes, (though often seen on shore) about a yard long, with alternate black and white circles; some scorpions, centipedes and green guanoes. There are also some beautiful [illegible], and some very large spiders. The [illegible] abounds with fish, those in the greatest plenty are mullets, soles, silver fish, old wives, parrot fish, bonnetos, rays, and some devil fish. An endless variety of shell-fish are found among the reefs and shoals, among which are the hammer oyster, pearl-shell oyster, and a gigantic cockle.

dred

dred and fifty persons walked in the procession, which was closed by a man carrying a living pigeon on a perch.

They stopped before a *morai* or *fiatooka* of one house standing upon a mount, about the distance of a quarter of a mile from where they first assembled. Here they deposited the yams, and gathered them into bundles. When they returned to the king, he desired Captain Cook to order the boat's crew not to stir from the boat, for every thing would soon be *taboo*, and if they should be seen walking about, they would be knocked down with clubs.

Not approving of this restriction, however, the Captain stole out to observe what was going forward. Very few people were to be seen, except those who were prepared to attend the ceremony; some having small poles in their hands, with sticks fastened to them. These men were advancing towards the *morai*. Captain Cook was pursuing the same road, and was frequently stopped by the natives, who vociferated *taboo*. Still he ventured to go forward, till he came in sight of the *morai*. Being again strongly urged to go back, and not knowing the consequence of a refusal, he complied*.

After some further uninteresting particulars, the grand procession, which marched from the other *morai*, now began to come in. As they entered the area, they prostrated themselves on the grass to the right of the shed, and deposited their pretended heavy burthens, the poles facing round to the prince.

A profound silence then ensued, after which a man in the front of the area, began an oration, breaking at regular stated periods one of the poles which had been brought in. The oration being finished, the people who had been sitting before the shed separated, to make a passage for the prince and his attendants; after which the assembly closed.

The supper for our navigators, which consisted of fish and yams, was got ready by about seven o'clock. The king supped with them, and drank so freely of brandy and water, that he was conducted to bed with a sufficient dose†.

About noon the Captain repaired to the palace to dine, by appointment, on pigs and yams. The drowsy monarch was roused to partake of what he had appointed for their entertainment, when two mullets and some shell-fish were introduced, as if intended for his separate portion; but he added it to their fare, sat down with them, and made a very hearty meal.

Dinner being over, they were informed that the ceremony would soon begin, and Captain Cook seemed determined to mix with the actors themselves, not choosing any longer to be a peeper from behind the curtain. With this view he proceeded to the *morai*, the scene of the solemnity. He was frequently requested to return, but paying no regard to the admonitions he received, he was permitted to pass on. He was, however, repeatedly desired to leave the place; but, finding him determined to stay, they requested him to uncover his shoulders as theirs

* The number of persons at the *fiatooka* continued increasing, till at length they quitted their sitting posture, and marched off in procession, in pairs; forming in the whole one hundred and eight pairs, who were principally men of rank. Having seen them all pass, our navigators repaired to Poulaho's house, and saw him going out. They were not permitted to follow him, though they were immediately conducted to the place allotted to them, behind a fence adjoining to the area of the *fiatooka*.

Arriving at their station, they saw two or three hundred people sitting on the grass, near the end of the opening into the *morai;* and others were continually joining them. At length several men arrived with small poles and branches, and leaves of the cocoa-nut tree. When they appeared, an old man seated himself in the road, and pronounced a long oration in a serious majestic tone. He then retired, and others began to erect a shed or hut with the materials already mentioned. Their work being finished, they squatted down for a moment before it; then rose up, and joined the rest of the company. Poulaho's son then arrived, preceded by four or five men. Next appeared twelve or fourteen women of distinction, advancing slowly in pairs, each pair carrying between them a long narrow piece of white cloth.

† Captain Cook and Omai now paid a visit to the prince, who lodged at apartments of his own, at some distance from his father's house. They found him among a circle of boys, about his own age; an old man and woman they also observed, with other persons of both sexes, employed about their necessary affairs. Returning to the king, they saw a crowded levee before him, consisting principally of old men. While the *kava* was preparing, a baked hog and yams were introduced; the greatest part of which fell to their share, for the *kava* drinkers have not much appetite in a morning.

They afterwards walked out, and visited several other chiefs. They found the king asleep in a retired hut, with two women striking on his breech. About eleven he rose again, ate some fish and yams, and lay down to sleep. They left him to wait on the prince, with a present of cloth, beads, and other articles: he was furnished with a sufficient quantity to make him a complete suit, in which he was soon after clad, and seemed delighted with his new habiliments. He afterwards made Captain Cook a present of two pieces of cloth which, had been manufactured in the island.

were

were; and with this injunction he readily complied.

The prince, the women, and the king at length appeared. The prince, being placed under the shed, two men, having each a mat, repeated something in a serious strain, and placed them about his person. The procession soon after arrived as on the preceding day. After many other ceremonies, not sufficiently varied from what has been related, to deserve a circumstantial description, wrestling and boxing matches commenced. Speeches were then delivered by two men, who seated themselves before the prince; with which the solemnity ended, and the assembly broke up*.

The day being far spent before the breaking up of the assembly, our navigators were impatient to return to the ships. Taking leave of Poulaho, he urged them to stay the following day, to be present at the funeral ceremony of the wife of Marcewagee, who had lately died. Captain Cook would have been glad to have seen this ceremony, had not the tide been now favourable: the wind too, which had been boisterous, was now moderate and settled. The captain, however, assured the king, that if he did not immediately sail, he would visit him again the next day.

That the horses and cattle might be safe during the ceremony of the Natche at Mooa, the captain ordered them to be taken thither. A young English boar, and three young English sows, had also been left with his friends there, that they might improve their own breed, which was but small. Feenou had also got two rabbits from our Europeans, a buck and a doe, from which young ones were produced before they sailed.

They weighed anchor on the 10th in the morning, and, with a steady gale, turned through the channel between the small isles called Makhahaa and Monooafai. The flood, at first, set strong in their favour, till leading up to the *lagoon*, where the eastern meets the western flood. This, with the shoals before it, occasions strong riplings and whirlpools. The depth of the channel also exceeds the length of a cable; in consequence of which no anchorage could be had, except close to the rocks, where a ship would be exposed to the whirlpool. They plied to windward, between the two tides, and soon after got into the influence of the eastern tide, where they expected the ebb to run strong to the eastward in their favour. It proved, however, very inconsiderable; and, perceiving they could not get to sea before it was dark, they anchored under the shore of Tongataboo, in forty-five fathoms water.

At eleven o'clock the next day, they weighed, and plied to the eastward. At ten at night they weathered the east end of the island, and stretched away for Eooa, where they anchored about eight the next morning; being nearly the same place where the captain took his station in 1773, when he called it *English Road*.

As soon as they anchored, Taoofa, the chief, and several of the natives, visited them on board, and greeted them on their arrival. The chief, who was known by the appellation of *Tayo*, in 1773, was recognised by Captain Cook, and they were no longer strangers to each other. The captain accompanied Taooffa on shore in search of fresh water, and conducted him to a spring, among rocks, between low and high water mark. Complaining of this fluid, as being brackish, the captain was shewn a little way into the island; where, in a deep chasm, some excellent water was found; but, as the conveyance of it to the shore would be attended with labour and expence, he contented himself with the supply the ships had received at Tongataboo.

At this island the Europeans landed the ram and two ewes, of the breed of the Cape of Good Hope, and committed them to the care of Taooffa, who seemed greatly delighted with his

* The endeavours of our Europeans to find out the purport of the solemnity called Natche, was wholly ineffectual. The general answer to their enquiries was *taboo*, which is applied to many things, and on many occasions. It is generally believed, however, that this mysterious solemnity has a mixture of religion in its institution. Upon no other occasion, the natives had regarded the dress of the Europeans; but in this ceremony it was required that their hair should flow about their shoulders; that they should be uncovered to the waist; sit cross-legged, and have their hands locked together.

They were indeed informed, that in the space of three months, there would be a more serious and important solemnity; on which occasion the tribute of Tongataboo, Hapaee, Vavaoo, and all the other islands would be presented to the chief, and more awfully confirmed, by sacrificing ten human victims from among the people: On their enquiry into the occasion of so horrid a ceremony, they were informed that it was a necessary part of the Natche; and that, should it ever be omitted, the deity would destroy their king.

charge. This country forms a pleasing landscape; the land rising gently upwards, presents an extensive prospect, where groves of trees, in beautiful disorder, are interspersed at irregular distances. Near the shore, it is shaded with a variety of shrubs, among which are erected the habitations of the natives; and to the right, where our travellers were stationed, one of the most extensive groves of cocoa-palms presented itself that they had ever seen.

On the 13th a party ascended the highest part of the island, to have an uninterrupted view of the country. On the most elevated spot a mount had been raised, by the direction of the chief, for the occasional purpose of drinking *kava:* they called it *Etchee.* From this elevation they had an extensive view. The south-east side rises, with great inequalities, immediately from the sea: the plains and meadows lie all on the north-west side; which, being adorned with tufts of trees and plantations, form a most delightful landscape in every point of view. They found, on this height, not only the plants common to the neighbouring isles, but a species of the *acrosticum melastoma,* and fern-tree. Omai, who was much esteemed by Feenou, and several others, was offered the appointment of chief of this island, if he would have continued there, and seemed inclinable to have accepted the offer, but Captain Cook thought proper to advise him to the contrary*.

The next day the captain received a present from the chief, consisting of two little heaps of yams, and a quantity of fruit. On this occasion a great number of the inhabitants of the island had assembled; much pilfering was therefore reasonably apprehended. Cudgelling, wrestling, and boxing were exhibited for the entertainment of the Europeans; and in the latter, combatants of both sexes engaged. The diversions were intended to be closed with a *homai,* or Night Dance; but an accident prevented their continuing on shore to see it. One of the Europeans was surrounded by twenty or thirty of the natives, some of whom knocked him down, stripped him and ran off with his clothes. Hearing of this, Captain Cook seized two canoes, and a large hog; and insisted on the chief's causing the apparel to be restored, and the offenders delivered up to him.

Taooffa was greatly concerned at what had happened, and took every measure to appease the captain. Many of the people assembled on this occasion, were so alarmed that they instantly fled; but the captain assuring them he would take no other measures to revenge the insult, they returned. One of the delinquents was delivered up to him, and a shirt and a pair of trowsers restored. The remainder of the stolen goods not coming in till the evening, the captain was obliged to leave them in order to go aboard. The next morning he came ashore, bringing with him a present for Taooffa, in return for what he had received from him. It appeared that many of the people were still considerably alarmed with their fears and apprehensions; but on Captain Cook's desiring Omai to assure them, that he did not mean to injure them; and having restored the canoes, and released the offender who had been delivered up to him, they resumed their usual cheerfulness.

The remainder of the clothes was afterwards brought in, but having been torn from the man's back by violence, they were not thought worth the trouble of carrying on board. Captain Cook continued with them till they had drank the bowl of *kava;* and then, after paying for the hog which he had taken the day before, returned on board with Taooffa, and one of Poulaho's servants, by whom he sent a piece of bar iron, as a distinguished mark of esteem on parting with him; that being thought as valuable a present as any he could make.

The navigators weighed soon after; and with

* Returning from their country excursion, they were informed that one of the natives had fractured the skull of one of their own people with a club; and, pursuing his vengeance, had afterwards broke his thigh with the same instrument. On their requesting to know the reason of such extreme severity, they were informed that he had been seen in an indelicate situation with a woman who was tabooed. It appeared, however, that she was no otherwise *tabooed* than by belonging to another person, whose rank in life was superior to that of her gallant. The female sinner received a much milder punishment for her misdemeanour; a remonstrance and slight beating being thought a sufficient chastisement for her infidelity.

Captain Cook, on the following morning planted a pine-apple, and sowed some melon seeds, in the chief's plantation. He was the more encouraged to expect success from his endeavours, as a dish of turnips was this day served up at his dinner, which was the produce of the seeds he had left here in 1773.

a light

a light breeze at south-east, stood out to sea, when Taooffa, and some other natives, left them. A few hours after, a small canoe, conducted by four men, came off to them. They were informed, by these men, that a sailing canoe had brought directions to the people of Eooa, to furnish them with hogs, and that the king, with some other chiefs, would be with them in two or three days; they requested them therefore to return to their former station. They had not the least doubt of the truth of this information, but, being now clear of the land, it was not a sufficient inducement to bring them back, especially as they had an ample stock of provisions. Perceiving that they would not return, these people, and others, left them in the evening; their eagerness to possess more of the European commodities having induced them to follow them out to sea, and to continue their intercourse with them as long as possible.

The navigators took leave of the Friendly Islands and the inhabitants, after a pretty cordial intercourse with the latter for between two and three months. The time they continued there was not thrown away, as they principally subsisted upon the produce of the island, and expended very little of their sea provisions. The captain was happy in having had an opportunity of serving these people, by leaving useful animals among them; and that those intended for Otaheite had acquired additional strength in the pastures of Tongataboo *.

It has often been conjectured and asserted, that extreme hunger first induced men to feed on human flesh; but why should the Feejee people continue the horrid practice in the midst of plenty? It is held in detestation by the inhabitants of Tongataboo. When a profound peace exists between the two islands, they have frequent intercourse together, though it seems probable that they have not long been known to each other †.

Feejee is three days sail from Tongataboo; these people calculate the distance from island to island, by mentioning the time required for the voyage in one of their canoes: this was supposed by Captain Cook to amount to about seven miles in an hour; and that, with such breezes as generally blow in their seas, they will sail seven or eight miles an hour on an average. In the day they are guided by the sun, and in the night by stars. When these are obscured, they can only have recourse to the points from whence the winds and waves came upon the vessel.

The harbour and anchoring place of Tongataboo, is more secure and capacious than any which the Europeans met with among these islands, having also a good bottom; but though the water of Tongataboo has the preference, it is exceeded in goodness by that at Anna-

* Iron tools are the best articles for traffic here: hatchets, axes, nails, knives, and files, are much demanded. Red cloth, linen, beads, and looking-glasses, are also in great estimation. Among beads, blue are in the highest estimation: a large hog might at any time be purchased by a string of large blue beads. For the commodities enumerated, any refreshments which the island produces may be obtained. The yams of the Friendly Islands are excellent and preserve well at sea; but their pork, plantains, and bread-fruit are not equal to the same articles at Otaheite.

Good water is scarce in these islands. It may indeed be found in all of them; but the situations are too inconvenient, or the quantities too inconsiderable for the navigators. Under the denomination of Friendly Islands, are included, not only the group at Hapaee, but those discovered to the north, nearly under the same meridian, as well as some others belonging to Tongataboo, the capital, and seat of government. One of the natives enumerated one hundred and fifty islands, and Mr. Anderson procured all their names. But the most considerable that our navigators heard of in this neighbourhood are Hamao, Vavaoo, and Feejee, each of which is more extensive than Tongataboo; but it does not appear that any European has ever seen any one of them. Hamao, which lies two days sail north-west from Vavaoo, is said to be the largest of all their islands; affords harbours and good water, and produces, in abundance, all the essential articles of refreshment. Feejee lies about three days sail from Tongataboo, and abounds with hogs, dogs, and such fruits and roots as are to be found in any of the others. It is larger than Tongataboo, but not subject to its dominion, like the other islands of the archipelago. Feejee and Tongataboo often oppose each other in war; and the latter, on many occasions, bend the body forward, and cover the face with their hands, by way of acknowledgment of their own inferiority to the Feejee men. The latter have indeed rendered themselves formidable by their dexterity in the use of bows and slings; but more so by their savage practice of devouring such of their enemies as they have slain in battle.

† The colour of a native of Feejee is a shade darker than that of the inhabitants of the other Friendly Islands. Our navigators saw one of them who had his left ear slit, and the lobe so stretched that it almost reached to his shoulder; a singularity which had been observed by Captain Cook at the other islands of the South Sea, during his second voyage. The Feejee men, though cruel in war, are revereneed for their ingenuity. Their clubs and spears are curiously carved, and several articles were shewn of their beautifully chequered cloth, variegated mats, and other articles, all of which bore evident marks of their extraordinary talents.

mooka, yet that does not deserved the epithet of good.

The Friendly Islanders seldom exceed the common stature (though some of them were upwards of six feet in height) and are strong and well proportioned. Several of them were really handsome, but their muscular frame conveyed a stronger idea of prowess than of beauty. Their features are so various, except it be by the fulness at the point of the nose, which is universal, a general likeness cannot be ascertained. Many Roman noses, and European faces were seen amongst them; they have good eyes and teeth, but the latter are not remarkably white or well set; and few of them have that uncommon thickness about the lips, so frequent in other islands.

Though the features of some of the women are very delicate, and justly possess a considerable share of beauty and expression, the rule is not so general as in many other countries. Their persons, however, are usually well proportioned, and some of them are perfect models of a beautiful figure. But the extreme smallness and delicacy of their fingers, which may vie in competition with any in Europe, appear to be the most remarkable distinction in the women *.

The graceful mien, and firmness of step which are very observable in their walking, are proofs of their personal accomplishments. The mildness of disposition, which they abundantly possess, is depicted on their countenances; they are free from that savage keenness which distinguishes those nations that are in a barbarous state. They are, however, intelligent, cheerful, and good humoured; though in the presence of their chiefs, they affect a degree of gravity and reserve. Their pacific disposition is manifestly shewn by their friendly reception of all strangers: like the most civilized nations, they have even courted an intercourse with their visitors, by bartering, a medium which tends to make all nations amicable. Though they had hardly any traffic, except with Feejee, no persons in the world could dissplay more capability or honesty in their dealings, or less prevarication or distrust. If either party became dissatisfied with his bargain, a re-change was made with mutual consent and satisfaction. They are certainly in possession of many of the most excellent qualities that adorn the human mind †.

Among most of these islanders, the hair is thick, straight, and strong; though some have it bushy or frizled. The natural colour appears black, but both sexes occasionally stain it of a brown or purple colour, and others embellish it with an orange cast. Whimsical and various are their methods of wearing this natural ornament of the head: some have none on one side of the head, but permit it to grow very long on the other: One perhaps has it shorn all over; another only retains a single lock on a particular side. Some permit the whole to grow to its full length, without having recourse to any of these mutilations; but the women usually wear it short: among the men, short beards are also fashionable.

The men are stained with a deep blue colour, from the middle of the belly to half way down the thighs; a flat bone instrument, full of fine teeth, introducing the juice of *dooe dooe* into the skin, occasioning indelible marks. Lines and figures are thus elegantly traced in some of them. The women have only some small permanent

* The general colour of the natives has a deeper cast than the copper brown; but several of both sexes have a genuine olive complexion. Some of the females are much fairer, arising perhaps from their having been less exposed to the sun, as a tendency to corpulence, in persons of superior rank, seems naturally to have been occasioned by indolence and ease; a softer and clearer skin is more generally to be observed among the latter. Among the major part of the people, the skin is generally of a dull hue, with some degree of roughness. Upon the whole, however, few natural defects or deformities were seen among them; though two or three were observed with their feet bent inwards. They are not exempt from diseases, many of them being affected with the tetter or ring-worm, which leaves whitish marks behind it. But they have a more mischievous disease very prevalent among them, which appears in large broad ulcers on every part of the body, discharging a thin, clear, and very virulent pus. This malady is sometimes attended with the loss of their nose, or a considerable part of it. They have a few other diseases, but in general they are remarkably healthy.

† A propensity to thieving, however, casts an indelible shade upon their fair character; all ages, and both sexes, are uncommonly addicted to it: but may it not be admitted as some kind of palliation of such practices, that it is only with the Europeans that they exercise such criminal liberties? Allowances should be made for the foibles of these poor islanders, whose minds are too yielding to withstand the glare of new and captivating objects. Among civilized nations, thieving denotes a character deeply stained with moral turpitude; but in the Friendly Islands, tenderness will suggest, that it may often be occasioned by less culpable motives.

lines

lines in the inside of their hands. It seems a tacit degradation of this practice, that, as a mark of distinction, their kings are exempted from it.

The dress of both sexes consists of a piece of cloth or matting, about two yards in breadth, and two and a half in length. It is double before, and, like a petticoat, descends to the middle of the leg; the part of it which is above the girdle, is plaited into several folds, which extended, forms a covering round the shoulders. This, with regard to form, is the general dress; but the fine matting, and long pieces of cloth, are only worn by the superior classes. Inferior persons are satisfied with small pieces; and frequently have only a covering made of the leaves of plants, or the *maro*, a narrow piece of cloth like a sash, which they pass between the thighs and round the waist. It is seldom used but by the men. In their grand entertainments they have various dresses, which are usually decorated with red feathers. Both men and women occasionally wear little bonnets, made of various sorts of materials, to shield their faces from the sun.

The same ornaments, as well as the same habiliments, are worn indiscriminately by either sex. The most common are necklaces, made of the fruit of the *pandanus*, and odoriferous flowers. Others are formed of small shells, sharks' teeth, the wing-bones of birds, &c. all of which are pendant upon the breast. Thus they often wear a polished mother-of-pearl shell, or a ring, on the upper part of the arm; rings of tortoise-shell on the fingers, and a variety of such articles formed into bracelets on the wrists.

Two holes are perforated in the lobe of the ears, in which cylindrical pieces of ivory are introduced at one, and drawn out of the other, or bits of reed, full of yellow pigment.

They delight much in personal cleanliness, to produce which, they bathe frequently in the ponds. Though the water in them is generally foul, and emits a disagreeable stench, they prefer it to that which is in the sea. They are so fully convinced that salt-water is injurious to their skin, that when they find themselves compelled to bathe in the sea, they cause fresh water to be poured over them to wash off its pernicious effects. They are remarkably fond of cocoa-nut oil, which is often poured over their head and shoulders: a smaller quantity suffices for a less liberal anointment of the other parts of the body.

SECTION X.

Employments of the Women of the Friendly Islands—Employment of the Men—Agriculture—Mode of building Houses—Their Furniture—Canoes—Tools—Fishing Tackle—Musical Instruments—Food—Cookery—Diversions—Marriage—Parting with their little Finger—Their Deities—Sentiments on a Future State—Fiatookas—Form of Government—Power of the Chiefs—Homage to the King—To avert Famine—Of the Tammahas—Language—Occurrences at Otaheite, and the Society Isles—The Island of Toobouai discovered—Its Situation and Produce—Description of its Inhabitants—Arrival in Oheitepeha Bay, at Otaheite—Omai's Reception—His improper Conduct—Partiality for Red Feathers—Captain Cook visits a Chief—Allowance of Grog abridged—The Captain's Interview with Waheiadooa—Description of a Toopapaoo—Anchor in Matava Bay.

THE domestic life of these people is not rendered oppressive by labour, nor are they so destitute of employment as to yield implicitly to a state of indolence. Their country has been so liberally favoured by nature, that the first can hardly occur; and their disposition would preserve them from the last. Their necessary labour seems to yield, in its turn, to their amusements and recreations, which are never interrupted by obtrusive thoughts of being forced to recur to business, till they feel an inclination for that transition. The employment allotted to the women is not attended with difficulty, as it is generally such as can be executed in the house: the making of cloth is solely committed to their care; the finer sort of which receives the im-

pression of any pattern. The cloth is in general able to resist water for some time; that having the strongest glaze, being the least liable to be penetrated by that transparent fluid.

Another manufacture, also consigned to the women, is that of their mats, which in their texture and beauty excel those of most other countries. There are many other articles of less importance manufactured by their females, as combs and baskets made of the same substance as the mats; and others composed of the fibrous husk of the cocoa-nut, plain, or interwoven with beads, all which are executed with neatness and true taste.

The men are habituated to more masculine employments; among which architecture, boat-building, agriculture, and fishing, are principally attended to. In propagating yams and plantains, they are so particularly exact, that, whichever way you turn your eyes, the rows present themselves perfectly complete and regular. The bread-fruit, and cocoa-nut trees, are irregularly dispersed about; and when they have attained a certain height, occasion little farther trouble. The same may be asserted of another large tree, which produces a nut called *eeefee;* and of a smaller tree, bearing an oval nut. The *kappe* is planted regularly, and in large spots. Sugar-cane is usually in small spots, closely crowded. The mulberry, of which the cloth is made, is kept remarkably clean, and not confined to circumscribed limits *.

They are very expert in building their canoes, which are the most perfect of their mechanical productions. The double ones, which are sufficiently capacious to carry about fifty persons, sail very rapidly. The single canoes are furnished with an out rigger. Their cordage is made of the fibres of the cocoa-nut husk, from which the ropes of a larger size are formed, by twisting several of those together. Their fishing lines are strong, and their hooks, consisting of pearl-shell, and tortoise-shell, enable them to make easy captures of the finny race. Nor are they destitute of seines, which are of the most delicate texture.

Their musical reeds, resembling the *syrinx* of the ancients, consist of eight or ten pieces of unequal length; their flutes are made of a joint of bamboo. Their *naffa*, or drum, has been already described.

Their warlike weapons are clubs, spears, and darts. They also use bows and arrows, but these are intended only for amusements; such as shooting at birds. Their stools, or pillows, are composed of brown or black wood, neatly polished, and sometimes inlaid with ivory. They also inlay with ivory the handles of fly-flaps, &c. &c.

Their vegetable diet consists principally of plantains, bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and yams. The animals which afford them food, are hogs, fish, and fowls; but the common people often feed upon rats. Hogs, fowls, and turtle, are, however, classed among the occasional dainties, reserved for persons of rank; and their food is usually baked, as at Otaheite. But they are not very delicate, either in their cookery, or their manner of eating. Their usual beverage at their meals, is water, or cocoa-nut milk, the *kava* being only their morning solace. The food served up to the chiefs is usually laid upon plantain leaves; and the king, at his meals, is generally attended by three or four of the natives; one of whom cuts the fish or joint into large pieces; another afterwards subdivides them into mouthfuls: and the rest attend with cocoa-nuts, or whatever else may be wanted. The women are not excluded from taking their meals with the men; but certain ranks of people are not permitted to eat or drink together.

They rise at day-break, and retire to rest when darkness spreads its sable veil; in very hot weather they also repose in day-time. They delight in society; in consequence of which several houses are frequently found empty, many of the owners of them being assembled in some other house, where they relax themselves by

* Very little taste or ingenuity is displayed in the construction of their houses: those of the lower class of the people are miserable huts, hardly capable of sheltering ing them from the weather. Those for the higher ranks are larger, more comfortable, and more commodious. Properly speaking, however, their houses are thatched roofs, or sheds, supported by rafters and posts. The floor is raised with earth, smoothed, and covered with thick matting. Some of their habitations are open all round, but most of them are enclosed on the weather side with strong mats, or with branches of the cocoa-nut. Their whole furniture consists of some wooden stools, which serve them for pillows; baskets for their combs, fish-hooks, and tools; two or three wooden bowls to contain *kava*, some cocoa-nut shells, a few gourds, and a bundle of cloth.

conversation,

conversation, or other amusements. Their private diversions consist principally of music, dancing, and singing; the songs are usually accompanied with the music of their flutes, and their dances are generally performed with ease, grace, and elegance*.

The *fiatookas* are appropriated to the chiefs, and others of distinction, as places of interment; the inferior classes appear to have no particular spot set apart for their remains. The natives consider death as a great evil, to avert which they adopt a very singular custom. When Captain Cook first visited these islands, he observed many of the people had parted with one or both of their little fingers, of the cause of which he had obtained no satisfactory information. But he was now assured, that they perform this operation of cutting off one or both of their little fingers when they are attacked with any dangerous disorder. They, at such a time, console themselves with the idea, that the little finger will be accepted by the deity as a propitiatory sacrifice sufficient efficacious to ensure their recovery; a stone-hatchet is the common instrument used in this singular mode of amputation. Hardly one person in half a score is to be seen, who is not thus mutilated†.

Among their subordinate deities, they mention *Futtafaihe*, or *Fooafooa*, and several others. But the same system of religion does not extend all over the Friendly Islands: the supreme deity of Hapace, for example, being called *Alo, Alo*. They entertain very absurd opinions relative to the power and various atributes of these beings; but they seem to have more rational sentiments respecting the immortality of the soul; they believe that, immediately after death, the souls of their chiefs are separated from their bodies, and admitted into a delightful region called *Boolootoo*, the god of which is named Gooleho; whose country, according to their mythology, is the general repository of the dead. Those who have once arrived there, are no more subject to death, but feast on the favourite productions of their native soil, with which this happy abode is plentifully furnished. The souls of the inferior classes of the people are supposed to experience a kind of transmigration; or are eaten by a bird called *loata*, who walks upon the graves for that purpose‡.

Little information could be obtained with respect to their form of government. A subordination is established among them, like the feudal system of the ancestors of the Europeans; but of its constituent parts, little is understood. Some of the natives informed our navigators that the king's power was unlimited, and that he had the absolute disposal of the lives and properties of his subjects. But the idea of despotic sway is rather contradicted than confirmed, by several circumstances. Mareewagee, Feenou, and old Toobou, acted each the part of a petty sovereign, and often counteracted the measures of the king. It is apparent, however, that the inferior people are entirely subject to the will of the chiefs, to whom they severally belong.

The island of Tongataboo consists of numerous districts, each of which has its peculiar chief, who administers justice within his own territory. Most of these chieftains have estates in other islands, whence they procure supplies. At certain stated times, the king receives the pro-

* It could not be precisely known whether their marriages were rendered permanent by any kind of solemn contract; but it evidently appeared that the men in general contented themselves with one wife. The chiefs, indeed, have sometimes several women; but only one of them appears to be considered in the respectable character of mistress of the family. Though female chastity is not held in great estimation, the Europeans knew not of any breach of conjugal fidelity happening during their residence at these islands.

The concern manifested for the dead by these islanders, is a strong proof of their humanity. Among other indications of grief, they strike a shark's tooth into their heads till the blood flows plentifully, beat their teeth with stones, and thrust spears through their cheeks, and into other parts of the body. The more painful operations, however, are only practised to lament the death of those who have been most nearly and dearly in alliance with them.

† They seem not to aim particularly at eternal happiness, in their mourning and religious solemnities; their regards seeming almost wholly fixed upon temporal objects, for they appear to have little conception of future punishment for sins committed in the present life. They believe, however, that they meet with just punishment upon earth; and are therefore assiduous to render their divinities propitious. They admit of a plurality of Deities, all of whom are inferior to *Kallafootonga*, who is a female, residing in the heavens, and directing the wind, rain, thunder, &c.

‡ They worship no visible part of the creation, nor any thing effected by their own manual exertion. They make no offerings of hogs, dogs, and fruit, (as at Otaheite) unless emblematically; but no doubt is entertained of their offering up human sacrifices. *Fiatookas* or *morais*, are usually burying grounds, or places of worship; though some of them are only appropriated to the former purpose, but these are inferior to the rest.

product of his distant domains at Tongataboo, which is not only the usual place of his residence, but the abode of all the principal persons in the island *.

When the number of islands of which this state consists, and the distance of many of them from the seat of government, is considered, it seems remarkable that no attempts have been made to throw off the yoke of subjection; but the Europeans were informed, that circumstances of this sort never happen. All the principal chiefs having taken up their residence at Tongataboo, may probably be one reason for their not being embroiled in domestic commotions. The decisive celerity of their operations may reasonably be supposed to be another; for should a seditious popular man happen to start up in any of them, Feenou, or whoever happens to occupy his post, is instantly dispatched thither to put him to death; by which means they extinguish an insurrection while it is in embrio.

The different classes of their chiefs appear to be numerous; but there are few, comparatively speaking, that are lords of extensive territory. It is said, that, on the death of a man of property, his possessions devolve to the sovereign; but that it is almost the invariable practice to give them to the eldest son of the deceased, with this express condition, that he should provide, out of the estates, for the other children.

The crown is hereditary; and it clearly appears that the Futtafaihes (the ancestors of Poulaho) have reigned, in a direct line, upwards of one hundred and thirty-five years, which have elapsed between the present visit to these islands, and Tasman's discovery of them. Poulaho is the fifth monarch since that period.

Our European travellers naturally supposed, that the present sovereign of the Friendly Isles was superior in rank to any person in his dominions, but they found it to be otherwise; for Latooliboolod, and three women, are in some respects, superior to Poulaho himself. These exalted personages are distinguished by the title of Tammaha; and when our navigators sought for information concerning them, they were told that the late king, father of Poulaho, left behind him a sister of equal rank, and older than himself; that she, by a native of Feejee, had a son and two daughters; and that these three persons, as well as their mother, enjoyed higher rank than the king; no satisfactory reason could, however, be assigned for this pre-eminence of the *Tammahas*.

The language of these islands seems to have a striking affinity to that of New-Zealand, of Otaheite, and the Society isles. They have terms to express numbers as far as a hundred thousand, beyond which they either would not, or could not reckon.

Having taken a final leave of the Friendly Islands on the 17th of July in the evening, the navigators stood to the south. At six the next morning, a sudden squall took place, which proved somewhat injurious to the mainsail and the top-gallant sails. They met with no other remarkable occurence, till the morning of the 8th of August at eleven, when land was observed about nine or ten leagues distant. They steered directly for it with a fine gale. As they drew near it the next morning, they saw people passing along shore, on several parts of the coast; and, in a short-time after, when they had reached the lee-side of the island, they saw two canoes launched, which contained about a dozen men, who were now advancing towards them.

To give the canoes time to come up, as well as to sound for anchorage, they shortened sail. The canoes, after having arrived within pistol-shot of the ships, suddenly stopped. Omai was requested to prevail on them to come nearer; but no arguments could induce them to trust themselves within the reach of the ships. They often pointed eagerly to the shore with their paddles, and many of their people were seen

* The chiefs are styled lords of the earth, and of the sun and sky. The royal family assume the name of Futtafaihe, from the god distinguished by that appellation. The king's particular title is *Tooee Tonga*. The decorum observed in his presence, and in that of the other chiefs, is wonderful. Whenever he sits down, his attendants seat themselves before him, forming a semi-circle. Nor is any person permitted to sit or pass behind him, or even near him, without his permission. When a person wishes to speak to his majesty, he seats himself before him, and delivers, in a few words, what he has to say; and having received an answer, retires. If the king speaks to any person, the latter answers him from his seat; but when he is to receive an order from him, he rises from his place, and seats himself cross-legged (Captain King, however, assures us, that this posture is peculiar to the men, for the females always sit with both their legs thrown a little on each side,) before his majesty. None of the most civilized nations have ever shewn a more submissive compliance with their commands than these faithful islanders.

standing

standing on the beach, holding up something white in their hands, which was considered as an invitation for them to land. The captain, however, did not choose to risk the advantage of a fair wind, for the sole purpose of examining an island which appeared to be but of small importance. After several unsuccessful attempts to induce these people to approach the ships, the navigators made sail to the north, and left them, having first discovered that the name of their island was Toobouai.

The greatest extent of this island, in any direction, does not exceed five or six miles. It contains hills, however, of a considerable elevation, and is said to be plentifully stocked with hogs and fowls. In the course of conversation with those who came off towards the ships, it was perceived that the inhabitants of Toobouai speak the Otaheite language, whence it is apparent that they are of the same nation. Those in the canoes were a stout copper-coloured people; some wearing their black hair flowing about their shoulders, and others having it tied in a bunch on the crown of the head. Their faces were roundish and full, and their features flat; expressive of a great degree of natural ferocity. Their covering was a piece of narrow stuff wrapped round the waist, and passing between the thighs. Many of those who appeared upon the beach, were completely clothed in white. Some of those in the canoes had decorated their necks with pearl-shells; and one of them continued blowing a large conch-shell, to which a long reed was fixed. Perceiving that our navigators were determined to leave them, they stood up, and spoke in an exalted voice, but what they said could not be understood.

Steering to the north with a fresh gale on the 12th, they saw the island of Maitea; and Otaheite appeared soon after; the point of Oheitepeha-bay bearing west, about four leagues distant. At nine they were obliged to stand out, and spend the night at sea.

As they drew near the island, they were attended by several canoes, each conducted by two or three men: but being of the lower class, they were not particularly noticed by Omai, nor was Omai particularly regarded by them. They knew not indeed that he was one of their countrymen, though they had for some time conversed with him. At length a chief, named Ootee, whom Captain Cook had known before, Omai's brother-in-law, and several others came on board; all of whom knew Omai before he embarked with Captain Furneau. But there was nothing particularly striking or affectionate in their meeting; on the contrary, the most perfect indifference seemed to exist among them; till Omai, conducting his brother into the cabin, gave him a few red feathers from a drawer.

This circumstance being communicated to the natives on deck, Ootee, who hardly condescended to speak to him before, now begged they might be *tayos* (friends) and exchange names. Omai accepted of the honour, and a present of red feathers ratified the agreement; and Ootee, on his part, sent ashore for a hog. It evidently appeared, however, that it was not the man, but his property that they esteemed. Had he not exhibited his treasure of red feathers, a commodity much estimated in this island, a single cocoa-nut would not perhaps have been bestowed upon him. With the valuable cargo of presents which he owed to the liberality of his friends in England, he might easily have raised himself into consequence among the first persons throughout the Society Islands. But he disregarded the repeated advice of his well-wishers, and exposed himself to the most flagrant impositions*.

Having no wind in the morning, it was nine o'clock before our navigators could anchor in the bay, when they moored with the two bowers. They had not long anchored before Omai's sister came on board, to congratulate him on his arrival: and never was more genuine affection displayed than at this endearing moment, between two fond relatives after a long separation.

When this scene of sensibility closed, and the ship was properly moored, Omai attended

* Intelligence having been propagated on shore, that red feathers were plentiful on board the European ships, they were surrounded the next morning by a multitude of canoes, crowded with people; and plenty of hogs and fruit accompanied them. A bird of the magnitude of a tom tit, might, at that time, have furnished a sufficient quantity of feathers to purchase a hog of forty or fifty pounds weight. But as every man in the ship was in possession of some of this precious article of trade, it decreased upwards of five hundred *per cent.* in its value in a few hours. Still, however, red feathers preserved their superiority over every other commodity.

Captain Cook on shore; where, at his request, he was induced to visit a person, who was represented as a very extraordinary man indeed; Omai declaring that he was the God of Bolabola. They beheld him seated under such an awning as is usually exhibited in one of their larger canoes. He was so old and feeble as to be usually conveyed from place to place upon a hand-barrow. Omai presented to him a tuft of red feathers; but after a little conversation with this Bolabolaman, his mother's sister appeared, fell at his feet, and bedewed them with tears of joy: an affecting scene ensued*.

Though it rained, almost incessantly, for two successive days, our navigators were visited by the natives from every quarter, intelligence of their arrival having been so rapidly spread. Wahaiadooa, whose residence was at a considerable distance, had been informed of it; and on the 16th, a chief, named Etorea, who was his tutor, brought Captain Cook two hogs as a present from him; accompanied with a promise that he would attend him the day after. So attentive was he to his appointment, that Captain Cook received a message from him requesting he would go ashore to meet him.

In consequence of this invitation, Omai and the captain prepared to make him a formal visit. Omai, on this occasion, was determined to equip himself superbly, not after the manner of the English, nor that of Otaheite, Tongataboo, or any other country; but one consisting of a strange medley of all the habiliments and trappings he was possessed of.

Thus splendidly decorated, they got ashore, and first paid a visit to Etary; who, conveyed on a hand-barrow, accompanied them to a spacious building, where he was set down. Omai seated himself on one side of him, and the captain on the other. The latter caused a piece of Tongataboo cloth to be spread, on which were exhibited the presents he intended to make. The young prince afterwards appeared, attended by his mother and several exalted personages; who all seated themselves opposite to our adventurers. A man who was situated near Captain Cook, delivered a short unconnected speech: another, on the side near the chief, made another harangue; Etary after him, and then Omai, &c. Captain Cook's arrival, and his laudable proceedings in that country, furnished the subjects of their orations.

As a present for Otoo, the king of the whole island, Omai had prepared a *maro*, composed of red and yellow feathers; which, in that country, were extremely valuable. Captain Cook advised him not to produce it now, but seek an opportunity of presenting it to Otoo with his own hands. He relied, however, too much on the fidelity of his countrymen to be guided by his advice. He resolved to carry it ashore, on this occasion, and to give it to Waheiadooa, to be forwarded by him to Otoo, and added to the royal *maro*. By this conduct, he expected to oblige both chiefs; instead of which he highly offended that whose favour was essential to him, without receiving any compensation from the other. The captain was prophetic on the occasion; for Waheiadooa kept the *maro* for himself, and transmitted to Otoo about a twentieth part of what composed the magnificent present.

On the 19th Captain Cook received a present from the young chief, consisting of ten or a dozen hogs, a quantity of fruit, and some cloth†.

Having

* As Otaheite, and the neighbouring islands, could afford a plentiful supply of cocoa-nuts, the liquor of which is esteemed a most excellent beverage, Captain Cook prevailed upon his people to consent to be abridged, for a short time, of their stated allowance of spirits to mix with water. Among other arguments, he informed the ship's company, that the duration of the voyage would exceed by a year at least what had been originally supposed. He begged them to consider the aggravated hardships they must yet labour under, if they should be compelled to submit to short allowance of any species of provisions in a cold climate. He therefore submitted to them, whether it would not be more judicious to be prudent in time, and rather than run the risk of having their spirituous liquors exhausted, when they might be most necessary, to discontinue the use of their grog at present, when its absence could be so well supplied with so excellent a liquor as that of cocoa-nuts. He concluded, however, with observing, that the choice depended entirely upon themselves.

This proposal was no sooner intimated by Captain Cook, than it was generally approved and applauded. He directed Captain Clerke to make a similar proposal to his people, who were also unanimous in their approbation of the same measure. The serving of grog was therefore instantly prohibited, except on saturday nights; when every man was permitted to have a full allowance of it, to enable him to assist in toasting their female friends in England, that they might not be totally forgotten amidst the pretty girls of Otaheite.

† Some of the officers belonging to the European ships, discovered in their walks, what they conceived to be a Roman Catholic chapel; but it afterwards appeared that they

Having provided a fresh supply of water, and finished all their necessary operations, our navigators brought their animals from shore on the 22d, and made ready for sea. While the ships were unmooring, Omai and Captain Cook took leave of the young chief. During the time they were with him, one of the *Eatooas*, a person pretending to possess the spirit of the divinity, presented himself before them. Insanity seemed depicted in his countenance, and his only covering was a quantity of plantain leaves. What he uttered was in so low and squeaking a voice, that he was hardly to be understood. But Omai said he perfectly comprehended him, and that he was advising Waheiadooa not to accompany Captain Cook to Matavia. The *Eatooa* also predicted, that the ships would not arrive on that day at Matavia. While he was engaged in his prophetic business, a heavy shower of rain happening to fall, every one, except himself, retired for shelter. He continued squeaking about half an hour. Little attention was, however, paid to the predictions, though some of the auditors condescended to laugh at him.

Captain Cook desired to know of the chief whether he was an *Earea* or a Towtow. The answer he received was that he was *taata eno*, a bad man. And yet, though so little notice was taken of the mad prophet, superstition governs the natives with such absolute sway, that they really believe such to be possessed of the spirit of the Eatooa. Soon after the captain got on board, a light breeze springing up at east, the navigators got under sail, and the Resolution anchored the same evening. The Discovery did not get in till the next morning; the Eatooa's prediction was consequently erroneous.

SECTION XI.

Interview with Otoo, King of Otaheite—Improper Behaviour of Omai—Several Animals landed—Employment on Shore—Visit from a Native—Account of Oedidee—The Islanders retreat, but return—A Rebellion in Eimeo—Council of Chiefs—War resolved on—A human Sacrifice—Description of that Solemnity—The Morai at Attahooroo described—Singular Customs—Re-embark for Matavia—Reflections on human Sacrifices—Account of the Keecas—Dinner given by Omai—Fire-works—Remarkable Method of making a Present—Preservation of the Body of a Chief—Another human Sacrifice—Riding on Horseback—Animals given by Captain Cook—Audience given to Etary, &c.—Fighting with War-Canoes.

ON the 24th, Otoo, the king of the whole island, accompanied by a number of natives in their canoes, came from his residence in Oparra; and having landed on Matavia Point, dispatched a messenger to Captain Cook on board, to inform him that he should be glad to see him. The captain went ashore in compliance with the king's request, attended by Omai, and several of the officers. A vast concourse of people assembled on this occasion, in the midst of whom was his majesty, accompanied by his father, his two brothers, and three sisters. The captain approached the king, and saluted him; being immediately followed by Omai, who kneeled and embraced his legs. Though Omai had embellished his person, on this occasion, with his best apparel, and behaved with the utmost decorum, very little notice was taken of

they were mistaken: it was indeed a *toopapaoo*, in which the body of the late Waheiadooa lay, in a kind of state. It was in a house, inclosed with a low palisade. The *toopapaoo* was very neat, resembling one of those little awnings which they have over their large canoes. It was hung and covered with mats and cloths of a variety of colours. Small offerings of fruit and other vegetables seemed to be daily made at this shrine, several articles of different denominations being then perfectly fresh: they were deposited on a kind of altar without the palisades; within which they were not permitted to enter. Two men attended here at all times, as well to protect the place, as to dress and undress the *toopapaoo*. When Captain Cook went to take a view of it, the cloth and its appendages were rolled up; but, at his request, the two attendants placed it in proper order, after having first qualified themselves for the purpose, by dressing themselves in clean white robes. From credible information it appeared, that the death of the chief happened about twenty months before.

him,

him. He presented to the king two or three yards of gold cloth, with a large piece of red feathers; and the captain gave him a gold laced hat, a suit of fine linen, a quantity of red feathers, some tools, and one of the bonnets worn by the Friendly Islanders.

The ceremony being ended, the king and the royal family accompanied Captain Cook on board, attended by several canoes, all richly laden with provisions. Each of the royal family had provided a part of them, the captain therefore received a present from every individual of them; and each received from him a separate present in return. The king's mother came on board, some time after, having cloth and provisions, which she divided between Captain Cook and Omai. Though the latter was, at first, but little noticed by his countrymen, when they gained information of the extent of his wealth, he was particularly caressed and complimented. This disposition of the people was encouraged by Captain Cook as much as possible, he being desirous of establishing that youth with Otoo. But Omai rejected his advice, and by his imprudent conduct not only forfeited the friendship of the king, but also of the most considerable persons at Otaheite. He associated with none but strangers and vagabonds, whose sole intention was to plunder him; and who would certainly have reduced him to penury, if the captain had not interfered*.

Intending to continue here a considerable time, Captain Cook ordered the two observatories to be set up on Matavai Point: Before they had been two days at anchor in Matavia Bay, they were visited by their old friends who are named in the narrative of Captain Cook's last voyage. None of them appeared with empty hands; provisions accumulated in abundance, and no apprehensions were entertained of exhausting the island, which presented to the eyes of the beholder every mark of the most exuberant fertility and abundance.

Soon after their arrival here, one of the islanders, whom the Spaniards had taken with them to Lima, paid them a visit. They also found here the young man whom they called Oedidee, but whose real name is Heete hecte. Captain Cook had taken him from Ulietea on board his ship in 1773, and brought him back in the succeeding year.

After the arrival of our navigators at Matavia, the weather continued very unsettled till the 29th; before which day they could not get equal altitudes of the sun for ascertaining the going of the time-keeper. In the evening the islanders made a precipitate retreat, as well from the land station, as from on board the ships; the cause of which was speedily discovered. One of the surgeon's mates had made an excursion into the country to purchase curiosities, and had taken with him four hatchets for the sole purpose of exchange. Having imprudently employed a native to carry these valuable articles, the fellow took an opportunity of running away with them. The hatchets, however, were at length recovered, and every thing quickly resumed its former tranquillity†.

Towha,

* This behaviour drew upon him the disapprobation of the principal chiefs, who could not obtain, from any one in either ship, such valuable presents as were bestowed by Omai on the lowest of the people. After dinner, a party of the Europeans accompanied Otoo to Oparre, taking with them a peacock and hen, a turkey-cock and hen, three geese, a gander, four ducks, and a drake. All these were left with Otoo; and the geese and ducks began to breed before the Europeans sailed. They found there a gander, given to Oberea by Captain Wallis ten years before. The horse, mare, and sheep, were also put ashore at Matavia, after the immense trouble occasioned by bringing a living cargo to such a distance.

† Some messengers arrived the next morning from Eimeo, with intelligence that the people of that island were in arms; and that Otoo's partisans there had been compelled to retreat to the mountains. This quarrel between the two islands began in 1774, and had, in a great measure, subsisted ever since. A formidable armament had sailed soon after Captain Cook quitted Otaheite in his last voyage; but the mal-contents at Eimeo had so gallantly resisted, that the fleet had returned without success, and another expedition was now resolved upon.

On the arrival of these messengers, the chiefs assembled at Otoo's house, where the captain was then on a visit, and had the distinguished honour of being admitted into their council. After considerable debates on a variety of existing circumstances, the party for war at length prevailed; and it was resolved, though not unanimously, that a strong force should be sent to Eimeo. Otoo spoke but little during the debate: those of the council, who were advocates for war, applied to Captan Cook for his assistance; and all of them appeared extremely anxious to know which side of the question would be adopted by him. Omai was sent for to act as his interpreter; but as he could not be found, the captain performed his part as well as he could: he admitted that he was not perfectly acquainted with the subject, and observed, that, as the natives of Eimeo had never offended him, he could not think of engaging in hostilities against them. With this declaration they appeared to be perfectly satisfied,

View of a MORAI in OTAHEITE with a HUMAN SACRIFICE.

Barron sculp.

Towha, the chief of the district of Tettaha, who is related to Otoo, and had been commander in chief of the armament sent against Eimeo in 1774, happened not to be at Matavia at this time, and therefore was not present at these consultations. It appeared, however, that he was not a stranger to these transactions; and that he entered into the affair with great eagerness and spirit. For on the first of September, a messenger arrived from him to acquaint Otoo that he had killed a man to be sacrificed to the *Eatooa*, in order to implore the assistance of the deity against Eimeo; and the ceremony was to be performed at the great *morai*, at Attahooroo; and Otoo's presence was necessary on the occasion.

The ceremonies of the human sacrifice at length commenced: one of the attendant priests brought a young plantain-tree, and laid it down before the king. Another approached, bearing a small tuft of red feathers, twisted on some fibres of the cocoa-nut husk, with which he touched one of Otoo's feet, and afterwards retired with it to his companions. One of the priests, who was seated at the *morai*, then began a long prayer, and at certain periods sent down young plantain-trees, which were placed upon the sacrifice. To mention the numerous ceremonies performed upon this occasion would tire the reader with its prolixity, and uninteresting sameness*.

On being asked what was the occasion of so extraordinary a solemnity, they replied, that it was an ancient custom, and highly agreeable to their god, who came and fed upon the sacrifices, which induced him to comply with their petitions. Their own chiefs, who fall in battle, are treated in a very different manner. Their late king, Tootaha, Tubourai-tamaide, and another chief, who were all slain in an engagement with those of Tiaraboo, were taken to the *morai* at Attahooroo; where the priests cut out their bowels before the great altar; and their bodies were afterwards interred in three different places; and the common men who were killed in the battle, were all buried in one hole. This was performed the day after the battle, with great formality, as a thanksgiving offering to the deity, for the victory they had obtained the preceding day.

At the close of the scene exhibited at the Morai, the party embarked about twelve o'clock to return to Matavia; and, in their way, paid a visit to Towha, who had remained in the little island, where they met him the preceding day. Some conversation happening on public affairs, Captain Cook was once more entreated to join them as an ally, in the war against Eimeo; but by his positive refusal he forfeited the good opinion of this chief. Before they separated, Captain Cook took an opportunity of expressing his sentiments on the horrid ceremony of the human sacrifice; declaring that, exclusive of the barbarity of the custom, such an inhuman act, instead of making the Eatooa propitious to their nation, must certainly excite his vengeance.

Omai performed the office of interpreter, in conveying the captain's sentiments to Towha, on the subject of the late bloody acrifice; and he supported his arguments with such spirit that the chief appeared much irritated; especially when he was assured that if he had taken away the life of a man in England, his rank would not have protected him from an ignominious death.—He instantly exclaimed *maeno! maeno!*

satisfied, and the council was dissolved. But, before the captain retired, Otoo desired to see him again in the afternoon, and that Omai might accompany him.

* Let it be observed, however, that the unfortunate victim, offered on this occasion, was apparently a middle aged man, and one of the lowest class of the people: but he had not been fixed upon, on account of his having committed any crime that deserved death, though they usually select such wicked persons for their sacrifices; or vagabonds who have no visible means of procuring an honest livelihood. Some of the European gentlemen having examined the appearance of the body of the unhappy sufferer, observed that it was bloody about the head and face, and much bruised upon the right temple, which pointed out the manner in which he had been killed: and they were informed that he was deprived of life by a blow on the head with a large stone.

The wretches, who suffer on these occasions, are never previously made acquainted with their destiny. When a principal chief supposes a human sacrifice necessary, he fixes upon the victim, and dispatches some of his trusty servants to perform the deed; who instantly stone him to death, or beat out his brains with a club. The solemnity itself is termed *Poore Eree*, or the prayer of the chief; and the victim is called *Tataa-taboo*, or consecrated man.

This barbarous custom of offering human victims, is supposed to prevail in all or most of the islands of the Pacific Ocean. And though we may suppose, that not more than one person is sacrificed at one time, either at Otaheite, or other islands, yet it occurs so frequently, that Captain Cook reckoned no less than forty-nine skulls, of former victims, lying before the *morai* at Attahooro; and as none of these skulls appeared to have suffered any considerable change from the weather, it may reasonably be inferred that no considerable time had elapsed since they submitted to the fatal operation

(vile! vile!) and would not hear a syllable more on the subject.

Leaving Towha, the party proceeded to Oparre, where Otoo solicited them to pass the night. They landed in the evening, and as they proceeded towards his habitation, they had an opportunity of observing how these people amuse themselves in their private *heevas*. They saw about a hundred of them sitting in a house; in the midst of whom two women appeared, and an old man behind each of them, beating gently upon a drum; the women, at intervals, chanting with great delicacy. The assembly were so extremely attentive to the music, that few of them took any notice of the strangers. When the party arrived at Otoo's house, it was almost dark; and they were entertained with a public *heeva*, or play, in which his three sisters performed the principal characters. This is termed a *heeva* raa; during the representation of which no person is permitted to enter the house or area. The dress of the royal sisters was truly elegant and picturesque, and they supported their respective parts with singular propriety.

While Otoo and Captain Cook had been absent from the ships, they had few visitors, and were very sparingly supplied with fruit. After their return they wanted neither company nor provisions. On the 4th, Otoo accompanied a party of Europeans to dine ashore with Omai, who provided an excellent repast. Dinner being over, the captain accompanied Otoo back to his dwelling, where he found all his servants fully engaged in getting a quantity of provisions ready for him. Among other articles, there was a large hog; and a capacious pudding, composed of bread-fruit, plantains, taro, and palm or pandanus-nuts. The hog being baked, and the pudding ready, they were sent on board the captain's ship, in a canoe; together with two living hogs, some bread-fruit, and cocoa-nuts, followed by the captain, and all the royal family*.

The next day Captain Cook received a present of five hogs, and some fruit, from Otoo, and a similar gratuity from each of his sisters. Otoo was ever attentive to supply the wants, and contribute to the amusements of our navigators. On the 10th he treated a party of them at Oparre with a play; and his three sisters, dressed with the greatest elegance and taste, were the performers†.

They quitted Oparre in the evening, leaving Otoo, and all the royal family: the captain saw none of them till the 12th, when all except the chief honoured him with a visit. The chief himself was gone to Attahooroo, to assist at another human sacrifice‡.

Captain Cook, Mr Anderson, and Omai went again to Oparre on the 18th, accompanied by Otoo; taking with them the sheep which the captain intended

* On the 7th some fire-works were exhibited before a vast concourse of people; which greatly delighted some of them, and caused infinite terror to many others.

A party dined, the next day, with Oedidee; soon after which the captain attended Otoo to his father; where he saw several people extremely busy in dressing two girls, with fine cloth, after a very singular fashion. There were several pieces of cloth; and one end of each piece was held over the heads of these young females, while the remainder was wrapped round their bodies, under the arm-pits. The upper ends were then permitted to fall down, and hang in folds to the ground, over the other. Round the outside of all, several other pieces of various colours were wrapped, which considerably increased the size; the whole being five or six yards in circuit; and the weight of this singular dress was as much as the poor girls were able to support. To which were hung two breast-plates to embellish the whole, and give it a picturesque appearance. Thus equipped they were conveyed on board the ship, with several hogs, and a quantity of fruit, which, with the addition of this cloth, was a present to Captain Cook from Otoo's father. Those who are dressed in style are called *atee*, but only large presents of cloth are honoured with this ceremony.

† The captain had now an inclination to go to Oparre, to see the embalmed corpse of Tee, a chief whom he well knew when he last visited this island. It was lying in an elegant toopapaoo, like that Ohaitepeha, in which the remains of Waheiadooa are deposited. The body was entire in every part, though Tee had been upwards of four months dead: there was indeed a shrinking of the muscular parts and eyes, but the hair and nails were perfect, and the several joints were pliable. The bodies of all their great men, who die a natural death, are thus preserved by an unpleasant kind of process, that they may be exposed to public view for a considerable time afterwards. At first they are exhibited every fine day; then at certain stated times, and afterwards they are seldom to be seen.

‡ Being honoured with the company of Otoo the following day, the Captains Cook and Clerke mounted on horseback, and rode about the plain of Matavia, to the astonishment of a multitude of spectators. Once or twice, before this, Omai had attempted to shew his dexterity in horsemanship, but he had as often fallen off, before he could get properly seated. This was therefore the first time that the natives had ever seen any body on horseback. What the captains had begun, was daily practiced by some of the Europeans, but the curiosity of the people continued unabated. Having particularly observed the method of riding these noble animals, they were exceedingly delighted with them.

A Dance at
OTAHEITE.
Cook

J. Davenport sculp.

A YOUNG FEMALE of OTAHEITE
when bringing a present

Warren sc

intended to leave upon the island. They consisted of an English ram and ewe, and three Cape ewes, all which he made a present of to Otoo; strictly enjoining him not to suffer them to be removed from Oparre, till he should have got a stock of young ones, which he might distribute among his friends, or disperse in the neighbouring islands.

The ships having taken a proper quantity of water on board, and every thing being put in order, Captain Cook began to think of quitting the island. Early the next morning, Otoo came on board to aequaint Captain Cook, that the war canoes of Matavia, and some other districts, were to join those belonging to Oparre and that part of the island; and that there would be a general review there. The Matavia squadron was soon after in motion; and, after parading about the bay, assembled on shore, near the middle of it. Captain Cook went to take a survey of them in his boat.

Their war canoes are those which have stages, on which they fight, the number of which amount to about sixty; and they have nearly as many more of a smaller size. The captain was ready to have attended them to Oparre: but the chiefs were determined not to move till the following day; an opportunity was therefore offered of acquiring some insight into their manner of fighting. He earnestly requested Otoo to give orders, that some of the necessary manœuvres should be performed. Two of them were therefore ordered into the bay; in one of which Otoo, Captain Cook, and Mr. King embarked; and Omai went on board the other. Having got sufficient sea-room, they faced, advanced, and retreated, with the utmost expedition. The warriors on the stages flourished their weapons. Otoo, by the side of the stage, gave the necessary orders when to advance, and when to retreat. At length, after several times advaneing to, and retreating from each other, the two canoes closed, stage to stage: and after a short, but severe conflict, the troops on Otoo's stage were supposed to be killed; and Omai and his associates boarded them; when instantly Otoo, and the paddlers of his canoe, leaped into the sea, having no other alternative than that of swimming for the preservation of their lives.

But their engagements are not always conducted in this manner; Omai declared that they sometimes lash the two vessels together, head to head, and fight till all the warriors, on one side or the other, are killed. But this close contest is only practised when the parties are determined to conquer or die.

The strength of these islands consists wholly in their navies: a general engagement on land never happens among them; all their decisive battles occurring upon the water. When the time and place of battle are fixed upon by both parties, the preceding day and night is devoted to feasting and diversions; and at the approaeh of morning, they launch the canoes, get every thing in order, and, with the day, commence the eontest, the event of which generally terminates the dispute. The vanquished have recourse to flight, and those who reach the shore ascend the mountains; for the victors, before their fury is abated, spare neither age nor sex. They assemble the following day at the *morai*, to return thanks to the *eatooa* for the vietory, and offer up the slain and prisoners as sacrifiees. A treaty is then proposed, when the eonquerors usually name the terms of stipulation; by which large districts of territory, and whole islands, may probably change their owners. Omai said he was once taken a prisoner by the men of Bolabola, and conducted to that island; where he and many others must have lost their lives the next day, had they not fortunately found means to escape in the course of the night.

The sham engagement being ended, Omai equipped himself in his suit of armour, mounted a stage in one of the canoes, and paddled along the shore of the bay, that every person might have an opportunity of taking a perfect view of him. His coat of mail, however, did not excite the attention of the multitude so much as he expected. Many of the people, indeed, had been so highly disgusted at his folly and impudence, upon several recent occasions, that they looked on him, and his splendid deeorations, with indifference, bordering on contempt.

SECTION XII.

Deliberations on Sailing—A Peace with Eimeo—Otoo neglects sending early Reinforcements—Solemnity at the Morai on the Peace—Otoo's artful Conduct—Omai receives a Present of a War Canoe, which he embellishes with Streamers—Otoo's Present to his Majesty, Modes of Traffic, &c. at Otaheite—Expedition of some Spaniards—Who endeavour to traduce the English—Omai jealous of another Traveller.

OTOO and his father came on board in the morning of the 22d, to know when Captain Cook intended to sail, as they proposed to accompany him to Eimeo, and that their fleet should sail at the same time to reinforce Towha. The Captain submitted to them the appointment of the day; the following Wednesday was therefore resolved upon, when he was to receive on board Otoo, his father, mother, and the whole family. This point being adjusted, the Captain proposed setting out immediately for Oparre, where the fleet was to assemble this day, and to be reviewed.

As Captain Cook was stepping into his boat, intelligence arrived that a treaty had been concluded between Towha and Mahaine, and Towha's fleet had returned to Attahooroo. In consequence of which the war canoes, instead of rendezvousing at Oparre, were ordered to their respective districts. Captain Cook, however, followed Otoo to Oparre, accompanied by Mr. King and Omai; where, soon after their arrival, a messenger from Eimeo related the conditions of the peace, which might more properly have been denominated a truce; the time of its duration being limited.

The terms being disadvantageous to Otaheite, Otoo was severely censured, as the disgraceful accommodation was the effect of his delay in sending reinforcements. It was even suggested that Towha, resenting the treatment he had received, had declared, that immediately after Captain Cook's departure, he would join his forces to those of Tiaraboo, and attack Otoo. Roused by this irritating report, the Captain resolutely declared, that he was determined to espouse the interest of his friend; and that whoever presumed to attack him, should feel the weight of his displeasure, when he returned to their island.

After this declaration no more was heard of Towha's report: Whippai, the father of Otoo, was highly offended at the terms of the peace, and censured Towha for concluding it; wisely considering that Captain Cook's going with them to Eimeo, might have been of essential service to their cause, though he might not interfere in the quarrel. He therefore concluded, that Otoo had acted prudently in waiting for the captain, though it unfortunately prevented his giving that early assistance to Towha which he expected *.

On the 25th of September, Otoo, Mr. King, and Omai, returned from Attatooroa, when Mr. King gave a narrative of what he had seen, to the following effect. " At sun-set we embark-

* While they were debating on this subject at Oparre, a messenger arrived from Towha, to request that Otoo would attend the next day at the *morai* in Attahooro, to render thanks to the gods for the peace he had concluded. Captain Cook was asked to attend, but being indisposed, he chose to decline it; he sent Mr. King and Omai to observe the particulars, and returned to his ship, accompanied by Otoo's mother, his three sisters, and several other women. The captain at first supposed that this numerous train came into his boat to procure a passage to Matavai, but they assured him that they intended to pass the night on board, in order to cure him of the rheumatic disorder which he complained of. He accepted the friendly offer, and submitted himself to their directions. He was then desired to lie down among them, when all those who could get near him, began to squeese him with both hands on many parts of his body, but more particularly on those where the pain was found the most intolerable, till his bones began to crack, and his flesh was almost squeezed to a mummy: after suffering this severe discipline about a quarter of an hour, he thought himself extremely happy to be allowed an interval of ease. The operation, however, gave him immediate relief, and encouraged him to ask a repetition of it before he retired to bed; so effectual were their endeavours, that he found himself pretty easy the whole night after. These generous physicians renewed their prescription the next morning, and again in the evening, when the health of the patient was perfectly re-established, and they politely took their leave. This operation is called *romee* among the natives, and far exceeds that of the flesh-brush, or any external friction.

ed

ed in a canoe, and left Oparre. About nine we landed at that extremity of Tettaha which joins to Attahooroo. The meeting of Otoo and Towha, I expected, would be interesting. Otoo and his attendants seated themselves on the beach, near the canoe in which Towha sat. He was then asleep; but being awakened, and hearing Otoo's name mentioned, a plantain-tree and dog were instantly laid at Otoo's feet, and several of Towha's people entered into conversation with him. After having been for some time seated close to Otoo, I repaired to Towha. He asked me if Toote was displeased with him; I answered no; and that he was his *taio;* and that I was directed to go to Attahooroo to let him know it. On returning to Otoo, he desired that I should go to eat, and then to sleep: Omai and I were therefore induced to leave him. On questioning Omai on that subject, he said Towha was lame, and could not stir; but that Otoo and he would soon converse together in private. This was probably true; for those we left with Otoo joined us in a little time, and soon after Otoo himself arrived; when we all went to sleep in his canoe. Plenty of *kava* was produced the next morning. One person drank to such an excess, that he was deprived of his senses, and appeared to be convulsed. He was held by two men, who amused themselves in plucking off his hair by the roots. I left this spectacle to see the meeting of Towha and his wife, and a young girl who was said to be his daughter. After the ceremony of cutting their heads, and a copious discharge of blood and tears, they washed, embraced the chief, and seemed perfectly unconcerned. But the sufferings of the young female were not yet concluded. Terridiri (Oberra's son) arrived; when she, with the utmost composure, repeated those ceremonies to him, which she had just performed on meeting her father. Towha having brought a war canoe from Eimeo, I asked if he had killed the people belonging to her; and was informed that there was not a person in her when she was captured."

About ten they left Tattaha, and landed in the afternoon close to the *morai* of Attahooroo. It was expected that the solemnity would have immediately been commenced; but nothing was done, as neither Towha nor Potatou had joined them. The next day both those personages arrived, with seven or eight large canoes, and landed near the *morai.* Several plantain-trees were presented to Otoo, on behalf of different chiefs. The ceremony was began by the principal priest, who brought out the *maro,* wrapped up, and a bundle of a conic shape. These things were placed at the head of what had the appearance of a grave; and three priests sat down at the other end, having with them a plantain-tree, a branch of another tree, and the sheath of the flower of the cocoa-nut tree. The priests separately repeated sentences: and, at intervals, chanted a melancholy ditty. A short prayer ensued; after which the chief priest uncovered the *maro,* when Otoo rose up and wrapped it about him, holding in his hand a bonnet of red and black feathers. After some further ceremonies, extremely similar to those above mentioned, the solemnity ended with three cheers. The *maro* was then wrapped up, and decorated with additional red feathers.

The people then proceeded to a large hut near the morai, and seated themselves in solemn order. An oration was pronounced by a man of Tiaraboo; who was followed by another from Attahooroo. After these Tooteeo distinguished himself as a fluent speaker.

In the midst of their harangues, a man of Attahooroo rose up, having a sling fastened to his waist, and a stone upon his shoulder. After parading for some time in the open space, and chanting a few sentences, he threw the stone upon the ground. This stone, with the plantain tree that lay at Otoo's feet, were then conveyed to the *morai;* one of the priests joining with Otoo in pronouncing a short sentence upon the occasion.

Omai, who was present at the ceremony when Otoo was made king, said it much resembled that which was now described by Mr. King. The plantain tree is always first introduced in all their religious ceremonies; and probably upon many other occasions. It is, indeed, the olive-branch of these people upon all important occasions.

Captain Cook accompanied Otoo, the next day, to Oparre; and surveyed the cattle and poultry he had consigned to his friend's care: every animal was in a promising way, and seemed properly attended to. He took four goats from Otoo, two of which he proposed to leave at Ulietea; and to reserve the other two for the

advantage of any other islands he might touch at *.

For the many valuable articles which Omai had given away, he received one good thing in return. This was a fine double sailing canoe completely equipped. Captain Cook had some time before made up a suit of English colours for him, but he thought them too valuable for the present purpose, and therefore collected ten or a dozen flags and pendants, which he spread over different parts of his canoe; and thus drew together a number of people to gaze at her. Omai's streamers were an assemblage of English, French, Spanish, and Dutch; being all the European colours he had seen †.

Otoo came on board the 28th of September, and informed Captain Cook that he had got a canoe, which he requested he would take with him, as a present from him to the *Earee rahie no Pretane*. The Captain was pleased with Otoo for this token of his gratitude; which he supposed, at first, to have been a model of one of their vessels of war, but it proved to be a small *ivahah*, about sixteen feet in length: it was double, and decorated with carved work; but being too large for him to take on board, he could only thank him for his kind intention.

Calms and gentle breezes from the west, detained them here some days longer than they expected; during which time the ships were crowded with their friends, and surrounded by canoes. On the 29th, at three in the afternoon, the wind came at east, and they weighed anchor. The ships being under sail, seven guns were fired, not only to oblige Otoo, but also to gratify the curiosity of his people; after which many of their friends took their leave of them in so affectionate a manner, as to testify how much they regretted their departure. Otoo, and two or three others, expressing a desire of seeing the ships sail, a stretch was made out to sea, and then in again immediately; when they also took their last farewel, and went ashore in Otoo's canoe‡.

It may seem extraordinary that our navigators could never get any distinct account of the time when the Spaniards arrived, how long they stayed, or when they departed. It however appeared, by the inscription upon the cross, and by the information of some of the intelligent natives, that two ships came to Oheitepeha in 1774, soon after Captain Cook left Matavai, which was in May the same year. They left behind them a bull, some goats, hogs, and dogs, and a ram.

The hogs are large, and have greatly improved the breed originally found by the English upon the island: goats are also extremely plenty. The dogs introduced by the Spaniards, are of two or three sorts. Had they all been hanged, instead of being left upon the island, the natives would have been gainers by it. Captain Cook's

* Otoo had no objection to the exercise of a little fraudulent cunning to answer a mercenary purpose, as appears from the following circumstance. Among other articles, Captain Cook had made this chief a present of a spying-glass; but when he had been a few days in possession of it, he grew tired of its novelty, or from some other cause grew indifferent about it; he therefore took it privately to Captain Clerke, professing great friendship for him, and informing him that he had got a present for him, which he supposed would be agreeable. "But," added he, "*Toota* must not be made acquainted with this transaction, because he wanted it, and I refused to let him have it." He then delivered the glass to Captain Clerke. The Captain, at first, begged to be excused from accepting it; but Otoo, becoming still more urgent, insisted upon his taking it, and left it with him. A few days after he reminded the Captain of the glass; who, thinking a few axes would be agreeable to Otoo, produced four or five to give him in exchange. Otoo instantly exclaimed, "*Toote* offered me five for it." "Well," replied Captain Clerke, "I am far from wishing that you should be a loser by your friendship for me, and you shall have six axes." He readily accepted them; but again requested that Captain Cook might not be made acquainted with the transaction.

† Omai's sister, and brother-in-law, together with a few select acquaintance, engrossed him to themselves, in order to strip him of all the property he possessed; and they would probably have succeeded, if Captain Cook had not taken his most valuable articles under his own care. But even this measure would not have saved Omai from destruction, if these relations of his had accompanied him to his intended place of settlement at Huaheine, as they had intended; but the Captain disappointed their further views of plunder, by forbidding them to appear in that island while he continued in that country; and they knew him too well not to comply with the injunction.

‡ Captain Cook was enjoined by Otoo, to request, in his name, the *Earee rahie no Pretane*, to send him by the next ship, some red feathers, axes, and half a dozen musquets, powder and shot, and horses.

When these people made the Europeans a present, they usually signified what they expected in return; by which means their presents often came dearer to them than what they could get by barter; but when they were occasionally pressed by extreme scarcity, they could have recourse to their friends for a supply, when they could not procure it by any other method. This mode of traffic was therefore as convenient to them as to the natives.

young

young ram fell a victim to one of these animals. Four Spaniards remained on shore, after these ships left the island; two of whom were priests, one a servant, and the other was much caressed among the natives, from his having a competent knowledge of their language. This man, who was distinguished by the name of Mateema, had been indefatigable in impressing the minds of the islanders with exalted ideas of the greatness of the Spanish nation, and inducing them to think meanly of that of the English. Many improbable falsehoods were propagated by this Spaniard, and believed by the inhabitants; but Captain Cook's return to Otaheite was an ample confutation of all that Mateema had advanced.

Whatever design the Spanish priests and their companions, might have had upon this island, their hasty departure sufficiently proved that they had laid it aside. They endeavoured to make the natives believe that it was their intention to return, and that they would bring with them houses, animals, men and women, who were to settle on the island. After Mateema and his companions had continued ten months in the island, two ships arrived at Oheitepeha, took them on board, and sailed again in five days.

SECTION XIII.

Anchor at Taloo in Eimeo—The Harbours of Taloo and Parowroah described—Visit from Maheine the Chief of Eimeo—Description of his Person—Preparations for Sailing—Goat Stolen—That recovered and another stolen—Menaces on the Occasion—Expedition in Search of the Goat—Houses and Canoes destroyed—Other Hostilities threatened—The Goat returned—Description of the Island.

AFTER leaving Otaheite at day-break on the 30th of September, the navigators stood for the north-end of tho island of Eimeo. Omai, in his canoe, arrived there before them. They were not without pilots, having several natives of Otaheite on board, and, among them, several women. Unwilling to rely entirely upon these guides, Captain Cook dispatched two boats to examine the harbour; when, safe anchorage being found, they stood in with both the ships, and anchored in ten fathoms water.

The name of the harbour is Taloo; it is on the north side of the island, and runs upwards of two miles between the hills, south, or south by east. It is not inferior to any harbour they have seen in this ocean, both for security and goodness of bottom. It has besides this singular advantage, that a ship can sail in and out with the reigning trade wind. Among the several rivers which fall into it, one is so considerable as to admit boats a quarter of a mile up, where the water is perfectly fresh. The banks on the sides of this stream are covered with the *pooroo* tree, which makes excellent fuel. Wood and water may therefore be procured here with great facility*.

As soon as they had anchored, many of the inhabitants came on board the ships from mere motives of curiosity, without having any thing to barter; but several canoes arrived in the morning from more distant parts, bringing with them hogs, bread fruit, and cocoa-nuts, which were exchanged for hatchets, nails, and beads.

On the 2nd of October Captain Cook received a visit from Maheine, the chief of the island. He approached the ship with as much caution as if he had apprehended mischief from our Europeans, because they were friends to the Otaheitans. This chief was accompanied by his wife: Captain Cook made them several presents, after which they went ashore, but speedily returned with a large hog, as a proper acknowledgment of the Captain's favours. He then made them an additional present, and surpassed the chief in generosity. This couple afterwards repaired to the Discovery, to pay a visit to Captain Clerke.

Maheine, supported with a few adherents,

* The harbour of Parowroah is about two miles to the eastward, and is much larger within than that of Taloo; but the opening in the reef lies to the leeward of the harbour, and is considerably narrower. These defects give the harbour of Taloo a decided preference. There are also one or two inconsiderable harbours on the south side of the island.

considers

considers himself as almost independent of Otaheite. He is bald-headed, though only about forty-four years of age, which is rather an uncommon circumstance in these islands. He seemed ashamed of his naked head, and wore a kind of turban to conceal it: it may probably be thus considered, as shaving the head had been introduced by Captain Clerke as a punishment inflicted on thieves; in consequence of which some of the officers belonging to the ships, whose heads were but thinly covered with hair, were strongly suspected by the natives of being *tetos**.

On the 3rd most of the inhabitants were absent, taking a corpse with them on a *toopapaoo*, and Maheine had retired to the remotest part of the island. It was now sufficiently evident that a regular plan had been projected, to steal what the Captain was unwilling to give; he having assigned to the chief the most satisfactory reasons for not leaving them in this island.

Having restored one of the goats, the people were determined not to part with the other, which was a female, and with kid; and the Captain was as resolutely determined to have it back again. He therefore applied to two elderly men, who had been instrumental in recovering the first; they informed him that this had been taken to a place called Watea, by Hamoa, the chief of that place, but that it would be delivered up, if he would send for it. They expressed a willingness to conduct any of his people to the spot. Some of Captain Cook's officers proceeded to the house of Hamoa at Watea, where they were, for some time, amused by the people; who pretended they had sent for the goat, and that it would instantly be produced. Night however approached, and the lost animal never appeared; when Mr. Shuttleworth, one of Captain Cook's officers, was obliged to return to his boat without it †.

On their first arrival at Watea, several men were seen running to and fro in the woods, being armed with clubs and darts; and Omai, who moved towards them, had stones thrown at him. Hence it was apprehended that they meant to oppose any violence that might be attempted against them; but on perceiving the strength of the other party, had abandoned the design.

* Towha's fleet had been stationed in this harbour, and though the war was speedily concluded, the marks of its devastation were every where conspicuous. Having made every preparation for sailing, the navigators intended to put to sea the next day; but an unfortunate accident prevented it. In the day time our adventurers had sent their goats on shore to graze; and though two men had been appointed to protect them, one of them had been stolen in the evening. As this loss interfered with the captain's views of stocking other islands with these animals, he resolved, if possible, to recover it. Information was received the next morning that it had been conveyed to Maheine, who was then at Parowroah harbour; the Captain therefore dispatched some of his people in a boat, with a message to that chief, requiring both the goat and the thief to be immediately given up.

Little suspecting that any person would presume to steal a second, whilst great exertions were making to recover the first, the goats were again put ashore in the morning, and a boat, as usual, sent for them in the evening. While the Europeans were getting them into the boat, another was conveyed away undiscovered. As it was immediately missed, hopes were entertained of recovering it without much trouble, supposing it could not have been taken to any considerable distance. Several of the natives set out, different ways, to seek after it, declaring they supposed it must have strayed into the woods; not one of them admitting that it was stolen. Our adventurers, however, were convinced to the contrary, when it was discovered that not any of the pursuers returned; their intention was only to amuse them till their prize was safely deposited. Night coming on, the boat returned with the other goat, and one of the persons who had stolen it.

† Fearing that if these robbers should escape detection, the islanders would be encouraged to rob our navigators with impunity, the Captain consulted with Omai, and the two old men, what methods could be taken. They did not hesitate to recommend the most decisive measures, and advised him to go into the country with a party of men, and shoot every person he should meet with. Captain Cook did not approve of this bloody counsel; but, early the next morning, set out with upwards of thirty of his people, accompanied by Omai, one of the old men, and three or four attendants. He also sent lieutenant Williamson round the western parts of the island, with three armed boats, to meet them.

As soon as this party had landed, a few remaining natives fled before them. The first person they came near was in a very perilous situation; for Omai, the instant he beheld him, asked the Captain if he should shoot him; fully expecting that the advice which he had given was instantly to be carried into execution. General orders were then immediately given, that it was not Captain Cook's intention to injure, much less to destroy, a single native. This declaration being speedily circulated, prevented the flight of the inhabitants.

Ascending the ridge of hills, on their road to Watea, they were informed the goat had been taken the same way. Proceeding further, they were told the animal had been kept there the first night, but had been taken to Watea the next morning. Arriving at Watea, they were directed to Hamoa's house, by persons who assured them the lost goat was there; but when they entered the premises, the people they saw there, declared they had never seen it, or knew any thing concerning it. Hamoa himself appeared, and declared he knew nothing of the business.

They

They were confirmed in this opinion, by observing that all their houses were empty *.

About four in the afternoon the party arrived at Wharrarada, where their boats were waiting for them. Here they remained about an hour, in order to rest themselves, and afterwards set out for the ships, where they arrived about eight in the evening, but no tidings of the missing animal had been, at that time, received.

In the morning of the 10th of October, the Captain dispatched one of Omai's men to Maheine, with this peremptory message,—that if he persisted in his refusal to deliver up the goat, a single canoe should not be permitted to remain on the island; and that hostilities should never cease while the stolen animal continued in his possession. To convince the messenger that he was in earnest, he ordered the carpenter, in his presence, to break up several canoes that lay at the head of the harbour. Captain Cook then proceeded to the next harbour, where he caused seven or eight more canoes to be destroyed, and returned on board about seven in the evening. On his arrival, he found the goat had been returned about half an hour before; and it evidently appeared, from a variety of circumstances, that it came from the very place, where the inhabitants, the day before, declared they knew nothing about it. Thus ended this troublesome and unfortunate business.

The intercourse between our Europeans and the natives was renewed the following morning; several canoes bringing articles to the ships to barter; whence it was reasonable to conclude, that they were conscious they had merited the treatment they had received. They weighed, with a breeze, down the harbour, about nine; but it was so variable, that they did not get out to sea till noon, when they steered for Huaheine, Omai attending in his canoe.

There is not much difference between the produce of this island, and that of Otaheite; but their women are remarkably dissimilar: those of Eimeo being of a dark hue, low stature, and having very unpleasant features. Otaheite, being a hilly country, has little low land, except some deep vallies. Eimeo has steep rugged hills, in different directions, with gently rising grounds about their sides. The hills, though rocky, are generally covered with trees, almost to the tops.

SECTION XIV.

The Ships arrive at Huaheine—Assembly of the Chiefs—Omai's Harangue—His Establishment agreed to—A House erected for him—His Safety provided for—The Ships infested with Cock-Roaches—Detection and Punishment of a Thief—Escapes from his Confinement—Animals left with Omai—His European Weapons—His Entertainments—His Character.

ON the morning that succeeded the departure of our navigators from Eimeo, they saw Huaheine; and at twelve they anchored at the northern entrance of Owharre harbour, on the west side of the island, Omai, in his canoe, entered the harbour just before them, but did not land. Many of his countrymen crowded to behold him, but they were not particularly noticed by him. Such numbers came off to the ships, as greatly to incommode the persons on board. Their passengers informed them of the transactions at Eimeo, and multiplied the number

* A few of the natives being collected together, Omai was directed to expostulate with them on the absurdity of their conduct, and to inform them that he knew the goat was in their possession; and that, if it was not instantly restored, he should consume all their houses and canoes. Still they persisted in their denial of knowing any thing relative to the crime, alledged against some of their brother islanders. In consequence of which Captain Cook set fire to seven or eight of their houses, and two or three war canoes, which were entirely consumed. After this they marched off to join the boats, which were then about seven miles from them, and, on their road, destroyed six other war canoes. At length Omai, who was at some distance before them, returned with information, that a multitude of men were assembling to attack them. They prepared themselves to receive them, but, instead of enemies, they were petitioners, bearing plantain-trees in their hands; these were laid down before the Captain, entreating him to spare a certain canoe, which he readily complied with.

of houses and canoes they had destroyed. This exaggerated account was far from being displeasing to Captain Cook, as he found it made a greater impression upon all who heard it; which might operate in such a manner as to induce the natives of this island to behave better, than they had done during his prior visits.

The next morning, which was the 13th of October, the ships were visited by all the principal people of the island; a circumstance that afforded much satisfaction to Captain Cook, as he now thought it high time to settle Omai, and he supposed the presence of these chiefs would enable him to effect it in a satisfactory manner. The Captain therefore prepared to make a formal visit to Taireetareea, the *Earee rahie*, or king of the island, to introduce this business. Omai, who was to accompany him, decorated his person very properly on the occasion, and provided a suitable present for the chief himself, and another for his *Eatooa*. Their landing drew a number of visitors from the ships, who, with many others, repaired to a large house. The concourse of people was astonishing; most of whom were stouter and fairer than those of Otaheite.

The Captain waited some time for Taireetareca; but when he made his appearance, he was convinced that his presence might have been dispensed with, as he hardly exceeded ten years of age. Omai commenced with making his offering to the gods, consisting of red feathers, cloth, &c. Another offering was devoted to the gods by the young chief; and several other tufts of feathers were also presented. The various articles were laid before a priest, being each delivered with a kind of prayer, spoken by one of Omai's friends, though principally dictated by himself; in which he did not forget his friends in England, nor those who had safely conducted him back to his native country. The priest then noticed each of the articles in order, and, after reciting a prayer, dispatched every one to the *morai* *.

Wishing, however, to be perfectly understood upon this important business, the captain declared, in the most decisive manner, that he would neither assist in such an enterprize, nor suffer it to be carried into execution, while he continued in their seas; and that, if Omai established himself in Ulietea, he should be introduced as a friend, and not forcibly imposed upon the people of Bolabola.

This peremptory declaration had a wonderful effect on the deliberations of the council, one of whom expressed himself to the following effect: That the whole island of Huaheine, with whatever it contained, was Captain Cook's; and that, consequently, he might bestow what portion of it he pleased on his friend. The captain then requested, that a particular spot might be fixed upon, and a certain quantity of land appropriated for his settlement. A short consultation ensued among the chiefs, and Captain Cook's request was unanimously granted; the ground immediately fixed upon, being contiguous to the house where the present meeting had been convened. It extended two hundred yards along the shore of the harbour, which was somewhat exceeded by its depth. This business being adjusted, a tent was pitched on shore, a post established, and the observatories erected. The carpenters were employed in building a house for Omai, sufficiently capacious to contain the European commodities he had in his possession. At the same time, some of the ships' company were occupied in making a garden for his use, planting vines, melons, pine-apples, and the seeds of other vegetables; all of which were in a flourishing state before the Europeans quitted the island.

Omai now began seriously to attend to his own affairs,

* After the performance of these religious rites, Omai seated himself near the Captain; who gave a present to the young chief, and received another in return. The establishment of Omai was then proposed to the chiefs who were assembled. He informed them that the Europeans had conveyed him into their country, where he was graciously received by the great king and his nobles, and indulgently treated during his continuance there: that he had been brought back, after having been enriched by their generosity, with a variety of articles, which would be extremely beneficial to his countrymen; and that, besides the two horses which were to continue with him, many other new and valuable animals had been left at Otaheite, which would speedily multiply, and furnish a progeny for the advantage of all the neighbouring islands. He then intimated to them, that Captain Cook requested they would give his friend a piece of land, whereon a house might be erected, and provisions produced for himself and servants: adding, that, if he could not obtain this at Huaheine, the Captain was determined to establish him at Ulietea. Omai, indeed, had vainly flattered himself, that the Captain would employ forcible means to restore him to his father's lands in Ulietea.

affairs, and heartily repented of his folly and prodigality at Otaheite. He found, at Huaheine, a brother, a sister, and a brother-in-law, but they did not plunder him, as his other relations had lately done. They were too honest to injure him, and they were of too little consequence in the island to render him any essential service.

As Omai had, by his connection with our Europeans, made himself master of a species of treasure, which his countrymen could not possibly create; it was natural to imagine that many were desirous of sharing in his envied wealth, and would not be much averse to join with others in stripping its sole proprietor. To prevent such a combination, Captain Cook advised him to distribute some of his moveables among a few of the principal chiefs; who, on being thus gratified, might patronise him, and shield him from the injuries of others*.

While the navigators continued in this harbour, they took the bread on shore to clear it of vermin. Cock-roaches innumerable infested the ship at this time: the damage they sustained from them was very considerable, and every attempt to destroy them was fruitless. Food of any kind, exposed for a few minutes, was covered with these noxious insects, who soon pierced it so full of holes that it resembled a honey-comb†.

Omai's house being now almost completed, several of his moveables were taken ashore on the 26th; among other articles, a box of toys seemed to engage the attention of the gazing multitude. But his dishes, plates, mugs, kettles, and the whole train of domestic apparatus, created no admirers. Omai himself now began to think that they would not be of any service to him; that a baked hog was more savoury food than a boiled one; that a plaintain was as good a plate as pewter; and a cocoa-nut shell as convenient a goblet as a mug. He therefore bartered these articles of English furniture among the crew of the ship for hatchets, and iron instruments.

On the 30th, in the morning, the Bolabola-man, who had been confined, found means to make his escape, taking with him the shackle of the bilboo-bolt that had been put about his leg; which was demanded from him as soon as he arrived on shore, by one of the chiefs, and given to Omai; who quickly informed the captain that his professed enemy was again let loose upon him. It appeared, upon enquiry, that the sentry placed over the prison, and even the whole watch where he was confined, having fallen asleep, he seized the opportunity of taking the key of the irons out of the drawer he had put it in, and set himself at liberty. Captain Cook

* He promised to pursue this salutary advice; and our navigators were informed, before they sailed, that he had literally adopted it. The captain, however, had also recourse to intimidation, supposing it might be equally effectual with many of the natives. He took every opportunity of assuring them, that it was his intention to make another visit to their island, after being absent the usual time; and that if he did not find his friend in a state of such perfect security as he should now leave him, all those who had been his enemies, might expect to become the objects of his resentment. This menacing assertion will probably have some effect; for the successive visits from the Europeans of late years, have induced these islanders to believe that their ships are to return at stated periods. While this notion is generally entertained among them, Omai has a prospect of being suffered to thrive upon his new plantation.

† The intercourse of trade and friendly offices between the Europeans and the inhabitants of Huaheine, was not disturbed till the evening of the 22d, when one of the natives found his way into Mr. Bayly's Observatory, and carried off a sextant, unobserved. Informed of this theft, Captain Cook desired Omai to apply to the chiefs, to procure restitution. He accordingly made application to them, but they neglected to take the necessary steps to recover the instrument; being more attentive to a *heeva*, that was then exhibiting, till the captain commanded the performers to desist. Convinced that he was now in earnest, they began to make some enquiry after the delinquent, who sat in the midst of them with such apparent unconcern, that Captain Cook could hardly be induced to think him guilty. Omai, however, assuring him that this was the man, he was taken on board the ship, and there confined. This produced a general ferment among the assembled islanders, and the whole body of them fled. The prisoner was examined by Omai, who, after much prevarication, acknowledged where he had concealed the sextant, which was brought back uninjured the next morning. After this discovery, the natives ventured to appear as usual. As the thief appeared to be a hardened depredator, Captain Cook ordered him to be punished with unexampled severity; for, besides having his head and beard shaved, he directed that both his ears should be cut off, and then dismissed.

But this punishment did not deter him from the perpetration of other offences; for, in the morning of the 25th a general alarm was spread, occasioned by one of the captain's goats being stolen by this very man. This indeed happened not to be true, but it appeared that he had destroyed, and carried off from Omai's ground, several vines and cabbage-plants; and publicly threatened to murder him, and set fire to his house, as soon as he should quit this place. To prevent the further execution of his mischievous designs, the captain ordered him to be again confined on board the ship, with a view of carrying him out of the island; a circumstance which gave general satisfaction to the chiefs.

had

had afterwards the pleasure to be informed, that the fellow who had thus escaped had gone over to Ulietea.

Omai being now settled in his new habitation, Captain Cook began to think of departing from Huaheine, and got every thing off from the shore, except a goat with kid, and a horse and mare, which were left in the possession of his friend. He was also favoured with a boar, and two sows of the English breed; and he had got two or three sows of his own.

To form his domestic establishment, Omai had procured at Otaheite four or five *toutous*, or people of the lower class; the two New Zealanders continued with him; and his brother, with several others, joined him at Huaheine; so that his family consisted of about ten or eleven persons. The house erected for him was twenty four feet by eighteen, and about ten feet in height. In the construction of it, as few nails as possible were used, lest the desire of iron might be an inducement to pull it down. It was agreed on that, after the departure of the Europeans, a spacious house should be built, after the mode of his own country; it was intended to add greatly to his security; and many of the chiefs promised to contribute their assistance. Should the intended building cover as much ground as was marked out for it, few of the mansions in Huaheine will exceed it in magnitude.

Omai's European arms consisted of a fowling-piece, a musquet, a bayonet, two pair of pistols, with several swords or cutlasses. Having taken on shore the property belonging to him, he several times invited the two captains, and many of the other officers of the ships, to dine with him; on which occasion, his table was plentifully supplied with the best provisions that could be procured. Before our navigators set sail, Captain Cook caused the following inscription to be cut on the outside of his house:

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 2 Novembris, 1777.
Naves { *Resolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.*
Discovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.

On the 2d of November, at four o'clock, taking the advantage of an easterly breeze, the Europeans sailed out of Owharre harbour. Most of their friends remained on board till the vessels were under sail; when Captain Cook, to gratify their curiosity, ordered five guns to be fired. Every person then quitted them, except Omai, who remained till they were out at sea. They had come to sail by a hawser fastened to the shore, which, in casting the ship, parted, being cut with the rocks, and its outer end was left behind; a boat was therefore dispatched to bring it on board. In this boat, Omai went ashore, after having taken a very affectionate leave of all the officers. He sustained his part with becoming fortitude, till he came to Captain Cook, when he found himself unable to suppress his tears, and continued weeping till he arrived on shore*.

The defects of Omai's character were considerably over-balanced by his good nature and docility. Captain Cook, during the time he was with him, was never seriously displeased with his general character. His grateful heart retained the highest sense of the favours that had been conferred upon him; nor will he ever be unmindful of those who have honoured him with their favour and protection. But these islanders, though they have been several times visited by Europeans, have not even attempted to profit by this intercourse; such is the characterist icfoible of the people. It cannot therefore be expected, that Omai will be able to introduce among them many of our arts and customs: but it may be expected that he will exert his endeavours to bring to perfection, the fruit and vegetables that were planted by our Europeans; which will be no inconsiderable acquisition. The principal ad-

* If Omai had made a proper use of the presents brought with him from Great Britain, he might have formed the most advantageous connections. His father was possessed of considerable property in Ulietea, when that island was subdued by the inhabitants of Bolabola; and, with many others, fled for refuge to Huaheine, where he died, leaving Omai, with several other children, who thus became dependent. In this situation, Captain Furneaux took compassion on him, and brought him to England. Perhaps he expected, from the treatment he met with there, that powerful assistance would be afforded him against the enemies of his father and his country; for, from the commencement of his voyage, this was his constant topic. He was indeed so ridiculously attached to his favourite scheme, that he expressed a belief that the Bolabolans would certainly quit the conquered island, when they received intelligence of his arrival in Otaheite. But as he proceeded in the voyage, he began to perceive his error; and on his arrival at the Friendly Islands, he had such apprehensions of his reception in his own country, that he was even inclined to have remained at Tongataboo, under the protection of his friend Feenou. He continued undetermined to the last, and would not have adopted the plan of settlement in Huaheine, had not Captain Cook peremptorily refused to employ force in restoring him to his father's former possessions.

vantage

vantage will probably arise from the animals which have been left upon these islands, which perhaps they never would have obtained, if he had not come over to England. When these multiply, Otaheite, and the Society Islands will become the most enviable situations upon earth.

SECTION XV.

Arrival at Ulietea—A Marine deserts; but is brought back—Intelligence from Omai—Instructions to Captain Clerke—Two others desert—Sought after by the two Captains—The Chief, and his Family, confined—Conspiracy of the Natives against the Captains—Two Deserters recovered—The Chief's Family liberated—The Ships sail—Remarks on the Ulieteans.

ON the return of the boat which conveyed Omai on shore, our navigators hoisted her in, and instantly stood over for Ulietea. The next morning they made sail for the harbour of Ohamaneno. Meeting with variable light airs and calms, they were, at twelve o'clock, still about the distance of a league from the mouth of the harbour. While they were thus detained, Oreo, the chief of the island, with his son, and son-in-law, came off to visit them. All the boats were hoisted out, and sent a-head to tow. An easterly breeze, blowing right out of the harbour, obliged them to anchor at its entrance, about two o'clock, and to warp in, which employed them till night. They were no sooner within the harbour, than their ships were surrounded with canoes, laden with a supply of fruit and hogs, which the natives exchanged for their commodities.

The Resolution was, the next day, moored close to the northern shore: and the Discovery along-side the southern shore. Captain Cook, in the mean time, returned Oreo's visit, and presented that chief with a red-feathered cap from Tongataboo, a linen gown, a shirt, and some other things. Oreo, with some of his friends, accompanied him on board to dinner. On the 6th the observatories were set up, and the necessary instruments taken on shore. On the 13th, a marine, named John Harrison, deserted from the Observatory, taking with him his musquet and accoutrements. A party was detached in search of him, but they returned without success. On the following day the Captain applied to the chiefs, who encouraged him to expect the fugitive before the close of the day. This, however, did not happen, and the chief was suspected of being perfectly indifferent about the business.

Our navigators had, at this time, a great many of the natives about the ships, and several thefts had been committed; the consequences of which deterring the greater part of them, very few thought proper to come near them the next morning. Oreo caught the alarm, and fled with his whole family. Captain Cook peremptorily demanded a restoration of the deserter; and, having heard that he was at a place called Hamoa, he proceeded thither with two armed boats, attended by a native. In their way, they happened to find the chief, who also embarked with them. At length the natives obtained information of the captain's approach; and were prepared to deliver up the fugitive. He was discovered, with his musquet lying before him, seated between two women, who, on the appearance of the captain, rose up to plead in his behalf*.

About a fortnight after the Europeans had arrived at Ulietea, Omai dispatched two persons in a canoe, with intelligence, that he remained unmolested by the inhabitants of Huaheine, and that every thing proved successful, except that his goat had died in kidding. This information

+ Wishing to discourage such proceedings, the captain sternly bid them begone; when they instantly burst into tears, and retired. Paha, the chief of that district, advanced with a sucking-pig, and a plantain-tree, and was preparing to present it to the captain, as a peace-offering; when he disdainfully rejected it. He then commanded the chief to quit his presence, embarked with Harrison in one of the boats, and returned to the ships: after which harmony was speedily restored. The delinquent alledged that the natives had enticed him away; and, as he made it appear that he did not quit his station till within a few minutes of the time he was to have been relieved by another, the punishment inflicted was not severe.

was accompanied with an earnest request, that the captain would send him another goat, and two more axes. Pleased with the opportunity of having it again in his power to oblige his friend, the captain sent back the messengers to Huaheine, on the 18th, with the boon he had solicited, consisting of a male and female kid, and two handsome axes.

On the 19th instructions were delivered by Captain Cook to Captain Clerke, for the regulation of his conduct, if a separation should happen after they had quitted these islands. The purport of these instructions was, that if the two ships should be separated, he, after searching for Captain Cook, and not finding him in five days, was to proceed towards the coast of New Albion, and endeavour to fall in with it in the latitude of 45°, and there to cruise for him ten days. If he should not see him in that time, he was to put into the first convenient harbour, to obtain refreshments, and take in wood and water. While he continued in port, he was constantly to look out for Captain Cook; and if he should not be joined by him before the 1st of the ensuing April, he was to proceed northward to the latitude of 56°, where he was to cruise for him till the 10th of May. Not finding him then, he was to proceed on a northerly course, and attempt to find a passage into the Atlantic Ocean, either through Hudson's or Baffin's Bay: that if he should fail in those endeavours, he was to proceed to the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul in Kamtschatka, and pass the winter there: but, if he could not procure refreshments there, he might go where he thought proper, leaving with the governor, before his departure, an account of his destination, to be delivered to Captain Cook when he arrived; and that, in the spring of 1779, he was to return to the port above-mentioned: that if he then received no further orders from Captain Cook, so as to justify his deviation from those of the Lords of the Admiralty, his future proceedings were to be directed by them: and if he should be prevented by illness, or any other cause, from carrying these into execution, he was to leave them with the officer who was next in command*.

The chief being in Captain Cook's presence when he received intelligence of this transaction, immediately mentioned it to him, supposing this step had been taken without his knowledge or approbation. The captain instantly undeceived him, when he began to apprehend disagreeable consequences respecting himself; his countenance indicating great perturbation of mind. But the captain consoled him, by informing him that he was at liberty to quit the ship whenever he pleased, and to take such measures towards the recovery of the two absentees as he supposed would prove effectual. If success should crown his endeavours, his friends on board the Discovery should be immediately released from their confinement: if not, they should certainly be taken away with them. The name of Bedooa, (who was Orea's daughter) resounded from every quarter, and the women not only joined in a most dismal howling, but also struck their bosoms, and cut their heads with shark's teeth, which occasioned a great effusion of blood†.

Captain Cook having, at this time, no suspicion

* On the 24th intelligence was communicated to Captain Cook, that two of the Discovery's people were missing; one of whom was a midshipman. It was soon discovered that they had embarked in a canoe the preceding night, and were now at the other end of the island. As the midshipman had expressed a desire of remaining at one of these islands, it was supposed he had fled with that intent. Captain Clerke, with two armed boats, and a detachment of marines, set out in quest of the deserters, but returned in the evening without receiving any satisfactory information concerning them. The next morning intelligence was brought that the two fugitives were in the isle of Otaha. To give effectual discouragement to any further desertion, Captain Cook resolved to go in pursuit of them; he accordingly set out, with two armed boats, accompanied by Oreo. They proceeded, without stopping, till they came to the eastern side of Otaha, where they put ashore. The only information they could procure concerning them was, that they had quitted this island, and gone to Bolabola the preceding day. The captain, not choosing to follow them thither, determined to have recourse to a more effectual expedient.

Early in the morning of the 26th, Oreo, with his son, daughter, and son-in-law, having come on board the Resolution, Captain Clerke invited them on board his ship. As soon as they arrived in his cabin, he thought proper to detain the three last, till the deserters should be delivered up. A sentinel was placed at the door, and the window secured, at which they were exceedingly surprised; and, when Captain Clerke explained the reason of it, they burst into tears, and requested he would not kill them. He declared he would not, and assured them that when the run-a-ways were brought back, they should that moment be released: but these assurances did not seem to alleviate their sorrow.

† The chief now dispatched a canoe to Bolabola, to inform

picion of their design, it was fortunate they did not succeed in it, and that no mischief ensued on the occasion: no musquets were fired, except two or three to stop the canoes: to which firing it is probable that Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore owed their safety; for, at that instant, a party of the islanders, armed with clubs, were proceeding towards them, but thought proper to disperse on hearing the report of the musquets*.

On the 27th our navigators took down their observatories, and carried them, with many other valuable articles on board. They unmoored the ships, and moved further down the harbour, where they anchored again. No account of the deserters having been received from Bolabola, Oroeo set out for that island, requesting Captain Cook to follow him, the next day, with the ships. The wind, however, prevented their getting out to sea; but though it detained them in the harbour, it brought back Oreo, with the two fugitives, from Bolabola. They had reached Otaha on the night of their desertion; but being unable to go to the eastward as they intended, for want of wind, they proceeded to Bolabola, and afterwards to the small island of Toobaee, where they were apprehended by Pootoe's father. As soon as they were seen on board, the three prisoners in the Discovery were restored to their liberty.

Adverse winds kept our navigators in the harbour till the 7th of December, when, at eight in the morning, they weighed and made sail. The Ulieteans are, in general, smaller and blacker than the natives of the adjacent islands, and seemed less orderly. Oreo, their chief, is a kind of deputy to the Bolabola monarch; and the conquest seems to have lessened the number of subordinate chiefs among them: consequently they are less immediately under the eye of those whose interest it is to enforce a proper obedience. Though Ulietea is now reduced to this humiliating state, it was formerly the most eminent of this group of islands, and the first seat of government. The present royal family of Otaheite is descended from that which ruled here before the late revolution.

form Opoony, king of that island, of what had happened, and requesting him to seize the two deserters, and cause them to be restored. The messenger was enjoined by Captain Cook not to return without the fugitives, and to tell Opoony, from him, that if they had left the isle of Bolabola, he must send canoes in pursuit of them.

The impatient natives now meditated an attempt, which, had it not been prevented, might have involved them into still greater distress. Between five and six o'clock, Captain Cook, who was then on shore, observed that all the canoes about the harbour began to move off. He enquired, in vain, the cause of this manœuvre, till one of the people called to him from the Discovery, and informed him that some of the islanders had seized Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore, as they were walking at some distance from the ships. Captain Cook, struck with the audacity of this scheme of retaliation, ordered his people instantly to arm; and, in a few minutes, a strong party was dispatched, under the conduct of Mr. King, to the rescue of those two gentlemen. Two armed boats, and a party under Mr. Williamson, were also sent at the same time, to intercept the flying canoes in their retreat to the shore. These detachments had hardly disappeared, when intelligence arrived that our Europeans had been misinformed, and they were therefore ordered to return.

It clearly appeared, however, from a variety of corroborating particulars, that the natives had really formed the design of seizing Captain Clerke. They had also projected a plan of getting possession of the person of Captain Cook. He was accustomed to bathe every evening in the fresh water; on which occasion he often went alone, and always unarmed. Expecting him to go this evening, as usual, they intended to seize him, and Captain Clerke also, if he had accompanied him. But Captain Cook, having confined the chief's family, was cautious of putting himself into their power, and advised Captain Clerke, and the officers, not to venture far from the ships. Oreo, in the course of the afternoon, asked Captain Cook, several times, if he would not go to the bathing-place; till, finding he could not be prevailed upon, he retired, with his people.

* This conspiracy was discovered by a girl who had been brought from Huaheine by one of the officers. Hearing some of the Ulieteans say, they would seize Messrs Clerke and Gore, she ran to acquaint the Europeans of the plan in agitation. Those who had undertaken the execution of the design, threatened to murder her, as soon as our navigators should quit Ulietea, for disappointing them. The girl's friends were therefore prevailed upon to take her to a place where she might remain concealed, till she could safely be conveyed to Huaheine.

SECTION XVI.

Proceed to Bolabola—Apply to Opoony for M. de Bougainville's Anchor—Reasons for purchasing it—Delicacy of Opoony—Quit the Society Islands—Description of Bolabola—History of the Reduction of Otaha, and Ulietea—Bravery of the Men of Bolabola—Animals left at Bolabola and Ulietea—Process of salting Pork—Observations on Otaheite, and the Society Islands.

HAVING quitted Ulietea, our adventurers steered for Bolabola; their principal reason for visiting this island was, to procure an anchor that had been lost at Otaheite by M. de Bougainville. Having parted with all their hatchets, and other iron tools and implements, in purchasing refreshments, they were reduced to the necessity of creating a fresh assortment of trading articles, by fabricating them from the spare iron they could find on board; and even that was now almost exhausted. Captain Cook therefore supposed that if he could purchase de Bougainville's anchor, it would be found a great acquisition of that useful material; and he hoped Opoony might be induced to part with it.

Oreo, accompanied by seven or eight others from Ulietea, went with the Europeans to Bolabola; but not being highly favoured by wind and tide, Captain Cook declined the attempt of carrying the ships into the harbour, and embarked in one of the boats, attended by Oreo and his companions, and was rowed into the island.

As soon as the captain got ashore, he was introduced to Opoony, surrounded by a vast concourse of people. After the usual preliminary ceremonies were over, he did not hesitate to ask the chief for the anchor in his possession. To induce him to comply with this request, he produced a present which had been prepared for him. It consisted of some gauze handkerchiefs, a linen night-gown, a shirt, a looking-glass, six axes, and some beads and toys. Opoony, however, refused to accept of this present till the captain had received the anchor. He instantly ordered the anchor to be delivered to him, and the compensation for it was to be left to the discretion of the captain. Messengers were sent in the boats to a neighbouring island, where the anchor had been deposited; but it was found to be less valuable than reports had represented it. The mark on it indeed demonstrated that it had originally weighed seven hundred pounds; but it now wanted the two palms, the ring, and part of the shank. The reason was now evident why Opoony refused Captain Cook's present; he doubtless supposed that the anchor was so much inferior to it in value, that, when he saw it, he would be offended. The captain, however, took the anchor as he found it, and sent the whole of the present which he first intended. He then returned on board, hoisted in the boats, and made sail to the north. Oteavanooa, the harbour of Bolabola, is situated on the west side of the island, and is very capacious; and, though they did not enter it, Captain Cook was informed that it was a very proper place for the reception of ships. Bolabola is only eight leagues in circumference; it is therefore remarkable that its inhabitants should have been able to conquer Ulietea and Otaha, the former of which is more than double its size*.

When Captain Cook landed to meet Opoony, he took an ewe on shore, of the Cape of Good Hope breed. He had been informed, when the deserters were brought back from Bolabola, that a ram had been left there by the Spaniards. He therefore intended to lay the foundation for a breed of sheep at Bolabola. He also left with Oreo, at Ulietea, two goats, and an English boar and sow. It may therefore be reasonably expected that the race of hogs will soon be considerably improved at Otaheite, and all the neighbouring islands: and they will probably be stocked with many other valuable European animals.

Had our British navigators possessed a greater assortment of goods, and a proper quantity of salt, they might have preserved as much pork as would have supplied the two ships almost a year. But they almost exhausted their trading commodities at the Friendly Islands, Otaheite, and its

* Since this revolution, the Bolabola men are considered as invincible; and their fame is so far extended, that, even at Otaheite, they are respected for their valour. They have the reputation of never flying from an enemy, and that they are ever victorious against an equal number of the other islanders.

neighbourhood

neighbourhood. Our axes were nearly gone, without which hogs were hardly to be purchased. The salt remaining was not more than sufficient for curing fifteen puncheons of meat *.

It seems almost incumbent on the Europeans to pay these islanders occasional visits, to supply them with such articles as they have given them a predilection for, by introducing them. The want of such supplies may be severely felt, when they cannot return to their old imperfect contrivances, which they have now discarded. When the iron tools, which Europeans had furnished them with, are worn out, their own will be forgotten and despised. Knives were in high estimation at Ulietea; and axes and hatchets were coveted in all the islands. With respect to articles merely ornamental, these islanders are as capricious as the most polished European nations: a toy admired to-day, will probably be rejected to-morrow. But the iron implements are so evidently useful, that they must continue to be highly estimated by them. They would be inconceivably miserable, if they should cease to be supplied with what now appears so necessary to their happiness or existence, as they are ignorant of the art of fabricating them themselves. The following section is furnished by Mr. Anderson.

SECTION XVII.

Remarks on former Accounts of Otaheite—Prevailing Winds—Beauty and Fertility of the Country Land little Cultivated—Produce—Curiosities—Natives—Delicacy of the Women—General Character—Disposed to amorous Gratifications—Language—Ignorance of Surgery or Medicine—Food of the superior Class—Effects of Ava—Meals—Religion—Notions concerning Immortality—Superstitions—Traditions concerning the Creation—The King almost deified—Classes of the People—Punishments—The adjacent Islands.

AFTER some prefatory remarks on the voyages of Wallis, Bougainville, and Captain Cook, Mr. Anderson relates such particulars concerning Otaheite, and its neighbouring islands, as he could procure from Omai, and the other natives with whom he frequently conversed.

For the greatest part of the year, the wind blows from between east south-east, and east north-east. When it blows violently, the natives call it *maaraee*. If it blows strong, the weather is usually cloudy or rainy; but when it is more moderate it is generally clear, settled, and serene. Should the wind veer to the south-east, or south south-east, it blows more gently, and is termed *maoai*. In December and January, when the sun is almost vertical, the winds and weather are extremely variable; though it often blows from west north-west, or north-east. This wind is named *toerou;* and is generally accompanied with cloudy weather or rain. If the wind is more northerly, it has the appellation of Era-potaia. The wind from south-west, and west south-west, is more frequent than the former, and is usually gentle, with occasional breezes, though it sometimes is attended with squalls. The weather is then usually cloudy, or rainy, with a close air, frequently accompanied with thunder and lightning. The natives then call it *etoa*.

The south-east part of Otaheite affords a most luxuriant prospect. The hills are high,

+ The following process of curing pork was adopted by Captain Cook in his several voyages. The hogs were killed in the evening; and when cleaned, they were cut up, and the bone taken out. The meat was salted while it was hot, and so disposed that the juices might drain from it till the next morning: it was then salted again, put into a cask, and covered with pickle. When it had remained in this situation four or five days, it was taken out, and carefully examined; and, if any of it appeared in the least tainted, it was separated from the rest, which was repacked, headed up, and filled with good pickle. It passed a further examination in about eight or ten days time; but there appeared to be no necessity for it, as it was generally found to be all perfectly cured Bay and white salt, mixed together, are supposed to answer the best, though either of them, alone, will answer the purpose. Great care should be taken that none of the large blood-vessels remain in the meat; and that too much should not be packed together at the first salting; lest the pieces in the middle should heat, and hinder the salt from penetrating them. In tropical climates, meat should not be salted in sultry rainy weather.

steep, and craggy, though covered to the summit with trees and shrubs. The lower land and vallies teem with exuberant productions, and demonstrate to the beholders that no country can vie with this in strength and beauty of vegetation. Nature has been equally liberal in conducting rivulets through every valley, delighting the eye by their translucent fluid, and fertilizing the land through which they meander in their passage to the parent ocean.

The habitations of the natives are scattered on the level land, and many of them along the shore. The natural fertility of the country, improved by the mildness and serenity of the climate, has rendered the inhabitants so careless in their cultivation, that, in many parts, the smallest traces of it are hardly to be discovered, though loaded with the richest of the earth's productions. The cloth plant, and the *Ava*, are almost the only articles which seem to demand their attention. The bread-fruit tree is never planted, but spontaneously proceeds from the roots of the old ones, which spread themselves almost upon the surface of the ground. The cocoa-nut tree requires no attention, after it has made its appearance about a foot or two above the ground. The plantain indeed claims some attention in its culture; for, about three months after it shoots up, it begins to bear fruit; at the same time putting forth young shoots, which supply a succession of fruit: the old stocks being cut down as the fruit is taken off*.

The navigators were much astonished at the remarkable contrast between the inhabitants of Tongataboo, and those of Otaheite: the former being robust and dingy, and the latter having a distinguished delicacy and whiteness. The women of Otaheite have all those delicate characteristics, which in many countries distinguish them from the other sex. The men wear their beards long, and their hair much longer than at Tongataboo, which gave them a very different appearance. The Otaheiteans are irresolute and fickle; and not so robust as the Friendly Islanders, the fertility of their country enabling them to lead a more indolent life †.

"Nine tenths of their common diet," says Mr. Anderson, "consist of vegetable food; and the *mahee*, or fermented bread fruit, which is an article in almost every meal, prevents costiveness, and has a singular effect in producing a coolness about them.—To this temperate course of life, may, perhaps, be attributed their having so few diseases among them ‡."

The natives of Otaheite seem open and ingenuous, though Omai has declared they exercise cruelty in punishing their enemies, and torment them with great deliberation; but this, perhaps, is only on very extraordinary occasions. If cheerfulness results from innocence, it might naturally have been supposed that their whole lives had been unsullied with a crime. Under any misfortune, after the trying moment, they suffer little by reflection: care cannot create a wrinkle on their brow; even the approach of death does not deprive them of their vivacity. I have seen them hovering over the brink of the grave with disease, and preparing for a decisive engagement with an enemy, "but, in neither of these cases, have I ever observed their countenances overclouded with melancholy or dread §."

They are immoderately fond of music; but though

* The products of the island are, however, more remarkable for their abundance than for their variety. The only curiosity in this country, that seems particularly entitled to the notice of the traveller, is a large lake of fresh water, on the top of a high mountain, at the distance of almost two days journey. Its depth is very considerable, and it is inhabited by eels of an enormous size. A small pond on this island contains water which has a yellow sediment at the bottom. It has the appearance of being good, but the taste of it is offensive; and it is said to prove fatal to those who drink a quantity of it; and those who bathe in it break out in pustules.

† Personal endowments are in high estimation among them, and they have various methods of improving them. Among the *Erreoes*, or unmarried men, especially those of superior rank, it is usual to submit to a kind of regimen, to render them fair: to effect this they continue a month or two in the house, wear a great quantity of cloths during that period, and feed only upon bread-fruit, which alone is wonderfully efficacious in whitening the skin. They also vary their food, according to the variation of the seasons, to preserve a sufficient portion of corpulence and colour.

‡ They mention only five chronic or national disorders; among which are the dropsy. The Europeans are accused, however, of having added a disease to their catalogue, which abundantly supplies the place of all the others; and for which they seem to have no effectual remedy. The priests, indeed, administer a medley of simples, which they acknowledge never performs a cure: but they admit that nature alone has sometimes exterminated the poison of this loathsome disease, and produced a recovery.

§ Disposed to direct their aims to what will afford them pleasure, all their amusements tend to excite their amorous passions;

though they were not charmed with our complicated compositions, they were much delighted with the more melodious sounds, when produced singly, as they bore a strong resemblance to the simplicity of their own.

The language of Otaheite is radically the same as that of New Zealand and the Friendly Islands, but has not that gutteral pronunciation, and is pruned of some of the consonants, with which those dialects too much abound. It has many figurative expressions, and is extremely copious.

They are extremely deficient in the arts, though they pretend to perform cures in surgery, which are in vain attempted by European anatomists. Simple fractures, among them, are bound up with splints, but, should part of the bone be lost, they insert, between the fractured ends, a piece of hollow wood to supply its place. The *rapaoo*, or surgeon, inspects the wound in about five or six days, when he finds the wood is partly covered with the growing flesh: in as many days more, he visits the patient again, when he generally finds it completely covered: and, having acquired some strength, he bathes in the water, and is restored.

It is well known that wounds will heal over leaden bullets, and there are some instances of their healing over other extraneous bodies. But I entertain some doubt of the truth of this narrative, because in the cases which fell under my observation, they were far from being so dexterous. I was shewn the stump of an arm, which had been taken off, that had not the appearance of a skilful operation, even making a proper allowance for their defective instruments. I saw a man going about with a dislocated shoulder, some months after he had received the accident, from their not being acquainted with the method of reducing it, though one of the simplest operations of British surgery.

They know that fractures of the spine are mortal; they also know in what particular parts of the body wounds are fatal. They have less physical knowledge, because, perhaps, their accidents are more numerous than their diseases*.

Their meals at Otaheite are very frequent: Their first is about two in the morning, after which they go to sleep: the next is at eight; they eat again at eleven, at two, and at five; and go to supper at eight. The women are not only obliged to eat by themselves, but they are also excluded from partaking of the better sorts of food. Turtle, or fish of the tunny kind, they are not permitted to touch: particular sorts of plantain are also forbidden them; and even those of the first rank are seldom permitted to eat pork. The children also eat apart; and the women usually serve up their own provisions.

When young persons of each sex, from mutual choice, agree to cohabit, the man makes a present to the father of the girl of some common necessaries, as hogs, cloth, or canoes: If the

passions; and their songs, which give them infinite delight, have the same forcible tendency. But, as a constant succession of sensual enjoyments must unavoidably cloy, they occasionally vary them by introducing subjects more refined, they chanted their triumphs in war, and their amusements in peace; their own adventures, and the fertility of their island.

* A famine often happens in this island, notwithstanding its astonishing fertility, in which many people are said to perish. Whether this calamity is occasioned by the scanty produce of some seasons, or to wars, satisfactory information could not be obtained, but it has induced the people to exercise the strictest œconomy, even in the time of plenty.

In a scarcity of provision, when their yams and bread-fruit are consumed, they have recourse to various uncultivated roots upon the mountains. The *patarra* is first used, and, when young, is tolerably good, but becomes hard and stringy, when old. A small portion of animal food falls to the lot of the lower class of people; and if they sometimes should obtain any, it is either fish, sea-eggs, or some other marine productions; for pork they seldom taste. Only the *Eree de hoi* can afford such provision every day: the inferior chiefs, according to their wealth, may perhaps enjoy that delicacy once a week, a fortnight, or a month. Sometimes, indeed, they cannot even be thus far indulged; for, when the island is impoverished by war, or any other cause, a prohibition is issued against the killing of hogs, for a certain limited time. In such an interval, these animals have been known to multiply so fast, that they have almost departed from their domestic state, and literally become wild. A prohibition is sometimes extended to fowls.

The *ava* is chiefly used here among the superior class of the people; but the preparation of this beverage is different from that in the Friendly Islands. Here they pour a small quantity of water upon the root, and bake, roast, or bruise the stalk before it is infused, without chewing. They also bruise the leaves of the plant, and pour water upon them as upon the root. It is not drank sociably, in large companies, as practised among the people at Tongataboo; but it certainly has more pernicious effects here, as our Europeans saw frequent instances of its intoxicating powers.

Many of the English, who had visited these islands before, were surprized to find several who were then corpulent, now almost reduced to skeletons; and the cause of this alteration was universally attributed to the use of the *ava*. Their excuse for this destructive practice is, that they take it to prevent their growing too corpulent: it, however, enervates them exceedingly, and probably accelerates the termination of their lives.

father

father supposes he has not received a valuable consideration for his daughter, he compells her to quit her first friend, and engage with another who may be more liberal. The man, indeed, may at any time make a new choice; or, should his consort become a mother, he may destroy the child; and afterwards has his choice, either to leave the woman, or continue his connection with her. If he adopts the child, and suffers it to live, the man and woman are then considered as in the married state; and, after that, they seldom separate. A man, however, escapes censure, should he join a more youthful partner to his first wife, and cohabit with both of them.

From a notion of cleanliness, the practice of cutting off the foreskin is adopted among them.

Their religious system abounds in singularities, which few of the common people know any thing of; that being confined to their priests, which are very numerous. They pay no particular respect to one God, as possessing pre-eminence; but believe in a plurality of Divinities, who have each a plenitude of power. The respective inhabitants make choice of one who they think is sufficiently powerful to protect them, and to supply their necessities. If he does not give them satisfaction, they think it no impiety to change. An instance of this kind happened lately in Tiaraboo, where two Divinities have been discarded, and Oraa, God of Bolabola, has been elected in their room.

In their Rites to their Divinities, they are particularly assiduous. The *whattas,* or offering places of the *morais,* are generally loaded with fruit and animals; and almost every house has a part appropriated to a similar purpose. Many of them will not even begin a meal, till they have laid aside a morsel for the *eatooa.* It is said, indeed, that they frequently have recourse to human sacrifices to avert misfortunes. Their prayers, which are chanted, are also very frequent. In religion, as well as in other cases, the women shew their inferiority. If they pass the *morais,* they must partly uncover themselves, or take an extensive circuit to avoid them. *Etee,* they say, is an evil spirit delighting in mischief, to whom they make offerings as well as to their divinity. But the mischiefs inflicted by invisible beings, are merely temporal. They expect no permanent punishment hereafter for crimes committed on earth; the souls of good and bad men being indiscriminately eaten by the deity.

They have not those sublime conceptions of happiness, which our religion and reason teach us to expect hereafter. They believe that immortality is acquired by death, for they suppose that spirits are not entirely divested of those passions by which they were actuated on earth. If the husband departs this life before the wife, the soul of the latter is no stranger to him on his arrival in the land of spirits. Their former intimacy is renewed in a capacious building, called *Tourooa,* where departed souls repair to recreate themselves with the gods. The husband then accompanies her to his separate habitation, where they eternally reside, and have an offspring purely spiritual.

Many of their notions respecting the deity are extravagantly absurd: they suppose that every temporal blessing is derived from their regular performance of religious offices: Sudden deaths, and all other accidents, they impute to the immediate impulse of some divinity. Should a man receive a wound in his toe, by stumbling against a stone, the *Eatooa* is the cause of it*.

The chief characteristics of the sovereign are these: the being invested with the *maro,* the presiding at human sacrifices, and the blowing

* In the night, they are much startled and terrified on approaching a *toopapaoo,* where dead bodies are exposed: as the ignorant and superstitious are in England at the sight of a church-yard, or with the apprehension of ghosts. They have implicit confidence in dreams, but they admit that this kind of knowledge is only possessed by particular persons. Omai pretended to have been favoured with these communications: he assured our European travellers, that, on the 26th of July, 1776, his father's soul had intimated to him in a dream, that he should land somewhere in three days; but he was erroneous in his first prophetic attempt, for they did not reach Teneriffe till the first of August.

The doctrine of planetary influence they frequently adopt, and are sometimes regulated in their public counsels by the appearances of the moon.

Their traditions concerning the creation are equally obscure and whimsical. They affirm that some Goddess had a lump of earth suspended in a cord, which, by giving a swing round, she scattered around in small portions, which constituted Otaheite and the adjacent islands; and they were all peopled by one of each sex, who originally settled at Otaheite. Besides this account of their own immediate creation, they also admit of one upon an universal plan; which is wholly composed of absurdities: male and female rocks are therein formally married, beget land, and afterwards a race of gods, &c. The spots observable in the moon, according to their account, are groves of a certain tree, which grew in Otaheite, and being accidentally destroyed, the seeds were carried thither by some doves, where they afterwards grew to perfection.

of

of the conch-shell. On the sound of the latter, every subject is obliged to take a reasonable quantity of food to his royal residence. Their veneration for his name, they sometimes carry to a most extravagant height. When he accedes to the *maro,* such words as resemble it in sound, are immediately changed for others; and should he afterwards be presumptuous enough to continue the use of those words, he, and his whole family, are put to death. Bestowing the sacred name of the sovereign on any animal, incurs immediate death. Hence Omai was induced, when in England, to express his indignation, that dogs or horses should be named princes, or princesses.

The sovereign never deigns to enter the habitation of a subject; in every district he visits, he has houses belonging to himself. Should he, by any accident, deviate from this rule, the mansion thus honoured with his presence, with all its furniture, is committed to the flames. When present, the sovereign's subjects uncover to him as low as the waist. When he is at any particular place, a pole, having a piece of cloth affixed to it, is elevated near, on which the same honours are bestowed. His brothers are entitled to the first part of this ceremony; but the women only uncover to the royal females.

Exclusive of the *Eree de hoi,* and his family, the people are classed in the following order. The *Erees,* or powerful chiefs; the *Manahoone,* or vassals; and the *Teou,* or *Toutou,* servants or slaves. The men connect themselves with women of equal rank; but if a man takes one of an inferior class, and she produces a child, it is not only preserved, but is also entitled to the rank of the father; unless he should happen to be an *Eree,* in which case the child is destroyed.

When a woman of condition suffers a man of inferior rank to perform the duty of a husband, the children they produce are killed. If a *Teou* be detected in an intrigue with a royal female, his punishment is death. The son of an *Eree de hoi,* at his birth, succeeds his father in titles and honours; if he has no children, the government devolves to his brother at his death. In other families, possessions descend to the eldest son, who is, nevertheless, required to support his brothers and sisters. Otaheite is divided into several districts: property is sometimes ascertained by large stones, which have continued from generation to generation.

Crimes, which are not of a general nature, are often left to be punished by the injured party, supposing he will decide as equitably as a person wholly unconcerned: long custom having allotted certain punishments for certain crimes, he may venture to inflict them without danger. If a person, for instance, be detected stealing, which is generally practiced in the night, the owner of the property may kill him immediately. But they do not often inflict so severe a punishment, unless the property taken is very valuable. When cloth, or hogs, are stolen, and the robber escapes; if, on discovery, he engages to return an equivalent for such hogs and cloth, he is discharged from the offence; or, at most, receives but a slight chastisement.

If a person is killed in a quarrel, the friends of the deceased attack the survivor and his supporters. If they are victorious they seize the house and property of the other party; but, if they are vanquished, the reverse takes place.

One of the Europeans remonstrated with some of these islanders, on the unnatural cruelty of murdering their own children, and asked if their chiefs were offended on these occasions. They answered that their chiefs had no right to interfere in such cases; every man being at liberty to do what he pleased with his own child.

In the language of Otaheite there are many words different from those of the islands to the westward of it. Apples are produced here in great abundance; which are not to be found in any of the other islands, except Eimeo. Besides the cluster of islands, extending from Mataia to Mouroa, the people of Otaheite said there was a low uninhabited island, called Mopeeha, to the north-east, distant about two days sail.

It is said to be customary at Mataeeva, for men to present their daughters to strangers who visit the island. The parties, however, must lie near each other for five nights, without presuming to take improper liberties. On the sixth evening, the father feasts his guest, and orders the daughter to receive him that night as her husband. However disagreeable the bed-fellow may be to the stranger, he must not express or signify his dislike, as that would be an unpardonable offence, and punishable with death.

SECTION XVIII.

Proceed in their Voyage—Christmas Island discovered—Fish and Turtle—Solar Eclipse—Distress of two Seamen—Singular Mode of procuring Refreshment—Inscription left in a Bottle—Soil—Trees and Plants—Animals—Further Particulars.

HAVING quitted Bolabola, and taken leave of the Society Islands, on the 8th of December they steered to the northward, with the wind between north-east and east, hardly ever having it in the south point till they crossed the equator. Before they quitted the Society Isles, they were very particular in enquiring of the natives, whether there were any islands situate in a northerly or north-westerly direction from them. It did not appear, however, that they knew of any; nor were any indications of the vicinity of land observed, till they began, about the latitude of 8° south, to see boobies, terns, tropic birds, and a few other sorts In the night between the 22d and 23d, they crossed the equinoctial line; and early on the 24th, discovered land bearing north-east by east. On their making a nearer approach to it, they observed some cocoa-nut trees in two or three places, but the land had, taken collectively, a very steril aspect. On the western side the depth of water was from forty to fourteen fathoms, over a sandy bottom.

Captain Cook, supposing this island well adapted for procuring turtle, resolved to anchor here. They accordingly dropped their anchors in thirty fathoms water; and a boat was dispatched in search of a convenient landing-place. The officer, employed on this business, returned, and reported that he could find no place where a boat could land; but that fish abounded in the shoal-water. Early the next morning, which was Christmas-day, a boat was sent from each ship, to examine more accurately whether it was possible to land. Two other boats were, at the same time, ordered out, to fish at a grappling near the shore. The latter returned about eight, with as many fish as weighed about two hundred pounds.

Encouraged by this success, the captain dispatched them again after breakfast; and went himself in another boat to view the coast, but saw no possibility of landing. The two boats which had been sent out on the same business, returned about twelve; and the master, who was in that belonging to the Resolution, informed Captain Cook that, about four miles to the northward, there being a break in the land, and a channel into the lagoon, there was consequently a proper place for landing. On this representation they weighed, and, after two or three trips, anchored again, before a little island at the entrance of the lagoon.

On the 26th Captain Cook ordered Captain Clerke to send out a boat, with an officer, to the south-east part of the lagoon, in pursuit of turtle; and went himself with Mr. King, each in a boat, to the north-east part. But the wind not permitting them to go to the eastern extremity, he and Mr. King landed more to leeward, on a sandy flat, where they caught one turtle, not seeing any other in the lagoon. They waded through the water to an island, where they found only a few birds. Captain Cook proceeded to the land that bounds the sea towards the north-west, which he observed was extremely barren; but, walking over the sea-coast, he saw five turtles near the shore, one of which he caught. Soon after which the Captains Cooke and Clerke returned to their respective ships. Though so few turtles had been observed by these two gentlemen, they did not abandon their expectations of a supply; for some of the officers of the Discovery had been remarkably successful.

The next morning, the cutter and pinnace were dispatched, commanded by Mr. King, to the south-east part of the island to catch turtle; and the small cutter was sent northwards for the same purpose. Some of Captain Clerke's people, having been on shore all night, had fortunately turned about forty turtles on the sand, which were this day brought on board: the party detached to the northward were also tolerably successful.

On the 28th Captain Cook, accompanied by Mr. Baily, landed on the island between the two channels into the lagoon, to prepare the telescopes

for observing the solar eclipse on the 30th. At noon, Mr. King returned, with one boat, and eight trutles; seven having been left behind to be brought by the other boat. Mr. Williamson was now sent to superintend this business instead of Mr. King, who remained on board to attend the observation of the eclipse. On the following day, the two boats, laden with turtle, were sent back to the ship by Mr. Williamson, who, in a message to Captain Cook, requested that the boats might be ordered round by sea, which would prevent much trouble and inconvenience*.

One of the stragglers being still missing, Captain Clerke dispatched a party in search of him. Captain Cook ordered two boats on the same duty. Captain Clerke's detachment at length returned and restored the long-lost fugitive. This man's distress must probably have been greater than that experienced by the other straggler, as he had been longer absent, and had too much delicacy to make a beverage of turtle's blood.

Having on board some yams and cocoa-nuts, in a state of vegetation, they planted them, by Captain Cook's order, on the island where they had observed the eclipse; some seeds of melons were also sown in another place. The captain left a bottle on the same little isle, containing the following inscription:

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 31 *Decembris*, 1777.
Naves { *Resolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.*
Discovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.

On the 1st of January, 1778, Captain Cook sent out several boats to bring on board the parties employed on shore, with all the turtle they had caught. The navigators procured at this island, for both ships, about three hundred turtles, weighing, on the average, about ninety pounds: they were all of the green sort, and equal in goodness to any in the world. They also caught a great quantity of fish, with hook and line.

As our navigators kept the festival of Christmas here, Captain Cook gave it the name of Christmas Island. The soil is, in some places, light and blackish, consisting of sand, the dung of birds, and rotten vegetables. Broken coral-stones, decayed shells, and other marine productions, constitute some other parts. Not a drop of fresh water could be found on the island, though much digging had been recurred to in search of it. Several ponds of salt-water were met with, though they had no apparent communication with the sea. No traces were discoverable of any human creature having been on this island before our Europeans.

Several sorts of birds were observed, among which were a new species of tern, boobies, men-of-warbirds, curlews, petrels, &c. Several rats were observed, of the smaller kind; with plenty of land-crabs, and small lizards. Christmas Island is supposed to be about sixteen leagues in circuit; and, like most of the islands in this ocean, is surrounded by a reef of coral rock, extending but a little way from the shore.

SECTION XIX.

Three Islands discovered—The Inhabitants of Attooi approach the Ships—Description of them—Some of them venture on board—Astonishment on that Occasion—Precautions against importing a certain Disease—One of the Natives killed—The Ships cast Anchor—The Captain's Reception on landing—His Excursion into the Country—Description of a Morai—The Custom of offering Human Victims prevalent—Feathered Cloaks and Caps—The Resolution driven from Attooi Road. The Isle of Onecheow visited—Persons detained on Shore—Animals, &c. left at Onecheow—Customs of the Natives.

WEIGHING anchor early in the morning of the 2d of January, 1778, they resumed their northerly course. They daily observed tropic birds, boobies, men-of-war birds, &c. and saw several turtles. Though all these are thought indications of the proximity of land, they discovered

* On the 30th Captain Cook, and Messrs. King and Bayley, repaired to the small island above-mentioned, to observe the eclipse. In the afternoon, the party who had been employed in catching turtle at the south-eastern part of

covered none till Sunday the 18th, when an island appeared, bearing north-east by east. Not long after, more land was seen, detached from the former. The next day, at sun-rise, the island first seen bore east, at the distance of several leagues. Soon after, they observed a third island, bearing west-north-west.

They had a fine breeze at east-by-north, and, at noon, the second island for which they were steering, named Atooi, was about two leagues distant. As they advanced, many of the inhabitants put off from the shore in their canoes, and came along-side the ships. They spoke a dialect of the Otaheitean language, but could not be prevailed upon to come on board. Captain Cook fastened some brass medals to a rope, which he bestowed on those who were in one of the canoes; and they, in exchange, returned some mackarel, in a similar mode of conveyance. This was repeated; and some small nails, or pieces of iron, were given them; for which a return was made of some more fish, and a sweet potatoe. One of them exhibited for sale the piece of stuff which surrounded his waist. These people were stoutly made, but did not exceed the ordinary size. Their complexion was brown, but though their was a striking similarity in their colour, there was a considerable variation in their features. Many of them had their hair cropped short, a few had it tied in a bunch at the top of the head; and others permitted it to flow loose. It seemed naturally black, but a brownish colour had been generally communicated to it by staining. Most of them had long beards. Some of them were tatooed on the hands, or near the groin; and the pieces of cloth worn by them round the middle, were curiously coloured with black, white, and red.

They seemed mild and placid, and were furnished with no other arms than small stones, which they brought with them for their own defence; and those they threw into the sea, when they perceived there was no occasion for them. Seeing no anchoring place at this part of the island, they bore away to leeward, and ranged along the south-east side. The canoes left them when they made sail; but others successively came off, bringing with them pigs and potatoes, which they exchanged for whatever was offered them. Several small pigs were purchased by a six-penny nail. They passed several villages, the inhabitants of all which hastened to the shore, and assembled on elevated places to take a view of the ships.

A few trees were observed about the villages, near which could be discerned several plantations of sugar-canes and plantains. They continued to sound, but did not strike the ground with a line of fifty fathoms, till they came a-breast of a low point, near the extremity of the island, where they found from twelve to fourteen fathoms. Having passed this point, they met with twenty fathoms, then sixteen, twelve, and five, over a bottom of sand. They were met by several canoes, containing natives, many of whom were prevailed on to come on board*.

About

of the island, returned on board, except one sailor belonging to Captain Clerke's ship, who had been missing for two days. At first, two men had lost their way, but disagreeing with respect to the track, they separated, and one of them happened to rejoin the party, after an absence of twenty-four hours, in which he had experienced great distress. Not being able to find any fresh water, or a cocoa-nut tree, to allay his thirst, he drank the blood of turtle, which he killed for that purpose. His method of refreshing himself when fatigued, was equally singular; he undressed himself, and lay down in the shallow water on the beach for a considerable time.

How these two men could lose their way, was a matter which excited much astonishment: the land, over which their journey lay, did not exceed three miles across, nor was there any thing to impede the way; but considering what strange people the generality of sailors are, while on shore, it is rather matter of surprize that no more of the party should be missing.

* None of the people which our navigators had seen, were so much astonished as these islanders were on entering the ship. Their eyes were incessantly passing from object to object; and the wildness of their looks and gestures indicated their ignorance of every thing they saw: which clearly demonstrated that they had never, till this moment, been visited by Europeans, nor were acquainted with any of their commodities, except iron. This metal, they had probably heard some mention of, or perhaps had seen in some inconsiderable quantity, brought to them at a remote period. They enquired for it by the appellation of *hamaite*, referring perhaps to some instrument, in making which iron could be properly employed; for they applied that name to the blade of a knife. They also call this metal by the name of *toe*, which signifies a hatchet or adze. On being shewn some beads, they asked what they were, and whether they were to be eaten? But, being informed they were to be hung in the ears as ornaments, they rejected them as useless: they manifested the same indifference, with regard to a looking glass that was shewn them. China cups, and earthern ware, were so little known to them, that they asked if they were composed of wood. They were extremely cautious of giving offence. Some of them, before venturing on board, pronounced a long prayer; and others sung, accompanying the voice with various motions

About nine Captain Cook dispatched Lieutenant Williamson, with three armed boats, in search of a landing-place, and fresh water; with orders, that, if he should land to procure the latter, he should not allow more than one man to accompany him out of the boats. While they were putting off from the ship, one of the natives having stolen a cleaver, leaped into his canoe, and hastened towards the shore *.

Captain Cook, after dispatching one of the boats to find the best anchoring ground, cast anchor in twenty-five fathoms water; the village near which the fresh water was said to be, was one mile distant. The ships being thus stationed, the Captain went on shore, about four in the afternoon, with three armed boats and twelve marines; wishing to examine the water, as well as the disposition of the inhabitants, who had assembled in great numbers. The moment he stepped on shore, all the natives fell prostrate upon their faces, and continued in that position, till by motions he prevailed on them to rise. They then presented to him several small pigs, accompanied with certain ceremonies, an oration, and a prayer. The Captain indicated his willingness to accept of their friendship, by giving them, in return, such presents as he had brought on shore. After this preliminary business, he stationed a guard upon the beach, and accompanied some of the natives to the water, which was found to be extremely good, and so capacious as to be entitled to the appellation of a lake. On his return, orders were instantly issued that preparations should be made for filling the water-casks in the morning.

No sooner were they landed than a trade was entered into for hogs and potatoes, which the natives bartered for nails and pieces of iron. Instead of obstructing our Europeans in the performance of their duty, they even assisted them in rolling the casks to and from the pool. Captain Cook, leaving the command at this station to Mr. Williamson, who had landed with him, made an excursion into the country, with Messrs. Anderson and Webber; and followed by a great many of the natives, one of whom the Captain made choice of as a guide. As this man occasionally proclaimed the approach of any of our European gentlemen, every native who met them fell prostrate on the ground, and so continued till they had passed. This, as it afterwards appeared, was the mode of manifesting their respect to their powerful chiefs.

As our navigators ranged along the coast in the ships, they observed at every village, one or more elevated white objects, resembling obelisks; one of which, supposed to be about fifty feet high, was conspicuous from their anchoring station; but they could not be conducted to it, a pool of water obstructing their passage to it: yet as there was another of the same kind about half a mile distant, they agreed to visit

motions of their hands. On their first entering the ship, they attemped to steal whatever appeared before them; or rather to take it openly, supposing such an action would not be prevented or resented. But they were soon convinced of their error, when they observed that a watchful eye attended to their proceedings, and they were less active in appropriating to themselves what did not belong to them.

* The Captain's prohibition that the crews of the boats should not appear on shore, was to prevent, if possible, the importation of a dangerous disease into this island, which he knew some of his people laboured under, and which had been communicated to other islands in this ocean. From the same motive, he excluded all female visitants from the ships. Many of this sex came off in their canoes, but their features, complexion, and stature, were not very different from those of the men; and though their countenances seemed ingenuous and agreeable, few of the graces of delicacy were visible in their faces or proportions. The difference in dress, was the having a piece of cloth about their bodies, reaching from the middle to the knees, instead of the *maro* worn by the males. They were much inclined to favour the people with their company on board; but the Captain was extremely desirous of preventing all connection, which might probably convey an irreparable injury to themselves, and afterwards throughout the nation. He also enjoined, that no person, capable of communicating the infection, should be sent out of the ships, upon any kind of duty.

Waiting for the return of the boats, which had been sent to reconnoitre the coast, they stood off and on with the ships. About noon Mr. Williamson came back, saying, he had observed near one of the villages a large pond, which the natives informed him contained fresh water; and that there was a tolerable anchoring ground before it. He also declared that he had attempted to land in another place, but was prevented by the islanders, who came in crowds to the boats, endeavouring to take away the oars, musquets, and whatever they could seize. They were so outrageous, that it was thought expedient to fire upon them, by which one man was killed. But this circumstance was not known to Captain Cook, till after he had quitted the island. Mr. Williamson informed him, that, when the man fell, he was carried off by his countrymen, who then retired from the boats. It did not appear that the natives intended to kill, or even to injure any of Mr. Williamson's party; they were excited, by curiosity only, to get what they had from them, being prepared to give them what should be thought an equivalent.

that. It was situated in a *morai,* or burying ground, which greatly resembled those they had seen at Otaheite, and other islands in this ocean. It was an oblong space, environed by a stone wall; at one end of which was placed the obelisk, called by the natives *henananoo.* It was about twenty feet in height, and four feet square at the base. Its four sides consisted of small poles, interwoven with twigs and branches, hollow within from the top to the bottom. On each side of it were long pieces of wicker-work, with two poles inclining towards each other, where some plantains were exhibited. The fruit was said to be an offering to their deity. Adjoining to this, on the outside of the *morai,* was a small shed; and before it a grave was observed, where the remains of an old woman had been deposited.

There was a kind of a shed at the further side of the area of the *morai,* about forty feet in length, eleven in height, and ten in breadth; but narrower at each end. Opposite the entrance stood two images, near three feet high, cut out of one piece of wood, with pedestals: they were said to be *Eatooa* no *Veheina,* or representation of goddesses. One of them has a cylindrical cap on the head; and the other a carved helmet. Each of them had a piece of cloth fastened about the loins, and hanging down a considerable way. A piece of carved wood is placed on the side of each, with cloth hung on it *.

Among the various articles offered by the natives for barter this day, the Europeans were particularly struck with a cloak and cap, which even in polished countries might be esteemed elegant. The former, in form and shape, resembled the short Spanish fashion among the Dons, or that worn by some ladies in England, tied loosely before, and extending to the middle of the back. The ground of them is a net-work, with beautiful red and yellow feathers closely fixed upon it, giving it the gloss and smoothness of a rich velvet. The islanders, at first, refused to part with any of these cloaks for any thing that was offered in exchange, demanding nothing less than a musquet for it: they afterwards, however, bartered some of them for very large nails.

The caps are formed like a helmet, with the middle part frequently of a hand's breadth. They sit close upon the head, having notches to admit the ears. They consist of twigs and osiers, covered with a net-work, into which feathers of various colours are wrought, as upon the cloaks. These two articles together seemed to complete the dress, for the islanders sometimes appeared in both.

Expressing their surprize at seeing such a quantity of these beautiful feathers, the navigators speedily procured intelligence concerning one sort; for the natives afterwards brought for sale considerable numbers of skins of a small red species of birds. The red-bird of this island, according to Mr. Anderson, is a species of the *merops,* about as large as a sparrow. Its general colour is a beautiful scarlet, but the tail and wings, are black: it had a longish arched bill, which, with the feet, was of a reddish hue †.

In

* The Europeans, seeing so many instances of resemblance between the *morai* they were now visiting, and those of several other islands, naturally supposed the similarity existed in their solemn rites, and particularly in their horrid oblation of human victims. Their suspicions were instantly confirmed; for, observing two square places, one somewhat larger than the other, they asked what they were?—The answer was, that in one of them had been interred the remains of a man who had been sacrificed; and in the other, a hog, which had been offered up to the deity.

These, and many other instances, confirmed Captain Cook in his opinion, that this inhuman practice was very general here. After the Captain, with Messrs. Anderson and Webber, had examined whatever demanded notice about the *morai,* they found a multitude of people assembled near the beach, and a flourishing trade was carrying on there for fowls, pigs, and vegetables, with the most perfect order and decorum. At noon Captain Cook went to dine on board, and then sent Mr. King to command the party on shore. In the afternoon he landed again, intending to take another excursion into the country, but before he could engage in it, the day was too far advanced. Towards sun-set he returned on board, after having procured, in the course of the day, nine tons of water, about seventy pigs; some fowls, plantains, potatoes, and taro roots.

† On the 22d it rained continually during the greatest part of the morning. The wind was at south-east, and the surf broke so high upon the shore that the boats were prevented from landing: but the natives were not deterred from venturing out in their canoes with hogs and vegetables, to purchase commodities from the ships' companies. One of them, who offered some fish-hooks for sale, was observed to have a small parcel tied to the string of one of them, which he separated and retained for himself, when he disposed of the hook. With some reluctance he was prevailed on to open the parcel, which contained a small thin piece

In the afternoon, they had some intervals of fair weather; the wind then changed to the east; but, towards evening, veered back again to the south south-east. At seven the next morning, a north-easterly breeze springing up, Captain Cook ordered the anchors of his ship to be taken up, intending to remove her further out. As soon as the last anchor was up, the wind veering to the east, he was driven considerably to leeward. He endeavoured to regain the road, but could not accomplish that design; he therefore dispatched Messrs. King and Williamson ashore, with three boats, in search of water and refreshments; sending, at the same time, an order to Captain Clerke to put to sea after him, if he found the Resolution was unable to recover the road *.

The boats returned about seven in the evening, with a few hogs, some roots, and two tons of water. A northerly breeze springing up on the 24th at day-break, Captain Cook expected it would bring the Discovery to sea, and steered for Oneeheow, a neighbouring island, with a view of anchoring there. He continued to steer for it till after eleven, when he was within six miles of it: but, not seeing the Discovery, he thought it would be imprudent to separate too far; he therefore relinquished the design of visiting Oneeheow for the present, and stood back to Atooi, intending again to cast anchor in the road, to complete their supply of water. At two the northerly wind was succeeded by calms and variable airs: early in the morning of the 25th, they tacked, and stood in for Atooi road; and very soon after, they were joined by the Discovery. They were wholly incapable of regaining the road; and, after many unsuccessful attempts, Captain Cook declined all thoughts of returning to Atooi, and resumed his intention of visiting Oneeheow †.

Mr. Gore, having been sent in search of a commodious landing-place, and fresh water, returned in the evening, and reported to Captain Cook that he had been conducted to a well about half a mile up the country, but that it could not furnish a sufficient quantity for their purpose, and the road to it was extremely bad. The next day Mr. Gore was sent ashore again, with a guard, to trade with the inhabitants for refreshments. The Captain's intention was to have followed soon after, but the surf so rapidly increased, he apprehended he should not have been able to make his way back again. This circumstance really happened to those who had landed with Mr. Gore, the communication be-

piece of flesh, which appeared to have been dried, but was then wet with salt water. Supposing it might probably be human flesh, that question was put to the producer, who readily answered it was part of a man. Another of the islanders, who stood near him, was then asked, if it was a custom among them to eat such of their enemies as they had slain in battle; and he immediately replied in the affirmative.

* As the commodore approached the west end of the island, he perceived that the coast rounded gradually to the north-east, without forming a cove or creek to shelter a vessel from the violence of the swell, which broke against the shore in an amazing surf: all hopes of meeting with a harbour were consequently vanished. Many of the natives, in their canoes, followed our navigators as they stood out to sea, bartering their various articles. Willing to acquire additional proof, after what they had seen and heard the preceding day, whether these people were really cannibals, further enquiries on the subject were now made. A small instrument of wood, beset with shark's teeth, had been purchased, which was suspected to have been a saw or knife, used by the savages of New Zealand, to dissect the bodies of their enemies. One of the natives, being questioned on this point, admitted that it was used for cutting out the fleshy part of the belly; but, being asked whether his countryman ate the part thus cut out, he strongly denied it; yet, the question being repeated, he manifested some degree of apprehension, and swam off to his canoe. An elderly man, who sat foremost in the canoe, was then asked whether they ate the flesh; and he answered in the affirmative. The question being proposed a second time, he again affirmed the fact, declaring that it was savoury food.

† Some of the natives who visited the ships, informed the Captain that fresh water might be procured at a village, which they pointed at; he therefore ran down, and cast anchor before it, about three quarters of a mile from the shore, the depth of the water being twenty-six fathoms. The Discovery anchored at a greater distance from the shore. Before they anchored, several canoes brought them off potatoes, yams, and small pigs. The persons in them resembled the inhabitants of Atooi, and, like them, had some knowledge of the use of iron, readily parting with their commodities for pieces of that metal. More canoes reached the ships after they had come to anchor, bringing people that had apparently no other object than that of making the Europeans a formal visit. Many of them came on board, crouched down upon the deck, and continued in that humble posture till they were requested to rise. Several women remained along-side in the canoes, who had much less pretensions to modesty than the females of Atooi. At intervals, they all joined in a song, beating time upon their breasts with their hands: it was more methodical than melodious. The men, who ventured on board, did not continue long there; but, on their departure, they requested permission to lay down locks of their hair on the decks.

tween them and the ships being quickly stopped. They made a signal in the evening, for the boats, which were accordingly sent; soon after which they returned, with some good salt and a few yams. A quantity of both these articles had been procured in the course of the day, but the surf was so exceedingly high, that almost the whole of them were lost in attempting to bring them off to the boats *.

At night, appearances seemed to indicate an approaching storm; when Captain Cook, apprehending he was too near the shore, caused the anchors to be taken up: and the ships, being carried into forty-two fathoms water, came to again in that more secure situation. This weather continued for the whole succeeding day, the sea running so high that all communication with their party on shore was totally intercepted, and the islanders themselves would not venture to approach the ships. Towards the evening, the Captain sent the master in a boat to the south-east point of the island, to try if he could land in that quarter: a favourable answer was received, but it was then too late to send for their party till the following morning. When day-light appeared, a boat was dispatched to the south-east point, with instructions to Lieutenant Gore, that if he could not embark his people from the spot where they then were, he should march them up to the point. The boat being unable to get to the beach, one of the crew swam to the shore to communicate these instructions.

After the boat had returned, Captain Cook went himself, with the launch and pinnance, up to the point, to bring off the party from the land. He took with him three goats, a boar, and a sow; and a reasonable quantity of the seeds of onions, melons, and pumpkins. He landed, without difficulty, under the west side of the point, where he found his party in company with several of the natives. To one of these, who seemed to affect a kind of superiority over the rest, he gave the animals and seeds; all of which he intended to have left at Atooi. had he not been so unexpectedly driven from that island †.

The party which had been so long detained on shore, had found, in those parts of the island which they had traversed, several salt ponds; some of them had plenty of water remaining in them, though others were almost empty. They saw no appearance of a stream, though they perceived some wells; the fresh water of which was tolerable, but seemed not to be abundant. The houses were very thinly scattered, and it was conjectured, from variety of circumstances, that not more than five hundred persons inhabited the island. They appeared decent and cleanly in their mode of living; but the men and women were never seen eating together. The nuts of the *dooe dooe* are burned by these islanders as candles are among the Europeans; and they dress their hogs by baking them in the oven.

They have several mysterious ceremonies among them; one of which was performed by a woman, who threw a pig into the surf, and drowned it; after which she tied up a bundle of wood, which she disposed of in the like manner. The same female gave a man a hearty drubbing with a stick, over his shoulders, after he had formally seated himself to receive her friendly discipline. It was a common practice among them to pull out one of their teeth; but when they were asked why such a custom was introduced, no other answer was given than *teeha;* which was also a reason assigned by them for giving a lock of their hair. These islanders have a great veneration for owls.

* Regardless of the violence of the surf, the natives were not to be deterred from coming in canoes to the ships: They brought with them some refreshments to exchange for nails and pieces of iron hoops; together with some ribbons and buttons. Human figures were represented on the breasts of some of the men; and on one of them a lizard had been punctured. The Europeans were informed by these visitants, that there was no chief of this island; but that it was subject to one of the chiefs of Atooi, named Teneoooneoo. Among other articles, a small drum was exhibited to our navigators, similar to those which they had seen at Otaheite.

† Whilst some of the seamen were employed in filling the water-casks, from a stream produced by the late rains, Captain Cook went a little way into the country, accompanied by the islander above-mentioned, and followed by two others, who carried the two pigs. Arriving upon an eminence, the Captain stopped to take a view, when he observed a woman, on the opposite side of the valley in which he had landed, calling out loudly to her countryman who attended him. In consequence of which this supposed chief began to mutter something, as if he was praying; the two pig-carriers walking round the Captain the whole time, making about a dozen circuits before his oraison was ended. After this strange ceremony had taken place, they proceeded on their walk, and met people coming from all quarters, who, upon being called to by the Captain's attendants, fell prostrate on their faces, and continued in that position till he was out of sight.

The

The water-casks having been filled, and roots and other provisions purchased from the natives, Captain Cook returned on board, intending to visit the island again the next day; but, about seven in the evening, the anchor of the Resolution started, and she drove off the bank. By this accident they found themselves, at day-break the next morning, nine miles to the leeward of their last station. He therefore made the signal for the Discovery to weigh anchor and join him. This junction was effected about noon, and both ships directed their course to the northward, in prosecution of their voyage.

The joint observations made by Captain Cook, and Mr. Anderson, furnish materials for the following section.

SECTION XX.

Situations of the Islands in the Pacific Ocean—The whole Group of them named the Sandwich Islands—Description of Atooi—its Produce—Persons and Dispositions of the Natives—Manners and Customs—Diversions—Manufactures—Tools—Agriculture—Their Chiefs—Weapons—Affinity between their Manners and those of the Society and Friendly Islands—Their Language.

THE islands in the Pacific Ocean, discovered in the course of the late voyages, have generally been found situate in groups; the single intermediate isles bearing but a small proportion to the rest. Of what number this new-discovered archipelago is composed, must be decided by future mariners. Our navigators observed five of them, whose names are Woahoo, Atooi, Oneeheow, Oreehoua, and Tahoora. The last is a small elevated island, four or five leagues from Oneeheow, abounding with birds, which are its only inhabitants. Some intelligence was also obtained respecting the existence of an uninhabited island in the neighbourhood, named Tammata-pappa; and that there are other islands both to the eastward and westward. This group was distinguished by the name of the Sandwich Islands, in honour of the earl of Sandwich.

Woahoo, the most easterly of these islands, seen by our navigators, consists of high land, and is inhabited. Oneeheow lies seven leagues to the westward of their anchoring place at Atooi, and is about fifteen leagues in circumference. Yams are its chief vegetable production. Salt is here produced by ponds, with which fish and pork are cured. This island consists principally of low land, except the part opposite to Atooi, which rises from the sea to a considerable height. Of Orechoua no more is known than that it is an elevated island, of small extent, lying very near the north side of Oneeheow.

Atooi, which is the largest of those seen by our navigators, and was a principal scene of their operations, will be more particularly entitled to a description. It is about ten leagues in length from east to west, but is considerably broader at the east than at the west point. The anchoring place, which their vessels occupied, is on the south-west side of the island. This road, or anchoring place, is somewhat exposed to the trade wind; notwithstanding which it is far from being a bad station, being greatly superior to those at Madeira, Teneriffe, the Azores, &c. The landing too is less difficult than at most of those places; and, except in very bad weather, is always practicable. The water in the neighbourhood is excellent, and may be conveniently obtained.

Though the land presents not to the view the delightful borders of Otaheite, or the luxuriant plains of Tongataboo, covered with trees, which afford a shelter from the scorching rays of the sun, a beautiful prospect to the eye, and food for the inhabitants; yet it is, in many respects, superior to those favourite islands, as being more capable of improvement. The ground, from the wooded part to the sea, is covered with excellent grass, about two feet in height, and might be converted into abundant crops of fine hay; but on this extensive spot not even a shrub grows naturally.

In the valley leading to the *morai*, the soil is of a dark brown, and loose; but on the higher ground it is more stiff and clayey. Let its quality, however, be estimated from its productions,

rather than from its appearance: the moist ground produced larger *taro* than the navigators had ever before seen; and the more elevated ground furnished sweet potatoes that seldom weighed less than two or three pounds, and very frequently exceeded twelve or fourteen pounds.

During the short time the navigators remained here, besides the *lapis lydius*, they found a species of cream-coloured whetstone, sometimes variegated with whiter or blacker veins like marble. The natives also exhibited some species of coarse white pumice stone. They also procured a brown sort of *hæmatites*, which, from its being strongly attracted by the magnet, discovered what metal it contained.

Besides the vegetables which they had purchased for sustenance, they saw five or six varieties of plantains. The island also produces bread-fruit, but not in great abundance, as they only saw one tree of that species. There are also a few cocoa-palms; some yams; the etooa-tree, and odoriferous *gardenia*, or *cape-jasmine*. Several trees of the *dooe dooe* kind were seen, which bear the oily nuts: these are stuck upon a kind of skewer, and made use of as candles.

The scarlet birds, which were brought for sale, our adventurers never saw alive; but they saw a dead one, about the size of a canary-bird, of a deep crimson colour: they also saw a large owl, two brown hawks, and a wild duck. They heard, among the natives, of some other birds; among which were the otoo, or blueish heron, and the *torata*, a sort of wimbrel.

Fish, and other productions of the sea, did not appear to be various: they only saw the small mackarel; a few common mullets; a small brownish rock-fish, decorated with blue spots; a turtle; and three or four sorts of fish salted. The habitations of a few shell-fish were converted into ornaments, but they had neither beauty or novelty to recommend them.

The tame domestic animals were hogs, dogs, and fowls, all of which were similar to those they met in the islands of the South Pacific. There were also small lizards and some rats.

The inhabitants of Atooi are of the middle size, and generally robust. They are not distinguished, as a nation, by any general cast of countenance. Their complexion is nearly of a nut-brown; but some individuals are of a darker hue. It has been observed that the women are not much more delicate than the men in their formation: and it may be added, with some few exceptions, they have little claim to those feminine attractions, by which the sex is distinguished in most other parts of the world. There are few natural deformities in either sex, among the natives: their skin is neither soft, nor shining; but their eyes and teeth are generally pretty good. Their hair, which is usually black and straight, is frequently stained, as at the Friendly and other islands. The few instances of corpulence which were observed was principally among the women.

They are expert swimmers; and often, merely for amusement, quit their own canoes, dive under them, and swim to others at a great distance. Women, with infants at their back, were often seen, when the surf prevented their landing in the canoes, to leap overboard, and swim to the shore without fear or danger.

They are cheerful and ingenuous, possessing a due medium between levity and sedateness: they cultivate a social intercourse with each other; and, were it not for their propensity to thieving, which seems to be innate among them, they were extremely friendly to our Europeans. It was pleasing to observe how affectionate the women were in the management of their children; and with what alacrity the men contributed their assistance in such a tender office. The number of inhabitants, upon this island, is estimated at thirty thousand.

Contrary to the usual practice of most of the islands of the Pacific Ocean, the ears of the Sandwich Islanders are not perforated, nor have they any ornaments in them. Both men and women, however, adorn themselves with necklaces composed of bunches of small black cord. They have also necklaces consisting of many strings of very small shells, or of the dried flowers of the Indian mallow. Sometimes the resemblance of a small human figure, made of bone, is hung round their necks. The women also wear bracelets of a single shell, with pieces of polished ivory interspersed. The heads of the men are sometimes ornamented with plumes of feathers from the tropic bird; or those of cocks, &c. For the same purpose they sew the skin of a white dog's tail over a stick, with its tuft at the end *.

It

* The houses are scattered about without the least order or regularity: some of them are large and commodious; perhaps

It appeared clearly that sweet potatoes, *taro*, and plantains, constitute the principal part of their vegetable diet, and that yams and bread-fruit are considered as rareties. They have plenty of animal food; hogs running in great numbers, without restraint, about the houses. If they eat dogs, which is not improbable, their stock seemed very considerable. They bake their vegetable articles of food with heated stones; and, from the quantity they saw dressed at one time, they supposed all the inhabitants of a village joined in the use of a common oven. The only artificial dish they saw, was a *taro* pudding, which was extremely sour, though swallowed with avidity by the natives.

The amusements of these people are various. They had not, indeed, among them, either flutes or reeds; and the only two musical instruments, seen by our Europeans, were very rudely formed. The melody of one of them was similar to that of a child's rattle. The other instrument was a hollow vessel made of wood, not unlike a platter, with two sticks, on one of which a man was performing; a tune, however, was produced that was not disagreeable. This music was accompanied with the vocal performance of some women, whose song had a pleasing effect.

In their different manufactures, these people display much neatness and ingenuity. Their cloth is made from the *morus papyrifera*, as at Tongataboo and Otaheite. Its texture, however, is inferior to that of the cloth of either of those places; but in colouring or staining it, the inhabitants of Atooi shew a great superiority of taste. They fabricate numbers of white strong mats, with red stripes and figures interwoven on one side. Their wooden dishes and bowls, out of which they drink their *ava*, are of the *etooa* tree, extremely neat and well polished. They also make small square fans, of mat or wicker-work, with handles, which are curiously wrought with small cords of hair, and cocoa-nut fibres intermixed. Their fishing hooks are ingeniously made: some consist of bone, others of pearl-shell, and others of wood, pointed with bone. The various sorts have a barb, either on the inside like those made in England, or on the outside. Their tools resembled those of the southern islanders: their hatchets were exactly of the same pattern. They have small instruments made of a single shark's tooth, some of which are fixed to the jaw-bone of a dog, and others to a thin wooden handle. They serve occasionally as knives, and perhaps are used in carving.

The only iron tools which they possessed before the arrival of our Europeans, were a piece of iron hoop, of the length of about two inches, fitted into a wooden handle, and another edge tool which appeared to have been formed of the point of a broad sword.

The canoes of these people are usually about twenty-four feet in length, with the bottom generally formed of a single piece of wood, hollowed out to about the thickness of an inch, and brought to a point at each end. The sides are composed of three boards, each about an inch thick, neatly lashed to the bottom. The extremities, both at head and stern, are somewhat elevated, and are made sharp. They are rowed by paddles, like those our navigators observed at other islands; and some of them have a light triangular sail, extended to a mast and boom.

They are not novices in agriculture. The vale-ground is one continued plantation of *taro*, and some other articles, which seem not to have been neglected. The potatoe fields, and plats of sugar-canes, or plantains, are planted with great regularity; but none of them have any fence, unless the ditches may be so construed; they are perhaps rather intended to convey water to the *taro*.

Though Captain Cook did not see any chief of note, many of the islanders declared there were several who resided at Atooi, and to whom they prostrate themselves as a token of homage and respect. Whether they were, at first, unwilling to be seen, or happened to be absent, cannot well be ascertained; but soon after the Resolution had quitted the island, one of these

perhaps fifty feet in length, and twenty or thirty in breadth, while others of them are paltry hovels. Their figure resembles that of a hay-stack. The entrance is either in the end or side, and is an oblong hole, extremely low: a board of planks, fastened together, serves as a door; but, having no hinges, it must be occasionally removed. No light is admitted into the house, except by this opening. The houses are kept very clean, the floors being strewed with dried grass; with several mats, conveniently spread to sit and sleep on. A bench about three feet high is placed at one end, on which domestic utensils are placed. These consist of gourd-shells, serving the natives as bottles to hold water, baskets to contain food, &c. The other domestic utensils are wooden bowls, trenchers, &c.

great

great men thought proper to come forward, and visited Captain Clerke on board the Discovery: he came off in a double canoe, paying no regard to the small ones which happened to be in his way, but ran over them, or against them, without attempting to steer clear of them. It was impossible for the poor wretches to avoid him, as they could not conduct their canoes, it being imperiously required that they should lay down till he had passed.

His attendants assisted him in getting into the ship, and placed him in the gang-way; where they surrounded him, holding each other by the hands; not a person, except Captain Clerke, being permitted to approach him. He was a young man, and accompanied by a young woman, who was probably his wife His name was said to be Tamahano. Captain Clerke having made him some presents, received in return a large bowl, supported by the figures of two men, which manifested some skill both in the design and execution. The Captain could not prevail upon the chief to go below, nor to move from the spot where his attendants had first placed him. After continuing a short time in the ship, he was conducted into his canoe, and returned to the island. Messages were sent to Captain Clerke, the following day, inviting him to return the visit on shore; but the Captain, being anxious to join the Resolution, did not think proper to accept the invitation.

From the general similarity of customs, and particularly from the honours paid to their chiefs, it may reasonably be supposed that the form of government established amongst them, is of the same nature with that which prevails in all the islands they had hitherto visited; and their wars among themselves were probably as frequent. This indeed appears from the number of weapons found in their possession, and from the excellent order in which they are preserved. Of this fact our navigators had proofs from the confession of the natives; and that these wars are carried on between the different districts of their own island, as well as between that and the neighbouring inhabitants of the isles of Oneeheow and Oreehoua. This is apparently a very cogent reason why their population is not proportioned to the extent of their ground that is capable of cultivation*.

The *taboo* prevails as strictly at Atooi as at Tongataboo: but whatever resemblance might be discovered between the general manners of the inhabitants of Atooi, and those of Otaheite, these were less striking than the similarity of language. The languages of both places are indeed almost the same. The people of Atooi, in general, have softened the strong guttural pronunciation of the New-Zealanders, and even that smaller degree of it which distinguishes the Friendly Islanders: they have adopted the harmonious mode of the Otaheitans, in avoiding harsh sounds, and cultivating the whole idiom of their language.

How widely has this nation diffused itself in every quarter of the Pacific Ocean! We find it from New Zealand, in the south, as far as the Sandwich Islands to the northward; and from Easter Island to the New Hebrides: that is, over an extent of three thousand six hundred miles, north and south; or four thousand nine hundred and eighty miles, east and west! How much farther its colonies reach in those directions, is not known, but we are authorized in pronouncing it to be the most extensive nation upon earth. Had the Sandwich Islands been discovered at an early period by the Spaniards, they would doubtless have made use of Atooi, or some other of the islands, as a place of refreshment for their ships between Manilla and Acapulco. What difficulties would Lord Anson have avoided, had he known that a cluster of islands existed, half way between America and Tinian, where all his wants might have been effectually relieved!

SECT.

*They have spears formed of a brownish wood, finely polished; some of which are barbed at one end, and flattened to a point at the other: They have also a weapon which somewhat resembles a dagger, about eighteen inches in length; sharpened at one or both ends, and secured to the hand by a string. Some of these have a handle in the middle, by which they are enabled to strike different ways. They have bows and arrows, which appear to be too slenderly constructed to annoy the enemy in battle. Their dissecting knives deserve to be mentioned among their weapons, as they both strike and cut with them in their conflicts.

Some of their religious institutions strongly indicate an affinity between the manners of these people, and the natives of the Friendly and Society Islands. The inhabitants of Tongataboo inter their dead with great decency, and they also bury their human sacrifices; but our Europeans could not learn whether they offer any other animal, or even vegetable, to their deities. The Otaheitans do not bury their

SECTION XXI.

Scarcity of Oceanic Birds—Birds in the Northern Hemisphere—Beautiful Sea Animals—See the Coast of North America—Description of the Country—Difficulties at Cape Foul Weather—Tempestuous Weather—Observations on Martin d'Aguilar's River—An Inlet discovered—Ships anchor—Visited by great Numbers of the Natives—Their Behaviour.

BEING joined by the Discovery, they stood away to the northward, with a gentle gale from the east. On the 7th of February they were in the latitude of 29° north, and in the longitude of 200° east. They steered north-east and east till the 12th. On the 19th the wind veered to the south-east. On the 25th they reached the latitude of 42° 30′, and the longitude of 219°; when they began to meet with the rock-weed, mentioned in Anson's voyage by the name of the sea-leek, which is generally seen by the Manilla ships. Since they left the Sandwich Islands, they had hardly beheld a bird, or any other oceanic animal.

It was remarkable that they should meet with so few of the feathered race, compared to those they had seen in the same latitudes to the south of the line; occasioned either from the scarcity of them, or from a deficiency of resting-places. On the morning of the 2d, during a calm, part of the sea appeared with a kind of slime, and minute sea animals were observed swimming about. The most conspicuous were of the gelatinous kind, and almost globular; a smaller sort were of a shining white, and seemed more abundant. When they swam about, which they did in various directions, they emitted the brightest colours of the most valuable gems. Sometimes they had a pellucid appearance, and at others displayed the various tints of blue, from a sapphirine to a violet, accompanied with a kind of ruby, and illuminating the glass and water. By candle-light, the principal colour they exhibited was a beautiful pale green, with a kind of burnished gloss; and, in the dark, it faintly emitted a glowing fire *.

After variable airs and calms, a breeze sprung up at south-west in the evening of the 7th. They stood to the north-west under an easy sail: but the next morning, the wind having shifted from north-west, it blew in squalls, with rain. Till near ten their course was north-east. About noon on the 9th, they stood in for land, which was seen at two in the afternoon, bearing east north-east. In the evening the wind veered more to the west, and the weather became worse, which induced them to tack and stand off till four the next morning, when they stood in again. In the afternoon at four they discovered land: here they tacked and sounded, but could not reach the ground with a line of one hundred and sixty fathoms. They stood off, and in again; and at half after six the next morning, they were about three leagues from the land. Seeing nothing like a harbour, and the weather remaining unsettled, they tacked and stretched off south-west, having then fifty-five fathoms water.

The coast appeared straight in almost every part, without any opening, and terminating in a kind of white sandy beach; though some of the people on board imagined that such an appearance was occasioned by the snow. Each extreme of the land shot out into a point: the northern one which had been seen on the 7th, the Captain named *Cape Perpetua;* and the southern extreme *Cape Gregory*. This point is rendered remark-

their dead, but suffer them to become putrefied by time, after which they inter the bones. They also offer up to their gods other animals and vegetables. The people of Atooi bury their common dead, and their human sacrifices, as at Tongataboo; but, like those of Otaheite, they offer animals and vegetables to their gods.

* Two large birds settled this day on the water, near the ship. One was the *procellaria maxima*, and the other, which was about half its size, seemed to be of the albatross kind: it resembled a sea-gull, but was larger. About noon on the 6th they saw two seals, and several whales; and the next morning the coast of New Albion § was descried, extending from north-east to south-east, at the distance of about ten leagues. They had now seventy-three fathoms water, over a muddy bottom, and found ninety fathoms about a league farther off. The land appeared to be diversified with hills and vallies, and principally covered with wood. A lofty hill with a flat summit, was seen eastward of them at noon. The land formed a point at the northern extreme, which was named Cape Foul-Weather by Captain Cook, from the extreme bad weather they afterwards experienced.

§ This name was given to it by Sir Francis Drake.

able, by the land rising immediately from the sea to a tolerable height; that on each side being very low.

Cape Perpetua now bore north-east by north, and the farthest land to the south of Cape Gregory, bore south by east, distant about twelve leagues. Its latitude will therefore be 43° 10′, and its longitude 235° 55′ east. The wind now blew in squalls, attended with snow-showers. At midnight it increased to a very hard gale, with heavy squalls, and sleet. They now found themselves obliged to stretch to the southward, to get clear off the coast: this was done under more sail than the ships could safely bear; but the intention was to avoid the more imminent danger of being forced on shore. This gale abated on the morning of the 13th, and they then stood in again, for the land. Storms, breezes, and calms alternately succeeded each other till the morning of the 21st, when a breeze sprung up at south-west. This being accompanied with fair weather, they steered northward, hoping to fall in with the land. In the evening the wind shifted to the westward, and about eight the next morning they saw the land at the distance of nine leagues. They stood to the north, with a fine breeze till seven in the evening, when they tacked, to wait for day-light. They were now in forty-eight fathoms water, and four leagues from the land. A small round hill, which they supposed to be an island, bore north three-quarters east, at the distance of about seven leagues.

Thinking they could perceive a small opening, between this supposed island, and the northern extremity of the land, they entertaind hopes of finding a harbour; but these hopes gradually vanished as they drew nearer, and at length they were convinced that the opening was closed by low land. The Captain, therefore, expressive of his disappointment, named the point of land to the north of it, *Cape Flattery*. Its latitude is 48° 15′ north, and its longitude 235° 3′ east.

In this latitude geographers have placed the pretended Strait of Juan de Fuca. But nothing of that kind presented itself to the view of our navigators, nor is it probable that any such thing ever existed. They were now perpetually encountering with adverse weather: in an evening, the wind would sometimes become moderate, and veer southward; but this was a certain prelude to a storm at south south-east, accompanied with rain and sleet. In six hours it was usually succeeded by a gale from the north-west, which produced fair weather. At nine in the morning on the 19th, they again saw the land, the nearest part about six leagues distant *.

Not far from hence a large bay is formed, which the Captain named *Hope Bay;* hoping, as he observed, to find it a good harbour, as it eventually proved to be. As they approached the coast, they imagined they saw two inlets; one in the north-west, and the other in the north-east corner of the bay. They bore up for the latter, passing some breakers about a league from the shore. Half a league within them they had twenty fathoms water; but, when they had passed them, the depth increased to fifty fathoms; and farther in, the ground was unfathomable with the greatest length of line.

Though appearances were in their favour, they were not yet absolutely certain that there were any inlets; but, being in a deep bay, the Captain thought proper to anchor, expecting to obtain some water, which the ships now began to be in need of. As they advanced, however, the existence of the inlet no longer remained doubtful. About five they reached the west point of it, but were becalmed for some time: the Captain, however, ordered all the boats to be hoisted out, in order to tow the ships in. Presently a fresh breeze sprung up at north-west, when they stretched up into an arm of the inlet, which ran into the north-east. Here they were again becalmed, and anchored in five fathoms water, so near the land as to be able to reach it with a hawser. The Discovery anchored in seventy fathoms water, before she got within the arm.

When they approached the inlet, they saw the coast was inhabited; and three canoes came off to the ship, where they were first becalmed, containing in the whole eighteen men. Advancing near them, a person stood up in one of them, and spoke for a considerable time, inviting them,

* The face of the country was now extremely different from that of those parts which they had before surveyed. Numbers of lofty mountains presented themselves to their view, whose summits were covered with snow. The valleys between them, and the borders of the coast, were covered with large strait trees, exhibiting the appearance of a vast forest. At the south-east extreme of the land, a low point is formed, off which several breakers are observed, occasioned by sunken rocks: It was therefore called Point Breakers.

as

as they supposed, to go ashore; at the same time strewing handfuls of feathers towards them. Some of them also scattered a quantity of red powder in a similar manner *.

After making a tumultuous noise, they lay at a small distance from the ship, conversing together with the greatest ease and composure. Several of them rose, occasionally, and spoke aloud; and one, in particular, sung a most agreeable air, accompanied with great melody and softness.

A breeze springing up, brought our adventurers closer to the shore, when the canoes began to visit them in great numbers: at one time, they had not less than thirty-two of them about the ship, containing, on an average, seven persons each, and of both sexes. Several of these also stood up, harangued like the first visitors, and employed very significant gestures. One of the canoes peculiarly attracted the observation of our Europeans, by a singular head, which had a bird's eye, and an enormous beak painted on it. The person in it, who was probably a chief, was equally remarkable; having an immense quantity of feathers hanging from his head, and being smeared with different colours in a very extraordinary manner. In his hand he held a bird carved of wood, of the magnitude of a pigeon, with which he often rattled, and delivered a vociferous harangue, accompanied with much action.

But, peaceable and civil as these visitors were, they could not be prevailed on to come on board: they were extremely ready and willing to part with any thing they had, and were satisfied with what the Europeans offered them in exchange; but were more anxious for iron than any other article of commerce; appearing to know how to estimate that valuable metal.

SECTION XXII.

Arrival at the Sound—Moor in a convenient Harbour—Visited by great Numbers of the inoffensive Natives—Articles brought to barter—Thefts committed—Observatories erected—Alarmed by the Arming of the Natives—Different Tribes not permitted to traffic by the Natives—Tempestuous Weather—Survey of the Sound—Friendly Behaviour of some of the Natives—Inhospitable Treatment from a Chief—A second Visit to one of the Villages—Departure of the Ships.

HAVING found an excellent shelter for their ships, in an inlet whose coasts were inhabited by an inoffensive race of people, our navigators lost no time, after coming to anchor, in searching for a commodious harbour. Upon this service Captain Cook sent three armed boats, under the command of Mr. King; and went himself, in a small boat, on the same business. On the north-west of the arm, and at a small distance from the ships, the Captain found a convenient cove perfectly adapted to the purpose; and Mr. King found a still better harbour on the north-west side of the land. It was, however, thought prudent to continue where they were till the ensuing morning.

Plenty of canoes, filled with the natives, surrounded the ships the whole day; and a reciprocal and honourable commerce was harmoniously carried on between the natives and our Europeans. The articles of the former consisted of the skins of various animals; as sea-otters, bears, wolves, foxes, deer, martins, racoons, and polecats. Garments were also produced by them made of skins; and others fabricated from the bark of a tree, or a plant resembling hemp. They had also bows, arrows, and spears; fish-hooks; wooden vizors; woollen stuff; carved work, beads, and red ochre. They also exhibited several little ornaments of thin brass and iron, resembling a horse-shoe, which they wear

* The person who officiated as the orator, was clothed with the skin of some animal, and held a kind of rattle in each hand. Grown weary of repeating his useless solicitations, he at length became quiet, and the others had something to say to our adventurers; but their speeches were shorter and less vehement than that of the other. Small white feathers were strewed over the hair of two or three of these people; and large ones were stuck in different parts of the head.

pendant

pendant at their noses; and they had pieces of iron fixed to handles, not much unlike European chissels*.

The next day was employed in hauling the ships into the cove that had been approved, where they were moored. They fonnd, on heaving up the anchor, notwithstanding the great depth of water, that rocks were at the bottom. The cable was greatly injured, as well as the hausers that were carried out to warp the ship into the cover; consequently the whole bottom was strewed with rocks†.

The ships being safely moored, the adventurers proceeded to other necessary business. The Observatories were placed upon a rock on one side of the cove, not far from the Resolution; and a party of men were ordered to cut wood, and clear a place for watering. They were daily visited by a great numbers of the natives, who had a singular method of introducing themselves on their first appearance: they paddled rapidly round both the ships; a chief standing up in the mean time, with a spear in his hand, and speaking most vociferously. Sometimes the face of this orator was concealed under a mask, representing a human countenance, or that of some other animal; and, instead of a spear, he held a rattle in his hand. This ceremonious circuit round the ship having been performed, they usually came along-side, and then began to traffic. Sometimes, indeed, they entertained the Europeans with a preliminary song, in which the whole company joined, and produced a very agreeable harmony.

* But the most extraordinary articles of their trade were human skulls and hands, with some of the flesh remaining; on which they were not ashamed to acknowledge they had been feeding; some of them indeed bore evident marks of having been broiling on the fire. Hence it is but too apparent, that the horrid practice of devouring their enemies is common here, as well as at New Zealand, and other South-Sea Islands. For the articles they brought to barter, they received, chissels, knives, pieces of iron and tin, nails, looking-glasses, buttons, &c. Beads claimed very little of their attention, and cloth of every kind was rejected by them.

† On the 31st of March, intelligence of the arrival of our navigators brought great numbers of the natives about the ships. At one time upwards of a hundred canoes were distinctly counted, which at the very moderate computation of five persons to each canoe, must have amounted to five hundred. If they had, at first, apprehended hostile measures from our navigators, they had now abandoned such ideas: for they ventured on board the ships, and mixed with the people with the greatest familiarity and freedom.

While the party were employed on shore in cutting wood and filling water, they were surprised at seeing the natives, in all quarters, arming themselves in the best manner they were able; and that those who were destitute of proper weapons, were collecting sticks and stones. It was now thought expedient for the Europeans to arm also; but, being resolved to act upon the defensive, the captain ordered all the workmen to repair to the rock, on which the observatories had been placed, leaving the supposed enemy in possession of the ground where they had assembled; which was at the distance of about a hundred yards from the Resolution's stern.

Their danger, however, was merely imaginary; these hostile preparations being directed against a body of their own countrymen, who were advancing to attack them. Their friends of the Sound, perceiving their exertions were misapprehended by the Europeans, explained, to their satisfaction, the real state of the case.

The adverse party, in about a dozen large canoes, drew up in line of battle, off the south point of the cove, when a negociation for the restoration of peace was proposed. In conducting the treaty, several embassies passed between the two parties. and some debates ensued. At length the disputed points appeared to be adjusted; but the strangers were not permitted to approach the ships, nor to have any intercourse with our navigators: they were probably the occasion of the quarrel, by insisting on having a right of sharing in the advantages of trade with

It soon appeared, however, that they were as fond of pilfering as any that had been met with during the voyage. They were indeed more expert and mischievous than any of the thieves which the navigators had heen troubled with; for, being possessed of sharp instruments, at the very instant that a person turned his back, they could cut a hook from a tackle, or a piece of iron from a rope.

Besides other articles, several hooks were lost in this manner, one of which weighed upwards of twenty pounds. They stripped the boats of every morsel of iron that was worth taking away, though some of the men were always left in them to guard them. They were extremely artful too, upon these occasions: one fellow would contrive to amuse the people at one end of the boat, while another was forcing off the iron-work at the other. When an article was stolen and missed, the thief was easily detected, as the natives delight in impeaching each other: but the guilty person will not part with his booty without great reluctance; compulsive measures are therefore often obliged to be taken to get the purloined article restored.

them

them; and our navigators resolving to engross them entirely to themselves.

From their putting into the Sound, till the 7th of April, the weather had been extremely fine, but early on the 8th, the wind blew fresh at south-east, accompanied with hazy weather and rain; and in the evening it blew remarkably hard. It came, in heavy squalls, right into the cove; and though the ships were well moored their situation was perilous. But if these tempestuous blasts rapidly succeeded each other, they were of short duration, and, in the intervals, they had a perfect calm. Another misfortune now befel them. On board the Resolution, the mizen was the only mast that remained rigged, with its top-mast up. The former was too defective to support the latter during these squalls, and gave way at the head, under the rigging. The gale abated about eight o'clock; but the rain continued, with little intermission, for several days; during which time a tent was erected over the fore-mast, to enable the carpenters to proceed conveniently in their labours

The bad weather did not discourage the natives from paying their daily visits to our Europeans, which were highly acceptable to them, as they were then situated. They frequently brought them a supply of fish, when they could not catch any with a hook and line, and they had not a convenient place to draw a net. In the evening of the 11th they received a visit from a tribe of natives whom they had not seen before, and who appeared in better plight than those they had been accustomed to see. The captain conducted them into the cabin, but not an article seemed to attract their attention; all their novelties were observed with indifference, except by a very few, who possessed a small portion of curiosity.

During the performance of several operations, respecting the repairing and rigging the two ships, the natives looked on with countenances expressive of wonder and surprize, which, from their general inattention, was little expected. A party of strangers, in seven or eight canoes, came into the cove on the 18th, and almost instantly retired. As their old friends were then more numerous about them than their new visitors, it seemed probable that they would not suffer them to trade, meaning to engross the traffic entirely to themselves*.

On the 20th, in the morning, Captain Cook set out to survey the Sound; and, going first to the west point, he perceived a large village, and a snug harbour before it, with from nine to four fathoms water. The numerous inhabitants of this village, to many of whom the captain was no stranger, received him with the utmost courtesy, every one soliciting him to enter his apartment, several families having habitations under the same roof. He politely accepted their invitations, and the hospitable friends gave him the most satisfactory proofs of their civility and respect.

In these habitations, women were employed in making dresses of the bark, and executed their business like the inhabitants of New Zealand. Others were in the act of opening sardines, large quantities of which our navigators saw brought on shore, which are cured by smoke-drying. They are at first hung upon small rods about a foot over the fire; and afterwards gradually raised higher, to make room for others. When dried, they are packed in bales, and matted to preserve them till they are wanted; and they are far from being unpleasant food. Cod, and other large fish, are frequently cured in the same manner.

Leaving this village, the captain proceeded up the west side of the Sound, when he saw, in the space of three miles, several small islands, so situated as to form some convenient harbours. About two leagues within the Sound, on the same side, an arm runs north-north-west, and another in the same direction about two miles further. A little above the second arm, he saw the ruins of a village; behind which is a small plain, covered with very large pines. This was somewhat singular, as most of the elevated ground on this side of the Sound was rather naked. Passing from hence to the east side of the Sound, the captain found, what he had before supposed, that it was an island under which the

* Such of the natives as came daily to see them, were found the most beneficial to them; for, after disposing of their trifles, they amused themselves in fishing, and the Europeans always partook of their good fortune.

Metal was principally demanded by their visitors, and brass had now supplanted iron; being so eagerly sought after, that, before they left the Sound, a bit was hardly to be found in either of the ships, except what constituted a part of their necessary instruments. Suits of clothes were deprived of their buttons, and bureaus of their shining furniture; kettles, candlesticks, and canisters partook of the general wreck.

ships lay; and that several smaller ones lay scattered on the west side of it. On the main land, opposite the north end of their island, he observed a village; and landed there; but he was not received with that civility by the inhabitants, which he had experienced from those of the other village he had visited. An old surly chief gave him a very cool reception, and would not suffer him to enter any of their houses; but suspiciously followed him wherever he went, significantly intimating that he was impatient for him to be gone. Captain Cook, in vain, endeavoured to sooth him by presents; for he was inexorable, and though he condescended to accept of his favours, he persevered in the same kind of behaviour. But, if he was thus inhospitably treated by the chief, the young women instantly apparelled themselves in their best, assembled in a body, gave the Europeans a hearty welcome to the village, and entertained them with an agreeable song. Evening approaching, they proceeded to the ships round the north end of the island*.

On the 21st a number of strangers, in about a dozen canoes, visited them about eight in the morning. They came from the southward, and drew up in a body, at the distance of two hundred yards from the ships, where they continued about half an hour. It was conjectured that they were afraid to approach; but that was not the case, for they were only preparing for an introductory ceremony. At length they advanced towards the ships, standing erect in their canoes, and began to sing. Many of their songs were slow and solemn, in which they were accompanied by the whole party; others were performed in quicker time, when the motions of their hands, and the beating of their paddles assisted in unison: expressive gestures, at the same time, adding a zest to their concert. Sometimes they continued silent, for a few seconds, after the conclusion of each air, and then began again, frequently pronouncing the word *hooee*, as a kind of chorus. When our navigators had been highly entertained with their music for about half an hour, they came nearer the ships and bartered with them; it then appeared that they were some of their old friends.

When these visitors departed, the Captains Cook and Clerke went with two boats to the village where Captain Cook had been two days before, and near which he had seen a quantity of excellent grass. A supply of this was necessary for the remaining goats and sheep, and as the captain experienced the same welcome reception he had met with before, he ordered some of his people to begin cutting; not supposing that the natives would object to their furnishing themselves, with what could not be useful to them, though essentially necessary for our Europeans. In this, however, he was mistaken, for when the men began cutting the grass, some of the inhabitants immediately stopped their progress, saying, "*mahook*," signifying that they must pay for it first.

The captain was then in one of the houses; but, hearing of this, he repaired instantly to the field, where he found several claimants of different parts of the grass that grew on the premises. Having treated with them for the price, and complied with the terms of the purchase, he concluded that he was at full liberty to cut wherever he pleased. Here he was again mistaken; for he had so liberally paid the first pretended proprietors, that additional demands were made by others; who were so numerous, that the contents of his pockets were inadequate to the discharge of them. Perceiving, however, that he had no more to give, they were no longer importunate, and the mowers were permitted to cut where they pleased, and as much as they pleased†.

Having completed all their operations at this village, the natives and the two captains took a friendly leave of each other. The latter returned

* Returning on board, the Captain was informed that, in his absence, some strangers had visited the ships in two or three canoes; who informed them, by signs, that they had come from the south-east. They exchanged with them several garments, skins, and other articles, for some of theirs; but they were greatly surprized to see two silver table spoons, which had been purchased of them by some of the people, which appeared to be of Spanish manufacture. They were worn round the neck of these visitors, by way of ornament.

† Our navigators never met with any uncivilized nation who entertained such strict notions of their having an exclusive property in the produce of their country. They even expected payment for the wood and water that were carried on board: had Captain Cook been present, he would probably have complied with such demands; but the people thought differently, and paid little attention to such claims. The natives, perceiving that their demands were absolutely useless, at length ceased to apply. But they frequently thought proper to remind our Europeans, that their esteem for them had induced them to make them a present of wood and water.

to

to the ships in the afternoon; and the 23d, 24th, and 25th of April were employed in preparing for sea. They intended to have set sail on the morning of the 26th, but wind and tide being against them, they were obliged to wait till noon; when a calm succeeded, and the tide, at the same time, turning in their favour, they towed the ships out of the cove. The captain, unwilling to lose an opportunity of getting out of the Sound, resolved to put to sea. They were attended by the natives for a considerable time; some in their canoes, and others on board the ships. A chief, who had particularly attached himself to the captain, was among the last who parted from him: a little time before he went, the captain made him a small present; for which he received a beaver-skin of much greater value. An additional compliment was then paid to the chief; when he was so exceedingly delighted that he presented to Captain Cook the beaver-skin cloak which he then wore, and of which he was extremely fond.

Struck with this excess of generosity, and unwilling that he should be a sufferer by his gratitude, the captain insisted on his acceptance of a new broad-sword, with a brass hilt, with which he thought himself very amply compensated. Further particulars respecting the country and its inhabitants, will be communicated to our readers in the two subsequent sections.

SECTION XXIII.

Directions for sailing into the Sound—Description of the adjacent Country—Observations on the Climate and Weather—Vegetable Productions—Racoons, Martins, and other Quadrupeds—Variety of Skins brought to Market—Whales and other Sea Animals—Description of the Sea-Otter—Birds, Fish, Snakes, and Lizards—Insects—Stones—Description of the Natives—Horrible wooden Masks—Leathern Mantle for War—Dispositions, Fondness for Metals.

ON the first arrival of our Europeans at this inlet, Captain Cook honoured it with the name of King George's Sound, but he afterwards discovered that the natives called it Nootka. The entrance is in the east corner of Hope Bay. Its latitude is 49°, 33′ north, and its longitude 233°, 12′ east. The east coast of that bay is covered by a chain of sunken rocks; and, near the Sound, some others appear above water. The Sound is entered between two rocky points, lying east-south-east, and west-north-west from each other. Within these points the Sound widens, and extends to the northward about four leagues. The depth of water is from forty-seven to ninety fathoms, or more: harbours, and anchoring places are also numerous within its circuit. The cove where the British ships anchored, is on the east side of the Sound, and also on the east of the largest island.

On the sea-coast the land is tolerably high and level; but, within the Sound, it rises into steep hills which have an uniform appearance. Many of these hills are very high, and others of a more moderate height. The trees of which the woods are principally composed, are the Canadian pine, white cypress, and two or three other sorts of pine. In general, the trees here grow vigorously, and are of a large size.

On the borders of the woods, and about the rocks, strawberry plants, and rasberry, currant, and gooseberry bushes, were all seen in a flourishing state. Our adventurers also met with some wild rose-bushes, just budding, some water-cresses, young leeks, and a great abundance of *andromeda*. Within the woods they found two sorts of underwood shrubs, with which they were unacquainted, and mosses and ferns.

Lying in a cove, on an island, the living animals they saw were only a few racoons, martins, and squirrels. Some of the people, indeed, who landed on the continent, on the south side of the Sound, saw the print of a bear's foot at a little distance from the shore. The only account they could furnish of the quadrupeds, is taken from the skins which were purchased of the inhabitants, and these were sometimes so extremely mutilated, that it was difficult to guess to what animals they belonged. The most common among them were bears, deer, wolves and foxes. Bear-skins were plentiful, generally black, and not very large. The deer-skins appeared to belong to what the historians

historians of Carolina call the fallow deer, though Mr. Pennant distinguishes it by the name of Virginian Deer. Their foxes are numerous, and of several varieties*.

The sea-animals near the coast, are whales, porpoises, and seals: Though the sea-otter is amphibious, he may be considered as belonging to this class, his residence being principally in the water. Just before the departure of our adventurers from this place, a whole otter, just killed, was purchased from some strangers, of which Mr. Webber made a drawing. It was young, and weighed no more than twenty-five pounds, and was of a glossy black colour; but as many of the hairs were tipt with white, it had a greyish cast, at first sight. The face, throat, and breast were of a yellowish white; and, in several of the skins, that colour extended the whole length of the belly. In each jaw it had six cutting teeth; two in the lower jaw being extremely small, and placed without, at the base of the two in the middle. In these particulars, it differs from those found by the Russians, as well as in the outer toes of the hind feet not being skirted with a membrane. There also appeared a greater variety in colour: It seems probable that these changes of colour take place at the different gradations of life. After they have attained their full growth, the black colour disappears, and is succeeded by a deep brown. Some which were supposed to be older, were of a chesnut brown; and a few skins were seen that were of a perfect yellow. The fur of these creatures is much finer than that of any other animal they knew of; and consequently the discovery of this part of North America, which furnishes so valuable an article of commerce, ought to be considered as a matter of importance.

Birds are not numerous here, and those which are to be seen are remarkably shy; occasioned perhaps by their being continually harrassed by the natives, to procure their flesh for food, or their feathers for ornaments. Here are ravens and crows, not differing in any respect from those of England. This country is also inhabited by the jay, the magpie, the common wren, the Canadian thrush, the brown eagle, the heron, a small species of hawk, and the large crested American king-fisher. The common wren was the only singing bird our Europeans had heard. There are some which have not been mentioned by those who have treated on natural history. The two first are species of wood-peckers: one is smaller than a thrush, black on the back, and having white spots on the wings; the head, neck, and breast of a crimson colour. The other is larger and more elegant, the back being of a dusky brown, richly waved with black; the belly has a reddish cast, with black spots. The third and fourth are, one of the finch kind, about the size of a linnet, of a dusky colour, black head and neck, and white bill; and a sand-piper of a dusky brown. There are also humming birds, which differ, in some degree, from the sorts already known of this delicate little animal.

The quebrantahuessos, shags, and gulls, were seen off the coast; and the two last were common in the Sound. Wild-ducks, swans, and plovers were also seen.

Fish are plentiful here in quantity, but not in variety: the principal sorts are the common herring, not exceeding six or seven inches in length; and a smaller sort; a silver-coloured bream; and another of a burnished gold colour, with narrow blue stripes. The other fish were scarce, and consisted of a brown kind of sculpin; frost-fish, &c. Sharks are very common in the Sound, the teeth of which many natives had in their possession. The other marine animals are a small cruciated *medusa*, or blubber, star-fish, small crabs, and a large cuttle-fish.

Among the rocks were found many large muscles, sea-ears, cockles, and limpets.

Brown snakes were observed here, about two feet in length, with whitish stripes on the back and sides; and brownish water lizards. The former are so perfectly harmless, that several of the natives carried them alive in their hands. Among the insect tribe, though the season for their appearance was only beginning, they saw many different sorts of butterflies, humble bees, gooseberry moths, beetles, flies, and musquitoes†.

Some

* An entire wolf's skin was seen, which was grey. The common martin, the pine martin, and another of a lighter brown colour are inhabitants here: the ermine is also found in this country; but is small, and its hair is not remarkably fine. There were two animals which our adventurers could not, with any degree of certainty, distinguish. One of them they supposed to be the elk or mouse-deer, and the other the wild cat or lynx. Hogs, dogs, or goats, have not yet appeared here.

† The stature of the natives is rather below the common standard,

Some of the men are without beards; others have only a small thin one upon the point of the chin. This is not occasioned by an original deficiency of hair* in that quarter, but from their plucking it out by the roots. Their eye-brows are narrow, but they have plenty of black, strong, and lank hair on the head. Their necks are short, their arms clumsy, and no elegance or beauty is distinguishable in their formation. They are generally crooked, and ill-formed; supposed to have been principally occasioned by their sitting almost continually upon their hands and knees†.

Their common dress is a flaxen kind of mantle, ornamented with a narrow stripe of fur on the upper edge, with fringes at the lower edge. Over this is worn a small cloak of the same substance, extending to the waist, also fringed at the bottom. They wear a cap like a truncated cone, or a flower-pot, of very fine matting, decorated with a round knob, or a bunch of leathern tassels; with a string under the chin to prevent its blowing off. This dress is common to both sexes. The men often wear, over their other garments, the skin of some animal, as a bear, wolf, &c. with the hair outwards. They wear a coarse mat about their shoulders in rainy weather. Their hair generally hangs loosely down; but those who are without a cap, tie it into a kind of bunch on the crown of the head. Their dress, if kept clean, would not be inelegant; but as they are continually smearing their bodies over with red paint and oil, their garments become greasy, and contract an offensive smell. The appearance of these people is extremely wretched and filthy, and their heads and garments swarm with vermin. But though their bodies are always covered with red paint, their face is ornamented with variety of colours. Many of their ears are also perforated in the lobe, where they make a large hole, and two smaller ones higher up on the outer edge. These holes are decorated with bits of bone, quill, shells, bunches of tassels, or thin pieces of copper. In some, the *septum* of the nose is perforated, and a piece of cord drawn through it. Others wear, at the same place, pieces of copper, brass, iron, beads, tassels, and buttons. Their ancles are ornamented with leathern thongs, or the sinews of animals ingeniously twisted‡.

Their curiosity seems to lie perfectly dormant: few of them expressed the least desire or inclination to see or examine things with which they were unacquainted; and which would have been beheld with astonishment by a curious observer. If they could procure what they required, they were perfectly satisfied, regarding all other matters with indifference. They are, however, sus-

standard, being usually plump, but not muscular; though the figures of many of the older people manifest a tendency to leanness. Most of the natives have round full visages, which are sometimes broad, with high prominent cheeks; above which the face seems fallen in quite across between the temples. Wide nostrils accompany the nose, which flattens at its base, and has a roundedpoint. The forehead is low, the eyes small and black; the mouth round, the lips thick; the teeth tolerablyregular, but not remarkable for their whiteness.

* It is a mistaken notion, though mentioned by eminent writers, that American Indians have no beards. See *Carver's Travels*, 224, 225; and *Marsden's History of Sumatra*, 39, 40.

† Their colour cannot easily be ascertained, their bodies are so completely incrusted with paint and nastiness; but when that task has been perfectly performed, their skin is said to be little inferior, in whiteness, to that of the Europeans. Some of them, when young, are found agreeable; that early period being attended with a peculiar degree of animation; but, after a certain age, a sameness characterizes every countenance, dullness and want of expression being visible in every visage. The women resemble the men in size, colour, and form, and are without any natural feminine delicacies to distinguish them. Not a person was to be found among all the females who were in their prime, who had the least pretensions to comeliness or beauty.

‡ Such are their common dresses and ornaments; but when going to war they exhibit themselves in their skins of wolves or bears, tied on like their other garments, bordered with fur, and curiously ornamented with figures. A common head-dress, on these occasions, is a quantity of withe, wrapped about the head, with large feathers.

Thus equipped, they have a truly savage appearance, which is much heightened by their monstrous decorations. They consist of an infinite variety of wooden masks, applied to the face, forehead, or upper part of the head. Sometimes they fix large pieces of carved work upon their heads, projecting to a considerable distance.

Though these people cannot be viewed without a kind of horror, when they are thus exhibited, it must be acknowledged that, when divested of these strange decorations, they have no appearance of ferocity in their countenance; but rather seem to be of a quiet phlegmatic disposition, deficient in animation and vivacity to render themselves agreeable in society.

Their orations, on all public occasions, consist of short sentences, emphatically repeated in one tone of voice, accompanied with a single gesture at every sentence. As they exhibit human skulls and bones to sale, it seems reasonable to suppose that they treat their enemies with great brutality; but as this circumstance rather marks a general agreement of character among almost every uncivilized tribe, they are not to be reproached with any charge of peculiar inhumanity.

ceptible of the tender passion, which is evident from their delighting in music, and that too of the pathetic kind Besides their concerts, sonnets were often sung by single performers, keeping time by striking the hand against the thigh. Though solemnity was predominant in their music, their performances are not destitute of sprightliness, gaiety, pleasantry, and humour.

A rattle, and a whistle, are the only musical instruments which were seen among them by our Europeans. Their rattles are generally formed in the shape of a bird, having small pebbles in the belly, and the tail is the handle. They have another sort, not very different from a child's rattle in England.

Some of them gave strong indications of a propensity to knavery, and under the pretence of trafficing with our Europeans, took away their goods without making any return. But their general conduct was very different; and they had abundant reason to think favourably of their integrity. It must be admitted, however, that their eagerness to possess iron, brass, or any kind of metal, was so great, that when an opportunity presented itself, few of them could avoid stealing it. But the natives of the South-Sea islands delighted in stealing any thing, whether it was particularly useful to them or not, and seem to have been solely actuated by a thievish disposition.

SECTION XXIV.

Population of Nootka Sound—Habitations—Inside Furniture—Filthiness—Wooden Images—Employments of the Men—Indolence of the Young Men—Women, and their Employments—Food—Bows, Arrows, Slings, and other Weapons—Manufactures of Woollen, &c.—Execution in Carving and Painting—Implements in Hunting and Fishing—Iron Tools—Method of procuring them, and other Metals—Language.

THE inhabited parts of the Sound, seem wholly to consist of the two villages already mentioned; the population of which might be pretty accurately ascertained from the number of the canoes that visited the ships, the second day after their arrival. They consisted of about one hundred, and contained, upon an average, at least five persons each; but as there were very few women, old men, youths, or children then among them, it may be reasonably supposed, that the number of the inhabitants of the two villages was at least four times the number of their visitors, and consequently two thousand in the whole.

The village situated at the entrance of the Sound, stands on the side of an ascent extending from the beach to the wood. The houses consist of three rows, placed at equal distances behind each other; and there are a few straggling houses at each end. But though the general disposition has some appearance of regularity, there is none in the respective houses. These erections consist of long broad planks, resting on the edges of each other, and tied with withes of pine-bark. They have slender posts on the outside, at considerable distances from each other, to which they are also fastened; and larger posts within are placed aslant. The sides and ends of these dwellings are seven or eight feet in height, and the back part is somewhat higher. The planks which compose the roof are moveable, and may either be put close to exclude the rain, or separated to admit the light in fine weather.

Upon the whole, however, they are most miserable habitations, without any regular doors; being entered only by a hole, which the unequal length of the planks has accidentally made. They have other holes in the sides of the house, irregularly disposed, serving for windows to look out at; the shape or size of which is not in the least attended to*

* There are some appearances of separations on each side of these ranges, for the accommodation of different persons or families. On the sides of each of these parts, a little bench is displayed, about five or six inches higher than the rest of the floor, covered with mats, for the family to sit and sleep on. The fire-place, without hearth or chimney, is in the middle of the floor. One house was seen, nearly separated from the rest by a close partition; it was indeed the most regular building of the whole: it had four of these benches, each holding a single family at the corner; but it was not separated by boards, the middle of the house seeming to be common to all the inhabitants.

The

The principal furniture of their houses is composed of chests and boxes of various sizes, piled upon each other at the sides or ends of the house, in which are deposited their garments, skins, masks, and other valuable articles. These boxes are frequently painted black, studded with the teeth of animals, or wretchedly carved with figures of birds, &c. &c. as decorations. They have also square and oblong pails; wooden cups, bowls, and troughs; bags of mattings, baskets of twigs, &c.

Their implements for fishing, and other things, are hung up, or scattered about the house, without the least order, presenting a complete scene of confusion; except their sleeping benches, which have nothing on them but the mats. But their irregularity and confusion is far exceeded by their nastiness and filth. They dry and gut their fish within doors, which, with the bones and fragments thrown upon the ground at meals, occasions several heaps of filth which they shew no great alacrity in removing*.

The men were chiefly employed in fishing, and killing animals for the sustenance of their families; and the women appeared to be occupied in domestic duties, manufacturing their garments, and in curing their sardines. The women also go in the small canoes to collect muscles, and other shell-fish; and seem very dexterous and expert in the management of the paddle†.

The porpoise is very common food among them; the flesh and rind of which they cut in large pieces which they dry and eat. From these, and other sea animals, they also procure oil in great abundance, which they mix with other food as sauce, and sometimes sip it alone, with a kind of scoop made of horn. Their land-animals, at this time, appeared to be scarce, no flesh belonging to any of them having been observed; except a few gulls, and some other birds, which they shoot with their arrows.

Their winter vegetables are the Canadian pine-branches, and sea-grass; but, as the spring advances, others successively come in season. The most common are two sorts of liliaceous roots, of a mild sweetish taste, which are mucilaginous and eaten raw. The next is a root called *aheita*, and has a taste resembling liquorice. They have doubtless many others, which our adventurers did not see: for though there is not the least appearance of cultivation, there are plenty of alder, gooseberry, and currant bushes. The natives disliked any thing of the acrid kind, and would not touch either leek or garlic. They seemed, indeed, not to relish any of the European food; they particularly rejected their spirituous liquors, as something unnatural and disgusting‡.

They have bows, arrows, spears, slings, and short truncheons made of bone; and a small pick-axe resembling the American tomahawk. Some

* But amidst all this filth and confusion, they are fond of decorating their houses with images; which are formed of the trunks of trees, placed at the upper end of the apartment, with something like a face rudely carved on the front, and the hands and arms upon the sides: these figures, when painted by the natives, make a most ridiculous appearance, and are generally called *Klumma*. But the names of two particular ones, standing near each other, were *Natchkoa* and *Matsecta*. A sort of curtain, made of mat, usually hung before them, which the natives were not always willing to remove; and when they did consent to unveil them, they adopted mysterious expressions. It seems probable that they sometimes make offerings to them; for if our adventurers rightly comprehended their signs, they requested them to give something to these images, when the mats were taken from before them.

Mr. Webber, in drawing a view of the inside of a Nootka house, wherein these figures were displayed, was hindered from proceeding by one of the inhabitants. Supposing a bribe would have a good effect, Mr. Webber offered him a button from his coat, which being metal, operated as it was intended, and he was permitted to proceed. But, soon after he had made a beginning, he was again interrupted by the same fellow, who held a mat before the figures. Another button was offered, and received, when he was once more suffered to proceed. The same practice was successively renewed and persevered in till Mr. Webber had parted with every button, when he was permitted to proceed without any other obstruction or interruption.

† The young men are remarkably indolent; lounging about in scattered companies, basking themselves in the sun, or wallowing like so many hogs upon the beach, without any kind of covering. The women, however, behaved with great propriety, and were always decently cloathed; justly meriting every commendation for a modest bashfulness, so becoming to their sex.

The inhabitants rely principally upon the sea for their food, as it furnishes them with fish and sea-animals. The chief of the first are herrings, sardines, two species of bream, and some small cod. The herrings and sardines serve for fresh food in their season, as well as to be dried and smoaked as stores. The herrings also afford them another grand resource for food; which is a vast quantity of roe, prepared in an extraordinary manner. It is strewed upon small branches of the Canadian pine; and it is also prepared upon a long sea-grass, found in great plenty upon the rocks under water. This *caviare* is preserved in baskets of mat, and used occasionally, after being dipped in water. The large muscle, which is an important article of their food, is found in great abundance in the Sound, and the smaller shell-fish contribute to increase the general stock.

‡ Their manner of eating accords with the filthiness of their

Some of the arrows are pointed with iron, and others with indented bone: the spear has usually a long point made of bone. The tomahawk is a stone, seven or eight inches in length; one end terminating in a point, and the other fixed into a handle. They have another weapon made of stone, called a seeaik, about ten or eleven inches long, with a square point.

They are more ingenious in their manufactures and mechanic arts than could be expected, from the little progress they had made in civilization. The flaxen and woollen garments engage their principal attention, as being the most material under the class of manufactures. The former are fabricated from the bark of a pine-tree, beat into a mass resembling hemp. Their woollen cloth, that has much the appearance of being woven, is of various qualities; some of which is very excellent; some resembling the coarsest European blankets, and others not much inferior to their finer sort, and considerably softer and warmer. The wool, of which they are manufactured, appears to be produced by different animals; particularly the fox, and brown lynx: the ornamental figures introduced into these garments, are disposed with great taste, and are generally of a different colour, being usually dyed of a deep brown or yellow.

Their fondness for carving on wooden articles, corresponds with their taste in working figures upon their clothes. Every thing contains a representation of some animal upon it; but the most general figure is that of the human face. That these people have a strong propensity to works of this sort, is evident from a variety of particulars. Representations of human figures, beasts, birds, fish, canoes, &c. were found among them in very great abundance.

Though the structure of their canoes is simple, they seem well calculated for every useful purpose. They are very light, and, from their great breadth and flatness, swim firmly, without an out-rigger, of which they are all destitute. Their paddles resemble a large leaf in shape, being pointed at the bottom, broad in the middle, and gradually becoming narrower in the shaft; the whole length hardly exceeding five feet. Constant practice has taught them greater dexterity in the management of these paddles; but they never make use of any sails.

For fishing and hunting, their instruments are ingeniously contrived and executed. They consist of nets, hooks and lines, harpoons, gigs, and an instrument resembling an oar. Sometimes the natives decoy animals, by disguising themselves with a skin, and running upon their hands and knees, making an appropriate noise. On these occasions, they have masks, carved heads, or dried heads of different animals.

Every thing calculated to answer the purposes of a large or small rope, is formed from the thongs of skins, the sinews of animals, or from the flaxen substance, of which they manufacture their mantles.

Their implements are principally formed of iron: our adventurers saw but one chissel that was not formed of that metal, and that was only of bone. The knife and the chissel are the principal forms that iron assumes among them: the latter consists of a long flat piece, fixed in a wooden handle. A stone is their mallet, and a bit of fish-skin their usual polisher. Some of their knives are large, with crooked blades, the edge being on the back or convex part*.

From their general use of iron it is probably furnished from some constant source, in the way of

their houses and persons; for the platters and troughs which contain their provision, seem never to have been washed since their original formation. What is solid and tough, they tear to pieces with their hands and teeth; for, though their knives are employed in cutting off the larger portions, they know not how to subdivide them properly into mouthfuls. So inattentive are they to every idea of cleanliness, that when they take out the roots from the ground, they never attempt to shake off the soil which naturally adheres to them.

* Iron, among the natives, has obtained the name of *seekemaile;* which appellation they have also conferred on tin, and other white metals. Though our adventurers saw several articles of European manufacture, or such as appeared to be derived from some civilized nation, as brass and iron, it is not certain that they were received immediately from these nations: for our navigators never could obtain any information whether these people had ever seen any ships, like theirs before, or whether they had ever engaged in commerce with such people. Many circumstances tend to corroborate this fact: on the arrival of the Europeans, they earnestly enquired if they meant to settle among them, and whether they visited them on friendly terms: assuring them, at the same time, that they freely gave them wood and water, from motives of humanity and friendship.

Hence it sufficiently appears that they considered themselves as the only proprietors of the place, and apprehended no superiority: for it would have been an unnatural enquiry, if any ships had been there before, and had supplied themselves

of traffic; and they have doubtless been long supplied with it; for they use their tools with that dexterity which is acquired by a series of attentive practice. It is no unreasonable conjecture, that they trade for their iron with other Indian tribes, who may have some communication with European settlements upon that continent, or receive it through several intermediate nations. Their brass and copper is probably obtained by the same means. If such articles are not used by our traders to Hudson's Bay and Canada, they may have been introduced at Nootka from Mexico, whence the two table-spoons were perhaps originally derived.

Here are a sort of chiefs, distinguished by the title of Acweek, to which the other inhabitants are in some degree subordinate: but their authority seems to extend no farther than to their own respective families, who acknowledge him as their head. Being all elderly men, it is possible that this title may be hereditary.

The word *wakash* was frequently expressed by the people of Nootka: it seemed to announce approbation, applause, and friendship. Whenever they appeared to be delighted or rejoiced at any sight or occurrence, they exclaimed *wakish! wakish!*—As these people so essentially differ from those of the islands in the Pacific Ocean, in their manners, customs, and language, it cannot be supposed that their respective progenitors belonged to the same tribe, when they emigrated into those places, which are now peopled by their descendants.

SECTION XXV.

A Storm—The Resolution springs a Leak—Progress along the North American Coast—Cross Sound Bering's Bay—Cape Suckling—Kaye's Island—Anchor near Cape Hinchinbroke—Visited by the Natives—Their Partiality to Beads and Iron—Their Attempt to get Possession of a Boat—Attempt to plunder the Discovery—Progress up the Sound—Examination—Montague Island—Leave the Sound.

IT has been already stated, that the navigators put to sea on the 26th of April, with evident symptoms of an approaching storm; and they were not deceived. Hardly had they sailed out of the Sound, when the wind shifted from north-east, to south-east by east, and blew a strong gale, with squalls and rain, accompanied with a very dark sky. Apprehending that the wind might veer more to the south, and expose them to the danger of a lee-shore, they got the tacks on board, and made all the sail they could to the south-west. It fortunately happened that, early the next morning, they were entirely clear of the coast. Captain Clerke's ship being considerably astern, Captain Cook brought to till she came up, and then both vessels steered a north-westerly course. The wind blew with great violence; and a little before two in the afternoon, there was a perfect hurricane; the captain therefore thought it dangerous to run any longer before it, and brought the ships to, with their heads to the south. Thus situated the Resolution sprung a leak, in her starboard quarter; which was, at first alarming; but after the water was baled out, was kept under by means of one pump.

About five the next morning, the storm began to moderate: the weather now clearing up, they saw several leagues around them, and steered more to the north.

On the 1st of May they steered to the north east, having a fresh breeze, with squalls, and showers of hail and rain. At seven in the evening they saw land, at the distance of about fourteen leagues. At four the next morning, they saw what appeared to be the northern point of an inlet, bearing east by south; and from it to the northward, there seemed to be several bays and harbours along the coast. Between eleven and

themselves with wood and water, and then departed; for they might then naturally suppose that our Europeans would have done the same. It must be admitted, however, that they manifested no symptoms of surprize at beholding the British ships; but this may reasonably be attributed to their natural indolence of disposition, and a total indifference respecting those events in which they are not materially concerned.

twelve they passed a cluster of little islands, near the continent, to the northward of the southern point of an extensive bay. An arm of this bay seemed to stretch towards the north, behind a lofty mountain between it and the sea. On this mountain Captain Cook bestowed the appellation of Mount Edgecumbe, and on the point of land projecting from it, Cape Edgecumbe.

Proceeding to the northward, they found the coast from Cape Edgecumbe trended to the north and north-east for six or seven leagues, and there formed a spacious bay: some islands appearing at the entrance of this bay, Captain Cook named it the Bay of Islands. On the 3d. at half an hour after four in the morning, Mount Edgecumbe bore south 54° east; a large inlet, north 50° east; and the most advanced point of land towards the north-west, lying under a peaked mountain, named Mount Fair Weather, bore north 32° west. They gave the inlet the name of Cross Sound, it having been first observed on the day so marked in the English Calendar. An elevated promontory appears at the south-eastern point of this Sound, which they denominated Cross-Cape. To the point under the peaked mountain, they gave the name of Cape-Fair-Weather; which, at noon, was distant about thirteen leagues.

Mount Fair-Weather is the highest of a chain or ridge of mountains, rising at the north-western entrance of Cross Sound, and extending towards the north-west, parallel with the coast. These mountains were covered with snow, except in a few places, where trees were discernible, seeming to rise out of the sea. About five in the afternoon, the top of a lofty mountain appeared above the horizon, which they supposed was the Mount Saint Elias of Commodore Beering. They saw, in the course of the day, several porpoises, whales, seals, and flocks of birds; among which were great numbers of gulls.

Having light winds, with occasional calms, they proceeded but slowly. On the 6th at Midday, the nearest land was distant about eight leagues. In a north-easterly direction, a bay was perceived, and an island near its southern point covered with wood. This is probably the place where Beering anchored. Southward of this bay (named Beering's Bay by Captain Cook) the ridge of mountains, already mentioned, is interrupted by a large plain. In the afternoon they sounded, and found a muddy bottom at the depth of seventy fathoms. At noon, the next day, they were distant about five leagues from the shore. On the 9th Mount St. Elias bore north 30° east, at the distance of nineteen leagues*.

A crow was seen flying about the wood; two or three white-headed eagles were also observed; besides another species equally large, which had a white breast. A number of fowls were likewise perceived sitting on the water or flying about; the principal of which were gulls, shags, burres, ducks, divers, and quebrantahuesses. There was also a single bird flying about, apparently of the gull kind, of a snowy white, except on the upper part of its wings, where some black is exhibited. Where their party landed, a fox came from the verge of a wood, saw them without much emotion, and walked leisurely away. His colour was a redish yellow, and he was of a moderate size.

Captain Cook, together with those who accompanied him, returned on board in the afternoon, and steered for the south-west side of the island, which they got round by eight in the evening: they then stood for the westernmost land in sight. At the north-east end of Kaye's island, another of that denomination presented itself. Early the next morning, Kaye's island was still in view; and at noon the eastern point of a spacious inlet bore west north-west. The wind was now south-easterly, and they were menaced with a fog and a storm. The captain

* On the tenth, at about twelve, they were three leagues distant from the coast of the continent. To the westward was an island at the distance of six leagues. A point which Captain Cook named Cape Suckling, projects towards the north-eastern end of this island. The captain had some thoughts of repairing to this bay, but the wind being unfavourable, he relinquished his design, and bore up for the west end of the island. It being calm about ten o'clock, he embarked in a boat, and landed on the island, in order to observe what lay on the other side; but finding that the hills were at a greater distance than he expected, and that the way was woody and steep, he also gave up that idea. On an eminence near the shore, he left a bottle at the foot of a tree, containing a paper, whereon the names of their ships, and the date of their discovery were particularized: he also inclosed two silver pieces of English coin, value two pence each, which had been furnished him by Dr. Kaye, Dean of Lincoln, and, as a proof of his esteem for that gentleman, he distinguished the island by the name of Kaye's Island. It is about twelve leagues in length, but does not exceed one and a half in the breadth of any part of it. The vallies are filled with pine-trees, but they are not of extraordinary growth: among them were some currant and hawberry bushes.

was

was now desirous of getting into some place to stop a leak; he therefore steered for the inlet, which he had no sooner reached than the weather became so extremely foggy, that it was thought necessary to secure the ships somewhere till the sky should clear up. For this purpose they hauled close under Cape Hinchinbroke, and cast anchor before a small cove, in eight fathoms water, at the distance of two furlongs from the shore.

Soon after they had anchored, the seine was drawn in the cove, but without success, as it was torn. The fog gradually cleared away, and gave them a view of the neighbouring land: the cape was about one league distant; and the western point of the inlet, five leagues. The most westerly point they had in view on the north shore, was at the distance of about two leagues. Between this point, and the shore under which their ships now lay at anchor, is a bay, on the south-eastern side of which are several coves, and some rocky islands in the middle*.

The next morning, about ten, the wind becoming moderate, and the weather clearing up, they got up their anchors and made sail, in order to search for some convenient place where they might stop the leak; the situation they were in at that time being too much exposed for that purpose.

The Americans who paid their respects to our navigators the preceding day, came off again in the morning, in five or six canoes; but as they had deferred their visit till after they were under sail, they could not reach the ships, though they followed them for a considerable time. In the afternoon, about two, the unfavourable weather returned, with so thick a haze, that they could barely perceive a little island, situated at the distance of about two miles from the neighbouring coast, being a point of land, on the eastern side of which they discovered an excellent harbour. To this they plied, while the wind blew in hard squalls, accompanied with rain. Though, at some intervals, they could see land in every direction, the fog, in general, was so great, that they could only perceive the shores of the bay, for which they were now steering. About eight o'clock they were obliged, by the violence of the squalls, to cast anchor in thirteen fathoms water, before they had arrived at the intended spot: they thought themselves fortunate, however, in having the ships already secured, as the night was extremely tempestuous.

But even this turbulent weather did not deter the natives from paying them a visit: three of them came off in two canoes. These men were each in possession of a stick, of the length of about three feet, with the wings, or large feathers of birds, fastened to it. These were frequently held up to their view, considering them, perhaps, as tokens of peace and amity. The civility shewn to these three strangers, induced many others to visit them between one and two o'clock the following morning, in great and small canoes. Several of them courageously ventured on board the Resolution, but not till after some of the Europeans had condescended to step into their boats. Among those who came on board, was a middle-aged man, who was afterwards declared to be the chief. His dress consisted of a sea-otter skin, and such a cap on his head as is usually worn by the inhabtants of Nootka, ornamented with sky-blue glass beads.

Though these people were desirous of iron, they rejected small portions of it; requiring nothing less than pieces of nine or ten inches long at least, and of the breadth of three or four fingers. The chief evaded all solicitations to venture below the upper deck; and neither him nor his companions would continue long on board;

* Mr. Gore was sent in a boat to these islands, to endeavour to shoot some birds that might be salutary for food. On approaching them, about twenty natives made their appearance, in two large canoes; which induced him to return to the ships, and they followed him. Not choosing, however, to venture along-side, they kept at a little distance, shouting aloud, and alternately clasping and extending their arms. They then began to entertain the auditors with vocal music, by chanting a song. Feathers were strewed upon their heads, and a white garment was displayed by one of them; which was supposed to have been intended as a token of friendship or esteem. Another person, at the same time, stood up in the canoe entirely naked, and continued in that state of nudity for about a quarter of an hour, entirely motionless, with his arms extended like a cross.

Though the Europeans returned their signs of amity, and endeavoured by expressive gestures to prevail on them to come along-side, all their entreaties were ineffectual. After receiving some presents which were thrown to them, they retired towards the shore; intimating, by motions, that they would pay them another visit in the morning. Two of them, however, came off to them in the night, each in a small canoe, expecting perhaps to find them all asleep, that they might have a glorious opportunity of pilfering; but they thought proper to retire as soon as they perceived themselves discovered.

board; though their behaviour indicated so strong a propensity to thieving, that it was thought expedient to watch them narrowly. At length, when they had been several hours along-side the Resolution, they quitted her, and repaired to the Discovery. As soon as they had quitted the Resolution, Captain Cook dispatched a boat to sound the head of the bay. Soon afterwards all the Americans left the Discovery, and made their way towards the Captain's boat that was employed in sounding. The officer, who was in her, seeing them approach, returned to the ship, and all the canoes followed him. As soon as the crew of the boat had repaired on board, leaving two of their number in her by way of guard, several of the natives stepped into her, some of whom presented their spears before the guard, while others loosened the rope which fastened her to the ship; and the rest were so outrageously daring as to attempt to tow her away. But when they perceived that the Europeans were preparing to oppose them, they prudently let her go, and, with apparent unconcern, made signs to persuade them to lay down their arms*.

From this circumstance it may reasonably be inferred, that these people are unacquainted with fire-arms; for had they known any thing of their effect, they would not have ventured to carry off a boat from under a ship's guns, in the face of more than a hundred men; for the people of the Resolution were actually looking on, at the very instant of their making the attempt.

On the 16th, towards the evening, the weather cleared up, and our navigators found themselves encompassed with land. Their station was on the eastern side of the sound, in a place known by the appellation of Snug Corner Bay. Captain Cook, with some of his officers, went to survey the head of it, and found it was sheltered from all winds, and had a muddy bottom at the depth of from three to seven fathoms. The summits of the hills in the neighbourhood were covered with wood; but those at a greater distance in the country, had the appearance of naked rocks involved in snow.

The leak of the Resolution being at length stopped, our navigators weighed anchor on the 17th, at four in the morning, and steered a north-west course. Soon after they had made sail, the Americans paid them another visit, seemingly with a view further to gratify their curiosity, for they did not attempt to traffic with them.

SECTION XXVI.

Extent of Prince William's Sound—Description of its Inhabitants—Their Dress—Remarkable Incision in the Under Lip—Variety of Ornaments—Canoes—Weapons—Armour—Domestic Utensils—Their manual Occupations—Food—Language—Animals—Conjectures on the procuring Beads and Iron.

THE inlet which our navigators had now quitted, had been distinguished by Captain Cook with the name of Prince William's Sound. It occupies about a degree and a half of latitude, and two degrees of longitude, exclusive of the branches; with the extent of which our Europeans profess to be unacquainted. The natives were, in general, of a middling stature, though many of them were below it. They were square, and short-necked, with broad flattish visages. Their heads were very large and disproportionate to their bodies: their teeth tolerably white, and regular; their noses had full round points, turned up at the tip; and their eyes seemed too small to be proportioned to their faces. Their hair was black, strong, and straight. Their beards are frequently thin, or deficient; but those of the elderly men are large and thick.

Great variety is, however, observable in their

* This attempt, though a bold one, was hardly equal to what they meditated on board Captain Clerke's ship. Several of the Americans went on board, without the least ceremony, and drawing their knives, made signs to the officer, and the other people upon deck, to keep off, and began to search for plunder. They took the rudder of one of their boats, which they threw overboard to those of their party in the canoes. But, by this time, the ship's crew had taken the alarm, and many of them, armed with cutlasses, came upon deck. Perceiving this to be the case, the plunderers sneaked off into their canoes.

features,

SNUG CORNER COVE *in* PRINCE WILLIAM'S SOUND.

Cook

Sparrow sculp

features: very few of them can be deemed handsome, though their countenances usually indicate frankness, vivacity, and good nature. Some of them nevertheless appear sullen and reserved. The faces of several of the women are agreeable, and many of the young ones may be distinguished from the other sex, by the superior delicacy of their features: the complexion of some of the females, as well as of the children, is white, without the least mixture of red*.

A few of them cover their legs or feet with a kind of skin stockings, reaching half way up their thighs; and most of them have mittens for their hands, formed from the skins of a bear's paws. Those who wear any covering on their heads, have high truncated conical caps, sometimes fabricated of wood, and sometimes of straw.

The hair of the men is cropped round the forehead and neck, but that of the females is permitted to grow long: many of them tie a lock of it on the crown, while a few club it behind; a practice once countenanced in England, though now upon the decline. The ears of both the men and women are perforated with holes, wherein they suspend small bunches of beads, &c. Even the *septum* of the nose is also perforated, through which they frequently thrust the quill-feathers of birds, or other ornaments. But the most ridiculous fashion, adopted by some of the natives of both sexes, is their having the under-lip cut quite through lengthwise, rather below the protuberant part. They fix in this artificial mouth, a flat narrow ornament, made out of a shell or bone. Some of them only perforate the lower lip into separate holes; on which occasion the ornament consists of distinct shelly studs †.

The men occasionally paint their faces red, or blue; but not in a regular manner. The women puncture or stain the chin with black, so as to come to a point on each of their cheeks; a practice in vogue among the Greenland females. Upon the whole, it may with propriety be said, that no savages ever took more pains than these do to ornament or disfigure their persons.

Their weapons and implements for hunting and fishing, greatly resemble those used by the Greenlanders and Esquimaux. Some of their spears are headed with iron; but their arrows are generally pointed with bone. For defensive armour they have a jacket, or coat of mail, formed of lathe, connected with sinews, which render it flexible, though so close as not to admit a dart or arrow‡.

Among their tools, they have a sort of stone adze: they have also plenty of iron knives, some of which are curved, others straight, and some very small ones, fixed in longish handles, with the blades bent upwards. They have likewise knives, shaped like a dagger, with a ridge towards the middle, which are worn in sheaths round their necks, under their frock. What-

* The men, women, and children of this Sound are clothed in the same manner. Their common dress is a sort of close frock, or robe, sometimes extending only to the knees, but generally down to the ancles. A hole in the upper part is made sufficiently capacious to receive the head, and it has sleeves terminating at the wrist. These frocks are formed of the skins of various animals, the hairy side being generally worn outwards. Some of them have a sort of cape or collar, and others have the addition of a hood. In rainy weather, they put over this another frock, skilfully made from the intestines of whales, or some other large animal. This frock, as well as the common one composed of skins, resembles the dress of the natives of Greenland, as described by Crantz. *See Crantz's Hist. of Greenland*, I. 136, 138.

† Many beads of European manufacture, chiefly of a pale blue colour, are also hung in their ears, or about their caps, or attached to their lip ornaments. They likewise wear br celets of beads of a shelly substance, and others of a cylindrical form, composed of a substance resembling amber. They are, indeed, so remarkably fond of ornament, that they fix any thing in their perforated lip: one of them, in particular, appeared with two iron nails projecting like prongs from it; and another attempted to force a large brass button into it.

‡ Our navigators had not an opportunity of seeing any of the habitations of the natives, as none of them resided in the bay where the ships anchored, or where any of the Europeans landed. With respect to their domestic utensils, they brought in their canoes some round oval shallow wooden dishes; and others of a cylindrical form, much deeper. Others were of a more elegant form resembling an oval English butter-boat, but shallower, and without any handle. They also brought some wooden models of their canoes, chequered baskets so closely wrought as to hold water, and a number of small images, either of wood, or stuffed. These were covered with a piece of fur, and embellished with quill feathers, with hair fixed upon their heads. They have several instruments formed of two or three hoops, with a cross-bar fixed in the middle, by which they are held. A number of dried barnacle-shells are fixed upon these with threads, which, when shaken, produce a loud noise, and supply the place of a rattle. This is probably meant as a substitute for the rattling bird at King George's Sound.

ever they have is as well executed as if they were provided with a complete chest of tools; and the plaiting of sinews, sewing, and small work which is displayed on their little bags, may be said to vie with the neatest manufactures in the universe.

They were seen, by our navigators, eating the flesh of some quadruped, either roasted or broiled, and dried fish. Some of the former that was purchased, had the appearance of bear's flesh. They seemed to eat freely of a substance, which our navigators imagined was the interior part of the pine bark. Their drink is probably water, for, in their canoes, they brought snow in wooden vessels, which they swallowed by mouthfuls. Their manner of eating was decent and cleanly, carefully removing any dirt that they perceived adhering to their food. Their persons were also generally clean, and their utensils and boats kept in excellent order *.

They found the *halcyon*, or great king-fisher, which had fine bright colours; the white-headed eagle; the shag; and the humming-bird, which frequently flew about their ships, while they lay at anchor; though it can hardly be supposed to live here during the winter, which must be very severe. The water-fowl they saw were black sea-pyes, with red bills; geese, and a small sort of duck. Some of the people who went ashore, killed a snipe, a grouse, and some plovers. But though the water-fowl were numerous, they were so extremely shy as not to be approached within shot; a very inconsiderable supply of them as refreshment could be procured. A species of diver was observed here, which seems peculiar to this place: it is equal in size to a partridge, and has a short, black, compressed bill. Its head, and the upper part of its neck, are of a brownish black; the remainder of its body is of a deep brown, obscurely waved with black, except the under part, which is blackish, minutely varied with white. They also saw a small land-bird of the finch kind.

The fish brought by the natives for sale, were principally torsk and halibut; and some sculpins, with star-fish of a purplish hue, were caught about the ship. The only shell-fish they saw was a reddish crab, covered with very large spines.

Few vegetables of any kind were observed: the trees which grew about the sound, were the canadian and spruce pine, some of which were of a considerable size.

These people have probably received from some more civilized nation, the beads and iron found among them. Our navigators were doubtless the first Europeans with whom they had ever had any direct communication; and it only remains to be ascertained, from what quarter they had procured British manufactures by intermediate conveyance.

SECTION XXVII.

Proceed along the Coast—Cape Elizabeth—Cape St. Hermogenes—Beering's Chart defective—Point Banks—Barren Isles—Cape Douglas—Cape Bede—Mount St. Augustin—Search for a Passage up an Inlet—Proofs of its being a River—River Turnagain—Cook's River—The Ships return—Visits from the Natives—Lieutenant King lands and takes Possession of the Country—His Reception by the Natives—The Resolution strikes upon a Bank.

LEAVING Prince William's Sound on the 20th of May, on the following day they passed a lofty promontory, in the latitude of 59° 10′, and the longitude of 207° 45′. It hav-

* The language of these people appears difficult to be understood; occasioned perhaps by the various significations which their words may be calculated to bear; for they appeared frequently to make use of the same word on very different occasions.

The knowledge of the animals of this part of the American continent, is solely derived from the skins which were brought by the natives for sale; which were principally bears, sea-otters, seals, racoons, ermines, foxes. Besides these animals, here is also the white bear, of whose skins the natives brought several pieces, and some complete skins of cubs. But one of the most beautiful that fell under their observation, is that of a small animal about a foot in length; brown on the back, with a number of obscure whitish specks, the sides being of a bluish ash-colour, with a few of these specks. The tail is about a third part of the length of the body, and has whitish hair. This animal appears to be the same with that which Stæhlin, in his New Northern Archipelago, calls the spotted field mouse.

ing

been discovered on Princess Elizabeth's birth-day, Captain Cook honoured it with the name of Cape Elizabeth. Seeing no land beyond it, our navigators flattered themselves that it was the western extremity of the continent; but they soon perceived their mistake, fresh land appearing in sight, bearing west-south-west. The wind increasing to a strong gale, forced them to a considerable distance from the coast: on the 22nd, in the afternoon, the gale abated, and they stood for Cape Elizabeth; which, at noon the next day, bore west, distant ten leagues.

They stood to the southward till the next day at noon, when they were about three leagues from the coast. In this situation it formed a point, that bore north-north-west. More land was seen, extending to the southward; on which was observed a ridge of mountains, with summits covered with snow, behind the first land, which they supposed to be an island, there appearing on it only a small quantity of snow. By what Captain Cook could gather from Beering's voyage and chart, he supposed it to be what he called Cape St. Hermogenes: but the account of that voyage and chart is so extremely inaccurate, that it is almost impossible to discover any one place, which that navigator either saw or touched at. The Captain indeed was not certain, that the bay which he had named after Beering, was the place where he had anchored.

By variable light airs and calms, they were detained off the Cape till two in the morning of the 25th, when a breeze springing up, they steered along the coast, and perceived that the land of Cape St. Hermogenes was an island, about six leagues in circuit, separated from the coast by a channel of one league in breadth. About noon St. Hermogenes bore south-east; the land to the north-west extending from south half west to near west. In the last direction, it terminated in a low point, named *Point Banks*. The ship was then in the latitude of 58° 41′, and in the longitude of 207° 44′. Thus situated, the land was in sight, bearing north-west, which they supposed connected Cape Elizabeth with this south-west land. Approaching it, they saw it was a groupe of high lands and rocks, and unconnected with any other land. From the inclemency of their appearance they were denominated the *Barren Isles;* being situated in the latitude of 59°, three leagues from Cape Elizabeth, and five from *Point Banks*.

In the evening they perceived a very lofty promontory, whose elevated summit appeared above the clouds, forming two extremely high mountains. The Captain named this promontory Cape Douglas, in honour of his friend Dr. Douglas, then canon of Windsor. The coast formed a large deep bay, between this point and Cape Douglas: some smoke being then observed upon Point Banks, it obtained the name of *Smokey Bay*. On the 26th more land was perceived, extending from Cape Douglas to the north: it consisted of a chain of very lofty mountains; the most conspicuous of which obtained the name of *Mount St. Augustin*.

It was then imagined, that the land to the north of Cape Douglas, consisted of a groupe of islands, separated by so many channels. Having a fresh gale at north-north-east, they stood to the north-west till eight o'clock, when they were fully convinced, that what they had supposed to be islands, were summits of mountains, connected by the lower land. This land was completely covered with snow, from the tops of the mountains to the sea-beach, and had, in other respects, the appearance of a great continent*.

In the morning of the 28th, they had so little wind that the ship drove to the southward; and, in order to stop her, they dropped a hedge-anchor with an eight inch hawser; but, in bringing the ship up, they lost both that and the anchor. They brought the ship up, however, with one of the bowers, and spent a great part of the day in sweeping for them, but without effect. They were in the latitude of 59° 51′; the low land extended from north-east to south-

* Mount St. Augustin now bore north-west, about three leagues distant. It is of an amazing height, and of a conical figure; but whether it is an island, or part of the continent, is not at present ascertained. Considering that nothing was to be done to the west, they stood over to Cape Elizabeth, under which they fetched at about five in the morning. Between Cape Elizabeth, and a promontory named *Cape Bede*, a bay presents itself, in which there are two snug harbours. The coast from Cape Bede trended north-east by east, with a chain of mountains inland, in the same direction. On the coast the land was woody: but they had the mortification of perceiving low land in the middle of the inlet, extending from north-north-east, to north-east by east; but supposing it to be an island, they were not much discouraged.

east,

east, the nearest part distant two leagues. The land on the western shore was distant seven leagues. A strong tide set to the southward out of the inlet. At ten o'clock it was low water: great quantities of sea-weed, and some drift wood were taken out with the tide.

Having a calm the whole day, they moved with a light breeze, at east, at eight in the evening, and stood to the north up the inlet. Two columns of smoke were visible on the eastern shore, which convinced them that inhabitants were near. They weighed at one in the afternoon, and plied up under double reefed topsails, having a strong gale at north-east.

Being anchored in nineteen fathoms water on the 30th of May, two canoes, with a man in each, came off to the ship about noon, nearly from that part where smoke had been observed. They found it troublesome to paddle across the strong tide, and they hesitated, a short time, before they ventured to approach our navigators. One of them talked very fluently, but to no purpose, for not a syllable he said was understood by the persons he addressed. While he continued talking, he pointed frequently to the shore, which the Europeans construed to be an invitation for them to go thither. Captain Cook, by way of present, conveyed a few trifles to them from the quarter gallery.

In dress, as well as in person, these people strongly resembled those which our navigators had seen in Prince William's Sound: their canoes were also constructed in the same manner. One of the visitors appeared to have no beard, and his face was painted of a jet black; the other, who was older, was not painted, but he had a considerable beard, and a countenance like the common sort of the people in the Sound. Smoke was this day observed on the flat western shore; whence it was conjectured that these lower spots only are inhabited.

As they weighed when the flood came, the canoes quitted them. In the evening, about eight, they anchored under a point of land, bearing north-east, distant about three leagues, and lay there during the ebb. Till they arrived there, the water was equally salt, both at high and low water; but now the marks of a river evidently displayed themselves. The water taken at this ebb, was much fresher than any they had tasted; whence they concluded that they were in a large river, and not a strait which communicated with the northern seas. But, wishing to have stronger proofs, they weighed with the flood on the morning of the 31st, and drove up with the tide, having but little wind.

They were attended, about eight o'clock, by several of the natives, in one large canoe, and several small ones. The small canoes had only one person on board each; and some of the paddles had a blade at each end, like those of the Esquimaux. Men, women, and children were comprised in the large canoe. At some distance from the ship, they displayed, on a long pole, a kind of leathern frock, which was supposed to amount to a declaration of their amicable intentions. This frock was even conveyed into the ship, as an acknowledgment for favours which the captain had indulged them with.

Our navigators bartered with them for some of their fur-dresses, made of the skins of animals; particularly those of sea-otters, hares, and martins: they also received some of their darts, and a supply of salmon and halibut. In exchange for these, were given some old clothes, beads, and pieces of iron. Their language appears to be nearly the same as that used in Prince William's Sound: the words *oonaka, keeta,* and *naema,* and others which were frequently used in Prince William's Sound, were also often used by this new tribe*.

No hopes of finding a passage were any longer

* From a variety of circumstances, our navigators were convinced that they were in a river. At the lowest of the ebb, the water at and near the surface was fresh, though retaining a considerable degree of saltness, if taken above a foot below it: other proofs were thick muddy water, low shores, trees, and rubbish of various kinds, floating to and fro with the tide. In the afternoon they received a visit from some more of the natives, who carried on an extensive traffic with the Europeans, without attempting to be guilty of the least dishonest action.

At two in the morning of the 1st of June, the master, who had been dispatched by Captain Cook to survey the inlet, returned, informing our navigators that he found the inlet, or river, contracted to about one league in breadth, and that it took a narrow course through low land on each side. He advanced three leagues through this narrow part, which he found from twenty to seventeen fathoms deep. When the stream ran down, the water was fresh; but it gradually became brackish when it ran up, and very much so towards high water. He went ashore upon an island, between this branch and that to the east, and saw several currant bushes, and many sorts of fruit that were unknown to him.

entertained;

entertained; but as the ebb was spent, and they could not return against the tide, they took the advantage of the latter, to get a closer view of the eastern branch, to know whether the low land on the east, was an island, or not. They therefore weighed, with the first of the flood, and stood over for the eastern shore. At eight a breeze sprung up in an opposite direction to their course, so that they despaired of reaching the entrance of the river. Captain Cook, however, dispatched two boats, under the command of Lieutenant King, to make such observations as might enable them to form a judgment of the nature of the river.

They anchored, about ten, in nine fathoms water. The captain, seeing the strength of the tide was so great that the boats could not make head against it, made a signal for them to return before they had proceeded half way to the entrance of the river. The chief knowledge obtained by this tide's work, was, that all the low land, which they had supposed to be an island, was one continued tract from the great river to the foot of the mountains, terminating at the south entrance of this eastern branch, which Captain Cook denominated the River *Turn-again*. The low land begins again on the north side of this river, and extends from the foot of the mountains to the banks of the Great River; forming, before the river Turn-again, a large bay, having from twelve to five fathoms water.

The time employed in the discovery of this great River* ought not to be regretted, if it should hereafter prove useful. The captain had now the pleasure to reflect, that if this large river had not been thus examined, the speculative fabricators of geography would have ventured to assert, that it had a communication with the sea to the north, or with Husdon's or Baffin's bay to the east†.

On Mr. King's return, he informed Captain Cook, that, when he approached the shore, he saw about twenty of the natives with their arms extended; an attitude supposed to signify their amicable disposition, and to shew they were without weapons. Seeing Mr. King, and his attendants land, armed with musquets, they were alarmed, and by expressive signs requested them to lay them down. The hint was instantly complied with, and Mr. King, with his party, were immediately permitted to approach them, when they appeared extremely sociable and cheerful. They had with them several dogs, and some pieces of fresh salmon. Mr. Law, surgeon of the Discovery, happening to be of the party, purchased one of the dogs of them, and instantly shot it dead. They seemed considerably surprised at this circumstance, and, not thinking themselves safe in such company, thought proper to walk away. It soon afterwards appeared, however, that they had concealed their spears, and other weapons, in the bushes behind them.

When it was high water they weighed anchor, and stood over to the west shore, where the Discovery anchored the next morning, on account of the return of the flood. They were soon after visited by several of the natives in canoes, who bartered their skins and garments, many of them returning perfectly naked. Among their skins, were great quantities of those of white rabbits, and red foxes, but only a few of those of otters. They gave iron the preference to every thing that was offered to them in exchange. The lip-ornaments were not so fashionable here, as at Prince William's Sound; but those which pass through the nose more frequent, and longer.

They weighed at half past ten, and plied down the river; when by the inattention of the man at the lead, the Resolution struck upon a bank almost in the middle of the river. They had twelve feet depth of water above the ship, at the lowest of the ebb, but the bank was dry in other parts.

About five in the morning of the 3d, the tide being finished, they cast anchor on the west shore; where they were visited by many of the natives, and their company was highly acceptable, as they brought with them a quantity of very fine salmon, which they exchanged for some of their trifles. The mountains were now free from clouds, and

* The captain having left a blank, Lord Sandwich very judiciously caused it to be named *Cook's River*.

† Mr. King was again sent, in the afternoon, with orders from Captain Cook to land on the south-east side of the river, where he was to display the flag; and, in his Majesty's name, take possession of the country and the river. He was also to bury a bottle in the earth, containing some English coin of 1772, and a paper on which was inscribed the names of their ships, and the date of their discovery. The ships in the mean time were got under sail, and the wind blew fresh. but a calm ensued, and they found it necessary to anchor in six fathoms water, the point where Mr. King landed bearing south, at the distance of two miles. It was therefore named *Point Possession*.

they perceived a volcano in one of those on the western side. It did not make a very striking appearance; emitting only a white smoke, without fire.

Before their departure from this place, they were again visited by some of the natives, in six canoes, from the eastern shore. For half an hour they remained at some little distance from the ships, gazing at our Europeans with a kind of silent surprise, but without speaking to them, or to each other. At length they courageously came along-side, and began to barter with our navigators; nor did they quit them till they had parted with their skins and salmon, which were the only articles they had been laden with.

All those who had been seen in this river, had a striking resemblance to those who inhabit Prince William's Sound, but differed very materially from those of Nootka; as well in their persons, as in their language. The points of their spears and knives are made of iron; though some of the former are also made of copper. Their spears resemble English spontoons, and their knives, which are usually kept in sheaths, are of a considerable length. The only valuable skins, on this west side of North America, are those of the sea-otter: the others are of a very inferior quality.

The tide is very considerable in this river: in the stream it is high water between two and three, on the days of the new and full moon; and the tide rises between three and four fathoms.

SECTION XXVIII.

Departure from Cook's River—Pass St. Hermogenes—Cape Barnabas—Two Headed Point—Trinity Island—Pinnacle Point—A curious Bird described—The Schumagin Islands—A Russian Letter brought on board—Conjectures concerning it—Rock Point—Halibut Island—A Volcano—Providential Escape—Ooonalashka—Traffic with the Natives there—Another Russian Letter.

THE ebb tide making in favour of our navigators, they weighed, and, with a gentle breeze, plied down the river. The flood, however, obliged them to anchor again; but about one the next morning, they got under sail with a fresh breeze, passed the barren islands about eight, and at noon Cape St. Hermogenes bore south south-east, distant about eight leagues. They saw several columns of smoke on the continent, northward of the passage, meant, perhaps, as signals to attract them thither. About eight in the evening St. Hermogenes extended from south half-east to south-south east, distant three miles. Here they had forty fathoms water, and caught several halibut with hooks and lines.

The 9th, 10th, and 11th, they had continual misty weather, with some rain, and seldom had a sight of the coast. In the evening of the 12th, the fog clearing up, they saw land about twelve leagues distant, bearing west. At noon, the next day, they were within three miles of it; an elevated point, named *Cape Barnabas,* bore north-north-east, at the distance of about ten miles. They could not see the north-east extreme for the haze, but the point to the south-west had an elevated summit, which terminated in two round hills, and was therefore named *Two Headed Point.*

On the 14th, at noon, they were in the latitude of 56° 49′. Some land, which had been perceived before, was now discovered to be an island, and it obtained the name of Trinity Island. Its greatest extent, in the direction of east and west, is about six leagues*.

They ran all night with a gentle breeze at north-east;

* On the 19th, the Discovery, which was two miles astern, fired three guns, and brought to, making a signal to speak. Captain Cook was exceedingly alarmed at this circumstance; for, as no apparent danger had been observed in the channel, he was apprehensive that the Discovery had sprung a leak, or met with some serious accident. A boat was dispatched to her, which immediately returned with Captain Clerke; who informed Captain Cook that some natives, in three or four canoes, having followed the ship for a considerable time, at last got under his stern; one of whom made several significant signs, having his cap off, and bowing in the European manner. A rope was then extended from the ship to this stranger, to which he fastened a thin wooden box, and after a series of gesticulations, the canoes left the Discovery.

When the canoes had departed, the box was opened, in

east; and the next morning some breakers were seen within them, distant about two miles; others were soon after seen a-head; and they were innumerable on their larboard bow, as well as between them and the land: by holding a south course they fortunately cleared them. These breakers were occasioned by rocks, many of which were above water; they extend seven leagues from land, and are very dangerous. They got on their outside about noon, when their latitude was 54° 44′, and their longitude 198°. The nearest land was an elevated bluff point, named *Rock Point;* it bore north about eight leagues distant; and a round hill, called *Halibut Head,* bore south-west, distant about thirteen leagues.

Halibut Island, in which Halibut Head is situated, is about seven leagues in circumference, and, except the head, is very low and barren. Several small islands are near it, between which and the main, there seems to be a passage, of the breadth of about three leagues. They were kept at such a distance from the continent, by the rocks and breakers, that they had a very imperfect view of the coast between Halibut Island and Rock Point. They could perceive the main land covered with snow, and particularly some elevated tops of hills. A *volcano* on the most south-westerly of these hills, threw up immense columns of black smoke. Its figure is a complete cone, and the Volcano is at the summit of it.

In the afternoon, having about three hours calm, the people caught upwards of a hundred halibuts, some of which weighed more than a hundred pounds. This afforded a very seasonable refreshment. In the height of their fishing, they were visited by one man, in a small canoe, who came from the large island: when he approached the ship, he uncovered his head and bowed†.

In the afternoon of the 24th, the weather became gloomy, and afterwards turned to a mist, the wind blowing fresh at east. They hauled the wind to the southward till day-break, and then proceeded on their course to the west. They derived but little advantage from day-light, as the weather would not permit them to discern objects at the distance of a hundred yards; but, the wind being moderate, they ventured to run. Soon after they were alarmed by the sound of breakers, at their larboard bow: they found twenty-eight fathoms water, and then twenty-five. They brought the ship to, and anchored in the last depth: Captain Cook ordered the Discovery, which was not far distant, to anchor also‡.

The wind blew fresh at south, in the night; but in the morning was more moderate, and the fog almost dispersed. They weighed at seven, and steered between two small islands. The breadth of the channel did not exceed a mile, and the wind failed before they could pass through it; they were therefore obliged to anchor. Land now presented itself in every direction. That to the south extended, in a ridge of mountains, to the south-west, which was afterwards found to be an island, named *Ooonalashka.*

Between this island and the land to the north, there appears to be a channel, in a north-west direction. On a point, which bore west from the ship, three quarters of a mile distant, they perceived several natives and their habitations. To this place they saw two whales towed in, which they supposed had just been killed. A

which was found a piece of paper, carefully folded up, whereon some writing was observed, which was supposed to be in the Russian language; and to this paper was prefixed the date of 1778. At first Captain Clerke supposed that some Russians had been shipwrecked here; and that, seeing our ships, these unfortunate persons were induced to acquaint them with their situation. But Captain Cook was of a different opinion: he rather thought the paper was intended to communicate information, from some Russian trader, who had lately been at these islands, to be delivered to any of his countrymen who should arrive; and that the natives, imagining them to be Russians, had brought off the note. He therefore made no farther enquiry into the matter, but made sail, and steered to the westward.

† That the Russians had some communication with these people, was evident from their acquired politeness, and the note already mentioned. They had now an additional proof of it, for the new visitor wore a pair of green cloth breeches, and a jacket of black cloth or stuff, under the frock of his own country. He had nothing to barter but a grey fox-skin, and some fishing implements: he had some liquid in a bladder, which our navigators supposed to be oil; for he opened it, drank a mouthful, and then closed it up again. His canoe was of the same construction as those they had seen before, but smaller: his features resembled those of the natives of Prince William's Sound, and he had not disfigured himself with any kind of paint: his lip had been obliquely perforated, but he had no ornament in it at that time.

‡ Some hours after, when the fog was a little dispersed, they saw the imminent danger they had escaped. They were three quarters of a mile from the north-east side of an island: two elevated rocks were about half a league from them, and from each other. There were also several breakers about them, and yet providence had, in the dark, safely conducted the ships between those rocks, which they should not have attempted to have done in a clear day.

few

few of the inhabitants came off, occasionally, to the ships, and engaged in a little traffic with the people, but never continued with them above a quarter of an hour at a time. They seemed indeed remarkably shy, though it clearly appeared that they were not unacquainted with vessels similar to those of our navigators. They had more address and politeness than they had ever observed among any other of the savage tribes.

At one in the afternoon, having a light breeze, and the tide of flood, they weighed and proceeded to the channel last mentioned; expecting, when they had passed through, to find the land trend away to the northward; or that they should discover a passage out to sea, to the west. For they did not suppose themselves to be in an inlet of the continent, but among islands; and they were right in their conjectures. In the evening the ebb made it necessary to anchor.

They weighed early the next morning, and were wafted up the passage by a light breeze. There was, however, a rapid tide in their favour, and the Resolution got through before the ebb made. The Discovery was not so fortunate, for she was carried back, got into the raee, and found a difficulty in getting clear of it. Being short of water, and expecting to be driven about in a rapid tide, they stood for a harbour on the south side of the passage, but were driven beyond it; and, that they might not be forced back through the passage, anchored near the southern shore in twenty-eight fathoms water. In this situation, they were visited by many of the natives in different canoes, who bartered some fishing implements for tobacco. A young man, among them, overset his canoe, and was caught hold of by one of our Europeans, but the canoe was taken up by another, and carried ashore. The youth was therefore obliged to come into the ship, where he was invited into the cabin, and cheerfully accepted the invitation. His upper garment resembled a shirt, made of the gut of a whale, or some other large sea animal. Under this, he had another of a similar form, made of the skins of birds with the feathers on, curiously sewed together; having the feathered side placed next his skin. His cap was ornamented with glass beads.

His clothes being wet, others were procured for him, with which he readily and expeditiously equipped himself. From the behaviour of this youth, and many of his associates, it evidently appeared that these people were no strangers to Europeans, or to their customs. Something in the ships, however, greatly excited their curiosity; for, such as had not canoes to bring them off, ascended the neighbouring hills to take a view of them.

At low water they towed the ship into the harbour, where they anchored in nine fathoms water, the Discovery arriving soon after. They had not long anchored, before a native brought another note on board, nearly similar to that which had been given to Captain Clerke. He delivered it to Captain Cook; but, being written in the Russian language, neither he, nor any one present, could read it. As it could not possibly be of any service to them, and might probably be of consequence to others, the captain returned it to the bearer, accompanied with several small presents; for which he expressed his acknowledgments as he retired, by several obsequious bows. On the 29th, they saw along the shore, a group of the natives of both sexes, partaking of a repast of raw fish. They were seated on the grass, and seemed highly gratified with their entertainment.

Our navigators were detained here by thick fogs, and a contrary wind, till the 2d of July; during which time they obtained some knowledge of the country, and of its inhabitants; the particulars of which will hereafter be related. The harbour, which is called *Samganoodha*, by the natives, is situated on the north side of Oonalashka, the latitude being 53° 55′, the longitude 193° 30′; and in the strait which separates this island from those to the north. It is a mile broad at the entrance, and runs in four miles south by west. It becomes narrower towards the head, the breadth there hardly exceeding a quarter of a mile. Good water may be procured here in abundance, but not a piece of wood is to be found.

CAPS *worn by the* NATIVES *of* OONALASHKA.

Cook

Dreves Sculp.

SECTION XXIX.

Proceed to the Northward—The Isles of Oonella and Acootan—Oonemak—Plenty of Cod taken—Bristol River—Round Island—Mr. Williamson lands at Cape Newenham—Bristol Bay—Shoal Water—The Ships obliged to return—Americans come off to the Ships—Their Behaviour—Death and Character of Mr. Anderson—Sledge Island—King's Island—Cape Prince of Wales—Anchor on the Asiatic Coast—Captain Cook lands at a Village—Interview with the Natives, the Tschutski—Their Weapons, Ornaments, and Dress—Habitations—Summer Huts—The Ships quit the Bay—Cross the Strait to the American Coast—Point Mulgrave—Prodigious Mass of Ice—Icy Cape—Sea-Horses killed for Food—Account of these Animals—Ships almost surrounded with Ice—Remarks on its Formation, &c.—Arrival on the Asiatic Coast.

ON the 2d of July they steered from Samganoodha, with a gentle breeze to the northward, and met with nothing to obstruct them in that course. For, on the one side, the Isle of Oonalashka trended south west; and, on the other, no land was visible more northerly than north-east; all which land was a continuation of the groupe of islands, they had fallen in with on the 25th of the preceding month. That before Samganoodha, is denominated Oonella, being about seven leagues in circumference. Another, lying to the north-eastward of it, named Acootan, is considerably larger, in which are lofty mountains covered with snow.

They made but little progress for several successive days, during which period nothing essential occurred; except that on the 4th they caught, with hook and line, a great number of excellent cod; and they were equally successful on the 8th. Soon after a river presented itself, which appeared to be about a mile in breadth; the water was somewhat discoloured, as upon shoals, and took a meandering direction. It probably abounds with salmon, as many of those fish were seen leaping in the sea before the entrance. The mouth of this stream, which obtained the appellation of Bristol River, is situated in the longitude of 201° 55′ east, and in the latitude of 58° 27′ north.

In the morning of the 12th, the navigators steered a north-west course, and at ten saw the continent. At mid-day, an elevated hill appeared, in the direction of north north-west, nine or ten leagues distant. This was discovered to be an island, to which, on account of its figure, Captain Cook gave the name of Round Island: it is about seven miles distant from the Continent. On the 16th, at five in the morning, the fog clearing up, they found themselves nearer the shore than they expected. Here, between two points, the coast forms a bay, in many parts of which the land was hardly visible from the mast-head. About nine, Captain Cook dispatched Lieutenant Williamson, with orders to go ashore, and observe what direction the coast assumed beyond it, and what was the produce of the country, as it had but a steril aspect from the ships.

On his return, Mr. Williamson reported that he had landed on the point; and having ascended the most elevated hill, found that the remotest part of the coast in sight was almost in a northerly direction. He took possession of the country, in the name of his Britannic Majesty, and left on the hill a bottle, containing a paper, on which was inscribed the names of the ships, and their commanders, &c. The promontory, which he denominated Cape Newenham, is a rocky point of considerable elevation. Over it, or within it, two aspiring hills rise, one behind the other; of which the innermost is the highest. Mr. Williamson could not discern, in the country, a single tree or shrub: the hills were naked, but grass and plants of various kinds grew upon the lower grounds. He saw no other animal than a doe, with her fawn.

Nothing material occurred from the 16th to the 18th, when the depth of water suddenly decreasing to seven and five fathoms; they brought to, till a boat from each ship was sent a-head to sound, and then steered to the north-east. At noon, the water was deepened to seventeen fathoms. Before one'clock, the boats a-head displayed the signal of shoal-water. They had, indeed, only two fathoms, and the ships were then in six fathoms water. Between five and six o'clock, the boats finding less and less water, Captain Cook made the signal to the

Discovery, which was then a-head, to cast anchor, and both ships soon came to. In bringing up the Resolution, her cable parted at the clinch, when they were obliged to make use of the other anchor. They rode in six fathoms water, over a bottom of sand, at the distance of five leagues from the continent. The longitude of their present situation, by lunar observations, was, 197° 45′ 48″ east, and the latitude 59° 37 30″ north. It formed a low point, and received the name of Shoal Ness.

On the morning of the 21st, they weighed anchor, with a gentle breeze at north north-west, and steered back to the south, having three boats a-head employed in sounding. But notwithstanding this precaution, they were at length under the necessity of anchoring, to avoid running upon a shoal that had only a depth of five feet. While they lay at anchor, twenty-seven Americans, each in a separate canoe, came off to the ships, which they approached with great caution, hallooing, and extending their arms, as they advanced, intimating their peaceable intentions. Some of them, at length, came near enough to receive a few trifles which were thrown to them. This encouragement induced the others to venture along-side, and a general traffic immediately commenced between the natives and the Europeans. They resembled the other savages of the coast, and wore in their lips and noses the same species of ornaments; but they were dirtier, and worse clad. They seemed perfectly unacquainted with any civilized nation, and were even ignorant of the use of tobacco. Not a foreign article appeared in their possession, unless a knife may come under that denomination. This was, indeed, nothing more than a piece of common iron, fitted in a wooden handle, so as to answer the purposes of a knife*.

They did not get off the shoals before the evening of the 22d: at day-break on the 23d, they stood to the north-westward, the Discovery being ordered to go a-head. They had not proceeded more than two leagues, before their soundings decreased to six fathoms; they thought it prudent therefore to haul to the south, with a fresh easterly breeze, a course which soon brought them into eighteen fathoms water. About three leagues to the west of this situation, their soundings were twenty-eight fathoms. In the evening of the 25th, having but little wind, and a very thick fog, they let go their anchors in thirty fathoms. About six the next morning, the weather being clearer, they weighed, and with a gentle breeze steered to the northward, the water being about twenty eight fathoms. Proceeding in a westerly course, they discovered land on the 29th, bearing north-west by west, at the distance of six leagues. It was the south-eastern extreme, and formed a perpendicular cliff of great height, whence it obtained the name of Point Upright from Captain Cook. More land was perceived to the westward of this point; and, at a clear interval, another portion of high land might be descried, bearing west by south.

On the 30th, at four in the afternoon, Point Upright bore north-west by north, distant about six leagues. The wind becoming north-easterly, they first made a stretch of ten leagues towards the north-west; and then, as they saw no land in that direction, they stood back to the east for fourteen or fifteen leagues, and met with a great variety of drift wood. Their depth of water was from twenty-two to nineteen fathoms. Variable light winds, with showers, prevailed till the 3d of August †.

On the 5th, at ten in the morning, they ran down, and anchored between an island and the continent in seven fathoms water. Soon after they had cast anchor, Captain Cook, accom-

* The hair of most of them was shaved, or cut short off, a few locks only being left on one side, or behind. As a covering for their heads, they wore a hood of skins, and a bonnet apparently of wood. A part of the dress, which our navigators procured from them, was a kind of girdle, neatly made of skin, with trappings depending from it, and passing betwixt the thighs, so as to conceal the adjacent parts. Their canoes were covered with skins, like the others they had lately seen; but they were broader, and the hole for the conductor wider than any they had before seen.

† At four o'clock in the afternoon of that day, died Mr. Anderson, surgeon of the Resolution, after lingering under a consumption for upwards of twelve months. He was a sensible intelligent young man, and an entertaining companion; well-skilled in his own profession, and had acquired considerable knowledge in other branches of science. The reader of this narrative will be able to form an opinion of the eminent services rendered by this gentleman in the course of the voyage. Soon after he had resigned his breath, land was perceived to the westward at the distance of about twelve leagues. It was supposed to be an island, and to perpetuate the memory of the deceased, for whom Captain Cook had a particular esteem, he distinguished it by the name of Anderson's Island.

panied

People of Tschutski, and their Habitations.

Warren sc.

panied by Mr. King, with some other officers, landed upon the island. He hoped to have had from it a prospect of the coast and sea towards the west; but in that direction the fog was so thick, that the view was not more extensive than it was from the ships. It is about twelve miles in circumference. The surface of the ground principally consists of large loose stones, covered in many places with moss and vegetables: but not a tree or shrub was observed, either on the the island, or upon the neighbouring continent. Captain Cook saw several plovers, and other small birds; a fox was also seen. Some decayed huts were likewise observed in it, and a beaten path was very visible from one end to the other. Near the spot where our adventurers landed, they found a sledge, which induced Captain Cook to give it the name of Sledge Island It was ingeniously constructed like those which are used by the Russians in Kamtschatka, to convey them over the ice or snow. It was ten feet in length, twenty inches in breadth, and had a kind of rail-work on each side.

Perceiving that the whole was a continued coast, our navigators now tacked and steered for its north-western part, near which they anchored in seventeen fathoms. The weather was then very thick and rainy; but at four the next morning it was sufficiently clear to discern the neighbouring land. A lofty steep rock or island bore west by south; another to the northward of it, bore west by north. A lofty peaked hill, bore south-east by east.

The point of land, which Captain Cook named Cape Prince of Wales, is the western extreme of all America hitherto known. Our adventurers imagined they saw some people on the coast, and perhaps they were not mistaken, as some elevations having the appearance of stages, and others resembling huts were distinctly beheld on the same spot. On the 10th, at break of day, they resumed their western course for the land they had seen the preceding day. About seven o'clock it extended from south-west to north-east. Between the south-west extremity, and a point bearing west, at the distance of six miles, the coast forms a capacious bay, in which they dropped their anchors at ten in the forenoon, two miles from the northern shore, over a gravelly bottom.

As they were steering into this bay, they perceived on the north shore, a village, the inhabitants of which appeared exceedingly alarmed at the sight of their vessels; many of them being seen running up the country with burdens upon their shoulders. At this hamlet Captain Cook proposed to land, and proceeded towards it with three armed boats, accompanied by several of the officers. Thirty or forty men, each with a spontoon, a bow and arrow, stood drawn up on a rising ground near the houses. As our navigators drew near, three of them came down towards the shore, politely pulling off their caps, and bowing obediently to their visitors. Though this civility was returned, it did not give them sufficient confidence to wait for the landing of the party; for on their reaching the shore, the natives instantly retired. Captain Cook, alone and unarmed, followed them, and by signs and gestures prevailed on them to stop, and accept some trifling presents: as a compensation for which, they give him two fox skins, and a couple of sea-horse teeth.

They seemed remarkably cautious and timid, expressing their desire, as well as they could, that no more of the people should be permitted to come up. The captain, familiarly laying his hand on the shoulder of one of them, he instantly started back several paces; and in proportion as he advanced, the natives retreated, always assuming the attitude of being ready with their spears, while those on the eminence were prepared to support them with their arrows. At length, however, the proper distribution of a few beads among them, created a degree of confidence, and they were not intimidated when the captain was joined by an additional number of his people; by degrees a sort of traffic commenced between them. In exchange for knives, beads, tobacco, and other articles, they parted with a few arrows, and some of their clothing; but nothing that our navigators had to offer, could prevail on them to part with a spear or a bow. These were continually in readiness, except at one time, when a few persons laid theirs down, while they entertained the Europeans with a song, and a dance: and even then, they were so conveniently placed, that they could catch hold of them in an instant *.

The village contains an assemblage of their sum-

* Their arrows were pointed either with stone or bone, but most of them were without barbs, and many of them had a round blunt point. To what use they may be applied, cannot be positively ascertained, unless it be to kill small

summer and winter habitations: the latter resembles a vault, the floor of which is sunk below the surface of the earth. One of them, which Captain Cook examined, was of an oval form, about twenty feet in length, and twelve in height. The framing consisted of wood, and the ribs of whales, judiciously disposed, and fastened together. Their summer huts were pretty large, and circular, being brought to a point at the top: the framing consisted of slight poles and bones, covered with the skins of sea-animals. On examining one, a fire-place was observed just within the door; where a few wooden vessels were also exposed to view, all in a dirty condition. Their sleeping places were close to the side, and occupied about half the circuit; the bed and bedding consisted of deer-skins, most of them being very dry and clean. About the houses several stages were erected, composed entirely of bones, and ten or twelve feet high: they were apparently intended for drying their fish and skins, as they were thus conveyed out of the reach of their dogs, of which they had great numbers. These dogs are large, and of the fox kind, with woolly hair, and of different colours: they are probably used, in winter, for the purpose of drawing their sledges; a number of which Captain Cook saw laid up in one of their winter huts. It also seems evident that dogs constitute a part of their food, several of them laying dead that had been killed that morning*.

After the party had remained two or three hours with these people, they returned to their ships; and soon after, the wind becoming southerly, our navigators weighed anchor, stood out of the bay, and steered to the north-east. Nothing remarkable occurred till some time in the forenoon of the 16th of August, when they perceived a brightness in the northern horizon, like that reflected from ice, generally called the blink. Little attention, however, was paid to it, from a supposition that it was improbable that such a visitor would speedily be met with. The sharpness of the air, and the gloominess of the weather, for two or three preceding days, seemed indeed to portend some sudden change. About an hour after, the sight of an enormous mass of ice, left them no longer in doubt respecting the cause of the brightness of the horizon. Between two and three o'clock, they tacked close to the edge of the ice, in twenty-two fathoms water, being unable to stand on any further; the ice being quite impenetrable, and extending from west by south, to east by north, as far as the eye could reach. Here great numbers of sea-horses were beheld, some of which were in the water, but most of them were upon the ice.

Captain Cook conceived an idea of hoisting out the boats to kill some of these animals, but the wind freshening he gave up the design; and they continued to ply towards the south. They made no progress; for, on the 18th at noon, they were almost five leagues farther to the eastward. They were then close to the edge of the ice, which was as compact as a wall, and ten or twelve feet high: but farther north it appeared much higher. Its surface was rugged, and, in many places, pools of water were seen upon it. They now stood to the south; and, after running

small animals without lacerating the skin. Their bows were such as our adventurers had observed on the American coast. Their spears, or spontoons were of iron or steel, and of European or Asiatic manufacture; embellished with carving, and inlayings of brass and white metal. Those who had bows and arrows in their hands, had the spear slung by a leathern strap over their right shoulder: a leathern quiver slung over their left shoulder, contained arrows. Some of these quivers were extremely beautiful, being made of red leather, ornamented with embroidery. Several other articles, and particularly their clothing, indicated much ingenuity, far surpassing what could have been expected among so northerly a people.

All the Americans that our navigators had hitherto seen since their arrival on that coast, were rather low of stature, with round chubby faces, and high cheek bones; but the people they now beheld were far from resembling them, having long visages, and being stout and well proportioned. Among the men, women, and children, only one bald head was seen; which was that of an old man; and he was the only one who carried no arms: the others seemed to be chosen men, and somewhat under the middle age. Their ears were all perforated, and some had glass beads hanging to them. These were the only permanent ornaments that were seen about them, for they have not any to their lips.

Their apparel consisted of a cap, a frock, breeches, boots, and gloves, all made of leather, or of the skins of deer, dogs, seals, and other animals; and extremely well dressed; some with the fur on, and others without it.

* From the large bones of fish, and other sea-animals, it may be conjectured that the sea furnishes the inhabitants with the greater part of their subsistence; especially as the country seemed extremely barren.

At first our navigators supposed that some land, which they had descried to the westward, was a part of the island of Alaschka, laid down in Mr. Stœhlin's map; but from the appearance of the coast, the situation of the opposite shore of America, and the longitude, they supposed it was more probably the country of the Tschutski, or the eastern extremity of Asia, explored by Beering in 1728.

ning six leagues, shoaled the water to seven fathoms, though it soon afterwards deepened to nine fathoms*.

The Discovery being about a mile astern, and to leeward, had less depth of water than her associate; and tacking on that account, Captain Cook was obliged to tack also, to prevent separation. Their situation was now very critical: they were in shoal water, upon a lee shore, and the main body of the ice to windward driving down upon them. Captain Cook therefore made a signal for the Discovery to tack, and his ship tacked at the same time.

On the 19th, at eight in the morning, the wind veering to the west, they tacked to the northward. In this situation, they had a great deal of drift ice about their ships; and the main ice was about two leagues to the north. Between one and two they got in with the edge of it; but it was too close, and the pieces were too large, for the ships to be forced through it. An amazing number of sea-horses were seen upon the ice, and as our adventurers were in want of fresh provisions, the boats from each ship were dispatched to procure some of them. By seven in the evening, they had received on board the Resolution, nine of these animals; which till that moment, they had supposed to be sea-cows; nor would they have known the difference, if there had not been two or three men on board who had been in Greenland, and who informed them what animals these were, and that they were rejected as food: many of the people, however, made them serve them for provisions, and there were few among them who did not prefer them to their salt meat †.

But these animals, even when attacked, do not appear to be so dangerous as some authors have represented them, though they make a tremendous appearance. Vast numbers of them, indeed, follow, and approach the boats; but the flash of a musquet in the pan, or even the act of pointing one at them, would send them down in an instant. The female, however, will protect her young one to the last, whether upon the ice or in the water: nor will the young one desert the dam, though she should have been killed: if one of them is destroyed, the other must be taken ‡.

Soon after our navigators had got their sea-horses on board, they were almost surrounded with the ice, and could only clear it by steering to the southward, a measure which they pursued till three o'clock the next morning, with a light westerly breeze. At two in the afternoon they fell in with the main ice, and kept along the edge of it, relying on the roaring of the sea-horses as their guides, being then accompanied

* At this time the weather, which had been hazy, became clearer, and they saw land extending from south-east, to south-east by east, about three or four miles distant. The eastern extremity forms a point, which was so much encumbered with ice that it obtained the appellation of Icy Cape. The other extreme of the land was lost in the horizon, little doubt existing of its being a continuation of the American Continent.

† The fat of these animals is, at first, as fine as marrow, but becomes rancid in a few days, unless it is salted, which preserves it much longer in perfection. The lean flesh is coarse and blackish, and has a strong unpleasant taste; but the heart is almost as palatable as that of a bullock. The fat, when melted, affords a quantity of oil, proper for the supply of lamps; and their hides, which are thick and substantial, are extremely useful about the rigging. The teeth, or tusks of these are very small: even those of the oldest animals among them, did not exceed five inches in length: hence it was supposed, that they had lately shed their old teeth.

They lie on the ice in herds of several hundreds, huddling like swine, one over the other. They roar so loud, that in the night, or when the weather is foggy, they gave notice of the vicinity of the ice, before the people could discern it. The whole herd were never observed to be asleep, some of them being constantly on the watch. These, on the approach of the boat, alarm those which are next to them; and they gradually communicate their fears to the whole herd, and stimulate them to vigilance. They are not, indeed, in a hurry to get away, till they have been fired at, when many of them would immediately fall into the sea, rolling one over the other in the utmost confusion: if they were not killed at the first discharge, by those who fired at them, they were generally lost, though mortally wounded.

‡ The dam, when in the water, supports her young one between her fore fins. Mr. Pennant, in his Synopsis of Quadrupeds, has well described this animal, under the name of *Arctic Waldrus*. Why it should be called a sea-horse, seems extraordinary, unless the word be a corruption of the Russian name Morse; for it does not in the least resemble a horse. It is apparently the same animal that is found in the Gulph of St. Lawrence, and there called a sea-cow. It is more like a cow than a horse; but this resemblance consists in nothing except the snout. It has a strong resemblance of a seal, but incomparably larger. The length of one of them, which was not selected as among the largest, was nine feet four inches from the snout to the tail; the circumference of its body at the shoulder, seven feet ten inches; its circumference near the hinder fins, five feet six inches; and the weight of the carcase, without the head, skin, or entrails, 854 pounds.

with an exceeding thick fog. In this manner they continued sailing till midnight, when they got among the loose pieces of ice.

On the 22d, the wind was southerly, and the weather principally foggy, though not without intervals of sunshine. At eight in the evening they had a calm, which continued till midnight, when they heard the surge of the sea dashing against the ice, and many loose pieces of it were seen about them. On the 26th they fell in with the ice: on the 27th, at four in the morning, they tacked, and stood to the westward, and at seven in the evening they were close in with the edge of the ice, which lay east-north-east, and west-south-west, as far in each of those directions as the eye could reach. Having but little wind, Captain Cook went with the boats to survey the ice, when he found it to consist of loose pieces of various dimensions, and so close together, that he could hardly enter the outer edge with a boat; and it seemed as impracticable for the ships to enter it, as if it had consisted of rocks. He remarked that it appeared to be all pure transparent ice, except the upper surface, which was porous. It seemed to have been wholly composed of frozen snow, and to have been formed at sea, as none of the productions of the land were incorporated with it, which would certainly have been the case if it had been formed in rivers *.

A thick fog, which came on while the captain was thus employed with the boats, hurried him on board sooner than he intended, with only one sea-horse to each ship. Though they had killed many, they could not wait to bring them off with them. The number of these animals, on all the ice that our navigators had seen, was really astonishing; and the people began at length to relish them.

On the 29th they saw the main ice towards the north, and soon after perceived land bearing south-west by west. Presently more land was seen, bearing west. At twelve o'clock the weather was very hazy, with drizzling rain, but afterwards it cleared up, and enabled them to take a tolerable view of the coast; which resembles, in many respects, the opposite coast of America; having low land next the sea, with elevated land farther back. It was destitute of wood, and even of snow; but was apparently covered with a mossy substance which gave it a brownish appearance. In the low ground, between the sea and the high land, a large lake presents itself, extending to the south-east farther than the eye could ken.

The captain wished to see more of the coast to the westward; but finding he could not, the wind freshening, and being apprehensive of the ice coming down upon them, he relinquished his design.

The season was now so far advanced, and the usual time of the frost setting in now approaching, Captain Cook declined any further attempts, this year, to discover a passage into the Atlantic Ocean, in any direction. His attention was more devoted to search for some convenient spot where he might obtain a supply of wood and water, and how he should pass the winter in cultivating the sciences of navigation and geography.

* The pieces of ice that formed the outer edge of the main body, were from forty or fifty yards in extent, to four or five; and had probably been accumulating for several winters. The captain, however, observed that many pieces had been partly washed away, while the under part continued firm for several fathoms round that which appeared above water, like a shoal round a high rock. He measured the depth of water upon one, and found it fifteen feet, and consequently that the ships might have sailed over it.

SECTION

SECTION XXX.

Proceed along the Coast of Asia—Burney's Island—Cape Serdze Kamen—The East Cape of Asia—Bay of St. Lawrence—Two other Bays—Beering's Cape Tschukotskoi—Steer for the Coast of America—Cape Darby—Bald-Head—Captain Cook searches for Wood and Water—Cape Denbigh—Attended by the Natives—Besborough Island—Captain Cook's Interview—Mr. King's with the same Person—Mr. King sent to examine the Coast—Visits from the Natives—Produce of the Country—Norton's Sound—Discovery of Stuart's Island—Description of—Cape Stephens—Point Shallow-Water—Shoals on the North American Coast—Pinnacle Island—The Resolution springs a Leak—Arrive at Oonalashka—Abundant Supplies of Fish—Intercourse with the Natives, &c.—Mr. Isingloff comes on Board—Account of the Islands visited by the Russians—Their Settlement at Oonalashka—Description of the Natives—Manner of Building, &c.—Fish and Fowls—Quadrupeds—Vegetables—Repositories of the Dead, &c.

HAVING stood off till their soundings were eighteen fathoms, they made sail to the eastward along the coast, being now well convinced, that it could only be the continent of Asia. Early on the 30th of August, they made sail, and steered such a course as they thought would bring them in with the land. At ten they obtained a sight of the coast, bearing south-west, at the distance of four miles. About twelve, the mist dispersing, they had a view of the coast; it was almost covered with snow, which had fallen very lately. At length it was found to be an island, at four or five miles distant, bearing south-west half south: it was moderately high, and four or five miles in circumference, with a steep rocky coast *.

On the 2d of September, at eight in the morning, the most advanced land to the south-eastward, had an insular appearance; but a quick succession of thick showers of snow settled on the land, and concealed from our navigators a great part of the coast. In a short time after, the sun, which had not been visible for near five days, broke out at intervals between the showers, and in a great degree annihilated the fog, so that they obtained a perfect sight of it, and perceived that the whole was connected. Cape Serdze Kamen was twelve or thirteen leagues distant, their soundings were twenty-two fathoms, and the distance of the nearest part of the shore was about two leagues †.

On the 6th, at four in the morning, they had a sight of the American coast, near Sledge Island; and, at six in the evening, the island was at the distance of about ten leagues, bearing north-east. On the 7th, at eight in the evening, they made a near approach to the land, Sledge Island bearing north-west, about eight leagues distant. At this time they observed a light on shore; and two canoes, freighted with people, came off towards them. They brought to, that the strangers might have an opportunity of approaching them; but they disregarded all their tokens of amity, and kept at the distance of about a quarter of a mile. In consequence of which they thought proper to leave them, and proceeded along the coast.

On the 9th, at day-break they continued along

* Captain Cook was now convinced of what he had long before imagined, that this was the country of the Tschutski, or the north-eastern coast of Asia; and that Beering had proceeded thus far in 1728: that is to the head which is denominated *Serdze Kamen*, having a rock upon it which represents the figure of a heart. It is an elevated promontory, with a steep rocky cliff fronting the sea.

† Ranging along the coast, and the weather being fair, they saw several of the natives, and some of their habitations; the latter of which had the appearance of hillocks of earth. Reaching St. Lawrence's Bay, they saw some of the natives, as well as others on the opposite side of the Bay. Not one of them, however, came off to the ships; which was very remarkable, as the weather was not unfavourable, and as those whom they had lately visited had no cause to be displeased with them. These people must certainly be the Tschutski, whom the Russians had not subdued.

The Bay of St. Lawrence is about five leagues in breadth at its entrance, and four leagues in depth, becoming narrower towards the bottom. In the afternoon our navigators saw what they had supposed to be a rock, but was afterwards discovered to be a dead whale, which some Asiatics had killed, and were conveying to the shore. They endeavoured to conceal themselves behind the fish, to escape the observation of the Europeans; but they might have avoided that unnecessary trouble, as they proceeded on their course without deigning to take notice of them.

the coast, and perceived land which they supposed to be two islands; the one bearing east, the other south-west. Not long afterwards they found themselves near a coast covered with wood; a pleasing sight to which they had not lately been accustomed. As they advanced northward, land was seen in the direction of north-east; which proved a continuation of the coast on which they now were. They also perceived high land over the islands, seemingly at a considerable distance beyond them. This was supposed to be the continent, and the other land the isle of Alashka; but it appeared doubtful whether they should discover a passage between them, as the water gradually continued shoaling while they proceeded towards the north. Two boats were therefore sent a-head to sound; and Captain Cook ordered the Discovery, as drawing the least water, to lead, keeping nearly in the middle, between the coast and the most northerly island. Thus they continued their course till three in the afternoon, when their soundings did not exceed three fathoms and a half. In no part of the channel could a greater depth be found, by sounding it from one side to the other; it therefore appeared highly necessary to return.

They continued to ply back during the night, and, by day-break on the 10th, had deepened the water about six fathoms. Being then about three miles from the west shore, Captain Cook, attended by M. King, went with two boats, in search of wood and water. They landed in that part where the coast projects into a bluff head, composed of perpendicular *strata* of a dark blue rock, partaking of glimmer and quartz. Adjoining to the beach is a narrow border of land, then covered with long grass: the ground beyond rises abruptly; and towards the top of this elevation a heath is observed, abounding with berries of various kinds: further onward, a level country is thinly covered with birch, willows, and small spruce-trees. The tracks of deer and foxes were seen upon the beach; on which also lay a great quantity of drift-wood. Plenty of fresh water was also to be procured.

Returning on board, Captain Cook intended to bring the ships to an anchor here; but the wind shifting, he stretched over to the opposite shore, in hopes of finding wood there also; and anchored at eight o'clock in the evening, near the southern end of the most northerly island; as they then supposed. The next morning, however, they found it to be a peninsula, united to the continent by a low neck of land, on each side of which a bay is formed by the coast. They plied into the southernmost of these bays, and cast anchor again; the point of the peninsula, to which the name of Cape Denbigh was given, being about a league distant in the direction of north-west*.

Lieutenant Gore, being now dispatched to the peninsula for wood and water, reported that there was but little fresh water, and that wood was difficult to be got at, on account of the boats grounding at some distance from the beach. He returned, however, in the evening, with the launch loaded with wood. The next morning, at eight, all the boats, and a detachment of men, with an officer, were sent to procure wood from the place where Captain Cook had landed on the 10th †.

Before night on the 13th, the ships were furnished with an ample supply of wood; and a dozen tons of water were also conveyed to each of them. On the 14th a party was detached on shore to cut brooms, and the branches of spruce-trees for brewing beer.

Doubts being still entertained, whether the

* Several of the natives were seen upon the peninsula, some of whom came off in a canoe. To one of these men Captain Cook gave a knife, and some beads, with which he seemed highly gratified. The Europeans made significant signs to him to bring them some provisions, when he instantly quitted them, and paddled towards the shore. Happening to meet another man, coming off with two dried salmon, he took them from him: and, when he returned to the ship, he would not deliver them to any person but Captain Cook. Other inhabitants came off soon afterwards, bringing dried fish, which they bartered for different trifles. They had no aversion to tobacco; but they were particularly desirous of knives.

† On Sunday the 14th a family of the natives repaired to the spot, where the party were engaged in accumulating wood. It consisted of a husband, the wife, and their child, accompanied by a person who was exceedingly deformed. The husband was almost blind, and neither he, nor his wife appeared so respectable as many of those they had been accustomed to see on the coast. Both of them had their lower lips perforated, and they had glass beads in their possession, resembling those which had been seen among their neighbours.

Iron seemed most entitled to their approbation: for four knives which had been fabricated from an old iron hoop, the captain purchased four hundred pounds weight of fish that had been recently caught by them. The captain gave the child, who was a female, a few beads, which so affected the mother that she immediately burst into tears; it had the same operation on the father and the cripple; and at last, to complete the concert, upon the child itself. But this music was of short duration.

coast

coast they were now upon, belonged to an island, or the continent of America, Lieutenant King was dispatched, with two boats, well manned and armed, to make such examinations as would tend to remove all difference of opinion on the subject. He was directed not to be absent more than four or five days, and if any unforeseen accident should force the ships off the coast, the rendezvous was to be at the harbour of Samganaodha*.

No difference appeared respecting the size and features of these people, and those which our Europeans had seen on every other part of the coast, except King George's Sound. Their dress which was principally composed of the skins of deer, was fashioned in the same taste; and they had adopted the practice of perforating their lower lips, with the same mode of ornamenting them. Their habitations were situated close to the beach, consisting merely of a sloping roof, without side-walls, formed of logs, and covered with earth and grass. The entrance is at one end, and just within it the fire-place. A small aperture is seen at a little distance from the door of this mansion, to give the smoke an opportunity of making its escape.

Captain Cook imagined that this peninsula had anciently been an island; many presumptive proofs existing of the sea having formerly flowed over the isthmus; and, even at this time, it appeared to be kept out by a bank of sand, stones, and wood, which had been thrown up by the waves†.

When Mr. King returned, he reported that he had proceeded with the boats, about three or four leagues farther than the ships had been able to go; that he then landed on the west side; that from the heights he could perceive the two coasts join, and the inlet terminated in a small river or creek, before which there were banks of sand or mud; and in every part shoal water. From the elevated situation in which Mr. King surveyed the Sound, he could discern many spacious vallies, with rivers flowing through them, well wooded and bounded by hills of a moderate height.

On this inlet Captain Cook bestowed the name of Norton's Sound, in honour of Sir Fletcher Norton, afterwards Lord Grantley, a near relation of Mr. King. The bay is situated on the south-eastern side of it, and is denominated *Chacktoole* by the natives. It is not a very excellent situation, being exposed to the south and south-west wind, nor is a harbour to be met with in this Sound.

Captain Cook now began to reflect that it was high time to quit these northerly regions, and retire to some eligible place during the winter, where he might procure provisions and refreshments. He did not consider the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul in Kamptchatka could furnish a sufficient supply of those articles; and instantly concluded that no situation was so convenient for his purpose as the Sandwich islands: to those therefore he formed a resolution of proceeding. But a supply of water being previously necessary, he resolved to search the coast of America for a harbour, by proceeding along it to the southward. If he did not succeed in that respect, his intention was to reach Samganoodha, the appointed place of rendezvous, if the ships should happen to be separated.

Early on the 17th of September, they weighed anchor with an easterly breeze, and attempted to pass within Besborough Island; but were prevented by meeting with shoal water. At daybreak on the 18th, they saw land, which proved to be an island. This spot, to which the name of Stuart's Island was given, is seventeen leagues

* On the 15th the ships removed over to the bay on the south-side of Cape Denbigh, where they cast anchor in the afternoon. Soon after which many of the inhabitants came off in canoes, and exchanged dry salmon with them for several of their trivial articles. The next morning nine men visited them, each in a separate canoe. They cautiously approached the ship, and drawing up abreast of each other, favoured our navigators with a song; while one of their company accompanied it with ludicrous gesticulations and motions, and another beat upon a sort of drum.

† Lieutenant King returned from his expedition on the 16th, at seven in the evening. He had set out at eight at night on the 14th. The crews of the boats rowed incessantly towards the land, till one in the morning of the 15th. They afterwards set their sails, and stood across the bay. About three they again made use of their oars, and by two in the afternoon, had got within two miles of Bald Head, under the lee of the high land. All the men in the boat belonging to the Resolution, except two, were at that time so oppressed with fatigue and sleep, that Mr. King's utmost endeavours to urge them on were absolutely ineffectual. At length they became so completely exhausted, that they dropped their oars, and even fell asleep at the bottom of the boat. In consequence of this, Mr. King, and two gentlemen who accompanied him, were under the necessity of laying hold of the oars; and they landed, soon after three o'clock, between Bald-Head, and a point that projects to the eastward.

distant from Cape Denbigh, and about seven leagues in circumference. The greatest part of the coast of the continent is low land, though high land was perceived up the country. It forms a point opposite the island, which was named Cape Stephens. Some drift wood was seen on the shores, both of the island and of the continent; but not a tree appeared to be growing upon either. Before they reached Stuart's Island, they passed two little isles situate between them and the main land. As they ranged along the coast, several of the natives appeared upon the shore, and apparently invited them to approach.

They steered then for the most southern part of the continent in sight, till eight in the evening, when the depth of water having decreased to less than four fathoms, they tacked, and passed the night in standing off and on. When they tacked, the southernmost point of land, which was named Shallow Water, bore south-east, at the distance of seven leagues. After much chagrin, they deemed it necessary to quit a coast, upon which they could no longer navigate with safety; they therefore hauled the wind to the northward, and the water gradually increased to eight fathoms.

Nothing remarkable occurred till the morning of the 25th, when the gale increasing, they were reduced to two courses, and close-reefed main-top-sails. In a short time after, the Resolution sprung a leak under the starboard buttock, which was so considerable as to keep one pump continually employed. They would not venture to put the ship upon the other tack; being apprehensive of getting upon the shoals that lie to the north-west of Cape Newenham; but continued to steer towards the west till the 26th, they then wore and stood to the eastward; when the leak ceased to give them any farther trouble. They were now convinced, to their great satisfaction, that it was above the water-line. The gale ceased, but the wind continued some days longer at south and south-west*.

The next day, in the afternoon, our navigators anchored in the harbour of Samganoodha; and on the following morning the carpenters were employed in sheathing and repairing the ships. Berries, in great plenty, being found ashore, one third of the people were required to go, by turns, to gather them. Great quantities were also procured from the natives. If there were any remains of the scurvy, among the people of either ship, these salutary berries, and the use of spruce-beer, which they are permitted to partake of every other day, would effectually eradicate it.

They were also supplied with a quantity of fish, particularly salmon, both fresh and dried. Some of the fresh was in the highest perfection; but there was also an inferior sort. Drawing the seine they caught, at different times, a great many salmon trout; and a halibut that weighed two hundred and fifty-four pounds. They afterwards had recourse to hooks and lines. A boat was daily sent out, which seldom returned without eight or ten halibut; a quantity more than sufficient for the consumption of all the people†.

On the 10th Lediard returned with three Russian seamen, or furriers, who, with several others, resided at Egoochshac, where they had a dwelling-house, store-houses, and a sloop of thirty tons burthen. They were all three sensible intelligent men, and ready to communicate any information that might be thought useful. But, not having an interpreter present, they could not perfectly understand each other.

* On the 2d of October, at day-break, our navigators saw the island of Oonakashka, in a south-east direction; but as the land was intercepted by a thick haze, they were not certain of their situation till noon, when the observed latitude determined it. They hauled into a bay, ten miles to the westward of Samganoodha, distinguished by the name of Egoochshac; but finding very deep water, they did not choose to continue there. The natives visited them several times, bringing with them dried salmon, and other fish, which they exchanged with the seamen for tobacco. A few days before, every ounce of tobacco in the ship had been distributed among them, and the quantity was quite inadequate to their demands: yet, such thoughtless and improvident creatures are British sailors, they were as lavish in making their bargains, as if they had landed at a port in Virginia.

† On the 8th, Captain Cook received a very singular present from a native of Oonalashka. It was a rye loaf, or rather a pye in the form of a loaf, as it enclosed some salmon, highly seasoned with pepper. The giver, whose name was Derramoushki, brought a similar present for Captain Clerke, and a note to each of the commanders, written in a language which none of the people understood. It was reasonably apprehended that these presents were made by some Russians in the neighbourhood, and therefore the captains, returned, by the same messenger, to these unknown friends, a few bottles of rum, wine, and porter, as a token of acknowledgment of their favours. They also sent, with Derramoushki, Corporal Lediard, an intelligent corporal of the marines, to gain some farther information, with orders, that, if he met with any Russians, he should by some means endeavour to inform them that they were Englishmen, the friends and allies of their nation.

The

SEA OTTER.

W. Hawkins sculp.

The three Russians having remained all night with Captain Cook, visited Captain Clerke the next morning; after which they departed, perfectly satisfied with the reception they had met with.

In the evening of the 14th, while Captain Cook and Mr. Webber were at a village near Samganoodha, a Russian landed there, who proved to be the principal person of that country in this and the adjacent isles. His name was Erasim Gregoriff Sin Ismyloff. He arrived in a canoe carrying three persons, attended by twenty or thirty smaller canoes, each conducted by one man. On their landing, a small tent was constructed for Ismyloff, of materials which had arrived with him, and they afterwards made others for themselves of their canoes and paddles, which they covered with grass. Ismyloff invited the captain and Mr. Webber into his tent, and set before them some dried salmon and berries. He had the appearance of being a sensible man, but the captain had the mortification of not being able to converse with him, except by signs, figures, and other characters: he invited him on board the following day, in consequence of which he arrived, with all his attendants.

The captain found him well acquainted with the geography of those regions, and with all the discoveries which had been made in that quarter by the Russians. On seeing the modern maps, he immediately pointed out their errors. But Ismyloff, and the others affirmed, that they were entirely acquainted with the American continent to the northward. According to the information obtained from Ismyloff and his countrymen, the Russians have several times attempted to get a footing, upon that part of the continent that lies contiguous to Oonalashka, and the adjoining islands, but have constantly been repulsed by the natives, whom they pronounce a very treacherous people. They mentioned two or three captains, or principal men who had been murdered by them; and some of the Russians exhibited wounds which they said they received there.

On the 16th Ismyloff offered Captain Cook a sea-otter skin, which he said was worth eighty roubles at Kamtschatka; but the captain thought proper to decline the offer, though he accepted of some dried fish, and a few baskets of the lily, or *saranne* root. On the 19th Ismyloff made him another visit, bringing with him two charts, which he permitted Captain Cook to copy. They were both manuscripts, and bore every mark of authenticity. One of them comprehended the Penshinskian sea; the coat of Tartary, as low as the latitude of 41° north; the Kurile Islands, and the peninsula of Kamptschatka. The other chart comprehended all the discoveries that the Russians had made to the eastward of Kamptschatka.

After these Russians had given Captain Cook all the information they could, they assured him that they knew of no other islands, except those that were represented upon the chart; and that no Russian had ever visited any part of the American continent to the northward, except that which is opposite the country of the Tschutskis*.

Mr. Ismyloff had considerable knowledge in astronomy, and in the most useful branches of the mathematics. Captain Cook made him a present of a Hadley's octant; and though it was probably the first he had ever seen, he soon made himself acquainted with most of the uses to which that instrument could be applied.

In the morning of the 22d. they attempted to get out to sea, with the wind at south-east, but were disappointed: In the afternoon of the 23d, they were visited by a Russian named Jacob Jvanovitch Soposnicoff, who commanded a small vessel at Oomanak; a man of great modesty, and less addicted to the immoderate use of strong liquors than the Russians generally are. He seemed to know what supplies could be procured at the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, and the value of the respective articles, more accurately than Mr. Ismyloff.

After they had contracted a kind of intimacy with these Russians, many of them occasionally visited them at their settlement on their island, where they always met with a very favourable reception. This settlement consisted of a dwelling-house, and two store-houses. There was also a number of Kamtschadales, and Oonolashkans, as servants to the former. Some other of the natives, who seemed independent of the Russians, lived at the same place. They all re-

* If Mr. Stæhlin was not egregiously imposed upon, what could induce him to publish a map so extremely erroneous as that of the New Northern Archipelago, in which many of these islands are jumbled together without any regard to truth or authenticity, though he ventures to style it, "a very accurate little map."

side

side in the same house; the Russians at the upper end, the Kamptschadales in the middle, and the Oonalashkans, or natives, at the lower end; where a large boiler is fixed to accommodate them in the preparation of their food, which chiefly consists of the produce of the sea, with the addition of roots and berrics*.

The people of Oonalashka are rather below the middle stature, plump and jolly, with swarthy chubby faces, black eyes, and middling beards. Their hair is long, straight, and black; which the men wear loose behind, and cut before: the women usually wear it formed into a bunch.

Both sexes adopt the same fashion with regard to dress, the only difference is in the materials. The frocks of the women are made of seal-skin; those of the men, of the skins of birds; both of which descend below the knees. This constitutes the whole dress of the females, but the men wear an additional frock, composed of gut, which water cannot penetrate; it has also a hood to it, which is drawn over the head. Many of them wear boots; and all of them an oval-snouted wooden cap, with a rim to admit the head. They dye these caps of various colours, and round the upper part of the rim affix the long bristles of some sea-animal, on which glass beads are strung. They make no use of paint, but the women slightly puncture their faces; and both sexes perforate the under lip, which they ornament with pieces of bone.

Their food consists of fish, and other sea animals, birds, roots, and berries; most of which is eaten raw. Boiling and broiling are the only modes of cookery which seemed to be adopted by them; the former of which was probably taught them by the Russians. Some of them have small brass kettles, and those who have not such a utensil, make one of a flat stone, with sides of clay.

Captain Cook was present, when the chief of the island dined on the raw head of a large halibut, just caught. Before any part of it was given to the chief, two of his servants devoured the gills, after having only squeezed out the slime. One of them then cut off the head of the fish, washed it in the sea, and afterwards seated himself by the chief; having previously pulled up some grass, upon which the head was placed, the rest being strewed before the chief. He then cut large pieces from the cheeks, and placed them within the reach of the chief, who swallowed them with seeming satisfaction. Having finished his meal, the remainder of the head was cut in pieces, and given to the attendants, who tore off the meat with their teeth, and gnawed the bones with an appetite truly canine.

Though the Oonalashkans do not besmear their persons with paint, they are as filthy in their houses, as those savages who adopt that horrid practice. Their habitations are thus constructed: they dig an oblong pit in the ground, of about fifty feet in length, and twenty in breadth, or proportionably of smaller dimensions. Over this excavation they form the roof of wood, which they cover first with grass, and then with earth; giving the whole structure the external appearance of a dunghill. Towards each end of the roof, a square opening is left, which gives admittance to the light; one of them being also intended to go in and out by, with the assistance of a kind of ladder. Some of the houses have

* The Russians are such adepts in cookery, that they can render an indifferent article palatable. They can even make an excellent dish of whales' flesh; and they form a kind of pan-pudding of salmon-roe beaten up fine and fried, which is a good substitute for bread. Except the juice of berries, which they usually sip at their meals, they have no other beverage than pure water; and it is a fortunate circumstance for them that they have nothing stronger.

As the island furnishes the inhabitants with food, so it does, in some measure, with clothing. This is principally composed of skins, appropriated to particular uses. The upper garment resembles a waggoner's frock, extending to the knees. They have also one or two waistcoats, a pair of breeches, a fur cap, and a pair of boots: the soles and upper leathers of the latter article being made of Russia leather, and a kind of strong gut serves as a protection for the legs. Ismyloff, and Ivanowich wore a calico frock, and a silken shirt.

Many Russians are settled on the principal islands between Kamtschatka and Oonolashka for the purpose of collecting furs. Their grand object is the otter, or sea-beaver; but skins of an inferior, nature assists in the completion of their cargoes.

The native inhabitants of this island appear to be a peaceable and inoffensive race; and, with respect to honesty, they might serve as a pattern to the most civilized nation upon earth; but if a judgment may be formed from their neighbours, with whom the Russians are unconnected, it seems doubtful whether this was their original disposition, or whether it is the consequence of their present state of subjection. It appears, indeed, that the Russians have been under the necessity of making some severe examples before they could bring the islanders into tolerable order. At present, however, the greatest harmony subsists between the Russians and the natives.

also an entrance below. Round the sides and ends of these huts, the families, (several of which live together) have their separate apartments, where they sleep and work; not upon benches, but in a concave trench, dug round the inside of the house, and covered with mats: so that this part of the house is tolerably clean and decent. The middle of the house, which is common to all the families, is not entitled to the same commendations; for though it is covered with dry grass, it is a receptacle for every kind of filth.

Their household furniture consists of buckets, wooden bowls, spoons, matted baskets, and perhaps a Russian kettle, or pot. All these utensils are neatly formed, though no other tools were seen in the possession of the inhabitants than a knife, and a kind of hatchet. Most of these people smoke and chew tobacco, and have the additional qualification of taking snuff*.

These people produce fire both by collision and attrition: the first by striking two stones against each other, on one of which a quantity of brimstone has been previously rubbed. The latter is performed with two pieces of wood; one of which is flat, and the other is a stick of about eighteen inches in length: the pointed end of the stick is pressed upon the other, whirling it nimbly round as a drill; and thus fire is speedily procured: This method is not only practised by these people, but also by the Kamtschadales, the Greenlanders, the Otaheitans, the New Hollanders, and the Brazillians

Our navigators saw no weapons among the natives of Oonalashka, either of the offensive or defensive kind. It cannot be supposed that the Russians found them in such a defenceless state; for it seems probable, that, for their own security, they have disarmed them. Political motives may likewise have induced the Russians not to suffer these islanders to have any large canoes, for it can hardly be supposed that they had none such originally, as they were found among all their neighbours. None, however, were observed here, except two or three that belonged to the Russians.

Their canoes are smaller than any of those which our navigators had seen upon the coast of America; from which, however, they differ but little in their construction: the framing being of slender laths, and the covering of seal-skins. They are about twelve feet in length, eighteen inches in breadth about the middle; and twelve or fourteen inches in depth. They occasionally carry two persons; one of whom sits in the seat, or round hole, which is nearly in the middle, and the other is stretched at full length in the canoe. Round the hole a rim of wood is attached, about which gut-skin is sewed, which may either be drawn together, or opened like a purse. They make use of a double-bladed paddle, which is held by both hands in the middle, striking the water with a quick and regular motion, first on one side, and then on the other. The canoe, thus impelled, goes at a great rate, and in a direction perfectly straight†.

Here are whales, porpoises, halibut, salmon, trout, sword-fish, cod, soals, and several other sorts of fish. Salmon and halibut are found in the greatest plenty; and on these the inhabitants are principally supported. Seals, and the tribe of sea.animals, are less numerous here than they are in many other seas. This is, in some measure, reasonably accounted for, from the population of

* They did not seem to be destitute of other instruments, except sewing needles, their own being formed entirely of bone: with these they sew their canoes, fashion their habiliments, and perform very curious embroidery. Instead of thread, they use the fibres of sinews, which they split to the thickness they require. All sewing is performed by the women: they are the shoe-makers, taylors, and boat-coverers. They manufacture mats and baskets of grass, which are both strong and beautiful: in most of their work they appear not to be deficient either in perseverance or ingenuity.

No fire-place was seen in any of their habitations: with lamps, they are not only lighted, but heated; and though their construction is simple, they seem to answer the purpose for which they were intended. They are made of a flat stone, hollowed on one side like a plate; in the hollow part they put the oil, mixed with some dry grass, which serves for the purpose of a wick. Both sexes occasionally warm themselves over one of these lamps, by placing it between their legs, under their garments, and sitting over it for some minutes.

† Their implements for hunting and fishing are ingeniously made of wood and bone, varying but little from those used by the Greenlanders. The only difference is in the point of the missile dart, which, in some of them, does not exceed an inch in length; but those of the Greenlanders, as we are informed by Crantz, are about eighteen inches in length. These darts are usually made of fir, of the length of about four feet. The natives throw these darts to the distance of eighty or ninety yards, with great velocity and precision. These people are exceedingly expert in striking fish, both in the sea, and in rivers. They are also adepts in the different modes of fishery with hooks, lines, nets, and wears. Their hooks are formed of bone, and their lines of twisted sinews.

these regions; as the inhabitants destroy these animals for their food and attire. Sea-horses, however, are found in great abundance about the ice; and the sea-otter is hardly any where to be met with but in this sea. Our navigators sometimes saw an animal that blew after the manner of whales: it was larger than a seal, but it resembled that animal about the head; its colour was white, with dark spots interspersed. It was probably the *manati,* or sea-cow*.

The few land birds that they observed appeared to be the same as those they had been accustomed to see in Europe; but there may perhaps be many others which they had not an opportunity of observing. A beautiful bird was shot in the woods at Norton Sound, which is sometimes found in England, known by the appellation of chatterer. Among the birds seen by the people belonging to the ships, were the bull-finch, the yellow-finch, the wood-pecker, and the tit-mouse.

Their excursions and observations being wholly confined to the sea-coast, they acquired little knowledge of the animals or vegetables of the country. There are no deer at Oonalashka, or any of the neighbouring islands; nor have they any dogs, or other domestic animals. Foxes, and weasels were the only quadrupeds perceived by our navigators; but the natives informed them that they had also hares, and the *marmottas,* mentioned by Krasheninikoff. Hence it appears that the inhabitants are indebted to the sea, and the rivers, for the greatest share of their food. From the same sources they derive their wood for building, and other necessary purposes; for not a tree is to be seen growing upon any of the islands, nor on the neighbouring coast of the continent. Insects and reptiles were not numerous; a few musquitoes and lizards were observed†.

Plants are found in great variety at Oonalashka; many of which are also common in Europe, as well as Newfoundland, and other parts of America: some of them are also found in Kamtschatka. Of these the *saranne,* or lily root is the principal; it is about the size of a root of garlick, and composed of a small number of cloves and grains: when boiled, it appears like saloop, and the taste is thought agreeable by some persons. Among the food of the natives, some other wild roots are entitled to a degree of approbation; as the stalk of a plant, resembling Angelica; with berries of different sorts, such as cranberries, hurtle-berries, bramber-berries, and heath-berries. Also a small red berry, which in Newfoundland is termed the partridge-berry; and another brown berry, not generally known. The last has the flavour of a sloe, but is unlike it in every other respect: eaten in a considerable quantity, it is very astringent ‡.

The Oonalashkans bury their dead on the tops of hills, and raise a kind of hillock over the grave. One of the natives, who attended Captain Cook in a country jaunt, pointed out several of these repositories of the dead. One of them, by the side of a road, had a heap of stones over it; and all who passed it added another to the heap. Several stone hillocks were also observed, which seemed to have been artificially raised; some of which appeared to be of great antiquity. Respecting their notions of a deity, and a future state, no information could be procured; nor of their diversions or amusements. They are cheerful and friendly to each other, and treated our navigators with the utmost civility.

The Russians would form no amorous attachments with their women, on account of their not being Christians. The English, however, were

* Water-fowls, both in quantity and variety, are less common here than in the northern parts of the Atlantic ocean. Some, indeed, were seen here, which our navigators did not remember to have noticed in other countries: particularly the *alca monochroa* of Steller, and a black and white duck, which they apprehend was different from the stone-duck, described by Krasheninikoff in his history of Kamtschatka. It is remarkable that penguins, which are frequently observed in many parts of the world, are not to be met with in this sea. Albatrosses are also extremely scarce here.

† With respect to the drift-wood on the shores of these islands, little doubt can be entertained of its coming from America; for, though there may be none on the neighbouring coast, a sufficient quantity may grow farther up the country, which may be broken loose by torrents in the spring, and brought down to the sea. Large quantities may also be wafted from the woody coasts, though situated at a greater distance.

‡ Several plants which were serviceable to our navigators, were rejected by the Russians and the natives: among these were pea-tops, wild purslain, cresses, a sort of scurvy-grass, and a few others; they partook of these, however, either in soups or in salads. The vallies and low grounds abound in grass, which grows very thick, and to a great length: insomuch that our navigators were of opinion, that cattle might subsist in Oonalashka in every season of the year, without being housed. The soil, in many places, seems capable of producing grain and vegetables; but, at present, the Russian traders, and the natives, seem contented with the spontaneous productions of nature.

less

less scrupulous, and some of them had reason to repent, that the women of Oonalashka encouraged their addresses; for they suffered by a malady which was not wholly unknown in that country. The natives are also subject to the cancer, and few of them enjoy a long life. Our navigators did not see a man or woman that they supposed had attained the age of sixty years, and they beheld very few who seemed to have survived fifty.

Though the inhabitants on this north-western side of America, resemble the Equimaux and Greenlanders in person, dress, weapons, &c. our adventurers were much less struck with that, than with the affinity of the dialects of the Greenlanders and Esquimaux, and those of Oonalashka and Norton's Sound. Hence there is reason to suppose, that all these nations are of the same extraction.

SECTION XXXI.

Departure from Samganoodha—Amoghta—An elevated Rock—Repass the Strait between Oonolashka and Onella—Proceed to the South—A Man killed on board the Discovery—Mowee discovered—Visited by the Natives—Visit from Terecoboo, a Chief—Owhyhee discovered—An Eclipse—Eulogium on the Natives of Owhyhee—Visits from the Islanders—Joined by the Discovery—Mr. Bligh examines Karakakooa—Anchor in the Bay.—Description of Karakakooa Bay—Many of the Natives surround the Ships—Despotic Authority of the Chiefs—Receive a Visit from Koah—Description of the Morai at Kakooah—Offering to Captain Cook at the Morai—Observatories erected—The Spot of which is tabooed—Method of curing Meat in the Tropical Climates—Society of Priests discovered—Ceremony at the Reception of Captain Cook—Arrival of Terecoboo—The inhabitants reduced to Obedience by firing a Musquet—Remarkable Ceremony—Visit from Terecoboo.

ON the 26th of October our navigators sailed from Samganoodha harbour, when they steered to the westward. They intended to proceed to the Sandwich Islands, to pass some of the winter months there, and then advance in their progress to Kamtschatka, so as to arrive there about the middle of May in the ensuing summer. This resolution being formed, Captain Cook gave Captain Clerk orders how to proceed, in case a separation should happen: Sandwich Islands being appointed for the first place of rendezvous; and Petropaulowska, in Kamtschatka for the second.

Having got out of the harbour, they were carried to the western part of Oonolashka by the evening. Here the wind was at south, and blew in heavy squalls, accompanied with rain, hail, and snow. In the morning of the 28th, the strength of it was much abated; but towards the evening it increased to a very hard gale, attended with rain. At six in the morning of the 29th, they discovered land, which they supposed to be the island of Amoghta. Steering to the north-east, they discovered, at eleven o'clock, a rock elevated like a tower. About three in the afternoon, they shortened sail, and hauled the wind, being unable to get through the strait between Oonolashka and Onella before night. On the 30th, about three in the afternoon, they got through the strait, Cape Providence bearing west-south-west.

On the 2d of November, the wind was south: in the evening a violent storm occasioned them to bring to. Several guns were fired by the Discovery, which were immediately answered by her consort; and she joined her again the next morning at ten. On the 7th a cormorant flew many times round the ship: as these birds seldom go far from land, it was supposed there was some at no great distance, though none was then to be seen. Having but little wind in the afternoon, Captain Clerke came on board with some unpleasant intelligence: he informed the captain that, the second night after they departed from Samganoodha, the main tack of the Discovery gave way, when one man was killed, and the boatswain, with two or three others, wounded.

On the 26th, at day-break, land was discovered, extending from south-south-east to west. They stood for it, and now perceived that their discovery

discovery of the group of the Sandwich Islands had been very imperfect, as those which they had visited in their progress northward, all lie to the leeward of their present station. Unable to weather the island, they bore up, and ranged to the westward. They saw people on many parts of the shore, with several houses and plantations. The country appeared to be well wooded and watered: the latter was particularly evident, as the streams, in various places, were seen falling into the sea.

It being extremely necessary to procure an ample supply of provisions at these islands, which could not have been accomplished if a free trade with the natives were to be allowed, Captain Cook issued an order, prohibiting all persons from trading except those appointed by himself or Captain Clerke: and those were under limitations of trading only for provisions. Injunctions were also published against the introduction of women into the ships, except on certain stipulated conditions; but anticipation had prevented the good effect of this injunction, the evil having already been almost universally adopted.

Some canoes came off about noon, and supplied our adventurers with a quantity of cuttle-fish, in exchange for nails and pieces of iron. Of fruit and roots they brought very little, but said they had plenty of them in their island, as well as of hogs and fowls. The evening being clear, they supposed the westernmost land that they could see, to be an island, distinct from that off which they now were. Having no doubt that the natives would return to the ships the next day, with the produce of their country, they plyed off the whole night, and stood close in shore the next morning. At first they had few visitors, but, towards noon, many of them made their appearance, bringing with them bread-fruit, potatoes, tarro, plantains, and small pigs, all of which they exchanged for nails and iron tools; the Europeans having few other articles to dispose of.

In the afternoon of the 30th, when they were off the north-east end of the island, some more canoes came off to the ship. Most of these appertained to Terreeoboo, a chief who came in one of them. He made Captain Cook a present of two or three pigs; and a little fruit was procured by bartering with the other people. At the expiration of about two hours, they all departed, except seven or eight of their company who chose to remain on board. A double sailing canoe arrived soon after; which they towed astern the whole night. In the evening, another island was discovered to the windward, which, among the natives, was known by the appellation of *Owhyhee:* that which they had been off for several days, was called *Mowee.*

On the 1st of December, at eight in the morning, Owhyhee extended from south-east to south-west. Perceiving they could fetch Owhyhee, they stood for it; when such of their visitors as came from Mowee, not choosing to accompany them, thought proper to embark in their canoes, and went ashore. On the 2d, they saw, with surprise, the summits of the mountains of Owhyhee covered with snow. Approaching the shore, some of the natives came off to them, who at first appeared a little shy, but were easily prevailed on to go on board. At length they were even induced to return to the island, and bring off such articles as were wanted. They had plenty of visitors after these people had reached the shore, who brought with them a tolerable supply of pigs, with a reasonable quantity of fruit and roots. On the 6th they again traded with the natives, but received no very considerable addition to their stock of provisions*.

Having kept at a reasonable distance from the coast

* Captain Cook having procured an ample quantity of sugar, and knowing that a decoction of it made a very palatable beer, he ordered some of it to be brewed for their general use. But when this beverage was prepared, not one of the crew would deign to drink it. The Captain having had no other motive for recommending this liquor, than that of preserving their spirits for a colder climate, neither exerted his authority, nor had recourse to persuasion to induce them to drink it; but he thought proper to order that no grog should be served in either of the ships. The Captain and his officers constantly drank this sugar-cane beer, whenever materials could be procured for brewing it. Some hops, which were on board, added greatly to the perfection of it, and it was doubtless extremely wholesome; though the inconsiderate seamen alledged that it was injurious to their health.

Innovations on board a ship, though ever so much to the advantage of the seamen, are sure to incur their disapprobation. Portable soup, and sour-krout, were at first condemned by them as improper food for human beings. Few commanders have introduced more useful varieties of food into their ships than Captain Cook has done. Few others

coast till the 13th, they stood in again, more to windward; and, after having traded with the natives who came off to them, they returned to sea. The wind continued at south-east the 16th; on the 17th it was variable; and on the greatest part of the 18th it was continually veering. Sometimes it blew in squalls, and sometimes it was calm.

At noon, on the 20th, the south-east point bore south, at the distance of three leagues; in the afternoon they were visited by some of the natives, who came off in their canoes, bringing with them a few pigs and plantains; the latter were highly acceptable, as our adventurers had been without vegetables for several days: but this supply was so inconsiderable, that it was hardly sufficient for the consumption of a day; they therefore stood in the next morning, till within four miles of the land, when a number of canoes came off, laden with provisions. Trade was then carried on between the parties till four in the afternoon; when, having obtained a tolerable supply, they made sail, stretching off to the northward*.

At eight in the morning of the 22d, they tacked to the southward, and entertained hopes of weathering the island. They would indeed have succeeded, if a calm had not ensued, and committed them to the mercy of a swell which impelled them towards the land, from which they were not above the distance of two leagues. Some light puffs of wind, however, removed them from all danger. While they were becalmed, some islanders came off with hogs, fowls, and fruit. One of the canoes contained a goose, which, with regard to magnitude, was hardly equal to a Muscovy duck. The plumage was of a dark grey, and the bill and legs were black.

After purchasing the articles which the natives had brought off, they made sail, and stretched to the north. At midnight, they tacked, and stood to the south-east. Supposing the Discovery would see them tack, the signal was omitted; but it afterwards appeared that she did not see them, and continued standing to the north; for the next morning, at day-light, she was not to be seen: but, as the weather was now hazy, they could not see far; it was therefore probable that the Discovery might be following them. At six in the evening, the southernmost part of the island bore south-west, the nearest shore about seven miles distant: consequently they had succeeded in their endeavours in getting to the windward of the island†.

On the 30th they began to be in want of fresh provision, but a calm prevented them from approaching the shore. A breeze, however, sprung up at midnight, which enabled them to stand in for the land at day-break. At ten the islanders visited them, bringing a quantity of fruit and roots, and only three small pigs. Desirous of traffic, our adventurers brought to, but were shortly interrupted with excessive rain. They were, indeed, too far from the shore; nor could they venture to go nearer, as they could not, for a moment, depend upon the wind's continuing where it was. Before day-break, on the first of January, the atmosphere was laden with heavy clouds, and the new year was ushered in with a heavy shower. At ten, however, the rain ceased, and the sky became clear‡.

others have, indeed, been driven to the necessity of trying such experiments. But it was by certain deviations from established practice, that he was enabled, in a great degree, to preserve his people from the scurvy, which has probably destroyed more British sailors in their peaceful voyages, than the enemy in military expeditions.

* The people of this island were extremely candid and ingenuous in their dealings with our navigators. It is but justice to observe, that they never attempted to over-reach or impose upon them in their respective exchanges, nor ever basely condescended to be guilty of a single theft.

† The Discovery was still invisible; but as the wind was favourable for her to follow them, they naturally expected that she would shortly join them. At length, however, it was conjectured that she was gone to leeward, in order to meet them that way, not having been able to weather the north-east point of the island.

‡ Being now about five miles from the shore, some canoes arrived with hogs, fruit, and roots. They traded with the inhabitants till three in the afternoon, when having procured a tolerable supply, they made sail, in order to proceed to the lee side of the island, in search of the Discovery. They stretched to the eastward till midnight, when the wind favoured them; and they went upon the other tack. The 2d, 3d, and 4th of January were spent in running down the south-east side of the island, standing off and on during the nights. The natives frequently came off to them, at the distance of five leagues from the shore, but never ventured to bring much with them; either from a fear of losing their articles in the sea, or from the uncertainty of the market. Our adventurers procured from them a quantity of salt, of a most excellent quality.

In the morning of the 5th, they passed the south point of the island, on which a considerable village is situated; many of whose inhabitants thronged off to the ship with hogs and women. It was impossible to prevent the latter from coming on board; they were strangers to delicacy, and even to decency, seeming to have visited the strangers with no other view than to make a tender of their persons.

Possessing a quantity of salt, our adventurers only purchased such hogs as were large enough for pickling; but they could seldom procure any that exceeded the weight of sixty pounds. They had, fortunately, some vegetables remaining, for they were now scantily supplied with any of those productions; and from the appearance of that part of the country, it seemed incapable of producing them. The explosion of a volcano appeared to have made general devastation in the neighbourhood. The natives having now left them, they ran a few miles down the coast in the evening, and passed the night in standing off and on.

The next morning they were again visited by the natives, who came laden with articles of commerce as before. Between ten and eleven, they had the pleasure of seeing the Discovery coming round the south point of the island, and she joined them about one. Captain Clerke immediately came on board the Resolution, and informed Captain Cook, that, having cruised four or five days where they were separated, he plied round the east side of the island, but meeting with unfavourable winds, he had been driven to some distance from the coast. One of the islanders, at his own request, continued on board the whole time, though opportunities presented themselves of leaving the ship.

On the 8th, at day-break, they perceived that the currents had carried them back considerably to windward, and that they were off the south-west point of the island: in consequence of which they brought to, that the inhabitants might have an opportunity of trading with them. Having four men and ten women on board, who came the preceding day, the company of the females was found very disgusting to Captain Cook; they therefore stood in shore, on the 9th, about noon, in expectation of getting rid of their guests: when, some canoes coming off, they embraced that opportunity of sending them away*.

The Bay of Karakakooa is situated on the west side of the island of Owhyhee. It extends about a mile in depth, and is bounded by two low points of land, at the distance of half a league from each other. On the north point, which is barren, stands the village of Kowrowa. A more considerable village, named Kahooa, appears in the bottom of the bay, near a stately grove of cocoa-trees. A high rocky cliff, inaccessible from the sea-shore, rises between them. Bordering on the south-side of the coast, the land has a rugged appearance; beyond which the country rises gradually, and abounds with cultivated inclosures. The habitations of the people are irregularly and plentifully scattered about in the vicinity. Our navigators moored at the north-side of the bay, and within a quarter of a mile of the shore.

The inhabitants, perceiving their intention of anchoring here, came off in great numbers, to testify their extreme joy on the occasion, by singing, shouting, and the most extravagant gestures. The decks, sides, and riggings of the ships abounded with them. Women and children, who could not procure canoes, swam round them in great multitudes; some of whom, being unable to get on board, amused themselves by playing in the water.

Among the chiefs who came on board the Resolution, was a young man, named Pareea, who was generally acknowledged as a person of great authority. He informed Captain Cook that he was a *Jakanee*†, to the sovereign of the island, who was then engaged on a military expedition at Mowee, and was expected to return

* A few canoes came off to them with some hogs on the 13th, but they had no vegetables, which were now much wanted. On the 16th canoes arrived from all quarters: before ten o'clock in the morning, a thousand persons were supposed to be about the two ships, most of the canoes being crowded with people, and laden with hogs, and other productions of the island. Our navigators were not apprehensive that any hostile measures were projected against them, as none of these people had a weapon with them of any description. Trade and curiosity were their only inducements. One of these visitors, however, took a boat's rudder from the ship, but he was not detected till it was too late to recover the pilfered article. Thinking this circumstance would afford a proper opportunity, of shewing these people the use of fire-arms, Captain Cook ordered two or three musquets, and as many four-pounders, to be fired over the canoe which carried off the rudder. But as the shot was not intended to take effect, the surrounding multitude of natives were rather more surprised than frightened.

At the approach of night, the greater part of their visitors retired to the shore; but several of them, at their own earnest request, were permitted to sleep on board. It afterwards appeared that curiosity was not their only motive, as several articles wsre missing the next morning: the captain, however, in consequence of these, and other petty depredations, came to a resolution not to admit so many visitors to continue with them on any future night.

† It was not clearly understood whether this was a name of office, or whether it was expressive of some degree of affinity.

KARAKAKOOA BAY, *in the Island of* OWHYHEE.

Cook

Sparrow sc.

in a few days. Some presents from Captain Cook obtained his friendship, and he was found extremely serviceable. They had not been long at anchor, when the Discovery had so many people hanging on one side, that she was observed to heel considerably; and the crouds could not be prevented from pressing into her. Apprehensive of disagreeable consequences, Captain Cook expostulated with Pareea on the injury the vessel might sustain, when he instantly cleared her of her incumberances, and dispersed the canoes that surrounded her*.

Both these chiefs were prepossessing, not only in their figures, but in their countenances. Kaneena, whose portrait was drawn by Mr. Webber, was an extraordinary character. His height was about six feet, his features regular and expressive; his deportment easy, firm, and graceful, and his eyes dark and brilliant.

But though the inhabitants had hitherto acted fairly and honestly, the case was now exceedingly altered: the multitude of islanders in every part of the ships, afforded frequent opportunities of pilfering without danger of discovery; and even if detected must have escaped with impunity from their inferiority in number. To the encouragement of their chiefs, this change might also be attributed; for, as the booty was often traced into the possession of some great man, little doubt can be entertained that these depredations were made at their instigation.

When the Resolution had got into her station, Pareea and Kaneena brought a third chief on board, whose name was Koah. He was represented as a priest, and one who had early distinguished himself as a warrior. He was a little old man, of an emaciated figure, with sore eyes, and his body covered with a leprous scurf, occasioned by the immoderate use of *ava*. Being led into the cabin, he ceremoniously approached Captain Cook, threw a piece of red cloth over his shoulders, and, retreating a few paces, made an offering of a small pig, after delivering a long and elaborate harangue. At the conclusion of this ceremony, Koah dined with the captain, eating plentifully of the viands that were set before him; but, like many of the islanders in these seas, he could hardly be prevailed on to taste wine or spirits a second time. In the evening, Captain Cook, Mr. King, and Mr. Baily, accompanied him on shore. When they landed on the beach, they were received by four men, carrying each a wand tipped with dogs' hair, and audibly pronouncing the word Orone†. The crowd which had been collected on the shore, retired at their approach; and not an individual was to be seen, except a few lying prostrate on the ground. near the humble mansions of the adjacent village.

Here it may be necessary to describe the *Morai*, or burying place, situated on the beach of Kahooa. It consisted of a solid square of stones, of the length of forty yards, the breadth of twenty, and the height of fourteen. It was flat on the top, and surrounded by a wooden rail; on which were exposed the skulls of those wretched captives who had been sacrificed on the death of their chiefs. A ruinous wooden building appeared in the centre of the area, connected on each side by a stone wall, dividing the whole space into two equal parts. Five poles, of twenty feet in height, supported an irregular scaffold, on the side next the country; and on that towards the sea, two small houses presented themselves, having a covered communication‡.

They now beheld, advancing in solemn procession, and entering the top of the Morai, ten men carrying a live hog, and a large extended

* Hence it appears that the chiefs have a despotic authority over the inferior people. A similar instance happened on board the Resolution. When the crowd impeded the necessary business of the ship, application was made to Kaneena, a chief; who, as soon as the grievance was mentioned, ordered the natives immediately to quit the vessel: in an instant the offenders all leaped overboard, except one person, who loitered behind, and seemed unwilling to obey. Kaneena, enraged at this contempt of his authority, took hold of him immediately, and threw him into the sea.

† Captain Cook was generally known by this appellation, among the natives of Owhyee. It was also a title of rank and veneration.

‡ Koah conducted them to the top of this structure; at the entrance of which they saw two large wooden images, with distorted features, having a long piece of carved wood, descending from the top of their heads, of a conical form inverted: the other parts were covered with red cloth. Here Captain Cook was received by a tall young man, with a long beard, who solemnly presented him to the images, chanting a kind of hymn, in which he was accompanied by Koah. They were then conducted to the side of the Morai, were five poles were erected: at the foot of which twelve images were ranged in a semicircular form, the middle figure having an elevated table before it, on which a putrid hog was extended; and under it, some potatoes, plantains, bread-fruit, and pieces of sugar-cane. The Captain was ushered to this spot by Koah; who, taking down the disgusting hog, held it towards him; when having again addressed him in a vehement and tedious speech, he permitted it to fall upon the ground.

piece

piece of red cloth. Being advanced a few paces, they stopped and prostrated themselves; and Kairreekeea, the tall young man, advancing towards them, received the cloth, and presented it to Koah, who wrapped it round the captain, and made him an offering of the hog*.

They were next conducted into the other division of the Morai, where a space of twelve feet square, was sunk about a yard below the level of the area. Descending into this, the captain was instantly seated between two idols; Koah supporting one of his arms, and Mr. King the other. A second procession of natives now arrived with a baked hog, a pudding, some bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and other vegetables. As they drew near, Kaireekeeah placed himself before them, and presented the hog to Captain Cook, in the usual manner; chanting as before, and regular responses were uttered by his companions †.

This strange ceremony being concluded, they quitted the Morai; Captain Cook distributed among the populace, some iron, and other articles; with which they were highly gratified. The men with wands ushered them, in procession, to the boats, repeating sentences, as before. Most of the natives then retired, and the remaining few prostrated themselves as our navigators passed along the shore. They immediately went on board, full of the idea of what they had seen, and well satisfied with the generous dispositions of their new friends. The respect paid to the person of the captain, was so flattering as to be almost bordering on adoration.

The next morning Mr. King went on shore, with a guard of eight marines, having received orders to erect an observatory; and to make choice of such a situation as might enable him to superintend and protect the waterers, and the other working parties that might be on shore. Observing a convenient spot for this purpose, Pareea offered to exert his power in their behalf, and proposed pulling down some houses that would have obstructed their observations. This generous offer was, however, declined, and a potatoe field adjoining to the Morai, was fixed on; and, to prevent the intrusion of the natives, the place was immediately consecrated by the priests, by fixing their wands round the wall which inclosed it.

This interdiction the natives call *taboo*, a word of very extensive operation; but in this instance it procured our adventurers more privacy than they could have wished. No canoes attempted to land near them till they had obtained their permission. The men indeed, at their request, would bring provisions into the field; but all their endeavours could not prevail upon the women to come near them. This circumstance afforded matter of amusement for their friends on board, who were daily visited by multitudes of people (particularly of females) who were so extremely numerous that they were often obliged to clear the vessel, that they might have room for the performance of their necessary duties. Two or three hundred women were sometimes compelled to jump instantly into the sea, where they continued to swim and play till they could be re-admitted.

Pareea and Koah left our navigators on the 19th of January, to attend Tereeoboo, who had landed on a distant part of the island. The pro-

* Captain Cook was now whimsically situated aloft, swathed in red woollen, and tottering on a rotten scaffolding. In this ludicrous character, he was entertained with the chanting of Koah and Kaireekea, sometimes in concert, and sometimes alternately. While they were thus vocally employed, Koah let the hog drop, and he and the captain immediately descended. Koah then conducted the captain to the images before mentioned, to each of which he snapped his fingers, sneering contemptuously at them as he passed them. He then presented him to the figure in the centre, which from its red covering appeared to be in the highest estimation. Before this venerable personage he prostrated himself; and kissed it, requesting Captain Cook would follow his example. In this particular, and through the whole of the ceremony, the captain was obedient to the directions of this chief.

† The offering being performed, the natives seated themselves opposite to them, and began the dissection of the baked hog: they also engaged in the operation of breaking the cocoa-nuts; and peeling the vegetables. Others were employed in brewing the ava, by chewing it according to the practice of the Friendly Islands. Kaireekeeah, then adopted the same delicate office of chewing part of the kernel of a cocoa-nut, and wrapped it in a piece of cloth, with which he deliberately rubbed the Captain's face, head, hands, arms, and shoulders. The *ava* was then handed round, and when every one had enjoyed a taste of it, Koah and Pareea pulled the flesh of the hog in pieces, and were in the very act of putting some of it into their mouths: Mr. King had no particular objection to being fed by Pareea, who was remarkably cleanly in his person; but when a piece was presented by Koah to Captain Cook, he could not swallow a morsel of it, the putrid hog being uppermost in his recollection; and the reluctance was considerably increased by the old man's excess of civility in chewing it for him.

cess

cess of curing the flesh of animals in tropical climates, by salting, though long thought impracticable, is then particularly mentioned; but should we introduce the whole of the detail, we might probably incur the imputation of being too digressive in our department.

Our navigators had not been long settled at the Observatory, before they discovered in their neighbourhood the habitations of a society of priests, whose regular attendance at the Morai had much excited their curiosity. Their dwellings were erected round a pond, inclosed within a grove of cocoa-trees, which separated them from the beach, and the other part of the village, and gave the situation an air of religious seclusion. Hearing of these circumstances, Captain Cook resolved to pay them a visit; and, supposing the manner of his reception would probably be singular, he took Mr. Webber with him, to enable him to give a drawing of the scene.

When he arrived at the beach, he was conducted to *Harre-no-Orono,* or the house of Orono. Arriving at this sacred place, he was seated at the foot of a wooden idol. Here Mr. King again performed the office of supporting one of his arms. He was then arrayed in red cloth, and Kaireekeea, with twelve prie presented a pig with the usual solemnities. The pig was then strangled, and thrown into the embers of a fire, which had been provided for that purpose. When the hair was singed off, a second offering was made, accompanied with chanting: after which the deceased animal was placed, for some time, under Captain Cook's nose; the body being stretched, and a cocoa-nut placed at his feet. This part of the ceremony being ended, the performers seated themselves; and the *ava* was brewed and distributed. A baked hog was then brought in, and they were fed in the manner before related*.

Our Europeans indeed had less reason to approve of the behaviour of the warrior chiefs, than of that of the priests. In their intercourse with the warlike chiefs, they always found them sufficiently attentive to their own interests; and, exclusive of their propensity to stealing, they practised other artifices equally dishonourable. In the following instance, a circumstance which we mention with regret, Koah was too principally concerned. The chiefs, when they make presents of hogs, are always generously rewarded. In consequence of which, our navigators were supplied with more than they could consume. On these occasions Koah, who daily attended them, requested that he might have those which they did not absolutely want. A pig was one day presented to them by a man whom Koah introduced as a chief, which they knew to be the same pig that had, a short time before, been given to Koah. Suspecting the imposition, they found, upon further enquiry, that the pretended chief was one of the common people; and, from a variety of other concurrent circumstances, they were fully convinced that they had frequently been the dupes of similar imposition.

On the 24th they were not a little surprised to find, that no canoes were suffered to put off from the shore, and that the natives confined themselves to their houses. At length, however, they were informed that the bay was tabooed, and all intercourse with our Europeans interdicted, on account of the arrival of Terreoboo. As this was totally unexpected, the ships were consequently deprived of their usual supply of vegetables.

On the 25th, our navigators endeavoured, by threats and promises, to induce the inhabitants to approach them: and they so far succeeded in their attempts, that some of them were venturing to put off, but a chief was observed to be extremely active in driving them away. To make him desist, a musquet was instantly fired

* While our navigators continued in the bay, whenever Captain Cook came on shore, he was attended by one of these priests, who went before him, proclaiming that the *Orono* was landed, and ordering the inhabitants to prostrate themselves. The same person also attended him constantly on the water, standing in the bow of the boat, with a wand in his hand, giving notice of his approach to the natives who were in canoes, on which they instantly ceased paddling, and fell on their faces till he had passed.

But the civilities of this society extended beyond mere ceremony and parade; the party on shore were daily supplied by them with hogs and vegetables, more than sufficient for their subsistence; and canoes, laden with provisions, were regularly dispatched to the ships. Nothing, in return, was either demanded or intimated. Their manner of bestowing favours seemed more like a conscientious discharge of a religious duty, than the mere result of liberality. On their asking to whom they were indebted for this profusion of munificence, they were informed, that it was at the expence of Kaoo, the chief priest, and grandfather to Kaircekeea, who was then attending the sovereign of the island.

over his head, which had the desired effect, and refreshments were soon after to be had as usual. In the afternoon the ships were privately visited by Terreeoboo, attended only by one canoe, which contained his wife and family. He continued on board till about ten o'clock, when he returned to the village of Kowrowa.

On the following day the king, in a large canoe, with his attendants in two others, paddled in great state from the village towards the ships. In this magnificent display, Terreeoboo, and his chiefs, were in the first canoe, arrayed in splendid feathered cloaks and helmets, and armed with daggers and long spears. In the second came the venerable Kaoo, the chief priest, accompanied by his brethren, with enormous idols exhibited on red cloth. These monstrous figures were made of wicker-work, and curiously ornamented with feathers of a variety of colours: each eye was a large pearl oyster, with a black nut placed in the centre of it; a double row of the fangs of dogs was stationed in each of their mouths, which, like the rest of their features, seemed wonderfully distorted. The third canoe was filled with hogs and vegetables. As they proceeded, the priests chanted their hymns with great solemnity. They afterwards paddled round the vessels, and advanced towards the shore, at the beach where our navigators were stationed.

When Mr. King perceived them approaching, he ordered their little guard to receive the sovereign; and Captain Cook perceiving he was inclined to go on shore, went thither also, and arrived nearly at the same time. They were then conducted into the tent, where the king took his seat with great solemnity; soon after which he rose up, and gracefully threw over the Captain's shoulders, the feathered cloak that he himself wore, placed a helmet upon his head, and presented him with a curious fan. Five or six other cloaks, all rich and valuable, were spread at the Captain's feet *.

The formalities being ended, Captain Cook conducted Terreeoboo, and several of his chiefs, on board the Resolution. They were respectfully received; and the captain, as a compensation for the feathered cloak, put a linen shirt upon his sovereign, and girt his own hanger round him. All this time, not a canoe was suffered to appear in the bay; and those natives who did not remain within their huts, lay prostrate on the ground.

* Four large hogs were then brought forward by his Majesty's attendants, with bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and sugar-canes. The ceremony was concluded by the King's exchanging names with Captain Cook, which, among all the Islanders of the Pacific Ocean, is esteemed the strongest pledge of friendship.

A procession of priests now advanced, followed by a train of people leading large hogs; and others laden with plantains, potatoes, &c. By the countenance and gestures of Kaireekeea, they perceived the venerable personage who headed the procession, was the chief priest, on whose bounty they had so long subsisted. Having a piece of red cloth in his hands, he wrapped it round the shoulders of Captain Cook, and, in the usual form, presented him a pig. He was then placed near his Majesty; and Kaireekeea, with his attendants, began their vocal ceremonies; Kooa, and the chiefs, assisting in the responses.

The KING of OWHYHEE bringing presents to CAPTAIN COOK.

Warren sc.

SECTION XXXII.

Hospitality of the Natives—Addicted to thieving—Conduct the Visitors up the Country—Description of a Boxing Match—Death of William Watman—Attention of the Priests at his Funeral—Rail and Images of the Morai purchased—Natives inquisitive respecting their Departure—The supposed Object of their Voyage—Buffoonery of one of the Natives—Magnificent Presents from Terreeoboo—The Natives wish Mr. King to remain among them—The Vessels quit the Island—The Resolution damaged in a Gale—Mysterious Behaviour of the Islanders—Theft committed on board the Discovery—The Thieves pursued—Scuffle between the Natives, and our Navigators—The Pinnace attacked and plundered—Attempt at the Observatory—The Discovery's Cutter stolen from the Buoy—Methods pursued for its Recovery—Captain Cook invites the King and his two Sons on board—Their going opposed by his Wife and the Chiefs—A Contest on the Occasion—One of the Chiefs killed—The Consequences—A Chief threatens Captain Cook, and is shot by him—A general Attack ensues—Death of Captain Cook—Sketch of his Character.

THE civil and inoffensive behaviour of the inhabitants, effaced every idea of danger among them. Our navigators did not hesitate to trust themselves among them at all times, and in all situations. The officers ventured frequently up the country, either singly, or in small parties, and sometimes continued out the whole night. To relate their various acts of civility and generosity, would be an endless task. Upon all occasions, they were anxious to afford every assistance in their power, and appeared happy if the tender of their services was accepted. Many innocent arts were practised to attract their notice, or to delay their departure. They were solicited by some to take a draught of the milk of cocoanuts, or partake of what their humble huts afforded; and by others they were encircled by a company of young women, whose skill and agility entertained them with songs and dances.

But though their good-nature and gentleness were highly pleasing, like all the other islanders of these seas, they had a propensity to stealing. This was a distressing circumstance to our Europeans, as it sometimes compelled them to exercise severity, which they would gladly have avoided. Some expert swimmers were one day detected under the ships, drawing out the filling nails from the sheathing. This practice was thought so injurious to the vessels, that it was deemed expedient to fire shot at the offenders; but this punishment they thought proper to evade, by diving under the ship's bottom. It was therefore thought highly necessary to make an example of one of them, by flogging him on board the Discovery.

A large party of gentlemen, from the two ships, set out, about this time, on an excursion into the country, to examine into natural productions; and afforded Kaoo a fresh opportunity of exercising his civility and generosity. As soon as he was informed of their departure, he sent a considerable quantity of provisions, with orders that due attention and assistance should be granted them, by the inhabitants of those districts through which they were to pass.

Captain Clerke, who was generally confined on board by ill health, paid Terreeoboo his first visit at his residence on shore. He was received with the usual formalities on these occasions; and, on his return, (though the visit was unexpected) he received a present of thirty large hogs, with an abundant supply of vegetables.

As our Europeans had not seen any of their sports or athletic exercises, the natives, at their request, entertained them in the evening with a Boxing Match. Though in many respects these rencounters were inferior to those exhibited at the Friendly Islands, a short account of them may probably be acceptable*.

William Watman, a seaman of the gunner's crew,

* A vast concourse of people were assembled on an even spot of ground at a little distance from their tents. A long space was left vacant in the centre of them, at the upper end of which the judges were seated under three standards; from which hung slips of cloth, of various colours, the skins of two wild geese, some small birds, and a few bunches of feathers. The sports being ready to begin, a signal was given by the judges, and instantly two combatants appeared: they advanced slowly, drawing up their feet very high behind, and rubbing their hands along the soals. As they drew near

crew, died this day; this event is the more particularly mentioned, as death had not been common among them. He was pretty far advanced in years, and much respected for his attachment to Captain Cook. He served twenty-one years as a marine; and then entered as a seaman on board the Resolution in 1772.

At the request of Terreeoboo, the remains of this worthy seaman were buried on the *morai*, with great ceremony and solemnity; old Kaoo, and his brethren, attending as spectators, and behaving with the greatest decorum. When the people began to fill up the grave, they approached it with reverential awe, throwing in a dead pig, some plantains, and cocoa nuts. For three successive nights they surrounded it, sacrificing hogs, and performing their accustomed ceremonies of hymns and prayers, which continued till the morning. A post was erected at the head of the grave, and on it a piece of board was nailed, relating the name and age of the deceased, with the day of his departure from this life. The natives assured our Europeans that this memorial should be permitted to remain, so long as such frail materials could endure.

The ships being in want of fuel, Captain Cook requested Mr. King to treat with the priests for the purchase of the rail surrounding the *morai*. Doubting the decency of this overture, he apprehended the bare mention of it would incur the heavy charge of profanation; but in this he was exceedingly mistaken: they expressed no surprise at the impropriety of the question, and the wood was readily delivered to them, without stipulating for any thing in return. Whilst the people belonging to our navigators were taking it away, he saw one of them with a carved image, and, upon enquiry, was informed that the whole semicircle had been carried to the boats. Though the natives were spectators of this business, they made no complaints; but, on the contrary, assisted in the removal. Though Mr. King mentioned these particulars to Kaoo, he seemed perfectly indifferent about the matter, requesting only the centre image to be restored; which was immediately complied with.

Terreeoboo, and his chiefs, had long been importunate to know the time of their departure. Mr. King was therefore anxious to learn what opinion they entertained of our Europeans, and what they supposed to be the object of their voyage. He took particular pains to get satisfactory information on these points; but all that he could discover was, that they supposed they had left their native country on account of the scantiness of provisions, and that they visited them in expectation of being better fed. This was certainly a rational conclusion, considering the meagre appearance of some of their crew, the voracity with which they devoured their fresh provisions, and their anxiety to purchase of it as much as they were able. One circumstance, however, puzzled the natives exceedingly, which was that of not having any women among them*.

Terreeoboo, in wishing to gain intelligence respecting the departure of our navigators, had perhaps no other view in his enquiries than a desire of having sufficient notice, to prepare suitable presents for them at their departure; for when they mentioned to him their intention to quit the island in two days, a kind of proclamation was immediately issued through the village, requiring the people to bring in their hogs and vegetables, for the king to present to the *Orono*†.

near, they frequently surveyed each other from head to foot, accompanied with a contemptuous sneer, casting several arch glances at the spectators, distorting their features, and practising a variety of affected gestures. When they were advanced within the reach of each other, they stood with both arms held out straight before their faces, at which part every one of their blows was aimed: they struck with a full swing of the arm, without attempting to parry, but they endeavoured to elude their adversary's attack by stooping, or retreating. The battle was speedily decided; for if either of them fell, whether by an accident or a blow, he was declared vanquished, and the victor proclaimed his triumph by a variety of strange gestures, which usually excited a loud peal of laughter among the spectators. The successful combatant waited to receive a second antagonist; and, if again victorious, for a third. As these games were given at the desire of our navigators, it was generally expected that some of them would have engaged with the natives; but, though some of the Europeans were urged to engage, they paid no attention to their solicitations, not having forgot the transactions at the Friendly Islands.

* It was entertaining to see the inhabitants stroking the sides, and patting the bellies of the sailors (who were much improved in sleekness since their arrival in the island) and telling them, partly by signs, and partly by language, that it was time for them to depart; but if they would return the next bread-fruit season, they should be better able to supply their wants.

† At the beach our navigators were entertained with the buffooneries of a native. In his hand he held an instrument of music; bits of sea-weed were fastened round his neck; and strong netting encircled his legs, on which were attached some rows of dogs' teeth. His dancing was accompanied with grimaces, and unnatural distortions of the features. Wrestling and boxing matches contributed to the diversions of the evening; and the Europeans, in return, exhibited the few fire-works they had remaining.

The 4th of February being fixed for their departure, Terreeoboo invited Captain Cook and Mr. King, to attend him to Kaoo's residence on the 3d. On their arrival, they found the ground covered with large quantities of cloth; red and yellow feathers, in great abundance, fastened to the fibres of cocoa-nut husks; and many hatchets, and other articles of iron ware, which had been received from them in barter. Not far from these lay an immense quantity of vegetables; and near them several herds of hogs. It was at first imagined that the whole was intended as a present for our navigators; but they were informed by Kaireekeea, that it was a tribute to the king from the inhabitants of that district. And accordingly, as soon as our Europeans were seated, they saw all the bundles brought, and laid severally at Terreeoboo's feet; the cloth, feathers, and iron were also exhibited before him.

The king was highly pleased with this affectionate mark of duty from his people; and selected about a third of the iron articles, a third of the feathers, and some pieces of cloth: these he ordered to be set aside by themselves; and the remainder of the cloth, hogs, vegetables, &c. were afterwards presented to Captain Cook and Mr. King. The value of this present far exceeded every thing of the kind which had ever taken place, either at the Friendly or Society Islands. The large hogs were salted for sea store; but the smaller pigs, and the vegetables, were divided among the crews.

They quitted the *morai*, and got their observatories on board: the *taboo* was removed, and with it, its magical effects. The instant they had left the place, the people rushed in, and vigilantly searched, hoping some valuable articles might be left behind. Mr. King being the last on shore; and waiting for the return of the boat, some of the inhabitants prevailed on him to sit down among them, expressing their regret at his intending to leave them, and would hardly permit him to depart. Having had the command of the party on shore, during the time they were in the bay, he had an opportunity of becoming well acquainted with the natives, and they with him*.

In the morning of the 4th of February they unmoored, and sailed out of the bay, attended by a great number of canoes. Captain Cook intended to finish the survey of Owhyhee, before he visited the other islands, hoping to find a road better sheltered than Karakakooa Bay. On the 5th, and the following day they, had calm weather, and consequently their progress to the north was slow. Terreeoboo gave an additional proof of his regard for Captain Cook, by sending after him a liberal present of hogs and vegetables. In the morning of the 6th, they were a-breast of a deep bay, called by the natives Toe-yah-yah. They entertained hopes of finding a commodious harbour in this bay, as they observed several fine streams of water to the north-east, and the whole appeared to be well sheltered. These observations seeming to tally with the very favourable accounts given of them by Koah, them aster was sent in the pinnace, with Koah as his guide, to observe and examine the bay†.

After encountering several gales of wind without receiving any material injury, in the morning of the 8th they found the fore-mast had given way. This accident, after much deliberation, induced Captain Cook to return to Karakakooa bay. Early in the morning of the 10th, in a heavy squall, they found themselves close in with the breakers, to the northward of the west point of Owhyhee. They had hardly room to avoid them, and fired several guns to alarm the Discovery,

* When notice was given of the departure of the Europeans, Mr. King was very strongly urged to remain behind, overtures of the most flattering kind having been repeatedly made him. When he endeavoured to excuse himself, by assuring them that Captain Cook would not permit it, they proposed to conceal him among the mountains till after the departure of the ships. On Mr. King's assuring them that the captain would not sail without him. Terreeoboo and Kaoo formally waited on Captain Cook, (whom they supposed to be his father) requesting he might be permitted to remain behind. The captain avoided giving an absolute refusal to a proposal so generously intended, by saying he should return thither the following year, and then he would endeavour to oblige them.

† Mr. Bligh, who had been dispatched upon this business, landed at a village on the north side of the bay, where he was shewn some wells of water, which were not proper for their purpose. Proceeding further into the bay, where he expected to meet with good anchorage, he found the shores were low, and a flat bed of coral rocks extended along the coast, and upwards of a mile from the land. During this time, Koah, (who had now altered his name to that of Britannee out of compliment to our navigators) contrived to slip away, being probably afraid of returning, as his information had proved erroneous.

and give her notice of the danger. The weather became more moderate in the afternoon, and a few canoes ventured to come off to them; when they were informed that much mischief had been occasioned by the late storms, and that a great many canoes had been lost. During the remainder of the day, they kept beating to the windward, and, in the evening, were within a mile of the bay; but they stood off and on till day-light in the morning, when they anchored nearly in their old station.

The whole of the 11th, and part of the 12th of February were devoted to the getting out the fore-mast, and conveying it on shore. As it had sustained considerable damage, several days would probably be required for making the necessary repairs. Messrs. King and Baily caused the observatory to be taken on shore, and the tents to be pitched on the morai, under the guard of a corporal, and six marines. A friendly intercourse was also renewed with the priests, who, for their additional security, tabooed the place with their wands, as before.

On their coming to anchor, they were astonished to find a reception so very different from that which they had before experienced: no shouts, bustle, or confusion, but a solitary deserted bay, with here and there a canoe passing along the shore. Though allowances ought to be made for the diminution of their curiosity; yet the hospitable treatment they had met with, and the friendly footing on which they parted, induced them to expect every demonstration of joy on their return. While they were forming conjectures on this extraordinary appearance, the whole mystery was explained by the return of a boat which had been sent on shore, bringing intelligence that Terreeoboo was absent, and that the bay was tabooed*.

It is extremely difficult to draw any certain conclusion from the actions of a people, with whose language and customs we are but imperfectly acquainted. It is certain, however, that affairs were conducted in their usual quiet course, till the 13th of February. In the evening of that day, the officer commanding the Discovery's watering party, came to inform Mr. King, that several chiefs had assembled near the beach; and were driving away the natives, who had been hired to assist the sailors in rolling down the casks to the shore. At the same time he declared, that their behaviour seemed exceedingly suspicious, and he supposed they intended to give him some further disturbance. At his request, he allowed him to take a marine with him, but permitted him to have only his side arms. In a short time the officer returned, and acquainted Mr. King that the islanders had armed themselves with stones, and were become very tumultuous. He therefore went himself to the spot, attended by a marine, with his musquet. Seeing him approach, they threw away their stones; and on Mr. King's appeal to some of the chiefs, the mass of the people were driven away.

Quietness being restored, Mr. King went to meet Captain Cook, who was coming on shore in the pinnace. He related to him the particulars of what had recently happened, and received orders to fire a ball at the offenders, if they again behaved insolently, and began to throw stones. Mr. King therefore gave orders to the corporal, that the sentinels' pieces should be loaded with ball, instead of shot.

On their return to the tents, they heard a continued fire of musquets from the Discovery; which they perceived was directed at a canoe, that was hastening towards the shore, with one of the captain's small boats in pursuit of it. They supposed this firing to be in consequence of some theft, and Captain Cook ordered Mr. King to follow him, with a marine armed, and endeavour to arrest the people as they landed. They accordingly ran towards the place where the canoes was expected to come ashore, but were too late; the people having quitted it, and made their escape into the country before their arrival†.

But an affair of a more serious and unpleasant nature

* Though this account was thought satisfactory by many persons, others were of opinion, that there was something very suspicious in the behaviour of the natives, and that the *taboo*, on pretence of the king's absence, was a mere evasion, to give him time to consult his chiefs in what manner they should be treated. They never could ascertain whether these suspicions were well founded, or whether the natives had given a genuine narrative of the business. It is probable, indeed, that their sudden return, for which they could perceive no apparent cause, might occasion some alarm; yet the conduct of Terreeoboo, who on his supposed arrival the next morning, came immediately to visit Captain Cook; and the natives, from that moment, renewing their friendly intercourse with them; seemingly evinced, that they neither meant, nor apprehended a different kind of conduct.

† At this time they knew not that the goods had been already restored,

nature had happened during their absence. The officer, who had been sent in the small boat after h e thieves, and who was returning on board with the goods that had been restored, observing Captain Cook and Mr. King in pursuit of the offenders, thought it necessary to seize the canoe that was drawn up on the shore. Unfortunately this canoe belonged to Parreea, who arriving at that instant from on board the Discovery, claimed his property, with many protestations of his innocence. The officer persisted in detaining it, in which he was encouraged by the crew of the pinnace then waiting for Captain Cook. A scuffle ensued, in which Parreea was knocked down by a violent blow on the head, with an oar. The natives, who were collected about the spot, and who had hitherto been peaceable spectators, instantly attacked the Europeans with such a shower of stones, that they retreated with precipitation, and swam off to a rock at a considerable distance from the shore. The pinnace was instantly plundered by the natives, and would have been demolished, if Parreea had not interposed; who had not only recovered from his blow, but, at that instant, had totally forgot it.

Having dispersed the crowd, he beckoned to our adventurers to come and take possession of the pinnace; and afterwards assured them that he would exert all his influence to get the articles restored which had been purloined. After their departure, he followed them in his canoe, with a midshipman's cap, and some other articles of the plunder. Having expressed much concern at what had happened, he wished to know if the *orono* would kill him, and whether he might venture to come on board the next day. Being assured that he would be kindly received, he joined noses with the officers, (their usual token of friendship) and paddled over to the village of Kowrowa*.

Early the next morning Mr. King went on board the Resolution for his time-keeper; when in his way, he was hailed by the Discovery, and was informed that their cutter had been stolen during the night, from the buoy, where it had been moored. When he arrived on board, he found the marines arming, and Captain Cook engaged in loading his double-barrelled gun. While he was communicating to him the particulars of what had happened in the night at the *morai*, he precipitately interrupted him to inform him of the loss of the Discovery's cutter, and of the measures that were to be resorted to for its recovery. It was his general practice, in all the islands of this ocean, when he had been plundered of any article of consequence, to get the king, or some of the principal erees on board; where he detained them till the property was restored. As this method had hitherto been successful, he was resolved to adopt it on the present occasion; and ordered that every canoe should be stopped, which attempted to leave the bay: protesting that he would seize and destroy them, unless the cutter could be recovered on friendly and peaceable conditions. In consequence of this resolution the boats of both ships, properly manned and armed, were stationed across the bay: and, before Mr. King quitted the ship, some great guns were fired at two canoes, that were endeavouring to escape.

Between seven and eight o'clock, Captain Cook and Mr. King quitted the ship together: the former in the pinnace, with Mr. Phillips and nine marines: and the latter in the small boat. The last orders received from Captain Cook by Mr. King, were, to endeavour to quiet the minds of the natives on their side of the bay, by assuring them that they should not be injured; to keep his people continually together, and to be strictly on his guard. After delivering this admonition, a separation took place, the captain going towards

restored, and imagining, from what they had observed, that they might be of importance, they did not choose to slacken their endeavours to recover them; and, having enquired of the natives what course the people had taken, pursued them till it was almost dark; when they began to think the islanders amused them with false information in their pursuit, and came to a resolution of giving up the search.

* When Captain Cook was informed of these transactions, he was exceedingly concerned; and, while they were returning on board, he expressed his fears that the islanders would oblige him to use some violent measures. He very judiciously added, "They must not be permitted to suppose that they have gained an advantage over us." It was, however, too late to take any material steps that evening; but he ordered that every islander should be immediately turned out of the ship. After this order was executed, Mr. King returned on shore; and, as the events of the day had much staggered their confidence in the natives, a double guard was posted on the *morai*, with orders to give notice to Mr. King, if any people were seen lurking about the beech. At eleven o'clock five of the natives were observed crawling round the bottom of the *morai*. Though they approached with great caution, they were at last discovered, and immediately fled. At midnight another of them ventured near the observatory, when a sentinel fired over him, and he also fled. Nothing of importance occurred duringthe remainder of that night.

Kowrowa,

Kowrowa, where the king resided, and Mr. King proceeded to the beach. His first care, on going ashore, was to issue strict orders to the marines to remain within the tent, to load their musquets with ball, and on no consideration to quit their arms. He afterwards attended Kaoo and the priests, at their respective huts, and explained to them the reason of the hostile preparations, which had so exceedingly alarmed them. He found they were fully informed of the cutter's having been stolen, and assured them, that, though the captain was determined to recover it, and to punish the authors of the theft; yet that they, and all the people of the village, on their side, had not any occasion to be alarmed, or to apprehend the least danger or inconvenience. He requested the priests to communicate these particulars to the people, and entreat them not to be alarmed, but to continue peaceable and quiet. Kaoo, with great emotion, asked Mr. King, if any harm was to happen to Terreeoboo? He assured him there was not; and he and his party seemed perfectly satisfied with this assurance.

Captain Cook having, in the mean time, called off the launch, which was stationed at the north point of the bay, and taken it with him, proceeded to Kowrowa, and landed with the lieutenant and nine marines. Proceeding to the village, he was respectfully received; the people as usual prostrating themselves before him, and bringing their accustomed offerings of small hogs. Perceiving that his intention was not suspected, he enquired for Terreeoboo, and the two boys, his sons, who had been his constant guests on board the Resolution. The youths returned with the natives, who had been sent in search of them, and immediately conducted Captain Cook to the house where the king had slept. The old sovereign had just awoke, and after some conversation respecting the loss of the cutter, from which the captain was convinced that he was not privy to it, he invited him to accompany him on board the Resolution, and to pass the day with him. The king readily accepted the invitation, and rose immediately to accompany him.

Every thing now appeared to be in a prosperous train; the two boys were already in their pinnace, and the rest of the party proceeding to the water-side, when an elderly woman, named Kaneekabareea, the mother of the youths, and one of the king's favourite wives, came after him, pathetically beseeching him, her eyes replete with tears, not to venture to go on board. At the same time two chiefs, who came with her, took hold of him, and insisted on his proceeding no farther; compelling him instantly to sit down. The natives, who were collecting in vast numbers along the shore, and had probably been alarmed, by the firing of the great guns, and the appearance of hostilities in the bay, gathered together round Captain Cook and the king. Thus situated, the lieutenant of marines, observing his men were huddled together in the crowd, and consequently rendered incapable of using their arms, if there should appear to be a necessity for it, proposed to the captain to draw them up along the rocks, close to the water's edge. The populace making a space for them to pass, the lieutenant ranged them up in a line, within thirty yards of the place where Terreeoboo was at that time sitting*,

Though this enterprise had now failed, and was abandoned, the captain's person did not appear to be in the least degree in danger, till an accident happened which gave a fatal turn to the affair. The boats, which had been stationed across the bay, having fired at some canoes that were attempting to get out, had unfortunately killed one of their principal chiefs. Intelligence of his death arrived where Captain Cook was, just when he had parted from the king, and was walking deliberately towards the shore. The ferment it occasioned was but too apparent, and the women and children were hastily sent away. The men appeared in their war-mats, and armed with spears and stones. One of the natives, having in his hand a stone, and a long iron spike, (called by the natives a pahooa) approached the captain, flourishing his weapon in defiance, and threatening to throw the stone. The captain desired him to desist; but the

* The old sovereign continued, all this time, in the same position, on the ground, with the most evident marks of terror and dejection in his countenance: Captain Cook, unwilling to abandon the object for which he had come on shore, urged him to proceed. On the other hand, whenever the king manifested an inclination to follow him, the chiefs who stood round him interposed; at first with prayers and entreaties, and afterwards with force and violence, absolutely insisting on his remaining on shore. Captain Cook now perceiving that the alarm had spread too generally, and that there was little probability of getting him off without much blood-shed, thought it prudent to give up the point; observing to Mr. Phillips, that, to compel him to go on board, might occasion the loss of many of the lives of the inhabitants.

islander

islander repeating his menaces, he fired a load of small shot at him. The native having his mat on, which the shot could not penetrate, it had no other effect than to irritate and encourage them. Vollies of stones were thrown at the marines; and one of the erees endeavoured to stab Mr. Phillips with his Pahooa, but not having succeeded, he received from him a blow with the but-end of his musquet. Captain Cook now fired his second barrel, loaded with ball, and killed one of the most violent of the natives. A general attack with stones immediately followed, which was answered by a discharge of musquetry from the marines, and the people in the boats. The natives received the fire with great firmness; and before they had time to charge again, they rushed in upon them with dreadful shouts and yells. What followed was truly a scene of horror and confusion!

Four of the marines retreated among the rocks, and were supposed to fall a sacrifice to the fury of the enemy; three others were dangerously wounded; and the lieutenant, who had been stabbed between the shoulders with a pahooa, having fortunately reserved his fire, shot the man from whom he had received the wound, at the instant he was preparing to repeat the blow. Our unfortunate commander, the last time he was distinctly seen, was standing at the water's edge, and calling out to the boats to cease firing, and to pull in *.

Such was the fate of our excellent commander! After a life so eminently distinguished by successful enterprize, his death, as far as regards himself, can hardly be reckoned premature; since he lived to accomplish the great work for which he seems to have been designed. How sincerely his loss was lamented, by those who owed their security to his ability and conduct, it is impossible to describe; and the task would be equally difficult to represent the horror and dismay which followed so dreadful a catastrophe. Let us therefore turn from so calamitous a scene, to the pleasing contemplation of his character and virtues.

SECTION XXXIII.

Transactions at Owhyhee—After the Death of Captain Cook—Bravery of Mr. Phillips—The Islanders obliged to retire—The Party at the Morai—An Attempt to storm the Morai—Our Navigators quit the Morai—Pacific Measures resolved on—Mr. King has an Interview with Koah—Contemptuous Behaviour of the Natives—Two of the Islanders fired at—Part of the Body of Captain Cook brought by one of them—Additional Provocations from the Natives—Great Guns fired at them—Kakooa burned—Bravery of one of the Natives—The Bones of Captain Cook brought—Which are committed to the Deep—Leave Karakakooa Bay—In Quest of a Harbour on the South-Side of Mowee—Driven to leeward by the Current—Pass Tokoorowa—Proceed to Woahoo—Description of the North-east Coast—Proceed to Atooi—Anchor in Wyamore Bay—The Natives not so friendly as before—Insolence of the Natives—They steal Mr. King's Hanger out of his Hand—Their Insolence at the Water-side—Are fired at by Two Marines—One of them wounded—Visit from the contending Chiefs—Departure.

IT has already been observed that four of the marines, who attended Captain Cook, were killed by the inhabitants on the spot. The others, with Mr. Phillips, their lieutenant, threw themselves into the sea, and secaped, being protected by a brisk fire from the boats. On this occasion, a singular instance of heroism, and of affection for his men, was displayed by Mr. Phillips; for

* It was supposed by some of those who were present, that the marines, and those who were in the boats, fired without the captain's orders, and that he was anxious to prevent the farther effusion of blood. It is therefore probable, that, on this occasion, his humanity proved fatal to him: for it was observed, that whilst he faced the natives, none of them had offered him any violence; but, when he turned about to give his orders to the boats, he was stabbed in the back, and fell with his face into the water. On seeing him fall, the islanders set up a general shout, and his body was dragged inhumanly on shore, and surrounded by the enemy, who, snatching the dagger from each other's hands, displayed a savage eagerness to have a share in his destruction.

he had hardly got into the boat, when, seeing one of the marines, who was but an indifferent swimmer, struggling in the water, and in danger of being taken by the enemy, he leaped into the sea to his assistance, though much wounded himself; and, after receiving a blow on the head from a stone, which had nearly forced him to the bottom, he caught the poor fellow by the hair, and brought him off in safety.

Our Europeans, for some time, kept up a constant fire from the boats, to afford their unfortunate companions, if any of them continued in existence, an opportunity of effecting their escape. These continued efforts, seconded by a few guns fired from the Resolution, at length compelled the enemy to retire.

When the general consternation, which the intelligence of this calamity had diffused throughout both crews, had a little subsided, their attention was called to the party at the *morai*, where the mast and sails were on shore, under the guard of only six marines. It is impossible to describe the emotions which agitated the minds of Mr. King and his attendants, at this station, during these occurrences on the other side of the bay. Being only at the distance of a mile from the village of Kowrowa, they saw distinctly an immense crowd collected on the spot where Captain Cook had just before landed. They heard the firing of the musquets, and perceived much bustle and agitation in the multitude. They afterwards beheld the islanders retreating, the boats retiring from the shore, and passing and repassing, in great stillness, between the ships. Where so valuable a life was concerned, he could not avoid being alarmed by such new and menacing appearances.

On hearing the report of the musquets, Mr. King's first business was to assure the natives, who were assembled round the wall of their consecrated field, that they should not meet with any molestation; and that, at all events, he was inclined to continue on peaceable terms with them. They continued in this situation till the boats had returned on board; when Captain Clerke, perceiving, through his telescope, that they were surrounded by the natives, and apprehending they intended to attack them, ordered two four-pounders to be fired at them. Fortunately these guns, though well aimed, did no execution; but they gave the natives a convincing proof of their powerful effects: one of the balls broke a cocoa-nut tree in the middle, under which a party of them were sitting; and the other shivered a rock that stood near them*.

He waited impatiently for the return of the boat, and after a quarter of an hour's torturing anxiety and suspence, his fears were confirmed by the arrival of Mr. Bligh, with orders to strike his tents immediately, and to send on board the sails that were repairing. At the same instant, their friend Kaireekeea, having also received intelligence of the death of Captain Cook, from an islander who had arrived from the other side of the bay, approached Mr. King, and with manifest sorrow and dejection in his countenance, asked him whether it was true †.

Having stationed the marines on the top of the *morai*, which formed a strong and advantageous post, and given the command to Mr. Bligh, with directions to act solely on the defensive, Mr. King went on board the Discovery, to confer with Captain Clerke on the perilous situation of their affairs. He had no sooner quitted the spot, than the natives began to annoy our navigators with stones; and he had hardly reached the ship, before he heard the firing of the marines. He therefore returned instantly on shore, where he found affairs were becoming every moment more alarming. The islanders were arming, and putting on their mats: and their numbers were rapidly increasing. He could also perceive several

* As Mr. King had, just before, given them the strongest assurances of their safety, he was sorry for this act of hostility; and, to prevent a repetition of it, dispatched a boat to acquaint Captain Clerke, that he was then on the most friendly terms with the islanders; and that, if an occasion for altering his conduct should arrive in future, he would hoist a jack as a signal for him to afford him his assistance.

† The situation of the party was now highly critical and important: their own lives, and the issue of the expedition, were involved in the same common danger. The mast of the Resolution, and the greater part of the sails were on shore, under the protection of only six marines. The loss of these would have been irreparable; and though the natives had not then shewn a disposition to molest the party, it was impossible to answer for the consequences, which the narrative of the transaction of Kowrowa might produce. Mr. King therefore pretended to disbelieve the report of the Captain's death, and endeavoured to prevail on Kaireekeea to encourage the deception; apprehending that either the fear of their resentment, or the successful example of their countrymen, might induce them to seize the favourable opportunity, which then presented itself, of giving them a second blow.

several large bodies marching towards them, along the cliff which separates Kahooa from the north side of the bay, where Kowrowa is situated.

They began the attack upon our navigators with stones, from behind the walls of their inclosures; and, not being opposed, they consequently became more daring. A few resolute fellows having crept along the beach, under cover of the rocks, presented themselves at the foot of the *morai*, with a view of storming it on the side next the sea, where only it was accessible; and they were not dislodged till after they had stood a considerable quantity of shot, and seen one of their associates fall.

A strong reinforcement from both ships landing about this time, the natives retreated behind their walls; which afforded Mr. King an opportunity of conferring with their priests. He sent one of them to exert his endeavours to effect an accommodation; and to propose to them, that if they would desist from throwing stones, he would not suffer his men to fire. This truce was agreed to, and our navigators were permitted to launch the mast, and carry off the sails, astronomical instruments, &c. without molestation. As soon as they had quitted the *morai*, the islanders took possession of it, and some of them threw a few stones which were productive of no mischief*.

While they were thus engaged in concerting some plan for future operations, a concourse of the natives still kept in possession of the shore; and some of them, coming off in canoes, approached the ships, insulted the crews by various marks of defiance and contempt. It was difficult, on these occasions, to restrain the seamen from the use of their arms; but, pacific measures having been resolved on, the canoes were suffered to return unmolested.

Mr. King was now ordered to proceed towards the shore with the boats of the two ships, well manned and armed, with a view of bringing the natives to a parley, and of obtaining, if possible, a conference with some of the chiefs. If he succeeded in the attempt, he was to demand the dead bodies, and particularly that of Captain Cook; to threaten him, in case of a refusal, with the resentment of our Europeans; but not to fire, unless attacked; and not to go ashore on any consideration. Mr. King and his detachment left the ships about four in the afternoon, and, as they approached the shore, saw every indication of a hostile reception. The natives were perpetually in motion, the women and children retiring, the men putting on their war-mats, and arming themselves with spears and daggers. It also appeared, that, since the morning, they had thrown up breast-works, along the beech, where Captain Cook had landed.

When our European party were within their reach, the islanders threw stones at them with slings, but effected no mischief. Concluding, from these appearances, that all attempts to procure a parley would be ineffectual, unless some ground for mutual confidence could be given, he ordered the armed boats to stop, and went alone in a small boat, with a white flag in his hand; the meaning of which was immediately understood by the natives, as it produced an universal shout of joy among them. The women returned from the side of the hill, to which they had retired; the men took off their mats, and all sat down together by the water-side, extending their arms, and inviting Mr. King on shore.

Though this behaviour indicated a friendly disposition, he still entertained suspicions of its sincerity; but when he saw Koah resolutely swim off towards the boat, with a white flag in his hand, he thought it prudent to return this mark of confidence, and therefore received him into the boat, though armed; a circumstance which did not tend to lessen Mr. King's suspicions; he having

* Mr. King arrived on board the Discovery between eleven and twelve, where he perceived that no decisive plan had been adopted for the regulation of their future proceedings. The recovery of Captain Cook's body, and the restitution of the boat, were objects which, on all hands, were agreed to be insisted on: and Mr. King declared it as his opinion, that some vigorous methods should be adopted, if the demand of them should not be instantly complied with. He added, that nothing seemed to him more likely to encourage the islanders to commit new outrages, than the appearance of our navigators being inclined to an accommodation, which could only be imputed to fear or weakness.

On the other hand it was urged, in favour of more conciliatory measures, that the mischief was already done, and was therefore irreparable; that the natives, on account of their former friendship and kindness, had a strong claim upon our regard; and that, therefore, to engage in a vindictive contest with them, might not only subject them to the imputation of unnecessary cruelty, but would occasion considerable delay in the equipment of their ships.

Captain Clerke concurred in the latter opinion, observing that, "caution and severity is ever invidious, and the rigour of a preventive measure, when it is the most successful, leaves its expediency the least apparent."

having long entertained an unfavourable opinion of that chief. The priests had, on all occasions, represented him as a person of a malicious temper, and no friend to our adventurers; and the repeated detections of his fraud and treachery had convinced them of the truth of these assertions.

When Koah approached Mr. King, with feigned tears, and embraced him, Mr. King was so fully convinced of his duplicity, that he took hold of the point of the *pahooa*, which he had in his hand, and turned it from him. He then mentioned the nature of his business, and informed him that he came to demand the body of Captain Cook, and to declare war against the islanders, unless it was instantly restored. The chief assured him that this request should be complied with as soon as possible, and that he would undertake the business himself. Then, after requesting a piece of iron of Mr. King with the most consummate assurance, he leaped into the sea, and swam ashore, calling out to his countrymen that they were all friends again!

The Europeans waited almost an hour, in great anxiety, for his return; during which time the other boats had approached so near the shore, that the persons in them conversed with a party of the islanders at a little distance; by whom they were assured that the captain's body had been cut to pieces, and carried up the country: but Mr. King knew not of this circumstance till after his return to the ships.

At length Mr. King began to express some degree of impatience at Koah's delay; upon which the chiefs repeatedly urged him to land: assuring him, that if he would go in person to Terreooboo, the body would certainly be restored to him. Finding they could not prevail on Mr. King to go ashore, they endeavoured to decoy his boat among some rocks, that they might acquire the power of separating him from the other boats. These artifices being clearly seen through, Mr. King was desirous of breaking off all communication with them.

After various deceptions, delays, negotiations, and hostile preparations, one evening about eight o'clock, when it was extremely dark, a canoe was heard paddling towards the ship; and as soon as it was seen, both the centinels on deck fired into it. Two of the natives were in the canoe, who immediately roared out "Tinnee," (their usual method of pronouncing Mr. King's name) saying they were friends, and had something for him that belonged to Captain Cook. Coming on board, they threw themselves at the feet of the officers, and appeared terrified. Fortunately neither of them was hurt, though the balls of both pieces had passed through the canoe; one of them constantly attended Captain Cook, and though a man of distinction in the island, could hardly be prevented from performing for him the most humiliating offices of a menial servant. After lamenting, with many tears, the loss of the *Orono*, he informed them that he had brought a part of his body. He then produced a small bundle, which he took from under his arm; and words cannot describe the horror with which the party were seized, on finding it a piece of human flesh of the weight of about ten pounds. This, he said, was all that now remained of the body; the rest having been cut to pieces, and burnt; but that the head, and all the bones, except what belonged to the trunk, were in the possession of Terreeoboo, and the other erees; that what they now beheld had been allotted to Kaoo, the chief of the priests, to be used in some religious ceremony; and that he had delivered it as a proof of his innocence, and of his attachment to them*.

They pressed their two friendly visitors to remain on board till the morning, but in vain. They informed them that if this transaction should ever be made known to the king, or any of the chiefs, it might probably be attended with the most fatal consequences to their whole society. To prevent which, they thought it necessary to visit them in the dark: and the same caution, they affirmed, was equally requisite in returning on shore. They also declared, that the chiefs were eager to revenge the death of their countrymen; and, above all things, cautioned them not

* This gave our navigators an opportunity of learning whether they were cannibals, and they were willing to avail themselves of it. After several modes of endeavouring to get satisfactory intelligence on this point, they at last put the direct question, Whether they had not fed on some of it?—When they instantly testified as much horror at the idea as any European could have done; and asked, whether that was the practice among them. They afterwards demanded, with great earnestness, and apparent apprehension, "When the Orono would come again, and how he would behave to them on his return?—The same enquiry was often made afterwards by others: and this idea corresponds with the general tenor of their conduct towards him, which indicated that they considered him as a superior being.

to place any confidence in Koah, who, they assured us, was their implacable enemy, and wished for an opportunity of fighting them.

From the information of these men, it appeared that seventeen of their countrymen were slain, in the first action, at Kowrowa, five of whom were chiefs; and that Kaneena, and his brother, their particular friends, were unfortunately of that number. Eight were killed at the observatory; three of whom were of the first distinction.

Early the next morning, our navigators received another visit from Koah. Mr. King was much chagrined to find, that, notwithstanding the most evident marks of treachery in his conduct, and the positive testimony of the priests, that he should be permitted to carry on the same farce, and represent them as the dupes of his hypocrisy. Their situation, was, indeed, become awkward and unpleasant; none of the purposes for which these pacific proceedings had been adopted, having been in the least promoted by it. No satisfactory answer had been given to their demands; they appeared to have made no progress towards a reconciliation with the natives; they still remained on the shore in hostile positions, as if determined to oppose the landing of our Europeans; and yet it was absolutely necessary that they should attempt landing, as their getting an ample supply of water would not admit of any longer delay.

About twelve o'clock, the natives perceiving that our navigators persisted in their inactivity, great numbers of them, after displaying every method of defiance, marched off over the hills, and never made their appearance afterwards. Those, however, who remained, were not less daring and presumptuous. One of them had the audacity to come within musquet-shot a-head of the ship; and after throwing several stones at the crew, waved over his head the hat which had belonged to Captain Cook; whilst his countrymen on shore were exulting, and encouraging his audacity. Our navigators were much enraged at this insult, and, collecting together on the quarter-deck, begged they might no longer be exposed to such provocations; entreating to be permitted, by Captain Clerke, to embrace the first fair occasion of avenging the death of their much-lamented commander. Mr. King having acquainted the captain with what was passing, he ordered some great guns to be fired at the islanders on shore; and declared to the crew, that, should they be molested at the watering-place, the next day, they should be at liberty to chastise the enemy.

It is remarkable, that, before they could bring their guns to bear, the islanders had suspected their intentions, from the bustle and agitation which pervaded the whole ship, and had retired behind their walls and houses: our navigators were therefore obliged to fire almost at random; though the shot produced all the effects they could desire: for, soon after, they beheld Koah paddling towards them with the utmost expedition; and, on his arrival, received intelligence that several people had been killed. Among these was Maiha Maiha, a principal *Eree*, nearly related to the king*.

During the night, the usual precautions were taken for the security of the ships; and as soon as it was dark, their two friends who had visited them the preceding night, came off again. They assured them, that, though the chiefs had been greatly alarmed at the effects of the great guns, they had by no means relinquished their hostile intentions, and cautioned them to be upon their guard. The next morning the boats of the two ships were sent ashore for water, the Discovery being warped close to the beach to protect them in that service. They soon discovered that the intelligence which had been conveyed to them by the priests was not without foundation, and that the natives were determined to annoy them whenever a favourable opportunity presented itself†.

Thus

* Not long after Koah's arrival, two boys swam from the *morai*, towards the vessels, each armed with a long spear. Coming near our navigators, they solemnly began to chant a song, frequently mentioning the word *Orono*, and pointing to the village where Captain Cook had lost his life. Having sung upwards of ten minutes in a plaintive strain; during which time they continued in the water, they proceeded to the Discovery, and delivered up their spears: after continuing there a short time, they returned on shore. Our navigators could never discover the object of this ceremony.

† The villages, in this cluster of islands, are generally situated near the sea, and the adjacent ground inclosed with stone-walls, of about three feet in height. These walls, which our Europeans at first supposed to have been intended for the division of property, were now found to serve as a defence against invasion, for which purpose they were erected. They consist of loose stones, which the inhabitants can shift from place to place with great celerity, as the direction of the attack may occasionally require. In the sides of the mountain, near the bay, they have also holes or caves, of considerable depth, the entrance of which is secured

Thus opposed, our navigators were obliged to be so far attentive to their own safety, that, during the whole afternoon, only a single ton of water was filled. As it was therefore found impossible for them to perform this service, till their assailants were driven to a distant quarter, the Discovery was ordered to dislodge them with her great guns. This being accomplished, by means of a few discharges, the men landed without molestation.

The islanders, however, had the effrontery to make their appearance again, soon after, in their usual mode of attack; and it was thought necessary to burn down some straggling habitations near the wall, behind which they had taken shelter. In executing these orders, it may be admitted that our Europeans were hurried into acts of unnecessary acts of cruelty and devastation. Some allowance ought certainly to be made for their resentment of repeated insults, and for their natural desire of revenging the death of their beloved commander. But their conduct strongly evinced, that the greatest precaution is requisite in trusting, even for a moment, the discretionary use of arms in the hands of private soldiers, or seamen, on such occastons.

Directions were given only to burn a few straggling houses, which afforded shelter to the islanders; the commanding officer was therefore astonished to see the whole village in flames; and before the arrival of a boat, which was immediately sent to stop the progress of the mischief, the houses of their constant and worthy friends, the priests, were all on fire. It was not without reason, therefore, that Mr. King lamented the illness which confined him on board that day. The priests had always been under his protection; but the officers, then on duty, having seldom been ashore at the *morai,* were unacquainted with the circumstances of the place. Had he been present himself, he might probably have preserved their little society from destruction*.

About this time, an elderly man was taken prisoner, bound, and conveyed on board the Resolution, in the same boat, with the heads of his two countrymen. Horror was pourtrayed in his countenance: but he experienced a sudden transition to immoderate joy, when he was untied, and informed that he might depart in safety. The venerable native convinced them that he was not deficient in point of gratitude, by afterwards returning with presents of provisions, and rendering them other services.

Soon after the destruction of the village, a man was seen coming down the hill, attended by fifteen or twenty boys, holding pieces of white cloth, green boughs, plantains, &c. in their hands. It happened that the persons who composed this pacific embassy, received the fire of a party of our Europeans. They were not intimidated, however, from continuing their procession, and the officer upon duty came up soon enough to prevent a second discharge. Approaching nearer, it was discovered that the principal person was their much esteemed friend Kaireckeea, who had fled when the village was first set on fire, and had now returned, expressing his desire of being sent on board the Resolution.

On his arrival, he appeared extremely grave and pensive. They endeavoured to convince him of the absolute necessity there was of setting fire to the village, by which his habitation, and those of his brethren were unintentionally consumed. He accused them of ingratitude, and want of friendship, and informed them of the whole extent of the injury they had sustained; many circumstances of which were unknown to our adventurers till the present moment. He assured them, that, relying on the promises Mr. King had made them, as well as on the asseverations of the men who had brought them some of Captain Cook's remains, they thought it unnecessary to remove their effects back into the country, as the other inhabitants had done, but had deposited every valuable article of their own, as well as what they had collected from them, into a house close to the *morai,* where they had the mortification to see it all set on fire by themselves.

secured by a fence of a similar kind. From behind both these defences, the natives perpetually harrassed the watering party with stones; nor could the small force they had on shore, with the advantage of musquets, compel them to retreat.

* In escaping from the flames, some of the inhabitants were shot, and the heads of two of them were cut off, and taken on board by the seamen. The fate of one unhappy islander was lamented by all our Europeans. As he was proceeding to the well for water, he was shot at by one of the marines. The ball struck his calibash, which he immediately threw from him, and fled. He was pursued into one of the caves, already noticed, and defended himself with the greatest intrepidity; till at length, after having two of our Europeans at bay for a considerable time, he expired, covered with wounds.

selves. Coming on board, he saw the heads of his countrymen, lying on the deck; at which he was exceedingly shocked, and earnestly desired they might be thrown into the sea; Captain Clerke readily complying with the request. The watering party returned on board in the evening, having met with no farther interruption. They passed a disagreeable night on board, the lamentations they heard from the shore being extremely dreadful. They had nothing to console them, but the pleasing hope that there would be no future occasion for such severities*.

The natives being now convinced that it was not want of ability to punish them, which had hitherto induced them to tolerate their provocations, desisted from giving them any further molestation; and in the evening, a chief, named Eappo, whom they had seldom seen, though they knew him to be a man of the first distinction, came with presents from Terreeoboo to sue for peace. These presents were accepted, and the chief was dismissed, with an answer similar to what had been given before—That no peace would be granted, till the remains of Captain Cook should be restored.

They were informed by Eappo, that the flesh of all the bodies of their people, who had been slain, and even the bones of the trunks, had been burnt; that the limb-bones of the marines had been divided among the inferior chiefs; and that the remains of Captain Cook had been thus disposed of: the head to a great chief called Kahooopeou; the hair to Maiha Maiha; and the arms, legs, and thighs to Terreeoboo. After it was dark, several of the natives came off with vegetables; and Kaireakeea also sent them two large presents of the same denomination.

The next day was chiefly employed in sending and receiving messages between the parties. Eappo requested that one of their officers should go on shore, and offered to remain on board, in the mean time, as a hostage. This proposition was not acceded to, and he left them with a promise of bringing the bones the following day.

Between the hours of ten and eleven on the 20th, a number of the natives were seen descending the hill, in a kind of procession, each man having two or three sugar-canes on his shoulders; and some bread-fruit, plantains, and taro in his hand. They were preceded by two drummers, who, when they came near the water-side, sat down by a white flag, and began to beat their drums; while those who had followed them, advanced, one by one; and having deposited the presents they had brought, retired in the same order. Eappo soon afterwards appeared in a long feathered cloak, bearing something with great solemnity in his hands; and having seated himself on a rock, he gave a signal that a boat should be dispatched to him.

Captain Clerke, imagining the chief had brought the bones of Captain Cook, (which was really the case) went in the pinnace himself to receive them, and ordered Mr. King to attend him in the cutter. When they arrived at the beach, Eappo came into the pinnace, and delivered the bones of Captain Cook, wrapped carefully up in a large quantity of new cloth, and covered with a spotted cloak of black and white feathers. He afterwards attended the gentlemen to the Resolution, but refused to go on board, probably from a sense of decency, not choosing to be present at the opening of the bundle†.

Eappo, and the king's son, came on board the following morning, bringing with them the

* The next morning, the treacherous Koah came off, as usual, to the ships. His perfidy being now sufficiently manifest, Mr. King was permitted to treat him as he thought proper. When he approached the side of the Resolution, chanting a song, and offering a hog, and some plantains, to Mr. King; that gentleman ordered him to keep off, and never presume to make his appearance there again without the bones of Captain Cook, lest his life should pay the forfeit of his repeated breaches of faith. He did not appear much mortified with this reception, but immediately returned on shore, and joined a party of the natives who were throwing stones at the waterers. The body of the young man, who had been slain the preceding day, was found this morning, at the entrance of the cave. Soon after which they beheld several of the natives carrying him off on their shoulders, chanting as they marched along.

† In this shocking parcel they found both the hands of Captain Cook entire, which were well known from a remarkable scar on one of them; the skull, with the scalp separated from it, and the bones of the face wanting; the scalp, with the ears adhering to it; the bones of both the arms; those of the thighs and legs joined together, but without the feet: the ligaments of the joints were entire, and the whole exhibited proofs of having been in the fire, except the hands, which had the flesh left upon them, and were cut in several places, and crammed with salt; supposed to have been with a view of preserving them. The skull was without a fracture, but the scalp had a cut in the back part of it. The lower jaw and feet, which were wanting, had been taken by different chiefs; but Terreeoboo was active in his endeavours to recover them.

remaining

remaining bones of Captain Cook, the barrels of his gun, his shoes, and some other trivial articles. Eappo protested that Terreeoboo, Maiha Maiha, and himself, were anxiously desirous of peace; of which they had now given the most convincing proofs; and that they had been prevented from giving those proofs sooner by the other chiefs, many of whom still continued disaffected to them. He sincerely lamented the death of six chiefs, who had been killed by the Europeans, some of whom were among their best friends. He said the cutter had been taken away by Pareea's people, perhaps to revenge the blow he had received; and that it had been broken up the following day*.

During the morning of the 22d, not a canoe made its appearance in the bay, the *taboo* not being yet taken off. At length Eappo came off to our adventurers, who assured him they were now perfectly satisfied; and that, as the *Orono* was buried, all remembrance of what had passed was buried with him. They afterwards requested him to take off the *taboo*, that the islanders might bring provisions to them as usual. In a short time the ships were surrounded with canoes. Many of the chiefs came on board, lamenting the disaster which had unfortunately happened, but expressing their satisfaction at their reconciliation. Such of their friends, as did not favour them with a visit, sent presents of hogs, and other provisions. Even the treacherous Koah came off with an intention to visit them, but he had the mortification to be peremptorily refused admittance.

Being now ready for putting to sea, orders were given that the ships should be unmoored. About eight in the evening, all the natives were dismissed; Eappo, and the worthy Kaireekeea, took an affectionate leave of them; when they weighed anchor, and stood out of Karakooa bay. The islanders, assembled on the shore, were numerous; who, as they passed along, received their gratulatory farewels with every mark of affection and good will.

Having cleared the land about ten, they stood to the northward, with a view of searching for a harbour. They found themselves, the next morning, driven to leeward, by a swell from the north-east; and a fresh gale from the same quarter, drove them still farther to the westward. At day-break on the 24th, they were standing towards a small barren island, named Tahoorowa. They passed the south-west side of this island, without being able to approach the shore. The westernmost point is rendered remarkable by a small hillock, south of which a fine sandy bay presents itself, and several huts are observed, interspersed with cocoa-trees. In the course of the day, several of the natives visited our adventurers, and brought provisions with them. They were no strangers to the unfortunate disasters at Owhyhee, and seemed much agitated at the death of Kaneena, and his brother. In whatever light they might consider this business, it produced no ill effect in their behaviour, which was exceedingly civil and obliging†.

The principal object here, was to water the ships with the utmost expedition; for which purpose Mr. King was sent on shore in the afternoon, with the launch and pinnace, laden with casks. He was accompanied by the gunner of the Resolution, and attended by a guard of five marines. Multitudes of people appeared upon the beach, by whom they were kindly received at first; but after they had landed the casks, they began to be extremely troublesome‡.

Their situation now demanded all their circumspection:

* The last solemn offices were now to be performed to the great and excellent commander. Eappo was dismissed with orders to *taboo* the whole bay; and, in the afternoon, the bones, having been previously deposited in a coffin, were committed to the deep with the usual military honours; the funeral service being decently performed on the occasion. The feelings of our Europeans, at this melancholy moment, can better be conceived than expressed!

† After touching at Woahoo, where they were disappointed respecting the water, Captain Clerke resolved to proceed to Atooi. The country about Woahoo appeared to be in fine cultivation. Being anchored in their old station, several canoes brought them visitors; but there was not that appearance of cordiality in their manner, and pleasantry in their countenances, which was observable in their former visit. As soon as they were on board, one of them declared that our Europeans had communicated a disorder to the women, which had killed many persons of both sexes. He was, at that very time, afflicted with the venereal disease, and minutely described its alarming progress. As no appearance of that disorder had been seen before their first arrival, it was reasonably apprehended that they were the authors of that irreparable mischief.

‡ Endeavouring to form a circle, for the trading party, according to his usual practice, Mr. King observed a man taking hold of the bayonet belonging to one of the soldier's musquets, and endeavouring to force it from his hand. Mr. King advanced immediately towards them, when the native quitted

cumspection: Mr. King enjoined, that not a man among them should presume to fire, or have recourse to any other act of violence, without positive commands. As soon as he had given these instructions, he was called to the assistance of the watering party, where he found the natives equally inclined to mischief. They had peremptorily demanded, for every cask of water, a large hatchet; and as this demand had not been complied with, they would not suffer the sailors to roll them to the boats.

As soon as Mr. King had joined them, one of the natives approached him, and made the same insolent demand. That gentleman told him, as a friend, he was welcome to a hatchet; but he certainly would carry off the water, without paying any thing for it; and instantly ordered the pinnace men to proceed; at the same time ordering three marines from the trading party, to protect them.

This spirited conduct so far succeeded, as to prevent any daring attempt to interrupt our navigators; but they persevered in their teasing and insulting behaviour. Some of them, under pretence of assisting the sailors in rolling the casks towards the shore, gave them an opposite direction; others snatched the hats from off the people's heads, pulled them backward, tripped up their heels, &c. The populace diverting themselves, all this time, with shouting, sneering, and laughing.

Though they preserved a kind of deference and respect for Mr. King, they obliged him to contribute his share towards their stock of plunder. One of them approached him, in a very familiar manner, and artfully diverted his attention, whilst another seized his hanger, which he held carelessly in his hand, and ran away with it. Insolence, like this, was not to be repelled by force. It was, however, necessary for every one to be upon his guard. While the Europeans were getting the casks into the launch, the natives, supposing they should have no further opportunity of plundering, grew more daring and insolent. Every thing was now in the boats, and only Mr. King, Mr. Anderson, and a seaman of the boat's crew, remained on shore. As the pinnace lay beyond the surf, through which they were under the necessity of swimming, Mr. King ordered the other two to make their way as well as they could, and informed them that he should follow them.

They both refused to obey this order; and a contention arose who should be the last on shore. Some hasty expression had just before been used by Mr. King to the sailor, which he considered as such a reflection on his courage, as to demand his resentment; and the old gunner, finding a point of honour started, thought he could not avoid taking a part in it. In this whimsical situation they perhaps might long have remained, had not the dispute been immediately settled by the stones, which began to fly plentifully about them, and had they not heard the cries of the people from the boats to make haste, as the natives were following them into the water with clubs and spears. Mr. King arrived first at the pinnace, and perceiving Mr. Anderson was so far behind, as not to be entirely out of danger, he ordered one musquet to be fired; but, in the hurry of executing his orders, the marines fired two. The natives fled immediately, leaving only one man and a woman on the beach. The man made several attempts to rise, but was not able, having been wounded in the groin. The islanders speedily returned; and, surrounding the wounded man, brandished their spears with an air of defiance. But, by the time they had reached the ships, some chiefs were supposed to have arrived, by whom they were all driven from the shore*.

The next day, being the 2d of March, Mr. King was again ordered on shore with the watering party. Having narrowly escaped the pre-

quitted his hold, and retired; but quickly returned, with a spear in one hand, and a dagger in the other: it was with the utmost difficulty that his countrymen could restrain him from engaging with the soldier. This affray originated from the native's having received from the soldier a trifling puncture with his bayonet, to induce him to keep without the line.

* During their absence, Captain Clerke had been under great anxiety for their safety: but these apprehensions had been much aggravated by his misunderstanding some of the natives, with whom he had been conversing on board. The frequent mention of the name of Captain Cook, with other strong and circumstantial descriptions of death and destruction, made him conclude that they had received intelligence of the unfortunate events at Owhyhee, to which they alluded: but all they had in view was to make known to him the wars that had arisen in consequence of the goats which Captain Cook had left at Onecheow, and that the poor goats had been slaughtered while the property of them was contested. Captain Clerke happening to apply these shocking representations to the deplorable misfortunes at Owhyhee, and to an indication of revenge, fixed his telescope on them the whole time; and when he saw the smoke of the musquets, ordered the boats to put off to their assistance.

ceding day, Captain Clerke augmented their force from both ships, so that they had now a guard of forty men under arms. But this precaution was found to be unnecessary; for the beach was left entirely to themselves, and the ground tabooed. Hence they concluded, that some of the chiefs had visited this quarter, and had generously taken this step, that they might be accommodated with safety. Several armed men appeared on the other side of the river, but never attempted to molest them. Their women came over, and seated themselves close to them on the banks; and, about noon, some of the men were prevailed on to bring them hogs and roots. When our adventurers had left the beach, they came down to the sea-side, and one of them maliciously threw a stone at them: but as his insolent conduct was highly censured by the rest, their resentment soon subsided.

The next day they completed their watering without much difficulty; and, on their return to the ships, they were informed that several chiefs had been on board, and had endeavoured to palliate the conduct of their countrymen, by attributing their riotous behaviour to the quarrels then subsisting among the principal people of the island; and which had been the destruction of all order and subordination. The dispute originated about the goats, which they had left at Oneeheow the year before; they being claimed by Toneoneo, as that island was a dependency of his *.

SECTION XXXVI.

Account of the Sandwich Islands—Extent of Owhyhee, the largest of the Group—The adjacent Country described—Snowy Mountains—Volcanic Appearances—Interior Parts—Account of a Hermit—Description of Mowee—Ranei—Morotoi—Tahoorowa—Woahoo—Atooi—Oneeheow Tahoora—Climate—Quadrupeds—Birds—Vegetables—Description of the Sandwich Isles continued—Origin of the Natives—Pernicious Consequences of using Ava—Population—Manners and Customs—Restraints on their Women—Their Ingenuity and Docility—Dress of the Men—Dress of the Women—Villages, Houses, Food—Diversions—Fondness for Gaming—Excellent Swimmers—Arts and Manufactures—Beauty of their Mats—Fishing-Hooks—Weapons.

BEFORE our navigators take a final leave of the Sandwich Islands, they give a general account of their situation, and natural history; with strictures on the customs and manners of the natives. This group consists of eleven islands. Their names, according to the natives, are Owhyhee, Atooi, Woahoo, Mowee, Morotoi, Oreehoua, Morotinnee, Tahoora, Ranai, Oneeheow, and Kaahowrowa. All these are inhabited, except Tahoora and Morotinnee. Besides the islands thus enumerated, the Indians mention another, named Modoo-papapa, or Komodoopapapa, situated to the west-south-west of Tahoora. It is low and sandy, and only visited for the purpose of catching turtle and water-fowl.

Captain Cook distinguished this cluster by the name of the Sandwich Islands, in honour of the Earl of Sandwich, under whose administration he had enriched geography with so many valuable discoveries. Owhyhee, the most easterly of these islands, and much larger than any of them, is of a triangular figure, and almost equilateral. The angular points constitute the northern,

* On the 6th they were visited by an Indian, who brought a piece of iron on board, to be formed into the shape of a *pahooa*. It was the bolt of some large ship-timbers. None of the people in the ship could discover to what nation it belonged; but, from the shape of the bolt, and the paleness of the iron, they knew it was not English. On enquiry, the native informed them, that it was taken out of a large piece of timber, which had been driven upon their island, since they were there in January 1778. In the morning of the 8th, they weighed, and proceeded towards Oneeheow, and at three in the afternoon, anchored in twenty fathoms water, nearly on the same spot as in 1778. They were incommoded in the night, and the two following days, with a strong gale from the eastward; but the weather being more moderate on the 12th, the master was sent to the north-west side of the island, in search of a more convenient place for anchoring. In the evening he returned, having found a fine bay, with good anchorage, in eighteen fathoms water. A small village was observed on the north side of the bay, to the eastward of which were four wells of excellent water.

southern,

southern, and eastern extremities. The circumference of the whole island is about 293 English miles. A mountain, named *Mouna Kaah*, which rises in three peaks, and is continually covered with snow, may be discerned at the distance of forty leagues. It separates the district of Amakooa from that of Aheedoo. To the northward of the mountain, the coast is composed of high and abrupt cliffs, from which many beautiful cascades of water descend. The country rises inland with a gradual ascent, and is intersected by narrow deep chasms. It appears to be well cultivated, and has several villages scattered about it. The snowy mountain is very steep, and its lowest part abounds with wood *.

The coast of Kaoo exhibits a dismal prospect, the whole country seeming to have undergone an entire change from the consequences of some dreadful convulsion. The ground, in many places, is covered with cinders, and intersected with blackish streaks, which seem to point out the progress of a *lava* that has flowed not many centuries ago, from Mouna Roa to the shore. The south promontory strongly represents the exhausted cavities and dregs of a volcano. But though this part of the island has a dreary aspect, it is more populous than the verdant mountains of Apoona.

The south-western parts of Akona are nearly in the same state as those of the adjoining district of Kaoo; but the country further towards the north, has been well cultivated, snd is exceedingly populous. The district of Koaarra extends from the most westerly point, to the northern extreme of the island. This country, as far as the eye could discern, appeared to be fertile and populous, but no fresh water was to be found.

The following account of the interior parts of Owhyhee, is given by a party, who set out on an expedition up the country, chiefly with an intention of reaching the snowy mountains. Having procured two of the islanders to serve them as guides, they quitted the village about four in the afternoon of January the 26th. Their course was easterly, inclining a little to the south. The country within three or four miles of the bay has been already described; but the hills afterwards rose with a less gradual ascent, which brought them to some extensive plantations, consisting of the *taro*, or eddy root, and sweet potatoes, with plants of the cloth tree. The *taro* of the Sandwich Islands was thought the best the party had ever tasted †.

Proceeding on their journey, early the next morning, they filled their calabashes at a well about half a mile from their hut. After they had passed the plantations, they arrived at a thick wood, to which the islanders frequently repair for the purpose of catching birds. The party having advanced nine or ten miles in the wood, found themselves suddenly within sight of the sea, and not very far from it. In this dilemma they thought proper to walk back to an unoccupied hut, where they had left some of the party, with the small remnant of their provisions. Here they passed the second night, during which the air was immoderately sharp.

Being now in want of provisions, they saw the necessity of returning to some of the cul-

* When their ships doubled the east point of the island, they beheld another snowy mountain, called by the natives *Mouna Roa*. It was flat at the summit, and perpetually involved in snow. According to the tropical line of snow, as determined by Monsieur Condamine, from observations made on the Cordilleras in America, the height of this mountain must be, at least 16,020 feet. The peaks of Mouna Kaah, appeared to be about the height of half a mile; and, as they are wholly covered with snow, the altitude of their summits must be at least 18,400 feet.

† The party stopped for the night at the second hut they observed among the plantations, when they supposed themselves at the distance of about seven miles from the ships. From this spot the prospect was delightful. They had a view of the vessels in the bay before them; to the left, a range of villages was seen, interspersed with groves of cocoa-nut trees, spreading along the shore; and to the right a beautiful well-cultivated plantation. Near this spot, the natives pointed out to them, the residence of a hermit, who, in early life, had been a great chief and warrior. As they approached him, they prostrated themselves, and then presented him with some provisions: his behaviour was easy, frank, and cheerful. He did not appear to be much surprised, when he first saw our Europeans, and though pressed to accept of some of their curiosities, he thought proper to decline the offer, civilly withdrawing to his cottage. The party represented him as the oldest person they had ever seen, and that he was at least a hundred years of age.

Greatly were our travellers surprised, that, in this early part of their ascent, they should find the cold so intense; but, not having a thermometer with them, they could only form their judgment of it from their feelings. They found it, however, so extreme, that they could hardly get any sleep, and the islanders could not sleep at all; both parties being disturbed, during the whole night, by their reciprocal and continued coughing.

tivated

tivated parts of the island. When they arrived at the plantations, they were surrounded by the islanders, from whom they purchased a supply of necessaries; and prevailed on two of them to accompany them as guides; their former servants in that department having deserted them. They were now nine in number. As they passed through the woods, they found many unfinished canoes and huts in different places, but no inhabitants were to be seen. During the night, the cold was more intense than before.

The next morning, which was the 29th, they set out early, intending to make a noble effort to reach the snowy mountain; but their spirits were greatly depressed, on perceiving that their miserable pittance of water, which they had discovered the preceding night, was expended. They now entered into a consultation, whether they should proceed any further, or be satisfied with the sample they had already seen of the snowy mountain.

They had no longer a path to direct their steps; their road was become extremely fatigueing, and grew more inconvenient as they advanced. The ground was almost every where broken into deep fissures, which, being slightly covered with moss, occasioned continual stumbling; the intervening space consisted of a surface of loose burnt stones, which broke under their feet; and the ground sounded hollow as they walked upon it. These, and other discouraging circumstances, deterred them from proceeding; especially as they found their conductors so averse to going on, that they doubted whether they could be prevailed on to remain out another night. At length they came to a determination of returning to the ships, after taking a survey from the tallest trees they could discover. From this elevation they perceived that they were surrounded with wood towards the sea: they were unable to distinguish, in the horizon, the sky from the water; and between them and the snowy mountains, a valley presented itself of about seven or eight miles in breadth.

The travellers passed the night at a hut in the second forest; and the following day, before noon, they found themselves nine or ten miles to the north-east of the ships, towards which they marched through the plantations. In their progress, they did not observe a spot of ground, that was susceptible of improvement, left unplanted. Expressing their surprize at seeing several fields of hay, they were informed, that it was intended to cover the grounds where the young *taro* grew, to preserve them from being scorched by the rays of the sun. They observed a few scattered huts, among the plantations, which afforded occasional shelter to the labourers; but they did not see any villages at a greater distance from the sea than four or five miles.

Having thus related the principal circumstances that occurred in an expedition to the snowy mountain at Owhyhee, an account of the other islands of this groupe, may probably be expected *.

The climate of the Sandwich Isles is perhaps more temperate than that of the West India Islands, which are in the same latitude, but the difference is inconsiderable.

* That which is next in size, and nearest in situation to Owhyhee, is Mowee. It is about eight leagues north-north-west from Owhyhee, and is one hundred and forty geographical miles in circumference: the northern shores, like those of the island of Owhyhee, afford no soundings; and the country bears the same aspect of fertility and verdure.

Ranai is about nine miles distant from Mowee and Morotoi, situated to the south-west of the passage between those two islands. It abounds in roots, such as sweet potatoes, *taro*, and yams.

Morotoi is at the distance of two leagues and a half to the west-north-west of Mowee. Yams are its principal produce. It is supposed, however, to contain fresh water. The coast, on the southern and western sides of the island, forms several bays, that promise a tolerable shelter from the trade winds.

Tahoorowa is a small island off the south-western part of Mowee, from which it is nine miles distant. It is without wood, and the soil wants fertility. Between it and Mowee stands the little isle of Morotinnee, which has no inhabitants.

Woahoo is about seven leagues to the north-west of Morotoi. It appears to be the finest of all the Sandwich Islands: the verdure of the hills, the vast variety of wood and lawn, and the whole face of the country presented to view, could hardly be exceeded.

Atooi lies twenty-five leagues to the north-west of Woahoo. Its produce is nearly the same as what the other islands of this cluster furnish; but the inhabitants greatly excel all the people of the neighbouring islands, in the management of their plantations.

Oneeheow is about six leagues to the westward of Atooi. It produces plenty of yams, and of the sweet root called *tee*.

Oreehoua and Tahoora, are two small islands, situate in the neighbourhood of Oneeheow.

The quadrupeds of these islands are confined to three sorts: hogs, dogs, and rats. The dogs, like many of those which are seen at Otaheite, have pricked ears, long backs, and short crooked legs. No variety was observed in them, except in their skins; some being perfectly smooth, and others having long rough hair. They seem naturally sluggish, but perhaps that may have been occasioned more by the treatment they have received, than by their natural disposition. They are usually fed with the hogs, and even left to herd with those animals. Our navigators say they do not recollect a single instance of a dog being made a companion here, as is the custom in Europe. The practice of eating them seems indeed an insuperable bar to their being admitted into society. There being no beasts of prey, nor objects of chace in these islands, the social qualities of the dog, its fidelity, attachment, and sagacity, will probably remain unknown to the natives.

Our navigators were upwards of three months, either cruising off the coast, or in the harbour at Owhyhee; during all which time, the crews of both ships had constantly a large allowance of fresh pork; their consumption of that article, being computed at sixty-puncheons of five hundred weight each. About sixty more puncheons were salted for sea-store: and the greater part of this supply, was drawn from the island of Owhyhee; though it was generally admitted that their consumption did not occasion any scarcity of that article.

The birds of these islands are numerous, but the variety is not great. Some of them may vie with those of any country in point of beauty. Three or four species appear to belong to the *trochili*, or honey-suckers of Linnæus. One is rather larger than a bull-finch; its colour is a glossy black, and the thighs of a deep yellow. Another is of a bright scarlet; its wings black, with a white edge, and its tail black. The third is variegated with brown, yellow, and red. The fourth is green, with a yellow tinge. They also saw a small bird of the fly-catcher kind; a species of thrush, with a greyish breast; and a rail, with short wings, and no tail. Ravens of a dark brown colour, are met with here, but they are extremely scarce. Here are also owls, petrels, curlews, and gannets; plovers of two species, a large white pigeon, &c.

The vegetable produce of the Sandwich Isles differs little from that of the other islands in the Pacific Ocean. The *taro* is here cultivated in great perfection. The bread-fruit trees thrive here. The sugar-canes of these islands grow to an extraordinary size. One of them was brought to our navigators at Atooi, whose circumference was eleven feet and a quarter. At Oneeheow they saw some large brown roots, from six to ten pounds in weight, resembling a yam in shape. The juice, of which it yields a considerable quantity, is very sweet, and answers many of the purposes of sugar.

The inhabitants of the Sandwich Islands are doubtless of the same extraction with those of the Friendly and Society Islands, of New Zealand, the Marquesas, and Easter Island. This fact is not only evinced by the general resemblance of their persons, and the striking similarity of their manners and customs; but seems clearly to be established by the identity of their language. From what continent they originally emigrated, and at what particular time these migrations happened, cannot easily be ascertained. It has been remarked that they bear strong marks of affinity to some of the Indian tribes, which inhabit the Ladrones and Caroline Isles; and the same affinity may again be traced among the Malays and Battas. The period of their migrations is probably remote, as they are very populous, and have no tradition of their own origin, but what is evidently fabulous.

The natives of the Sandwich Isles, in general, rather exceed the middle size, and are well made. They walk gracefully, possess much agility, and are capable of enduring fatigue; though, upon the whole, the men are said to be inferior, with respect to activity and strength, to the inhabitants of the Friendly Islands; and the women are less delicate in their formation than the Otaheitean females. Their complexion is somewhat darker than that of the Otaheiteans; and they are less attractive in their persons than the females of the Society Isles. Many of both sexes, however, exhibited open intelligent countenances; and the women, in particular, have excellent teeth and eyes, with an engaging sweetness in their manner.

The hair of these people is of a brownish black, neither uniformly curling, like that of

the African negroes, nor uniformly straight as among the American Indians, but varying, in this respect, like the hair of Europeans. There is one striking peculiarity in the features of the people of this great nation, that there is always observeable a fulness of the nostrils, without any flatness or spreading of the nose. Some persons have imagined, that this may be the effect of their customary method of salutation, which is performed by pressing together the extremities of their noses.

That superiority which is observeable in the persons of the Erees, through all the other islands, is also found here. Those were generally well formed, when the lower class of the people were subject to all the variety of form and figure, that is seen among the populace of other countries*.

Though it is supposed that the ava does not uniformly shorten life, it certainly brings on a premature and decrepid old age. Fortunately the use of it is made a peculiar privilege of the chiefs. The young son of Terreeoboo, when about thirteen years of age, frequently boasted of his being permitted to drink *ava*, and exhibited, with marks of exultation, a spot on his side that was beginning to grow scaly. When Captain Cook first visited the Society Islands, this pernicious drug was very little known among them. On his second voyage he found the use of it very prevalent at Ulietea; but it had still gained very little ground at Otaheite. When he was last there, it made such dreadful havock, that he hardly knew any of his old acquaintances. It is constantly drank at the Friendly Islands, but so much diluted with water, that hardly any ill consequences ensue, At Atooi it is used with great moderation; on which account the chiefs of that island, are a much finer set of men, than those of the neighbouring islands. Kaoo, and Kaireekeea were prevailed on by our navigators to abstain from it, and they recovered amazingly during the short time they afterwards remained in the island†.

Our adventurers found these islanders remarkably kind and hospitable. Whenever they went on shore, each of the natives struggled to be foremost in presenting little presents for their acceptance; bringing provisions and refreshments, or testifying some other token of their respect. The aged received them with tears of joy, and were highly gratified with being permitted to touch them. They were continually drawing comparisons between our Europeans and themselves, with marks of extreme humility. The young women were also tender and engaging, and seemed much attached to our adventurers, till it was discovered that they had too much cause to repent of their acquaintance.

In point of natural capacity, these people are not below the common standard of the human race. The excellence of their manufactures, and, their improvements in agriculture, reflect great honour on them. Their eagerness of curiosity, and the various expedients they had invented, for working the iron obtained from them, were strong indications of docility and ingenuity. Our adventurers saw two instances of insane persons among these people. One of them was a woman at Oneeheow; the other, a man at Owhyhee. From the extraordinary attention paid to these poor lunatics, it appeared, that the opinion of their being divinely inspired,

* Instances of deformity were more frequent here, than in any of the islands visited by our navigators. While they were cruising off Owhyhee, two dwarfs came on board; one of whom was an old man four feet two inches high; the other was a woman of nearly the same stature. They also saw, among the natives, three who were hump-backed, and a young man, who had ever been destitute of hands and feet. Besides these particular defects, many of the natives are subject to boils and ulcers, which some of our Europeans ascribed to the vast quantity of salt, usually eaten with their fish and flesh. Though the Erees are subject to none of these complaints, many of them suffer dreadfully from the immoderate use of the *ava*. Those who were the most affected by it, had their eyes red and inflamed, their limbs emaciated, their bodies covered with a whitish scurf, and their whole frame trembling and paralytic.

† Notwithstanding the irreparable loss our Europeans sustained by the sudden resentment and violence of these people, it must be acknowledged that they are of a mild and affectionate disposition, equally remote from the gravity and reserve of the Friendly Islanders, and the levity and volatility of the Otaheiteans. They appear to live in the utmost harmony and friendship with each other. The women, who had children, shewed the greatest attention to them from motives of affection; and the men assisted in domestic offices with an alacrity that did honour to their feelings. It must, however, be remarked, that they are much inferior to the inhabitants of the other islands, in that best criterion of civilized manners, the respect paid to the female sex. The women here, are not only denied the privilege of eating with the men, but are forbidden to regale on superior kinds of food. Turtle, pork, several kinds of fish, and some species of plantains, they are forbidden to partake of.

which prevails in most of the oriental nations, is also countenanced here *.

The Sandwich Islanders, almost universally, suffer their beards to grow. There were indeed a few, among whom was the aged king, who cut it off entirely; and others wore it only on the upper lip. That variety with respect to the mode of wearing the hair, which prevails among the other islanders of this ocean, is also observable here. Besides which, they have a fashion peculiar to themselves; they cut it close on each side of the head, down to their ears, and leave a ridge extending from the forehead to the neck.

Necklaces, consisting of strings of variegated shells, are worn indiscriminately by men and women. These people also wear an ornament, in the form of the handle of a cup, about two inches in length, and one and a half in breadth, made of wood, stone, or ivory, highly polished: this is hung round the neck with fine threads of twisted hair, often many times doubled. Instead of this ornament, some of them wear a small human figure on their breast, made of bone, and suspended in the same manner.

Both sexes use the fan, or fly-flap. The most common sort is formed of cocoa-nut fibres, loosely tied in bunches, to the top of a polished handle. The tail feathers of the cock, and the tropic bird, are used for the same purpose. But those which are held in the highest estimation, have the handle formed of the leg or arm bones of an enemy killed in battle. These are carefully handed down, from father to son, as trophies of an immense value †.

The common dress of the men consists only of a piece of thick cloth, called the *maro*, about twelve inches in breadth, which passes between the legs, and is fastened round the waist. Their mats, some of which are beautifully manufactured, are of various sizes, but generally about five feet in length, and four in breadth. These they throw over their shoulders, and bring forward before: they are, however, but seldom used, except in time of war. Besides their ordinary dress, there is another appropriated solely to their chiefs, and worn only on extraordinary occasions. It consists of a feathered cloak and cap, or helmet, and has a magnificent appearance.

The common dress of the women has a close affinity to that of the men. They wrap round the waist a piece of cloth that reaches half way down the thighs; and sometimes, in the cool of the evening, they throw loose pieces of fine cloth over their shoulders, like the women of Otaheite. The *pau* is another dress, chiefly worn by the younger part of the sex. It is formed of the thinnest and finest sort of cloth, wrapped several times round the waist, and descending to the leg, so as to have the appearance of a short full petticoat.

Their necklaces are composed of shells, or of a shining hard red berry, with dried flowers of the Indian mallow, formed into wreaths. They have another elegant ornament, termed an *eraie*, which is sometimes fastened round the hair, in the manner of a garland; and sometimes worn round the neck. It is a kind of ruff formed with great ingennity, of small feathers, woven together so closely, that the surface may be said to vie with the richest velvet in smoothness: the ground is generally red, with alternate circles of black, green, and yellow.

These islanders dwell together in small towns or villages, containing from about one hundred to two hundred houses, built tolerably close to each other, but without order or regularity. They are usually flanked, towards the sea-side, with loose detached walls, intended perhaps for shelter and defence. Some of the best houses have a court-yard before them, railed in very neatly, with smaller habitations for servants erected round it.

The inferior class of people feed principally on fish and vegetables, such as bread-fruit, plantains, sweet potatoes, sugar-canes, yams, and

* It seems probable, that the practice of feeding on the bodies of their enemies, was originally prevalent in the Islands of the Pacific Ocean; though it is not now positively known to exist in any of them, except New Zealand. The offering up human victims, still universally obtains among these islanders; and it is not difficult to conceive, why the inhabitants of New Zealand should retain the repast, which was perhaps the concluding part of these horrid rites.

† The practice of *tatooing*, or puncturing the body, prevails here, and in all the islands in this ocean; though it is only at New Zealand, and the Sandwich Isles, that the face is tatooed. The New Zealanders perform this operation in elegant spiral volutes, and the Sandwich Islanders in straight lines, intersecting each other at right angles. Some only tatoo an arm; others an arm and a leg. They have a singular method of tatooing the tip of the tongues of some of the females, the meaning of which, if it has any meaning, is not generally known.

taro. People of superior rank, have also the flesh of dogs and hogs, dressed in the mode of cookery adopted at the Society Isles. They also eat domestic fowls, which are far from being plentiful, or in any great degree of estimation. They salt their fish, and preserve them in gourd shells, not with a view of providing against scarcity, but from the decided preference they give to seasoned food. Their cookery resembles that of the Friendly and Society Islands; and though some of our Europeans disliked their taro puddings, for their sourness, others were of a different opinion*.

They usually rise with the sun, and retire to their repose a few hours after sun-set. The Erees amuse themselves in making canoes and mats; the Towtows are principally employed in the plantations, and in fishing; and the women are the manufacturers of cloth. The young persons, of both sexes, delight in dancing; and, on more solemn occasions, are entertained with wrestling and boxing-matches, like the natives of the Friendly Islands; to whom, however, they are much inferior in these respects.

Their dances bear a stronger resemblance to those of the New Zealanders, than to the Friendly or Society Islanders, and are introduced with a solemn kind of song. Their music is of a rude kind; no other instruments appeared among them than drums of various sizes. Their songs, however, which they are said to sing in parts†, and which they accompany with a gentle motion of their arms, like the inhabitants of the Friendly Islands, have a very pleasing effect

They are much addicted to gambling; one of their games resembles that of draughts, but, from the number of squares, seems to be much more intricate. In their play, they move black and white pebbles, from one square to another. Their manner of playing at bowls, has some affinity with the European methods. They have frequent races between boys and girls, on the event of which very spirited wagers are betted. Our adventurers saw one of these islanders beating his breast, and tearing his hair, in a rage, for having lost three hatchets at one of these races; to purchase which he had parted with almost the whole of his property‡.

Their method of agriculture, as well as navigation, resembles that of the other Islands of the Pacific. They are proficients in sculpture, in staining cloth, and in the manufacture of mats. Our navigators saw several curious specimens of their sculpture, in the wooden bowls, in which the *Erees* drink *ava*. The figures are neatly finished, and accurately proportioned. They manufacture their cloth in the same manner, and of the same materials, as at the Society and Friendly Isles. They extract their colours from the same berries, and other vegetables, which are used by the Otaheiteans for this purpose. They form their mats of the leaves of pandanus; and these, as well as their cloths, are beautifully wrought in patterns, and stained with a variety of colours.

Their fishing hooks are of various sizes and figures, but those principally used are in the shape of a small-fish. They make their hooks of bone, mother of pearl, or wood, pointed and barbed with little bones or toitoise-shell. Those used for catching sharks are very large, being generally seven or eight inches in length. The line used for fishing and making nets, is usually formed of the bark of the *touta*, or cloth tree.

* They are very cleanly and decent at their meals, and their method of dressing both their meat and vegetables, was generally acknowledged to be superior to the British cookery. It is the constant practice of the Erees to begin their meals with a dose of the extract of pepper-root, or *ava*. The women, as before observed, eat apart from the other sex, and are prohibited from feeding on pork, turtle, and some particular species of plantains. But they so far disregarded this interdiction, that they would privately eat pork with our Europeans; yet they never could be prevailed upon to taste the two latter articles of food.

† Some connoisseurs in music have very much doubted this circumstance of their singing in parts. Captain Burney, however, and Captain Phillips of the marines, both of whom have some knowledge of music, strongly assert, that they did sing in parts; that is, they sung together in different notes.

‡ Both sexes are surprisingly expert in swimming, which is considered among them not only as a necessary art, but also a pleasing recreation. Their encounters with the surges and the billows in Karrakakooa bay, display astonishing skill, activity, and contempt of danger. The amazing courage and address, with which they perform their wonderful manoeuvres, are almost incredible. The following accident shews that children, at an early period, may be taught to lose all apprehensions of the danger of water, and set its perils at defiance.

A canoe, with a woman and her children, happening to be overset, one of the children of about four years of age, seemed highly delighted with what had happened, swimming about at its ease, and playing a number of frolics, till the canoe was brought to its former position.

It

It is of different degrees of fineness, and may be continued to any length. They have also a superior sort made of the bark of the *areemah;* and the finest is composed of human hair. They make a cordage of a stronger kind from cocoa-nut fibres, for the rigging of their canoes.

Their gourds are used for a variety of domestic purposes. Some of them grow to such an enormous magnitude, as to be sufficiently capacious to contain ten or a dozen gallons. The better to adapt them to their respective uses, they give them different shapes, by fastening bandages round them during their growth. Thus, some of them are in the form of a dish to hold their provisions, &c. Others are of a long cylindrical form, for receiving fishing-tackle, &c. and others in the shape of a long-necked bottle, in which water, &c. is kept.

Their pans used in the process of making salt, consist of earth, lined with clay. The salt in general use at Oneeheow and Atooi, during the first visit of our adventurers, was brownish, and rather dirty; but that which they afterwards procured at Karakakooah bay, was white, and of an excellent quality.

The weapons of these people are daggers, spears, slings, and clubs. The dagger, which they call by the name of *Pahooa,* is made of a black heavy wood that resembles ebony. It is from one to two feet in length, having a string passing through the handle, by which it is suspended to the arm. The blade is rounded in the middle; and the sides, which are sharp, terminate in a point. This is a very destructive instrument in close engagements. Their spears, which are of two kinds, are formed of a hard wood, not unlike mahogany. One sort is from six to eight feet in length: the other, with which the warriors they saw at Atooi and Owhyhee were chiefly armed, are from twelve to fifteen feet in length.

Their slings resemble common slings, with this difference, that the stone is lodged on matting instead of leather. Their clubs are of various shapes and sizes, formed of different sorts of wood, and roughly executed.

SECTION XXXVII.

Further Account of the Sandwich Islands—Classes of the People—Power of the Eree-Taboo—Authority of the Erees—Tyranny of Pareea—Punishment of Offences—Their Religion—Society of Priests—The Orono—Idols—Religious Ceremonies—Human Sacrifices—Ideas of a future State—Marriages—Remarkable Instance of Jealousy—Funeral Ceremonies on the Death of a Chief—Transactions in a Second Expedition to the North, by the Way of Kamtschatka—Quit Oneeheow—Steer for Awatska Bay—Prepare for a cold Climate—Seamen, like Children, in some Respects—Sudden Change of Climate—Leaking of the Resolution—See Kamtschatka—Continued Showers of Sleet—The Resolution enters Awatska Bay—Discover St. Peter and St. Paul—Curious Mode of Travelling.

THE people of the Sandwich Islands are divided into three classes. The first are the Erees, or chiefs of each district; one of whom is superior to all the rest, and is called at Owhyhee *Eree-Taboo,* and *Eree-Moee.* The first name expresses his absolute authority; and the latter implies that, in his presence, all must prostrate themselves. The second class appear to enjoy a right of property, but have no authority. The third are called *towtows,* or servants, who have neither rank nor property*.

Whether the lower class can secure their property

* The Erees seem to have unlimited power over the inferior classes of people, many instances of which occurred daily. On the other hand, the people are implicitly obedient. It is remarkable, however, that the chiefs were never seen to exercise any acts of cruelty, injustice, or insolence towards them; though they frequently exercise their power over each other, in a most tyrannical degree. This will clearly appear from the two following instances.

A chief of the lower order had behaved with great civility to the master of the ship, on his examination of Karakakooa Bay; Mr. King, on a future day, took him on board the Resolution, and introduced him to Captain Cook, who

perty from the rapacity of the great chiefs, our navigators cannot positively say, but it appears to be well protected against theft and depredation. Their houses, plantations, hogs, and cloth are left unguarded, without fear or apprehension. In the plain country, their possessions are separated by walls; and, in the woods where horse-plantains grow, they use white flags to discriminate property. These circumstances indicate, that, where property is concerned, the power of the chiefs is not arbitrary; but so far limited as to afford encouragement to the lower orders to cultivate the soil, which they occupy individually and distinctly for their respective emolument.

Very imperfect accounts are given respecting their administration of justice. If a quarrel has arisen among the lower class of the people, the matter is referred to the decision of some chief. If an inferior chief offends one of superior rank, his punishment is dictated by the feelings of the superior at that moment. If he should fortunately escape the first transports of his rage, methods may probably be found out, through the mediation of others, to compound for his offence, by the whole, or a part of his effects.

Their religion is nearly the same as that of the Society and Friendly Islands. In common they have all their *morais*, their *whattas*, their sacred songs, and their sacrifices. The ceremonies are longer and more numerous here, than in the islands above mentioned: and though, in all these places, the performance of their religious rites, is committed to a particular class of people; yet our adventurers never found a regular society of priests till they arrived at Kakooa, in Karakakooa bay. *Orono* was the title bestowed on the principal of this order; a title seeming to imply something highly sacred, and which almost received adoration in the person of Omeeah. The privilege of holding the principal offices in this order, is limited to certain families. Omeeah, the *Orono*, was Kaoo's son. It was also observed that the son of Omeeah, an infant of the age of five years, had always a number of attendants, and such other marks of attention shewn him, as never were observed in any similar instance. Hence it was concluded, that his life was an object of importance, and that he would eventually succeed to the exalted dignity of his father *.

A party of our Europeans were conducted to a large house in a bay south of Karakakooa, in which they beheld the black figure of a man, resting on his toes and fingers: the limbs were well proportioned, and the whole beautifully polished. The name of this figure was *Maee;* round which thirteen others were placed, with rude and distorted limbs. These were said to be the Eatooas of deceased chiefs, whose names they repeated. These people also admit into their houses, ludicrous and obscene idols, not unlike the Priapus of the antients.

Many voyagers have remarked, that the Society and Friendly Islanders pay adoration to certain birds; and that custom seems prevalent in these islands. Ravens are probably the objects of it, as Mr. King saw two of these birds perfectly tame at Kakooa, and was informed they were Eatoos: he offered several articles to exchange for them, but they were all refused; and he was earnestly requested not to injure or offend them †.

With respect to their opinions of a future state,

engaged him to dine with them. While they were at table, Pareea entered, whose countenance expressed the highest indignation at seeing their guest so honourably entertained. Seizing him by the hair of the head, he would have dragged him out of the cabin, had not Captain Cook interfered. After much altercation, no other indulgence could be obtained (without quarrelling with Pareea) than that their guest should be permitted to remain in the cabin, on condition that he seated himself on the floor, while Pareea occupied his place at the table. An instance somewhat similar occurred, when Terreeoboo came first on board the Resolution; when Maiha-maiha, who attended him, seeing Pareea upon deck, turned him ignominiously out of the ship.

* It has been already observed, that the title of *Orono* was bestowed upon Captain Cook; and it is certain that these islanders considered our Europeans as a race of beings superior to themselves; frequently repeating that the great Eatooa lived in their country. Great variety of idols were to be seen on the *morais*, and about the houses of these people, on which they bestow different names; but they were held by them in very little estimation, from their contemptuous expressions of them, and from their selling them for trifles. They had generally, however, a particular figure in high favour, on which they bestowed all their adoration whilst it continued a favourite. They cloathed it in red, beat their drums in honour of it, sang hymns before it; placed bunches of red feathers, and variety of vegetables at its feet: and frequently displayed a pig, or a dog, to rot on the whatta near which it was exposed.

† Human sacrifices are more common here than in any of the islands visited by our navigators. They have recourse

state, our adventurers received very defective information. On asking them whither the dead were gone? They said, the breath, which they considered as the immortal part, was fled to the Eatooa. They also attempted to describe a place, which they suppose to be the abode of the dead; but they seemed to have no idea of rewards and punishments.

Marriage is a compact which seems to exist among them: it has already been mentioned, that, when Terreeoboo had left his queen Rorarora at Mowee, another woman cohabited with him, by whom he had children, and seemed particularly attached to her; but, whether polygamy is permitted, or whether it is mixed with concubinage, nothing can be decisively said. In domestic concerns among the lower class of people, one man and one woman seemed to have the direction of the house, and the children were subordinate to them, as in civilized countries.

At Karakakooa Bay, our navigators had an opportunity of seeing part of their funeral rites. Hearing of the death of an old chief near their observatories, some of them repaired to the place, where they perceived a number of people assembled. They were seated round an area, fronting the house where the deceased chief lay; and a man, with a red feathered cap, came to the door, continually putting out his head, and howling most lamentably; accompanied with horrid grimaces, and violent distortions of face. A large mat was afterwards spread upon the area, and thirteen women and two men came out of the house, and sat down upon it in three equal rows; three of the women, and the two men, being in front. Feathered ruffs decorated the necks and hands of the women; and their shoulders were ornamented with broad green leaves, curiously scollopped. Near a small hut, at one corner of this area, half a dozen boys were placed with white banners, and *taboo* sticks. The company seated on the mat, chanted a melancholy tune. About an hour having passed in these ceremonies, more mats were spread, when the dead chief's widow, and about four other elderly women, walked solemnly out of the house; and, seating themselves before the company, wept most bitterly; many others joining in the melancholy dirge. They continued thus, with little variation, till late at night, when our adventurers left them.

At day-light in the morning, the people were dispersed, and every thing was perfectly quiet. Our navigators afterwards desired to know how the body was disposed of? Some women of rank, at that time approaching, signified to them, that their presence interrupted the performance of some necessary rites. Soon after they had left them, their cries and lamentations assailed their ears; and when they saw them a few hours afterwards, the lower part of their faces was painted black.

They had also an opportunity of observing the ceremonies on the funeral of a person of a lower class. Hearing dismal lamentations issue from a miserable hut they entered it, and perceived two women, whom they supposed to be mother and daughter, weeping over the body of a man who had that instant expired. They immediately covered the body with a cloth; then, lying down near it, they spread the cloth over themselves, beginning to chant a melancholy hymn, after repeating *Aweh madoaah! Aweh tanee*—Oh my Father! Oh my Husband! In one corner of the house, they beheld a younger daughter prostrate on the ground, having black cloth spread over her, and repeating the same expressions. Quitting this mournful scene, they saw a great number of the neighbours collected together at the door, on this occasion, who were all perfectly silent, but wonderfully attentive to their present melancholy duty. The place of interment for the chiefs, is the *morai,* or *heree erees;* and those who are inhumanly sacrificed on the occasion, are buried near them.

On the 15th of March, at seven in the morning, they stood to the south-west, in expectation of falling in with the island of Modoopapappa. At four in the afternoon, a large canoe overtook them, in which were ten persons, inhabitants of

course to these horrid rites on the commencement of a war, and previous to any battle, or other signal enterprize. The death of a chief demands a sacrifice of one or more *towtows*, according to the rank he bears: no less than ten were doomed to suffer on the death of Terreeoboo.

Among their religious customs, the knocking out their fore-teeth may be classed with great propriety. Most of the common people, and several of the chiefs, had lost one or more of them; and this ceremony was considered as a propitiatory sacrifice to the Eatooa, to avert his anger; on the same principle as the cutting off a part of the finger at the Friendly Islands, to express the violence of their grief at the decease of a friend.

Oneeheow, who were proceeding to Tahoora to catch birds; particularly tropic and man-of-war birds. At day-break the next morning, Tahoora bore east-north-east, distant about five or six leagues.

On the 18th they saw several boobies, and man-of-war birds, which induced them to look out sharply for land. They had fine weather and a moderate wind till the 23d, when it increased to a strong gale, and continued about twelve hours. Afterwards it became more moderate. In the morning of the 26th, they supposed they saw land to the west-south-west; but discovered the mistake after sailing sixteen leagues in that direction; and, night approaching, they again steered west. They pursued this course, without much alteration in the wind, till the 29th. For some days past, they had met with several turtles, one of which was so diminutive as not to exceed three inches in length*.

On the 11th the latitude was 35° 30′, and the longitude 165° 45′. They saw plenty of sea-birds, and several bunches of sea-weed. The Discovery also passed a log of wood; but no other signs of land appeared.

On the 12th the wind came gradually round to the east, and increased to a very strong gale. They had been incommoded by a leak, but having been always able to keep it under, it gave them but little concern till the 13th, when a sudden inundation deluged the whole space between decks, and created much alarm. The water which had lodged in the coal-hole, not finding a passage into the well, had forced up the platforms over it, and instantly set every thing afloat. Their situation was the more grievous, as they could not devise any means of relieving themselves. They could think of no other expedient, than to cut a hole through the bulk-head, which separated the coal-hole from the fore-hold, and thus form a passage for the water into the well. This passage being made, the greatest part of the water ran into the well, when they were enabled to get out the rest with buckets. The leak was now so much increased, that the people were constantly employed in pumping and baleing till the 15th, at noon. The men submitted cheerfully to this excessive fatigue; and their sufferings were the more intolerable, as they had not a dry place to sleep in; but, to afford them some consolation, they were permitted to have their full allowance of grog.

The inclemency of the northern climate was now severely felt: on the 18th they had snow, sleet, and strong gales from the south-west; which, considering the season of the year, and the quarter from which the wind came, was rather a remarkable circumstance. The sudden alteration from the sultry heat which they felt at the beginning of the month, to the extreme cold they then experienced, must have occasioned great inconvenience.

On the 21st, in the forenoon, they saw a whale, and a land bird. As the water appeared muddy, they sounded in the afternoon, but found no ground with a hundred and forty fathoms of line. During the three preceding days, they saw a large quantity of wild-fowl, somewhat resembling ducks. This usually indicates the vicinity of land; but no other signs of it had been observed since the 16th, in which time they had ran upwards of a hundred and fifty leagues.

The wind shifted to the north-east on the 22d. The cold was so intense, that the ropes were frozen to such a degree, that it was a business of difficulty to force them through the blocks. On

* The continuation of the light winds, with the unsettled state of the weather, induced Captain Clerke to abandon his plan of keeping within the tropical latitudes. In consequence of which they began to steer north-west by north, which they continued till the 6th of April, when they lost the trade wind. The fine weather, which they experienced between the tropics, had not been misemployed in causing the boats to be repaired, and other necessary duties to be performed. There were other cares, which had the preservation of the health of the crews for their object; and these occupied a great number of the people. Captain Cook's established orders of airing the beds, having fires between decks, smoking them with gun-powder, and washing them with vinegar, were invariably observed. Those who know not the habits and disposition of seamen, require to be informed, that they are so accustomed to be directed by their officers, respecting the care of themselves, that they contract the thoughtlessness of infants. Had they been suffered to act according to their own discretion, the whole crew would have been naked before half the completion of the voyage. It might reasonably be supposed, from their having experienced a voyage to the north the preceding year, that they would have been particularly attentive to these matters, but such reflections never operated upon them; for, as soon as they returned to the tropical climates, their fur jackets, and other articles appropriated for cold climates, were kicked about the decks as useless and insignificant; though every one among them knew they were to make another voyage towards the pole. The officers, however, caused them to be taken up, and put into empty casks, where they were preserved till the time arrived when it was necessary they should be restored to their respective owners.

the

the 23d, at six in the morning, the land presented itself in mountains covered with snow; and a high conical rock was observed at the distance of three or four leagues. Shortly after they had taken this imperfect view, a thick fog again appeared. As soon as the weather cleared up, they stood in to take a nearer survey of the country, when a most dreary prospect presented itself. The coast seemed straight and uniform; without bays or inlets; the ground from the shore rising in hills of a moderate elevation, behind which were ranges of mountains, whose summits penetrated the clouds. The whole seemed covered with snow, except the perpendicular sides of some cliffs, which would not permit that article to rest upon them.

The wind continued blowing strong from the north-east, with thick hazy weather, from the 24th to the 28th; insomuch that the ship resembled a complete mass of ice. The shrouds were so completely incrusted with it, as to have their dimensions doubled: the most experienced seamen among them declaring, they had never experienced such continued showers of sleet, and that extremity of cold which they had now to encounter. The inclemency of the weather, the difficulty of working the ships, and the incessant duty required at the pumps, rendered the service intolerable to most of the crew; some of whom were much frost-bitten, and others confined with colds. They continued standing four hours on each tack, having soundings of sixty fathoms, when within three leagues of the land, but no sounding at double that distance.

In the morning of the 28th the weather cleared up, and a light breeze continued from the same quarter. A fine warm day encouraged the people to expect a thaw; they were therefore busied in taking the ice from the rigging, masts, and sails, to prevent its falling on their heads. At three in the afternoon. a fair wind sprung up from the southward, with which they stood in for Awatska Bay. The mouth of the bay opens in the direction of north north-west. On the south side, the land is moderately high. Three remarkable rocks lie in the channel between them; and, on the opposite side, a single rock of considerable height. Having passed the mouth of the bay, which extends about four miles in length, a circular bason presents itself, of twenty-five miles in circumference, in which they anchored about four o'clock, in six fathoms water, wishing to escape a shoal mentioned by Muller to lie in the channel*.

In the morning of the 29th, Mr. King was sent, with the boats, to examine the bay, and deliver the letters to the Russian commander, which they had brought from Oonalashka. It is probable that the inhabitants had not, by this time, either observed the ships or the boats; for, even on the ice, no appearance of a living creature could be seen in the town. When they advanced farther on the ice, a few men were observed hurrying backwards and forwards, and a sledge, drawn by dogs, with one inhabitant in it, came down to the sea-side, opposite to them.

Whilst they were gazing at this unusual sight, and admiring the great civility of this stranger, who they supposed was coming to their assistance, they were astonished to see him suddenly turn short round, and direct his course towards the ostrog. They were equally chagrined and disappointed at this abrupt departure, especially as their journey over the ice began to be attended with much difficulty and danger. At every step they took, they sunk almost knee-deep in the snow: and, though there was tolerable good footing at the bottom, the weak parts of the ice were not discoverable, and they were continually in fear of breaking through it.

The sight of another sledge advancing towards our adventurers, afforded them some comfort; but, instead of coming to relieve them, the driver stopt, and called out to them. Mr. King instantly held up Ismyloff's letters; in consequence of which, he turned about, and went rapidly back.

* Great quantities of loose ice drifted with the tide in the middle of the bay; but the shores were entirely blocked up with it. Plenty of wild fowl were seen, and large flights of Greenland pigeons, together with ravens and eagles. They examined every corner of the bay, expecting to discern the town of Saint Peter and Saint Paul; which from the accounts given them at Oonalashka, they supposed to be a place of strength and consequence. At last they perceived, to the north-west, some miserable log-houses, and a few conical huts, raised on poles, amounting to about thirty, in the whole; which, from their situation, they were induced to conclude to be Petropaulowska. But, in justice to the hospitable treatment they found there, they are compelled to acknowledge that their disappointment was the source of much entertainment to them; for in this wretched extremity of the earth, beyond conception barbarous and inhospitable, out of the reach of civilization, barricadoed with ice, and covered with summer snow, they met with the tenderest feelings of humanity, joined to a nobleness of mind, which would have done honour to any nation upon earth.

Unable to draw any conclusion from this strange behaviour, they proceeded towards the ostrog with great circumspection; and, when they were within about a quarter of a mile of it, they observed a body of armed men advancing towards them. To avoid giving them any alarm, and to preserve a peaceable appearance, Mr. King and Mr. Webber marched in front, and the men, who had boat-hooks in their hands, were placed in the rear. The armed party consisted of about thirty soldiers, preceded by a person with a cane in his hand.

Within a few paces of them he halted, and vainly endeavoured to inform him that they were English, and had brought these dispatches from Oonalashka. Having attentively examined them, he conducted them towards the village in great silence and solemnity, frequently halting his men, and causing them to perform different parts of the manual exercise; to convince them, that, if they should presume to offer any violence, they would have to deal with those who knew what they were about.

Arriving at length at the residence of the commanding officer of the party, they were ushered in; and, after giving orders to the military without doors, their host made his appearance, accompanied by the secretary of the port. One of Ismyloff's letters was now opened, and the other sent off by a special messenger to Bolcheretsk, a town on the west-side of the peninsula of Kamptschatka, where the Russian commander of this province generally resides*.

The officer, at whose house they were entertained was a serjeant, and also the commander, of the *ostrog*. After he had recovered from the surprize which their arrival had occasioned, nothing could exceed the kindness and hospitality of his behaviour. His house, indeed, was intolerably hot, but exceedingly neat and clean. After Mr. King had changed his wet clothes, which the serjeant's civility enabled him to do, by furnishing him with a complete suit of his own, they were requested to partake of a dinner, which was doubtless the best he could procure; and, considering the visit was unexpected, was conducted with some ingenuity. To have prepared soup and *bouille*, much time would have been required; instead of which, some cold beef was sliced, and boiled water poured over it. After that they were regaled with a large roasted bird, the taste of which was inimitable, though they were unacquainted with its species. Their liquor was such as the Russians distinguish by the name of *quass*, and was the most indifferent part of their entertainment. The serjeant's wife served up several of the dishes, and was not permitted to sit down at table†.

On their return, they saw the boats towing the ship towards the village, and, about seven, they moored close to the ice, at the distance of half a league from the *ostrog*. On the morning of the 30th, the carpenters were set to work to stop the leak, which had occasioned them so much trouble during their last run. It appeared to have been occasioned by some sheathing falling off from the larboard-bow, and of course the oakum was washed out from between the planks. The weather was now so warm in the middle of the day, that the ice began to break away very

* It appears strange that the natives had not seen the Resolution the preceding day, when they anchored in the bay; nor this morning till the boats approached the ice. The first sight of the ship had given them great alarm, and the garrison was instantly put under arms. Two field pieces were placed before the commander's house; and powder, shot, and lighted matches instantly produced.

† Having finished their repast, during which time the conversation was limited to a few bows, and other personal tokens of mutual respect, they wished to communicate to their host the cause and objects of their visits to this port. As Ismyloff had probably written to them on the same subject, in the letters they had delivered, they readily conceived the meaning of the adventurers; but as there was not a person in the place, who knew any other language than Russian and Kamptschadale, they found it extremely difficult to comprehend what he endeavoured to communicate to them. After some time spent in their attempts to understand each other, the sum of the intelligence they had procured, appeared to be, that though they could not be supplied plentifully with stores and provisions at this place, they were to be procured in abundance at Bolcheretsk. That the commander would readily supply them with what they wanted; but that, till the serjeant had received orders from him, neither he, nor any of the natives, could even venture to go on board the vessel.

It being now time for our adventurers to depart, a sledge drawn by five dogs, and a driver, was instantly provided for each of their party. The sailors were greatly delighted with this mode of conveyance; and it gave them additional satisfaction when they discovered, that the two boat-hooks had a sledge appropriated solely to themselves. These sledges are so light, and so judiciously constructed for the purposes they are intended, that they moved safely and expeditiously over the ice; though difficulty and danger attended their operations on foot.

fast,

fast, and almost choaked up the entrance of the bay Several of the officers paid their visits to the serjeant, by whom they were received with great civility. Captain Clerke made him a present of two bottles of rum, supposing he could not send him any thing more acceptable; in return for which, he received some excellent fowls of the grouse kind, and about twenty very fine trouts.

On Sunday the 2d of May they had heavy showers of snow, and the weather was so irregular that the carpenters could not proceed in their business. Two sledges were observed to drive into the village on the 3d, when Captain Clerke ordered Mr. King on shore, to enquire whether any answer was arrived from the commander of Kamptschatka; which, according to the serjeant's information, might be reasonably expected about this time. The distance from Bolcheretsk to St, Peter and St. Paul, by the usual route, is about one hundred and thirty-five English miles. The dispatches were sent off by the dogs on the 29th, at noon; and returned with an answer, as they afterwards found, early this morning: it appears, therefore, that they were little more than three days and a half in performing a journey of two hundred and seventy miles.

The return of the commander's answer was, however, concealed from them for the present; and on Mr. King's arrival at the serjeant's, he was informed that he should hear from him on the following day. While Mr. King was on shore, the boat in which he came, and another, were bound fast by the ice. Thus situated they were obliged to continue on shore till the evening, when some of them were conveyed in sledges to the edge of the ice, where the boats from the ship took them off; and the rest continued all night on shore.

It froze intensely during the night, but, in the morning of the 4th, the floating ice was drifted away by a change of wind, and the boats were instantly set at liberty. In the forenoon, about ten, several sledges arriving at the edge of the ice, a boat was dispatched from the ship to conduct the persons who were in them on board. One of them was a Russian merchant from Bolcheretsk, named Fedofitsh; and the other a German, known by the appellation of Port, with dispatches from Major Behn, the commander of Kamptschatka to Captain Clerke*.

Our adventurers were much diverted with the fears and apprehensions of these people; and especially with an account, given by Mr. Port, of the serjeant's extreme caution the day before. On seeing Mr. King and some other gentlemen come on shore, he privately conveyed him, and the Russian merchant, into the kitchin; where they were concealed, to give them an opportunity of listening to their conversation, that they might be enabled to discover whether they were Englishmen or not.

Imagining, from the appearance of Mr. Port, that he might possibly be retained as the commander's secretary, he was treated accordingly, and was invited, with the Russian merchant, to dine with Captain Clerke. Soon, however, from a variety of circumstances, they began to suspect that he was no more than a common servant; but, not choosing to sacrifice their little comforts to their pride, they avoided an explanation, by not permitting such a question to be proposed to him; he therefore continued on the same footing of equality with our navigators; and they, in return, enjoyed the advantage of his abilities as a linguist.

* When they arrived at the edge of the ice, and saw distinctly the magnitude of the ships, which were then within about two hundred yards of them, they appeared to be exceedingly alarmed; and, before they would venture to embark, stipulated that two of the boat's crew should remain on shore, as hostages for their safety. It afterwards appeared that Ismyloff, in his letter to the commander, had misrepresented these ships as two small trading boats (for what reasons they could not conceive) and, as the serjeant had only seen the ships at a distance, he had not rectified that mistake.

When they arrived on board, they still perceived, from their great timidity and caution, that unpleasant apprehensions were entertained. They were elated, however, when the German found a person among them, with whom he could enter into conversation. Mr. Webber spoke that language fluently, and convinced them that they were Englishmen and friends. Mr. Port, being introduced to Captain Clerke, delivered him the commander's letter. It was written in the German language, and merely complimentary, inviting him and his officers to Bolcheretsk. Mr. Port also informed Captain Clerke that the major had been misinformed respecting the size of the ships, and the service in which they were employed; and that they were suspected to be little better than pirates.

SECTION XXXIX.

Stores and Provisions scarce at St. Peter and St. Paul—Exorbitant Demands of a Merchant—A Party dispatched for Provisions—Proceed up the River Awatska—Hospitality of the Town of Karatchin—Journey on Sledges—Remarkable hot Spring at Natcheekin—Embark on the Bolchoireka River—Generosity of Major Behn—Bolcheratsk described—Entertainments of Dancing—Instance of Generosity in the Sailors—Major Behn's Departure, and extraordinary Character.

AIDED by their interpreter, they were now enabled to converse with the Russians with tolerable facility. Their first enquiries were naturally directed, to the means of procuring a supply of fresh provisions and naval stores; particularly the latter, for the want of which they had been a long time in distress. On enquiry, it appeared, that the whole country about the bay, could furnish no other live cattle than two heifers; and these the serjeant readily engaged to procure for them. Their next applications were made to the merchant, whose terms for serving them was so extremely exorbitant, that Captain Clerke thought it necessary to send an officer to the commander at Bolcheretsk, to learn the price of stores in that quarter.

Captain Clerke having thought proper to fix upon Mr. King for this service, he ordered him to prepare for setting out the following day, together with Mr. Webber, who was appointed to accompany him as interpreter. That day and the next, however, proved too stormy for beginning such a journey; but, on the 7th of May, they set out in the ship's boats to proceed to the entrance of the Awatska, where the country boats were to meet them, to conduct them up the stream. Captain Gore was now added to their party, and they were accompanied by Mr. Port, and the Russian merchant, with two cossacks, having been previously furnished with warm furred cloathing; a precaution which they soon found was extremely necessary, as it began to snow briskly immediately after their setting out*.

The men being exceedingly fatigued, and as darkness would have increased the difficulty of navigating the river, they declined all thoughts of advancing on their journey that evening. They fixed upon a place, which was tolerably well sheltered, and clearing it of the snow, erected a small marquée, which they had providently taken with them; and, with the assistance of a good fire, and some excellent punch, passed the night agreeably. The Kamptschadales were very expeditious in cooking their provisions; but our adventurers were surprized at finding they had brought with them their utensils for making tea, thinking it a most intolerable hardship if they cannot regale themselves with that beverage two or three times a day.

As soon as it was light on the second day, they proceeded on their journey, and before they had made much progress, they were met by the *Toion*, or chief Karatchin, who had been apprized of their coming, and had provided canoes that were lighter, and better contrived for navigating the higher parts of the river Awatska. They now proceeded very rapidly, the Toion's people being very expert in that kind of business. At ten they arrived at the *ostrog*, named Karatchin, and the seat of his command, where they were received at the water-side by the Kamtschadale men and women, and some Russian servants belonging to Fedositsh. They were all attired in their best habiliments †.

Quitting the river, our adventurers were to perform the next part of their journey upon sledges; but the thaw had been so great in the day-

* The breadth of the mouth of the Awatska is about a quarter of a mile, but it gradually became narrower as they advanced. Having proceeded for some time, they passed several branches. For the first ten miles, the general direction of the river, from the bay, is to the north; and afterwards it turns to the eastward. Six men were employed in pushing them with long poles, three of them being at each end of the boat; and proceeded against the stream, at the rate of about three miles an hour. The conductors endured this severe labour for ten hours; stopping only once, for a short space of time, to take a little refreshment.

† The ostrog was pleasantly situated by the side of a river, and consisted of three log-houses, nineteen *balagans*, or summer-habitations, and three *jourts*, which are houses under

The Manner of Travelling in Winter in
KAMTSCHATKA.

Cook

Sparrow sculp.

day-time, they could not set out till the snow was become firm by the coldness of the evening. Thus were they furnished with an opportunity of walking about the village; which was the only place in this country, that they had seen free from snow. The leaves of the trees were just budding, and the verdure was strongly contrasted with the surrounding hills, which remained covered with snow. The soil seeming capable of producing common vegetables, they were astonished at not finding a spot of it that had been cultivated. Nor were the inhabitants possessed of any sort of cattle. Their situation, during the winter months, must be wretched beyond conception. They were, at this time, removing from their *jourts* to their *balagans*, which gave our adventurers an opportunity of surveying both these sorts of habitations. The people kindly invited them into their humble mansions; cheerfulness and content were displayed in every countenance, to which the approaching change of season might probably contribute.

Returning to their hosts, supper was prepared for them; and, when the repast was ended, they entertained the *Toion* and his wife with some punch. Captain Gore, with his wonted generosity, made them some valuable presents: after which they retired to the kitchin, leaving our adventurers in the other room; on the benches of which they spread their bear-skins, and took a short repose. But the melancholy howlings of the dogs awakened them about nine the same evening. While the baggage was lashing upon the sledges, their horrid noise continued; but as soon as they were yoked, and the party all prepared for travelling, a cheerful yelping succeeded, which ceased the instant they marched off*.

During the winter, the dogs are fed with offals of dried and stinking fish; and even this wretched food is withheld from them, a day before they undertake a journey: nor are they permitted to taste a morsel of food, till they arrive at the end of it. They frequently fast for two entire days, in which time they will perform a journey of very great extent. These dogs resemble the Pomeranian breed in shape, but they are considerably larger†.

Having proceeded about four miles on their journey, it began to rain, which, added to the darkness of the night, greatly disconcerted them. After some consultation, it was agreed, that they should continue on that spot till day-light; when they accordingly wrapped themselves up in furs, and waited patiently for the morning. About three o'clock they were summoned to proceed; the guides being apprehensive, that if they waited any longer, they might probably be stopped by the thaw, which would equally prevent their advancing or returning. Though they had many

under ground. The *Toion*, to whose habitation they were then conducted, was a plain decent man, sprung from a Russian mother by a Kamtschadale father. His house, like the rest in this country, consisted of only two apartments: the furniture of the outer room was a long narrow table; and the inner apartment, which was the kitchen, was but scantily furnished. But the hearty welcome, and kind attention of the host, more than compensated for the poverty of the habitation. The wife of the *Toion* was an excellent cook, and served their guests with various sorts of fish and game. Whilst they were dining in this miserable hut, at the extremity of the habitable globe, a solitary half-worn pewter-spoon attracted the attention of our adventurers. Its form or fashion had nothing singular, and the word *London* was stamped upon the back of it. Language cannot express the feelings which this trifling circumstance gave birth to. Those who have been long absent from their native country, will readily conceive what inexpressible transport such an occurrence may occasion.

* The length of the body of one of these sledges is about four feet and a half, and the breadth one foot. It is made in the form of a crescent, of light tough wood, fastened together with wicker-work; and, among people of rank, is elegantly stained with red and blue; the seat being covered with furs or bear-skins. They seldom carry more than one person at a time, who sits aside, with his feet on the lower part of the sledge, having his baggage and provisions in a bundle behind him. The usual number of dogs employed in drawing this carriage, is five; four of them yoked two and two, and the other acting as leader. Great attention is shewn in training up the leader, which frequently becomes very valuable, on account of his steadiness and docility. When the dogs are inattentive to their duty, the rider chastises them by throwing his crooked stick at them. Should the driver happen to lose his stick, it is said, the dogs immediately discover it; and if he should not be steady and resolute, they will instantly set off full speed, and never stop till their strength is exhausted; or till the carriage is overturned and dashed to pieces, or hurried down a precipice, when all are buried in the snow.

† Not choosing to rely on their own skill, they had each a man to conduct the sledge, which, from the condition the roads were then in, proved a very laborious business. Mr. King was attended by a good-natured cossack, who was so very imperfect in his business, that he was continually overturned, which afforded entertainment to his companions. The party consisted of ten sledges in the whole: that which conducted Captain Gore, was made of two lashed together, and abundantly supplied with furs and bear-skins; it had ten dogs, yoked four a-breast. The carriages laden with baggage, were also drawn by that number of animals.

difficulties to encounter, principally occasioned by the adverse condition of the road, they arrived at the *ostrog* of Natcheckin, at two in the afternoon. It is situated on a small stream, which falls into the Bolchoireka at some distance below the town*.

The next morning they embarked on the Bolchoirecka, but they were greatly impeded by the shallows; and, though the stream was rapid in many places, they frequently had ripplings and shoals, and were under the necessity of hauling the boats over them. The country, on each side of the river, was romantic, but not sufficiently diversified. Nothing was exhibited to gratify curiosity, except now and then the sight of a bear, or a flight of wild-fowl. This, and the following night, they slept under their marquée, on the banks of the river.

On the 12th, at day-light, they had passed the mountains, and were entering an extensive plain, covered with shrubby trees. At nine they reached an *ostrog*, named Opatchin, about fifty miles from Natcheckin. Here they found a serjeant, and four Russian soldiers, who had been two days waiting for their arrival, and who immediately dispatched a light boat to Bolcheret with intelligence of their approach. A magnificent canoe, completely furnished with skins and furs, was prepared for their reception, and they were commodiously equipped. The remainder of their passage was performed with great facility and expedition; the river growing more rapid as they descended, and they were less obstructed by shoals.

On their approaching Kamtschatka, they supposed, from an appearance of great stir and bustle, that their reception was to have been in form. This was an unpleasant circumstance, as decent apparel had long been very scarce among our adventurers; and their travelling dresses consisted of a strange assemblage of the modes of India, Europe, and Kamtschatka. To make a parade through the metropolis in this motley trim, they thought would appear highly ridiculous. The commander, however, proposed to receive them at the water-side, which was accordingly complied with. The manner in which they were received by him, was the most engaging that could be conceived; but they had the mortification to discover, that he had almost forgotten the French language, so that the satisfaction of conversing with him was wholly confined to Mr. Webber, who spoke the German, which was his native tongue.

Major Behm was accompanied by Captain Shmaleff, the next in command, and another officer; the whole body of merchants attending also. They were conducted to the commander's house, where they were received politely by the lady, who had prepared tea and other refreshments for them.

The first compliments being over, Mr. Webber acquainted the Major, by the directions of Captain Gore, that they were distressed for want of naval stores, fresh provision, flour, and other necessaries; but they were convinced they could not receive much assistance from him. Here the Major interrupted Mr. Webber, by observing, that he should not bestow a thought upon the difficulties of supplying their wants; he only wished to know what articles they stood in need of, and the time he could be allowed for procuring them. After expressing thanks for his obliging condescension, an account of the naval stores, &c. which our navigators were desirous of purchasing, was presented; when he was also informed, that they intended to persecute their voyage about the 5th of June†.

Early

* The ostrog consists of one log-house, the residence of the *Tion*, one *jourt*, and five balagans. Our adventurers were received with the same hospitality as at Karatchin, and in the afternoon were conducted to a remarkable hot-spring, in the vicinity. Before they came very near it, they beheld a steam rising from it, as from a boiling caldron; and when they approached it, they sustained a strong sulphureous effluvia. The main spring forms a bason of about three feet in diameter; besides which, there are several lesser springs, of the same degree of heat, in the adjacent ground: a spot, consisting of about an acre, was so extremely hot, that a person could not remain two minutes in the same place. The water flowing from these sources, supplies a small bathing pond, and afterwards forms a rivulet, which, at the distance of about one hundred and fifty yards, is received by the river. Great cures are said to have been effected by this bath in rheumatism, scorbutic ulcers, and many other disorders.

† Supposing our adventurers might be fatigued, and required repose, the commander begged leave to conduct them to their lodgings at about seven o'clock. In going along, they passed two guard-houses, where the men were turned out under arms, in compliment to Captain Gore; and were conducted to a neat decent house, which the Major had chosen for their residence, while they continued at Kamtschatka. Two sentinels were posted at their door, and a serjeant's guard in an adjoining house. Having thus disposed of our adventurers, the Major took his leave, promising

Early in the morning they received the compliments of the commander, of Captain Shmaleff, and the most respectable people of the town; who all honoured them with visits soon after. The two former having, after they had retired to rest, enquired of Mr. Port, what articles were most pressingly required on board the ships; they insisted on their sharing with the garrison under their command, in the small stock of provisions they had then remaining.

They thankfully accepted the liberal offer of these hospitable strangers; on condition that they should be informed of the price of the articles they received from them, that Captain Clerke might draw upon the Victualling-Office in London, for the amount. This was positively refused, though repeatedly urged; the Major always stopping them short by saying, "that his mistress would be highly gratified at his rendering every assistance in his power to the English, who are her good friends and allies; and that it would give her a particular satisfaction to find, that, in such remote regions, her dominions had afforded any relief to vessels engaged in such important services."

He added, that he could not, therefore, act so contrary to the principles of his empress, as to think of receiving any bills; but, if they insisted on it, they might give a bare memorandum of the articles he might supply them with, which he would transmit to the court of Russia, as evidence of his having performed his duty. This matter being adjusted, he begged to be informed respecting their private wants; saying he should consider it as offering him an affront, if they applied to any of the merchants, or had dealings with any person except himself*.

He felt this compliment, as it was intended he should; and was much struck at beholding, in one view, the whole of that coast on the side of Asia and America, which his countrymen had been so many years employed in acquiring an imperfect knowledge of. They dined this day at the commander's, who, ever studious to gratify their curiosity, had prepared variety of dishes, dressed in the Russian and Kamtschadale manner, as well as several in the English style. The afternoon was occupied in taking a view of the town, and the adjacent country. Bolcheretsk is situated in a low swampy plain, extending to the sea of Okotsk, being about forty miles in length. It lies on the north side of the Bolchoi-reka, or Great River.

The depth of the river, below the town, is six to eight feet, and the breadth a quarter of a mile: at the distance of twenty-two miles, it empties itself into the sea at Okotsk, where it is capable of admitting pretty large vessels. No corn, of any kind, is cultivated in this part of the country; and the Major's garden, is the only one that has been planted. In general, the earth was covered with snow; such parts as are free from it, are full of black turfy hillocks. Twenty or thirty cows were seen, and the commander had six good horses. These, and their dogs, are their only tame animals. It being necessary for them to keep a great number of the latter; they can only rear such cattle as are a match for them in strength and size; for, during the whole of the summer season, the dogs are turned loose to provide entirely for themselves; and are sometimes so ravenous that they will even venture to attack a bullock.

The houses in Bolcharetsk are all in the same fashion, consisting of logs of wood, and thatched. The Major's habitation is considerably larger than the rest, having three capacious rooms, which are neatly papered; but the talc,

mising to visit them the following day. Our fellow traveller, Mr. Port, and a soldier, of a rank between that of a serjeant and a corporal, were fixed upon to be their male domestics; and they had a house-keeper, and a cook. In the course of the evening, they were honoured with a number of civil messages, from the principal inhabitants of the town, politely observing that they would not immediately visit them, as such an intrusion would add to their fatigue, but they would do themselves that honour the next morning. Such politeness, in so uncultivated and desolate a country, formed a contrast highly in favour of its inhabitants.

* In return for such singular generosity, they had little to bestow but their admiration and their thanks. At this moment, however, Mr. King recollected, that Captain Clerke had sent him a set of the engravings to Captain Cook's second voyage, desiring him to present it, in his name, to the commander; who, being an enthusiast in every thing relative to discoveries, received it with delight, as nothing could have been more acceptable. Captain Clerke had also given Mr. King a discretionary power of permitting the commander to see a chart of the discoveries made in the present voyage; and, judging from his situation and disposition of mind, that he would be gratified by such a communication; though, from motives of delicacy, he had only asked a few general questions on the subject, Mr. King reposed in him that confidence, which his whole conduct so richly merited.

which

which covered the windows, gave them a very mean appearance. The town consists of low buildings, in rows of five or six habitations each, connected by a passage extending the whole length of them; having the kitchen and store-house on one side, and the dwelling apartments on the other. There are also barracks for the Russian soldiers and cossacks, a church, a court-room; and, at the end of the town, a number of Balagans. The number of the inhabitants is between five and six hundred.

They made a private application, the next morning, to Fedositch, the merchant, to purchase some tobacco, the sailors having been deprived of that delicious article for upwards of a year. Like other similar transactions, this circumstance was immediately made known to the commander; and soon after, they were surprised to find in their habitation, four bags of tobacco, weighing upwards of a hundred pounds each; which the Major requested might be presented to the sailors in his name, and that of the garrison under his command. By the same conveyance, they received twenty loaves of sugar, and as many pounds of tea, which the officers were entreated to accept of, as it was understood they were almost destitute of those articles. A present was also sent from Madame Behm to Captain Clerke, consisting of figs, rice, honey, butter, and other necessaries, attended with her best wishes, that, in his infirm state, they might prove serviceable to him *.

Being engaged to dine this day with Captain Shmallaff, he varied their amusements, by entertaining them with an exhibition of dancing, in the Russian and Kamtschadale style. No description can convey an adequate idea of this uncouth entertainment. The figure of the Russian dance had some analogy to those of the English hornpipes, and consisted of one, two, or four performers at a time. Their steps were exceedingly short and quick, hardly raising their feet from the ground: their arms were hung down close to the sides, the body remaining the whole time erect, and immoveable, except when the performers passed each other, when the arm was raised with an awkward motion. But if the Russian dance was ridiculous, the Kamtschadale was infinitely more so: the principal intention of this dance, is to represent the clumsy gestures of the bear; which would be uninteresting to describe minutely. The body, however, was always bowed, and the knees bent, whilst the arms were employed in imitating the tricks and attitudes of that awkward animal.

Much time having been consumed by our adventurers in their journey to Bolcheretsk, and being informed that their return would probably be more tedious, they thought it necessary to acquaint the Major this evening, with their intention of departing the following day. They could not think of leaving their new acquaintance without regret, and were agreeably surprised, when the Major promised to accompany them, if they would remain with him one day longer; as he should receive great pleasure in returning with them to St. Peter and St. Paul's, that he might be perfectly satisfied, that nothing which could be done to serve them, should be omitted †.

The next morning being fixed on for the departure of our adventurers, they retired early to their lodgings, where they found three travelling dresses, made after the Kamtschadale mode, which the Major had provided for them. They had indeed no inconsiderable load of baggage; for, exclusive of the commander's favours, Captain Shmallaff, and several other individuals, displayed many instances of generosity ‡.

On their return, they did not arrive at Opatchia

* They attempted in vain, to oppose this profusion of bounty, by representing to him that his liberality required to be restrained, or he would bestow on them the whole stock of the garrison. But his answer was uniformly to the following effect. "That he had been in distress himself, and he was sensible that we must now be in that situation."

† Our adventurers dined this day with the commander, who, wishing to shew us some samples of the manners and customs of the country, invited all the principal inhabitants of the town, to his house in the evening. The dresses of the women were splendid, after the Kamtschadale fashion. The wives of the officers of the garrison displayed much taste, some habited in the Siberian, and some in the European style. The whole had the air of some enchanted scene, in the midst of a dreary desert. The entertainments of this night were dancing and singing.

‡ On the 16th, in the morning, they were preparing for their departure, when they were invited to take their leave of Madame Behm, in their passage to the boats. On quitting their apartments, they saw all the soldiers and cossacks of the garrison drawn up on one side; and, on the other, were all the male inhabitants of the town, in their best apparel; the body of the people all joining in a melancholy song, appropriated to such occasions, according to the custom of the country. Thus they proceeded to the house of

chia till the 17th in the evening; on the 19th, they reached Natcheekin, crossed the plain to Karatchin on the 20th, and proceeded down the Awatska river on the 21st. In the course of their journey, they were much pleased at the cheerfulness, with which the *Toions*, and their Kamtschadales assisted them at the different *ostrogs*. On seeing the Major, joy appeared in every countenance; and their sorrow was very apparent, when he informed them that he should speedily leave them.

A messenger had been dispatched to Captain Clerke, from Bolcheretsk, with an account of their reception, and of the Major's intention of returning with them; and at the same time apprizing them of the day he might probably expect to see them. Our adventurers saw, when they approached the harbour, all their boats coming towards them. The men were all clean, and the officers as spruce as their wardrobes would enable them to be. The Major was gratified with the healthy appearance of the seamen, and was surprised to observe, that many of them had no other covering than a shirt and trowsers, though it really snowed at that very instant.

The next morning, Mr. King conducted the Major to the ships, when he was saluted with thirteen guns, and received every possible mark of distinction and respect. He was attended by the commander of a Russian galliot, two merchants from Bolcheretsk, a master of a sloop, and the priest of the village of Paratounca. After visiting Captain Clerke, and taking a view of the two ships, he returned to dinner on board the Resolution. In the course of the afternoon, the curiosities which had been collected during the voyage, were displayed before him, and an assortment of each article presented to him by Captain Clerke. On this occasion, justice will not permit us to pass over an instance of great generosity and gratitude, among our British sailors; who, being informed of the handsome present of tobacco, that was made them by the Major, voluntarily requested that their grog might be withheld, and their allowance of spirits presented, on their part, to the garrison of Bolcheretsk. This extraordinary sacrifice could not but excite admiration, considering how much a sailor felt on the abridgment or deprivation of his grog. The officers, however, would not permit them to suffer by their generosity, and substituted, in the room of the small quantity of brandy, which the Major consented to accept, an equal quantity of rum. This, with a dozen or two of Cape wine, for Madame Behm, and some other trivial presents, which they were enabled to make, were politely accepted. The tobacco was distributed the next morning among the crews of both vessels; every man who smoked or chewed tobacco, being allowed three pounds; the others only one pound.

Major Behm, having resigned the command of Kamtschatka, intended to repair speedily to Petersburgh; and he now expressed his willingness to convey any dispatches they might choose to commit to his care. Such an opportunity was not to be neglected; and Captain Clerke requested him to take the charge of some papers relative to their voyage, to the British Ambassador at the Russian Court.

The Major was alternately entertained in the two ships, the three following days. He took his leave on the 25th, when he was saluted with thirteen guns; the sailors, at their own request, testifying their regard for him by three cheers. Mr. King and Mr. Webber attended him, the next morning, a few miles up the Awatska river, where the Russian priest, and his family were waiting to bid a last adieu to their commander.

Though our navigators had not been long acquainted with Major Behm, his behaviour had inspired them with the highest esteem for him; and they could not think of parting with one, to whom they were under such infinite obligations, without indulging the most tender feelings. Exclusive of the stores, which might probably be carried to a public account, the private presents received from him amounted to upwards of two hundred pounds. But even his generosity was exceeded by the delicacy with which his favours were conferred, and his ingenious endeavours to prevent the receiver's feeling the weight of obligations, they were unable to requite. "The service in which our navigators

of the commander, preceded by the drums, and other music of the garrison. Here they were received by Madame Behm, accompanied by several ladies splendidly attired. Having partook of some refreshment provided for them, they advanced to the water-side; and, having taken leave of Madame Behm, after assuring her that the sense of the hospitality of Bolcheretsk would remain indelible in their hearts, they were too much affected not to hasten into the boats. At putting off, they received three cheers, which they gratefully returned.

were employed," he said, "was for the general benefit of mankind; and entitled *them* to the offices of humanity, and the privilege of citizens, in whatever country they might be driven."—That by affording *them* such relief as was in his power, he knew he was acting agreeably to the wishes of his empress; and that he could not so entirely forget her character, or his own honour, as to barter for the performance of a duty."

The Major, exclusive of his relieving their present distresses, was not unmindful of their future wants; and presented the Captain with a written paper, enjoining every Russian subject to assist them to the utmost of their abilities.

SECTION XLI.

Transactions in a Second Expedition to the North, by the Way of Kamptschatka—Transactions at Petropaulowska—Abundant Supply of Fish—Supply of Rye Flour—Celebration of his Majesty's Birth-Day—Eruption of a Volcano—Appearance of the Country—Cheepoonskoi Noss—Kronotskoi Noss—Tschukotskoi Noss—Isle of Saint Laurence—East Cape of Asia—Obstructions from the Ice—Some Sea Horses killed—Asia and America seen at the same Time—Attempt to pass the Ice—Critical State of the Discovery—Sea-Horses killed—Greatly obstructed by the Ice—Damages sustained by the Discovery—Resolve to proceed to the Southward—At which the Crews rejoice—The Island of St. Lawrence—Island of Mednoi—Death of Captain Clerke—Enumeration of his Services.

As the preceding section terminated with a narrative of the return of the party from Bolcheretsk, and of the departure of Major Behm; an account of the transactions which passed at Petropaulowska during their absence, will naturally follow.

On the 7th of May, a short time after they had quitted the bay of Awatska, a large piece of ice drove against the Resolution, and brought home the small bower anchor; which occasioned the other anchor to be weighed, and the ship was moored again. The carpenters, who were occupied in stopping the leek, found it necessary to take off great part of the sheathing from the bows; and many of the trunnels appeared to be loose and rotten. On the 11th, heavy gales blew from the north-east; but the weather becoming more moderate in the afternoon, and the ice having drifted away as far as the mouth of the harbour of Petropaulowska, they warped close to the shore, for the greater convenience of procuring wood and water, and moored again.

On the 12th, a party was detached on shore to cut wood, but as the snow still covered the ground, very little progress was made in that service. The beach being clear of ice on the 15th, a party was sent out to haul the seine, and caught a plentiful supply of flat fish for the companies of both ships. From this time till they quitted the harbour, they were even overpowered with vast quantities of fish from every quarter. The presents which were sent them, consisted principally of herrings, trout, flat-fish, and cod. The people of the Discovery, at one time, surrounded such a quantity in the seine, that fearing they should break the net, they found it necessary to throw out a considerable number; and the cargo, when landed, was still so abundant, that, besides reserving a sufficient stock for immediate use, they filled several casks for salting; and, after they had sent on board the Resolution a reasonable quantity for the same purpose, they left behind several bushels on the beach.

The ice and snow now began rapidly to diminish, and plenty of celery, nettle-tops, and wild garlick were gathered for the use of the crews. The birch-trees were also tapped, and the sweet-juice, of which they produced great quantities, was invariably mixed with the brandy allowed to the men. On the 16th a small bullock was killed, which the serjeant had procured for the ships' companies. It weighed two hundred and seventy-two pounds, and was served out to both the crews for their Sunday's dinner; being the first fresh beef they had tasted since the departure of their vessels from the Cape of Good Hope

Hope in 1776; a period of almost two years and a half*.

The Russian hospital, near the town of St. Peter and St. Paul, was, on the first arrival of our navigators in that quarter, in a very deplorable state. All the soldiers were afflicted with the scurvy; and many of them to a very great degree. The other Russian inhabitants were in a similar condition; and even their friend the serjeant, by drinking too plentifully of the spirits he had received from them, had brought on himself, in a few days, some of the most alarming symptoms of that disease. Captain Clerke, anxious to relieve them from this lamentable state, put them under the care of the British surgeons, and gave orders, that a supply of sour krout, and malt for wort, should be furnished for their use. A wonderful alteration soon appeared in the figures of most of them, and their speedy recovery was principally attributed to the effects of the sweet wort.

On the 1st of June nine thousand pounds weight of rye flour were brought on board the Resolution; and the Discovery received a proportional quantity. They were supplied with this flour from the stores of Petropaulowsky. The men were now put on their full allowance of bread, which they had not before enjoyed since the time of their leaving the Cape of Good Hope†.

On the 6th, twenty head of cattle arrived, having been sent to our navigators, by the directions of the commander, from the Verchnei *ostrog*, on the river Kamtschatka, about the distance of one hundred miles from this place. Port, who, on account of his skill in languages, had been left with them, now took his leave of them, carrying with him the journals of their voyage, which Major Behm was to take charge of, and the packet that was to be forwarded by express.

About three in the afternoon of the 12th, they set sail; but, at eight, the tide making against them, and the wind being inconsiderable, they anchored again in ten fathoms water, off the mouth of Rakowina harbour; the ostrog being at the distance of about three miles. The next morning, at four, they got under way with the tide of ebb; and, as there was a perfect calm, the boats were dispatched a-head for the purpose of towing the ships. About ten, a south-easterly wind springing up, and the tide having turned, they were obliged to let go their anchors again, in seven fathoms, the ostrog bearing north half east, at the distance of a mile from the nearest land.

Captain Gore and Lieutenant King landed, in the afternoon, on the east side of the passage, where they observed the remains of spacious villages; and saw an old ruined parapet, with four or five embrasures. Not far from this spot, the ruins of some subterraneous caverns were visible.

They weighed anchor with the ebb tide, about six in the afternoon; but, two hours after, a thick fog coming on, they were under the necessity of bringing to. Before day-light on the 15th, they heard a rumbling noise, resembling distant thunder; and, when the day appeared, the sides and decks of the ships were covered, near an inch thick, with a fine dust like emery: the air was, at the same time, loaded and obscured with this substance; and, towards the volcano mountain, to the northward of the harbour, it was exceedingly thick and black. About noon, and during the afternoon, the loudness of the explosions increased, and they were succeeded by showers of cinders. Several small stones, which had undergone no alteration from the action of fire, fell with the cinders. In the evening they had dreadful claps of thunder, and vivid flashes of lightning; which, with the dark-

* John Macintosh, the carpenter's mate, died this evening, after having endured a dysentery ever since they had left the Sandwich Isles. He was a peaceable and industrious man. Though he was the fourth person they had lost by sickness during the voyage, he was the first of those, who, from his age and constitution, could be said to have had an equal chance of life with the rest of his companions. Whatman was about sixty years of age; and Roberts, and Mr. Anderson, from the decline which had manifestly commenced before their departure from England, would probably not have lived to a later period, under any circumstances.

Captain Clerke's health continued daily to decline, notwithstanding the salutary change of diet which Kamtschatka afforded him. The priest of Paratounca, though his habitation was sixteen miles from the harbour where their ships were stationed, supplied him daily with milk, bread, fowls, and fresh butter.

† They had fresh breezes, and heavy rains, on the 4th of June, which put a stop to the intended operation of dressing the ships, and obliged our navigators to content themselves with firing twenty-one guns, in honour of his Majesty's birth-day, and celebrating it, in other respects, as well as they could.

ness,

ness of the sky, and the sulphureous smell of the air, produced a very awful effect. Our navigators were, at this time, about eight leagues distant from the foot of the mountain.

The country had now a very different appearance from what it had at their first arrival. The snow, except on the summits and sides of the lofty mountains, had vanished; and the sides of the hills, which abounded with wood in many parts, were covered with a beautiful verdure. As it was the intention of Captain Clerke to keep in sight of the coast of Kamtschatka, as much as the weather would permit, in order to ascertain its position, they continued to steer towards the north-north-east. The volcano was then observed to throw up immense volumes of smoke; and they did not strike ground with one hundred and fifty fathoms of line, at the distance of twelve miles from the shore.

On the 18th the wind blew fresh from the south, and the weather became so thick and hazy, that it was then imprudent to make any further attempts to keep in sight of the land. But in order to be ready, whenever the fog should clear up, to resume their survey, they ran on in the direction of the coast (as represented in the Russian charts) and fired signal guns for the Discovery to proceed on the same course. At three in the morning of the 20th, the weather becoming clearer, they stood in towards the land; and, in the space of an hour afterwards, saw it a-head, at the distance of about five leagues. They had not, however, been long gratified with this view of the land, when the wind freshened from the south-west, bringing on a thick fog, which obliged them to stand off in the direction of north-east by east. The fog dispersing about noon, they again steered for the land, expecting to fall in with Kamtschatkoi Noss, and gained sight of it at day-break on the 21st. The south-west wind being soon after succeeded by a light breeze, that blew off the land, they were prevented from approaching the coast near enough to determine its direction, or describe its aspect. At nine in the evening they were six miles nearer the coast, when it appeared to form a projecting peninsula, and to extend about twelve leagues, nearly in the direction of north and south.

The season being too far advanced for them to make an accurate survey of the coast of Kamtschatka, it was the intention of Captain Clerke, in their course to Beering's Straits, to ascertain chiefly the situations of the projecting points of the coast *.

Nothing essential occurred till the 3d of July, between twelve and one, when they descried the Tschukotskoi Noss, bearing north half west, at the distance of about fourteen leagues. At five in the afternoon, they saw the island of St. Lawrence, in the direction of east three-quarters north; and also another island, which they had no certain knowledge of. Captain Clerke proposed to have a nearer view of it, but they were unable to weather the Isle of St. Lawrence, and were therefore obliged to bear up again, and pass them all to the leeward.

On the 6th of July, at noon, they observed a considerable number of large masses of ice; and, observing that it adhered, in many places, to the shore on the continent of Asia, they were not surprised when they fell in, at three in the afternoon, with an extensive body of it, stretching towards the west. Discouraged by this appearance, their hopes of proceeding much farther to the north this year, than they had done in the preceding, were abandoned. Not having much wind in the afternoon, the boats were hoisted out in pursuit of sea-horses, great numbers of which were seen on the detached pieces of ice; but they returned without success, those animals being too shy to permit their enemies to come within gun-shot of them.

Having hoisted in the boats at seven in the evening, they stood to the north-eastward with a fresh southerly breeze, intending to explore the American continent. In this attempt they were disappointed, for on the morning of the

* On the 22d, they passed a dead whale, which emitted a most horrible smell, perceivable at the distance of about four miles: a considerable number of gulls, petrels, and other oceanic birds were regaling themselves upon it. At one in the afternoon on the 25th, the depth of water was so great, that they had no ground with a hundred and sixty fathoms of line. A fog prevented their making a nearer approach to the land, and they steered east by north. At the distance of about eight miles from the land, they observed a strong rippling, and, fearing they should meet with foul ground, they made sail to the north-east, along the coast. On heaving the lead, they found the depth of water to be twenty-four fathoms, over a bottom of gravel; and naturally concluded that the appearance above-mentioned was occasioned by a tide, then running to the southward.

7th,

7th, they were stopped by a large body of ice, stretching from north-west to south-east. At two in the afternoon, on the 8th, they found themselves close to an expanse of ice, which, from the mast head, was perceived to consist of very large compact bodies, united towards the exterior edge; but, in the interior parts, pieces were observed floating in vacant spaces of the water *.

At eight in the evening an easterly breeze sprung up, with which they continued to steer to the southward; and at midnight fell in with many large bodies of ice. They endeavoured to push through them with an easy sail, that the ships might sustain no injury; and proceeding a little further towards the south, nothing could be perceived but a compact field of ice, stretching to the north-east, south-west, and south-east, as far as the eye could extend. This formidable obstacle prevented their visiting the Tscuhtski; for no space remained open, but back again to the northward; they therefore tacked at three in the morning of the 11th, and stood for that quarter.

They continued their northerly course, with a moderate breeze from the south, till ten in the morning of the 13th, when they again found themselves close in with a solid mass of ice, to which they could discover no limits from the mast-head, which effectually discouraged them from proceeding further.

As there was no probability of getting further to the north, Captain Clerke determined to make a final attempt on the coast of America for Baffin's Bay; as they had been able to advance the farthest on this side, in the preceeding year. Accordingly, they continued to work to the windward the remaining part of the day, with a fresh easterly breeze. At eight in the forenoon of the 16th, they had a strong gale from the south-west, when they found themselves in a manner embayed; the ice having suddenly taken a turn to the south-eastward, and encompassed them on all sides, but the south. In consequence of this, they hauled their wind to the southward, being then in twenty-six fathoms water, at the distance of twenty-five leagues from the American coast.

At five in the morning of the 18th, they continued their progress towards the north. They saw plenty of sea-parrots, small ice-birds, and a number of whales; and passed several logs of drift-wood. At one in the afternoon, they were close in with a firm united mass of ice, stretching from east to west-north-west. Though no sea-horses were perceived on the body of ice, they were extremely numerous on the detached fragments. About nine in the evening, a white bear was seen swimming close to the Discovery; it afterwards directed its course towards the ice, on which two others were also seen †.

To these animals they were indebted for several fresh repasts; their flesh indeed had a strong fishy flavour, but it was infinitely superior to that

* By the 9th they had sailed near forty leagues to the westward, along the edge of the ice, without observing any opening, or a clear sea to the northward beyond it; consequently they had no prospect of making further progress to the northward at that time. On the 10th, at noon, they passed considerable quantities of drift ice, and a perfect calm ensued. There being great numbers of sea-horses on the pieces of ice that surrounded them, they hoisted out the boats, and dispatched them in pursuit of those animals. Being more successful on this occasion, than they were on the 6th, the people returned with three large ones, and a young one; after having killed or wounded several others. The persons of whom this party was composed, were witness of many striking instances of parental affection. On the approach of the boats towards the ice, all of them took their young ones under their fins, and endeavoured to escape with them into the sea. Some of the afflicted parents, whose cubs were killed or wounded, and left floating upon the surface of the water, rose again, and carried them down. After which they were observed bringing them, at intervals, above the surface, as if to accommodate them with the air; and then plunging them again under the water, with a horrid bellowing. The female in particular, whose cub had been killed, and taken into the boat, became so extremely furious, that she even stuck her two tusks through the bottom of the cutter.

† At one in the morning on the 19th, they became so completely embayed by the ice, that no opening was left but to the southward: to which quarter they therefore directed their course, returning through a remarkably smooth water, by the same way they had come in. They were unable to penetrate farther to the north than they had now arrived, when their latitude was 70° 33', five leagues short of the point to which they had advanced the preceding summer. Two white bears being seen during the afternoon, in the water, some of the seamen immediately pursued them in the jolly boat, and were so fortunate as to kill them both; the larger, which was probably the dam of the younger, being shot first, the other would not desert it, though it might easily have escaped on the ice, while the men were re-loading their musquets; but continued swimming about till after it had been fired on several times, and at length received a fatal wound. The weight of the largest was four hundred and thirty-six pounds; that of the smallest, two hundred and fifty-six pounds.

of the sea-horse. On the 21st, at eight in the morning, the wind freshening, and the fog clearing away, they again saw the coast of America to the south-east, at the distance of about nine leagues, and hauled in for it; but they were once more stopped by the ice, and obliged to bear away to the westward along the edge of it.

A connected solid mass of ice, thus rendering every effort to approach nearer to the land, ineffectual, they relinquished all hopes of a north-east passage to Great Britain. Captain Clerke, now perceiving the impossibility of advancing further to the northward on the American coast, and supposing it equally improbable, that such an immense quantity of ice should be dissolved by the few summer weeks remaining, considered it as the best step that could be taken, to trace the sea over to the coast of Asia, in search of some opening that would admit him further north; or see what more could be attempted upon that coast, where he hoped to meet with better success.

Captain Clerke having determined to relinquish all further attempts on the coast of America, and to make his final efforts in search of a passage on the opposite continent, our navigators steered west-north-west, during the afternoon of the 21st of July, through an astonishing quantity of loose ice. In the morning of the 23d, the clear water, in which they continued to steer to and fro, did not exceed a mile and a half, and was every instant lessening. At length, after exerting their best endeavours to clear the loose ice, they were convinced of the necessity of forcing a passage to the south, which they accomplished about seven in the evening, but not without subjecting the vessel to very severe shocks. The Discovery was less successful; for, at eleven o'clock, when she had nearly got clear out, she became so entangled by massy pieces, that her progress was absolutely stopped; and, immediately dropping to leeward, she fell, broadside foremost, on the edge of a vast body of ice; and having, at the same time, an open sea to windward, the surf impelled her to strike with violence upon it. This mass, at length, so far broke or yielded, as to afford the crew an opportunity of making another effort to escape; but, unfortunately, before the ship gathered way enough to be under command, she again fell to leeward on another fragment; and the swell rendering it dangerous to lie to windward, and perceiving no prospect of getting clear, they pushed into a small opening, furled their sails, and made the vessel fast with ice-hooks.

In this dangerous situation she was seen at noon, at the distance of about three miles from her consort, in a north-west direction. To add to their embarrassments, at half after four in the afternoon, the weather becoming thick and hazy, they lost sight of the Discovery. Their apprehensions were not removed, till they heard her guns in answer to theirs; and, afterwards, being hailed by her, they were informed, that, upon the change of wind, the ice began to separate; and that her people, setting all the sails, forced a passage through it. It afterwards appeared, however, that the vessel had rubbed off much of her sheathing from her bows, and was become very leaky, from the blows she had received by falling upon the edge of the ice.

On the 24th they had fresh breezes from the south-west, with hazy weather, and steered to the south-east till eleven, when their course was again obstructed by a large body of loose ice, extending from north-north-east to south-south-east, to which they could discover no termination. They kept working to windward, and at four in the afternoon it became calm. Prodigious herds of sea-horses now appearing on each side of them, the boats were hoisted out in pursuit of them: ten of them were killed, which were thought sufficient for their use.

At two in the afternoon of the 27th, they saw the continent to the south by east, and at four they were encompassed by loose masses of ice, with the main body of it in view, stretching as far as the eye could reach; beyond which they beheld the Asiatic coast. It now became necessary to come to some determination, respecting the course they were next to steer; Captain Clerke therefore dispatched a boat, with the carpenters on board the Discovery, to learn the particulars of the injury she had sustained. They returned in the evening, with the report of Captain Gore, and of the carpenters, that the damages sustained were such as would require three weeks to repair, and that she ought speedily to be conducted to some port.

Thus finding a farther progress to the north, and a nearer approach to either continent, blocked up with ice, they deemed it both injurious to the service, and fruitless with respect to the intention of the voyage, to make any further at-

tempts

tempts for the discovery of a passage. These considerations, added to Captain Gore's representations, induced Captain Clerke to sail for Awatska Bay to repair their damages there; and, before the winter should set in, take a survey of the coast of Japan*.

On the 17th of August, between four and five in the morning, they perceived land to the north-west, which they could not approach, the wind blowing from that quarter. They supposed this land to be the island Mednoi, which, in the Russian charts, is placed to the south-east of Beering's Island. It is elevated land, and was then apparently free from snow. They did not strike ground with one hundred and fifty fathoms of line.

Captain Clerke, being now unable to quit his bed, desired the officers would receive their orders from Mr. King; and directed that they should repair, with all possible expedition, to the Bay of Awatska. The wind continuing westerly, they steered a southerly course, till early in the morning of the 19th; when, after a few hours' rain, it blew from the eastward, and freshened to a strong gale. They made the most of it while it lasted, by standing towards the west with all the sail they could carry. On the 21st, about six in the morning, they saw a very high peaked mountain on the coast of Kamtschatka, called Cheepoonskoi Mountain, about twenty-five leagues distant †.

It would be injustice to Captain Clerke's memory not to proclaim, that, during the short time he commanded the expedition, he was remarkably zealous for its success. When the principal command devolved upon him, his health began rapidly to decline; and he was totally incapable of encountering the rigours of a high northern climate. But the vigour of his mind was uninfluenced by the decay of the body; and though he knew that his delaying to return to a warmer climate, was cutting off the only chance that remained for his recovery; yet, so attentive was he to his duty, that he would not suffer his situation to bias his judgment to the prejudice of the service; he therefore persevered in the search of a passage, till it was the opinion of every officer in the two ships, that it was impracticable, and that any further attempts would be equally hazardous and ineffectual.

* Joy illumined the countenances of every individual, when these resolutions were pronounced by Captain Clerke. They were weary of a navigation so pregnant with danger, and in which the utmost perseverance had not been rewarded with the smallest prospect of success. They turned their faces towards home, with delight and satisfaction, after an absence of three years, without apprehending what perils might yet await them, during the very long voyage they had still to make.

† At nine in the morning, on the 22d of August, Captain Clerke departed this life, in the thirty-eighth year of his age. He died of a consumption, which had evidently commenced before his departure from England, and of which he had lingered during the continuance of the voyage. His gradual decay had been perceptible by his friends, and gave them much concern; but his equanimity and firmness under his sufferings, his constant flow of cheerfulness, and a becoming resignation to his fate, afforded them some consolation. It was impossible not to compassionate, in an uncommon degree, a gentleman who had experienced a series of those difficulties and inconveniencies, which must be the inevitable lot of every seaman, and under which at length he yielded. He was bred to the navy from his youth, and had been in many engagements during the war that began in 1756. Particularly in that between the Bellona and Courageux, where, being stationed in the mizen-top, he was carried overboard with the mast, but was afterwards taken up without having received any injury. He was midshipman in the Dolphin, commanded by Commodore Byron, on her first voyage round the world, and afterwards served in the American station. In 1768, he made his second voyage round the world, as master's mate in the Endeavour; and by the promotion which took place during the expedition, he returned a lieutenant. In the Resolution he made a third voyage round the world, in the capacity of second lieutenant; and, soon after his return in 1775, he was appointed master and commander. When this expedition was ordered to be fitted out, he was appointed Captain of the Discovery, and to accompany Captain Cook; and, by the death of the latter, he naturally succeeded to the chief command.

SECTION XLII.

Return to St. Peter and St. Paul—The Serjeant brings a Present for Captain Clerke—Funeral of Captain Clerke—Repair the Discovery—Occupations of the Ships' Crews—Letter from the Commander of Bolcheretsk to Captain Gore—Supply of Flour, Pitch, Tar, &c.—Account of a remarkable Exile—Bear-hunting and Fishing—The Serjeant disgraced—His Restoration—Church at Paratounca described—Manner of Bear-hunting—Account of the Bears and Kamtschadales—Inscription to Captain Clerke's Memory—Supply of Cattle received—Entertainments in Honour of the Empress—Present from the Commander—Geographical Description of Kamtschatka—Account of the Rivers Bolchoineka, Kamtschatka, Awatska, &c.—Soil, Climate, Volcanoes—Remarkable hot Spring at Natcheekin—Productions—Vegetables—Animals in general—Sables—Bears, Wolves, &c.—Amphibious Animals—Fish, the principal Article of Food—Whales—Salmon Fishery—Method of catching Salmon—Lakes abounding with Fish.

CAPTAIN King sent a messenger to acquaint Captain Gore with the death of Captain Clerke, who brought a letter from Captain Gore, containing an order for Captain King to endeavour to keep in company with the Discovery; and if a separation should unavoidably happen, to repair expeditiously to St. Peter and St. Paul. In the afternoon they had light airs, which continued till the 23d; when a fresh breeze springing up, they steered for the entrance of Awatska-Bay, which they saw about six in the evening. It was now a perfect calm; but, as the tide was favourable, the boats were sent a-head, and towed beyond the narrow parts of the entrance. On the 24th, at one in the morning, they dropped anchor, the ebb tide being then setting against them.

They weighed in the morning, went up the bay, and anchored before three in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul; and the Discovery followed them in a very short time. Soon after they had anchored, they were visited by their old friend, the serjeant (who was still the commanding officer of the place) who brought with him a present of berries, intended for Captain Clerke. He was much affected at hearing of his death, and beholding the coffin intended for his remains. As the deceased captain had particularly requested to be buried on shore, and named for that purpose the church at Paratounca, the serjeant was consulted on the necessary steps to be pursued upon the occasion.

After much investigation on this subject, intelligence was procured that De L'Isle, and some other Russian gentleman, who had died here, were buried near the barracks, at the ostrog of St. Peter and St. Paul; which was certainly a more eligible place than Paratounca, as the church was speedily to be removed thither. It was therefore determined to wait the arrival of the priest of Paratounca, who was instantly sent for, as being perfectly qualified to give satisfactory information on the subject. At the same time, the serjeant signified his intention of sending an express to the commander of Bolcheretsk, to acquaint him with their arrival. Captain Gore then begged to avail himself of that opportunity of conveying a letter to him, in which he requested that sixteen head of black cattle might be sent with the greatest expedition.

In consequence of the death of Captain Clerke, Captain Gore made out the new commissions on the 25th of August. He appointed himself to the command of the Resolution, and Mr. King to that of the Discovery. Mr. Lanyan, master's mate of the Resolution, who had served in that capacity, on board the Adventure, in the former voyage, was promoted to the vacant Lieutenancy*.

* Several arrangements took place, in consequence of these promotions. Lieutenants Burney and Rickman (from the Discovery) were appointed first and second Lieutenants of the Resolution; and Lieutenant Williamson first Lieutenant of the Discovery. Captain King also, by the permission of Captain Gore, took in four midshipmen, who had been serviceable to him in astronomical calculations. On the same day, our adventurers were attended by the worthy priest of Paratounca, who confirmed what the serjeant had related respecting the removal of the church; but submitted the choice of either place entirely to Captain Gore.

On

On Sunday the 29th of August, in the afternoon, the last sad offices were paid to Captain Clerke. The officers and crew of both vessels attended him in procession to the grave; the ships, at the same time, firing minute guns; and, at the end of the service, three vollies were fired by the marines. The body was interred under a tree, on a rising ground in the valley north of the harbour, where the store-houses and hospital are situated. The priest of Paratounca recommended this spot, supposing it would be very near the centre of the intended new church. The worthy pastor joined in the procession. All the Russians in the garrison attended on the occasion, adding to the awful solemnity.

An ensign arrived from Bolcheretsk on the 3d of September, with a letter from the commander to Captain Gore, informing him, that in a few days he might expect to see the cattle he had ordered; and that Captain Shmaleff, who succeeded Major Behm in his command, would pay him a visit, immediately on the arrival of a sloop which he expected from Okotsh. The bearer of the letter was the son of Captain Lieutenant Synd, who had formerly been appointed to the command, of an expedition of discovery between Asia and America, and now resided at Okotsk. He informed them that he was directed to receive their directions, and to supply them with every thing that their service might require.

On the 5th of September, the parties that were on shore returned to the ship. On the 8th the Resolution hauled on shore, to repair some damages she had received from the ice. About this time, they began to make a strong decoction from a species of dwarf pine, which is extremely plentiful here. They knew it would be an admirable medicine for the scurvy, and supposed it would be found useful in making beer. They were particularly desirous of procuring a considerable supply, as most of their preventatives were either consumed, or had lost their efficacy by long keeping.

Having repaired the damages the Resolution had suffered by the ice, she hauled off from the shore the next morning. Sunday the 12th, was a day of rest; but, the weather continuing foul, the men could not employ themselves in gathering berries on the coast, or amuse themselves by any other pastime on shore. Ensign Synd returned to Bolcheretsk this day. The serjeant, being commander of the place, had hitherto been admitted to the tables of our navigators; and his company was additionally pleasing, from his being sensible and quick in his conceptions; and comprehended, better than any other person, a few Russian words they had acquired. Whilst Ensign Synd continued among them, he politely suffered him to enjoy the same privileges; but, when the new commander arrived from Okotsk, the serjeant, for some real or imaginary cause, fell into disgrace, and was no longer suffered to associate with his own officers

On the 15th they had completed the stowage of the holds, got their wood and water on board, and were ready to put to sea at a day's notice; but they could not think of taking their departure, because the cattle were not yet arrived from Verchnei; and fresh provisions were now become the most important article of their wants. As there was an apparent prospect of fine weather, this was considered as a favourable opportunity of taking some amusement on shore. A party of bear-hunting was therefore proposed by Captain Gore, and the proposal was unanimously acceded to. On the 17th, they set out on this expedition; which was deferred till that day, to afford rest to the Hospodin Ivaskin, a new acquaintance lately arrived, and who was to be of the party. Major Behm had desired this gentleman, who usually resides at Verchnei, to attend our navigators on their return to the harbour, and assist them as an interpreter*.

Orders

* He is allied to a considerable family in Russia, and his father had been a general in the service of the empress. He had been page to the Empress Elizabeth, and bore an ensign's commission in her guards. At the age of sixteen he was *knowted*, had his nose slit, and was banished to Siberia: he was afterwards transported to Kamtschatka, and had then resided there thirty-one years. He was tall, and thin, and his visage was deeply furrowed with wrinkles. In his whole figure, old age was strongly depicted, though he had hardly attained his fifty-fourth year.

Great was their disappointment when they discovered that he had totally forgotten the French and German languages: thus were they unfortunately deprived, of what they expected would have furnished a favourable opportunity, of acquiring ample information respecting this country. They had also promised themselves much satisfaction in hearing the history of this extraordinary man. The cause of his banishment remained a secret to the inhabitants of this country, but he was supposed to have been guilty of some atrocious offence. He assured them that

Orders having been given to the first lieutenants of the two ships, that the rigging should be repaired, as far as the late supply of stores would permit, they proceeded on their hunting party, conducted by the corporal of the Kamptschadales: but, previous to their looking out for game, they proceeded to the head of Behm's harbour, an inlet on the west side of the bay, by the natives named Tarienska. As they advanced towards this harbour, they saw the Toion of St. Peter and St. Paul, in a canoe, with his wife and family. In pursuance of his advice, they now changed their route, and instead of going up the harbour, proceeded northerly towards a pool of water, not far from the mouth of the river Paratounca, which was much frequented by the bears.

As soon as they had landed, the wind unfortunately veered to the eastward, which destroyed their hopes of meeting with any sport, as there was not a probability of their finding any bears, knowing they were to the windward; those animals being so acute in scenting their pursuers, which, under such circumstances, enabled them to avoid danger. They determined therefore to return to their boat, and, having provided a tent for that purpose, passed the night upon the beach. The next day, having walked five or six miles, the party arrived at the sea-side. From hence a continued narrow border of ground adjoining to the sea, extended itself towards Cheapoonskoi Noss as far as they could see. It is covered with heath, and produces berries in great abundance. Here they were informed a number of bears might certainly be found, as they delighted much in feeding upon these berries. But as the weather was showery, it was unfavourable to the hunters; in consequence of which they directed their course along the plain: they saw, indeed, a few of those animals at a distance, but they could not possibly get within shot of them.

The diversion of bear-hunting was therefore abandoned, and that of spearing salmon was proposed; a number of those fish having been observed driving through the surf into a small river. Fortunately, the water afforded them a little provision; for they had not only been unfortunate in the chace, but they had also failed in their expectations of shooting wild fowl, after having almost depended upon a supply of them for their subsistence. From all these disappointments, they began to think it advisable to return to their head-quarters.

The Kamptschadales, who attended them, attributed their not meeting with game, to their assembling in too large a party; and the unavoidable noise and bustle which was naturally occasioned by it. This judicious remark induced them to separate; Captain King, Ivaskin, and the corporal, forming one party; and the other consisted of Captain Gore, and the rest of the company. After passing the night under their tent, they set out on the morning of the 19th, by different routes, meaning to take a kind of circuit round the country, and again to meet at St. Peter and St. Paul.

Captain King, and his subdivision, took the course of the river where he had fished for salmon; and, after being heartily soaked with heavy rain the whole morning, he and his associates took shelter in the afternoon in some old *Balagans*, which composed the ruins of a Kamptschadale village, not having seen a single bear, since they separated from the rest of the company in the morning.

At first they were somewhat inclined to continue here during the night; but Hospodin, whom former severities had rendered unable to endure fatigue, and who was now extremely distressed from having his snuff-box exhausted of its contents, grew very importunate with them to return home. The old corporal had no objection to this proposal, and Ivaskin's entreaties prevailed.

At night they reached the ships, after having been twelve complete hours upon their legs. Poor Ivaskin seemed perfectly overcome with fatigue, which was rendered more poignant for want of a supply of snuff. Almost at every step, his anxious hand sunk mechanically into his pocket, and instantly rose again with his huge

that, for twenty years, he had not tasted a morsel of bread, nor had been allowed any kind of subsistence; but had existed, all that time, with the Kamptchadales, on what his own toil and activity had procured by the uncertainty of the chase. Afterwards a small pension was allowed him, and his situation has been rendered less intolerable, since Major Behm was appointed to the command. That gentleman had caused his pension to be increased to a hundred roubles a year. Major Behm informed our navigators that he had obtained permission for him to go to Okotsk, where he was to reside in future; but that, for the present, he should leave him behind, as he might probably be useful to them as an interpreter, on their return to the bay.

empty

empty box. On the arrival of the party at the tent, they congratulated each other on their not having absented themselves another day from their general rendezvous: the Hospodin's box was instantly replenished; and, regaling on an excellent supper, they forgot the troubles and disappointments of the journey.

The next day our navigators received the disagreeable information, that their friend, the serjeant, had suffered corporal punishment, inflicted by the command of the old *Put-parouchick*. None of them could learn the cause of his displeasure. Imagining, however, that the offence, whatever it might be, could not merit so disgraceful a chastisement, they were both sorry and angry at what had happened. They were, however, unwilling to remonstrate on this subject, till Captain Shmaleff should arrive: but, when they were next visited by the *Put-parouchick*, the coolness of their reception must have testified their resentment.

On the 22d of September, being the anniversary of the coronation of George the Third, twenty-one guns were fired; and as elegant a feast was prepared as the situation of our navigators would admit of. The arrival of Captain Shmaleff was announced the very moment they were sitting down to dinner. On his first appearance he informed them, that the reason of their not having received the black cattle was, that the very heavy rains at Verchnei, had absolutely prevented their setting out. So much politeness and generosity, demanding a grateful return, he was the next day saluted with eleven guns on his visiting the Resolution. Specimens of all their curiosities were presented to him; to which Captain Gore added a fowling-piece, and a gold watch. The next day he was entertained on board the Discovery; and on the 25th, he returned to Bolcheretsk.

Before his departure, he reinstated the serjeant in his command, without any application from them; having resolved to take the *Put-Parouchick* with him. He was, indeed, much offended with him for his severity in punishing the serjeant, as there did not appear to be any reasonable cause for inflicting such punishment. It may not, however, be impertinent to remark, that there are several gradations of rank among them, of which other countries are entirely ignorant; there being no less than four intermediate steps between a serjeant and a private soldier. Subordinate ranks in the sea-service are known to produce the most salutary effects, by creating emulation; in consequence of which the officers of superior rank are enabled to bestow an adequate reward on almost every degree of merit*.

Though the church of Paratounca is built of wood, it is superior to any building in that town, or in that of St. Peter and St. Paul. Among the paintings, with which it is adorned, are two pictures of those illustrious saints, which were presented by Beering; and which might vie with the first European performances in the intrinsic riches of their drapery; the principal parts of it consisting of thick plates of solid silver, in imitation of the foldings of the robes which decorate the figures.

Another hunting party was now proposed, when Captain King suffered himself to be directed by the clerk of the parish, who was much celebrated as a bear-hunter. About sun-set they repaired to one of the larger lakes: As it was essentially necessary that they should conceal themselves as much as possible, they found plenty of materials for that purpose, among the long grass and brush-wood which grew about the water's edge. They had not been long in this situation, before their ears were agreeably saluted with the growlings of the animals they were in pursuit of in almost every direction. Their eager expectations were soon after gratified by the sight of one of them in the water, swimming in a direct course to where they lay concealed. The moon, at this time, shone clearly, and as the animal advanced, three of the party fired at it almost at the same instant: the beast immediately turned short upon one side, making a most horrible noise, not to be discriminated as yelling, growling, or roaring, but constituting an assemblage of the whole three.

The animal was severely wounded, and reached

* The discipline of the Russian army, though so extremely remote from the seat of government, is remarkably severe, without exempting even the commissioned officers. Imprisonment, and a limitation to bread and water diet, is the punishment of the latter for trivial offences. An ensign in this place, informed our navigators that the punishment he received for engaging in a drunken frolic, was three months imprisonment in the black hole, restricted to bread and water only for subsistence; which had so debilitated his whole nervous system, that he never afterwards enjoyed a sufficient flow of spirits to qualify him for a convivial meeting.

the

the bank with difficulty; whence it retreated to some thick bushes, continuing to bellow forth its piteous complaints. The Kamptschadales, supposing it to be mortally wounded, thought it not advisable to rouse it again for the present. It then exceeded nine o'clock, and the night threatening a change of weather, they prudently resolved to return home, and wait till the morning for the gratification of their curiosity; when they accordingly repaired to the spot, and found the bear dead from the wounds it had received. It was a female, and larger than the ordinary size*.

In the spring of the year, bear-hunting is a very dangerous diversion, as these animals then first issue from their caves, after having passed the whole winter without food. Thus becoming exceedingly famished, they pursue the inhabitants by the scent; and prowling about, at a distance from their usual tracks, dart upon them unawares. The time of their copulation is also a dangerous season for meeting with these quadrupeds.

Many stories are related of these animals, by the Kamptschadales, who, from this circumstance, derive considerable advantage in hunting. They never venture to fire at a young bear, if the dam is upon the spot; well knowing, that if the cub should happen to be killed, she becomes so immoderately enraged, that if she can only obtain a sight of the offender, she is sure to be revenged of him; or die in the attempt. If the mother should be shot, the cubs continue near the body, after it has been a long time dead; demonstrating by the most unequivocal gestures and motions, the most poignant sorrow. Instead of commiserating their distress, the hunters embrace these opportunities of destroying them. If the veracity of the Kamptschadales may be depended on, the sagacity of the beast is almost as extraordinary as its natural affection.

Innumerable are the stories they relate to this effect. The following, among many others, is well attested. It is the stratagem practised by the natives to catch the barcins, which are too swift for them to expect success in pursuing them. These animals associate in great numbers, chiefly on low grounds, at the feet of rocks and precipices, where they delight in browsing. The bear pursues them by the scent, till he procures a view of them; and then cautiously advancing, takes care to secure a situation above them: at the same time hiding himself among the rocks as he approaches, till he is almost immediately over them, and near enough to execute his purpose. With his paws, he then pushes down large pieces of the rock, among the herd below; and if he perceives that his manœuvre has maimed any of the flock, he immediately pursues them. According to the injury the poor barcins have received, he either proves successful in overtaking them, or they escape by the rapidity of their flight.

The Kamptchadales thankfully acknowledge their obligations to the bears, for the little progress they have hitherto made, either in the sciences, or the polite arts. They confess they are indebted to them for all their knowledge in physic and surgery; that, by observing the herbs they have applied to the wounds they have received, and what they have recourse to when languid and out of order, they have become acquainted with most of the simples used by them, either in external or internal applications. They even admit the bears to be their dancing-masters; and their own practice seems to place this matter beyond dispute; for the bear-dance of the Kamptschadales is an exact copy of every attitude and gesture peculiar to that animal. And those attitudes are supposed to come the nearest to perfection, which most resemble the motions of that awkward creature.

* The method usually pursued in bear-hunting is thus related: The natives make it a rule to reach the ground, frequented by bears, about sun-set. On their arrival at the spot, their first business is to look out for their tracks, and particularly to attend to the freshest of them. These tracks are numerous between the woods and the lakes, and are often seen among the long sedge grass and brakes on the margin of the water. Having chosen a convenient spot for concealment, the hunters fix their crutches in the ground, on which they rest their musquets, putting them in a proper direction. They afterwards kneel, or lie down, as may be thought most eligible; and, having their bear-spears in readiness by their side, wait for the arrival of their game.

These precautions are necessary on many accounts, that the hunters may be enabled to make sure of their mark; the price of ammunition being so high at Kamptschatka, that the value of a bear will not purchase more of it than will be sufficient to load a musquet four or five times. It is very material on another consideration; for if the first shot should not render the animal incapable of pursuing, fatal consequences may ensue; the enraged beast repairs to the place, from whence the sound and smoke have been observed to issue, and furiously attacks its adversaries. In which case their safety depends, in a great measure, on their giving him a mortal stab as he advances towards them. Should he parry the thrust, and break in upon his opponents, the conflict becomes dreadful: the loss of a single life seldom gratifying the beast's revenge.

WHITE BEAR.

Hawkins sculp.t

No occurrence of importance took place till the 30th, when Captain Gore went to Paratounea, to have an escutcheon placed in the church, which had been prepared for that purpose by Mr. Webber. The inscription on it mentioned the rank and age of Captain Clerke, and the object of the expedition, in which he was engaged at the time of his decease. To the tree, under which his body was interred, a board was affixed, with a similar inscription on it.

Previous to his departure, Captain Gore directed Captain King to get the ships out of the harbour, to be in readiness for sailing. A violent gale, which continued the whole day, prevented the execution of this order; but, on the 2d, both vessels warped out of the harbour, and anchored in seven fathoms water, not far from the *ostrog*. The day before they quitted the harbour, the cattle from Verchnei arrived; and that the men might have the full enjoyment of so seasonable a supply, by regaling on it whilst it was fresh, Captain Gore resolved to continue in the same station five or six days longer.

As our navigators have now taken leave of St. Peter and St. Paul, a short account of Awatska-bay, and the coast, may not be unacceptable; as it is perhaps the safest and most extensive harbour that has ever been discovered; and the only one, in this part of the world, that can admit vessels of considerable burthen. The entrance into Awatska bay is in the latitude of 52° 51′ north, and the longitude of 158° 48′ east. From Cape Gavareea to the entrance of Awatska bay, the coast takes a northerly direction, and extends about eleven leagues.

Awatska-bay may be precisely known, by the two high mountains to the south of it. That nearest the bay is in the form of a sugar loaf; the other, which is more inland, is flatter and lower. The entrance into the bay is, at first, about three miles wide, and one mile and a half in the narrowest part: the length is about four miles, in a north-west direction. A bason, twenty-five miles in circumference, lies within the mouth; in which are the harbours of Rakoweena to the east, Tareiuska to the west, and St. Peter and St. Paul to the north.

The harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, though small, is very convenient. Half a dozen ships may be commodiously moored in it; and it is also particularly convenient for giving them any kind of repairs. At the head of this harbour there is a watering place. The time-keeper on board the Resolution, which was exactly copied from Mr. Harrison's, stopped on the 27th of April, a few days before the arrival of our navigators at Awatska bay. During the voyage it had been carefully attended to, and had not been intrusted in any other hands than those of the Captains Cook and King. No accident, therefore, could have happened to it, to which its stopping could be attributed; nor could it have been occasioned by extreme cold, the thermometer being but little below the freezing point.

The peninsula of Kamptschatka is situated on the eastern coast of Asia, and is nearly in a north and south direction. The whole peninsula is somewhat in the form of a shoe; its greatest breadth being two hundred and thirty-six computed miles, extending from the mouth of the river Tigil to that of the river Kampstchatka; but, towards each extremity, it gradually becomes narrower. It is bounded on the north by the country of the Koriacks; by the north Pacific Ocean to the south and east; and by the sea of Okotsk to the west. A chain of high mountains, from north to south, extends the whole length of the peninsula, almost equally dividing it; whence several rivers take their rise, and pass into the Pacific Ocean, and the sea of Okotsk.

The three principal rivers are the Bolchoireka, the river Kamptschatka, and the river Awatska. The first discharges itself into the sea of Okotsk, and is navigable for the Russian galliots, five leagues from its mouth. The river Kamptschatka continues about three hundred miles, in the direction of south to north; and, after bending its course to the eastward, is received by the ocean, a little to the southward of Kamptschatkoi-Noss. The source of the Awatska river, is from the mountains between the Bolchoireka and the Bistraia. After running two hundred miles from north-west to south-east, it falls into Awatska Bay. The Tigil is also a considerable river: The smaller streams are not sufficiently important to be particularly noticed.

If a judgment may be formed of its soil, from its vegetable productions, Kamptschatka appears to be barren in the extreme. Neither about the bay, nor in any of the excursions of our navigators, did they ever see the smallest spot of ground, that had the appearance of a good green turf, or that seemed capable of improvement by cultivation. Stunted trees, thinly scattered over the whole face of the country, whose bottoms

were mossy, with a mixture of low heath, pronounced the most extreme sterility.

It must be admitted, however, that they saw at Paratounca, three or four stacks of excellent hay; and Major Behm assured them that the banks of the Kamptschatka, and the Bistraia, as well as several other parts of the peninsula, produce a quantity of grass of great strength and height, which is mowed twice in evesy summer. The fertility of this part of the country may probably be occasioned by its lying in the widest part of the peninsula, and consequently at the farthest distance from the sea on each side. Chilling fogs, and drizzling weather being prevalent along the coast, the parts adjacent must naturally be rendered incapable of improvemcnt by agriculture*.

The climate, in the country adjacent to the river Kamptschatka, is allowed to be as serene and temperate, as in many parts of Siberia under the same latitude. They had neither thunder nor lightning whilst our navigators continued at Kamptschatka, excepting on the night of the eruption of the volcano; and they were informed by the inhabitants, that they were not often troubled with either, and never but in a slight degree. The severity of winter, accompanied with dreadful hurricanes of wind and snow, compels the natives to retire to their subterraneous habitations, as well for security as warmth. Major Behm informed our navigators, that the inclemency of the winter in 1779, was so great as to stop all intercourse between the inhabitants for several weeks†.

Springs of hot water are said to abound in this country. Our navigators only saw that at Natcheekin ostrog, which has already been described. Several others are noticed by Krascheninicoff, who also mentions two pits or wells, at the bottom of which the water boils with great impetuosity; a dreadful noise issuing from them at the same time, and so thick a vapour as not to be penetrated by the keenest sight.

Among the principal trees in this peninsula, are the birch, the poplar, the alder, and several small species of the willow, with two sorts of dwarfish cedars; one of which grows upon the coast, seldom exceeding two feet in height, and creeps upon the ground. Not only the birch, but every other kind of tree in the neighbourhood of the bay, were stunted, and very small; the natives are therefore obliged to go a considerable distance up the country, to get wood of a proper size for their canoes, their *balagans*, and many other purposes.

This peninsula produces abundance of the shrub kind, as junipers, mountain ash, raspberry bushes, and wild rose-trees: also a variety of berries, as black-berries, blue-berries, cran-berries, crow-berries, and partridge-berries. These berries are used as a general sauce to their dried fish in winter. They also eat them in puddings, and make decoctions of them for their common beverage.

Two plants are found in this peninsula, which deserve particular attention. The first is called *sarana*, by the natives, and *Lilium Kamptscatience flore atro rubente*, by botanists. The stem grows to the height of about five inches, and is not larger than that of a tulip. It is a maxim with the Kamptschadales, that Providence never deserts them, for those seasons that are prejudicial to the *sarana*, are always favourable for fishing; and, on the contrary, an unsuccessful fishing

* It may reasonably be supposed that the severity of the climate must be in due proportion to the sterility of the soil, of which it is perhaps the cause. Some of our navigators first saw this country in the beginning of May 1779, when the whole face of it was covered with snow from six to eight feet in depth. When they returned on the 24th of August, the foliage of the trees, and vegetation in general, appeared to be in the utmost state of perfection. The weather, during the remainder of that month, and the whole of September, was very changeable, but not severe. All the month of September, a moderate degree of temperature prevailed; but, when October began, the new-fallen snow again covered the tops of the hills, and the wind continued westerly.

In computing the seasons here, Spring ought to be omitted. Summer may truly be said to extend from the middle of June, till the middle of September; October may be considered as the Autumn of the year; and from that period to the middle of June, it is all dreary and dismal winter.

† Volcanos are numerous in this peninsula; only three of which have lately been subject to eruptions. That in the neighbourhood of Awatska has been already mentioned. The volcano of Tolbathick is situated on a neck of land, between the river Kamptschatka and Tolbathick. The eruptions proceed from a high mountain, terminating in pointed rocks. A whirlwind of flames issued from it in 1739, which reduced the forests of the neighbonring mountains to ashes: a cloud of smoke succeeded, which darkened the whole country, but was dissipated by a shower of cinders, which covered the earth to the extent of about thirty miles. Three shocks of an earthquake, with only a minute's interval between each, succeeded those eruptions.

On the top of the mountain of Kamptschatka, which is said to be the highest in the peninsula, a third volcano presents itself. A thick smoke incessantly ascends from its summit, and it frequently has very dreadful eruptions.

month,

month, is amply compensated by an exuberant *sarana* harvest. This article is variously used in cookery. When roasted in embers, it is thought a good substitute for bread. When baked in an oven, and pounded, it supplies the place of flour and meal, and is mixed in all their soups. It is extremely nourishing, and has a pleasant bitter flavour. Our navigators partook of the roots, boiled in the manner of potatoes, and found them very wholesome and agreeable.

The other plant alluded to, is sweet grass; the taste of which resembles that of sugar, though very hot and pungent. It has a hollow stalk, which consists of three or four joints, with large leaves issuing from each: when it attains its full growth, it is about six feet in height. It was formerly a principal ingredient in cookery, among the Kamptschadales; but, since the country has been in the possession of the Russians, it is chiefly appropriated to the purpose of distillation. From this plant a liquor is prepared, which the natives call *raka,* and is as strong as brandy. Seventy-two pounds of the plant, usually produce twenty-five pints of raka. Steller, however, informs us, that the spirits distilled from this plant *unscraped,* is very injurious to health, producing sudden nervous disorders.

A common well-known plant requires to be noticed here, as being more essential to the subsistence of the inhabitants than any other: it is the nettle. As neither hemp nor flax are produced at Kamptschatka, the nettle supplies materials for their fishing nets; on which their existence principally depends. For this purpose, the nettles are usually cut down in August, and, after being hung in bundles under their balagans the remainder of the summer, they are manufactured like hemp. It is then spun into thread with their fingers, and twisted round a spindle.

The number of wild animals, which this country produces, must always be considered as its real riches; for no labour can be so productive of advantage, as what is employed upon their furrieries. And next to these, the animals that supply them ought to be considered; as the fox, the *zebilene,* or sable; the stoat, or *ermine;* the *isatis,* or arctic fox; the earless marmot; the varying hare; the weasel; the glutton, or *wolverene;* the wild sheep; rein deer; bears; wolves; dogs*.

The Kamptschatka sables are larger than those of Siberia, and their fur thicker and brighter; but those near the rivers Olekma and Vitime, are of a finer black. The sables of the Tigil and Ouka are allowed to be the best in Kamptschatka, a pair of these being frequently sold for five pounds sterling. The worst inhabit the southern extremity†.

For a description of the *isatis,* the reader is referred to Mr. Pennant's Arctic Zoology; the skin of which is but of little value. The varying hare is neglected on the same account: they are extremely numerous, and always become white during the winter. The earless marmot, or mountain squirrel, is a beautiful creature, much smaller than a squirrel; it feeds upon roots and berries, sitting on its hind legs whilst it eats, and conducting the food to its mouth with the paws: its skin is much esteemed by the Kamptschadales, being warm, light and brilliant. Like the plumage of some birds, when beheld in different lights, it seems to be of a variety of colours.

The *ermine,* or stoat, is not much regarded here, its fur being of the ordinary kind. The weasel is also neglected for the same reason. But the skin of the *wolverene,* or glutton, is in the greatest repute; a Kamtschadale thinking himself splendidly attired, when a small portion of this fur appears upon his garment. The women ornament their hair with its white pats, which is deemed a most superlative piece of finery. Supported by a superstitious maxim, an opinion prevails among the natives, that the angels are clad with the skins of these animals.

The bears which our navigators had an opportunity of seeing, were of a dun brown colour: they usually appear in small companies of four or five together; but in the season when the fish

* This country abounds with foxes, and among them there are a variety of colours. The most common species is indeed the same as the European, but their colours are more vivid and brilliant. Some of a dark chesnut; others have dark-coloured stripes; some are black; others of a dark brown; some are of a stone colour; and some few are entirely white. The quality of their fur is greatly superior to that of the same animals in Siberia or America. Many artifices are put in practice by the hunters to destroy this quadruped. Still, however, he preserves his character for craftiness and cunning, in all climates, and upon all occasions.

† The sable-hunter requires only a rifle-barrel gun of a very small bore, a net, and a few bricks. With the first they sometimes shoot them, when they appear on the branches. With the net they surround the hollow trees, in which they generally take refuge when they are pursued, and the bricks are put hot into the cavities to drive them out with the smoke.

quit

quit the sea, they push, in great quantities, up the rivers. In the winter months they are seldom seen. Of the skins of bears, warm mattrasses and coverings for beds are made; and of the same materials, bonnets, gloves, and harness for sledges are manufactured. The flesh is eaten, but the fat is held in the highest estimation.

The wolves appear only in the winter, prowling about in large companies, in pursuit of prey.

Rein-deer, both wild and tame, are common in many parts of the peninsula, but not in the neighbourhood of Awatska. It is remarkable that these animals are not used here, for the purposes of carriage, as they are by their neighbours to the north and east. But the use of dogs, in a great degree, precludes them from the advantage of rearing other domestic animals.

The *argali*, or wild mountain sheep, is in great plenty here; though an animal unknown in Europe, except in Corsica and Sardinia. Its skin resembles that of the deer, but its gait, and other particulars, proclaim its nearer affinity with the goat. Its head is ornamented with two large twisted horns, which, when the animal has attained his full growth, weigh from twenty to thirty pounds, and are rested on the quadruped's back when it is running. These creatures are remarkably swift and active, traversing the steepest and most cragged rocks with astonishing agility. Spoons, cups, and platters, are fabricated from their horns, by the natives, who frequently have one of them hanging to a belt, to facilitate their procuring water in their hunting expeditions. The flesh of this beautiful animal is sweet, and deliciously flavoured *.

Most of the northern sea-fowl frequent the coast and bays of Kamtschatka; and the inland rivers are plentifully stored with various species of wild ducks: one of which, called by the natives *a-an-gitche*, has a most beautiful plumage, and a melodious cry. The mountain duck, according to Steller, is peculiar to Kamtschatka. The plumage of the drake is transcendently beautiful. Many other water-fowl were observed, which, from their magnitude, appeared to be of the wild-goose kind.

In passing through the woods, our Europeans saw some eagles of a prodigious size, but could not determine to what species they belonged. They are said to be of three different kinds. The first is the black eagle, with a white head, tail, and legs. The second, which is erroneously called the white eagle, is, in reality of a light grey. The third, which is a very common sort, is the stone-coloured eagle. Many of the hawk, falcon, and bustard kind inhabit this peninsula. Woodcocks, snipes, and grouse, are also found here. Swans are numerous, and usually enrich the repast at all public entertainments. Wild fowl were so abundant in this country, that our navigators were frequently complimented with twenty brace at a time †.

The sea-otters found here, are, in all respects, similar to those they met with at Nootka sound. They were formerly plentiful here; but since the Russians opened a kind of commerce with the Chinese for their skins, where they bear a higher price than any other kind of fur, the hunters have so indefatigably pursued them, that not many are now remaining in the country. A few of them, however, are still found among the Kurile Islands, which are superior in quality to those of Kamtschatka, or Nootka Sound.

Fish is the principal article of food among the inhabitants of this peninsula, who cannot possibly derive much sustenance either from agriculture or cattle. The soil indeed produces wholesome roots and berries, but those alone cannot support the inhabitants; though they are found salutary, as correctives of the putrescent quality of their dried fish. Whales are frequently

* The dogs of this country, have already been said to resemble the Pomeranian breed in figure; but they are larger, and their hair is coarser. Though of a variety of colours, that of a light dun, or a pale dirty yellow, is the most prevalent. These poor animals are turned loose to shift for themselves about the latter end of May, and continue at liberty till the ensuing winter; but punctually return to their respective homes, when the snow begins to make its appearance. In the winter they subsist entirely on the head, back bones, and entrails of salmon, which are dried and preserved for that purpose; and even with this wretched food they are very scantily supplied. These dogs must be extremely numerous, as no less than five of them are yoked to a single sledge, only to conduct one person. Our navigators, in their journey to Bolcheretsh, had one hundred and thirty-nine of them, in the two stages of Karatchin and Natcheckin. It is a remarkable fact, that bitches are never employed on this business, nor dogs that have been castrated.

† No amphibious animals were now seen upon the coast, except seals, which are extremely plenty about the bay of Awatska. The otters were then pursuing the salmon, which were ascending the rivers in large shoals. Some of them are said to follow the fish into fresh water, and even to frequent the lakes which have any communication with the sea.

quently seen and taken in this country, and are useful for many purposes. Of their skins the soles of shoes are made, and belts and straps for many other purposes. The flesh is eaten, and the fat preserved for culinary uses, and for illuminating their lamps. With their whiskers they sew the seams of their canoes: nets are also made of the larger kind of fish, and they shoe their sledges with the under jaw-bone. Knives are formed from many of their bones; and they make excellent snares of their veins and nerves. There is hardly a part of a whale that is not found useful in this peninsula.

Flat-fish, trout, and herrings are found here in great abundance, from the middle of May till the 24th of June, the time of their departure. At one hawl, on the 15th of May, our navigators dragged out three hundred flat-fish, and a considerable quantity of sea-trout. The former are firm and well-flavoured, and studded with prickly knobs upon the back, like turbot. The herring season commences towards the latter end of May: they come in immense shoals, but continue no considerable time there. They are excellent; and our Europeans filled many casks with them. Large quantities of fine cod were also taken, some of which were also salted. Great numbers of small fish were likewise caught, which resembled smelts.

But, on the salmon fishery alone, the inhabitants principally depend for winter sustenance. On this coast, all the species of these that are known to exist, are said to be found here; but though shoals of different sorts are seen floating up the rivers at the same time, they are said to avoid mixing with each other; and regularly return to the river where they derived their existence, but not till the third summer. About the middle of May, the first shoals of salmon enter the mouth of the Awatska. This kind in called the tahavitsi, by the Kamtschadales, and is the largest, and most approved. Three feet and a half is their usual length, and their average weight from thirty to forty pounds. Their back is of a dark blue, with black spots, and the tail perfectly straight. They swim along the river with such velocity as to occasion great agitation in the water; a circumstance so important to the natives, that they are ever on the watch for them at the accustomed time; and when they perceive this powerful agitation, they drop their nets immediately before them. One of the first was presented to our navigators, but not without informing them, that it was the highest compliment they could confer upon them. Their fishing season for this species, begins about the middle of May, and continues till the end of June*.

All the lakes which communicate with the sea, abound with fish that have much the appearance of salmon, and generally weigh about five or six pounds. The natives, it is said, think them unworthy of the labour of catching them. These lakes, being generally shallow, the bears and dogs find no difficulty in capturing them in the summer season; and from the evidence of the quantities of bones appearing on the banks, vast numbers of them seem to have been thus devoured.

The natives dry the principal part of their salmon, and salt but very little of it. They cut a fish into three pieces: they take off the belly-piece first, and then a slice along each side of the back bone. The belly-piece is dried and smoked; the other slices are also dried in the air, and either eaten whole, as a substitute for bread, or reduced to a powder for paste and cakes. The head, tail, and bones, are dried and preserved for the sustenance of their dogs.

* There is a smaller sort of salmon, weighing from eight to fifteen pounds, called the red fish, which assemble in the bays, and at the mouths of the rivers, early in the month of June. From that time till towards the end of September, multitudes of them are taken upon the eastern and western coasts, where the sea receives any fresh water; and also up the rivers, almost to their very source.

SECTION XLIII.

Account of Kamtschatka continued—Its Inhabitants—Conjectures on their Origin—Kamtschadales discovered by the Russians—Atlassoff makes the Inhabitants tributary—He is disgraced—and restored—The Kamtschadales revolt—Havock made by the small Pox—Russian Government established—No Offence punishable with Death—Habitations—Dress—Account of the Kurile Islands, &c.—Plan of future Operations—The Ships sail along the Coast—The Island of Spoomska—The Isle of Paramousir—Many Birds observed—A violent Storm—The Ships sail for Japan—Japanese Coast—Two Japanese Vessels observed—Prosecution of the Voyage to China—Violent Currents—Quantities of Pumice-stone—Some Chinese Fishing Boats seen—The Grand Ladrone Island.

THE inhabitants may be said to consist of three sorts: the Kamtschadales; the Russians, and Cossacks; and a mixture occasioned by their intermarriages. Steller, who was long resident in this country, and indefatigable in searching after knowledge on this subject, informs us, that the Kamtschadales are people of remote antiquity, and have inhabited this peninsula for many ages; and that they probably descended from the Mungalians. Others, however, have imagined they sprang from the Tongusian Tartars, and others from the Japanese.

The inhabitants have no tradition among them, of their having migrated from any other country; they believe they were created on this particular spot by their great god Koutkou, who prefers them to all his other creatures; that they are the happiest of all beings; and that their country far surpasses any other. That before the Russians and Cossacks came among them, they had not the most distant knowledge of any people except the Koreki: that till very lately they had not any intercourse with the Kuriles, and still later that they had any knowledge of the Japanese; that being acquired by means of a vessel that was wrecked upon their coast. It is further added, that when the Russians first got a footing in the country, they found it extremely populous*.

The Russians having made themselves masters of the vast extent of coast of the frozen sea, established posts and colonies. They discovered that the wandering Koriacs inhabited part of the coast of the sea of Okotsk, and they found no difficulty in making them tributary. These not being very distant from the Kamtschadales, with whom they had frequent intercourse, a knowledge of Kamtschatka was consequently acquired. To Feodot Alexieff, a merchant, the honour of the first discovery is attributed in 1648. That, being separated from seven other vessels by a storm, he was driven upon the coast of Kamtschatka, where he and his companions remained a whole winter, but were afterwards cut off by the Koriacs. This was partly corroborated by Simeon Deshneff, who commanded one of the seven vessels, and was driven on shore near the mouth of the Anadir. But as these discoverers, if they ever did really exist, did not live to relate what they had discovered, a Cossack, named Volodimir Atlassoff, is the first acknowledged discoverer of Kamtschatka.

He was sent, in 1697, in the character of commissary, from fort Jakutsk to the Anadirsk, with directions to summon the Koriacs to his assistance, to discover, and render tributary, the countries beyond theirs. With sixty Russian soldiers, and the same number of cossacks, he penetrated, in 1699, into the heart of the peninsula, and gained the Tigil. He levied a tribute upon furs, and proceeded to the river Kamtschatka, on which he built an *ostrog*, now called

* Steller supposes them to have been descended from the Mungalians, from the words in their language having terminations similar to those of the Mungalian Chinese; and that the same principle of derivation is preserved in both languages: that they are short in stature, swarthy in their complexions, the face broad, the nose short and flat, the eyes small and sunk in the head, the legs small; and many other peculiarities are observeable among them, which are equally conspicuous among the Mungalians. He therefore concludes, that they fled for refuge to this peninsula, from the rapacity of the eastern conquerors; as the Laplanders retreated to the extremities of the north, from the advances of the Europeans.

Verchnei;

Verchnei; and, leaving a garrison of sixteen Cossacks, returned, in 1700, to Jakutsk, with vast quantities of rich tributary furs. These he judiciously accompanied, and was rewarded for his services by the appointment of commander of the fort of Jakutsk; and, at the same time, received orders to return to Kamtschatka, with a reinforcement of a hundred Cossacks; with whatever might conduce to the completion and settlement of his new discoveries. Proceeding, with his force, towards the Anadirsk, he saw a bark on the river Tanguska, which proved to be laden with Chinese merchandize. He instantly pillaged this vessel, on which the owners remonstrated to the Russian court. He was afterwards arrested at Jakutsk, and conducted to a prison.

During this time Petop Serioukoff, who Atlassoff had left, quietly enjoyed the possession of the garrison of Verchnei; and, though he had not a sufficient corps to enforce the payment of a tribute from the inhabitants, he had the address to traffic with them as a merchant, on very advantageous terms. His conciliating disposition caused him to be so highly esteemed, by the natives of Kamtschatka, that they lamented his departure, when he set off to return to Anadirsk. He and his party were, however, attacked by the Koriacs, and unfortunately cut off in 1703. Other commissioners were successively dispatched into Kamtschatka, during the disgrace and trial of Atlassoff.

Atlassoff was reinstated in his command in 1706, and had the management of a second expedition into Kamtschatka, after having been instructed to ingratiate himself into the favour of the natives by all amicable means; but, on no consideration, to have recourse to compulsive measures; but, so far from attending to these instructions, he rendered the natives hostile to their new governors, by repeated acts of cruelty, and injustice, and created a mutiny of the Cossacks, who demanded a new commander.

The Cossacks, having succeeded in displacing Atlassoff, seized his effects; and, having tasted the sweets of plunder, and living without controul, his successors were unable to reduce them to subjection. No less than three successive commanders were assassinated. From that period, to the grand revolt of the Kamtschadales, in 1731, the history of this country is an unvaried detail of revolts, massacres, and murders, in every part of the peninsula.

The revolt was principally occasioned by the discovery of a passage from Okotosk, to the river Bolcheireka, made by Cosmo Sokoloff. Before this period, the Russians could enter this country only on the side of Anadirsk; which furnished the natives with frequent opportunities of plundering the tribute, as it was conveyed out of the peninsula by so long a journey. But, after the discovery of this communication, the tribute could be safely and speedily exported; and military stores might now be conveyed into the very heart of the country. The natives were convinced that this circumstance would give the Russians a great advantage over them, and perhaps would shortly establish their dominion. They were therefore determined, to make one grand effort for their liberty.

Beering had, at this time, a small squadron on the coast, and had dispatched what troops could be spared from the country, to join Powloutski, in an expedition against the Tschutski. The time fixed on for carrying their plan into execution, was when Beering should have set sail. In consequence of this resolution, the revolt began as soon as the vessel disappeared. Every Russian and Cossack that could be found, was immediately put to death, and their habitations were reduced to ashes. A large party of them ascended the river Kamtschatka, took possession of the fort and *ostrog*, and slew all that were in them. Fortunately, the vessel was driven back to the harbour; for had she proceeded on her voyage, the total extirpation of the Russians must have ensued. The Cossacks, on their landing, perceiving their wives and children had been murdered, and their habitations consumed, were enraged almost to madness. They flew to the fort and attacked it with great fury; the natives defending it with equal resolution. The powder magazine, at length, took fire; the fort was blown up, and, with it, almost every man that was in it. Various rencounters and assassinations succeeded. Two of the leaders having been slain, another put a period to his own existence, having first dispatched his wife and children. Peace was now again established; and, from that period, no particular disturbances happened, till 1740, when a few Russians were slain

slain in a tumult: but no farther consequences ensued *.

The number of military in the five forts of Nichnei, Verchnei, Tigil, Bolcheretsk, and St. Peter and St. Paul, are about four hundred, including Russians and Cossacks. About the same number are said to be at Ingiga; which, though in the north of the peninsula, is under the command of Kamtschatka.

The Russian government, established over this country, is remarkably mild and equitable. The natives are permitted to choose their own magistrates, from among themselves, and in their own mode, who exercise the same powers they have ever been accustomed to. One of these, under the title of *toion*, presides over each ostrog, to whom all differences are referred; and who awards fines and punishments for all offences; referring only to the governor of Kamtschatka, such enormous or intricate transactions as he supposes himself not competent to the investigation of. The *toion* also appoints a civil officer under him, under the title of corporal, who assists him in the execution of his office, and acts as his deputy in his absence †.

Six vessels of about forty or fifty tons, are employed in the Russian service, between Okotsk and Bolcheretsk: about fourteen vessels are also employed by the merchants in the fur trade among the islands to the east. But the principal and most valuable part of the fur trade, lies between Kamtschatka and America. Beering first discovered the islands in this quarter, in 1741, and, as they were found to abound with sea-otters, the Russian merchants sought anxiously for the other islands seen by that navigator, south-east of Kamtschatka, named in Muller's map, the islands of St. Abraham, &c. In these expeditions, they fell in with no less than three groups of islands. One about fifteen degrees east of Kamtschatka; another, twelve degrees east of that, and the third, Oonalashka, and the neighbouring islands ‡.

Their habitations are of three kinds; *viz. jourts, balagans,* and *log-houses:* they inhabit the first in the winter, and the second in the summer:

* Though many of the inhabitants were lost, in quelling the rebellion of 1731, the country recovered itself, and became as populous as ever in 1767; when the small-pox was first introduced among them, by a soldier from Okotsk. It broke out with great fury, and was very dreadful in its progress. Twenty thousand persons were supposed to have died of this disorder in Kamtschatka, the Kurile Islands, and the Koreki country. The inhabitants of whole villages were sometimes swept away by this contagious malady. At the *ostrog* of Paratounca, no more than thirty-six native inhabitants remain, including men, women, and children; though it contained three hundred and sixty, before it was visited by the small-pox. Our Europeans passed no less than four *ostrogs*, in their journey to Bolcheretsk, which had not a single inhabitant in either of them.

† An edict issued under the late empress of Russia, that no offence should be punishable with death; but, in cases of murder, it is said, the *knout* is inflicted with such severity, that the offender seldom survives the punishment.

The Russians not only merit praise for the mildness of their government, but are also entitled to applause, for their successful endeavours in converting the natives to christianity; few idolaters being now remaining among them. The religion inculcated here, is that of the Greek church. In many of the *ostrogs*, free-schools are established, for the improvement of the natives, and the Cossacks, in the Russian language.

The articles imported from this country, consist entirely of furs; the management of which is under the direction of a company of merchants, appointed by the emperor. This business was formerly carried on by the way of barter, but every article is now purchased with ready money, no inconsiderable quantity of specie being circulated in that wretched country. The furs produce a high price, and the natives, from their manner of living, require few articles in return. The European sailors brought a great quantity of furs from the coast of America, and were equally delighted and astonished on receiving such a quantity of silver for them from the merchants; but, not being able to purchase gin or tobacco with it, or any thing that could afford them entertainment, the roubles were thought troublesome companions, and only afforded amusement to the proprietors of them, by tacitly submitting to be kicked about the deck. These men received thirty roubles of a merchant, for a sea-otter's skin, and in the same proportion for others; but when it was known that they had great quantities to dispose of, and that they were wholly unacquainted with traffic, they were afterwards procured at a much cheaper rate.

‡ The mercantile adventurers also went as far as Shumagin's Islands, of which Kodiak is the chief; but they met with so warm a reception there, for enforcing the payment of a tribute, that they never ventured so far again. According to the Russian charts, the whole sea, between Kamtschatka and America, is studded with Islands. It is pretty certain, however, that only such islands as have been enumerated, have been discovered in that sea, south of 60° latitude.

The persons of the natives having already been described, it is only necessary to add, that, in their stature, they are below the common height; which is accounted for by Major Behm, from their marrying so very early; both sexes usually engaging in the conjugal state at thirteen or fourteen years of age. They are remarkably industrious, and may be very properly contrasted with the Russians and Cossacks, who are frequently supposed to intermarry with them, for the sole purpose of being supported in laziness and sloth.

summer: the third were introduced by the Russians, and are intended for the residence of the more wealthy people. To form a *jourt*, a kind of oblong square is dug about six feet deep in the earth; the dimensions of which must be proportioned to the numbers who are to inhabit it; several persons usually living together in the same jourt. Strong wooden posts are fastened in the ground, on which the beams intended to support the roof are extended; the interstices between the joists being filled up with wicker-work; and turf is spread over the whole. The external appearance of a jourt, resembles a round squat hillock. A hole, serving equally for a chimney, window, and door, is left in the centre, and the inhabitants enter and depart by the assistance of a long pole, having deep notches to afford a little security for the toe. On the side, another entrance is made even with the ground, appropriated to the use of the women; but if a man passes in or out by this aperture, he becomes as much an object of ridicule, as a sailor who descends through lubbers' hole.

A jourt consists of one apartment, forming an oblong square. Broad platforms, made of boards, extend along the sides, at the height of about six inches from the ground, which serve for sitting, or reposing on, being first covered with mats and skins. The fire-place is on one side; the provisions, and the culinary articles, being on the other. They usually retire to their jourts, about the middle of October, and continue in them till the middle of May.

In erecting a *balagan*, nine posts are fixed into the earth, in three regular rows, at equal distances, to the height of about a dozen feet from the surface. About ten feet from the ground, rafters are laid from post to post, and fastened by strong ropes. The joists are placed upon these rafters, and a turf covering completes the floor of the balagan. A conical roof is raised upon this, by means of long poles, which are secured to the rafters at one end, and meet together in a point at the top. The whole is thatched with a coarse kind of grass. These summer habitations have two doors, opposite to each other, to which they ascend with such ladders as are used in the *jourts*. In the lower part, which is entirely open, they dry their fish, vegetables, and other articles provided for the consumption of the winter. Six families generally live together in one *jourt*, but a *balagan* is seldom occupied by more than one at a time.

The *isbas* or *log-houses* are thus constructed: long timbers are piled horizontally, with the ends firmly connected, and the seams filled up or caulked with moss: the roof is sloping, and thatched with grass or rushes. Each of these log-houses has three apartments: one of which may be considered as a kind of entry, extending the whole width and height of the house, and is a receptacle for their lumbering articles, as sledges, harness, &c. This has a communication with their best apartment, which is in the middle, having commodious broad benches, calculated for eating or reposing on: a door points out the way from thence into the kitchen, nearly half of which is appropriated to an oven, or fire-place; which is let into the wall that separates the middle apartment and the kitchen, and is so constructed as to convey the heat to both rooms at the same time. Two lofts are placed over the kitchen and middle apartment, to which the inhabitants ascend by a ladder placed in the entry. Each apartment has two small windows made of talc, and among the lower ranks of the people of fish-skin. The boards and beams of their habitations are smoothed with a hatchet, the natives of this peninsula being unacquainted with the plane.

A town, which is here called an *ostrog*, consists of several habitations, of the kinds above described. *Balagans* are the most numerous; and it is somewhat remarkable, that our navigators never saw a house, of any kind, that was detached from an *ostrog*. In that of St. Peter and St. Paul, there are seven log-houses, nineteen balagans, and three jourts. Paratounca is nearly of the same magnitude. Karatchin, and Natcheekin, have more balagans and jourts, but not so many log-houses, as the former. Hence it appears that such is the most general magnitude of an ostrog*.

The people, situated to the north and south of

* The dress of the Kamtschadale females has already been noticed; that of the men is thus briefly given. The upper garment resembles a waggoner's frock; if it is for summer wear, it is made of nankeen: if for winter, it is usually the skin of some animal, with one side tanned, and the hair preserved on the other, which is worn innermost. A close jacket of nankeen, or cotton stuff, is next under this; and, beneath that, a skirt of Persian silk, of a red, blue, or yellow colour. They also wear long breeches of leather, reaching below the calf of the leg. They have likewise boots,

of this country, being but imperfectly known, the following summary account of the Kurile Islands, and the Koreki and Tschutski, may not be unacceptable. The Kuriles are a chain of islands, running from the southern promontory of Kamtschatka to Japan. The inhabitants of the neighbourhood of Lopatka, who were themselves called Kuriles, gave these islands the same appellation, as soon as they became acquainted with them. Spanberg says they are twenty-two in number, exclusive of the very small ones. The northernmost island is called Shoomska, the inhabitants of which are a mixture of natives and Kamtschadales. The next, which is named Paramousir, is much larger than Shoomska, inhabited by the real natives. The Russians first visited these two islands in 1713, and added them to the dominions of the empress. The others, as far as Ooshesheer inclusive, are now made tributary.

Though Ooshesheer is the farthest island to the south of any under the dominion of Russia, the inhabitants are said to trade to Ooroop, which is the only one that has a good harbour for vessels of burden. Nadeegsda lies to the south of this, inhabited by a race of men who are remarkably hairy, and who, like the natives of Ooroop, live in a state of perfect independence*.

A striking resemblance is observable between the fixed Koriacs, and the Kamtschadales; both countries alike depend on fishing for subsistence; and their clothing and habitations are similar. The fixed Koriacs are under the district of the Ingiga, and are tributary to Russia.

The wandering Koriacs are wholly occupied in breeding and pasturing deer, of which they possess immense numbers, a single chief having sometimes a herd of four or five thousand. The flesh of deer is what they principally feed on, and have a strong antipathy to fish. They erect no balagans; their only habitations having some resemblance to the Kamtschadale *jourts;* except that in winter they are covered with raw deer skins; and, in summer, with such as have been tanned. Their sledges are drawn only by deer; and, when those animals are wanted, the herdsman adopts a cry that is familiar to them, which they instantly obey by quitting the herd. The two nations of the Koriacs, and the Tschutski, make use of different dialects of the same language; but it has not any affinity to that of the Kamtschadale.

The country inhabited by the Tschutski, is bounded by the Anadir on the south, and extends to the Tschutskoi Noss. Like the wandering Koriacs, they are chiefly occupied in the management of the deer, with which their country abounds. They are a well-made, warlike race; and are formidable neighbours to the Koriacs of both nations, who are too often sensible of their depredations. The Russians have long endeavoured to bring them under their dominion, and have lost great numbers of men in their different attempts to accomplish this purpose, but they have not yet been able to effect it.

The board of admiralty having left a discretionary power with the commanding officer of the expedition, in case of not succeeding in the discovery of a passage into the Atlantic Ocean, to return to England by whatever route he should think best adapted for the farther improvement of geography; Captain Gore demanded of the principal officers their sentiments in writing, relative to the mode in which these orders might the most effectually be carried into execution. The result of their opinions, which he fortunately found to be unanimous, and entirely coinciding with his own, was, that the condition of the ships, the sails, cordage, &c. rendered it unsafe to attempt, at so advanced a season of the year, to navigate the sea between

boots, made of skins, with the hair innermost. They wear a fur cap, with two flaps, which are usually tied up close to the head, though they are calculated to fall round the shoulders in bad weather. The Russians, who reside in Kamtschatka, wear the European dress; and the uniform of the troops, is a dark green, turned up with red.

* Spanberg, speaking of these people, says, their bodies are covered all over with hair, that they wear a loose striped silk gown, and many of them have silver rings pendant from their ears. Their being hairy all over the body, is also mentioned in the journal of the ship Castricom.

Many of the inhabitants of those islands, that are under the dominion of Russia, are now converted to christianity; and perhaps the time is not far distant, when commerce will be advantageously carried on between Kamtschatka and this extensive chain of islands, The Koreki country consists of two distinct nations, called the *wandering* and *fixed* Koriacs. Part of the isthmus of Kamtschatka is inhabited by the former; as well as the coast of the eastern ocean, from thence to the Anadir. The nation of the wandering Koriacs, extends westward towards the river Kovyma, and along the north-east of the sea of Okotsk, to the river Penshina.

Asia and Japan, which would otherwise have opened to them a copious field for discovery; that it was therefore adviseable to steer to the eastward; and, in their way thither, to sail along the Kuriles, and particularly examine those islands that are situated nearest to the northern coast of Japan, which are represented to be of considerable extent, and independent of the Russians or Japanese. Should they have the good fortune to find any safe and commodious harbours in any of these islands, they supposed they might prove of considerable importance, as places of shelter for any future navigators, who might be employed in exploring these seas; or as the means of opening a commercial intercourse among the adjacent dominions of the two empires. Their next object was to survey the coast of the Japanese Islands; and afterwards to make the coast of China, as far to the north as they were able, and afterwards proceed along it to Macao.

This plan being adopted, Captain King received orders from Captain Gore, in case the two ships should separate, to repair instantly to Macao; and, at six in the evening of the 9th of October, having cleared the entrance of Awatska Bay, they steered to the south-east, the wind blowing from the north-west and by west. At midnight a perfect calm ensued, and continued till noon on the following day. Their depth of water being sixty and seventy fathoms, the people advantageously employed themselves in catching cod, which were exceedingly fine and plentiful. A breeze springing up from the west about three in the afternoon, they stood along the coast to the southward.

Between Awatska Bay, and Cape Gavareea, there appear to be several inlets, which might flatter the navigator with hopes of procuring shelter and good anchorage; but they were assured by the Russian pilots that there are none which will admit vessels, even of the smallest size.

On the 12th, at six in the afternoon, they discerned from the mast-head, Cape Lopatka, the most southern extreme of Kamtschatka. Almost at the same instant, the first of the Kurile islands, named Shoomska, made its appearance, in the direction of west half south. The passage between Shoomska and Cape Lopatka, is mentioned by the Russians as being one league in breadth, and extremely dangerous, on account of the rapidity of the tides, and the sunken rocks off the Cape. On the 13th at day-break, they descried the second of the Kurile Islands, named Paramousir by the Russians. In the course of the day, they observed several whales, and great numbers of gulls and albatrosses. Paramousir is the largest of the Kuriles that are subject to the dominion of the Russians*.

On the 26th, at break of day, they perceived high land towards the west, which proved to be Japan. At nine o'clock, they approached within about six miles of the land, which bore west three quarters south. Their depth of water was fifty-eight fathoms: but as the wind now failed them, they had proceeded, at noon, to no greater distance from the shore than three leagues. The most northerly land in view, was supposed to be the northern extreme of Japan. The neighbouring country is moderately elevated, and has a double range of mountains. It has plenty of wood, and exhibits a pleasing variety of hills and dales. Smoke was seen arising from several towns, or villages; and many houses were beheld in delightful cultivated situations.

During the continuance of the calm, that they might lose no time, they put their fishing-lines overboard, in ten fathoms water, but met with no success. At two in the afternoon, the

*On the 21st a land-bird, somewhat larger than a sparrow, though much resembling one in other respects, perched on the rigging, and was caught. During the afternoon another land-bird pitched on one of the ships, and was so much exhausted with fatigue, that it suffered itself to be taken, without attempting to escape, and expired a few hours afterwards. It was not larger than a wren, and had a tuft of yellow feathers on its head; the rest of its plumage was similar to that of a linnet.

These birds affording clear indications that the land was not at any very considerable distance; and the wind, after varying for a little time, settling at the north point in the evening, their hopes of falling in with the land increased, and they steered to the north-west; in which direction were situated, at the distance of fifty leagues, the southernmost islands, seen by Captain Spanberg, and reputed to be inhabited by hairy men.

On the 25th, at noon, flights of wild ducks were seen by our navigators; a pigeon lighted upon the rigging; and several birds, resembling linnets, flew about the ships with so much vigour, that they were supposed not to have been long upon the wing. They also saw a piece of bamboo or sugar-cane, and several small bundles of long grass. These being indications of the proximity of land, induced them to try for soundings; but they could not reach the bottom with ninety fathoms of line.

wind

wind blew fresh from the south. They kept on during the whole night, and till eight o'clock the following morning, when the wind shifting to the north, and becoming moderate, they made sail towards the land, which, however, they did not make till three in the afternoon. They continued towards the coast till eight in the evening, when their distance from it was about five leagues; and having shortened sail for the night, they steered in a southerly direction, sounding every four hours; but their depth of water was so great, that they did not find ground with a hundred and sixty fathoms of line.

They saw land again on the 28th, about six in the morning; at noon the northern extremity of it, bore north-west by north. At eight they were within the distance of two leagues from the shore. It unfortunately happened, that there was a haze over the land, which prevented them from distinguishing small objects on it. Not long after they observed a vessel, close in with the land, standing to the north along the shore; they also saw another in the offing, coming down on them before the wind. Excited by curiosity, every person on board came instantly upon deck to gaze at them. As the vessel to windward approached them, she hauled off to a greater distance from the shore; upon which, being apprehensive of alarming those on board of her by the appearance of a pursuit, they brought their ships to, and she sailed a-head of them, at the distance of four or five furlongs. They would have spoken to them, but Captain Gore perceiving, by their manœuvres, that they were much terrified, was unwilling to augment their apprehensions; and, supposing they should have many better opportunities of communicating with the Japanese, permitted them to retire without interruption.

Our navigators were not sufficiently near the vessel to remark any particulars respecting the men on board of her, who seemed to be six or seven in number: she was of the burden of about forty tons; and had only one mast, on which was hoisted a quadrangular sail, extended aloft by a yard, the braces of which worked forwards.

The wind blew fresh at noon, and was accompanied with much rain: by three in the afternoon it had considerably increased; the sea running as high as any of the people ever remembered to have seen it. About eight in the evening, the gale shifted to the west, without any diminution of its violence; and, by producing a sudden swell, in a direction contrary to that which had before prevailed, caused the ships to strain and labour extremely. The gale at length abating, and settling in the western quarter, they steered a southward course. On the 30th, at nine in the morning, they saw the land, at the distance of about sixteen leagues. It shewed itself in detached parts; but they were too far distant to ascertain, whether they were small islands or parts of Japan *.

Between five and six in the evening of the 1st of November, our navigators saw several Japanese vessels, close in with the land, some standing along the shore, and others appeared to be occupied in fishing. They now beheld to the westward an exceeding high mountain, with a round summit rising far inland. No high ground appears in the neighbourhood of it, the coast being of a moderate elevation. In the morning of the 3d, our navigators found themselves, by their reckoning, upwards of fifty leagues from the coast; which circumstance, added to the consideration of the very uncommon effect of currents they had already experienced, the advanced period of the year, and the variable and uncertain state of the weather, induced Captain Gore to form the resolution of leaving Japan, and prosecuting the voyage to China †.

Our navigators proceeded to the south-eastward during the 4th and 5th of November, with unsettled

* On the 31st, at two in the morning, the wind blew in violent squalls, accompanied with lightning and rain. In the course of the day, several little birds of a brown plumage, resembling linnets, flew about the ships. On the approach of evening, the wind coming to the north-west point, they directed their course, with the birds, to the west-south-west, in order to regain the coast.

† That the reader may not suppose Captain Gore relinquished this object too hastily, let it be observed, in addition to the facts before stated, that *Kœmpfer* § assures us, the coast of Japan is the most dangerous in all the world, that it would have been extremely hazardous in case of distress, to have run into any of the harbours of that country; where, if authentic writers are to be believed, the natives have so great an aversion to a communication with strangers, that upon the slightest occasions, they are frequently prompted to the most flagrant acts of barbarity. Let it also be considered, that our navigators' vessels were in a leaky condition, that the rigging was so rotten as to require perpetual reparation; and that the sails were so entirely worn out, that they were incapable of withstanding the vehemence of a gale of wind.

§ Kœmpfer's Hist of Japan, Vol. I. p. 92, &c.

unsettled weather, attended with much lightning and rain. On each of those days they passed great quantities of pumice-stone, several pieces of which were taken up by some of the seamen, and weighed progressively from an ounce to about three pounds. It was supposed that these stones had been thrown into the water, by eruptions at different periods; many of them being bare, and the others covered with barnacles. At this time a number of porpoises were frisking round the ships, and several land-birds were seen*.

On the 14th, Mr. Trevenen, a young gentleman who accompanied Captain King in the Discovery, saw land in the direction of south-west, which had the appearance of a peaked mountain. At noon it was discovered to be an island; and at two in the afternoon, another was seen to the west north-westward. The second island, when beheld at a distance, appeared like two; and this being manifestly of greater extent than that to the southward, they directed their course towards it. At four, it bore north-west-by-west; but, not having sufficient day light to examine its course, they stood, during the night, upon their tacks.

The next morning, at six, they made sail for the southern point of the larger island, and about the same time, discovered another high island. About nine, they were abreast of the middle island, and within a mile of it; but Captain Gore, perceiving that a boat could not land, without running some risque from the surf that broke against the shore, continued his course to westward. The length of this island, in the direction of south-south-west, and north-north-east is about five miles. Its south point is an elevated barren hill, flattish on the summit, and when seen from the west-south-west, exhibits an evident volcanic crater. The sand, earth, or rock, of which its surface was composed, displayed different colours; and a considerable part of it was believed to be sulphur, not only from its appearance, but from the strong sulphureous smell perceived by our navigators on their approach to the point. The Resolution having passed nearer the land, several of the officers on board that ship, thought they perceived streams issuing from the top of the hill. Hence Captain Gore bestowed on this discovery the appellation of Sulphur Island.

Captain Gore now directed his course to the west-south-west, for the Bashee Isles, expecting to procure from them such a supply of refreshments as might render it less necessary for them to continue long at Macao.

On the 27th at twelve o'clock, the weather became hazy: at six in the afternoon, having got to the west of the Bashee Isles, according to Admiral Byron's account, Captain Gore hauled his wind to the north-westward, under an easy sail, the wind blowing vehemently, and every circumstance seemed to indicate a tempestuous night. On the 28th, at four in the morning, the Resolution, which was then half a mile a-head of the Discovery, wore, and the crew of the latter, at the same time, perceived breakers close under their lee. At day-light they saw the island of Prata; and, between the hours of six and seven, they stood towards the shoal, but finding themselves unable to weather it, they bore away, and ran to the leeward. The extent of the Prata shoal is considerable; it being six leagues from north to south, and extends upwards of three leagues to the east of the island. They carried a press of sail during the remainder of the day, and kept the wind, which now blew from the north-east by north, in order to secure their passage to Macao.

In the morning of the 29th, they passed some Chinese fishing boats, the crews of which paid very little attention to them. As they were now nearly in the latitude of the Lema Islands, they made sail to the west by north, and after proceeding upwards of twenty miles, descried one of them nine or ten leagues to the west. The next morning they ran among the Lema Isles, which like the other islands on this coast, are destitute of wood, and uncultivated. About nine a Chinese boat, which had before been with the Resolution, came along-side the Discovery, with offers of a pilot, which Captain King declined, it being incumbent on him to follow his consort. Soon afterwards they passed the westernmost of the Lema rocks; but instead of hauling up to the north of the Grand Ladrone

* On the 9th they had a great swell from the east-south-east, and in the course of the day they observed another small land-bird, a tropic bird, some flying fish, and porpoises. They continued to pass different accumulations of pumice-stone; the amazing quantities of which, floating in the sea between Japan and the Bashee Isles, give rise to a supposition, that in this quarter of the Pacific Ocean, some great volcanic convulsion must have happened.

Island, as Lord Anson did in the Centurion, they sailed to leeward.

It was, however, a pleasing circumstance to see the Resolution soon after fire a gun, and display her colours, as a signal for a pilot. On repeating the signal, an excellent race was occasioned between four Chinese boats; and Captain Gore engaged with the man who arrived first, to conduct the ship to the Typa for thirty dollars; informing Captain King, by a messenger, that, as he could easily follow him with the Discovery, he might avoid that expence.

A second pilot, however, getting on board the Resolution, insisted on guiding the ship; and immediately laying hold of the wheel, began to order the sails to be trimmed. On this, a violent altercation arose, which was at length compromised, by their agreeing to divide the money between them.

In pursuance of the instructions given to Captain Cook by the Lords of the Admiralty, it now became necessary to demand of the officers and men, their journals, and whatever papers they might have in their possession, relative to the history of their voyage. Some degree of delicacy as well as firmness, was required in the execution of these orders. Captain King, therefore, assembled the Discovery's people on deck, and related to them the orders that had been received, and the reasons which, in his opinion, ought to induce them to yield a ready obedience. But he, at the same time, informed them, that whatever papers they wished not to have sent to the Lords of the Admiralty, should be sealed up in their own presence, and kept in his custody, till the intentions of their lordships, respecting the publication of the history of the voyage, were accomplished; after which they should be faithfully restored to them.

Captain King had the satisfaction to find, that his proposals met with the approbation, and the ready compliance of all the officers and men. Every scrap of paper, containing any of the transactions of the voyage, was instantly given up. Captain Gore made the same proposals to the people of the Resolution, who instantly complied with them.

SECTION XLV.

Ignorance of the Chinese Pilot—The Ships approach Macao—The Isle of Potoe—A Chinese Comprador comes on board—Captain King dispatched to Macao—Alarms occasioned at Canton—Anchor in the Typa—Captain King, &c. proceed to Canton—A Chinese Boat described—Suspicious Character of the Chinese—Observations respecting the City of Canton—Description of—Captain King visits a Chinese of Distinction—His Return to Macao—Price of Provisions at Canton—The Ships rendered more defensible—Orders of the French Court respecting Captain Cook—Quit the Typa—Soundings on the Macclesfield Bank—Steer for Pulor Condore—Cast Anchor in a Harbour of that Island—Captains Gore and King land there—Description of the principal Town—Habitation of the Chief—A Mandaren visits the Ships—Pulo Condore described—Animal and vegetable Produce—Persons and Disposition of the Inhabitants.

THEY stood on their tacks, during the afternoon, between the Grand Ladrone and the island of Potoe, having passed to the east of the latter. The tide beginning to ebb at nine o'clock, they cast anchor in six fathoms water; the town of Macao being at the distance of about ten miles, and the Isle of Potoe six or seven miles distant. Potoe is situated about two leagues to the north-north-west of that island: it is rocky, and of small extent.

On the 2d of December, in the morning, one of the Chinese contractors, under the denomination of *Compradors*, came on board the Resolution, and sold as much beef to Captain Gore as weighed two hundred and eighty pounds, besides a considerable quantity of eggs, oranges, and greens. The Discovery was allotted a proportionable share of these articles; and an agreement was entered into with the *Comprador* to provide them a daily supply, stipulating, however, that he must be paid before hand. As the pilot now pretended that he could conduct the ships no further,

further, Captain Gore was under the necessity of discharging him; and they were left to their own guidance and direction.

In the evening, Captain Gore dispatched Captain King to Macao, to pay a visit to the Portuguese governor, and to request his advice and assistance in supplying our Europeans with provisions; which he supposed might be procured upon more reasonable terms, than the *Comprador* would undertake to furnish them. On Mr. King's arrival at the citadel, the fort-major informed him that the governor was indisposed, and was therefore unwilling to receive any visitors; but that he might rely on meeting with every assistance in their power. On Captain King's acquainting the major with his wishes, of proceeding immediately to Canton, and making application to the servants of the British East India Company, who then resided there, he told him, that he could not venture to furnish him with a boat till permission had been obtained from the Hoppo, or office of the customs; and that it was necessary to apply, for this purpose, to the Chinese government at Canton.

Captain King's mortification at this unexpected delay, could only be equalled by the extreme impatience, with which they had so long waited for an opportunity of receiving intelligence from Europe. It frequently happens, that, in the ardent pursuit of an object, we overlook the most obvious means of attaining it. This was precisely Mr. King's case at present; for he was returning, in a state of deep dejection to the ship, when the Portuguese officer, who accompanied him, asked him whether he did not mean to visit the English gentlemen at Macao. It is unnecessary to add, with what transport Mr. King received the information conveyed by this question; or the anxious hopes and fears by which his mind was agitated, as he and his companions proceeded to the house of one of their countrymen.

The reception they met with, though far from being deficient in civility or kindness, in their agitated state of mind, appeared to them rather cold and formal. In their enquiries, as far as they regarded objects of private concern, they indeed obtained but little satisfaction; but the events of a public nature, which happened since the period of their departure from England, now for the first time burst all at once upon them, overwhelmed their feelings, and almost deprived them, for some time, of the power of reflection.

The intelligence they had received concerning the state of the affairs of Europe, rendered them the more anxious to accelerate their departure; Captain King therefore renewed his endeavours to procure a passage to Canton, but could not, at that time, meet with success. He then dispatched a letter to the committee of the English supercargoes, to inform them of the reason of their putting into the Tygris, and to request their assistance in procuring them a passport, as well as in forwarding the stores they had occasion for, with all possible expedition.

The next morning, Captain King was attended on board by their countryman; who, acquainting them with the situation of the Typa, they weighed anchor about seven o'clock, and steered towards it; but the wind failing, they again came to, at eight, in three fathoms and a half, at the distance of three miles. The Portuguese fort was here saluted by the Resolution with eleven guns, a compliment which was returned by an equal number. Early on the 4th, they weighed again, and stood into the Typa, where they moored with the stream anchor and cable to the west*.

On the 9th Captain Gore received an answer from the committee of the English supercargoes at Canton, in which they promised to exert their best endeavours to procure the supplies of which they were in want, with all possible expedition; and assured him that a passport should be sent for one of their officers. The next day, an English merchant from one of the English East Indian settlements, applied to Captain Gore for the assistance of a few of his people, to navigate to Canton a vessel which he had purchased at Macao. Captain Gore, conceiving this to be a good opportunity for Mr. King to repair to that city, gave orders that he should take with him

* The *Comprador* with whom they at first engaged, having taken the liberty of going off with a small sum of money, which he had received in advance for the purchase of provisions, our navigators entered into a contract with another who supplied both the vessels during the whole time of their continuance here. This was managed privately, and in the night, on pretence of its being inimical to the established rules of the port; but our navigators suspected that this caution was practised, either to enhance the price of the articles furnished by him, or of securing to himself the emoluments of his contract, without suffering the Mandarines to participate with him.

his

his second lieutenant, the lieutenant of marines, and ten seamen.

Though this was not precisely the mode in which Captain King could have wished to visit Canton, yet as it was uncertain when the passport would arrive, and his presence might be serviceable in expediting the necessary supplies, he did not hesitate to go on board the vessel; having left orders with Mr. Williamson to prepare the Discovery for sea with all possible dispatch; and to make such additions and improvements in her upper works as were required. Mr. King, and his attendants, quitted the harbour of Macao on the 11th; and, sailing round the eastern extreme of the island, steered a northerly course, leaving on their right hand as they passed along, Lanto Lintin, and several smaller isles. All these islands, as well as that of Macao, are destitute of wood; the land is barren, and uninhabited, except occasionally by fishermen*.

Monsieur Somerat asserts, that the river, higher up, is too shallow to admit vessels that are heavily laden, if the policy of the Chinese had permitted Europeans to navigate them up to Canton. With respect to this circumstance, however, it is difficult to decide, as no stranger, it is presumed, has been able to inform himself with certainty of the truth. The little islands, situated opposite the town, are appropriated to the several factories, who have built warehouses for the reception of the articles of merchandize, which are brought down from Canton.

At Wampu, Captain King embarked in a *sampane*, or Chinese boat, and proceeded to Canton, which is eight miles higher up the river. These *sampanes* are the neatest, and most commodious for passengers that Mr. King ever saw. They are of different sizes, broad upon the beam, almost flat at the bottom, and narrow at the head and stern; which are elevated and embellished with ornaments. A small waxen idol was placed in the stern, in a case of gilt leather. Captain King reached Canton in the evening, and landed at the English factory; where, though his arrival was wholly unexpected, he was received with every mark of attention and civility. Messrs. Fitzhugh, Bevan, and Rapier, were the gentlemen that then composed the select committee, the former of whom acted as president. They immediately gave Mr. King an inventory of those stores, with which the East India ships were able to supply them. He did not entertain the smallest doubt that the commanders were willing to assist them with what they could spare, but it was a great disappointment to him to observe in their list hardly any canvas or cordage; of both which articles they were principally in want. It was a consolation to him, however, to find that the stores were ready to be shipped, and that the provisions they required might be had at a day's notice†.

After Captain King had impatiently waited several days for the issue of his negociation, without finding that the affair was in the least advancing towards a conclusion, he made application to the commander of an English country ship, who intended to sail on the 25th, and who offered to take on board the men and stores. While he was considering what steps he should take, the commander of another country ship brought him a letter from Captain Gore, importing that he had engaged this commander to bring their party from Canton, and to deliver their supplies, at his own risk, in the Typa.

The difficulties being thus removed, Mr. King had leisure to attend to the purchase of their stores and provisions, which he completed on the 26th; and on the following day the whole was delivered on board.

Captain Gore being of opinion that Canton would

* As they approached the Bocca Tygris, which is about forty miles from Macao, the coast of China appeared to the eastward, in white cliffs. The two forts, commanding the mouth of the river, were, at this time, in the same state they were in when Lord Anson was there. That on the left, is a fine old castle, environed by a grove of trees, and has a pleasing and romantic aspect. Being retarded by contrary winds, they did not arrive at Wampu, though only nine leagues from the Bocca Tygris, till the 18th. Wampu is a small town, off which the ships who trade with the Chinese are stationed, in order to receive their respective ladings.

† Wishing his stay here to be as short as possible, he requested the gentleman to procure boats for him the next day; it being his intention to quit Canton, the subsequent one; but he was soon informed that such business was not to be transacted so expeditiously in the Chinese dominions, where many forms were to be complied with; and that it was not customary to grant such favours without mature deliberation. He was also reminded that patience was a virtue essentially necessary in China; and that they hoped they should have the pleasure of rendering the factory agreeable to him, for some days longer than he seemed inclined to favour them with his company.

would be the most advantageous market for furs, had requested Mr. King to take with him about twenty sea-otters' skins, which had chiefly been the property of their deceased commander, and to dispose of them on the most advantageous terms: a commission which furnished him with an opportunity of becoming acquainted with the genius of the Chinese for trade. Mr. King, having mentioned these particulars to some of the English supercargoes, requested them to recommend him to some Chinese merchant of credit, who would offer him a fair price for them. They accordingly directed him to a member of the *Hong*, an appellation appropriated to a society of the principal merchants in the city, who, being fully apprised of the nature of the business, assured him that he might rely on his integrity; and that, in such an affair, he should consider himself as a mere agent, without aiming at any profit for himself.

The skins being laid before the merchant, he examined them with particular attention, and afterwards informed Captain King, that he could not venture to give more than three hundred dollars for them. As the captain knew, from the price their skins produced at Kamptschatka, that he had not offered half their value, he demanded a thousand dollars: the Chinese then advanced to five hundred; and, at the same time, mentioned a private present of porcelain and tea, amounting to one hundred more: he next proposed the same sum in money; and afterwards rose to seven hundred dollars. The captain then lowered his demands to nine hundred; and the parties, weary of the contest, agreed to divide the difference, and the sum of eight hundred dollars was finally determined on.

The accounts of Canton, and other parts of China, by Le Comte and Du Halde, have doubtless been perused by many of our readers. These authors have, however, been accused of exaggeration; for which reason the subsequent remarks, collected by Captain King, may not improperly be introduced. The circumference of Canton, including the old and new town, as well as the suburbs, is about ten miles. Le Comte has estimated the number of its inhabitants at one million, five hundred thousand; Du Halde, at a million; and M. Sonnerat has ascertained that their number does not exceed seventy-five thousand*. But as this gentleman seems as much inclined to depreciate whatever relates to the Chinese nation, as the Jesuits have been to magnify, his opinion does not claim an implicit reliance on†.

The military force of the province Quangtong, of which Canton is the capital, consists of fifty thousand men. Twenty thousand military men are said to be stationed in the city and its environs; and Captain King was assured that, on a commotion happening at Canton, thirty thousand troops were drawn together in the course of a few hours.

The streets of this city are long, and many of them narrow and irregular. They are substan-

* "J' ai verifié moi-meme, avec plusieurs Chinois, la population de Canton," &c. "I have estimated the population of Canton, in which I was assisted by several intelligent Chinese, &c." Voyage aux Indes, &c. par M. Sonnerat, ii. p. 14.

† But the following particulars may probably enable our readers to form a judgment on this point with a tolerable degree of accuracy. It is well known that Chinese habitations, in general, occupy more space than is usually allotted to houses in Europe; but the proportion of four or five to one, suggested by M. Sonnerat, must be acknowledged to exceed the truth. It may also be observed, that many of the houses, in the suburbs of Canton, are only engaged for the purposes of commerce, by merchants and opulent tradesmen, whose families reside principally within the walls. It should also be considered, that a Chinese family, upon an average, is more numerous than that of an European; a Mandarin, in proportion to his rank and property, having from five to twenty wives: a merchant has from three to five. A person of the latter class at Canton, had, indeed, twenty-five wives, and thirty-six children; but that was mentioned to Captain King as a very extraordinary circumstance. An opulent tradesman has generally two wives; but people of an inferior station have seldom more than one: they, however, have double the number of servants, employed by Europeans of the same rank. If we suppose a Chinese family to be larger by one third, and an European house less by two-thirds, than each other, a Chinese city will contain only half the number of people, which usually occupy a town of the same extent in Europe. On these suppositions, the city and suburbs of Canton may probably contain about one hundred and fifty thousand inhabitants.

Captain King heard various opinions respecting the number of inhabited *sampanes*, or Chinese boats; but none of the inhabitants supposed them to be under forty thousand. They are moored in rows, close to each other, a narrow passage being left, at intervals, that boats may conveniently pass and repass on the river. The Tygris, at Canton, being wider than the Thames at London, and the river, for the space of a mile, being covered in this manner, it should seem that this estimate of their number is not exaggerated: and should that be admitted, the inhabitants in the *sampanes* alone, each of which containing a family, must amount to almost three times the number which M. Sonnerat admits to be contained in the whole city.

tially paved with large stones, and kept generally clean. Their houses are built of brick, and are but one story high. Many of them, have two or three courts backwards, in which ware-houses are erected. Some of the very inferior class, have their habitations composed of wood.

The houses of the European factors are built on a fine quay, and have a regular facade of two stories towards the river. Adjoining to these, a number of houses belonging to the Chinese, are let out to the commanders of vessels, or to merchants who want only an occasional residence.

As no European is suffered to take his wife with him to Canton, the English supercargoes live together, at a common table, which is supported by the company; and each of them has an apartment appropriated to himself, consisting of three or four rooms. Their residence here seldom exceeds eight months in the year, during which time they are generally occupied in the service of the company, and therefore they the more readily submit to the restrictions under which they live. They seldom visit within the walls, except on public occasions.

When the last ship departs from Wampu, they are obliged to retire to Macao; but they leave behind them what money they possess in *specie*, which Mr. King was assured sometimes amounts to a hundred thousand pounds sterling; and for which they have no other security than the seals of the viceroy, the Mandarines, and the merchants of the Hong.

During his residence at Canton, Captain King was accompanied by one of the English gentlemen, on a visit to a person of the first consequence in the place. They were received in a long gallery, at the upper end of which a table was placed, with a large chair behind it, and a row of chairs extending from it, on each side down the room. Being previously informed, that the point of politeness consisted in remaining unseated as long as possible, the captain readily submitted to this piece of *etiquette;* after which they were entertained with tea, and some fresh and preserved fruits. Their host was very corpulent, and had a dull unmeaning countenance; but displayed great gravity in his deportment.

He had acquired a little broken English and Portuguese; and when his visitors had taken their refreshment, he conducted them about his house and garden. A few observations having been made respecting the taste, manifested in the several improvements on the premises, the parties reciprocally took their leave.

Captain King, wishing to avoid the trouble and delay that might attend an application for passports, at first intended to go along with the supplies to Macao; but receiving an invitation from two English gentlemen, who had procured passports for four, he and Mr. Phillips accepted their offer of places in a Chinese boat, and entrusted Mr. Lannyon with the superintendance of the men and stores, which were to sail the following day.

In the evening of the 26th, Captain King took his leave of the supercargoes, having thanked them for their many obliging favours; among which he did not forget to mention a present of a large quantity of tea, for the use of the companies of both ships, and a large collection of English periodical publications. The latter was found a very valuable acquisition, as they not only afforded them much amusement, but some material information respecting what had happened in their native country during their absence.

While the party were absent from Macao, a brisk trade was carried on with the Chinese for their sea-otter skins, the value of which had augmented daily. One of their sailors procured eight hundred dollars for his stock; and a few of the best skins, which were clean, and had been carefully preserved, produced one hundred and twenty dollars each. The total amount of the value, in goods, and cash, that was received for the furs in both ships, was at least two thousand pounds sterling: and it was generally supposed, that at least two thirds of the quantity, they had originally got from the Americans, were spoiled and worn out, or had been bestowed as presents in Kamptschatka*.

On the 30th Mr. Lannyon arrived with the

So great was the rage of the seamen for returning to Cook's River, and there procure another cargo of skins, by which they might be enabled to make their fortunes at once, that a mutiny was almost apprehended.

A very ludicrous alteration took place in the dress of the crew, in consequence of the barter which the Chinese had carried on with them for their sea-otter skins. On their arrival in the Typa, not only the sailors, but also the young officers, were in a very ragged condition; for as the voyage had already exceeded, by almost a year, the time it was at first supposed they should remain at sea, nearly the whole of their original stock of European clothes had been long worn out, or repaired and patched up with skins, or other articles they had met with in the course of their expedition. But thesese half-consumed articles of apparel were now mixed and eked out with the gaudiest silks and cottons which China could produce.

stores and provisions, which were soon proportionally stowed on board the two vessels. While they remained in the Typa, Captain King was shewn, in the garden of an English gentleman at Macao, the rock, under which Camoens, the celebrated Portuguese poet, was accustomed to sit and compose his Luciad. It is a lofty arch, consisting of one solid stone, forming the entrance of a grotto, dug out of the elevated ground behind it. Large spreading trees overshadow the rock, which commands a beautiful and extensive prospect of the sea, and the scattered islands about it.

On the 11th of January, 1780, two sailors belonging to the Resolution, absented themselves, with a six oared cutter; and, though diligently sought after both that and the succeeding day, no satisfactory intelligence could be procured. It was apprehended, that these seamen had been seduced by the expectation of acquiring a fortune, if they should return to the fur islands.

On the 12th of January, 1780, at noon, they unmoored and scaled the guns, which, on board the Discovery, then amounted to ten; they could therefore, by means of four addition ports, fight seven on a side, if it should be found necessary. In the Resolution also, the number of guns had been augmented from twelve to sixteen: and, in each of the vessels, a strong barricade had been carried round the upper works, and all other necessary precautions taken to give an inconsiderable force, a respectable appearance.

They thought it their duty to furnish themselves with these means of defence, though they were induced to believe, that the generosity of their enemies had rendered such a measure unnecessary. Captain King had been informed at Canton, that, in the public prints, lately arrived from Great Britain, mention was made of instructions having been found on board all the French ships of war, that had been captured in Europe, that if they should happen to fall in with the ships under the command of Captain Cook, they should suffer them to proceed unmolested on their voyage. The American congress, it was also said, had given similar orders to the vessels employed in their service. This intelligence being further confirmed by the private letters of several of the supercargoes, Captain Gore thought it incumbent on him, for the liberal exceptions their enemies had made in their favour, to refrain from availing himself of any opportunities of capture, which they might afford, and to preserve, throughout the voyage, the strictest neutrality.

Having got under sail at two in the afternoon on the 13th, the Resolution saluted the fort of Macao with eleven guns; and the salutation was returned with an equal number. The wind failing at five, the ship missed stays, and drove into shallow water; but she was hauled off without sustaining any damage. The calm continuing, they were under the necessity of warping out into the entrance of the Typa, which they gained by eight in the evening, and remained there till nine the next morning.

They now steered south half east, with a fresh breeze from the east-north-east point, without any remarkable occurrence, till the 15th at noon; when the wind shifting to the north, they directed their course rather more to the eastward, with a view of striking soundings over the Macclesfield Bank; which was accomplished on the 16th, at eight in the evening, and the depth of water wat found fifty fathoms.

They had strong gales from the east by north, on the 17th, with a rough turbulent sea. On the succeeding day, the sea continued to run high, and the wind to blow with vehemence. They began to steer for Pulo Sepata, which they saw on the 19th about four in the afternoon. This island is denominated *Sepata*, from its resembling a shoe in figure: it is small, elevated, and unfertile. Having passed the island, they stood to the westward; and the violence of the wind abating in the morning of the 20th, they let out the reefs, and directed their course to the west by south for Pulo Condore.

At four in the afternoon, the extremes of Pulo Condore bore south-east, and south-west-by-west. They stood towards a harbour at the south-west end of Condore, and at six anchored in six fathoms water, They had no sooner let go their anchors, that Captain Gore fired a gun, to give the inhabitants notice of their arrival, and to lure them towards the shore; but it proved ineffectual. Early in the morning of the 21st, parties were dispatched to cut wood, Captain Gore's principal reason for touching at this island being to procure a supply of that article for the ships.

None of the islanders had yet made their appearance, though a second gun had been fired; the captain, therefore, thought it was advisable to go on shore in search of them, that they might traffic with them for such provisions as the place could supply them with. On this occasion he desired Captain King to accompany him on the morning

morning of the 22d, but the wind blowing violently from the eastward, they did not think it prudent to coast in their boats to the town, but rowed round the northern point of the harbour.

After proceeding along the shore for about two miles, they perceived a road leading to a wood, and they immediately landed. Here the Captains Gore and King, attended by a midshipman, and four armed sailors, pursued the path which appeared to point directly across the island. They passed through a thick wood, up a steep hill, to the distance of a mile, when after descending through a wood of equal extent, on the other side, they arrived in an open level country, interspersed with groves of cabbage, palm, and cocoa-trees, and cultivated spots of rice and tobacco*.

He ordered a person to conduct the party to the town, as soon as an obstacle should be removed, of which they were not aware. On their first leaving the wood, a herd of buffaloes, amounting to about twenty, ran towards them, tossing up their heads, snuffing the air, and making a clamorous roaring. They had followed our Europeans to the huts, and were now drawn up in a body at an inconsiderable distance. The old man had signified to Captain King, that it would be extremely dangerous for the party to move, till the buffaloes were all driven into the woods; but so enraged were these animals grown at the sight of them, that this was not effected without much difficulty. The men, indeed, were unable to effect it; but, to the astonishment of Captain King and his companions, a few little boys speedily drove the animals out of sight. It was afterwards observed, that in driving and securing the buffaloes, which is done by putting a rope through a hole made in their nostrils, little boys were always employed, who could stroke and handle them with impunity, when the men could not venture to approach them.

The buffaloes being driven off, the party were conducted to the town which was about a mile distant; the road conducting to it passing through a deep whitish sand. It stands on the sea-side, at the bottom of a retired bay, which affords shelter during the prevalence of the south-west monsoon.

The town consists of between twenty and thirty houses, built contiguous to each other: besides which there are six or seven others dispersed about the beach. The roof, the two ends, and that side which faces the country, are neatly constructed with reeds. The opposite side, which fronts the sea, is entirely open; but the inhabitants, with a kind of screen made of bamboo, can exclude or admit as much of the air and sun as they think proper.

The islander who acted in the character of a guide to the party, conducted them to the largest house in the town, belonging to the chief, or captain. At each extremity of this mansion was a room, separated by reeds from the middle space, which was unenclosed on either side, and furnished with partition screens like the others. There was also a pent-house, projecting four or five feet from the roof, and running the whole length on each side. Some Chinese paintings, exhibiting both sexes in ludicrous attitudes, were hung at each end of the middle room. In this apartment, the people were requested to seat themselves on mats, and *betel* was presented to them.

By means of money, and pointing at different objects in sight, Captain King met with no difficulty in making one of the company, who seemed to be the principal person among them, comprehend the principal design of his visit; and as readily understood from him, that the chief, or captain, was then absent, but would speedily return; and that no purchases of any kind could be made without his concurrence and approbation.

The party embraced this opportunity of walking about the town; and did not forget to search, though ineffectually, for the remains of a fort,

* Here he perceived two huts, at the extremity of the wood, to which they directed their march. Before they arrived at these humble habitations, they were observed by two men, who instantly ran away from them; though all the peaceable and supplicating gestures were industriously exercised to conciliate their friendship. On reaching the huts Captain King, fearing the sight of so many armed men might terrify the natives, commanded his attendants to stay without, whilst he entered and reconnoitred alone. In one of the huts he found an elderly man, who was much terrified, and preparing to retire with the most valuable of his effects. A few signs, however, and particularly that most significant one of holding out a handful of dollars, and then pointing to a herd of buffaloes, and the fowls that were running in crowds about the huts, left him under no doubts respecting the real objects of the captain's visit. He pointed immediately to the spot where the town was situated, and made it clear to Mr. King's comprehension, that by repairing thither, he might be abundantly supplied with what he wanted.

which

which some Englishmen had built in 1702*, near the spot they were now upon.

On the 23d, in the morning, the launches of both the ships were dispatched to the town, to bring away the buffaloes they had before given orders for the purchase of; but they were obliged to wait till it was high water, not being able, at any other time, to make their way through the opening at the head of the harbour. On their arrival at the town, the surf broke against the beach with such fury, that it was not without great difficulty, that each of the launches brought a buffalo on board in the evening. The officers, employed in this service, declared it as their opinion, that not only from the violence of the surf, but also from the ferocity of the buffaloes, it would be highly imprudent to attempt bringing off any more in the same manner.

Having procured eight of these animals, our navigators, were at a loss to convey them properly on board. They could not venture to kill more than would be sufficient for one day's consumption, as, in such a climate, the meat would not keep till the following day. After consulting with the Mandarin on this point, it was determined, that the remainder of the buffaloes should be driven through the wood, and down to the bay where the two captains had landed the preceding day.

This plan was carried into execution; but the obstinacy and amazing strength of the animals, rendered it a difficult and tardy operation. Their mode of conducting them was, by putting ropes through their nostrils, and round their horns; but when they once became enraged at the sight of the people, their fury was beyond conception; tearing asunder the cartilage of the nostril, through which the ropes passed, and setting themselves at liberty; at other times, they broke or overthrew the trees, to which they were fastened as a supposed security for their obedience. All the endeavours of the men, on such occasions, to render these animals tractable, would have been ineffectual, had not some little boys been suffered to approach them; by whose puerile frolics and endearments, they were speedily appeased: and, when they were afterwards brought down to the beach, their frisky juvenile assistance, in playfully twisting the ropes about the legs of the creatures, occasioned their falling, and being the more easily conveyed into the boats†.

Whilst our Europeans were occupied in this business, two wells of excellent water were discovered; in consequence of which a party from each of the ships had been employed in providing a competent supply of it. A quantity of wood was also procured, that they might not be required to continue long in the Straits of Sunda, for recruiting their stock of these necessary articles.

Pulo Condore is elevated and mountainous, encompassed by several smaller islands. Its name implies the Island of Calabashes, being derived from two Malay words; *Pulo* signifying an island, and *Condore* a calabash, plenty of which fruit is here produced. It is of a semicircular form, extending about eight miles from the most southerly point. Its breadth, in any part, does not exceed two miles.

With respect to animal and vegetable productions, Pulo Condore is much improved since the time it was visited by Dampier. Neither that navigator, nor the East-India Directory, mention any other quadrupeds than hogs, lizards, and guanoes: and the latter asserts, on the authority of Monsieur Didier, a French engineer, who surveyed this island in 1720, that none of the fruits and esculent plants, which are so frequently met with in other parts of India, are found here, except chibbols, water-melons, small gourds, little black beans, and a few potatoes. At present, besides the buffaloes, of which animals there are several large herds, our

* The English settled on this island in 1702, bringing with them a party of Macassar soldiers, who were hired to contribute their assistance in erecting a fort; but the president of the factory not fulfilling his engagement with them, they were determined upon revenge; and, one night, took an opportunity of murdering all the English in the fort. Those who were without the fort, hearing a noise, were greatly alarmed, and running to their boats, narrowly escaped with their lives to the Johore dominions, where they met with very humane treatment. Some of these afterwards repaired to Benjar-Masseau, in the island of Borneo, for the purpose of forming a settlement.

† A singularity in these Buffaloes, almost as remarkable as their gentleness and affection to children, was that, before they had been a whole day on board, they became as tame as possible. Captain King kept two of them, a male and female, for a considerable time, which were much cherished and esteemed by the seamen. Thinking a breed of animals of such magnitude and strength would have been an acquisition of some value, he intended to have brought them with him to England; but an incurable hurt being received by one of them at sea, he changed his resolution.

Europeans purchased here some very fine hogs, of the Chinese breed*.

Among the vegetable improvements of Pulo Condore, many fields of rice were observed. Oranges, pomegranates, cocoa-nuts, plantains, and several sorts of pompions, were also found here; though not in any great abundance.

Though the woods are populous with the feathered game, their sportsmen had little success in pursuing them. One of the gentlemen, however, shot a wild hen; and all the sporting party declared, that they heard the crowing of the cocks on every side; the sound of which was similar to that of the common cock, but somewhat shriller. Several of them were also seen upon the wing. The hen, which had been shot, was of a speckled appearance, and appeared like a full grown English pullet. Monsieur Sonnerat, in a long dissertation, endeavours to prove that he was the first person who ascertained the country to which this useful bird belongs, and denies that Dampier ever met with it at this island.

The inhabitants of Pulo Condore, who are fugitives from Cochin China and Cambodia, are not numerous. They are swarthy in their complexion, short of stature, and of a weak unhealthy aspect.

SECTION XLVI.

Departure from Pulo Condore—Description of the Country on the Straits of Banca—The Sisters described—Enter the Straits of Sunda—Anchor at Cracatoa—Description of that Island—Proceed to Princes Island—Supplies obtained there—Effects of the Climate of Java—Steer for the Cape of Good Hope—Anchor in Simon's Bay—Description of False Bay—The two Captains visit the Governors of the Cape—Anchor at Stromness.

OUR navigators weighed anchor on the 28th, and, having cleared the harbour, stood to the south-south-west for Pulo Timoan. On the 31st, at one in the afternoon they got sight of it. On the 2d. of February, at eight in the morning, they tried for soundings, continuing the same practice every hour, till they had passed the straits of Sunda, and struck ground with twenty-three fathoms of line. On the 3d, at day-break, they saw Monopin Hill, in the island of Banca. About nine in the evening, a boat came off from the Banca shore. The persons in her were hailed, in the Malayan tongue, to come on board; but no answer was returned†.

At eight in the evening on the 10th, the wind blew fresh from the west, accompanied with violent thunder, lightning, and rain. At three, the next morning, Captain King weighed anchor, and steered for Prince's Island. Light airs and calms prevailed till six o'clock the following morning; at which time the Discovery weighed and made sail. The wind being fair, she came to an anchor at twelve o'clock, off the south-eastern extremity of Prince's Island, in twenty-six fathoms water, at the distance of half a mile from the nearest part of the shore.

The Discovery had no sooner anchored, than Lieutenant Lannyon, who had been at this island in 1770, with Captain Cook, was sent with the master to look for the watering-place. The brook from which the Endeavour had been furnished, was now found extremely salt. They were at length supplied with water, somewhat brackish, but far superior to the other: the Discovery's people began watering here early on the 13th, and finished that service the same day.

* Monkeys and squirrels are common in the woods; but they are so extremely shy, that it was difficult to shoot them. One species of the squirrel, observed here, was of a beautiful glossy black; another sort had brown and white stripes. This is denominated the flying-squirrel, from its having a thin membrane, resembling the wing of a bat, which extends on each side of the belly, from the neck to the thighs: by which it is enabled to fly from one tree to another at a considerable distance.

† At five in the afternoon on the 6th, they descried the Sisters, two islands of very small extent, plentifully stocked with wood. At twelve, the next day, they had sight of the island of Java. About four in the afternoon, they perceived two vessels in the straits of Sunda; one of which lay at anchor near the Mid-channel Island, the other near the shore of Java. Captain Gore sent a boat to procure intelligence, which returned with information, that the larger of the two vessels was a Dutch East-India-Man, bound for Europe: and the other a packet from Batavia.

The natives, who came to them soon after they had anchored, brought a plentiful supply of fowls, and some turtles; the last, however, were generally very small. During the night it rained with great violence; and on the morning of the 14th the Resolution was seen to the north, steering towards the island; and, about two in the afternoon, she cast anchor close to the Discovery.

Our Europeans began to experience, from the time of their entering the straits of Banca, the pernicious effects of this noxious climate. Two persons on board the Discovery, became dangerously ill of malignant putrid fevers: many of the crew were attacked with disagreeable coughs; several were afflicted with excruciating pains in the head; and even the most healthy persons among them, experienced a sensation of suffocating heat with great languor, and a total loss of appetite.

But though their situation was thus unpleasant for a time, they had the inexpressible satisfaction of escaping from these destructive seas without the loss of a single person; owing, in a great degree, to the unremitting attention, that was now become habitual in the men, and to the prudent and salutary regulations introduced among them by Captain Cook. At the time of their departure from Prince's Island, and during their whole passage from thence to the Cape of Good Hope, the people of the Resolution were in a more sickly condition than those of the Discovery.

As soon as our navigators were clear of Prince's Island, they had a light breeze from the west-north-west point: but on the 20th, the wind again became variable, and remained so till the 25th, at noon, when it blew fresh from the northward with squalls.

From the 26th of February to the 28th of March, they had a regular trade wind from the south-east to east by south, accompanied with fine weather.

In the forenoon of the 6th, a vessel was observed to the south-west, standing towards our navigators; and the wind, soon after, beginning to blow from the same quarter, they prepared their ships for action. They now perceived, from the mast head, five more sail on their lee bow, steering an easterly course; but the weather becoming hazy, they lost sight of them all in the space of an hour.

On the 10th, at day-break, the land made its appearance to the north-north-westward, and, in the course of the morning, a Snow was seen bearing down to our navigators. She proved to be an English East India packet, and was now cruising with instructions for the China fleet, and other India ships. They left her, and continued their progress towards the Cape.

In the evening, False Cape bore east-north-east; but they were prevented, by the wind, from getting into False Bay, till the evening of the 12th, when they let go their anchors a-breast of Simon's Bay. They weighed the next morning, and stood into Simon's Bay. At eight o'clock, they came to anchor, at the distance of less than half a mile from the nearest shore. They found the Nassau and Southampton East India men lying here, in expectation of a convoy for Europe. The Resolution saluted the fort with eleven guns, and the compliment was regularly returned*.

On the 15th, Captain King accompanied Captain Gore to Cape-Town; and, the next morning, they waited on Baron Plattenberg, the governor, who received them with the utmost civility, politeness, and respect. The governor afterwards informed them, that all the nations then at war with England, had issued orders to their respective cruisers to suffer them to pass unmolested. This was certainly true with regard to the French and the Spanish nations; but some doubts appeared to remain with respect to the Americans.

During their continuance at the Cape, our navigators experienced the most friendly treatment, not only from the governor, but the principal inhabitants. as well Africans as Europeans. False Bay lies to the eastward of the Cape of Good Hope, and is frequented by vessels during the prevalence of north-westerly winds, which begin their exertions in May, and render it dangerous to remain in Table Bay. It is terminated to the eastward by False Cape, and to the westward by the Cape of Good Hope. The

* As soon as they had cast anchor, Mr. Brandt, the governor of this place, favoured them with a visit. This gentleman held Captain Cook in the highest esteem; and though he had, some time before, heard of his unfortunate catastrophe, he was much affected at the sight of the vessels returning without their old worthy commander. He was surprised at seeing most of the people so robust and healthy, as a report had been propagated, that only fourteen persons were left on board the Resolution, and seven in the Discovery. It is difficult to conceive what motive could have induced any person to circulate so wanton and infamous a falsehood.

width

width, at its entrance, is two miles; and the two Capes bear due east and west from each other.

Simon's Bay is situated about twelve miles from the Cape of Good Hope, on the western side; and is the only commodious station for shipping to lie in; for, though the road without it affords tolerable anchorage, it is rather too open, and not convenient for procuring necessaries; the town being small, and supplied with provisions only from Cape town, which is at the distance of about twenty-four miles.

In steering for the harbour, along the western shore, a small flat rock appears, known by the name of Noah's Ark; and about a mile to the north-eastward of it, there are several others, called the Roman rocks. These are a mile and a half from the anchoring place; and either to the northward of them, or between them, there is a safe passage into the Bay. The land, on the northern side of the Bay, is low and sandy; but the eastern side is very elevated. Two leagues to the eastward of Noah's Ark, stands Seal Island, whose southern part is declared to be dangerous, and not to be approached, with safety, nearer than in twenty-two fathoms water. There are many sunken rocks off the Cape of Good Hope, some of which appear at low water; and others constantly have breakers on them.

Having provided a sufficient quantity of naval stores, and completed their victualling, our navigators quitted Simon's Bay on Tuesday the 9th of May. On the 14th of the same month, they got into the south-east trade wind, and stood to the west of the islands of Ascension and St. Helena; and on the 12th of June they passed the equinoctial line, for the fourth time during their voyage. On the 12th of August they descried the western coast of Ireland, and endeavoured to get into Port Galway. This attempt, however, proved ineffectual; and they were compelled, by violent southerly winds, to stand to the north.

On the 22d of August, about eleven in the forenoon, both the vessels anchored at Stromness; from which place Captain King was dispatched by Captain Gore to inform the Lords of the Admiralty of their arrival. On Wednesday the 4th of October, the ships reached the Nore in safety, after an absence of four years, two months, and twenty-two days.

When Captain King quitted the Discovery at Stromness, he had the satisfaction of leaving the whole ship's company in a perfect state of health. The number of sick persons on board the Resolution did not then exceed two or three; and only one of them was incapable of service. In the whole course of the voyage, the Resolution lost only five men by sickness; three of whom were in a precarious state on their departure from Great Britain: the Discovery did not lose a man. The reason has been already sufficiently explained; but, with all their salutary precautions, our navigators might, perhaps, in the end, have felt the pernicious effects of salt provisions, had they not availed themselves of every substitute, which their situation, at different times, afforded them.

The preventives they principally relied on, were portable soup and sour krout; they had not an opportunity of trying the effects of the antiscorbutic remedies, with which they were amply furnished; as not even the slightest symptoms of the scurvy appeared among the crew of either ship, during the whole voyage. Their malt and hops had also been kept as a resource in case of sickness; but, on a careful examination of those articles at the Cape of Good Hope, they had entirely lost their sanative qualities. About the same time they opened some casks of oatmeal, flour, biscuit, pease, groats, and malt, which, by way of experiment, they had put up in small casks, lined with tin foil; and all these articles, except the pease, were found in a much better state than could have been expected in the usual mode of package.

*** *We have to regret, that this enterprise proved fatal to its principal conductors: the Captains Cook and Clerke never returned; Captain King, debilitated by climate and fatigue, endured existence till he had published the Voyage, which will immortalize his name, and retired to Nice in the Autumn of* 1784, *where he was cut off in the bloom of life.*

When Captain Cook entered upon his last voyage, his family consisted of a wife, and three sons; the second of whom was lost on board the Thunderer man of war, about six months father the death of his father. The eldest son was appointed Master and Commander of the Spitfire Sloop of war; but, while she lay off Pool waiting for hands, in attempting to get on board, during the night, he was driven to sea in a boat in a heavy gale of wind, and he and every person in the boat perished: His body was afterwards found, and conveyed to Spithead, whence it was conducted to Cambridge, and buried near his younger brother, who had suddenly died of a fever, and whose funeral he had attended about six weeks before.

A HUT and FAMILY of TERRA del FUEGO.

Cook.

Hawkins sculp.

VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY

OF THE

NORTH PACIFIC OCEAN,

AND

ROUND THE WORLD:

UNDERTAKEN BY HIS MAJESTY'S COMMAND, AND PERFORMED IN THE YEARS
1790, 1791, 1792, 1793, 1794, and 1795.

IN THE

DISCOVERY Sloop of War, and Armed Tender CHATHAM,

UNDER THE COMMAND OF

CAPTAIN GEORGE VANCOUVER.

SECTION I.

Equipment and Departure of the Discovery and Chatham—Arrival at Teneriffe—Occurrences during the Passage to the Cape of Good Hope—Departure from thence to False Bay—Death of Neil Coil—Proceed towards New Holland—George the Third's Sound discovered—Departure from.

ON the 1st of January, 1790, Mr. Vancouver was appointed to the Discovery, and soon after removed to the Courageux. In December 1790, being constituted master and commander, he was again appointed to the Discovery; and in August 1794, without solicitation, promoted to the rank of post-captain. From this period he was constantly employed, till within a few weeks of his decease, which happened in May 1798, in preparing his journal for publication. Lieutenant William Robert Broughton was selected and chosen commander of the Chatham Armed Tender, with the perfect approbation of Captain Vancouver, who had the honour of being allowed to name for this service, the second and third lieutenants, and the master of the Discovery. The board of Admiralty gave directions that the Discovery and Chatham should be supplied, with all necessary articles for a service so long and arduous; that the stores from the naval arsenals should be chosen of the best sorts, and from materials of the best quality. In addition to the usual establishment, the vessels were furnished with a large assortment of scines, and various kindsof fishing tackle. Provisions of the most excellent kind were prepared at the victualling office; to which were added a large proportion of sour-krout, portable soup, the essence of malt and spruce, malt, hops, dried yeast, flour, and mustard seed.

The vessels being perfectly equipped by the 6th of January, 1791, the sails were bent, and the Discovery was in readiness to proceed down the river; but the repairs required by the Chatham, prevented her equipment so expeditiously. With a favourable wind the Discovery sailed on the 7th of January, and anchored in Long Reach about five in the evening: as her upper works were on a new construction, to answer some purposes of accommodation, doubts were entertained respecting her steering and other properties when in motion; but it appeared, in the course of this little trip, that she was handy, and in every other respect, a very comfortable vessel.

Various necessary occupations detained Captain Vancouver in Long Reach till the 26th, when, having taken on board his ordnance stores, and other requisites from Deptford dock yard, he proceeded to Portsmouth. Pursuant to his orders, he had also received on board *Towereroo*, an Indian from one of the Sandwich Islands, who had been brought from thence in 1789. He had passed his time in England, in great

obscurity, and seemed to have acquired few advantages from his residence in this country*.

Having completed his business with the dock-yard, he dropped to St. Helen's on the 3d of March, and the next morning proceeded down the channel, leaving the Chatham behind, as she was not perfectly ready to accompany him. On Saturday the 12th he arrived at Falmouth, where he was ordered to wait the arrival of the Chatham, and to receive his final instructions for the prosecution of the voyage. He received the latter from an Admiralty messenger on the 20th, but the Chatham did not make her appearance till the 31st; when Lieutenant Broughton, having orders to place himself under Captain Vancouver's command, received his necessary signals and instructions.

A gentle breeze from the north-east, at the dawn of the first of April, enabled the Discovery to sail out of Carrack road, in company with the Chatham, and at midnight the navigators bade a long adieu to their native shores. Towards the morning of the second, the wind shifting to the south, they stood to the westward, clear of the English channel, full of contemplative reflections on the remote and savage regions they were destined to explore.

Having no particular route prescribed to the Pacific Ocean, the captain had his choice of that which should appear to him the most eligible; he gave a preference to the passage by the way of the Cape of Good Hope, intending to visit the Madeiras to procure wine and refreshments. Sour Krout and portable broth had been for several days served on board each of the vessels, the store-rooms had been washed with vinegar, and the whole smoked with gun-powder mixed with vinegar. Instead of biscuit, the seamen were supplied with fresh soft bread.

On the 23d, the weather being fine and serene, the navigators saw the island of Porto Sancto, bearing south-west twenty leagues distant. Madeira being their object, they exerted every effort to gain Funchal road till the 25th, when the wind becoming extremely variable, prudential motives induced them to proceed towards Teneriffe as better calculated for the promotion of their plan. The wind, which had generally been from the west, veered round to the north, and settled in the north-east, accompanied with pleasant weather. In the morning of the 28th, the peak of Teneriffe was seen at about sixteen leagues distant, and in the evening they reached the road-stead of St. Cruz, where the Discovery was placed in an excellent birth, and the Chatham at a convenient distance.

Accompanied by Mr. Broughton, and some of the other officers, Captain Vancouver on the 29th, waited on his excellency Senr. Don Antonio Guitierres, the governor-general of the Canaries, who was then resident in the city of Santa Cruz. His excellency received them politely, and expressed a desire of affording them any assistance, apologizing that the poverty of his country would not permit him to invite them to his table. Attended by the same party, the captain visited the city of Lagoona, which they surveyed and returned to Santa Cruz, having first dined with Mr. Rhoney, an Irish gentleman, to whose hospitality they were much indebted; as no other person on the island, seemed inclinable to shelter them from the scorching rays of the sun, or bestow on them the smallest refreshment.

This morning the small bower cable was found cut through, supposed to have been occasioned by an anchor lying at the bottom; and thinking it probable that other lost anchors might be in the same vicinity, and considering this circumstance as a matter of serious concern, the Discovery weighed, went further out, and anchored in thirty fathoms water; where there was no danger of damaging the cables by anchors, which might have been lost by small vessels nearer the shore; as no other danger could be apprehended, the bottom being unexceptionable. The surf having beaten violently against the shores for several days, had impeded the Chatham's endeavours of taking shingle ballast on board, and prevented its completion till the 7th, when the

* Unfavourable weather prevented the sloop from reaching the Downs till the 30th, where she was detained by a continuance of adverse winds till the 3d of February, when a strong gale conducted her down the channel. Passing the South Foreland about noon, John Brown, the carpenter's mate, unfortunately fell overboard, and was drowned; a loss much regretted by the whole crew, who held him in great esteem. On Saturday the 5th, the Discovery anchored at Spithead; where the captain, having discovered some defects in the ship's head, ordered the necessary alterations to be made; and his presence being required in London, he repaired thither, where he remained till the 27th. From thence he returned to Portsmouth, with orders to proceed to Falmouth.

two

two vessels put to sea, and directed their course to the southward*.

About noon on the 8th they lost sight of the Canaries, and, as the weather was favourable, they were enabled to make some excellent lunar observations. Their course was directed to the westward of the cape de Verd Islands, which they passed on the 14th. The fresh beef, procured at Teneriffe, being exhausted, portable broth and sour krout were again served to the ships' crews on the 18th. Nothing particular occured till after they had crossed the tropic of Capricorn on the 12th of June, when the wind became extremely variable, as well in point of strength as in direction. Towards the latter end of the month, the weather was in general very pleasant, but unfortunately the Chatham sailed equally slow in light or fresh gales, which materially impeded the progress of the voyage. Having much business to perform at the Cape of Good Hope in the carpenter's department, the captain thought it became expedient that no time should be lost: he therefore determined to make the best of his way in the Discovery to the Cape of Good Hope, whether the Chatham was able to keep up with her or not: if she could, she was directed so to do; but if she could not, the necessary instructions were delivered to Mr. Broughton.

The wind was light and variable till the first of July; the Chatham remaining in sight till the evening, but was not visible in the morning. The wind became southwardly on the 7th, when they tried for soundings, but found no bottom with 140 fathoms of line. Many oceanic birds constantly attended the Discovery, consisting of albatrosses of three kinds, with a few small birds of the same tribe. Many of these had disappeared by the 7th, and some large blue petrels were observed.

At day-light on the 9th, the Cape of Good Hope was in sight, bearing east eight leagues distant, the Discovery passed the promontary, and the dangerous rocks in its neighbourhood and stood into False Bay, where in the evening, the weather becoming calm, she anchored in forty fathoms water, the Cape bearing west ten miles distant. With a light southwardly breeze in the morning of the 10th, she weighed anchor, and, assisted by her boats a-head towing the ship, she reached Simon's Bay at seven in the evening, where she anchored in twelve fathoms water. The day before a brig was seen in shore, which Captain Vancouver supposed to be the Chatham, but as his signals were unnoticed, he concluded that he was mistaken. The first conjectures, however, proved to be right, Mr. Broughton having informed him that the signal had escaped their attention. After their separation, the Discovery had out-sailed the Chatham but one night's run; as the latter had not hauled her wind, or shortened sail on Friday night, she was the next morning as near the land as the Discovery. Captain Vancouver was extremely happy to be informed by Mr. Broughton, that the crew of the Chatham, like those of the Discovery, were in the full enjoyment of health.

On the 11th, in the morning, an officer was dispatched on shore to acquaint the commandant of the port of the arrival of the two vessels, to request his permission to procure refreshments, stores, and neceesaries, and to erect their observatory; with which the commandant, whose name was Brandt, very obligingly complied. On the return of the officer, the garrison was saluted with eleven guns; a compliment which was instantly returned. After this reciprocal office was performed, the captain attended by Mr. Broughton and several of the officers, waited on Mr. Brandt, who received them with hospitality and politeness; and that gentleman kindly undertook, with the assistance of Mr. De Wit, of Cape Town, to procure for them the best commodities of every kind which the country could produce†.

All transactions were now finished with the

* It may be important to other navigators to be informed, that the wine, water, and beef at Teneriffe were extremely good; but vegetables, fruit, poultry, and live stock of every kind, were not only very indifferent, but extravagantly dear.

† Having overhauled their rigging, and caused some necessary repairs to be performed, the captain and Mr. Broughton paid their respects to Mr. Rhenias, the acting governor at Cape Town, to inspect the stores and provisions, the principal of which were to come from thence. Four of the seamen, whose constitutions were supposed unequal to the arduous task in which they were engaged, were sent on board the Warren Hastings East Indiaman, then at the Cape; an opportunity presenting itself of replacing them with others apparently more robust. The stores and provisions being forwarded from Cape Town on the 5th of August, the commanders took leave of their friends, from whom they had received much attentive civility: the observatory, with the instruments, were sent on board on the 9th.

shore,

shore, and a supply of provisions obtained for each vessel for eighteen months, with a due proportion of stores. The captain also took on board seven ewes and six rams, some garden seeds, vine cuttings, and other plants, which were supposed to prove valuable acquisitions to the friendly inhabitants in the South Sea Islands.

It is usual at the Cape of Good Hope, for such officers, as can conveniently be spared from the ship, to reside on shore: those belonging to the Discovery conformed to the old practice, but when Captain Vancouver returned, he was astonished to find that, within a few days, several of the people were indisposed with a dysentery, which at first seemed rather unimportant; but at length assumed a very serious appearance, some of the patients being extremely ill. The cause could not be ascertained; the crew had not been addicted to inebriety; their provisions were perfectly good and wholesome; no salutary measures, usually adopted, had been neglected; no indiscretions could be imputed to any individual, in the least calculated to produce so alarming a visitation, whose contagious influence suffered no person to escape unattacked: though Captain Vancouver, and his officers, felt it in a less violent degree than many others. The same disorder had also made its appearance on board the Chatham, and some transports bound to Port Jackson. It was at last attributed to a large Dutch ship lately arrived from Batavia, from which many men had been sent on shore to the hospital, some of whom died with that and other infectious disorders. The surgeon of the Discovery had also been suddenly and unaccountably seized, and reduced to an extreme state of delirium, without any other symptoms which indicated fever.

This situation at the eve of quitting a civilized country, was of a serious and distressing nature, and induced Captain Vancouver to become anxious to get to sea, left a worse species of disorder should be communicated to his people by the Batavian ship. But this resolution could not take effect till the 17th, when, about noon, a light breeze from the north-west, enabled him to sail, in company with the Chatham, out of Simon's Bay, having given and received the salutation of eleven guns*.

In the evening the navigators directed their course to the southward, and during the night the wind veered to the north-west, and blew hard; the Chatham was at a great distance astern of the Discovery, and not being in sight at day-break, the latter hauled the wind, when the former was seen about seven to the westward; and, having joined company, steered together. The wind increased till the 20th, and then became a violent storm. The sea ran excessively high, and the wind raised the spray into a kind of mist: in one of the squalls, the Discovery again lost sight of the Chatham. She was visited by a number of albatrosses, and many other birds of the petril tribe; on the 21st, about noon, she again beheld her consort, and on her joining company, they resumed their course to the south-east under the foresail. This boisterous weather, accompanied with thunder and lightning, continued almost without intermission till the 22d, when it became more moderate.

The wind became still more moderate on the 23d; but the weather was unsettled, showers of hail and rain frequently occurring, and a heavy swell rolling from the northward and south-west: several whales were amusing themselves about the ship, but the oceanic birds were not so numerous as usual. The wind being gentle in the northern quarter, the captain of the Discovery had an opportunity of sending on board the Chatham, when he received intelligence that, in consequence of a violent sea having stove in the midship stern window on the 20th, it was deemed necessary to bring to till that injury was repaired.

A gale on the 28th afterwards increased to a storm, attended with heavy squalls, hail, rain, and a most tremendous sea. On the violence of the storm abating, the Discovery pursued an easterly course, intending to pass in sight of the islands of St. Paul and Amsterdam. While the gale continued, she was visited by a great number of oceanic birds; but the vicinity of land or shoals was not indicated from such a circumstance,

* To prevent a separation of the vessels, Mr. Broughton was provided with a list of rendezvous, and furnished with a copy of the instructions Captain Vancouver had received, with the route he intended to pursue. Though they had continued at the Cape longer than they had expected, they did not abandon the design of visiting New Holland; the captain therefore, on sailing from False Bay, appointed their next rendezvous off Lyon's Land, in about the 35th degree of south latitude, in case of separation to cruise there two days, and not meeting with the Discovery, then to attend to the other instructions.

as

as they are universally met with throughout the southern ocean.

The weather which succeeded this storm was extremely pleasant, accompanied with a smooth sea. The flux still continued among the crew, many of whom were much indisposed, though it was hoped the present fair weather would contribute to restore them; but the wind speedily veering to the north-west, a fresh gale sprung up, the weather bore a threatening appearance, and the sky was obscured with gloomy clouds, from which some rain proceeded. The sea, however, continued smooth, and the weather was not unpleasant. On the 4th the first seal that had been seen since their departure from the Cape, frolicked about the ship for some time; but the oceanic birds were almost invisible; their winged visitors were now principally pintadoes, and other little birds of the petrel tribe*.

Proceeding towards the coast of New Holland, the navigators directed their course between the tracks of Dampier and M. Marion, over an unfrequented space: the situation of that part of New Holland which they meant to explore, being imperfectly defined, and a probability existing that banks might extend far into the ocean, they tried, but could gain no soundings with a hundred and eighty fathoms of line. On the 19th they continued, at certain intervals, to try for soundings, but did not then reach bottom at the depth of a hundred and eighty fathoms.

On Friday morning, supposing the land could not be at any considerable distance, the Chatham's signal was made to look out on the larboard beam. A heavy gale of wind arose soon after mid-day; but being unwilling, under such circumstances, to make too free with an unexplored coast, the captain hauled the wind to the southward, under the foresail and storm staysails. Towards sun-set land was said to be perceived from the mast-head to the north-east; but though this supposition did not amount to a certainty, it was extremely probable, as they had passed several leagues over the space assigned to Lyon's Land in many of the maps. On the 24th they stood to the north in quest of the land; but some of the officers imagining they saw it to the south-east, they hauled their wind again in that direction till noon: when, being disappointed, they again steered north. At night they found bottom at seventy fathoms depth, composed of white sand and broken shells: the gloomy appearance of this night rendered it necessary for them to carry a press of sail, to preserve an offing, as the soundings plainly demonstrated that the land was not far distant. During the night a hundred fathoms of line did not reach the bottom. About four in the morning of the 25th, the slings of the main yard were carried away, and before they could be replaced, the storm increased to so violent a degree that they were obliged to take in all their canvas but the foresail, to strike the top-gallant masts, and to get in the jib-boom and sprit-sail yard. Thus situated they remained till near sun-set, when finding no bottom with a hundred and ten fathoms of line, they stood to the north-west, fully expecting to meet the land in that direction. In a short time the gale abated, and the next morning a calm succeeded, when the damages sustained by the rigging in the boisterous weather, were repaired. Sounding could not then be gained at the depth of two hundred and twenty fathoms. A light breeze to the northward sprang up in the afternoon, and land was soon discovered: it seemed to be of a moderate height, and about ten or twelve leagues distant; no soundings to be gained with a hundred and twenty fathoms line. The wind veering to the north-west, they steered for the land, and approached it within three leagues, when bottom was found at the depth of sixty-five fathoms.

Early on the 27th they made all sail for the land, with a smooth sea and pleasant weather: in their progress the depth of the water gradually decreased to twenty four fathoms: about nine they were well in with the land, and bore away along the coast, which consisted of steep rocky cliffs to the water's edge, interspersed with sandy bays, islets, and rocks. The westernmost land now in sight is remarkable for its high perpendicular cliffs, forming a conspicuous promontary,

* On the 5th Neil Coil, a marine, fell a sacrifice to the flux caught at the Cape; he was a valuable man, and his loss was much regretted: another poor fellow was supposed to be so much affected with his mate's dissolution, that he relapsed with unfavourable symptoms. Death having now commenced his career, it was uncertain when it would terminate; it was, however, highly satisfactory, that, in point of comfort and professional assistance, nothing had been neglected that might tend to the relief of the distressed, or to subdue and extirpate this formidable malady.

to which Captain Vancouver gave the name of CAPE CHATHAM*.

After a variety of ineffectual researches, a port presented itself, into which the Chatham was directed to lead. The weather had become thick and rainy, and was accompanied with much thunder and lightning; but the soundings continuing regular, they stood into the port, passing a high rocky bluff point in thirty fathoms water, directing their course close along its shore: the sounding suddenly shoaled to twelve fathoms, and afterwards gradually decreased till abreast of the second white sandy beach, where they anchored in six fathoms water.

The weather becoming delightfully serene and pleasant on the 29th, they found themselves snugly situated in a secure spacious sound. After breakfast, Captain Vancouver, accompanied by Mr. Broughton in the Chatham's cutter, Mr. Menzies, and Mr. Whidbey, proceeded in the yawl; first to attend the success of Lieutenant Puget who had been dispatched on a fishing party, and then to examine the sound, to see whether a more eligible situation could be found than that which they then occupied. The seine was hauled with little success: a stream of high-coloured fresh water, though well tasted, drained through the beach; and near it a clump of trees informed them that they could supply their present want of fuel. Bordering on this clump, a most miserable human habitation was beheld, which had not long ejected its tenants, as on its top the fresh skin of a fish was found, known by the name of leather jacket. The form of this humble mansion imperfectly resembled the half of a bee-hive, or a bee-hive vertically divided into two equal parts; constructed with some degree of uniformity, with the bark of trees, and small green boughs. The back of it being opposed to the north-west, seemed to indicate that those were the most prevailing winds. Just within its front, which was entirely open, a fire had been made; but, except the skin already mentioned, nothing was seen that could give birth to the least suggestion on which its poor inhabitant subsisted: the melancholy aspect of the surrounding country presenting, at the same time, little less than famine and distress.

Hoping to meet with some of the wretched inhabitants, the navigators proceeded along the shores of the sound to a high rocky point, which was named the POINT OF POSSESSION. The sound branched into two arms; one immediately behind this point, extending in a circular form, about a league across: the other lying about three miles to the north-east, seemed almost as spacious, but had a narrower entrance: the neighbouring country presented a fertile and pleasing aspect†.

Early on the 30th, all the healthy men were ordered to employ themselves in cutting wood and providing water, while those who continued indisposed were directed to amuse themselves on shore. Perceiving it practicable, the ship was placed nearer the spot whence the wood and water were procured: and the captain proceeded in the yawl, which could now be spared, for the further examination of the sound. Near a rocky cliff, on the south-west side, a small shallow stream of excellent water was discovered; and on tracing its meanders through a copse, the

* The flux still continuing to affect the health of several persons in each vessel, a little recreation was thought necessary to give energy to their enfeebled constitutions; the captain therefore determined to put into the first port he should discover, for which purpose he ranged the coast within three or four miles of its shores, which are moderately elevated. Dreary hills, producing little herbage, were stationed along the sea-side, but the interior country was pleasantly diversified and decorated with lofty forest trees; yet no smoke, or other indication of the country being inhabited, could be perceived. About noon a signal from the Chatham announced that a port was discovered to the northward; but it afterwards proving to be only a shallow bay, they soon bore away along the coast.

† The proper observations being made at this station, the British colours were displayed, and his Majesty's health drank with the usual formalities; possession was then taken of the country in the name of his present Majesty, for him, his heirs, and successors. As this was the first port our navigators had discovered, they honoured it with the name of KING GEORGE THE THIRD'S SOUND; and the harbour behind Point Possession was called Princess Royal Harbour, that day being the anniversary of her Royal Highness the Princess Charlotte Augusta Matilda's birth. Here no traces of the resort of the natives could be perceived, yet the effects of fire were seen on all the vegetable productions.

Having completed the ceremony of taking possession, a passage was found into the north-eastern harbour, a bar extending across its entrance, on which there was only three fathoms water. As the situation of the vessels seemed convenient for procuring what the sound might afford, the captain determined to return on board, and avail himself of the benefits it presented. In going out of the harbour, the boats grounded on a bank they had not before observed, which they found covered with oysters of a most delicious flavour, on which they sumptuously regaled; and collecting large quantities for their friends on board, they commemorated the discovery by naming it OYSTER HARBOUR.

navigators arrived at a deserted village of the natives, among the trees, containing about two dozen miserable huts; resembling that already described in fashion and dimensions, but did not appear to have been so recently erected. Among these structures, though of the humblest kind, distinctions were regarded; two or three huts, probably intended for those who were deemed superiors, were larger and more elegantly constructed than the others, but not loftier. Fires had been made in the fronts of all of them, but not recently, and hardly any signs appeared of their having been visited for some time. Though still anxious to ascertain the food on which the inhabitants of this village subsisted, they would acquire no casual information on that subject, as neither shells nor bones were found, on which conjectures could rationally be formed.

In one of the larger huts, perhaps the residence of a chief or superior, some beads, nails, medals, looking-glasses, and knives were deposited, as tokens of the friendly disposition of the new visitors; and to induce some of the natives who might be in the neighbourhood, though they had not been perceived by our mariners, to favour them with a visit. Having gratified their curiosity, in contemplating these humiliating scenes, they returned on board. And having, on the 4th of October, taken on board a supply of fire-wood, and a plentiful replenish of water, Messrs. Puget and Whidbey repaired to Oyster Harbour, with three boats, expecting to return with them richly laden with those delicious shell-fish. In this they were partly disappointed, as the wind which had blown a moderate breeze, was succeeded by a strong gale from the south-east, with a heavy swell, and prevented the return of the boats.

The gale moderating on the 5th, the boats returned, but not so well freighted as was expected, though they had a sufficient supply of oysters for all the convalescents, and furnished all hands with two or three excellent meals. A south-east wind, and a heavy sea in the offing prevented the departure of our navigators; Mr. Broughton was therefore employed in examining the eastern side of the sound. The same causes of detention still operating on the 7th, a party was formed for the further examination of Oyster Harbour, to gather some information respecting its natural productions; and, if possible, of the natives. Proceeding to the upper part of the harbour, they saw several large black swans, majestically swimming on the water; but when they were flying, the under parts of their wings and breast were discovered to be white. A more circumstantial description cannot possibly be given as they were extremely shy, and our adventurers but indifferent marksmen.

In the northern corner of the harbour they landed near a rivulet, and proceeded about a league by the side of it: though it was brackish itself, it received in its passage some smaller streams of most excellent water. It contained abundance of fine fish, and its banks were visited by black swans, curlews, and other wild fowl. On the sides of this stream, and on the shores of Oyster Harbour, the remains of several fish wears were found, evidently contrived by the wretched inhabitants of the country; some of them constructed with loose stones, and others with sticks and stumps of wood. It clearly appeared that great bodies of water, at some certain seasons, pass down this current; as the sides of the rivulet, for two or three hundred yards, is composed of sea-sand, and broken shells, and totally destitute of any vegetable production. The wears for taking fish, and the steps made in some of the largest trees for the purpose of ascending them, were doubtless the effects of rude manual labour; and, with the huts, were the only indications of human inhabitants existing in this country. No paths were traced, nor any smokes beheld: hence our adventurers seemed convinced that any further search for the natives would be ineffectual, and returned by a different route to the boats, perceiving in their way two more huts*.

* Not choosing to return empty-handed, they stopped at one of the oyster banks, loaded their boat with what they procured, and returned on board in the evening. On the 10th they entertained hopes of getting to sea; but the wind being rather more favourable on the 11th, they weighed and turned out of the sound. At four in the afternoon they regained the ocean, intending to steer along the coast, but the wind obliged them to stand to the south-eastward. While they were getting under weigh, the captain caused to be deposited at the hut next the watering-place some knives, looking-glasses, and other trinkets, as a sort of payment to its owner, should he ever return, for the wood they had deprived him of: and to commemorate this visit, a pile of stones was raised near the stump of a tree they had felled; in which was left a bottle sealed up, containing a piece of parchment with the names of the vessels, and the commanders; with the date of their arrival and departure. Another bottle, with a similar memorandum was also deposited on the summit of Seal Island; where a staff was likewise erected, with a medal of 1789 affixed to it.

The

The unexpected detention by easterly winds, and the rapid advance of the season, restrained Captain Vancouver from prosecuting effectually his researches on this coast; but he did not absolutely abandon that favourite object, if the task should not prove too intricate and dangerous, .or should not lead him too far out of his way. On the 20th at day-break he was within sight of land to the north-west, making like three islands; though on a nearer approach, the two westernmost were found to be connected to the main land, but the connecting of the northernmost not being clearly ascertained, it obtained the name of DOUBTFUL ISLAND.

The depth of water was now thirty fathoms; and the weather was delightfully pleasant. Doubtful Island, and the shores to the south-west of it, bore a strong resemblance to the rest of the coast; but to the north-east a different prospect was presented of high detached clusters of craggy mountains, on a base of level land, plentifully wooded. At noon, a high bluff point bore by compass N. 24 E. Soon after mid-day low land was perceived, stretching out from the high bluff point: breakers in two detached places were seen, at some distance from the land. At this time the depth of water was thirty-five fathoms. About six in the evening, the nearest land was a rocky island, about two miles in circumference, eight miles distant. At nine the depth of water had increased to forty fathoms. The captain, being thus situated, directed the Chatham to lead and sound; their depth gradually increased to fifty-four fathoms, and the coast in the morning of the 21st was in sight. The wind blew a light breeze, when they steered for land till about nine, when they tacked in sixty fathoms, the land then in sight: which land was evidently a rocky island, about a league in circuit, strongly resembling that which they had passed the preceding evening. As their researches on this coast terminated there, it obtained the name of TERMINATION ISLAND.

The whole of this country presented a dreary aspect, almost destitute of wood or herbage. More oceanic birds were observed there than on any other part of the shores. Besides several sorts of tern, albatrosses and petrels appeared in great abundance. On the 23d they steered to the east-north-east, hoping to fall in with the land; and if it should take a more northerly direction, the Chatham was ordered to look out three leagues on the larboard beam. The wind suddenly shifting to the southward, accompanied with a heavy swell in that direction, which evidently menaced the approach of boisterous weather, the Chatham's signal was made to join, and their course was directed to east-south-east: the captain not daring, as he was then circumstanced, to court the risk of bad weather, on an unexplored coast so beset with dangers. The captain therefore thought it his duty to relinquish his favourite object of further examining the coast of this interesting country, and directing his route towards the Pacific Ocean.

SECTION II.

Description of the Country and Productions of the South-west Coast of Holland—Devastations by Fire—Arrival in Dusky Bay—New Zealand—Part from the Chatham—Discover the Snares—Proceed towards Otaheite.

THE researches of our navigators, in a survey of the extent of a hundred and ten leagues, afforded little essential matter, excepting such as appertained to King George the Third's Sound; the port of which is safe, and easy of access. Princess Royal harbour has a passage into it of the width of about a quarter of a mile; and towards the northern shore the depth is five or six fathoms, but on the southern not exceeding three fathoms water, occasioned by banks of coral rock which are perfectly conspicuous, and not being subject to any violent agitations of the sea, are by no means dangerous*.

In the low lands extensive tracts were seen, occupied

* Oyster Harbour is only admissible for vessels of a middle size, from the shallowness of the water on the bar.

In navigating the sound, there is no danger that is not sufficiently obvious to be avoided. The appearance of this country

occupied by a kind of okerish swampy peat of a very dark brown colour: through this soil most of the streams direct their course, and to their impregnation in the passage, the general high colour of the water is to be attributed. The stones which the adventurers saw were chiefly of coral, with a few black and brown pebbles, quartz, slate, and two or three sorts of granite.

The climate is delightful, for though they had to contend with some boisterous weather on their approach to the coast, it was such as might reasonably be expected at the season of the vernal equinox, and breaking up of the winter. The convalescents in the flux received considerable benefit here, though their health was not thoroughly re-established. It was therefore supposed that the climate and soil would probably produce all the essentials of life, and many of its luxuries.

Respecting the subject of agriculture, Captain Vancouver acknowledged himself unqualified to enumerate scientifically the trees, shrubs, and plants with which the country abounds; but of the two latter there appeared a great variety; and among the most remarkable was the gum-plant, found in gseat quantities, answering the properties and description of that vegetable found at Port Jackson, as related in Philips's voyage. Wild celery was used to enrich the pease-soup, and to form a palatable sauce for their salted meat: this article, and samphire were the only edible vegetables to be procured; others were numerous, and produced a great variety of beautiful flowers. The shrubs were abundant, and of many species. The forest trees consisted of four different sorts; the most common of which resembled the holly, but they were not of the larger sort: that which the captain supposed to be the gum-tree of New South Wales, seemed to be a hard ponderous wood; and the larger trees were principally of this description: one of them was nine feet four inches in circumference, and of a proportionable height. Those which were employed as fuel were of the myrtle tribe, having an aromatic flavour; the wood of this tree burns cheerfully and consumes slowly*.

Of birds that inhabit the woods, the vulture is the most common: hawks, and all the falcon tribe are numerous. Those resembling the English crow, parrots, parroquets, and a great variety of small birds, were frequent visitors, and some of them sang delightfully; though all of them were so wild and timid that few specimens could be procured. Of the water fowl, the black swan was the most numerous of any of the aquatic birds in the neighbourhood of Oyster Harbour, but they were visible in no other place. Black and white pelicans, of a large sort, were observed at a distance; and ducks appeared in great numbers. A very singular one was shot of a darkish grey plumage, with a bag similar to that of a lizard hanging under its throat; it emitted such an intolerable effluvia of musk as to scent the whole ship. Many curlews and sea-pies were observed; and a few of the latter procured, which were thought a delicious repast. Besides the aquatic birds already enumerated, there were also shags, the common gull, two or three varieties of tern, and some penguins of a blueish colour†.

country along the coasts, resembles, in many respects, that of Africa about the Cape of Good Hope. The surface appeared to be principally composed of sand mixed with decayed vegetables, but the principal component part is coral; the bank which extends along the coast being composed of it; and it is certain that the lead never descended to the bottom, without bringing up coral on its return.

* For the benefit of future visitors to these regions, some vine-cuttings and water-cresses were planted; and an assortment of garden-seeds. Of the animal kingdom, excepting those of the aerial kind, little information could be procured; the only quadruped seen by our navigators was one dead kangaroo; though the fresh dung of these and other animals feeding on vegetables, was frequently perceived.

† With the productions of the sea, our navigators were not consummately acquainted: some of the few fish they caught were extremely excellent: the calipevar of Jamaica, and another resembling the snook, were not inferior to the red English mullet in point of richness of flavour. These, and the common white mullet, rock-fish, mackarel, herrings, &c. very frequently fell to their lot, but not in any great abundance.

Whales and seals frequently surrounded the ship, when near the coast: of seals, in particular, a prospect of twenty at a time was no uncommon sight; and their appearing to be perfectly indifferent about avoiding the spectators, indicated their not being unaccustomed to such visitors. The throat and belly of these seals were almost white, the neck rising between the head and shoulders in a kind of crest, which, together with the black, was of a light brown colour, the hair was rough, and the carcase extremely poor.

† Reptiles, or noxious animals, were not numerous; only two or three yellowish snakes were seen, and they were thought good eating: these, and a few ugly clumsy lizards, seeming to compose the whole of that race of animals. Some beetles, muskitoes, and common flies were occasionally met with.

Little can be said of the human inhabitants of this country, as our adventurers were not so fortunate as to procure an interview with any one of them; but it appears probable that the natives are a wandering people, who sometimes make their excursions individually, and sometimes in considerable parties: this was apparent, from their habitations appearing singly, as well as forming villages of some extent.

Besides the habitation which Captain Vancouver visited, Mr. Broughton saw another of almost equal magnitude, about two miles distant from it, but it appeared to be more modern, the huts having been recently built and inhabited. It was erected in a swamp, perhaps for the convenience of water: one or two of the huts which composed it were larger than the rest. The trees of the greatest magnitude, in the vicinity of both villages, had been rendered hollow by fire, to afford shelter for some of the inhabitants. Upon stones placed within these hollow trees, fires had been made, which sufficiently proved that they had been occupied by the inferior members of the party, or those who wanted industry or ingenuity to build a wattled residence. Not an article of furniture was found in any of the houses: the only implements perceived were pieces of sticks intended as spears, in the formation of which manual labour was but slightly discernible; the bark indeed had been taken off, and the thick end burnt in the fire, which was scraped to a blunted point.

Totally ignorant of every mode of embarkation, they could not place much dependence on marine productions for their subsistence; yet it seems evident from the wears on the shores, that they occasionally resort to the sea, and to the rivulets for provisions. It was rather extraordinary, however, that the bones of fishes they had eaten were not to be perceived: and that so estimable a part of the produce of the sea as oysters and clams, should not form a proportion of their food, though the latter often exhibit themselves on the beaches, over which they must frequently walk; and the former, at low-water, may be gathered on the shoals, in large quantities. It did not appear that they had any knowledge of these, of limpets, or any other shell fish found among the rocks; or their hunger would long since have conducted them to such excellent resources; hence it may naturally be inferred that the land principally supplies their wants; the shyness of the feathered race, and the wildness of the quadrupeds, sufficiently indicated that they were continually pursued.

The destructive operations of fire were evident in many places; and, in the excursions of our adventurers on shore, every spot which produced vegetables, gave irrefragable proofs of its effects. Where the country was well wooded, the upper branches of the loftiest timbers were burned: the vegetable productions had suffered greatly throughout the country, from the devastations by fire. That element is frequently resorted to by rude nations to improve the growth of herbage, or as toils for taking the wild animals. When such measures are adopted in a dry season, the ravages may become very extensive; and the inflammable quality of the gum plant, which abounds in this country, may assist to promote that general havock.

The apprehensions of tremendous weather were ill founded; for though the swell on the 17th greatly increased, a gentle gale attended our navigators, with pleasant weather. They steered, without any important circumstance intervening, till they got sight of Van Dieman's Land on the 26th, twelve leagues distant; when soundings could not be gained at the depth of eighty fathoms. Few oceanic birds were seen during this passage. Having a fine gale on the 27th, they shaped a course for Dusky Bay in New Zealand, and by signal to the Chatham the captain appointed Facile harbour in that bay as the place of rendezvous*.

The dysentery, though nearly subdued in both

* Mr. Collins, to his interesting account of the English colony in New South Wales, has subjoined some information concerning New Zealand: among which are the following particulars.—"The New Zealanders inter their dead; and "they believe that, the third day after the interment the heart "separates itself from the corpse, and that this separation "is announced by a gentle breeze of wind, which gives "warning of its approach to an inferior Ea-tooa (or "Divinity) that hovers over the grave, and who carries it "to the clouds. While the soul is received by the good "Ea-tooa, an evil spirit is also in readiness to carry the "impure part of the corpse another road, whence it is "precipitated into the sea. Suicide is very common among "the Zealanders, and this they often commit by hanging "themselves on the slightest occasions: thus a woman who "has been beaten by her husband, will perhaps hang herself immediately—It could not be discovered that they "have any other division of time than the revolution of the "moon, until the number amounted to one hundred, "which they term *Ta-ice E-tow*: that is One Etow, or "hundred moons; and it is thus they count their age, and "calculate all other events. *Collins.* p. 524.

vessels,

vessels, had left those who had been enfeebled by its attacks in a very reduced state; the captain therefore was induced to make choice of Dusky Bay*, though it was inconvenient in point of anchorage. A favourable wind, and tolerably fine weather brought the Discovery within sight of the coast of New Zealand on the forenoon of the 2d of November, and she anchored, about nine the same evening, in the arm leading to Facile harbour, in forty fathoms soft bottom. About eleven the Chatham anchored in sixty fathoms water. Previous to moving the vessels, Captain Vancouver thought it necessary to survey and fix upon a situation convenient for his several employments, on which occasion he was accompanied by Mr. Broughton and Mr. Whidbey. After coming to a determination, they were alarmed on their return by the report of two guns; but as the wind had greatly increased since their departure from the ships, they concluded that this signal was occasioned by one or both of the vessels having been driven from their anchorage.

Their conjectures were found to have been rationally formed: the Chatham indeed was stationary, but the Discovery was moving, and nearly abreast of Five Finger Point. Though several difficulties presented themselves, the captain did not despair of reaching the destination in Facile harbour before dusk. But about five a violent gust made great havock in the rigging, and the gale seemed to be increasing. Being in too narrow a channel to repair these damages, he steered immediately for Anchor Island harbour, which was fortunately to leeward of us, and anchored at the mouth of the cove, in twenty six fathoms. The gale increased in the night, and it became necessary to strike the lower yards and top-gallant masts. His apprehensions for the Chatham were not relieved till the next forenoon, when, by rowing over to the Petrel Islands, and walking across the land, he had the happiness to see her ride in perfect safety; but she was directly to windward, and the gale continued to increase. In the evening the wind began to be more moderate, but on the morning of the 5th it increased to a violent storm: from five to eight it blew a perfect hurricane, attended with torrents of rain. The Discovery was happily secure in a snug little harbour, but the sea beat so violently against the rock astern of her, that had the anchor or cable given way, inevitable destruction must probably have been the consequence. About nine a most tremendous gust occasioned the ship to roll exceedingly; a flash of lightning and a heavy crash of thunder instantly followed; but in the space of half an hour the weather was fair and pleasant. Mr. Broughton repaired to the Chatham, and found she had rode out the gale in a manner exceeding all expectation: he lost no time in getting under weigh, and worked into Facile harbour*.

The adventurers had delightful weather for these examinations, and returned on board in the afternoon of the 15th, though not without some disappointment, after three days' excursion; as none of the natives were to be found, nor any traces, that in the least indicated that the country was then inhabited; excepting one or two decayed and miserable huts which appeared to have been long deserted. Anchor Island harbour being perfectly secure, may be found convenient, when accident may hinder vessels from getting into Facile harbour, It may be necessary to remark, however, that Anchor Island harbour is not a convenient one to get to sea from, on account of its great depth of water, its narrow limits, and a sunken rock which was discovered in its western entrance.

The business with the shore being finished, and the rigging overhauled, the Discovery sailed out

* Finding that from these shores a supply of all their wants could be obtained, the captain set about the several repairs with the utmost expedition: parties were employed for cutting wood for fuel, timbers for spars, for brewing spruce-beer, repairing the sails and rigging, and other essential duties. A boat, conducted by four men, furnished abundance of fish for present use, and a surplus for those who should be inclined to have them salted.

By the 13th, these operations had been so indefatigably attended to, that a party of officers and gentlemen in the two boats, accompanied by Mr. Broughton in the Chatham's cutter, had leisure to attend Captain Vancouver over this spacious bay, hoping to become acquainted with some of the inhabitants, and to explore that part of the northern arm, which from Captain Cook acquired the name of, "NO BODY KNOWS WHAT." On the 14th it was found that the arm in which Captain Cook places Apparent Island, was divided into two branches, leaving that land a peninsula joined to the main land, by a narrow ridge of high mountains. Mr. Broughton undertook the southern branch, which he found winding in certain directions: the northern arm ran nearly straight about north-east for five miles, then, turning to the northward, ended in a cove with shallow water, in a north-western direction. The heads of these arms, in allusion to Captain Cook's name of their entrance, Captain Vancouver has called SOME BODY KNOWS WHAT.

of

of the cove on the 18th, with fine weather and a gentle breeze. On the following day, the Chatham having finished her business, stood out into the road-stead, which obtained the name of TEMPEST ROAD, from the storm she there rode out on their arrival; but seeing no probability of getting to sea, she returned into Facile harbour. On the 20th, at seven in the morning, a fresh breeze, accompanied with a very heavy swell, seemed to portend violence. The Discovery weighed, ran into Facile harbour, and anchored in thirty eight fathoms soft bottom: the Chatham was at anchor near her, and both vessels were conveniently stationed for embracing the first opportunity of proceeding to sea*.

As the navigators receded from the land, the wind from north-west increased, a swell at the same time coming on heavily: More wind was strongly indicated from the north-west by several circumstances The Discovery therefore steered south under what sail she could carry, and made signals to the Chatham for a similar purpose. The lofty canvas of the former, however, had not been spread long before it was found necessary to reef the top-sails, get down the top-gallant yards, and strike the masts. The night was so dark that at ten the Chatham could not be perceived: at three in the morning on the 23d, the wind was so violent as to oblige them to furl the top-sails, and at that very moment they found six feet water in the hold. Many other alarming incidents occurred, and the gale was now become a furious storm. Torrents of rain fell, and darkness so profound accompanied it, that nothiug could be seen at the distance of one hundred yards in any direction.

About nine in the forenoon of the 24th, the storm abated, and soon after the atmosphere became clear, but the Chatham was not then to be discovered. As Matavai Bay in Otaheite was the next appointed rendezvous, the captain supposed that Mr. Broughton would proceed with the Chatham to that port: keeping the wind on the beam, they steered south south-east, and about eleven o'clock were astonished at the sight of land, bearing east four or five leagues distant. At noon they were nearer the land, and as the weather became less hazy, they passed it at the distance of two or three leagues, when it appeared to consist of a cluster of seven craggy islands. They seemed destitute of verdure, and the largest, which is the most northernmost, is perhaps equal to all the rest in point of magnitude, seeming to be about three leagues in circuit. To these islands, which are better entitled to the name of rocks, from the sterility of their appearance, and the sort of weather to be expected in their vicinity, Captain Vancouver gave the name of the SNARES, as calculated to seduce incautious mariners into difficulties†.

After some nautical relations of several particulars, uninteresting to the general reader, the captain observed that a gentle gale, and pleasant weather, brought them in sight of land, on the morning of the 22d of December, which appeared like three small islands; but on a nearer approach, was found to be united. Assisted by a gentle south-east gale, with fine weather, they were within a league of the shore about three in the afternoon, though no bottom was found at the depth of a hundred and eighty fathoms. Several canoes approached the ship, who declined the most pressing invitations to come on board, but seemed extremely solicitous in their invitations for them to land; which they signified by waving their paddles towards the coast, and by an earnest request in the language of the Great South-Sea nation. The navigators bore away with an intent to go nearer to the shore, but soon again brought to, seeing two or three canoes hastily paddling towards the ship. At length four men, in one of the canoes, ventured to come near enough to the Discovery to receive some presents, with which he seemed highly gratified, though some of their countrymen manifested their disapprobation of such conduct:

* About noon on the 21st both vessels sailed out of Dusky Bay, gratefully thanking Heaven for its excellent refreshments, and the salubrity of its air. The health of the convaleseents was now perfeetly re-established; one person with a chronic complaint, and two who had received cuts in their legs, were all that could be found in the surgeon's list.

† The eaptain then expresses the eoncern he felt in beholding the only remaining sheep thrown overboard: out of thirty of these animals received at Portsmouth, no more than two of them ever eame to the table; the rest died before the navigators had reached the equator. They were equally unfortunate in a pareel of weathers, ewes, and rams they proeured at the Cape, intended as presents to their friends in the South-Sea Islands; two thirds of which being dead at that period, though they were taken on board in very excellent condition, plentifully supplied with wholesome food, sedulously attended, and provided with a comfortable lodging.

the

the example, however, was instantly followed by several of them*.

They were unarmed, and, (except a few fish) brought with them neither food, nor articles of manufacture: a few spears, and a club or two, were seen in some of the canoes; and two or three slings for stones were observed, with which they parted without reluctance. These people were doubtless of the Great South-Sea nation; speaking nearly the same language, and much resembling the Friendly Islanders. On this occasion, *Towereroo*, the Sandwich Islander, afforded little assistance: taken from home at an early period, and having been long absent, he hardly understood any thing of their language. Two or three of them remained about an hour on board, but it was impossible to procure any information from them. Even the most pressing enquiries with regard to the name of their island, was continually interrupted by invitations to go on shore. In the course of this imperfect conversation, the adventurers were induced to believe that the name of the island was Oparo; and that of their chief Koria: but though these names were not correctly ascertained, the captain distinguished the island by the appellation of Oparo, till it should appear to be better entitled to any other.

The south extremity of this island appeared to form a right angle; having, about half a mile to the south-east, a small detached inlet; its greatest extent is about six miles and a half, and it is perhaps about eighteen miles in circuit. It is principally a cluster of high craggy mountains, with perpendicular cliffs, the vacancies between the mountains being rather chasms than vallies, in which there is no great appearance of plenty or fertility. The tops of six of the loftiest hills resembled fortifications, having a sort of block-house in the centre of each, with rows of palisadoes. What were supposed to be block-houses, were sufficiently capacious to contain a considerable number of persons, many of whom were seen, appearing to be upon duty, as they were moving about, and were the only inhabitants that could be perceived†.

Quitting Oparo, the navigators had a gentle breeze from the south-east; at eight on the 23d, the island was still visible. On the evening of the 25th they were in the vicinity of some low islands, discovered by Captain Carteret, called the Duke of Gloucester's Islands. Having a fresh gale at east on the 26th, they expected to reach Otaheite the following day; but a violent gale disappointed those expectations: this was accompanied with a torrent of rain till the 28th, when the rain ceased, and the wind became moderate.

The 29th presented them with a view of Matavai, or Osnaburgh island, at the distance of seven leagues. In the morning of the 30th, they stood for Matavai with all the sails they could spread: about eight o'clock a canoe came along side, having two pigs and some vegetables, as a present from the sister of Ottoo, residing in that part of the island which was then at no great distance. The natives informed the captain they had been two days looking out for him, in con-

* But it was attended with infinite difficulty to prevail on any of them to come on board: with a kind of reluctant confidence, one of them indeed complied with the reiterated request. On his entering the ship he trembled, and was greatly agitated: terror, astonishment, and admiration, seemed to take possession of him by turns; but on his being received kindly, and presented with a small iron adz, his countenance became more placid, though not without a strong appearance of perplexity. Having mentioned his reception to his surrounding countrymen, as many visitors made their appearance as could be commodiously entertained. They seemed perfectly acquainted with the uses to which iron might be applied, and how to estimate its value in European commerce. They almost forced articles composed of that metal from the hands of persons on board, and with great courtesy presented, as an equivalent, some fish, fishing-lines, and other trifles, which they begged might be accepted as presents, and not considered in the light of barter or exchange. Looking-glasses, beads, and insignificant trinkets, at first attracted their attention, but when they perceived that articles of iron were easily obtained, they refused all other presents: they would not even accept of a few medals.

† From the number of canoes, so expeditiously assembled round our navigators, the shores were supposed to be preferred for the general residence of the inhabitants, and not the fortified hills in the centre of the island. About thirty canoes were seen, single and double, formed like those of the Society islands: they were neatly constructed, but very narrow. Some of the most magnificent accommodated about twenty-five or thirty men, of which three hundred were supposed to have approached the ship. Induced by these considerations, Captain Vancouver supposes the whole island to contain about fifteen hundred inhabitants. The natives were of a middle stature, and well proportioned, having open countenances, expressive of benevolence and hospitality. Each of them had his hair cropt; and, excepting a wreath of a broad-leaved green plant, worn by some of them about the waist, they were absolutely naked. Though the islanders of this ocean are much in the habit of tatowing, these people were without any of those marks.

sequence of information received from an English vessel then at anchor in Matavai bay. Captain Vancouver, without hesitation, concluded that this must certainly be the Chatham, of which he was soon after convinced. Mr. Broughton quickly repaired to the Discovery, taking with him a plentiful supply of the productions of this fertile country. Anchoring in Matavai bay about ten, the mutual gratulations on the meeting of the two principal navigators in this voyage, were much heightened by a reciprocal communication of the happy intelligence, that every individual belonging to the two vessels was in a perfect state of health.

Captain Vancouver having judiciously prepared rules and orders, for the guidance of the persons belonging to his Majesty's sloop Discovery and Chatham tender, and directed that they might strictly be attended to, delivered a copy of them to Mr. Broughton, that they might be duly enforced on board the Chatham; and that gentleman, at the same time, delivered to the captain a narrative of his proceedings during the time of their separation.

SECTION II.

Mr. Broughton's Narrative of Occurrences during his Separation from the Discovery; with some Account of Chatham Island, &c.

ON the 22d of November, Mr. Broughton thought it expedient to deviate from a southwardly course and keep before the storm; its increased violence washed away the jolly boat about six the following morning. At noon the gale considerably abated, but the Discovery could not be perceived: the Chatham's separation from it seemed now completed, little chance remaining of their meeting again till their appointed rendezvous at Otaheite. About two in the afternoon, land was seen from the deck, appearing like a high island; about an hour afterwards, more land was seen to the southward, detached from the former: Finding it impracticable to weather this land, they bore up for a passage between the high island and the other land, which was found to be a cluster of small islets and rocks; and on all these rocks and islets the sea broke with great violence. Plenty of sea-weed was discovered, and the whole surface was strewed with birds of a blackish colour. This island, in honour of Captain Knight of the navy, was named Knight's Island.

After several nautical observations and occurrences, Mr. Broughton relates that he worked up into a bay, before he saw the natives which they had passed, and came to an anchor about a mile from the shore in twenty fathoms water. As the eastern point from the anchorage, was the termination of the island he had thus visited, Mr. Broughton gave it the name of POINT MUNNINGS. Accompanied by Mr. Johnston, the master, and one of the mates, he proceeded towards the shore in the cutter; and within the rocks, which project a little from the extremity of the bay, they found smooth water, and landed upon the rocks where they at first perceived the inhabitants: they were then, however, on the opposite side, but observing strangers examining their canoes, they ran towards them, which induced them to retire to the boat to wait their arrival.

As they approached, both parties endeavoured to enter into a kind of conversation, by signs, gestures, and speech, but found it difficult to be reciprocally understood. Mr. Broughton presented them with several articles, which they eagerly and joyfully received, though they did not attempt to give any thing in exchange: but, as they seemed solicitous for the Europeans to land, Mr. Sheriff, leaving his arms behind him in the boat, went on shore. This circumstance excited the attention of two or three of them, who attended him towards the canoes on the beach, whilst the rest, amounting to about forty, continued with the Europeans, and seized every opportunity of attempting to take whatever came within their reach. They repeatedly beckoned the navigators to follow them to their supposed places of residence. They were indeed extremely desirous of receiving the Europeans on shore; but as they could not obtain any thing in return for their present;

present; and observing many of them armed with spears, it was thought highly imprudent to associate with them; in consequence of which they took their leave*.

The woods, which afford a delightful shade, were in several places formed into arbours, by bending the branches when young, and closing them round with smaller trees. These arbours appeared to have been lately slept in. Most of the trees in the woods grow in a luxuriant manner clear of small branches, to a considerable height, and consist of several sorts; but none of them seemed entitled to the appellation of a timber-tree. Returning from the woods, a few natives were seen approaching the Europeans, and salutations were given and received by each party, by the ceremony of meeting noses, in the New Zealand fashion. Some trinkets were given the islanders; but they seemed to have no idea of bartering, or making any return for favours conferred.

To shew the inhabitants the effect of fire-arms, Mr. Broughton gave them some birds which he had killed, and pointed out to them the cause of their death: on firing his gun, they seemed terrified at its report, and all retreated, excepting an old man who maintained his ground. As he seemed to conduct himself in a kind of menacing manner, Mr. Broughton gave his fowling piece to one of his own people, approached the islander, shook him by the hand, and practised every method he could devise to obtain his confidence. Observing something in his hand, carefully rolled up in a mat, he was desirous of looking at it, when the native instantly gave it to another, who walked away with it; but not till the lieutenant had discovered that it contained stones, fashioned like the *Patoo Patoes* of New Zealand.

These islanders were extremely anxious to get possession of our navigator's gun and shot-belt, and frequently exclaimed *Toohata*. Some of their spears were ten feet in length, and others six. Finding that nothing could be obtained here, the Europeans made signs of going to their supposed habitations, and intimated that they were in want of food. Three men armed, attended Mr. Johnston and Mr. Broughton along the river-side: the boat, with four hands, keeping near the shore as they walked, lest their assistance, might be required. Every one had orders to be prepared, but not to have recourse to their arms, till the lieutenant should issue directions to that effect.

The islander who had received the stones from the old man, had one of them now fixed at each end of a large stick about two feet in length. Not liking these appearances, the Europeans entertained some thoughts of embarking; but, on their suddenly facing about, the natives retired up to the beach to a fire which had been just made. Some conversation afterwards ensued, which was not of the most amicable kind, and many of the natives had provided themselves with bludgeons and other weapons. Repairing to the sea-side, which the Europeans had quitted for a short time, and being a-breast of the boat, the islanders became very clamorous; talked loudly to each other, and divided themselves in such a manner as nearly to surround the Europeans. A young man strutted towards Mr. Broughton, in a very hostile attitude; who, by distorting his person, turning up his eyes, and making hideous faces, displayed wonderful fierceness in his appearance and by his gestures. But when the lieutenant pointed his double-barrelled gun towards him, he thought proper to desist. The hostile intentions of these savages being thus evidently shewn, Mr. Broughton, wishing to avoid proceeding to extremities, ordered the boat immediately to take the Europeans on board.

* By way of ceremonial the navigators displayed the Union flag, turned a turf, and took possession of the island, which Mr. Broughton named CHATHAM ISLAND, in honour of the earl of Chatham, in the name of George the Third; under the presumption of their being the first discoverers. After drinking his Majesty's health, a piece of lead was nailed to a tree near the beach, with this inscription—"His "Britannic Majesty's brig Chatham, Lieutenant William "Robert Broughton commander, the 29th November, "1791." And in a bottle, deposited near the tree, an inscription to the same purport.

The canoes which were examined, resembled a small hand-barrow without legs, formed of a light substance, very neatly constructed: the breadth aft is three feet, and forward two, and the length eight or nine feet. They seem peculiarly calculated for fishing among the rocks near the shore. They could accommodate two or three persons, and were so light that two men could easily convey them to any reasonable distance, and one person could haul them into a place of security on the beach. The nets of these islanders were ingeniously formed; and they had scoop nets, made of the bark or fibres of some tree or plant, and netted in equal mashes. On penetrating a little into the woods, no houses nor huts were observed, but large quantities of shells were seen; and several places where fires had been made.

During

During this interval, though they were strictly on their guard, the islanders began their attack, and before the boat could get in, Mr. Broughton was reluctantly compelled to fire one barrel, which being loaded with small shot would rather intimidate them than prove injurious, and enable them to embark without further molestation. Unfortunately, however, it proved otherwise; Mr. Johnston received so ponderous a blow upon his musquet that it fell to the ground, but before his opponent could get possession of it, Mr. Johnston recovered his position, and was obliged to fire, when the blow was again attempted. A marine and seamen near him had been forced into the water, and, justified by self-preservation, fired their pieces without orders. The gentleman having the charge of the boat, seeing the necessity for it, also fired at this instant, on which they precipitately fled.

It was a pleasing reflection to Mr. Broughton that no ill consequences had appeared to have arisen from this commotion, but he was almost instantly informed that one man was discovered to have fallen: a ball having broken his arm, and passed through his heart. The Europeans repaired towards the boat, but were compelled by the surf to walk to the place from whence they had originally intended to embark. As they retired, they perceived one of the natives return from the woods, who, placing himself by the side of the deceased, ejaculated a sort of dismal howl to express his lamentations*.

As not a single habitation was to be seen, the navigators considered this part of the island as a temporary residence of the inhabitants, for the purpose of procuring a supply of fish. Those which inhabit shells are very abundant here: claws of cray fish were found in their canoes; and as the birds were numerous about the shore, it was generally apprehended that the sea furnished them with their principal means of subsistence. Black sea pies, spotted curlews, large wood-pigeons, ducks, small sand-larks, and sand-pipers, are very numerous about the shores.

On returning to the vessel they got under weigh with a fresh gale at south-west. About six in the evening they passed Point Munnings, which now appeared to be a low peninsula, over which more land was discovered to the southward, but the weather became too hazy to obtain further information. From the bay, which Mr. Broughton called Skirmish Bay to Point Munnings, the shore is low, rocky, and woody. At day-break on the 30th, they passed many patches of sea-weed, saw some Port Egmont hens, and several oceanic birds.

On the 15th of December the atmosphere became dark, sultry, and gloomy, and torrents of rain issued from the clouds, accompanied with much thunder, lightning, and heavy squalls, which obliged the crew to be constantly exposed, till the 20th; when the wind, which had changed to the south, blew a moderate breeze, and fine settled weather ensued. On the 23d, at eight in the morning, land was seen from the mast-head, which proved to be a small high island, its northern part forming an elevated hummock, from the fall of which the land continued level, and then gradually decreased to the other extreme point. They steered for Otaheite; at noon the land over Point Venus bore west; in the afternoon it became southwardly, with dark gloomy weather. Having reached within four miles of the shore about five o'clock, some canoes came off with cocoa-nuts and two small hogs, which were immediately purchased. About nine the

* As the navigators approached their first landing place, they saw nothing like a habitation, though women and children were supposed to have been looking at them from the woods, as they were heard conversing with the natives on their arrival. On tracing some of the foot paths, great numbers of ear-shells were discovered, and recesses like those which were observed on their first landing. They distributed their remaining toys and trinkets among the canoes, as some little atonement for the injury they had been under the necessity of producing.

The men of this island are of a middling size, fleshy, and well-limbed, with black hair both on the head and beard. The young men had it tied in a knot on the crown of their heads, intermixed with black and white feathers; many of them had their beards plucked out. Their colour is dark brown, with plain features, and generally with bad teeth. Their skin was without marks, and they seemed cleanly in their persons. Their dress consisted of a seal or bear-skin tied with sinnet. Some were naked, except having a well-woven mat, fastened round their waists. No ornaments appear to be worn, excepting by a few who sported a sort of necklace made of mother of pearl shells. Several of them had their fishing lines fastened round them. The old men, among them, seemed to have no authority over the others. They appeared to be a cheerful race; the conversation of the Europeans frequently exciting bursts of laughter among them. On their first landing, their surprize and exclamations exceeded all conception. They pointed to the sun, and then to the Europeans, seeming to intimate a desire of being informed whether they proceeded from that luminous body.

next

next morning, they anchored in eight fathoms black muddy bottom*.

From young Otoo, the lieutenant received this morning a present of two hogs, and a quantity of fruit. Otoo the elder, now claiming the appellation of Pomurrey, was at Eimeo, having before signified his intention to come to Matavai as soon as he heard of Mr. Broughton's having reached that place. His absence, however, occasioned no inconvenience; for though they had not been visited by any chief, the behaviour of the people was perfectly friendly and civil, and they had been supplied with a sufficient quantity of excellent provisions on the most moderate terms.

On the 29th Mr. Broughton received a very liberal present from Oparre, consisting of hogs and delicious fruit, accompanied with a message importing that he might probably arrive at Matavai the following day. In the evening, the weather being somewhat temperate, he landed at the back of Point Venus, and was received by the natives with the greatest cheerfulness. Their hospitality was exemplary, and their civility and attention infinitely impressive. The wind having shifted to the eastward, and being informed on the 30th, by some natives, that a ship was in sight, Mr. Broughton repaired instantly on shore, and had the inconceivable pleasure of perceiving it was the Discovery steering for the bay. About ten she hauled in between the reef and the Dolphin bank, and Mr. Broughton went on board to congratulate Captain Vancouver, and to acquaint him with such interesting particulars as had occurred on board the Chatham, since her separation from the Discovery.

SECTION IV.

Visit Otoo—Arrival and Transactions of Pomurrey—Arrival of Toow—Interview between him and his Sons—Death of Mahow—Ceremonies at the Morai, &c.

CAPTAIN Vancouver had hardly anchored before the ship was surrounded with canoes, laden with provisions and refreshments: the natives testified their joy at his arrival by a tender of their services, and by assuring him that he might rely upon their friendship. One or two among them, assuming some little authority, intreated him not to permit the multitude to come on board, that no thefts might be committed, to destroy that amity which they were anxious to establish and support. Approving of this advice, he found no difficulty in carrying it into execution: he had only to request they would return to their canoes, and they submissively complied.

He discovered, on enquiry, that death had removed many of the friends he had left here in 1777; and that Otoo, with his father and brothers, were almost the only chiefs of his old acquaintance that were now in existence. The young king now took the name of Otoo; and Otoo the elder adopted that of *Pomurrey*, having transferred his name with his sovereign jurisdiction, though he appeared to retain his authority as regent. Mr. Broughton had received some presents from Otoo, who had requested him to visit him on shore at Matavai. Captain Vancouver had received no such invitation, but understanding from the natives, that his accompanying Mr. Broughton would be esteemed a civility, he did not hesitate to comply. The ship being secured,

* This being the place of rendezvous appointed by Captain Vancouver, it was a great disappointment not to find the Discovery in port; especially as her superiority in sailing was so great, that she might reasonably have been expected to precede the Chatham by at least a week. They had hardly anchored when the natives gathered round them, civilly bringing with them an ample supply of such refreshments as their country afforded. But several petty thefts being committed by some of the numerous visitors, they were required to repair to their canoes along-side; a restraint which they yielded to with the most perfect obedience and good humour. A heavy rain, accompanied with a severe tempest, continued the whole of the afternoon. On Mr. Broughton's first arrival, the whole shore was one uninterrupted beach, but when the evening approached, the torrents of rain which had descended, had occasioned an inundation of the river which broke its bank. A great concourse of the inhabitants, who assembled on this occasion, and beheld the bank forced by the impetuosity of the water, shouted with acclamations of joy; for had not this event taken place, their houses and plantations would probably have been much injured by so rapacious a deluge.

Captain Vancouver and Mr. Whidbey accompanied Mr. Broughton, to pay their respects to his Otaheitean majesty.

The surf obliging them to row round the point, they landed near the mouth of the river, and were ceremoniously received by the natives: a messenger was dispatched to announce their arrival to the king, and to inform him of their intended visit; who returned with a pig, and a plantain leaf, as a peace-offering to Captain Vancouver; accompanied with a congratulatory speech on the arrival of these gentlemen, with offers of every refreshment the country could afford. They proceeded along the beach, expecting to meet the young sovereign, till they approached the place where the river had broken its banks. There they received instructions to halt, under the shade of a palm-tree; and, after waiting a short time, were informed, that it was not usual for the king to cross the river to meet strangers, and they were therefore requested to go to him. A canoe attended to take them over; and having walked a few paces on the other side, the interview took place.

They found king Otoo to be a boy somewhat under ten years of age: he was clad in a piece of English red cloth, ornamented with pigeons' feathers hanging over his shoulders, and carried on the shoulders of a man. When the Europeans advanced within seven or eight paces of him, they were enjoined to stop, and the present intended for him exhibited. Though its magnitude and value excited the admiration of the bye-standers, the young monarch regarded it with an air of cool indifference: but, as much ceremony was required on this presentation, Captain Vancouver applied to an inferior chief named Moerrec, to be his prompter, who willingly took the whole office upon himself. He was answerable for their peaceable and friendly intentions, and requested supplies of provisions, and a pledge of good faith towards them. The king afterwards condescended to say a few words, but he also required the aid of another to conclude his short oration. A ratification of peace and friendship being thus mutually acknowledged, the ceremonies ended: when Otoo, shaking hands with them in the most familiar and hearty manner, treated them with great cheerfulness and cordiality; having totally laid aside that grimace and pompous affectation of state, which he displayed on their first introduction to him.

He informed Captain Vancouver, that his father was at Eimeo, now called *Morea*, and requested him to send thither a boat for him; for as the islanders were accustomed to raise misrepresentations, Pomurrey would not give credit to the report of his arrival, till he had seen some of the Europeans, by whom he would be convinced. Each of them was presented with a quantity of gold cloth, a large hog, and some vegetables, after which they returned on board, perfectly satisfied with their visit and reception. Otoo having first declared, that if they should sail without seeing his father, he should not only be very sorry, but very angry*.

Pomurrey had a perfect recollection of Captain Vancouver, and every action and expression indicated the sincerity of his professions of esteem. In the afternoon his two wives and youngest sister arrived, with several chiefs, attendants, and ladies; each presenting Captain Vancouver, on their coming on board, with cloth, hogs, and vegetables, in great abundance. It now seemed expedient that a suitable return ought to be made to the whole group, regard being had to the rank and situation of each individual, and the captain endeavoured to perform his part with great propriety and address.

A large party of royalty and chiefs honoured the Europeans with their presence at dinner, which, though it flattered the guests, was certainly a subject of regret, as the weather was extremely hot, and the cabin much crouded. On this occasion the wives of Pomurrey, and the wife of Mahow were suffered to sit with the men

* Mr. Mudge, accompanied by Mr. Menzies, was dispatched on the 31st to the island of Morea for Pomurrey, and towards noon on the 2d. of January 1792, he returned with his friend Pomurrey, who was saluted, prior to his coming on board, with four guns from each vessel; with which he was extremely gratified.

It may not, however, be improper to observe, that as the preceding day ushered in the new year, and consequently was a holiday, every one had as much fresh pork and plumb pudding as he chose; and, that they might not forget their friends in Old England by the voluptuous gratifications of Otaheite, a double allowance of grog was granted to toast their absent friends and sweet-hearts at home: it was, however, somewhat singular that the gunner of the Discovery was the only married man of the whole party.

at

at table, and partake of the repast. But such an indulgence is so far from being common, that it would be extended to no other women on the island*.

On the 3d, the people on board the Discovery were busy about their rigging, and other essential matters. The weather continued sultry, and the royal guests, with their crowd of attendants, still remained on board, occasioning much confusion and inconvenience; the captain therefore had recourse to a little address, which was attended with the success he wished. He informed Pomurrey that his attendance at the observatory on shore would be constantly required, and he should be obliged to dine there. When he seemed preparing to leave the ship, Pomurrey assured him that if he would call for him after dinner, the whole party would disembark; but he did not fail to stipulate, at the same time, that he should be saluted on his landing from the encampment; which in the evening was complied with accordingly. Mahow, who was extremely emaciated and feeble, paid the Europeans a visit; being unable to walk, he was removed from place to place in a kind of litter. Many other chiefs were their constant attendants, who conducted themselves with great propriety, and seemed highly delighted with observing and animadverting on their different employments†.

Pomurrey's father, formerly known by the name of *Happi*, now called *Taow*, had arrived on the 7th, and was on board the Discovery, where he requested to see Captain Vancouver; in consequence of which Pomurrey, and his two next brothers, accompanied the captain, to pay their respects to their old sire, who had just arrived in a large canoe freighted with valuable articles as a present. An affecting interview succeeded. With wonderful regard the three sons embraced their venerable father; who, in acknowledging a grateful sense of their dutiful congratulations, exhibited feelings which drew tears from the whole party! A scene of filial effusions which would have done credit to the most polished nations‡.

A large party of the royal family, and of the different chiefs, dined at the marquée, after

* In the course of dinner and afterwards, Pomurrey drank a bottle of brandy, without diluting it. This threw him into such strong convulsions, that four strong men were incapable of holding him. After sleeping about an hour he arose, apparently as much refreshed with his nap as if he had retired perfectly sober. Captain Vancouver expostulated with him on this impropriety, and assured him that inebriety was pernicious to health; but in vain—he intimated that the captain was stingy of his liquor, and was not a jolly hearty fellow, in the true Bacchanalian sense of the words. Our navigator was now determined to let him pursue his own humour, and orders were given that he should be supplied with as much brandy and rum as he thought proper to ask for; supposing he would speedily be convinced of its pernicious effects. In less than a week, indeed, he ceased calling for spirits, and was perfectly satisfied with a few glasses of wine at and after dinner.

† The wind, since the arrival of the Discovery, had been eastwardly, and moderate, but it had now veered to the north with squalls and showers of rain. On the 5th a violent gale broke the sea with irresistible fury in several parts of the bay. On the 6th it became calm, and all hands were busily employed in their several departments. After breakfast, Captain Vancouver went on shore, where he was informed that *Otoo* had, in the course of the two last days, been carried about the encampment, in the very singular manner that he was shewn when the captain first saw him. He invited him to the marquée, and entreated him to visit the ships. Both these invitations, however, were declined, and our navigator was given to understand, that should he enter the tents or ships, no inhabitant of these islands could again be admitted; and that every article or utensil must be destroyed from which he had drank or tasted aliment: As the young monarch passed the greater part of the day about the encampment, Captain Vancouver asked his father if there would be any impropriety in sending him a glass of wine: he replied, "If I chose to have the glass broken, I was at liberty so to do; and enquired if he had abundance of such articles to spare?" Some wine was therefore conveyed to him in the shell of a cocoa-nut, which was drank by his majesty; after which the shell was instantly broken and thrown into the sea.

Pomurrey having frequently asked if there were any fireworks on board, and being answered in the affirmative, Saturday evening was the time appointed for their exhibition, and intelligence of the intended spectacle was industriously circulated over the greater part of the island.

‡ Some of the royal ladies having now joined the party, they all agreed to go on board the Chatham; but as Mr. Broughton had before been very liberal, and found it inconvenient to be very generous a second time, the guests, apparently dissatisfied, quitted the Chatham, and went on shore.

A scene soon after occurred, which formed a contrast to that on the meeting of the venerable parent with his three dutiful sons. It having been announced that Otoo was approaching, custom or *etiquette* required that the grandfather should pay homage to his grandson. A pig and a plantain leaf being procured, the venerable old man stripped to the waist, and when Otoo stood in the front of the marquée, the parent, whose limbs tottered with age, met his grandson, and on his knees presented this token of submission, at the same time humbly acknowledging his own inferiority. So little effect had this ceremony on the young monarch, that he seemed to view the humiliating situation of his grandsire with the most perfect indifference. Perhaps this sort of distant deportment is thought an essential appendage to the exalted situation of a sovereign.

which it was proposed that the English entertainments should commence. But, as a kind of prelude, some guns from the ships were requested to be fired, and the marines on shore were ordered to go through their exercise, and fire; when the whole of their proceeding was beheld, by the surrounding multitude, with surprize, terror, and admiration. On firing with great dispatch three rounds from the field-pieces, the fear of Pomurrey, who had requested this prelude, overcame his curiosity, and he acknowledged he was perfectly satisfied

The fire-works had been well prepared and preserved, and were equal to any that are to be seen in Europe. An immense crowd assembled on the occasion in the evening. Rockets, balloons, flower-pots, and Catharine-wheels, were displayed in infinite variety; after which some water-rockets, &c. were produced, with which the exhibition closed, and the natives retired to their habitations, highly delighted with their entertainment, though some of them perhaps as much affected with terror, as with admiration. Pomurrey, with his two wives, came to breakfast the following morning, and expressed in the most exalted terms, their approbation of the performances of the preceding evening.

Poatatou arrived the following day, having sent before him a liberal present of cloth, hogs, vegetables, mats, &c. Captain Vancouver had been very intimate with this chief, when he last visited this country, and they perfectly recollected each other. He regretted that he had not arrived in time to enjoy the entertainments of the preceding day, having never been so fortunate as to be present at such an exhibition. *Poatatou* now called *Hildiea,* with his wife and sister, accompanied the captain on board; when, among other valuables, he presented his old acquaintance with an axe, which his sister was so highly delighted with, that *Hildiea* was obliged to use some force to prevent her wrenching it out of his hand, but by giving her an equivalent in other articles the lady became reconciled.

The business in the several departments was now in great forwardness, but an inconvenience was found in procuring fire-wood, there being few trees in the neighbourhood that did not bear fruit: on mentioning this circumstance to the chiefs with whom Captain Vancouver was acquainted, they engaged to supply more than the ships would contain, if he would furnish two axes for each of them; as, on such an occasion, they could not afford to wear out their own: this was thought so reasonable a proposal that it was instantly acceded to. The conduct of the natives, in this and other transactions, was uniformly consistent with propriety: in every employment, they were ready to assist the Europeans to the utmost of their power, and thought themselves amply rewarded with the inconsiderable return of a few beads or nails.

The departure of Pomurrey's family was put off from time to time, as they expected to be conveyed home in one of the Discovery's boats, but as neither the boats nor the men could be spared for that purpose, Captain Vancouver was constantly honoured with their good company at meals; and indeed their deportment at table was now so much improved, that they generally conducted themselves with propriety. The captain, among his visitors, had all the sovereigns of the group of islands, excepting the daughter of Opoone, who reigned over Bolaba and its appurtenances.

Hitherto Captain Vancouver had only received a few insignificant presents of provisions from *Pomurrey,* who had lately expressed some concern that he had not made a suitable return for the favours which had been conferred upon him; and this was the day appointed for adjusting that important point. About noon *Pomurrey* came to the marquée, with a long train of attendants; and preceded by three men, each bearing a *parri,* or mourning dress*. Many others were laden with fowls, vegetables, and cloth; with a collection of large hogs in the rear; forming together a grateful and valuable compensation. *Pomurrey,* and his wives, dined with the captain, after which they quitted the encampment to embark for Oparre. They were saluted from the station on shore, on their way to get on board the Discovery, where a canoe waited to receive them.

At the dawn of day on the 14th, a message from *Pomurrey* informed Captain Vancouver of the death of Mahow, which created little concern: his relief from a wretched existence was directed by humanity to be considered a happy event. The captain desired the messenger to acquaint *Pomurrey,* that he would attend the obsequies of the deceased on the following day. On the

* This is esteemed the most valuable present the country can afford.

morning

morning of the 15th he again returned with a request from *Pomurrey*, that he would not repair to Oparre till Tuesday, when the interdiction * would be at an end.

As Mr. Broughton, Mr. Menzies, and some of the other officers of the Discovery and Chatham had made an excursion on the 13th towards Oparre, and the surrounding country; and as nothing material occurred in the neighbourhood during their absence, Captain Vancouver furnished the following observations which were communicated to him on their return—The gentlemen embarked in a canoe belonging to Mowree king of Ulietea, who, with *Whytooa* and his wife, accompanied them towards Oparre. On their way they landed to survey the morai of *Tapoota tootatea*. Mowree went with them, and on approaching the sacred spot, desired the party to stop till he had addressed the Eatooa. He then seated himself on the ground, and began to pray before a watta, ornamented with a piece of carved wood, placed on a bundle of cloth and some red feathers. During this act of devotion, the names of the party were twice mentioned, as well as those of the several commanders who had visited the island. The names of *Keene Corge*, and *Britarne*, were also frequently expressed. When these preliminary ceremonies were finished, *Mowree* attended them over the morai, to give them a circumstantial explanation of the particulars.

Having left the morai, and proceeded about a mile westward, they arrived at the house of *Urripiah*, who was then at dinner with a company of Matavai friends; and whilst the European party were taking some refreshment, a messenger arrived from *Whytooah*, requesting their attendance at his abode, which was situated on the verge of the sea-shore, the plantations and gardens of which were decorated with great taste and ingenuity. *Whytooah* had made ample provision for their entertainment, a whole hog having been committed to the oven, which was almost ready for the table, with variety of other refreshments. In the afternoon they were visited by *Urripiah*, with some of his attendants; and the young king Otoo also complimented them with a visit: his approach was announced by the natives performing the ceremony of uncovering their shoulders. As propriety would not admit of his entering *Whytooa's* fence, they paid him their respects on the beach; whence, after receiving some trinkets, he accompanied his royal sister to meet *Pomurrey*. On paying their respects to the royal family, who had landed near them towards the evening, grief was so strongly depicted in the countenance of *Pomurrey*, that the cause of it was earnestly requested to be related. He replied, in a melancholy tone that "*Matooara Mahow* was dead." *Urripiah*, hearing the melancholy tidings, burst into a flood of tears; and a gloomy sadness reigned throughout the whole assembly. Advancing a little further, the Europeans observed the queen mother and *Fier-re-te* in tears, searching a bundle containing shark's teeth, with which the female natives torture themselves to occasion weeping. Each of the women selected an instrument for this purpose, and retired in sorrowful affliction †.

To remove the melancholy ideas occasioned by these

* While the interdiction continued, no communication was permitted between the inhabitants of *Oparre*, and those of the other parts of the island; a circumstance sufficiently made known by the display of flags in the path-ways: not a canoe was allowed to move along the shores; nor a fire to be kindled. The whole occasioning an astonishing degree of solemnity, expressive of the death of the chief, and of his importance and respectability.

† On the 16th in the morning the party were again honoured with a visit from Otoo and several chiefs, in their progress towards the morai: a canoe, with an awning, was soon after observed, paddling slowly to the same destined spot, containing the body of the lamented chief. Requesting to see *Pomurrey*, to obtain permission to attend the solemn ceremony, they were informed that he was gone to the morai, but would have no objection to their being present. They proceeded; and near a rivulet beheld the queen mother, *Fier-re-te*, and the widow of the deceased Mahow, weeping, and wounding their heads with the shark's teeth, which they had procured the preceding evening. A small part of the crown of the widow's head had been shaved, which appeared bloody; and other evident marks were visible of the dire effects of her sorrow. Fearing their intrusion might give offence, they took leave, and repaired to the morai, where the funeral ceremonies had begun. Five priests were seated before *Pomurrey*, chanting a prayer, and looking towards *Otoo*, who was seated on a man's lap: a bundle of cloth was held before him, containing emblematically the *Eatoo*, a name bestowed on all their deities. The body of Mahow, wrapped in red English cloth, was deposited under an awning in a canoe. The priests continued chanting their prayers, gradually exalting their voices till they ended in a very shrill tone. The person who performed the office of chief priest, was discovered to be their friend Mowree, whose prayer was longer and more fervent than the rest. It sometimes appeared to consist of an expostulation with the

these tristful solemnities, the party extended their excursion a few miles westward, till they arrived at *Pomurrey's* residence, which consisted of two large houses near the shore, lately erected. Here they were entertained with a heava, wantonly performed by a number of young girls. At a certain part of the dance, a fellow introduced himself among the performers, and very ludicrously and obscenely entertained the native audience; but the modest Europeans, expressing their abhorrence of such indecorous behaviour, the girls, in the concluding scenes, did not expose their persons below the waist. After bestowing some presents to the young actresses they retired, in order to return; when they soon arrived at the house of a chief, where *Whytooa* having prepared an excellent repast, they were sumptuously entertained. At length they returned to the encampment, extremely well satisfied with their excursion, on which they had been assiduously attended by several of the natives, who always struggled to be foremost in acts of civility and attention; and, in justice to their honesty, let it be remembered, that a trivial article had never been found missing that had ever been entrusted to their care and custody.

SECTION V.

Punishment of the Natives for Theft—Obsequies of Mahow—Articles stolen—Towereroo absconds —Brought back by Pomurrey—Sail from Matavai Bay.

ON the 17th Captain Vancouver was visited by Otoo, his uncles, and several other chiefs from Oparre. Two men having been detected in stealing a hat from the Discovery; and recollecting that many petty thefts had been committed at the encampment, the captain ordered the delinquents to be sent on shore, that they might receive proper punishment in the presence of their chiefs and countrymen; and the punishment ordered by the sentence was, to have their heads shaved, and receive a moderate manual correction.

A message was received from *Pomurrey*, requesting the captain's attendance at Oparre, "to *tichah*," to mourn for the death of Mahow. Mr. Broughton and Mr. Whidbey accompanied him thither; where, on their landing, they were conducted to a temporary residence of *Pomurrey*, and introduced to him, his wives, and his sisters. Though some concern was apparent among them for the loss of their friend and relative, it was not equal to the affliction they expected to have witnessed on such an occasion. The corpse was laid on the *Tapapaoo*, at a small distance from the grand morai, and appeared to be in an advanced stage of the embalming process: the body was exposed to the sun; and, on their drawing near it, the covering was removed, which displayed it in a state of putrefaction. The skin had been anointed with cocoa-nut oil, and shone refulgently, but the offensive exhalations that were emitted, though impregnated with sweet-scented wood, induced them to conclude that the whole mass would be speedily discomposed. *Pomurrey*, however, assured Captain Vancouver, that the corpse was to continue a month in this place; in the course of another month it was to be exposed in some of the western districts; whence it was to be removed to Tiabaroo for another month: and, last of all, it was to be conveyed to the Morea, and there deposited with his forefathers in the morai of the family*.

The captain's friends had made so little progress with their axes, that, on the 18th, he entreated *Urripiah* to point out such trees as they might

Divinity, adverting to the great plenty of the valuable productions of the island, notwithstanding which *Matooara Mahow* was permitted to die.

The procession advanced westward along the shore, followed by the canoe which contained the corpse, to the mouth of the rivulet, where three royal ladies still continued to exercise their grief, and who on beholding the canoe, burst forth into a dismal yell of lamentation; which kept pace with the repeated application of the shark's teeth, till the blood mingled with their tears. The canoe entered the brook, and proceeded towards another morai, where the ceremonies to be performed required secrecy, and the English gentlemen were not permitted to attend. It was supposed, however, that the body was then to undergo the process of embalming.

* The boat's crew guarded the paling that surrounded the tapapaoo; the piece of red cloth was presented to the widow, who spread it over the dead body: some vollies were then fired, and Captain Vancouver was directed to say, "*Tera no oea, Mahow.*" *That is for you, Mahow.* On some rain falling, the body was removed under cover, and carefully wrapped up.

might cut down themselves; this request was complied with, and they soon procured of the apple and bread fruit trees a sufficient quantity to supply their wants. The mourning for Mahow being ended, the royal females visited the navigators, and returned after dinner to Oparre. *Pomurrey*, his father, wives, brothers, sisters, and many others, appeared the next morning, cheerful and in excellent spirits. Sunday having been appointed for their departure, the evening preceding it was fixed on for a further display of fire-works; and *Pomurrey* returned to Oparre, to procure such supplies as he thought would be acceptable to them before they proceeded on their voyage.

Presents in abundance were received on board on the morning of the 20th, consisting of hogs, goats, fowls, roots, and vegetables, from their respective friends; who had hitherto conducted themselves with the greatest propriety, and who seemed to lament that their departure would so speedily take place. But in the midst of this happy intercourse, and apparent good harmony, a circumstance occurred which threatened to produce the destruction of that harmony. A bag containing a large quantity of linen, the property of Mr. Broughton. had been taken out of the marquée, *Moerree*, who had engaged to be a cutter of wood, had sent none since the first or second day, nor had he returned the axes delivered to him. Something unfair was therefore strongly suspected. Several shirts had also, the preceding evening, been missing from the people's tents; and from a variety of circumstances it was evident, that the chiefs knew of the linen having been stolen, and were themselves supposed to be the projectors of the robbery.

Urripiah had prepared a heava near the encampment, for the amusement of the navigators, of which Captain Vancouver thought proper to forbid the performance; informing *Urripiah* that, whilst his people were treacherous, no farther intercourse with them was required; and that, unless the articles purloined were immediately restored, he would enforce the restoration of them by the adoption of very serious measures. On this remonstrance he departed, and about noon one of the axes was returned, and with it a solemn promise of searching for the linen. Going on board the next morning, he was informed of another occurrence, which would contribute to interrupt the harmony which had so long subsisted. *Towereroo*, the Sandwich-islander, had eloped from the ship, in the course of the preceding night; and he had formed an attachment with the daughter of *Poeno*, the chief of *Matavai*, on whom he had lavished almost the whole of his property. This youth was weak, sullen, and obstinate, but though there was little probability that his services could ever be of any importance to the Europeans, it was thought expedient that his return should be insisted on, lest others should be induced to abscond from the vessels.

Pomurrey, in the presence of several other chiefs, asked Captain Vancouver, if, agreeably to his promise, he intended to display the fire-works that evening? To which he answered in the negative, alledging that when he made that promise, he knew not of the theft of the linen, and the elopement of *Towereroo;* in both of which unpardonable transactions many of the chiefs were accessaries. *Pomurrey* instantly replied, that *Towereroo* should be brought back the following day, either to the tents or the Discovery. The dinner being now served, ended the debate for the present; after which the brothers sallied out in search of the stolen linen, and speedily returned with a servant who had absconded. On examination, he accused Arreheah of being the thief, but acknowledged that being privy to the robbery, he had fled to avoid detection and punishment: this evidence was sufficient to prove himself an accomplice, and the captain, suspecting he was really the thief, ordered a halter to decorate his neck in *terrorem*, and sent him on board the ship to be confined in irons; with a positive assurance, that if the property was not restored, he should absolutely be hanged*. About noon on the 23d, the boat returned with the royal brothers, and *Towereroo*, attended by a fleet of canoes, laden with every species of provisions as presents from the royal family, and several other friends; carrying with them a profusion of valuable commodities on board, The

quantity

* A *mattow* had taken place, in consequence of the Captain's having confined a man named *Boba*, who had been suspected of being an accomplice in the theft of the linen; and of a report of the confinement of the queen-mother; but the misunderstanding among the parties was soon reconciled, and the effect of the mattow was consequently dissolved.

quantity was so great, that several laden canoes returned to the shore. *Pomurrey* and *Urripiah* observed, on the delivery of *Towcrerro*, that they had restored every thing in which Captain Vancouver was particularly interested; and that it was *Whytooa's* business to recover the linen for Mr. Broughton. The latter protested, that if the Europeans could remain till the morning, it should certainly be brought on board; but being now fully convinced, that little reliance could be placed on any of their assurances, the captain would not have waited to put his integrity to the test, had the wind been favourable.

Poatatou, and many other chiefs, finding the navigators intended to depart with the first fair wind, took their leave in the evening, lamenting the loss they should sustain; which was evidently increased by the neglect of a second display of fire-works. Many chiefs complained much of their having been disappointed, but the captain very judiciously replied, that, "If thefts, and other breaches of confidence had not been committed, and sanctioned, as he was confident they had been by the chiefs themselves, he should not have been under the painful necessity of denying them the promised entertainment, and they would have parted much better friends. On the arrival of another ship, he trusted, from this disappointment, they would all be taught to conduct themselves with more fidelity."

Pomurrey, and his wives, continued on board all night, and the next day produced no tidings of the linen. As not even a remote prospect remained that the navigators would regain their property, and as a favourable breeze from the eastward had presented itself for their service, on Tuesday the 24th, about ten in the morning, they sailed out of the bay. Pomurrey and his wives were their guests till they were beyond the reefs; they were now presented with an assortment of valuables, which gratified them exceedingly. Pomurrey requested, as a particular favour, that they might be saluted on their quitting the ship, which being readily complied with, they took a ceremonious leave.

The names of their sovereigns are highly venerated by these people, and, on Otoo's accession to the *Maro*, or girdle of royalty, a considerable alteration took place in the proper names of the chiefs; to which however it was not solely confined, but extended to their language, forty or fifty of the most usual words in conversation, having at present no affinity with their former meaning. Every inhabitant is compelled to adopt the new acceptation, the neglect of which is punished with extreme severity. Pomurrey frequently took the liberty of correcting Captain Vancouver, on his sometimes accidentally using the former mode of expression, declaring it was wrong, and that he ought not to practise it*.

During these hostile engagements, *Pomurrey* married the queen-mother, a near relation of his enemy, Maheine: this lady has few pretensions to beauty, having a masculine appearance, and being destitute of external charms and feminine softness; though possessing a mind, actuated by those amiable qualities which most adorn the human race. So truly gracious was her disposition, that it fully counterbalanced any disadvantages she might labour under, in a deficiency of personal attractions. The several revolutions which had taken place, and the particulars of the intermarriages, &c. are purposely omitted, as a minute detail of the birth, family, and connections of the monarchs and chiefs of these islands, would be deviating from the plan the editor wishes to pursue.

Considerable alterations are introduced in the military operations of these people. When their islands were first discovered, their wars were principally maritime; but they are now very differently conducted: though they have extended their excursions to remote parts, not a single war canoe was seen belonging to Otaheite. Conversing with *Urripiah* on this subject, he assured Captain Vancouver, that in their late contests, they had found them so unmanageable that they

* It may be necessary to relate, that shortly after the last departure of Captain Cook from these islands, many disputes had arisen between *Maheine* the usurping chief of Morea, and *Pomurrey*, (then Otoo) in some of whose wars *Maheine* was joined by other chiefs of the westward districts of Otaheite, by which means *Pomurrey* was unsuccessful, and his districts were laid entirely waste. Hence his majesty's benevolent intentions of rendering these people comfortable, became nearly frustrated. Most of the animals and plants which Captain Cook took care to deposit here, have fallen a sacrifice to the ravages of war. The black cattle were conveyed to Morea, where they now remain; and, from having bred, are now five in number, four cows and a bull. The latter, however, has received an injury, which will put a period to further propagation, till some additional assistance is contrived.

had given them up, and prosecuted their enterprizes by land*.

Though much encomium has been deservedly bestowed on the beauty of the female inhabitants of this country, they seem at present to have no immoderate claim to admiration from their personal charms. The natives are sensible of this, and freely admit that the cause of their present homeliness, is attributed to European visitors, to which many of their finest women have early fallen sacrifices. Beauty in this country, especially among the women, is a flower that quickly blossoms, and as quickly fades: it soon arrives to maturity, remains but a short time stationary, and rapidly decays†.

SECTION VI.

Proceed to the Sandwich Islands—Arrive off Owhyhee—Visit from Tianna and other Chiefs—Leave Towereroo at Owhyhee—Arrival at Attowai—Transactions there—The Prince and Regent visit the Ships—Fidelity of the Natives.

HAVING parted from their friends on the 24th, the navigators directed their course to the northward; and though they had been almost ten months absent from England, they were now to be considered only as having just commenced their voyage. But it was a satisfaction to them, that they had not been retarded by any inexcusable delays. A light easterly breeze brought them within sight of Titeroa; and on the 25th they observed Morea and Otaheite. Some of the inhabitants visited them from Titeroa, with a few fowls, fish, and cocoanuts to barter. They were daily attended by quantities of birds, which inhabit the low and half drowned islands of this ocean: on the 8th of February they deserted the Discovery, and on the 15th a few of them were seen again.

On the first of March a light breeze brought the navigators in sight of Owhyhee: as the day advanced, which was extremely pleasant, the wind, veering to the north-eastward, they were enabled to steer for the south point of Owhyhee, fourteen leagues distant. About midnight they passed to the westward of the south point of Owhyhee; and, in expectation of procuring some provisions and refreshments, as they passed the west course of this island, they sailed close within shore. In the morning of the 2d, they stood along shore to the northward: Several canoes came off with pigs and vegetables; among the latter were some excellent water melons. The natives, however, demanded an exorbitant return for these refreshments, and seemed perfectly indifferent about trading, or having any other com-

* Some circumstances respecting the young monarch *Otoo*, of whom favourable hopes are entertained when he becomes a man, deserve particular notice: among the first may be reckoned the curious restriction which prohibited his entering any of their habitations; his father, when *Otoo*, and sovereign of the island, was not thus interdicted, but visited their ships and tents as his inclination prompted, without drawing upon the people those inconveniences, which would have been the consequence of the young king's having done the same. The origin of this mysterious restraint Captain Vancouver could never satisfactorily discover; but from certain occurrences, he was induced to believe that a remarkable ceremony would speedily take place, and occupy a considerable space of time; after which *Otoo* will no longer be carried on men's shoulders; but have his full liberty to walk about. It is also remarkable, that no person of consequence or respectability was ever seen about the young monarch: even his nearest relations, though they honoured and venerated his high office, did not appear to manifest the least regard for his person.

† The European animals and plants deposited here by Captain Cook, and some other navigators, for the purposes of propagation, had been nearly destroyed by the late conflicts of contending parties. To the race of animals the present navigators could add but two Cape geese, and a gander: they planted some vine-cuttings which had flourished well on board, some orange and lemon trees, and an assortment of garden-seeds; but as nature has bountifully supplied this country with great variety of vegetables, the natives seem little desirous of any addition. The *ava*, and the cloth plant, are the principal articles which the Otaheitans take delight in cultivating. They have, however, a few indifferent shaddocks, some tolerably good maize, coarse radishes, and a few pods of capsicon: these seem to be the only productions of the numerous vegetable exotics that have been introduced into this island. Goats have fallen into dis-repute, from the inhabitants not relishing their milk, nor the flesh of the animal, on account of its deficiency of fat. A sufficient number of them were, however, selected to establish a breed of those animals on the Sandwich Islands, should they be found acceptable to the natives.

munication with the Europeans. At noon on the 3d, Karakakooa bore north about five miles distant. Several canoes having stood out to sea after the navigators in the morning, they now brought to that they might traffic with them; and were soon honoured with a visit from *Tianna*. He was received with that respect which was due to his distinguished character.

After some complimentary conversation, *Tianna* hastened to inform them, that since his return from China, he had resided on this island, where many severe conflicts had taken place, in which he had taken part with *Tamaahmaah* against *Teamawheere*, who had, since the death of *Tereeoboo*, shared the government with *Tamaahmaah*. In one of these engagements *Tianna* having shot *Teamawheere*, a complete victory was obtained, and the island was divided between the two chiefs.

Being informed that Captain Vancouver proposed going directly to the Leeward Islands, *Tianna* requested he might accompany him, and be permitted to take his wives and retinue to sleep on board; with which request the Captain thought proper to comply. *Tianna* viewed every transaction on board with attentive admiration, and seemed particularly surprized at the number of the crew. In the evening he held frequent conversations with *Towereroo*, and in the course of the night was several times upon deck to ascertain the number of persons on duty. The retinue of *Tianna* on this occasion, was intended to have been numerous: part of them were to attend him on board the Discovery, and the remainder to proceed in the Chatham: but after several consultations on this business, *Tianna* declined accompanying the navigators to Attowai. But from the conversation he had held with *Towereroo*, he supposed that lad might be of importance to him, and as he promised *Towereroo* a handsome establishment, Captain Vancouver agreed to fix with *Tianna* for the present*.

Standing along shore with a light breeze in the evening, the Captain was surprized on being hailed from a large canoe, in broken English, requesting to be admitted on board. This favour being complied with, the speaker proved to be a youth named *Tarehooa*, a native of Attowai, who had accompanied a Mr. John Ingram, commanding an American ship laden with furs, from north-west America. His present master, he said, was a chief named *Kahowmotoo*, of great importance. Captain Vancouver was immediately made known to this chief, who presented him with three fine hogs, for which he was repaid by barter; but, like *Tianna*, he was greatly mortified that he had not received an equivalent in arms or ammunition†.

A light breeze advanced the Discovery towards the north point of Owhyhee; on the 6th, being well in with the island of Tahoorowa, the Chatham's signal was made to denote their situation in bearing up along the south side of that island; but as neither this, nor some previous signals had been acknowledged, the Chatham was supposed to have remained becalmed under the high land of Owhyhee; and Woahoo being appointed their next rendezvous, a long separation could not be expected. In the afternoon, a few natives visited them from Ranai, but they brought hardly any thing for barter; indeed the dreary appearance of their miserable island apologized for their coming empty-handed. On the 7th

* *Tianna* having several goats in his possession, the captain did not present him with any of those animals; but he gave him some vine and orange plants, some almonds, and an assortment of garden seeds. After receiving several presents in return for ten small hogs, he took his leave of the captain about five in the afternoon, taking *Towereroo* with him. But though he was satisfied with his reception, and was to receive the salutation of four guns on his departure, he was evidently much chagrined at not being able to procure any fire-arms or ammunition; which was repeatedly and anxiously solicited by himself and all his countrymen, and as uniformly refused.

† The next morning they were abreast of the south point of Toca-yah-ho bay, near the residence of *Kahowmotoo*. That chief was extremely desirous of procuring vegetable productions, and was made very happy by receiving some fine orange plants, and a packet of different garden seeds to propagate which he promised the most diligent attention.

Tarehooa, who had now assumed the name of Jack, which he preferred, had been retained by Mr. Ingram in the capacity of a servant, but was now elevated to the office of interpreter in the service of this chief, for which he was not unqualified. Jack expressed a desire of remaining on board, and to accompany the ship on her voyage. As he appeared to be shrewd and active, the captain thought he might be rendered useful, and accepted of his services on the 5th; to which the chief consented, though not without a mixture of regret, and regard for Jack's future advantage. After being saluted with four guns, and taking an affectionate leave of his interpreter, *Kahowmotoo* parted, but not without the most friendly assurance, that whenever the captain should do him the honour to visit his district, he should be abundantly supplied with refreshments.

they

they directed their course along the south-side of Woahoo, bearing west six or seven miles distance, whose eastern shores seemed like those of Ranai, consisting principally of high rocks, and precipices which fall perpendicularly into the sea. On the south-east part of this island, two remarkable prominences appear, about seven miles asunder. Continuing their course about nine, they hauled round the reef about a quarter of a mile from that point, and had soundings from twenty-two to ten fathoms, in which latter depth they entered about ten o'clock. The second promontory has on its top the appearance of a crater formed by volcanic eruptions.

As the quarter-deck required caulking, the carpenters were ordered upon that duty. Some of the natives from the shore visited the ship, bringing a scanty supply of refreshments, among which were very excellent musk and water-melons. The situation occupied in this bay was called Whyteete by the natives, and was as eligible as most of the anchoring places in these islands. The inhabitants were orderly and docile, and never presumed to come on board without permission; and when that could not be obtained, they quietly remained in their canoes along side.

Information was circulated, and generally believed at Owhyhee, that *Titere* and *Taio*, with many other chiefs and warriors of this island, were on a hostile expedition at Morotoi and Mowee. This intelligence, in some degree, accounted for the small number of inhabitants who were seen there, by the wretched condition of their canoes, and the scanty supply of provisions which they brought to market. The villages on the shores were numerous, and in excellent condition; and the surrounding country exhibited a high degree of cultivation and fertility.

Though the natives of the Sandwich islands* have been represented, by former visitors, as daring and unmanageable, our navigators declare they are remarkable for their docility: perhaps

* These islands appear to have been first discovered by Captain *Cook*, and were so named by that great navigator in gratitude to the earl of Sandwich, a minister who had warmly promoted his labours. In Owhyhee, the largest of these islands, and of all that has been found in Polynesia, is about two hundred and eighty miles in circumference; Captain Cook was unfortunately slain here by the natives, in February 1779.

The natives of Marquesa islands, classed next to the Sandwich Islands in the geography of Polynesia, have been thus recently described in the Missionary voyage, 1799, 4to *p.* 145.—"Our first visitors from the shore came early; they were seven beautiful young women, swimming quite naked, except a few green leaves tied round their middle: they kept playing round the ship for three hours, calling Waheine! (that is women) till several of the native men had got on board; one of whom, being the chief of the island, requested that his sister might be taken on board, which was complied with: she was of a fair complexion, inclining to a healthy yellow, with a tint of red in her cheek; was rather stout, but possessing such symmetry of features, as did all her companions, that, as models for the statuary and painter, their equals can seldom be found. Our Otaheitan girl, who was tolerably fair and had a comely person, was notwithstanding greatly eclipsed by these women, and I believe felt her inferiority in no small degree; however she was superior in the amiableness of her manners, and possessed more of the softness and tender feeling of the sex; she was ashamed to see a woman upon the deck quite naked, and supplied her with a complete dress of Otaheitan cloth, which set her off to great advantage, and encouraged those in the water, whose numbers were now greatly increased, to importune for admission; and out of pity to them, as we saw they would not return, we took them on board; but they were in a measure disappointed, for they could not all succeed as well as the first in getting clothed; nor did our mischievous goats even suffer them to keep their green leaves, but as they turned to avoid them, they were attacked on each side alternately, and completely stripped naked."

It may be added that, "The natives are said to surpass all other nations in symmetry and shape, and regularity of features."—Also that, "Some of the women are nearly as fair as Europeans, and among them tatooing is not so universal.

After leaving Easter Island, the unfortunate La Perouse visited the Sandwich Islands, which he seems to suppose are the same with the Mesa of Spanish Charts; though from an error, in not observing the currents, they are placed sixteen or seventeen degrees more to the east, an usual fault in the Spanish charts, which thus bring many Polynesian islands too near the American shores: but the French navigator subjoins an honourable testimony in favour of Cook. "Full of respect and admiration for the memory of that great man, he will always appear to me the greatest of navigators." Still Caledonia, and what is called Sandwich Land in the antarctic ocean, seem acknowledged new discoveries, of our great navigator.

La Perouse visited the Isle of Mowee, to the north of Owhyhee, and observed the mountains, the woods, and the cascades. The habitations of the natives were so numerous, that a space of three or four leagues might be supposed a single village. La Perouse confirms the account of their mild and beneficent manners; and in general refers to the English narratives, the exactness of which he particularly applauds. *Pinkerton's Mod. Geo.* II. 501.

The Missionary Voyage gives the following *feeling* description of the females of the Marquesas. "It was not a little affecting to see our seamen repairing the rigging, attended by a group of the most beautiful females, who were employed to pass the ball, or carry the tar-bucket, &c.; and this they did with the greatest assiduity, often besmearing themselves with the tar in the execution of their office. No ship's company, without great restraints from God's Grace, could ever have resisted such temptations." *p.* 135.

their manifest superiority in numbers, and their regularity in point of military government, might keep them perfectly in awe; for, when they were permitted to come on board; every man of them seemed extremely afraid of fire-arms. When they saw the centinels mounting guard round the ship, they all hastily paddled towards the shore, and could not, without much difficulty, be prevailed on to return.

Jack, the new ship-mate, was now found very useful: he constantly represented the Europeans in the most formidable point of view to all his countrymen, magnifying their powers, and augmenting their numbers; protesting that they were not traders, like many which they had been accustomed to see, but that they were all mighty warriors belonging to king George. Hence it may easily be conjectured that his countrymen became much intimidated; and as this little display could be productive of no ill consequences, Jack was permitted to proceed in his encomiums.

Having been abundantly supplied with every thing but water at Otaheite, Captain Vancouver thought it expedient to procure a sufficiency of that valuable fluid; for this purpose, attended by two armed boats, and a guard of seven marines, accompanied by messrs. Mudge, Whidbey, and Menzies, the captain landed, and they were received by the natives in a very orderly manner. Two men, armed with sticks, kept the spectators at a proper distance; for which they were rewarded with some presents. On their enquiring for water, they were informed that some brackish ponds could supply them near the beach, but very excellent water might be had at a little distance, to which they readily undertook to conduct them. As these natives appeared friendly and pacific, the boats were left in charge of Mr. Swaine and Mr. Manby, and the party proceeded, with their guard, to obtain the promised supply. They followed their guides through a village to a handsome causeway, of the breadth of about twelve feet, with a ditch on each side.

This opened to their view a spacious plain, appearing like the open common fields in England; but, on advancing, it appeared that a considerable part of it was divided into fields, which were separated from each other by low stone walls, and in a flourishing state of cultivation. Having proceeded about a mile from the beach, they arrived at the rivulet they were in quest of; it was about five or six feet wide, and two or three feet deep. The water it contained was excellent, but as the road was too rough and hard to admit o rolling the casks over it to so great a distance, a number of the inhabitants undertook to carry what was required in gourds, on a promise of being properly rewarded for their trouble. The civility of the natives induced the party to extend their walk through the plantations, which they found extremely pleasant. In this excursion they beheld the land in a high state of cultivation, principally under immediate crops of *taro*, and abounding with a variety of wild fowl.

Nature, in her dispensations of vegetable food, seems almost to have confined the inhabitants of Woahoo to the *taro* plant, the raising of which is attended with care, labour, and ingenuity. In many of the progressive operations of cultivating this plant, whether planting, weeding, or gathering, the inhabitants must be continually up to their middle in mud, and exposed to the rays of a vertical sun: but on the plains of Otaheite, the surface teems, almost spontaneously, with the most abundant produce of esculent vegetables, and without the assistance of aqueducts, which these people are obliged to construct with great labour and ingenuity, to encourage them even to hope for a crop.

It is not only in the vegetable kingdom that nature seems to have shewn her partiality: the human species, though originally of the same nation, differ extremely. It seems evident too that the comparative benevolence of the Otaheitans, and these people, was proportioned to the fertility of the soil in which they respectively existed. When the Europeans landed at Otaheite, the effusions of kindness and hospitality were conspicuous in the countenance of every one they met. Every one endeavoured to anticipate their wishes by the most fascinating attention, and strove to be foremost in performing any little service they might require; entreating them to accept of refreshments at every house they approached, displaying all that suavity and kindness that could be expected among the most polished nations. At Woahoo they were regarded with coolness and austerity, and their requests were heard with apathy or indifference. These people exhibited no assiduity to please, nor appeared in the least afraid of offending: they offered no refreshments, nor invited any one to their houses. Their general behaviour was decently civil, perhaps to give them a chance of deriving

deriving some acquisitions, which would be unattainable by any other mode of conduct. They also knew that the Europeans were too much upon their guard to suffer any indignity: Justice, however, requires that their two guides should be favourably mentioned, who had each caused a hog and vegetables to be prepared for the entertainment of the party: on their return the supper was ready, when they were much intreated to partake of it, but it was too late for them to accept of their civility, though they permitted their intended repast to be put into the boats. The guides were then presented with an acknowledgment; and after renewing the request of a supply from the brook, which was promised to be furnished the next day, they returned on board.

About midnight the Chatham arrived, and anchored near the Discovery; when it appeared, as Captain Vancouver had suggested, that Mr. Broughton had been becalmed the evening they had parted, and not being able to see the Discovery at day-light, she steered to the southern side of the island, standing towards Mowee, where he found an eligible anchoring place. The few natives near the neighbourhood conducted themselves civilly and submissively, but they produced so small a quantity of water in the course of the next day, that Mr. Broughton saw he had no probability of being supplied through their means, and resolved to proceed to Attowai; he therefore weighed anchor, and steered to the southward*.

The boats, guard, &c. of the Discovery being in readiness, Captain Vancouver was accompanied in the yawl by Mr. Menzies; Mr. Puget followed with the cutter and launch: the surf was high, but did not prevent their landing with safety, and they were received by the few natives present with that distant civility, which they experienced at Woahoo. A man named Reehooa engaged to preserve decorum, who, knowing they intended to remain some days, caused two good houses to be *tabooed* for their service; one for the officers; and the other for those who were to labour, as well as those who composed the guard, consisting of a serjeant and six marines. An allotment of a great space of ground was also appointed, for the sole use and accommodation of the Europeans, which was preserved unmolested by two natives of authority. Those natives whowere not permitted to come within the lines, were employed in rolling the water-casks to and from the boats; for which service they thought themselves amply rewarded with a few beads, and nails†.

Intelligence had been gathered, both here and

* White bay is formed by the land retreating a little round the south point of Woahoo; and though open about half the compass in the southern quarters, is certainly the most convenient anchoring place in the island. A fine breeze brought them round the south-west part of Woahoo, five leagues distant. The point is low flat land with a reef round it, extending about a quarter of a mile from the shore. At eight in the evening, Woahoo bore north, three leagues distant. The Chatham being under the land becalmed, was soon lost sight of. The Discovery continued her course, and to the astonishment of the captain, came within sight of Atowai by half past four the next morning. At day-break they bore away along the south side of Attowai for Whymea bay, where they anchored about nine.

Being anchored, they were visited by several of the natives, who were very orderly, submissive, and well provided. About noon on the 9th the Chatham arrived, but could not anchor till sun-set, when she moored near the station which the Discovery had taken.

† The afternoon being remarkably pleasant, and the captain, apprehending no interruption to the harmony that then existed, proceeded along the river-side towards the sea, attended by Mr. Menzies, Jack, and Rehooa. The low country, it appeared, was principally occupied with the *taro* plant, cultivated as at Woahoo; interspersed with sugar canes of luxurious growth, and some sweet potatoes. As they proceeded their attention was directed towards a perpendicular cliff, which now presented itself, and which would have stopped their further progress into the country, had not a well-constructed wall served as a pass, and formed an aqueduct to convey the water brought thither from a considerable distance, which furnished an abundant supply for watering their plantations. This wall, which does equal credit to the projector and the builder, terminated the extent of their walk; from whence they returned through the plantation, which was so highly cultivated as to impress the beholders with a favourable opinion of the industry and ingenuity of the inhabitants. On the arrival of this small party at the beach, and the captain finding every thing in good order, he left Mr. Puget in charge of them, and returned on board.

The reception of the Europeans at Attowai was not of that friendly nature they had experienced from their southern friends; but the eagerness with which the men assisted in promoting the prostitution of the women, and the willingness of the whole sex, without the least exception, to surrender their persons to the men without importunity, incurred aversion, and disgust. Though much obscenity has been attributed to the inhabitants of Otaheite and the Society Islands, Captain Vancouver says—"No indecency that ever came under my observation, could be compared with the excessive wantonness presented in this excursion." He adds, however, that he supposes this excess of licentiousness is a new acquirement, taught them by the different civilized voluptuaries, who for several years past have been their constant visitors.

at Woahoo, that some Englishmen were resident in this island. One of them, a youth about seventeen years of age, whose name was Rowbottom, came on board here on the 10th of March in a large double canoe, who said he was a native of Derbyshire; that he had sailed from England five years before that period in an Indiaman to China, and had quitted that ship that he might engage himself in some of the vessels in the fur trade between North-West America and China, and that he had ever since been in the American service. He informed Captain Vancouver that John Williams a Welchman, and James Coleman an Irishman, had been left at Onehow, for the purpose of returning to this island, to collect sandal-wood and pearls for John Kendrick, an American, commanding the brig Lady Washington; in whose service they now continued at the wages of eight dollars per month. Rowbottom was accompanied by two chiefs, one named *No-ma-tee-he-tee*, the other *Too;* both of whom, he said, would be found useful at Attowai and Onehow. On making each of these chiefs a present, with which they seemed highly pleased, they said they were ordered by the prince *Ta-moo-ere* (a boy who is the eldest son of *Taio*, the sovereign of this and the neighouring islands) to say that *Enemow*, the regent, and *Tamooere* would see Captain Vancouver in a day or two. A messenger was instantly dispatched to request that no circumstance might long deprive him of the honour of his company, and as a pledge of his friendly disposition, a large axe was sent him as a present.

The young Englishman observed that it was highly important to watch the conduct of these people; for though their force was so great as to deter them from attempting any hostile measures, it could not be determined how far their ambitious views might lead them; as since their success in taking a schooner at Owhyhee, they had even attempted to take a brig at Mowee. *Nomateehetee* and *Too*, with several other natives, acknowledged the truth of this intelligence, and highly reprobated the inhuman murder of the crew; who were all put to death excepting one man. *Tianna* was accused of having projected and even perpetrated the horrible massacre; and it was generally understood that, if he had accompanied them from Owhyhee, he would have been put to death the moment he had landed. These reports, and the observations of the natives, induced Captain Vancouver to believe, that *Tianna's* intentions of accompanying him, which he afterwards thought proper to decline, were not dictated by the most friendly and disinterested motives*.

Nomateehetee returned with them to dinner; *Too* continued with *Rehooa* to assist the party on shore. The caulkers having now finished the quarter deck of the Discovery, they were dispatched on board the Chatham to perform a similar service. Another of the party left by the Lady Washington now made his appearance: his name was Coleman, who had been declared an Irishman by Rowbottom; but he positively denied that assertion, and asserted that he was an American, born at New York. In many respects he had adopted the customs of the natives, and particularly in their dress, or rather in their nakedness. Excepting the *maro*, which he did not wear with much delicacy, he was perfectly naked, and the colour of his skin was not much whiter than the fairest of these people. On being asked what he had done with his former clothes, he sneeringly replied, he had hung them up in the house to excite the admiration of the natives—seemingly exulting in having degenerated into a savage mode of life. He asked Captain Vancouver, at the command of the prince, how long he intended to stay. The captain begged his highness might be informed that he should depart as soon he had procured a supply of water; and that he wished to have an interview with him and Enemoh, but that he could not be detained on that account; as a further pledge of his favourable disposition, he also sent the prince a piece of scarlet cloth. With this embassy he set off, after assuring the captain that the prince and regent, with several other chiefs, would attend him the following day†.

A supply

* Mr. Broughton then attended the captain on shore, with the two chiefs and the young Englishman, who was found very useful as an interpreter. The navigators, with proper attendants, went to examine a river; after which they landed, and considered themselves about three miles from the sea-side, to which they returned by a path near the foot of a mountain. Here they were, if possible, more pestered and disgusted with the obscene overtures of the women, than they were on their former excursion.

† A pleasant afternoon invited Captain Vancouver to make an excursion along the beach; and on returning, he saw the hills to the eastward to be on fire. He was far from

A supply of water being completed on the 12th, and the fresh supply of hogs and vegetables received from the shore, it was the captain's intention to sail the next day for Onehow; as the re-appearance of the fires on the hills, and the absence of the prince and regent, indicated a possibility that the natives might have resolved to discontinue their former services and good behaviour. To effect the embarkation, Mr. Puget had procured a double canoe, which was stoved and swamped the first trip, but every person had fortunately been saved: by this accident two musquets, a cross cut-saw, three axes, and a set of accoutrements, went to the bottom, but one of the musquets had been recovered. These, and other circumstances, created much anxiety in the captain's breast; but at day-break he was agreeably relieved by a message, informing him that the prince and regent were arrived at Whymea.

On the 13th Mr. Puget was dispatched to the shore to obtain the articles which had been left behind, and to impress the prince and regent with their friendly disposition, and prevail on them to visit the ships. In these respects he fortunately succeeded, and communicated to Captain Vancouver the following particulars of his reception.—On landing, he was graciously and ceremoniously received by *Enemoh*, who is an elderly chief; at a little distance the young prince was seated on a man's lap, to whom Mr. Puget instantly paid his respects, and was well pleased that he approved of the presents delivered to him on this occasion.

Several articles belonging to the officers had been entrusted to the care of Williams and Nomateehe the preceding evening, which, to their infinite credit, was now faithfully restored,

Mr. Puget informed *Enemoh*, that he was ready to attend them on board. *Enemoh* replied, that he had no objection with respect to himself; but the chiefs who were present, and some women of great consequence, required a hostage to be left with them on shore, while those on board were honoured with the company of the prince, and another illustrious personage named *Tipoone*, who was his principal companion. This intimation was immediately attended to, and Mr. Manby and Mr. Sheriff were ordered to stay behind. This point being adjusted, a general approbation was expressed, and the regent with some attendants embarked; declaring, that, on his return, the young prince should go on board, observing that the island could not be left either without the prince or the regent.

A dozen hogs, with a quantity of mats and cloth, being presented by *Enemoh*, Captain Vancouver made a suitable return, with which, however, he did not appear satisfied: an explanation ensued, when it was acknowledged by *Enemoh* that the present made him was a liberal one, but he would gladly resign the whole for a musquet or a pistol. These engines of destruction had been ardently solicited by every native of consequence with whom he had any transactions, and he had been frequently perplexed how to avoid complying with their importunities, without giving offence, and encouraging the practice of inhumanity. But, as a plausible excuse for his repeated inattention to these sort of requests, he informed *Enemoh* that the ship, and every thing she contained, belonged to King George, who had *tabooed* musquets, pistols, and several other particulars. Gunpowder and balls were then earnestly solicited; but being informed that those articles were equally restricted, he became silent and contemplative. Finding, at length, that he had no prospect of success in procuring his favourite weapons, he suddenly grew cheerful, and shook the captain heartily by the hand; declaring the presents he had received were very ample, and only lamented that the arms and ammunition had been *tabooed*. His importance was afterwards highly gratified on being saluted with four guns on his departure, and he took leave with every appearance of being perfectly satisfied.

Mr. Puget attended the venerable chief and his suite on board the Chatham, to pay their respects to Mr. Broughton; and, having received some

from being pleased with this appearance, knowing that fires are generally resorted to by uncivilized nations as a signal to assemble the distant inhabitants, when an enterprize is resolved to be carried into effect. On enquiring the cause of this extensive conflagration, some declared it was to announce the arrival of the prince, the regent, and some other chiefs; others contended that it was only to consume the weeds. The difference in opinion concerning the cause of so unusual an appearance was not very satisfactory, but the captain did not think it prudent to manifest his apprehensions by a hasty retreat. He desired, however, that Mr. Puget would be vigilantly on his guard; and measures were so effectually taken that little danger could be apprehended. The night, however, passed without the least molestation, and in the morning the natives were trading, as usual.

presents

presents from that gentleman, they proceeded on shore. Mr. Puget was greatly delighted with the idea of the intended visit, but he was afterwards extremely disappointed on being informed that the embarkation of the prince and his companion would not take place. On his searching for the cause, *Enemoh*, with some hesitation, declared, that the two gentlemen, who had been left as hostages were seen on the beach, near the boats, and were supposed to be going on board without waiting the return of the prince to the shore. Mr. Puget, however, removed their apprehensions, and all objections ceased: when the young prince and his young companion got eagerly into the boat, which immediately put off, leaving the hostages in their former situation*.

Dinner being now ready, his young friend did not fail to partake of the repast, but the prince was infinitely more entertained with the objects that surrounded him, and would have returned perfectly satisfied with his visit, had nothing more been offered him. When dinner was ended, Captain Vancouver presented *Tamooere* with several very valuable articles, among which some of them particularly attracted his attention. As an aditional testimony of his approbation of their conduct, the captain assured them that, if they would remain on board till it was dark, they should be entertained with a display of fire-works. *Tamooere* was well satisfied that the intentions of the Europeans were pacific and friendly; and though perfectly reconciled to his situation on board, he entreated permission to go on shore; and, if *Enemoh* had no objection, he would return. He intreated them to remain a few days, to give him an apportunity of making some return for their civilities in hogs and vegetables; but as the navigators had accomplished all their necessary business, and wished to obtain from Onehow a stock of yams (which could not then be had at Attowai) he informed the prince that he should depart for Onehow in the course of the night, if the wind should prove favourable.

After attending the prince on a visit to the Chatham, he returned with him to the shore, where the party was very favourably received. The prince was conveyed on a man's shoulders, and seated in the house which was occupied by the officers belonging to the navigators; where he was joined by *Enemoh*, with a train of attendants, who unanimously expressed their gratitude for the many favours they had received. Hearing nothing respecting the promised supply of provisions, Mr. Puget took his leave and went on board; and the young prince, conceiving the fire-works might be conveniently seen from the beach, requested to be indulged in that particular.

As the young sovereign was anxiously waiting, with multitudes of his countrymen, in expectation of something new, Captain Vancouver ordered some sky and water-rockets to be displayed. *Nomateehetee*, and *Too*, with many of the natives who had begged a passage to Onehow, then beheld the rockets with infinite astonishment and admiration; and the vast concourse of people assembled on shore, enjoyed the wonderful spectacle, which they emphatically proved by their repeated bursts of acclamations.

That the natives have sometimes been unfaithfully dealt with, is evident from the prince demanding a hostage; and transgressions may have been committed by the natives as well as by strangers, which may have produced mutual misunderstandings; mutual aggressions may also have arisen from the want of a perfect knowledge of each others language: but that they are capable of being taught by proper examples, how to respect the property of others, is evident by their exercising those principles of rectitude which directed the honourable restoration of the musquet and tools recovered from the sea†.

Early in the morning of the 14th, the Dis-

* The young prince was about twelve years of age, and seemed to exhibit much cheerfulness and affability: his features resembled those of an European, being free from that natural ferocity which generally characterize these islanders, and which were so conspicuous in the persons about him. At first he was considerably agitated, which was manifested not only by the sensibility of his countenance, but also by his actions, in clinging close to the captain, and often saluting him, according to their custom, by touching noses. Some trifling presents, however, soon dissipated his fears, and gave him confidence to visit every part of the ship: his enquiries and observations were pertinent and sensible, beyond what could be expected from a youth of his tender age. In every particular he surpassed his friend *Typoone*.

† No particular marks of external respect were now shewn to the royal party, either from the subordinate chiefs or common people; but when Mr. Vancouver was at these islands with Captain Cook, prostration was usually required, even by the snbordinate chiefs. On this occasion, the prince's superior rank was only proclaimed by a guard, consisting of about thirty men, armed with iron pahooas, who attended the royal personages in their excursions.

covery sailed with a fine northerly breeze for Onehow, in order to procure a sufficiency of yams and other vegetables, while the decks of the Chatham were caulking and putting in order. On her arrival at Onehow, she anchored in the south of the island. *Nomateehetee* expressed a wish that she had proceeded further west, as a more convenient situation to procure refreshments. But the station which had been taken was not very improperly chosen, for in the afternoon of the 16th, a very ample supply had been purchased, and the Chatham's deck being now in a state of perfection, the ships proceeded together towards the coast of America. On their departure, the two Englishmen, with other friends, took their leave, having first been rewarded for their services far beyond their expectations.

The Sandwich islands*, it must be acknowledged, afforded the navigators but a scanty supply of provisions; but scarcity was not solely the cause, for abundance of every kind might have been readily procured, had they been willing to purchase them with arms and ammunition. The great avidity of the natives for becoming possessed of these destructive weapons, has doubtless been increased by the success of *Tianna*, who owes his present exaltation to fire-arms; some of which he imported from China, and others he afterwards obtained from different traders. His example has created in every chief an inordinate thirst for power, and a spirit of enterprize and ambition seems generally diffused among them.

The apparent alteration in the several governments of these islands, since their first discovery by Captain Cook, has arisen from incessant war, which the commerce for European arms and ammunition must encourage to a most destructive and deplorable extent. If a decision may be allowed from a comparative view of the first visits of the Resolution and Discovery, and the numerous throngs which then appeared, and the few which now make their appearance here, the mortality must have been very considerable. It may, however, be objected, that such visitors are no longer a novelty, and the curiosity of the natives is less excited.

Captain Vancouver had occasion to observe, that at Whyteete, though the town was extensive, and the habitations numerous, few inhabitants were to be seen; and many of the houses were almost abandoned. Whymea, a village, has lost two thirds of its size since 1779: the places on which houses were most numerous on his former visits, are now occupied by grass and weeds. That wars and commotions had caused this devastation appeared from the result of his enquiries off Owhyhee; when it was proved that none of the chiefs, with whom he had formerly been acquainted, were now living, except *Tamaahmaah*; and that few of them had died a natural death: most of them having been slain in these lamentable contests.

SECTION V.

Passage from the Sandwich Islands to the Coast of Africa—See the Land of New Albion—Arrive in Port Discovery—Proceed along its Coast—Fall in with an American Vessel—Enter the supposed Straits of De Fuca—Proceed up the Straits—Coast of New Albion—Boat Excursion—Quit Port Discovery—Description of Port Discovery, and the adjacent Country.

IN the morning of the 18th of March the navigators took their departure from the Sandwich islands. Nothing particular occurred till the 7th of April, when they found themselves in the midst

* The Sandwich Isles appear to have been first discovered by Captain Cook. The people of the Sandwich Islands are of a deep olive complexion, muscular, and well proportioned; and the productions differ little from those of Otaheite, being little further to the north of the equator, than the Society Islands are to the south. There is one considerable island, about two hundred and eighty British miles in circumference, called Owhyhee, where Captain Cook was unfortunately slain by the natives, February 1779. The best eulogy of this great man will be found, dispersed through this and other Geographical productions, which from him acquire a great accession of knowledge. These islands were

midst of immense numbers of the sea blubber of the species of the Medusa Villilia; the surface of the ocean, as far as the eye could reach, was so completely covered with these animals, that hardly a pea could be dropped clear of them. The largest did not exceed four inches in circumference; a beautiful blue worm, much resembling a caterpillar, was found adhering to them. This worm, or caterpillar, was considered by Mr. Menzies as a new genus. In the afternoon they saw a bird, supposed to be of the duck or hawk kind, flying to the north-west, but at too great a distance to discover its character. Since their leaving the land they had daily been visited by one or two large birds, which were sometimes taken for the quebrantahuessos, and sometimes for an albatross. On the 8th, however, this point was determined by Mr. Menzies, who fortunately killed a brown albatross, strongly resembling those which swarm about Tierra el del Fuego, vulgarly denominated Mother Carey's Geese. This albatross had a white mark extending from the corner of the eye towards the neck. From tip to tip of each wing it measured seven feet, and from the extremity of the beak, to that of the tail, three feet*.

In the morning of the 16th, the wind blew with such violence as to make it necessary that the topsails should be close reefed; the squalls were very heavy, seeming to portend an approaching storm. No soundings could be had with a hundred and twenty fathoms of line: at ten the wind veered, and blew a moderate gale. The necessary signals made to the Chatham not having been answered, and not seeing her at day-break on the 17th, the Discovery abandoned her course to go in search of her: about five she was seen from the mast-head, when the latter bore down to her, and having joined company, they again directed their route to the eastward.

About twelve they passed great quantities of drift wood, sea-weed, grass, &c. Plenty of ducks, shags, puffins, and other aquatic birds were seen flying around. Other circumstances also indicated the vicinity of land, though the eye could not penetrate farther than three or four miles distant, the weather becoming thick and rainy. At four in the afternoon they reached soundings at the depth of fifty three fathoms, and the land was discovered at the distance of about two leagues. After proceeding along the coast of New Albion till the 24th, they were under the necessity of coming to an anchor in thirty nine fathoms water; the northernmost extremity of the main land, which is formed by low land projecting from the high rocky coast a considerable way into the sea. This Captain Vancouver distinguished by the name of Cape Orford, in honour of his much respected friend, George Earl of Orford.

They had not long anchored before a canoe was perceived paddling towards the ship: and without invitation or encouragement ventured immediately along-side. In the course of the afternoon, two others visited the Discovery, and some repaired to the Chatham. The deportment of these people was pleasing and insinuative; their countenances exhibiting nothing ferocious: their features are of the general European cast, and their colour is a light olive. They are not only

so named in gratitude to the Earl of Sandwich, a minister who had warmly promoted his measures. Captain King represents them as a mild and affectionate people, free from the Otaheitan levity, and the proud gravity of those of the Friendly Isles. The climate appears to be more temperate than that of the West Indies; and in Owhyhee the mountains arrest the clouds, and produce rain inland, while there is sun-shine on the shore. The winds seem generally easterly, and there is a regular land and sea breeze.

* The weather continued pleasant with light variable breezes till the 10th. In case of an unavoidable separation, Captain Vancouver appointed the next rendezvous in Berkley's sound; yet while they were so fortunate as to keep together, he was determined to fall in with the coast of New Albion, as far southward of that station as circumstances would admit. Several small whales and grampusses had lately surrounded the ship; and this afternoon, about twenty whales of the spermaceti kind were playing in the water. The immense number of the medusa, with which this region abounds, may probably draw these animals here in pursuit of food. Advancing very pleasantly towards the east, they gradually lost sight of the medusa villilia, which had attended them over seven degrees of longitude.

The coast of New Albion seems to be chiefly Alpine; and the most remarkable mountain, seems to be that called St. Elias by the Russian navigators; and which, it has been affirmed to be visible at sea at no less a distance than sixty leagues. La Perouse observes that the primitive mountains of granite or slate rise from the sea, yet the summits are covered with perpetual snow, and immense glaciers wind round the cavities. The natives he has minutely described, and says that he has always found savages, barbarous, deceitful, and wicked. Their most singular practice is the slitting and distending the under-lip, so as to beautify the females with two mouths. The lofty mountains, which La Pérouse computes at more than ten thousand feet in height, terminate at Cross Sound; but the Alpine ridges probably extend, with few interruptions, as far as California.

only punctuated, like the south-sea islanders, but the skin has many other marks, apparently from wounds or injuries they may have received in their excursions through the forests, with hardly any cloathing that could protect them. Their stature was beneath the middle size, none of those who were seen exceeding five feet six inches in height: they were tolerably well formed, though slender; and seemed to prefer cleanliness to the filthy custom of daubing their bodies with paint. Their hair was long, black, neatly combed, and generally tied in a club behind; though some of them form it also into a club before. Their garments, which nearly covered them, consisted principally of the skins of deer, bear, fox, and otter. Their canoes, which are capable of carrying about eight persons, are formed like a butcher's tray, being clumsily wrought out of a single tree*.

The navigators remained in this situation till near midnight, when they weighed and stood to and fro till day-light on the 25th. Noon on the 28th brought them within sight of land, which was supposed to be that denominated Destruction Island. This island is by far the largest detached piece of land that has yet been observed on the coast. It is about a league in circumference, low, and almost flat on the top, presenting a very barren prospect, having only one or two dwarf-trees at each end: one or two canoes were seen paddling near it. To the astonishment of our navigators, no inhabitants were seen, excepting to the southward of Cape Orford and this place; nor were any circumstances noticed that indicated a probability of the country being inhabited. At four o'clock on the 29th a sail was discovered to the westward standing in shore; which was thought a very great novelty; no vessel having been seen but the Chatham, during the last eight months. She hoisted American colours, and fired a gun to leeward. At six the Discovery spoke her, when she proved to be the ship Columbia, commanded by Mr. Robert Gray of Boston, whence she had been absent nineteen months. Supposing this person to be the same that had formerly commanded the sloop Washington, Captain Vancouver desired he would bring to, and sent on board to acquire such information as might assist him in his future operations†.

It was remarkable, that on their approach to the entrance of the inland sea, they should meet with the identical person who, it had been said, sailed through it: but his account differed very materially from a relation of it published in England. Mr. Gray was much astonished on being informed that his authority had been quoted, and the track ascertained that he had been said to have made in the sloop Washington. In contradiction to which he declared to the officers, that he had penetrated but fifty miles into the straits in question: that he found the passage five leagues wide; and that the natives informed him that the opening extended a considerable distance to the northward: that he received no further information respecting this inland sea, and that he returned to the ocean by the way he had entered.

Satisfied with this information, our navigators pursued their route which was directed along the coast to the northward. It continued to increase in height as they advanced, with many detached rocky islets: passing the outermost of these rocks at the distance of about a mile, they distinguished the south point of entrance into De Fuca's straits. Thick rainy weather prevented their seeing much of the country, but they were enabled to ascertain that this coast was firm and compact, without any opening into the Mediterranean sea.

Several villages were seen scattered along the shore: the wind blew a fresh gale, but as it was favourable for entering a certain inlet, they embraced the opportunity it presented, and shortened sail to give the Chatham the lead. About noon they reached its south entrance, which the natives distinguish by the name of Classet. It is a pro-

* They had but a few trifling articles to barter; in exchange for which they solicited iron and beads. They were scrupulously honest in their dealings, and had not the least idea of accepting presents; for when Captain Vancouver gave them iron, beads, medals, &c. they instantly presented their garments in return; seeming much astonished and displeased that he should decline taking them: the first man, in particular, could hardly be persuaded to retain both the trinkets and his garment.

† The most remarkable mountain that had been seen on the coast of New Albion now presented itself. Its summit, cloathed eternally with snow, elegantly divided into a double fork, and rose from a base of lofty mountains covered with a similar mantle, which descended gradually to hills of a moderate height, and terminated in low cliffs falling perpendicularly on a sandy beach: off which variety of rocks and rocky islets were scattered of different figures and dimensions. This is generally supposed to be the Mount Olympus of Mr. Meares, though it was not confirmed by its latitude. It was, however, the only conspicuous mountain observed by our navigators on the part of the coast they had visited.

jecting

jecting promontory: the Pinnacle rock, as represented by Mr. Meares and Mr. Dalrymple, was not perceived. The Discovery followed the Chatham between Tatooche's island and the rock: this rock, which appears just above the surface of the water, and over which the surface breaks with great violence, Captain Vancouver named Rock Duncan, to commemorate that gentleman's discovery. The island of Tatooche is of an oblong shape, about half a league in circuit, having a verdant and fertile appearance, but being without any trees. Several canoes were observed on the beach, which would probably have visited the Europeans, had they thought proper to shorten sail*.

The 29th of April brought our navigators to an anchor, about eight miles within the entrance of the supposed straits of De Fuca. They advanced further up this inlet than Mr. Gray, or to their knowledge, any other person from the civilized world. The 31st of May brought them to an anchor under New Dungeness. Their May-day was ushered in by a delightful morning, affording them, from the broken appearance of the coast below them, the prospect of speedily reaching a commodious harbour. The huts they now beheld plainly intimated to them that they could be only temporary habitations, being composed of nothing more than a few mats thrown over cross sticks. The inhabitants seemed to view the Europeans with the most perfect unconcern, continuing to fish before their huts with as much composure, as if such vessels had been familiar to them. On the low land of New Dungeness, a number of tall straight poles were erected, resembling beacons, supported from the ground by spurs. They were probably intended to answer some particular purpose; but whether of a religious, civil, or military nature cannot at present be ascertained.

Mr. Whidbey landed at the upper part of the bay, but could find no water, nor did he see any along the shore near the habitations of the Indians; who remained, as before, deliberately fishing on the water, without paying any more attention to the cutter, than if she had been a canoe belonging to themselves. On receiving this report, the Chatham's cutter, with the Discovery's yawl and cutter, were ordered to be armed and supplied with provisions for a day; with which they proceeded to examine the two apparent openings nearest to themselves. They found the sea almost covered with aquatic birds of different kinds, but all of them so extremely shy that they eluded the endeavours of the sportsmen. The first opening was a compact shore, off which extended a flat. From hence they made the best of their way for what seemed to be an island, off the other supposed opening. Landing on the west side of the supposed island, and ascending its eminence which was nearly a perpendicular cliff, their attention was instantly called to a landscape as beautiful and elegant as any of the highest finished grounds in Europe†.

They proceeded to the examination of the inlet now before them, and perceived that its entrance was about a league wide, having regular good soundings, and no apparent danger from rocks or shoals. Fresh water, however, seemed a scarce commodity; but, at length they unexpectedly fell in with a stream which was very excellent, and thus accomplished the design of their excursion. A pleasant breeze springing up, they weighed anchor on the 2d of May. The delightful serenity of the weather aided the beautiful

* As they proceeded along the shore, they passed the village of Classet, which appears to be populous and extensive. The fresh southwardly wind, being moderated by the intervention of high land, the natives visited them without difficulty, having civilly requested permission before they presumed to enter the ship. Having received some presents, and assurances of friendship, they earnestly solicited the Europeans to stop at their village: but on due consideration, Captain Vancouver declined their pressing invitation, and directed his course up the inlet, expecting that he should soon be enabled to get accommodated with a more advantageous station. The few natives who came off resembled, in many respects, the people of Nootka: their persons, dress, and behaviour, are very similar, but their ornaments were different; especially those worn at the nose. Instead of the crescent, adopted by the inhabitants of Nootka, straight pieces of iron had the preference among these. Their arms, implements, and canoes were exactly the same: Their language was also the same.

† The summit of this island presented almost a horizontal surface, interspersed with some inequalities of ground, which produced a beautiful variety on a large lawn covered with luxuriant grass, and diversified with a profusion of flowers. The north-west view presented a coppice of pine trees and shrubs of various sorts, that seemed intended as a protection of this delightful meadow from the north-west winds; but the most ingenious designer of pleasure grounds would have been puzzled to arrange them more agreeably. While they stopped to contemplate these beauties of nature, in a pleasing and unexpected prospect, they gathered some gooseberries and roses in a very forward state. Directing their eyes along the shore, it appeared to be much broken, and seemingly to form many navigable inlets.

scenery

scenery that was now beheld, and the country before them exhibited all that bounteous nature could bestow in a single point of view. As they could not suppose that this country had ever been indebted to the hand of man for its decorations; they could not possibly believe that any uncultivated country had ever exhibited so rich a picture. As they passed along the shore, near one of these enchanting spots, the tracks of deer were observed, which gave hopes that such refreshments as venison might be procured for the table*.

They had no difficulty in clearing a space large enough for their encampment, which was commodiously situated on the north side of the brook. The tents, observatory, &c. guarded by a party of marines, were conveyed on shore after dinner; and while they were arranging in proper order, the captain made a short excursion up the harbour; but nothing of importance demanded his attention. Before he returned he found a deserted village, capable of accommodating about one hundred inhabitants. The houses were built in the Nootka taste, but did not appear to have been lately the residence of the Indians. The habitations were in a decayed state; their inside, and a small surrounding space, which appeared to have been once inhabited, were over run with weeds; among which several human sculls and bones were carelessly and promiscuously scattered

On the 3d all persons proceeded to business on board and on shore; the sail makers repairing the sails, coopers examining the casks, gunners airing the powder, and parties procuring water, and many others performing their necessary duties. The serenity of the climate and season greatly accelerated the completion of their different labours. And as the part of the country they had now reached was almost destitute of inhabitants, few circumstances occurred to divert their attention from the pursuits in which they were engaged. On Sunday the 6th the people were indulged with a holiday, that they might take some recreation and exercise on shore: a few of the natives in two or three canoes favoured them with their company, laden with fish and venison for sale: the latter was extremely good and highly acceptable; as they never could procure any before, though they had seen many tracks which announced the existence of deer in that neighbourhood †.

As the employments on board the Discovery would require some time before they could be completed, the captain wished to obtain some further knowledge of this inlet; for which purpose he directed the Discovery's yawl and launch, with the Chatham's cutter, properly armed, to be in readiness. He committed to Mr. Broughton the charge of the ships, and that of the Observatory. Mr. Menzies, with two of the young gentlemen, accompanied him in the yawl; Mr. Puget commanded the launch, and Mr. Johnstone the Chatham's cutter. With this arrangement, they took their departure on the 7th, at five in the morning, for the purpose of getting more intimately acquainted in the region in which they had so unexpectedly arrived. As they proceeded towards the western corner of an isthmus, Mr, Johnstone saw a deserted Indian village, in a very declining state, and no signs of inhabitants were discernible. The survey of an inlet, pointed out by Mr. Johnstone, having been accomplished by the joining of the boats, it proved to be a safe and more commodious harbour than Port Discovery; and rendered much pleasanter by the high land being at a greater distance from the water-side. Its soundings give it an additional advantage of being very regular from side to side; but, with respect to fresh water, it appeared to be very deficient. This port was denominated PORT TOWNSEND, by Captain Vancouver, in honour of the noble marquis of that name.

In their passage they found on one of the low

* Proceeding without any obstruction in their progress, they found themselves abreast, about noon, of the stream which discharges its water from the western shore, about five miles within the entrance of the harbour, which was named by Captain Vancouver PORT DISCOVERY. There they moored, in thirty-four fathoms. The entrance of this harbour is formed by low projecting points, extending, on each side, from the high woodland cliffs. Had this production of nature been designed by an expert engineer, it could not have been more happily placed for the protection of the port, not only from the north winds, but against all attempts of an enemy, when properly fortified. Hence it was denominated PROTECTION ISLAND.

† In their persons, arms, &c. these people resembled the inhabitants of Nootka, though less defiled with paint, and less filthy in their external appearance: their ears were embellished with ornaments, but not their noses. Some of them could converse a little in the Nootka language: they were clothed in the skins of deer, or some other animal, but principally in a woollen garment of their own manufacture. They bartered their bows and implements for knives, copper, trinkets, &c. and they even offered for sale two children, each about the age of six or seven years: being shewn some copper, they were anxious to close the bargain, but Captain Vancouver expressed the utmost horror at such traffic, and peremptorily forbad it.

points projecting from the eastern shore, two upright poles fixed in the ground, about fifteen feet in height: on the top of each a human head was stuck. It must have been recently placed there, as their hair and flesh were nearly perfect. Fury or revenge were evidently displayed in these heads, by the stakes having been driven through the throat to the cranium. Between the stakes a fire had been made, and near it some calcined bones were observed. Many of these poles were seen; but though an opportunity was given for examining them, the adventurers could not discover for what purpose they were intended: they were, in general, perfectly straight, and about six inches in diameter at the bottom: the tallest of them were about one hundred feet high, the shortest from eighty-five to ninety: between some of them large holes had been dug in the ground, containing several stones that had been burnt*.

The weather clearing up on the 10th, they again embarked, and had not been long out of Oak Cove, when they observed some Indians paddling slowly, apparently intending to wait for their approach. In this they were speedily gratified, and courteously offered them such things as they possessed; and cordially accepted some medals, knives, beads, and trinkets which the Europeans presented to them, and with which they seemed to be extremely well pleased. Having taken in supplies for only five days, our navigators had nearly exhausted their provisions, and were threatened with short allowance. Their sportsmen were unable to assist the stock; and a supply from the natives could not be relyed upon: the region they had lately passed seemed almost destitute of human beings; and even the brute creation had deserted the shores. Animated nature was almost exhausted, and her awful silence was seldom interrupted but by the croaking of a raven, the scream of an eagle, or the breathing of a seal. The solemn stillness was so prevalent as to create ridiculous suspicions in their seamen of hearing rattle snakes, and other hideous monsters, in the wilderness†.

Near the dwellings of their new friends, they found the purest stream of fresh water they had ever before seen: from its size, transparency, and rapidity, little doubt could be entertained of its source in perpetual springs. Near it were seen two miserable huts, with mats thrown carelessly over them. These good people conducted themselves in a very friendly manner: they had little to dispose of, except their bows and arrows, which they bartered for other articles without the least hesitation; together with some small fish, cockles, and clams; of the latter the navigators purchased a considerable quantity, which was very acceptable in the impaired condition of their stock. Directed by these natives, the Europeans repaired to a cove in the south-east, where, as they had been taught to expect, they beheld a number of the natives, who were not under the least apprehensions on their approach. They all sat quietly on the grass, except two or three, who seemed to have been appointed to give them a hearty welcome to their country: these presented the adventurers with some fish, and received in return a variety of trinkets, which delighted them exceedingly. These natives attended the Europeans to their companions, amounting to about sixty, including the women and children; when they were very cordially received, and treated with evident marks of friendship and hospitality. The residence of these people here was probably of a temporary nature; few of them had ever taken the trouble of erecting their miserable huts, contenting themselves perhaps for a certain period, with a lodging on the ground.

A cloak of sea-otter skins was brought down,

* A round snowy mountain now presented itself very conspicuously, which, after his friend rear-admiral Rainier, the captain gave the appellation of Mount Rainier. In the morning of the 9th, the adventurers found themselves in a very fine cove, affording good anchorage from ten to twenty-five fathoms, sufficiently capacious to accommodate many vessels. They traversed its northern shores, but could find no water, except such as dripped in small quantities from the rocks. While they were detained by unfavourable weather, some of the young gentlemen found some oak-trees in their excursions, of which they exhibited specimens; but asserted that they had not seen any that exceeded three or four feet in circumference. In consequence of this discovery, the place obtained the name of Oak Cove.

† Having pleasant weather, and a favourable breeze, they proceeded, and passed several runs of fresh water. A canoe, with three men, went alongside the launch, and bartered a few trifles for iron, copper, and beads, but declined every invitation from them to come on shore. They appeared to be very honest in their dealings, and used their utmost endeavours to prevail on the party in the launch to attend them home; for which they set off after dinner, agreeably to their very civil invitation. A smoke was perceived near the supposed place of their residence, imagined to have been intended for the purpose of directing the Europeans to their habitations.

which

which Captain Vancouver purchased for a small piece of copper; when the natives informed him if he would remain there, many more of a superior quality should be produced; but as that was not a principal object, and he had completed his proposed task, he directed his course back to Port Discovery, from which they were then about seventy miles distant. The approach of night obliged the Europeans to take up their abode about two miles from the Indians, some of whom had followed them till they had landed; and posted themselves at a convenient distance to observe their different employments. At night they all retired, and nothing more was seen or heard of them.

Early on the 13th, the navigators embarked, directing their route down the inlet which the captain named *Hood's Channel*, in honour of Lord Hood. After combating with adverse weather for a considerable time, they arrived on board the Discovery on the 15th, about four in the afternoon, much to the satisfaction of all parties, great anxiety having been experienced for their safety, in consequence of their long absence.

So much attention had been paid to the operations concerning the ships, since the captain had left them, that he had the satisfaction to find, on his return, every thing had been accomplished. He now determined to depart as soon as the weather should break up, which did not happen till the 17th; when every thing was got in readiness for sailing the subsequent morning. A light air from the south-east encouraged their departure*.

The parts of the vegetable kingdom applicable to useful purposes grew very luxuriantly, consisting of the Canadian poplar, arbor-vitæ, American ash, sycamore, common yew, common hazel, black and common dwarf oak: these, with the Canadian alder, the small-fruited crab, and Canadian cherry trees, principally constituted the forests, which seemed to be encumbered with underwood. Of esculent vegetables but few were observed; the dead nettle, and samphire, were the most common: the wild orache, two or three sorts of wild peas, and the common hedge mustard, were frequently met with†.

A scarcity of fresh water is a serious disadvantage in this country: the streams, however,

* But before any farther particulars of the voyage is given, some description may be required of Port Discovery, and the adjacent country. Among other particulars respecting the territory of New Albion, Port Discovery is particularly entitled to notice, as a perfectly safe and convenient harbour. If any disadvantage attends it, it is that of its great depth of water, though our navigators found no inconvenience on that account, as the bottom was good holding ground, and free from rocks. The shores of Protection Island form a most excellent roadstead, about two miles in length, on its south side, and an uninterrupted channel into Port Discovery. The country in the environs of this port is in general of a moderate height, though bounded on the west side by mountains covered with snow, to which a pleasing diversity of hills gradually ascend. The soil principally consists of a sandy loam, abundantly mixed with decayed vegetables. Respecting its mineral productions, no great variety was observed; iron ore in its various forms, was generally found, and, from the magnetic qualities of some specimens, appeared tolerably rich. Quartz, agate, the common flint, with some variety of calcareous magnesian, and argilaceous earths, were the mineral productions generally found.

† Only an imperfect knowledge was acquired of the animal kingdom: the skins of sea-otters, and other animals, were such as are commonly found among the inhabitants on the sea-coasts under the same parallel, and towards Nootka. The only living quadrupeds that made their appearance, were a black bear, two or three wild dogs, a few rabbits, squirrels, rats, and mice. Few of the feathered tribe were procured, though, on their first arrival, the aquatic birds were very numerous; but they were so extremely shy that they eluded the approaches of man, and, being fired at, they disappeared. About the shores, and on the rocks, were observed species of the tern, the sea pigeon of Newfoundland, the common gull, curlews, sand-larks, shags, and the black sea pye, like those in New Holland and New Zealand. The woods were not fully inhabited by the feathered race; a small number of partridges had been seen, and a little variety of small birds. On the borders of the woods, and near the water-side, the white headed and brown eagle might be seen; ravens, carrion crows, and a very beautiful wood-pecker, were plentiful. They frequently saw a bird with which they were wholly unacquainted, though they suppose it to be a species of the heron: their eggs were of a bluish cast, considerably larger than those of a turkey, and well tasted. Their legs and necks were remarkably long, and their bodies exceeded in size a very large turkey; their plumage is of a light brown, and, when erect, their height could not be less than four feet. Herons of the common size, were also seen; some of which were blue, and others nearly white.

The sea was not more bountiful to them of its animal productions, than they had found its shores. They were not only scantily supplied with fish, but they were in general unable to procure any but what were of the common sorts: as small flat-fish, sea-bream, sea-perch, and a large coarse sort of sculpin. These, with a few trout, and a small greenish eel, were the fishes most generally caught. The only creatures of the reptile tribe that they observed, was a small common black snake, a few lizards and frogs, and a variety of common insects; none of which could be considered as very troublesome.

which

which our navigators met with, furnished a sufficiency to answer all domestic purposes to a numerous body of inhabitants; and, were the country cleared and searched, many eligible situations might probably be found for establishments, where, with proper exertions, wholesome water might be procured.

A few words on the character of the inhabitants of this country may be expected, but the knowledge our navigators have acquired of them, their manners, and customs is very limited. Those inhabitants who came within their notice so nearly resembled those of Nootka, that the best delineation is a reference to a description so ably given to the public*. The only difference observed was, that they were less filthy; for though these people adorn their persons with the same sort of paint, they are not smeared with it so abundantly, nor do they load their hair with that immoderate quantity of oil and colour, which is so customary among the inhabitants of Nootka. In their weapons, canoes, and dress, they vary very little. Their spears, arrows, and fish-gigs, were shaped like those of Nootka, but none of them were pointed with copper, or with muscle-shell.

The few skeletons, carefully deposited in the canoes, were probably the chief, priests, or leaders of respectable tribes, whose followers still retain the highest respect for their memory and remains. Baskets were also seen, suspended on high trees, each containing the skeleton of an infant. On a low point, south of the encampment, where the gunners were airing the powder, they saw several holes, in which human bodies were interred, slightly covered over, in different states of decay, some of which appeared to have been recently deposited. About half a mile to the northward of their tents, a canoe was found suspended between two trees, in which were three human skeletons; and near it a cleared space of ground of about forty yards in circumference, where its vegetable productions seemed lately to have been consumed by fire, among the ashes of which were found the sculls, and other bones, of about twenty persons in different stages of calcination. But the fire had not reached the suspended canoe, nor is it supposed that such an intention was ever in contemplation†.

With the causes that have operated to produce these effects, men are totally unacquainted The character and deportment of the few inhabitants our navigators had seen, did not countenance the idea of their having been occasioned by recent wars; they were naturally civil and friendly, and their appearance indicated no inclination to hostility. Many of their stoutest men were seen perfectly naked, with their skins unblemished with scars, except such as the small pox seemed to have occasioned; a disease which is supposed to have been very fatal among them. It is difficult to draw any just conclusions on the true cause of this havoc of the human race. Perhaps the present depopulation may have arisen from the inhabitants of this interior part having quitted their former abode, to approach the coast; for the convenience of obtaining, at an easier and cheaper rate, those valuable articles which have been brought to the sea coasts by the commercial adventurers of Europe and America.

SECTION VI.

Enter Admiralty Inlet—Port Orchard—Visit an Indian Village—Boat Excursions—Restoration Point—Quit Admiralty Inlet—Meet two Spanish Vessels.

ON the 8th of May, about noon, the Discovery and Chatham directed their course towards the objects of their respective pursuits, agreeably to the proposed destination of each vessel.

* Vide Captain Cook's last voyage.

† In their different excursions, especially in the neighbourhood of Port Discovery, the scull, limbs, ribs, back bones, or some other vestiges of the human body, were found in many places, promiscuously scattered about the beach. Similar relics were frequently seen by the officers in their perambulations. Such appearances presented themselves so repeatedly, and in such abundance, that they supposed the environs of Port Discovery had been a general cemetary for the whole of the surrounding country. These, and other circumstances, have given birth to an opinion, that, at no very remote period, this country has been far more populous than at present. Some of the human bodies were found disposed of in a very whimsical manner. Canoes were suspended between trees, twelve feet from the ground, in which the skeletons of two or three persons were deposited: others of larger dimensions were hauled up the skirts of woods, containing from four to seven skeletons, covered with a plank. In some of these, broken bows and arrows were found.

vessel. On one of the beautiful lawns, nearly a league within the entrance of an inlet, which Captain Vancouver had seen before when he accompanied a party in a boat, thirty of the natives came from the surrounding woods, and attentively surveyed our Europeans as they sailed along. No habitations were visible near them, nor were any canoes discernible. They endeavoured, in vain, to invite these good people on board; and, after advancing about four leagues up the inlet, a pleasant gale ceased to attend them, and they were compelled to anchor for the night, in eighteen fathoms water, about a mile from the eastern shore. The beauties of this region are enchanting: the serenity of the climate, the variety of pleasing landscapes, and the abundant fertility which nature, unassisted by art, pours forth, requires only the industry of man, with villages and mansions, to render it the loveliest country that can be imagined; whilst the labour of the inhabitants would be liberally rewarded in the bounties which nature is ever ready to bestow on cultivation.

Continuing their course up the main inlet, about eight leagues from their last night's station, they arrived off a projecting point of land: on its western border, near the woods, they saw an Indian village, consisting of temporary habitations. Several of the natives assembled to take a survey of the ship as she passed; but none of them attempted to come on board, though several canoes were seen upon the beach. Here the inlet divided into two extensive branches, one taking a south-eastwardly, the other a south-western direction. Near this place was the appointed rendezvous with the Chatham; a situation under a small island was fixed upon as the most eligible spot, in which they might, with security, wait her arrival; but on due examination, the depth of water was no where less than sixty fathoms, within a cable's length of the shore. Turning up towards the village point, however, they found a commodious roadstead, and anchored about a mile from the shore in thirty-eight fathoms water*.

These people did not essentially vary from the natives which were seen when the Europeans first entered the straits; they much resembled them in form, and were as much besmeared with oil and paint. Their ornaments, however, were more numerous, and consisted principally of copper, which was in the highest estimation among them. They were not deficient in acts of friendship and hospitality. When they joined the new visiting party, they presented them with what they had to dispose of; and procured some roots and shell-fish for their refreshment, which were found very palatable. Two of the natives, who seemed most assiduous to please, and who were probably selected as the most important persons of the party, were presented with some trifles, which they received very thankfully. On the captain's returning towards the boat, they intimated that they should speedily return the visit on board the ship†.

In the morning of the 21st, a few showers of rain descended, but not so copiously as to retard the business on shore, or to prevent the Indians from visiting the ships. Convinced of the friendly disposition of the Europeans, all the inhabitants, men, women, and children, gratified their curiosity by paddling round the ship; for the ladies and children would not venture themselves on board. The generality of the men, indeed, adopted the same line of conduct, con-

* They had no sooner anchored than a canoe, with two men, paddled round the ship. Declining to accept an invitation to come on board, after having satisfied their curiosity by looking at the Europeans, they hastily returned to the shore. On the 20th many of the natives were seen moving about the village; but only one canoe approached the ship, from which was thrown the skin of some animal, and the canoe immediately returned. Towards noon the adventurers went on shore to the village point, to observe the latitude; and also visited the village, if it deserved that appellation: the best of the huts were poor and miserable, none of them appearing to be constructed for protecting them against the heat, or the inclemency of the weather. In them were hung up, to be cured by the smoke of the fire which was kept continually burning, clams, muscles, and other fish, intended for their winter's provision

† This promised visit was made with no small degeee of ceremony. Besides the canoes which were appropriated to the two superior people, five others attended, as if belonging to the train of these chiefs. They would not repair immediately on board, but advanced within about two hundred yards of the ship, and while they rested on their paddles a conference was held, followed by a song, by one person, several others joining in a chorus at certain periods; and several in each canoe kept time with the handles of their paddles, by striking them against the gunwale. This performance continued while they were paddling slowly round the ship, and on its conclusion they came along-side with the most perfect confidence. The two chiefs required a little more intreaty before they ventured on board. The captain then presented them with some valuables, and several trinkets; but they had no sooner quitted the cabin, than they bartered every article, excepting those fabricated of copper, for others of infinitely less value or utility.

tentedly remaining in their canoes, honestly bartering their bows and arrows, woollen, and skins, for copper, buttons, and trinkets. Their merchandize would have been much more acceptable, had it consisted of eatables, such as venison, wild fowl, or fish, as the European sportsmen had little success in those pursuits. As the natives had uniformly offered such articles as composed their dress, arms, &c. rather than any kind of refreshments, they must either be supposed not to have a superabundance of food, or that the Europeans must be more curious than hungry.

Intelligence of these proceedings having been conveyed from the village to the opposite shore, not only their former friends, but several large canoes, containing about eighty persons, came alongside, and conducted themselves with great propriety. These principally belonged to the other side of the inlet, and were much more cleanly than their neighbours: their canoes were also of a different form. The commodities they offered for sale were such trifles as those brought by the other society; and, in all other respects, they resembled the generality of the inhabitants of the country, with whom the Europeans had become acquainted.

On the 23d, Captain Vancouver, in consequence of some information he had received from several of his officers, accompanied Mr. Baker in the yawl to a cove that some of them had seen; the examination of which occupied them the whole day; and he there discovered a situation, which constituted a complete and excellent port. In this excursion he saw a few straggling Indians, whose condition seemed extremely miserable. This harbour, from the gentleman who discovered it, was named Port Orchard*.

About four in the afternoon, as Captain Vancouver expected, the Chatham was seen from the mast head, and about sun-set she arrived and anchored near the Discovery; when Mr. Broughton informed the captain, that the part of the coast he had been directed to explore, consisted of an archipelago of islands.

The main arm of the inlet extending to Mount Rainier was yet unexplored; Captain Vancouver therefore thought it expedient that Mr. Johnstone, in the Chatham's cutter, should accompany him in the morning, in the Discovery's yawl, that they might be enabled to examine it. On the 29th they departed. They directed their route along the western shore of the main inlet, which is about a league in width, and observed the smoke of several fires on its eastern shore: further on they found the course of the inlet take a south-westerly inclination, which they pursued about six miles: still further on it terminated in an extensive circular bay, whose waters washed the base of Mount Rainier, though its summit was at a considerable distance from the shore. The trees, and the several shades of verdure that covered the hills gradually decreased till they became invisible, when the perpetual cloathing of snow commenced, which formed a horizontal line from north to south along this range of rugged mountains, from whose summit Mount Rainier rose conspicuously; the whole producing a picturesque effect.

Proceeding to the north-west, in which direction the inlet from hence extended, they saw reason to suppose that it communicated with that intended to be surveyed by the other party, which was corroborated by the information of a few Indians who very civilly attended them. About a dozen of these friendly people had been present at their dinner; two of them, at their particular request, sat down by the Europeans, and ate of the bread and fish without hesitation; but on being offered some of the venison, they could not be prevailed on to taste it. They beheld it with disgust, supposing it to have been human flesh. After much difficulty, however, they were happily convinced of their mistake, by shewing them a haunch they had in the boat, when they partook of the remainder of the pasty with a good appetite†.

Advancing

* On his return to the ship he found that few of the friendly neighbours had visited it. The dogs belonging to this tribe of Indians were numerous, and resembled those of Pomerania, though they appeared somewhat larger. In the course of the forenoon of the 25th, some Indians brought our navigators a whole deer, which was the first entire animal that had been offered to them. This, and another deer, had cost these good people almost a day's labour; yet they thought themselves amply rewarded for their exertions by a small piece of copper about a foot square. This was gladly accepted as a full compensation for their venison; so highly is this metal regarded!

† The great abhorrence that was manifested by these people at the idea of eating human flesh, led the navigators to conclude, that the character given of the natives of North-West America does not attach to every tribe. But if

Advancing progressively, early on the 28th, the adventurers saw a few miserable Indians in their temporary habitations, who either had nothing to dispose of, or declined having any intercourse with them. It is possible, indeed, that they were offended at having been disturbed so early from their rest: they were, however, indulged with a few presents, which they accepted very coolly, Having satisfied themselves with regard to this direction of the inlet, they returned to breakfast about two miles within the entrance of the south-west branch*.

Mr. Puget had hardly any thing to communicate respecting the expedition he had been dispatched on, but what had fallen under Captain Vancouver's observation, excepting the daring behaviour of an Indian tribe. About eight in the evening, attended by some of the natives in two canoes, they landed for the night. These people would not come nearer to the party than about a hundred yards, where they remained till the tents were pitched, and some loaded musquets discharged. They heard the report of the latter without any apparent surprize, and exclaimed *pou!* after every discharge. The next morning they saw a canoe making towards them, and rested on their oars to wait its approach: The canoe suddenly stopped, but no friendly overtures could induce the Indians to venture near the boat. To remove their apprehensions, Mr. Puget fastened some medals and trinkets to a piece of wood, and left it floating on the water; and they, supposing the boat to be at a sufficient distance, ventured to pick it up. The whole of their conduct betrayed much suspicion and distrust.

About noon the party landed to dine; and whilst they were getting ready to haul the seine before a brook of fresh water, six canoes paddled hastily round the point of the cove they were in, towards the boats. Their suspicious behaviour, had put the party upon their guard, and a line on the beach was drawn, to separate the two parties. They submitted to this regulation, and divided their numbers into two sets: one on the shore, with their bows and quivers: the other repaired to their canoes†.

Mr. Puget, supposing it would answer a good purpose, caused a swivel to be fired; and though they expressed no astonishment at the report of the gun, or the distant effect of the shot, the measure was instantly attended with beneficial consequences: their bows were immediately unstrung; and, instead of menacing a combat with their weapons, they were offered in traffic with their other trifles, for buttons, knives, beads, copper, and other ornaments: this intercourse continued till near the evening, when they peaceably took their leave, and retired. Mr. Puget remarked, upon this occasion, that among the several tribes of Indians from whom they had before received visits, they had uniformly behaved civil, courteous and friendly; but as these assumed a conduct diametrically opposite to that which had hitherto been adopted, without the least provocation, he considered this circumstance too mysterious to be accounted for.

The scarcity of water has been mentioned as

if they do not inhumanly devour the flesh of their conquered enemies, or keep slaves for the sole purpose of enriching their banquet, crimes which have been frequently alledged against them; it is certain that they are not free from the general failing attendant on a savage life. One of them, having taken a knive and fork to imitate the European manner of eating, secretly conveyed them under his garment; but, on his being detected, he resigned his plunder without concern or shame.

These people accompanied the adventurers to three or four miserable huts, during which they exchanged what they had for bows, arrows, and spears, on fair and honourable terms, for buttons, beads, and other useless commodities.

* Whilst the captain was on shore to take the necessary angles, a deer came down to the beach, which M. Le Mesurier fired at, and fortunately killed. It proved to be a very fine buck, and furnished the people with a good fresh meal.

† Good order being thus seemingly established, the officers began to dine on an elevated spot near the waterside; and the crews in their respective boats were ordered to be ready in case of alarm. A seventh canoe joining the Indian party, those on the beach immediately embarked; and the whole number, amounting to twenty-four, by their menacing gestures and consultations, created strong suspicions that their inclinations were not friendly. But as the party were ready to act immediately on the defensive, they finished their repast with great composure, without indicating any distrust or apprehension by a precipitate retreat. Towards the conclusion of their conference, an eighth canoe joined the party; when they all paddled to the beach, and strung their bows. This might be considered as a declaration of hostility. A man who seemed the leader of the party, advanced towards the station of the officers, with an arrow across his bow, in readiness for use; and others of the party seemed in the act of preparation. But such measures were prudently resorted to, as obliged them all to retreat to the line of separation. Still, however, they were much inclined, though irresolute, to attempt hostilities.

the

the greatest disadvantage in the interior country, but a plentiful supply of that valuable fluid was procured: the country has also been said to be nearly uninhabited; but this account was found to be erroneous, for the party accidentally fell in with nearly one hundred and fifty Indians, and saw several deserted villages. The point near the present situation forming the north of the bay, hitherto named the Village Point, was now distinguished by the appellation of RESTORATION POINT, that memorable event having been celebrated whilst at anchor under it.

With a pleasant southerly breeze on the 30th, they directed their course to the opening which had been committed to the examination of Mr. Broughton. Having advanced about three miles within the entrance, and seeing no appearance of the Chatham, a gun was fired, which was answered from behind a point of land on the starboard, where they soon afterwards saw the Chatham, bearing a light at her mast-head, for their guidance; and, though within two miles, it was almost midnight when they anchored in thirty-two fathoms water, about a cable's length from her.

Nothing memorable occurred in several boat excursions; but on the 1st of June, a signal was made for the Chatham to bring up; when, after a few minutes, she was discovered to be a-ground, and had made the signal for assistance. On this the Discovery stood towards her, and anchored about a mile from her in twenty fathoms water. The Discovery's boats were instantly sent to her relief, but there was little probability of her receiving any injury, having grounded on a muddy bank; and it was expected she would float off the next tide. About midnight she was hove off, and anchored near the Discovery, without having received any damage*.

The boats being ordered on shore to receive Mr. Whidbey, and those who had attended him, the launch grounded; which being perceived by the Indian chief, he was the foremost to assist in shoving her off. This being effected, the gentlemen embarked. The chief, and some others, accompanied the party for some time, when they very civilly took their departure. Mr. Whidbey and his party soon arrived off another populous village, and were attended by about seventy natives. They gave proofs of the greatest hospitality, making signs that that they had abundance of food to bestow. The ladies were particularly earnest in their entreaties, and expressed much concern that their offers of civility were declined.

In the morning, the examination of the western branch was pursued, and found to terminate in an excellent cove or harbour. On each point of which was a deserted village. This was denominated PENN'S COVE, in honour of a particular friend. In one of the deserted villages several sepulchres were found, resembling a sentry-box. Some of them were open, which contained skeletons of children tied up in baskets; the smaller bones of adults were also observed. The surrounding country presented a most delightful prospect, consisting of spacious meadows, elegantly adorned with clumps of trees; among which

* Mr. Whidbey, whose orders and inclinations were to endeavour to prevent the possibility of any misunderstanding, avoided landing in the presence of many persons; and, as it was about the dinner time of the party, he prudently made choice of the opposite shore, to enjoy a private meal uninterrupted by the Indians. Having reached the spot they intended, they were met by about two hundred of the natives, some in their canoes with their families, and others walking on the shore, attended by a drove of about forty dogs, shorn close to the skin. Though the natives were so numerous, the party thought proper to land, for the purpose of taking angles; and they were received on shore with the greatest cordiality. Mr. Whidbey, however, did not continue any longer among them than was absolutely necessary; and, having finished his business, instantly embarked. In the morning the party again pursued their enquiry, and when they had landed to breakfast, they were visited by a large canoe full of Indians, who were followed by about a hundred more; bringing with them mats to cover their temporary habitations, and many other articles.

They landed without hesitation, and their behaviour was courteous and friendly in the extreme. A middle-aged man, who appeared to be the superior of the party, displayed great hospitality; and perceiving the Europeans were at breakfast, presented them with water, dried fish, roasted roots, and other articles of food: For which a return was made by presents to the ladies and others. The chief had two hangers; one of Spanish, and the other of English manufacture. The spot where they had landed was delightful, and the shores on each side pleasingly diversified; which, together with the friendly reception he had met with, induced Mr. Whidbey to continue his examination on shore; on which occasion he was accompanied by the chief and many others, who conducted themselves with much propriety: though they were not without a considerable degree of civil curiosity in the examination of his clothes, expressing an earnest desire to behold the colour of the skin which they concealed, intimating that his hands and face were painted white: but when convinced of their mistake, by opening his waistcoat, their astonishment was inexpressible.

the

the oak was particularly noticed, the circumference of which was from four to half a dozen feet. In these beautiful pastures, bordering on an expansive sheet of water, the deer were frisking about abundantly.

The country bordering on this branch of the sea, Mr. Whidbey says, "Was the finest we had met with, notwithstanding the very pleasing appearance of many others; its natural productions were luxuriant in the highest degree, and it was, by no means, ill supplied with streams of fresh water. A fortnight had now been bestowed upon the examination of this inlet, which is named the ADMIRALTY INLET*.

On the morning of the 5th our navigators sailed down Possession Sound with a light breeze from the north-west, with serene and pleasant weather. While they were gently passing on, the same liberal-minded chief, who had been so friendly to Mr. Whidbey and his party, accompanied by several of his friends, came on board, kindly distributing dried fish and fruit. The chief entered the ship with some reluctance, but when on the deck he appeared perfectly reconciled; and with inquisitive earnestness surveyed the surrounding objects, which filled his mind with admiration and surprise. In this interesting moment, an assortment of valuable articles was presented to him and his friends, when they took their leave, infinitely delighted with their reception. The Chatham arrived in Strawberry bay† on the 10th, with the loss of her stream anchor, and in the afternoon the boats returned from a survey they had been sent upon.

The survey was continued in boats, by different parties, in which no very important events occurred, or interesting discoveries were made. From the civil natives, who differed not, in any respect, from those the party had frequently seen, they procured some excellent fish, for which they were compensated in iron. Not meeting with the satisfaction they excepted, they thought it highly expedient to proceed towards the ships. On the morning of the 22d, they discovered two vessels at anchor under the land, and on a nearer approach, they were found to be a brig and a schooner, wearing the colours of Spanish vessels of war, engaged in pursuits similar to their own. The Spanish officers behaved to them with great politeness, and very cheerfully communicated such information as they thought would be pleasing and beneficial.

Urged by repeated solicitations, Captain Vancouver took a hearty breakfast with them, and bad them farewel; perfectly satisfied with their attentive hospitality; but were much astonished at the vessels, in which they were employed to execute a service of importance: they were each about forty-five tons burthen, mounted two brass guns, were navigated by twenty-four men, and having only one lieutenant. Their apartments and offices rendered them the most ill calculated and unfit vessels, that could possibly have been contrived for such an expedition. It was pleasant however to observe, that, notwithstanding these inconveniences, they enjoyed more comforts, in point of living, than could reasonably have been expected.

SECTION VI.

Proceed from Birch Bay—Bute's Channel—Desolation Sound—Johnstone's Straits—Point Chatham Continental Shore—Cheslakees—Fife's Passage—Smith's Inlet

WITH a fine breeze the navigators sailed from Birch Bay, (so called from the abundance of black birch growing in its vicinity) on the 24th of June, and about two in the afternoon, they were joined by the two Spanish vessels, who saluted by cheering. This being returned, the respective commanders favoured Captain Vancouver with their company on board

* On the 3d of June all hands were employed in fishing; and on the 4th they were furnished with as good a dinner as could be provided for them, with double allowance of grog to drink the king's health, it being the anniversary of His Majesty's birth; on which auspicious day Captain Vancouver formally took possession of all the countries he had lately been employed in exploring, in the name of his Britannic Majesty, his Heirs and Successors.

† It obtained this name on Mr. Broughton's first visit there, when he found a large quantity of very excellent strawberries.

the Discovery, and they pursued their way up the gulph together. At day-break on the 26th, they found themselves about half a mile from the shores of a high rocky island, surrounded by a detached country which presented a very inhospitable appearance. The tops of the rugged mountains which composed these shores, were not of a sufficient height to retain the snow in summer, though it probably arrays them in winter.

The divided appearance of the region, into which they had now arrived, seemed to promise plenty of employment for the boats. Captain Vancouver dispatched lieutenant Puget and Mr. Whidbey, in the Discovery's launch and cutter to examine the continental shore. Mr. Johnstone in the Chatham's cutter, accompanied by Mr. Swaine in her launch, were directed to survey a branch of the sound leading to the north-westward; and Senr. Valdes, one of the Spanish officers, undertook the examination of the intermediate coast. Mr. Broughton went in pursuit of a more commodious situation for the ships. In the afternoon Mr. Broughton returned, having discovered a more eligible anchorage, though in a dreary situation. The respective gentlemen in the boats, having received their instructions, departed to enter upon their offices.

The weather being serene and pleasant, gave Captain Vancouver an opportunity, in company with Senr. Galiano, (the other Spanish officer) to visit the island near which they were at anchor. The Discovery steered for the rendezvous Mr. Broughton had pointed out, where she arrived in the evening. The situation was on the northern side of an arm, about half a mile wide, presenting a very dismal aspect. The very circumscribed view of the country here, rendered it impossible for the captain to form the least idea, of any circumstances relative to the situation in which he had become stationary; or how long he might remain in anxious expectation of the return of his friends. His residence here was truly forlorn; an awful silence pervaded the gloomy forests, whilst animated nature seemed to have fled from the neighbouring country, whose ungenerous soil afforded only a few onions, and some samphire, excepting a scanty crop of berries on two or three meager bushes. The sea was equally unfavourable to his wants; the steep rocky shores prohibited the use of the seine, and the wary fish at the bottom could not be tempted by the most alluring bait.

Captain Vancouver had absented himself from the present surveying excursions, to procure observations from the longitude here, and for other essential reasons; among others, he was also desirous of acquiring some knowledge of the main channel of the gulf they had quitted. Early in the morning of the 30th, he set out in the yawl on the latter pursuit, with a favourable breeze from the north-west; but about ten in the forenoon, a certain prospect of a continuance of unsettled weather induced him to abandon his design, and return to the ship: where he had the pleasure of hearing the launch and cutter had arrived soon after his departure, having completed the examination of the continental coast*.

Early on the morning of the 2d of July Mr. Johnstone returned, and related, among other particulars, that behind a low small spot of land, some mountains rose very abruptly, divided by two very deep vallies, whence streams of fresh water flowed, but not in sufficient quantities to admit of boats. In these vallies, and on the low plains, large pine-trees grew; but the few which appeared on the mountains were of stunted growth. Steep barren rocks, capped with snow, formed the sides of this channel, the water of which was nearly fresh at its head, and of a pale colour. It was denominated Bute's Channel.

* They found the continental shore continued nearly in its north-west direction to the eastern point of entrance into this sound. After a circumstantial detail of matters not remarkably interesting, one of the detached parties relates that they discovered an extensive deserted village, supposed to have been the residence of about three hundred persons. It was built on a rock, whose perpendicular cliffs were almost inaccessible on every side; and connected with the main by a narrow neck of land. A kind of fortress was judiciously placed to protect the inhabitants of this village from any external enemies: the whole so skilfully contrived and executed, that it could hardly be considered as the performance of the untutored tribes who inhabit these regions, had not their arms and implements, with parts of their unmanufactured garments, proved its inhabitants to have been of the same race.

While they were examining the rude and curious habitations, the gentlemen were assailed by an unexpected army, whose legions made so furious an attack upon each of their persons, that, in order to drown their foes, they rushed up to their necks in water. But even this expedient proved ineffectual; for nothing but boiling their clothes could relieve them from those myriads of fleas they had accumulated by examining too minutely the garments and apparel of the late inhabitants.

An

An Indian village here presented itself, situated on the space of a steep rock, containing about a hundred and fifty of the natives, some of whom visited the party in the passage up the channel; and many at this instant came off to barter fresh herrings, and other fish, for nails. From the point on which this village is erected, a very narrow opening, stretched to the westward, and through it so strong a current flowed, that the boats were unable to row against it; they were therefore obliged to be hauled by a rope, along the rocky shores which formed the passage. In this laborious service the Indians voluntarily assisted to the utmost of their power, and received an adequate reward for their trouble.

The boats now sought shelter from inclement weather in a small cove, where the same cause had before detained them; when the stock of provisions being nearly exhausted, it was thought necessary to return to the ships. By these detached expeditions the boundary of the continental shore was ascertained to the above narrow passage, and the strongest presumptions entertained that the whole coast on the western side, south of that passage, was composed of a constellation of islands*.

The week, for which Mr. Johnstone and his party had been furnished with supplies, being now expired, the captain began to be anxiously solicitous for the welfare of his party; when, about two in the morning of the 12th, their safe arrival was announced; and that a passage leading into the Pacific Ocean had been discovered.

On the 8th the party were much surprized by the report of a gun at no very considerable distance: this was instantly answered by a swivel; but no reply was heard. The fog beginning to disperse, a small canoe appeared, which followed them till they reached a very considerable village, situate on a hill near the sea. The two Indians, finding they were observed by their countrymen on shore, ventured alongside the boats. In the canoe, a musquet with its appendages was seen, and an eagle recently shot, which accounted for the discharge heard in the fog. As the party advanced towards the village, they were visited by several canoes, each of which was provided with a musquet and ammunition. The village had the appearance of being constructed with great regularity, and its inhabitants were numerous, and well armed. Under these circumstances the party thought proper to pass by, without further enquiry, obedient to their established maxim of never courting a danger on shore, when necessity did not enforce their landing. After the chief received some presents, among which he gave articles of copper a decided preference to any thing else, he, with most of his companions, returned to the shore: and, on his landing, several musquets were fired as an ostentatious display of their dexterity in the use of these weapons†.

With a light breeze from the northward, on the 13th, the English navigators weighed and left their Spanish friends at anchor, who intended to pursue their researches through a channel Mr. Johnstone had discovered. Little further need be said respecting the station they had quitted, than to mention the general satisfaction that prevailed on leaving so inhospitable a region. In this route they passed through the cluster of islands and rocks at some distance before the entrance into Desolation sound; some of which presented a much more grateful appearance than that of the interior country. The wind was light from the northern quarter, and the weather serene and pleasant. Whales, in great abundance, appeared to enjoy the season, playing about the ship in all directions. Several seals also presented themselves to view: the latter were abundant in Desolation sound, and were seen in all the remote excursions of the boats; but they were too shy and wary to be taken. These animals were almost the only possessors of the gloomy region our navigators had just quitted; but the scene now before them was infinitely more congenial to

* Captain Vancouver's situation would not afford a single prospect pleasing to the eye, the most inconsiderable recreation on shore, nor a particle of animal food, excepting a very scanty proportion of those eatables already noticed, and of which the environs was very soon exhausted after his arrival. The exploring parties shared only the same parsimonious supply, whence the place acquired the name of Desolation Sound. Some alleviation, however, under these disagreeable events, was agreeably afforded by their Spanish friends.

† The two Spanish gentlemen having received such information of the discoveries of our English navigators as they required, now begged leave to decline accompanying them any longer, as they were unable in their miserable vessels to co-operate with them; and they were apprehensive of retarding their progress. After an exchange of good wishes, they bad each other farewel, having mutually received and bestowed every kindness and attention.

their minds, as well from the aspect of the shores, as from the attention of the friendly Indians, who, as they were crossing the gulf, visited them in several canoes, with young birds, fish, and berries, to barter for their trinkets. From a neighbouring village, they were visited by several of the natives, who were laden with fish and the wild fruits of their country, which they exchanged for European articles with great honour and integrity.

After dinner, accompanied by Mr. Menzies, and several of the officers, Captain Vancouver went on shore, at once to return the visit of his friends, and to indulge his curiosity. On landing at the village, they were formally received by a person who appeared to be the chief of the party: he approached them with an air of confidence, whilst the rest of a numerous society, were arranged and seated peaceably before their houses. The Captain made him such presents as delighted him exceedingly, and he instantly conducted them to the village by a very narrow path, winding diagonally up a steep cliff. On the edge of this precipice stood the village, the houses of which were built in the Nootka taste, but smaller, and of the height of ten or twelve feet; almost close together, and in rows. On the beech, at the foot of the cliff, about seventy canoes presented themselves, which were chiefly of small dimensions, though among them there were several which would contain commodiously about fifteen people. From these and other circumstances, the Europeans were clearly of opinion, that this village might reasonably be supposed to contain about three hundred inhabitants. The spot where it was erected was very well chosen to insure its protection: a loose sandy precipice secured it in front, and a deep chasm in the rocks defended it in the rear: beyond these an almost impenetrable forest presented itself; and only the narrow path they had ascended could admit of the least access, and that could be easily maintained against very superior numbers *.

The Chatham having been some hours detained in Desolation Sound, after the Discovery had sailed, now arrived and anchored near her. About three in the morning of the 14th, our navigators were under sail, and with the assistance of the ebb tide, turned about four leagues up the inlet towards a commodious anchoring place, which had been discovered by their boats, and was the rendezvous appointed on the return of the launch and cutter; and about six they arrived and anchored in twenty-four fathoms water. In the evening of the 24th, the boats returned, having found the channel from these narrow parts gradually increasing in width to a mile, and half a league, and to communicate with Johnstone's straits about four leagues further, without any visible impediment to the navigation. As they proceeded none of the inhabitants were seen, but on their return they met with about twenty canoes filled with Indians, who at first seemed shy, but afterwards approached the party with confidence, and gave evident tokens of their friendship and docility.

They were more variously painted than any of the natives the party had before seen. The faces of some of them were uniformly white; some black, others red, and some even of a lead colour; whilst the features of others were ornamented with a variety of colours, and their hair decorated with the down of young sea fowl; in these respects they nearly approach the manners of the people of Nootka†.

Accom-

* Having gratified their curiosity, and made proper acknowledgments by trivial presents, they took their leave of the village, to have an opportunity of indulging themselves, before dark, with a refreshing walk, on a low margin of land extending from the more elevated woodland country; a luxury they had not for a long time experienced. In this excursion, they saw two sepulchres composed of plank, the height of each was about five feet, the length seven, and the breadth four. These boards were ingeniously perforated at the ends and sides, perhaps to admit a free circulation of air to the human bones they enclosed, which were evidently the remains of many different bodies. Some of the Indians attended them in their walk, picking berries from the trees as they passed, and civilly presenting them to the Europeans on green leaves.

† On the 16th our navigators reached Johnstone's Straits, passing a Point, which the Captain named Point Chatham, after the little vessel which accompanied him. In the evening they passed a village, the inhabitants of which brought them a few small fresh salmon for sale: they had also several that were ready cooked, and diverted themselves in throwing them on board as the ships passed their canoes. Soon after they received the welcome visits of some hospitable friends from the shore, of whom they purchased such an abundant supply of fresh salmon, as to serve the whole crew as long as they would keep good; and was a comfortable relief from their salted provisions. The next morning they discovered that the neighbouring village was large and populous; many of the visitors from it brought them sea-otters' skins of a very excellent quality, and

AN AMERICAN INDIAN.

A. W. Warren sculp.

Accompanied by some of the officers, Mr. Menzies, and the new guest *Cheslakees*, the captain repaired to the village; which was pleasantly situated on a sloping hill, above the banks of a fresh-water rivulet, which discharged itself into a small creek or cove. It was exposed to a southern aspect, and sheltered by hills and lofty pines from the northern winds; the houses, amounting to thirty-four, formed regular streets: the largest were occupied by the principal people, being decorated and painted as the fancy of the proprietor dictated. The mansion of their leader *Cheslakees* was distinguished by three rafters of timber raised above the roof, resembling the architecture of Nootka. Upon the whole, the village presented a very picturesque appearance, from the opposite side of the creek. On their landing, only three or four of the inhabitants came down to receive them at the beach; the rest remaining quietly near their houses.

The houses were constructed like those of Nootka, but appeared less filthy; and the inhabitants differed very little from the natives of Nootka, in dress or deportment. Several families lived under the same roof, but their sleeping apartments were separated from the rest, and more delicacy and decency seemed to prevail than among the inhabitants at Nootka. The women were variously employed; some in domestic affairs, others in the manufacture of garments from bark, and other materials. The fabrication of mats for many useful purposes, and a kind of basket, so curiously wrought as to contain water like an earthen vessel, comprehended the general employment of the women, who were as remarkable for their industry as for their ingenuity.

Having concluded this visit, the Europeans were entertained at the house of an elderly chief, to whom *Cheslakees*, and every person present paid great respect, by a song which was not without melody; though the performance of it created some disgust by the savage gestures, and uncouth actions accompanying it. The song being finished, they were each ceremoniously presented, with a strip of sea-otter skin. A song from the ladies was then expected; and during this interval Captain Vancouver observed, in the hands of the numerous tribe that surrounded them, a quantity of spears, clubs, large knives, and other weapons, which were not displayed on their first approach to the village. The captain did not much approve of this change in their appearance, though he sincerely believed their intentions were of the most inoffensive kind: supposing they produced their arms to impress the Europeans with an idea of their wealth and consequence. He thought it prudent, however, to withdraw, and having distributed some articles which he had reserved, *Cheslakees* was informed that he meant to return; in consequence of which, he and his relations attended them through the village, and accompanied them to the sandy island, whither the Captain went to observe its latitude*.

Two or three musquets were seen in most of their houses, which evidently appeared to be Spanish. *Cheslakees* had no less than eight in his house, all in the most excellent order: these, and many other European commodities, they had procured from Nootka; and in their commercial concerns with our navigators, they frequently observed that their skins would produce more at Nootka than they chose to give for them. The number of these villagers was estimated at about five hundred†.

Nothing

and in great abundance, which were bartered for sheet copper, and blue cloth, articles in the highest estimation among them. Most of these people understood the Nootka language, though it did not appear to be very generally spoken. The chief of the village paid an early visit to Captain Vancouver, and received presents from him, with which he was highly pleased. The name of the chief was *Cheslakees*.

* Some other Indians attended them on this occasion, all of whom behaved with such civility and decorum, that they were permitted to assemble round the Captain while he was engaged in observing. They were greatly amused with the effect of the sun's rays through the reading glass; and the wonderful quality of the quicksilver, used for the purpose of an artificial horizon, afforded them infinite entertainment. The business being ended they civilly took their leave.

† Mr. Broughton having been directed to pursue the clue in fixing the continuation of the Continental shore, Captain Vancouver impatiently waited his arrival. He was indeed amused by the visits of a few Indians from the southern shore of the Straits, who supplied him occasionally with fish, which proved very acceptable, as he was unable to procure any by his own efforts. Among the other visitors, *Cheslakees* did him the honour to attend him, with whose importunities for various articles he had generously complied. He continued several hours on board; and as he sat at the Captain's elbow whilst he was writing, he saw him frequently referring to a small memorandum book, which he

Nothing interesting occurred till the 27th in the afternoon, when Mr. Broughton came on board in his cutter, the Chatham having been obliged, by adverse winds, to enter three leagues to the westward of their rendezvous. But the information communicated by Mr. Broughton to Captain Vancouver, was merely nautical and astronomical.

On the 28th the Discovery directed her course to the westward, who had not been long under weigh before she was joined by the Chatham, and steered to the northward for the Channel leading to the Deep Sea Bluff, which Captain Vancouver called FIFE'S PASSAGE. After a diversity of unimportant events, the Discovery suddenly grounded on a bed of sunken rocks on the 6th of August, about four in the afternoon. A signal announcing her situation was instantly made to the Chatham: she immediately anchored in fifty fathoms water, about a cable and a half from the Discovery, who received the assistance of all her boats. The force with which the ship had grounded, had occasioned her sewing considerably forward. On heaving, the anchor came home, when they could do little more than lighten the ship as much as possible, by starting the water, throwing overboard their fuel, &c Soon after she was aground, the tide took her on the starboard quarter; and as she was afloat abaft she took a sudden swing, and heeled so considerably on the starboard side, which was from the rocks, that, for a short time, her situation was alarming in the highest degree. They remained in this melancholy situation expecting relief from the returning flood, which, to their inexpressible joy, was at length announced by the floating of the shoars; a happy indication of the ship's righting. The exertions of the crew were, however, unabated till the 7th, when the ship becoming nearly upright, they had the supreme satisfaction of feeling her again afloat, without having received any apparent injury.

A light breeze springing up about one o'clock, they were again under sail, and directed their course through the channel along the continental shore. This was a narrow passage, and rendered extremely intricate by the multiplicity of rocks and islets, both above and beneath the surface of the water. This dangerous navigation, from the surf breaking against them with great violence, seemed to continue as far as they could discern towards the ocean, between the continental shore, and the opposite side of the channel, which was apparently an extensive range of islands *.

A thick fog ushering in the morning of the 8th, deprived the Discovery of seeing or knowing any thing of the Chatham's situation; but on the dispersion of the fog, the Captain had the satisfaction of seeing her approach under sail. On the return of the boats, Lieutenant Baker, who had accompanied the Discovery's people to assist the Chatham, informed Captain Vancouver, that she had latterly struck so hard as to disable both the spare top-masts, which had been used for shoars; but that about half past one they succeeded in heaving her off, and

he had the dexterity to purloin without detection. Having occasion to consult this book, and knowing no other person had been near him, the Captain had no difficulty in fixing upon the pilferer. A Sandwich island mat, which the Captain had given him, he had curiously folded up, and in the centre of it, he found the book he had been robbed of. *Cheslakees* seemed to be somewhat ashamed of the detection, but suffered greater mortification when the captain took away the presents he had given him: the latter, however, were restored about two hours afterwards, on his expressing his deepest contrition, and earnestly supplicating a return of what his demerits ought for ever to have deprived him of. The act of stealing a book, which could not have been useful to him, or to any other person except the owner, strongly points out that propensity to thieving, which almost generally influences the whole of the uncivilized world.

* Having so recently escaped the dangers of a perilous situation, a prospect of many snares was extremely discouraging; but being unable to find a less difficult way of performing their adventurous service, they had no other alternative than to proceed, with all the caution the nature of their situation would permit, through a narrow channel beset with islands, rocks, and breakers. About five in the afternoon they had fortunately passed through its narrowest part; but about six some of the hidden dangers arrested the progress of the Chatham. The Discovery instantly anchored in seventy fathoms water, and sent her boats to administer assistance. Thus, before they could recover from the fatiguing exertions of one distressing night, a similar calamity befel them on the next.

They had now less reason to expect the preservation of the Chatham, than they had that of the Discovery the preceding night, as the oceanic swell was here very perceptible, and produced a considerable surf on the shore. A calm, however succeeded, when she was driven by the tide on a ledge of sunken rocks; and though she had frequently struck when lifted by the surge, it was with so little violence, that no damage was sustained; and her unpleasant state could not be of long duration, as it was nearly half ebb when she grounded.

did

did not observe that she had sustained any material injury.

The sails of the Discovery were hardly set when the wind became variable; and by one o'clock she was obliged to anchor in fifty-five fathoms water; as did the Chatham about two miles to the northward of their former station, and near the continental shore. They afterwards appeared to have reached that part of the coast which had been visited by several traders, both from Europe and India. The Experiment, commanded by Mr. Wedgborough, in August 1786, honoured the inlet, through which they had lately passed, with the name of Queen Charlotte's Sound; and the opening on the continental shore was called Smith's Inlet, by Mr. James Hanna. Having a fine breeze on the 10th, they weighed at seven, and stood across Queen Charlotte's sound for the entrance of Smith's Inlet.

Intending a further investigation of the continental shore up Smith's Inlet, the Chatham was directed that way, but, discovering a great number of islets and rocks, as well beneath as above the surface of the sea, they abandoned that design. After many incidental occurrences, the Discovery anchored on the 11th, in seventeen fathoms, on the south side of a small cove, as did the Chatham on the opposite shore, steadying the vessels with hawsers to the trees. On examining the cove, Captain Vancouver found it terminated in a small beach, near which an excellent stream of water ran, and abundance of wood was growing. Having much occasion for such articles, and knowing that it would take a considerable time to collect a quantity of each to replenish the stores, the Captain came to a resolution of laying the Chatham on shore, to examine whether any serious damage had been sustained by her whilst she was striking on the rocks.

After giving directions for the performance of this service, he ordered the yawl, launch, and two cutters belonging to the Discovery, together with the Chatham's cutter, to be in readiness to depart the next morning, properly equipped, and supplied with a week's provisions. The boats being prepared, agreeably to his wishes, they departed about five o'clock, and having proceeded together to about the middle of the sound, he directed Lieutenant Puget and Mr. Whidbey, in the Discovery's launch and cutter, to examine the coast that had been unexplored. Conceiving the northern survey would be much more extensive than that to the south, the Captain joined Mr. Johnstone's party.

During their absence, a sufficient quantity of salmon had been taken to supply every person on board the vessel: the store of wood and water were nearly completed; but the rise and fall of the tide would not afford an opportunity of grounding the Chatham, without landing the greater part of her freight: the bottom, at low tide, was also found to consist of soft mud, and consequently unfavourable to such an operation *.

The entrance into Smith's inlet was almost closed by rocky islets; some producing small trees and shrubs, and some without either: rocks were also numerous beneath, as well as above the surface of the sea, which rendered the navigation extremely intricate and dangerous. About half way up the channel, a village was perceived, supposed to contain about two hundred and fifty persons. It was erected on a detached rock, connected to the main land by a platform, and so constructed as greatly to contribute to its defence. A considerable number of the inhabitants visited the party in about thirty canoes, and earnestly solicited them to come to their habitations. They offered the skins of several animals to barter, promised the best of their refreshments,

* On the 17th, while our navigators were under the greatest concern for the safety of the detached parties, they were suddenly surprized by the arrival of a brig near the entrance of the cove, under English colours. Various were the opinions on so uncommon and so unexpected a sight, and all expressed their astonishment that a commercial vessel (for so she appeared to be) should visit a region so desolate and inhospitable: but on the return of Lieutenant Baker, they were informed that she was the Venus belonging to Bengal, of one hundred and ten tons burden, commanded by Mr. Shepherd, last from Nootka, bound on a trading voyage along these shores. By him they received the agreeable tidings of the arrival of the Dædalus storeship, laden with stores and provisions for their use: but the same commander also brought intelligence of a most melancholy event; Lieutenant Hergest the commander, Mr. Gooch the astronomer, and one of the seamen belonging to the Dædalus, had been murdered by the natives of Woahoo, while they were on shore procuring water at that island.

The weather was less boisterous on the 18th, when the launch and cutter returned without having met with any accident, though infinitely fatigued by a long contention with the winds and waves.

and

and unequivocally informed them that the female part of their society would be happy in the pleasure of their company. Having no leisure to comply with these pressing solicitations, the civil offers of the Indians were declined, and the party continued their route back.

On the 16th they entered another opening, about three miles to the north of the north point of Smith's inlet, which was distinguished by the name of Rivers's Channel, and branched off in several directions: having examined these branches, they returned by a narrow intricate passage, leading through an immensity of rocky islets. But being greatly fatigued by the inclement weather, and having exhausted all their provisions, they returned on board without fully accomplishing their plan of examination.

Further labour, however, from this party, was deemed unnecessary; and every thing was directed to be taken from the shore, in order to be ready to sail in the morning towards the rendezvous, which Captain Vancouver had appointed with Mr. Johnstone. Nothing interesting occurred till the morning of the 17th, when Mr. Johnstone, for several reasons, declined any further investigation of the business he had been detached to execute, and determined on returning to the ships. Two days afterwards he fortunately reached them, almost exhausted with hunger and fatigue. Nothing this party had seen differed from the general appearance they had so long been accustomed to; no variation to cheer or chequer the continual sameness of the dreary melancholy scene before them, except a canoe about forty feet in length. This solitary article was hauled up the side of a miserable hut, near which a fire, almost extinguished, indicated the vicinity of some human beings. In this vessel they left some copper, nails, and other trifles; which on their return were found in the same state, the canoe or hut not having been visited in their absence. Supposing, however, that the natives could not be at any great distance, they added some other articles to their former donation.

In consequence of intelligence the captain had received from Nootka, he had resolved to abandon any further survey of the northern continental shore for the present season. This examination he had intended to have continued about a month longer; but as the distressing event of Mr. Hergest's death demanded his presence in the execution of his Majesty's commands at Nootka, he determined instantly to repair thither. The navigators took their leave of these northern solitary regions, and directed their route towards Nootka.

SECTION VI.

Nootka—Anchor in Friendly Cove—Dædalus—Senr. Quadra—Cession of Nootka Sound debated and afterwards declined—Fire Works.

MONDAY the 20th, as the navigators were on their passage to Nootka, fresh squalls and rainy weather prevailed, and continued till noon the following day. In the forenoon of the 25th, they passed the north-west point of the large islands, which forms the south and western shores of the Gulph of Georgia and Queen Charlotte's Sound. In their passage to Woody Point the land appeared to be much broken, and to form many inlets, coves, and harbours, which they passed within the distance of about two miles. Proceeding to ascertain the outline of the coast to Nootka; foggy weather precluded them from steering for it with the favourable wind that prevailed from the north-west, but on its clearing away about two on the 28th they steered for that port.

On reaching its entrance they were visited by a Spanish officer, who brought a pilot to conduct the vessel to anchorage in Friendly cove, where they found his Catholic Majesty's brig the Active, bearing the broad pendant of Senr. Don Juan Francisco de la Bodega y Quadra, commandant of the marine establishment of St. Blas and California.

The Chatham, by a partial dispersion of the fog, had found her way in some time before the Discovery: the Dædalus store-ship, and a merchant brig called the Three Brothers of London, commanded by Lieutenant Alder of the navy, were also there at anchor. As Senr. Quadra had his residence on shore, Captain Vancouver sent Mr. Puget to give him intelligence of their arrival, and further to inform him

him that he meant to salute the Spanish flag, if he would return an equal number of guns. Receiving a polite answer in the affirmative, the English saluted with thirteen guns, which were regularly returned: and when the captain went on shore, accompanied by several of the officers, he had the honour of being courteously received by the commandant, who assured him he would return the visit the next morning.

Punctual to his engagement, Senr. Quadra, and several of his officers, came on board the Discovery on the 29th, where they breakfasted, and were saluted with thirteen guns on their arrival and departure: the day was afterwards spent in a series of ceremony, civility, harmony, and festivity. A dinner of five courses of delicacies and superfluities was elegantly served; and a royal salute was fired on drinking health to the sovereigns of England and Spain. A salute of seventeen guns was also given, to the success of the service in which the Discovery and the Chatham were engaged.

Maquinna, a great chief, was present on this occasion, but being unknown to our navigators, he was in the morning refused admittance on board the Discovery; the centinels and the officer on deck, observing nothing in his appearance to indicate his superiority of rank. Of this indignity he complained violently and repeatedly; but Senr. Quadra laboured so diligently to prove that their being unacquainted with his person was the sole cause of the mistake, that he became at length perfectly reconciled: The tents, observatory, instruments, &c. were sent on board the following day, and all hands were employed in the necessary duties of the ship. The boats also, in consequence of the many services they had been engaged in, required considerable repair, and were hauled on shore for that purpose*.

The politeness, hospitality, and generosity manifested on all occasions by Senr. Quadra, induced Captain Vancouver and Mr. Broughton, with several of the officers of both vessels, to dine almost daily at his table, which proved infinitely agreeable, as it teemed with a variety of refreshments, to most of which they had long been wholly unacquainted. The captain had the honour of Senr. Quadra's company at breakfast on Monday the 3d of September, when he took infinite pains to impress on the minds of the natives the most exalted opinion of their little squadron; and the more effectually to establish a good understanding in future, he proposed a ceremonious visit to *Maquinna*. The next morning was agreed on for setting out to proceed to his royal residence at Tahsheis, which was about seven leagues up the sound: Agreeably to appointment, Senr. Quadra accompanied the captain in the Discovery's yawl; the other boats being freighted with as many English and Spanish officers as could be taken, they all departed from Tahsheis, a message having been dispatched the preceding day to announce their intended visit†.

After this repast Maquinna entertained the company with a representation of their warlike atchievements. A dozen men appeared, armed with musquets, and equipped with their appendages, making several movements in imitation of attack and defence; singing at the same time some heroic songs, in which they were accompanied by others. The evolutions being terminated, the captain was presented with two small sea-otter skins; and the warriors, laying aside their military weapons, performed a mask-dance, which was ridiculously laughable, particularly as performed by *Maquinna*, who took a principal character in the representation. Our navigators were not backward in contributing to the sports

* Captain Vancouver circumtantially relates the particulars of the cession of Nootka to him on the part of his Britannic Majesty, and Senr. Quadra expressed himself, on this occasion, on the part of his Catholic majesty, in these words, "That he derived the greatest satisfaction from finding a person of my character, with whom he was to transact the business of delivering up Nootka." But this transaction being solely political, a particular detail of it would be too digressive.

† They reached Tahsheis about two in the afternoon, and were received by *Maquinna* with great pleasure and satisfaction. His house was one of the largest, though it was not completely covered in. Here they beheld, seated in a kind of form, Marquinna's daughter, who had lately been proclaimed sole heiress to all his property, power, and dominion. Near her three of his wives were exhibited, and a numerous tribe of relatives. The young princess was short and bulky, with a round face, and small features: Her skin being clean, and, approaching to white, she could not be considered as disagreeable, but her pretensions to beauty were not strongly supported. To her, her father, and the other relations, the captain made suitable presents, which were rapturously received amidst the acclamations of the throng. These ceremonies were succeeded by a most elegant dinner, which Senr. Quadra had provided, at which they were honoured by the company of *Maquinna* and the princess, who had been placed at the head of the table, and conducted herself with great propriety.

of the day; several songs were sung which afforded much pleasure to the natives; and the sailors, being provided with drums and fifes, concluded the afternoon's diversion with reels and country dances.

In the evening they took leave of *Maquinna*, who was totally incapable of expressing the sublime satisfaction he had received from them; protesting that neither *Wacamanish*, nor any other chief, had ever experienced such transcendant attention from any visitors. Before his departure he said he would return the compliment, and in the European fashion.

After breakfast in the morning of the 5th, they embarked, and directed their route towards Friendly Cove. About five they reached the cove, where the captain landed Senr. Quadra, and returned to the ship. In the course of conversation during this little excursion, Senr. Quadra requested some port or island might be named to their joint honour, and to commemorate their meeting and friendly intercourse. Thinking no spot so appropriate for this denomination as the place where they had first met, which formed the south-western sides of the gulf of Georgia, and the southern sides of Johnstone's straits and Queen Charlotte's sound, he named that country the island of Quadra and Vancouver, a compliment with which he seemed perfectly delighted.

On the 6th *Maquinna*, with two of his wives, and some of his relations, returned the visit. The royal party had not been long on board before they proved themselves the most consummate beggars the captain had ever seen, though a prevalent disposition in the whole tribe of Indians. Every thing which struck their fancy, either as useful, curious, or ornamental, however essential it might be to the possessor, must be immediately given them, or they would affect to be highly offended, or continue sulky for several days. The captain was, however, particularly fortunate in possessing every requisite to satisfy the demands of Maquinna and his party. Though he had been extremely liberal at Tahsheis, a circumstance too recent to have been forgotten, they nevertheless made a profitable visit, for what their modesty forbad them to ask of him, was amply made up by begging from the officers on board*.

Mr. Cranstoun, the surgeon of the Discovery, being reduced to a debilitated state of health, asked permission to proceed to Port Jackson in the Dædalus; from whence a passage might speedily be procured for him to England: he was consequently discharged; and Mr. Menzies, a surgeon in the navy, appointed in his room. The boatswain of the Discovery, Mr. Robert House, a careful and attentive officer, who had laboured under a violent rheumatic complaint for a long time, was also, on his own request, discharged; Mr. John Noot, boatswain of the Chatham, being appointed in his room.

On the 15th of September, a young lad, who had been missing from Senr. Quadra's vessel about two days, was found in a cove near the ships, most inhumanly murdered. The calves of his legs were cut off, his head almost severed from his body, and several other shocking wounds had been given in different parts. Doubts arose whether this horrid crime had been perpetrated by the natives, or by an infamous black man who had deserted from the Spanish vessel about the time the boy was missed. The former opinion prevailing, Senr. Quadra demanded of *Maquinna* that the murderer should be given up; when the precipitate departure of all the inhabitants of the sound from the neighbourhood, was at least a strong presumptive proof of their delinquency.

A further investigation of the territory of Nootka now took place between Senr. Quadra and Captain Vancouver, when the precise terms stipulated by the former were rejected, and the captain acquainted Senr. Quadra that he must positively decline any further correspondence on the subject. It was, however, a satisfactory reflection, that though a manifest difference of opinion arose in their minds, it had not any effect on their personal intercourse with each other: they continued to visit as usual, and this day Senr. Quadra and Caamano, with several other Spanish officers, honoured him with their company at dinner.

* The exhibition of fire-works, which the captain had promised the party, was impatiently waited for: as the evening advanced, they almost grew clamorous, and would not be persuaded that darkness was necessary to give splendour to the entertainment: they even accused him of breach of promise, and of advancing falsities. Senr. Quadra, however, prevailed on them to wait patiently till night; which proving favorable to their operations, their brilliance exceeded expectation. The balloons, rockets, and other combustible preparations, were truly excellent; and were regarded by the Indians with wonder and astonishment, mixed with a degree of apprehension and delight.

In

In the morning of the 22d, Senior Quadra sailed from Friendly Cove, and having saluted the English navigators with thirteen guns, Captain Vancouver returned the compliment with an equal number. Captain Vancouver had uniformly persisted in his determination of strictly adhering to his line of duty, in opposition to the judgment and opinion of Senior Quadra. He freely declares, "I acted to the best of my judgment; should I be so unfortunate, however, as to incur any censure, I must rely on the candour of my country, to do me the justice of attributing whatever improprieties I may appear to have committed, to the true and only cause; to a want of sufficient diplomatic skill, which a life wholly devoted to my profession had denied me the opportunity of acquiring."

Senior Quadra having adopted no rigorous measures to detect and punish the murderer of the young Spaniard, the natives ceased to be much alarmed, and visited our navigators as usual: but Maquinna, and the other chiefs, were not so cordially received at the Spanish habitations, as they had been when Senior Quadro was among them, at which the natives were replete with invectives against the Spaniards.

The inclemency of the weather detained our navigators in Nootka Sound till the 12th of October, when in company with the Chatham and Dædalus, they hauled out of the cove. About nine the next morning, the Chatham, by the weather falling calm as she weighed anchor, became under no command, and was swept by the tide on the rocky part of the cove, where the sea broke with violence; but by the judicious assistance of the Dædalus, she got off without receiving any apparent damage *.

On the 13th of November, after experieneing the innumerable vicissitudes usually attendant on maritime excursions, our navigators found themselves within a small distance of the entrance into Port St. Francisco. Having passed the inner points of entrance, they found themselves in a spacious sound, which appeared to contain a variety of excellent harbours. The Spanish establishment being on the southward side of the port, their course was directed along that shore. Several persons were seen coming to the south-east point; from whence two guns were fired, and regularly answered by them, agreeably to the signal established between Senior Quadra and Captain Vancouver. At night a large fire was seen upon the beach, and several other guns were discharged; but, as the meaning was not understood, the navigators steered up the port, under an easy sail, in expectation of seeing the lights of the town, off which they intended to anchor; but as they were not to be perceived at eight at night, and, as they had found a snug cove, they anchored to wait the return of the day.

SECTION VIII.

Transactions at the Spanish Settlements in New Albion—Visited by a Priest and a Serjeant—Visited by Senior Sal, the Commandant—The Missions of Saint Francisco and Sta Clara—Arrival of the Chatham—Proceed to Monterry.

ON the morning of the 15th of November, the British navigators discovered their anchorage to be in an excellent little bay; within less than a mile of the nearest shore. Herds of cattle, and flocks of sheep grazing on the surrounding hills, furnished a delightful prospect for them, and such as they had long been strangers to. From such an appearance of wealth they concluded that the proprietors were not very remote, though no inhabitants or habitations were at that instant visible. On hoisting the colours at sun-rise, a gun was fired, and soon after several persons on horseback descended from the hills to the beach, and made signals for a boat; which was instantly dispatched to the shore. A priest of the order of St. Francisco, and a serjeant in the Spanish army, embraced the opportunity this conveyance presented, of doing themselves the honour of breakfasting with Cap tain Vancouver.

* The remainder of this section is wholly devoted to nautical and astronomical proceedings and observations, and therefore inadmissible in a work intended for the genera reader.

The

The reverend father congratulated him on his arrival, and assured him that every refreshment and service in the power of himself or mission to bestow, were wholly at his command; and that it would be conferring a peculiar obligation on them all, to allow them to be serviceable. The serjeant expressed himself in terms equally friendly, and informed the captain, that in the absence of the commandant, he was directed, on his arrival, to render him every accommodation in his power.

He attended them on shore after breakfast, where they embraced the earliest opportunity of proving the sincerity of their friendly expressions, by presenting him with an ox, a sheep, and some excellent vegetables. The reverend friar also pointed out the most convenient spot for procuring a supply of wood and water. Having taken a situation commodiously adapted to their several purposes, the Captain directed a tent to be pitched, for the convenience of the party he had selected for his purveyers; while the rest of the crew were engaged on board, in repairing the damages the rigging had sustained in contending with the tempestuous weather*.

A south-west wind, attended with much rain, blew hard till Saturday the 17th of November, when the weather being more temperate, Captain Vancouver visited the shore, and had the mortification to find, that neither wood nor water could be procured without much inconvenience, and that the water was not of a good quality; but, as their Spanish friends had assured them the water here was infinitely better than that at Monterry, he became reconciled to what the country afforded.

About this time some saddled horses arrived from the commandant, with an earnest invitation to the Captain, and his officers, to repair to his habitation. In consequence of which, Captain Vancouver, and several other gentlemen, rode up to the Presidio, an appellation appropriated to military establishments in this country, synonymous to *safe-guard*. The residence of the friars is called a Mission. The wall of the Presidio, which fronted the harbour, was visible from the ships: they expected on their arrival there, to have found a city or town, instead of which they were conducted into a spacious verdant plain, surrounded with hills, excepting on that side which was opposite to the port. The principal object which presented itself, was a square area, whose sides were about two hundred yards in length, enclosed by a mud wall, and had the appearance of a pound for cattle. Above this wall the roofs of their low thatched houses were barely visible. The wall when finished, will be about fourteen feet high, and five in breadth, and though rudely constructed with dry sods and mud plaster, it had the appearance of durability sufficient for their protection, with the assistance of their fire arms, against the greatest force the country might be able to collect†.

Drawing near the house, they beheld this good lady, who, like her spouse, had passed the middle age of life, seated cross-legged on a mat, a little elevated from the ground, almost in the front of the door; with two daughters and a

* Our navigators amused themselves in the morning with shooting a few quails, and returned on board to partake of the excellent repast which their hospitable friends had prepared for them. While they were thus agreeably engaged, their boat brought off father Antonio Danti, the prineipal of the mission of St. Franciseo, and Senior Sal, an ensign in the Spanish army, and eommandant of the port; whose generous professions of the most earnest desire to render themselves serviceable, demanded their most grateful aeknowledgments.

† The Spanish soldiers, of which the garrison was eomposed, amounted to thirty-five; who with their families, and a few Indian servants, eonstituted the whole of the inhabitants. Their houses were plaeed along the wall; and the ehureh, though small, was neat in eomparison to the rest of the buildings. On the left of the ehureh is the commandant's mansion, consisting only of two rooms and a closet. Between these apartments and the external wall, an exeellent poultry-house and yard were observed, which seemed to be tolerably well stoeked. The houses, in general, here fashioned alike, and must be uncomfortable dwellings in the winter; for though the walls are substantial, the windows, which are cut in the front wall, on the side next the square, are destitute of glass, or any other defenee which would not at the same time exelude the light.

The eommandant's apartment, into whieh the party were ushered, was about thirty feet long, twelve feet high, and fifteen broad; the other room was somewhat smaller: the floor eonsisted of its native soil, unpaved, and void of an even surfaee: flags and rushes formed the roof, and the inside wall had the appearanee of having been formerly whitewashed; the furniture had not a superfluous artiele among it; a sparing assortment of indispensible artieles, of the rudest fashion, and of the meanest quality, was all that eould be seen. But though eleganeies were wanting, it would be injustiee not to aeknowledge the hearty welcome they experienced from their worthy host, who had provided a refreshing repast, whieh he thought would prove aeeeptable; nor was his lady less assiduous and happy in the opportunity of exerting herself to give satisfaetion to her new visitors.

son,

son, decently arrayed, sitting near her; this being the customary mode in which the ladies of that region receive visitors. The decorous and pleasing behaviour of the children did them great credit, and exceedingly delighted our adventurers, who had banished all thoughts of the lowly residence of their parents.

Senior Sal, hearing of the difficulties the British navigators had to encounter, in removing their wood to the sea-side, generously offered them the carts he had for the use of the Presidio; but they were greatly disappointed on the production of them, they were so miserably constructed, and so extremely ill calculated for the service they were intended to perform. Thus, without much difficulty or examination, their curiosity was perfectly satisfied with respect to the Spanish town, and settlement of Saint Francisco. Instead of finding a country well inhabited and cultivated, there is not an object to indicate its connection with any civilized nation, if its natural pastures, flocks of sheep, and herds of cattle are excepted.

This sketch will probably serve to convey some idea of the inactive disposition of the people, and the neglected state of the establishment at this port. It possesses no other means for its protection than such as have been already described; with a brass three pounder, on a rotten carriage, before the Presidio, and a piece of ordnance somewhat similar, lashed to a log instead of a carriage, which was the piece whose report they heard the evening of their arrival. Before the Presidio, two pieces of ordnance had formerly been placed: but one of them had lately burst to pieces.

One of the fathers of the mission of Saint Francisco, Martin de Landaeta, brought Captain Vancouver a very friendly and pressing invitation from his brethren to dine with them. Urged by this polite summons, Captain Vancouver, accompanied by Mr. Menzies, and several of the officers, engaged to attend the mission, and their friendly Senior Sal took a ride with them to partake of the repast. A loose sandy road, much incommoded with low groveling bushes, rendered the journey somewhat unpleasant, though the distance hardly exceeded three miles. The situation and external appearance of the mission, assorted well with those of the Presidio, and its neighbourhood was pleasingly diversified with hill and dale. The soil here was richer than that of the Presidio, the pastures produced a more luxuriont herbage, and fed a greater number of sheep and cattle.

The buildings of the mission formed two sides of a regular square; which might, at any future period, have been converted into a perfect quadrangle like the Presidio; the materials and the architecture seeming nearly to correspond. On the arrival of the party they were received by the reverend father with politeness, cordiality, and genuine hospitality. They were instantly conducted to their mansion, which communicated with the church. The houses formed a small oblong square, the side of the church composing one end, near which were the apartments appropriated to the fathers: these structures resembled those at the Presidio, but were larger, more commodious, compact, and cleanly. Along the walls several convenient offices were arranged for a variety of necessary purposes *.

By various encouragements to the children, or their parents, they procure as many females to rear in this manner as they require: they are well fed, and better cloathed than the Indians in the neighbourhood, and are carefully instructed. But they must submit to certain regulations on their part; they must not presume to go out of the interior square, in the day-time, without permission: they must never sleep out of it at night; and, to prevent elopements, only one common door has any communication with the country, and the fathers have taken upon themselves the command of that aperture, and the additional office of seeing it carefully secured

* Whilst dinner was preparing, the party amused themselves in surveying the several houses within the square; some of which were appropriated to the reception of grain, though they were in possession of no very considerable stock, however rich the contiguous soil might be for all the purposes of husbandry. One large room was occupied by manufacturers of a coarse kind of blanketing, from the wool produced in the neighbourhood. The looms were rudely wrought by the Indians, under the immediate superintendance of the fathers, and the produce resulting from their manufactory is wholly applied to the clothing of the converted natives: Captain Vancouver, who saw some of the cloth, declared it "was by no means despicable, and had it received the advantage of fulling, would have been a very decent sort of cloathing." The spinning and weaving was performed by unmarried women, and female children, who resided within the square, and were in a state of conversion to the Roman Catholic persuasion.

every evening. The apartments of the women, who usually retire immediately after supper, are also under their immediate care.

This establishment is protected only by five soldiers, under the direction of a corporal, and may be reasonably considered as liable to some danger. Should these children prove ungrateful and treacherous, they might conceal a sufficient number of weapons to effect any wicked purpose. There are only three fathers, who have each a separate residence; and should any attempt be made upon them at night, they would be able to make but little resistance; nor is it certain that the guard would be alarmed in time. Should a conspiracy for their destruction take place, the mission would certainly fall; as the conspirators would doubtless be joined by the Indians of the adjacent village, which consisted of about six hundred persons; the greater part of whom had been converted to the Roman Catholic faith*.

These wretched huts, each of which accommodated a whole family, were uniformly arranged, about three or four feet asunder, in straight rows, leaving passages between them; all of which were so abominably infested with filth and nastiness, that they were equally offensive and degrading to the human species.

Close by stood the church, which reflects credit on the constructors of it; the raising and decorating of which greatly attracted the attention of the fathers; the comforts of their humble habitations having been principally sacrificed to this favourite object. Even their garden had been greatly neglected, though of so rich a soil as to promise an ample return for the labour bestowed upon it. It consisted of about four acres, and produced some fig, peach, and other fruit trees, but of useful vegetables, very few were to be seen; weeds were the principal possessors of this promising spot.

Returning to the convent, they were furnished with an abundant repast, consisting of beef, mutton, fowls, fish, and such vegetables as their garden afforded. The attentive and hospitable behaviour of their new friends, sufficiently compensated for any deficiency of form in serving up the repast; as it has already been intimated that they were entirely unprovided with the common and most necessary utensils of life, especially in the culinary department. After dinner the conversation of the company was principally directed to the nature of the institution, and the probable consequences of its effects. The establishment of Sta Clara, on a similar principal, was mentioned in the course of conversation; and the next day appointed for visiting that pious foundation, as it was at no greater distance than about one day's journey. Senior Sal proposed to be of the party, and the reverend fathers undertook to provide horses for the expedition.

On the Captain's return to the Presidio, he was favoured with a polite reply to a letter he had sent to Senior Quadra, informing him that neither the Chatham nor the Dædalus had yet arrived at Monterry; but assuring him that whenever they reached that port, he might rely on his best services; and trusted it would not be long before the Discovery would re-join them at Monterry. During the night the wind blew a strong gale, attended with rain, which continued till the morning of the 20th, when serene pleasant weather succeeded, and they undertook their journey to Sta Clara. In their way they called on their friends at the Presidio and Mission; but important dispatches received by Senior Sal, and the indisposition of one of the fathers, obliged them to decline the engagement. Our navigators, therefore, according to the fashion of the country, started, attended by as many spare horses as amounted to more than double the

* Few advantages, however, appeared to have attended their conversion: they seemed to have treated the precepts, and laborious example of their pastors with the most perfect indifference. The object of the reverend fathers was to allure them from a life of indolence, and to create among them a spirit of industry; which would enable them to augment their comforts, and partake of the blessings of civilized society. Deaf to these important lessons, and insensible of the advantages they offered, a state of civilization appeared to them a matter of indifference; and, with the exception of the inhabitants of Tierra del Fuego, and those of Van Dieman's land, Captain Vancouver declares, "they are certainly a race of the most miserable beings, possessing the faculty of human reason, I ever saw."—Their persons, which are ill made, are generally under the middle size; their faces are ugly, without any traits of expression but those of stupidity and vulgarity. They have an insurmountable aversion to cleanliness, either in their persons or habitations. Their houses are of a conical form, about seven feet diameter at their base, rudely constructed by a number of stakes, chiefly of the willow tribe. A small aperture is left at the top, for the double purpose of admitting the light and discharging the smoke: a hole near the ground serves as the portal to the habitation; through which one person at a time can hardly gain admitance. A thick thatch of dried grass and rushes was the general covering of these curious mansions.

number

number of their party, under the escort of the serjeant of the Presidio, attended by half a dozen stout soldiers, fully accoutered for their protection*.

The buildings, including the offices belonging to this mission, like those of St. Francisco, form a square which is not wholly inclosed. The fathers' apartments are upon the same plan with those at St. Francisco, and seem to be more extensive and convenient. Apartments within the square, where the priests resided, were appropriated to a certain number of young female Indians; and for the same reasons as were assigned at St. Francisco. Their occupations were similar to those at Francisco, but their woollen manufactures surpassed them. The upper story of the interior oblong square, being about one hundred and seventy feet in length, and one hundred in breadth, was divided into granaries, which were replete with corn and pulse. They cultivate wheat, peas, beans, and maize, of all which they produce sufficient to supply their necessities, and to enable them to make a reserve, should disappointments happen. Of these articles of food, they had several thousand bushels in store, of very excellent quality, which had been procured with little labour, and without manure: by a wretched apology for a plough, the earth is once slightly turned over, and smoothed down by a kind of harrow: in November or December, they sow the wheat in drills, or cast it on the even surface, and scratch it in with the harrow; and in this simple process the whole system of their husbandry consists, which uniformly produces an abundant harvest in July or August.

The wheat produces, in general, from twenty-five to thirty to one, according to the seasons; for though enormous waste is occasioned by their mode of thrashing, which is performed by the treading of cattle in the open air, twenty-five for one has always been deposited in their granaries from the field. Other grains are equally prolific; but barley or oats are seldom cultivated, as those of the superior kind may be obtained with the same labour that the inferior sorts require. The management of the field is superintended by the fathers, but the laborious part is performed by the natives, who are instructed in the Roman Catholic faith, and in the art of husbandry. The annual produce is applied by the reverend pastors to the most useful and beneficial purposes. Besides the arable land, a small spot was peculiarly devoted to the production of vegetables, which are abundant and in great perfection; but it was not sufficiently capacious to supply the consumption of the European residents; the priests, and a guard con-

* Their route was nearly parallel with the sea-coast, a ridge of mountains, the summits of which exhibited a high degree of fertility, interspersed with woods, copses, and verdant open spaces, enriched with stately forest trees, extended to the north-east. Their journey was estimated at eighteen leagues, in which distance no house or hut was to be seen: no shelter presented itself but such as the expanding trees afforded. About noon they arrived at an enchanting lawn, situated amidst a grove of trees at the foot of a small hill; a pellucid stream of excellent water, creating a degree of thirst it was so capable of allaying. This delightful pasture was enclosed on every side, and afforded resting-places for themselves, as well as delightful pasture for their cavalry. The bank on the margin of the murmuring brook, invited them to regale on what their provident friends had supplied; and, to complete the banquet, some grog had been procured by one of the officers from the ship. So enchanting a scene could not be quitted without extreme reluctance, especially as the beauty of it was much heightened by the delightful serenity of the weather. To this alternative they were, however, obliged to submit, and, selecting a fresh supply of cavalry, they mounted and pursued their journey.

They were not far removed from this delightful spot, when they entered a country which they could not have supposed to exist in these regions. For twenty miles it perfectly resembled one of the most elegant parks which had ever been beheld in the most enchanting pleasure-grounds of Britain. This imaginary park had originally been closely planted with the genuine old English oak; the underwood which probably attended its early growth, had been cleared away, when the stately lords of the forest obtained complete possession of the soil; which was also covered with luxuriant herbage, and diversified with eminences and vallies; the whole producing a scene not inferior to the most studied effect of taste in the elegant disposition of grounds. Their travelling this short journey was attended with some inconvenience, occasioned by fox-earths, burrows of rabbits, rats, and other animals; but their sure-footed horses, though expeditious, carefully avoided every danger. Having passed through this delightful park, they entered a low swampy country, through which their progress was obliged to be extremely slow. About dark a better road presented itself, and soon after the arrival of night they arrived at the mission of Sta Clara, which could not be less than forty geographical miles from Saint Francisco. But, though the adventurers encountered some difficulties on the road, their reception at Sta Clara, by the hospitable fathers of the mission, excited in them the most exalted sensations of gratitude and regard. The evening passed pleasantly; and after breakfasting on tea and chocolate the next morning, they took a view of the establishment, and the surrounding country.

taining

taining a corporal and six soldiers. Peaches and other wall-fruit flourished, but the vines proved unsuccessful, which may probably be ascribed to their want of proper culture, rather than to the soil and climate. The oak, among the timber, appears to take the lead: a tree of this description which measured fifteen feet in girth, and was of a proportional height, was not considered by the fathers as of an immoderate size. The timber of these trees is supposed to be equal in quality to the best European oak: elm, ash, birch, and beach, are abundant, and in high perfection.

Our navigators repaired to the Indian village in the vicinity of the mission, but they found the habitations less regularly disposed than in that of St. Francisco; yet they observed the same horrid state of filthiness and idleness. Not a symptom could be discovered, in their general deportment, of their having received the least advantage from the precepts and laborious instructions of their religious tutors: these wretched beings were totally insensible to the benefits with which they were provided, excepting in the single article of food, which they now found ready for their support, without dreading the effects of famine, or of being reduced to the scanty and precarious morsel. Not only grain, but domestic animals, have been successfully introduced among them, and some of the natives have been taught to manufacture useful garments, from the wool of their sheep. But these striking advantages seem totally lost on these untaught children of nature, a compound of stupidity and innocence. The operations and functions both of body and mind, were performed with a mechanical indifference, which they seem to have inherited from their fore-fathers. Further efforts, however, are now making, to brighten the gloomy cloud of insensibility, in which these miserable people are now enveloped*.

Hunger having announced its cravings, the party retired to dinner; a most excellent and plentiful repast was provided in the convent. The day passed to the mutual satisfaction of all parties; but the visitors found it a difficult task the next morning, to refuse obedience to the pressing solicitations of these good people to prolong their stay at Sta Clara, which necessity compelled them to decline. They took their leave at an early hour, highly gratified by their reception and entertainment.

Captain Vancouver, knowing the mission of Sta Cruz was also in its infancy, had entertained an idea of paying that a visit, but as his leisure would not admit of his extending his excursion, he repaired immediately to the ships, when he had the satisfaction to find that the Chatham was at anchor near the Discovery. The price of large cattle at this port, was, on his arrival, six Spanish dollars each, and that of sheep in proportion. He instantly procured the quantity he required for both vessels, with poultry, vegetables, and other necessaries, and presented Senior Sal with cash to the amount; the supply having been principally furnished by him. But, to his astonishment, he declined receiving the money the Captain had tendered to him, declaring he had been strictly enjoined by Senior Quadra, not to accept of any pecuniary recompence from him; as matters of that nature would be adjusted by him on their meeting at Monterry. These injunctions from Senior Quadra, removed his difficulties, as he would have been incapable of requiting such generosity from persons, who, in every respect excepting that of food, had the appearance of absolute poverty, bordering on distress.

The Captain's excursion into the country had convinced him, that though the inhabitants had an abundant supply of every essential requisite for human subsistence, they were almost destitute of those articles which principally tend to impart genuine felicity: he therefore experienced no small gratification in being able to distribute among them a few necessary articles; such as culinary implements and utensils, bars of iron, and a few decorations for their churches: to which he added a hogshead of wine, and another of rum. These presents were consigned to the care of Senior Sal, with a request that

* In consequence of this visit, the fathers ordered a feast to be prepared for the entertainment of the Indians of the village. The principal part of it consisted of beef, which was presented to the villagers on this occasion. The black cattle on the fertile plains of Sta Clara, are wonderfully prolific, and increase abundantly; but being in a wild state, some adroitness is necessary to get them into subjection. Though this village appeared to be less populous than that at St. Francisco, it contained about double the number of inhabitants.

he

he would equally disperse them among the Presidio, and the missions at St Francisco and Sta. Clara. This request was punctually complied with, and the donation proved highly satisfactory to the receivers.

In the morning of the 25th they departed from St. Francisco, highly indebted for their hospitable reception, and proceeded towards Monterrey. They proceeded without meeting with any material obstacles till they arrived off the entrance of the bay of Monterry, when they were becalmed; but about noon a pleasant breeze from the westward permitted them to steer for the bottom of the bay, whose shores consisted principally of low compact land; but the more southern and western parts seemed much elevated, and had the appearance of being insular. Steering along in earnest expectation of finding a proper place of anchorage, such a situation was discovered about four in the afternoon, by making the signal which had been settled with Senr. Quadra, which was instantly answered from the Presidio. Their anchorage was directed to be nearly under the elevated land on the south side of the bay. At seven in the evening Mr. Whidbey came on board from the Dædalus, which had arrived on the 22d, having completed the service she had been ordered upon.

Soon after they were met by some Spanish boats, ordered by Senr. Quadra to their assistance: and in about an hour they were safely moored. On their arrival they found at anchor the Dædalus, and the following Spanish vessels; the brig Active, the Aransasu, and a schooner. On board the brig the broad pendant of Senr. Quadra was displayed.

SECTION IX.

Occurrences at Monterry—The Mission of St. Carlos described—Departure of the Dædalus—Description of Monterry Bay—and the Presidio—Generosity of Senr. Quadra.

HAVING arrived at Monterry on the 26th, Captain Vancouver waited on Sen. Quadra, who then resided at the governor's house in the Presidio; from whom he received the most cordial assurances of friendship. He returned on board, and early the next morning the Presidio was saluted with thirteen guns; which being regularly returned, the topsails were hoisted, and Senr. Quadra's broad pendant saluted with an equal number. After a due acknowledgment of this compliment, Senr. Quadra, accompanied by the acting governor, and several Spanish officers, returned the visit, all of whom were respectfully and ceremoniously received on board the Discovery and Chatham. When these formalities were terminated, Captain Vancouver accompanied Senr. Quadra on shore, to partake of the delicacies of his hospitable table.

In the course of conversation Senr. Quadra informed the captain, that on his arrival from Nootka, he found orders directing him to capture all trading vessels on this coast, excepting those belonging to the people of Great Britain, who were to proceed without molestation. These orders naturally induced them to believe, that their respective sovereigns had finally adjusted every arrangement with respect to the territories at Nootka. This intelligence appeared of so important a nature, that Captain Vancouver began to think of relinquishing the design he had meditated, of sending the Chatham home this season to convey intelligence, if he could procure a passage to England for an officer through New Spain. He proposed to intrust all the intelligence, surveys, and charts in his possession, to the care of Lieutenant Broughton the commander of the Chatham, who knew the whole of his transactions with Senr. Quadra at Nootka; and whose abilities and observations would enable him, on his arrival in England, to satisfy the board of admiralty, with respect to any objects of enquiry. On this occasion, he requested permission of Senr. Quadra for Mr. Broughton to be permitted to take his passage by the way of New Spain to England; to which an answer was instantly given by Senr. Quadra in the affirmative; and that Mr. Broughton might accompany him to St. Blas, where he would supply him with money and other accommodations to render his expedition perfectly agreeable. At so generous an offer, Captain Vancouver expressed his grateful acknowledgments, and lost no time in preparing for Mr. Broughton's departure.

On the 2d of December the captain, with some

attendants, paid his respects to the Mission of St. Carlos, accompanied by Senr. Quadra, Mr. Broughton, and several other English and Spanish officers. This establishment is situated about a league from the Presidio of Monterry, from whence they had a pleasant journey over a lively road: their reception at the mission was hospitable in the extreme, and manifested the joy of the revcrend fathers for the honour they had conferred on them: nothing which their humble residence afforded was withheld from them. On their arrival at the portal of the mission the bells were rung, and the reverend fathers of the missions in New Albion, as well as that of Don Carlos, came out to meet them, and usher them into the principal residence of the father president; a venerable personage aged seventy-two years, with suavity of manners and a placid countenance*.

An Indian village in the neighbourhood, said to contain about eight hundred inhabitants, is governed by the same principles as those they had before visited. Notwithstanding these people were instructed and employed in the occupations most useful to society, they could not erect habitations more comfortable than those of their forefathers, nor had they derived a single advantage from the information they had received. Some of them indeed now engaged, under the direction of the fathers, in building a church of stone and mortar: the former is of a tender friable nature, little harder than indurated clay; but, when exposed to the air, is said to become hardened, and petrified.

Having satisfied their curiosity in these particulars, the party rode round the neighbourhood of the mission, which was pleasantly situated, and agreeably diversified with hills and vallies. Through one of the latter, a stream of water, about knee-deep, takes its course, passes the buildings of the mission, and is immediately received by the sea†.

Returning on board in the evening, the captain was on the following Monday honoured with the company of the party to dinner; with the addition of the governor's wife, and several other ladies of the Presidio. But the motion of the ship, though not very considerable, obliged the ladies, and even some of the gentlemen, speedily to retire. It was not till the 9th that the captain's engagements permitted him to make another short excursion with Senr. Quadra, and several friends, to dine at the garden of the Presidio. This garden, though at a convenient distance for an excursion, had no regular accommodations for visitors. The only places of shelter in its vicinity were a few miserable mud huts, in which the gardener and a few soldiers were stationed for its protection. Few incidents occurred in this excursion entitled to attention; the adjacent country consisted principally of sandy heath, over-grown with an impassable thicket of shrubs; forming good cover for deer, foxes, hares, rabbits, &c.

The inconvenience suffered by some of the captain's visitors on board, from the ship's agitation, became the subject of conversation; and, as there was no possibility of providing against it, he solicited the company of his Spanish friends at the encampment on shore. This request was complied with on the following day, when he was gratified with the presence of most of the ladies and gentlemen at dinner. A display of fire-works was exhibited in the evening, which gave infinite delight to the visitors, besides creating terror and astonishment among the Indians, who were assembled on this occasion, which was probably a novel spectacle to many

* After the usual ceremonies and formalities, their time was pleasantly engaged in the society of the father president, and two priests belonging to the mission of St Carlos, who attended them over their premises; which much resembled those at St. Francisco, or Sta. Clara, but the structures were on a smaller scale. In their granaries a considerable quantity of grain was deposited, though inferior in quality to that produced at Sta. Clara. There was also a garden belonging to this mission, on a smaller scale, not remarkable for the abundance or excellence of the vegetables it produced.

† On their return to the convent, they found an excellent repast, decently served in a bower constructed for that purpose, in the garden belonging to the mission. After performing their duty at the meal, they were entertained with a recital of the methods practiced by the Indians, in luring animals by imitating them. They clothe themselves with the skin of the head and hide of the animal they propose to take, and resort to the place it is customary for them to haunt, and, walking on their hands and feet, counterfeit the motions of the creature they mean to betray. By these means, if they intend to take possession of a deer, they can easily get within three or four yards of him; when they embrace an opportunity of his attention being otherwise engaged, of discharging their arrows from their concealed bow, which they accomplish in a very stooping attitude; and the first or second discharge generally proves fatal.

of

of them. The evening was concluded by a dance and supper, and reciprocal satisfaction was received.

The carpenters belonging to the Discovery were employed in fitting up commodious stalls, on board the Dædalus for the reception of live cattle; Senr. Quadra having liberally offered any number of those animals, with such other productions of the country as might be thought necessary for his Majesty's infant colony in New South Wales. Twelve cows, six bulls, six rams, and as many ewes were received on board the Dædalus on the 24th. Several other essential duties were required to be performed, which prevented the sailing of the Dædalus till the 29th, when she departed, the cattle being then in excellent condition.

On this occasion Lieuteuaut Hanson received Captain Vancouver's orders to proceed to New South Wales; calling at Hergest's islands, in his way thither, for a supply of water, and food for cattle, with such other refreshments as were necessary, and could be procured; passing thence to the north of all the low islands, to proceed to Otaheite; from thence to New Zealand, and Port Jackson, where he was anxious the Dædalus should arrive with the utmost dispatch, as the cattle, sheep, &c. would be a valuable acquisition to that country. His visit at Otaheite was not merely that of procuring refreshments; he was also to take on board twenty-one English seamen who had been cast away in the Matilda, of London, in February 1792, on a ledge of rocks. After this accident, the crew returned in their boats to Otaheite from whence they had departed*.

A few cursory remarks on Monterry bay may not be absolutely unnecessary:. It is situated between point Pinos and point Anno Nuevo. Between these points a spacious bay is formed, by the coast retreating from the line of the two points about four leagues. The only part that is eligible for anchoring is near its south extremity, about a league south-eastward from point Pinos. The soundings are regular from thirty fathoms to four; the bottom a mixture of sand and mud. The anchorage is the only situation in the bay where vessels can ride with safety or convenience: the Spanish establishment is in its neighbourhood; and the Presidio is not far distant; near which a wretched kind of house has been erected, for the reception of a guard of soldiers.

The Presidio is situated on a plain, a little elevated above the level of the sea; having a diversity of charming spots in the neighbourhood, which would amply reward the taste and labour of the ingenious. The buildings of the Presidio, like those already described at St. Francisco, for the use of the officers, soldiers, &c. are erected along the walls on the inside of the inclosure, which admit of no more than one entrance for carriages or persons on horseback. This, as at St. Francisco, is on the side of the square fronting the church. Besides the principal gateway, they have small doors communicating with the country, to the right and left of the entrance. One of these, to the right, leads through the apartments of the commanding officer, which are numerous and extensive, but the windows are not furnished with glass. The window places are open; and these are all the apertures in the wall, which, when seen at a distance, give it the appearance of a prison. A small kind of block-house is raised a little above the top of the wall, where swivels might occasionally be mounted; and on the outside, before the entrance of the Presidio, are placed seven cannon, mounted: they consisted of four nine, and three three-pounders. Those, with what have been noticed at St. Francisco, one two-pounder at Sta Clara, and four nine-pounders dismounted, form the whole of their artillery. These guns are planted on the open plain, without any breast-work, or the least protection from weather; and such is said to be the defenceless state of all the new settlements on the coast, not excepting that of St. Diego.

The governor of the province resides at the Presidio, and his command extends from St.

* This shipwreck appeared to have been attended with very disagreeable consequences, to many persons at Otaheite. Such valuable articles as the unfortunate people had preserved from the wreck, instead of being properly secured, had been carelessly scattered, or left to the disposal of the natives. This created a jealousy between the chiefs of Matavai, and those of Oparre: a war was the consequence between the two districts, which terminated to the disadvantage of Matavai; a considerable part of that beautiful country being laid waste, their houses consumed, and their fruit-trees destroyed.

With respect to the other objects of the voyage, Captain Vancouver had requested Commodore Phillips, at Port Jackson, to complete the cargo of the Dædalus to a year's provisions. He communicated to him the discoveries he had made in the South Pacific Ocean, and transmitted to him a survey of that part of the coast of New Holland which he had visited.

Francisco

Francisco to Cape St. Lucas; and on the eastern side of the peninsula of California, up that gulf to the bay of St. Louis. The rank required to be qualified for this extensive command, in the Spanish service, is that of lieutenant-colonel. By what Captain Vancouver could learn, the number of soldiers who composed the garrison did not exceed one hundred, including the non-commissioned officers. From this body detachments are drawn to protect the neighbouring missions; the remainder, with their families, reside within the walls of the Presidio. This establishment consisted entirely of military people: the few most essential mechanical employments were clumsily conducted by some of the soldiers, under the permission of the governor.

Captain Vancouver next apologizes for quitting the interesting subject of these establishments; in which he says, "We unexpectedly not only found an asylum, and pleasant retreat from the vicissitudes and labours of our voyage, but the gratification of social intercourse with a set of liberal-minded, generous people, each of whom endeavoured to surpass the other in manifesting an interest for our welfare, and expressing on every occasion, the happiness they felt in relieving our wants, or rendering us any kind of service*."

On Captain Vancouver's first arrival at Monterry, he requested information of Senr. Quadra, on the method of procuring refreshments, and the current price of the different species he might require. In answer to the first interrogation, he declared that every thing the country afforded was at his service; and, with regard to the last, every thing could be easily settled at their departure. On this foundation, the captain urged his compliance with his former promise, especially as the transaction between them was of a public nature: but all remonstrances were ineffectual; he insisted that he had performed his promise, as the only *settlement* in which he could possibly engage, was that of seeing them accommodated to the extent of their wishes, with what the country could bestow†.

The parting from a society, which the adventurers so sincerely regarded, could not take place without considerable regret. The captain, however, experienced the satisfaction of administering to their comfort by a supply of necessary utensils: such articles as he could possibly spare, he consigned to their use, and had the satisfaction to find that they were highly valued, and thankfully received.

The tides appeared to be irregular, and of little elevation; by their general motion they appeared to flow but once in twenty-four hours; and it was high water about seven hours and a half after the moon passed the meridian. The rise and fall was about six feet at the spring, and four feet at the neap tides.

So far relates particularly to the transactions of the voyage appertaining to the Discovery to the end of 1792. The following section will be devoted to the principal events in the information communicated by Lieutenant Broughton of the Columbia river; and by Mr. Whidbey of the transactions of the Dædalus, during their state of separation.

SECTION X.

Summary of Lieutenant Broughton's Account of Columbia River—Transactions at the Marquisas —Murder of Lieutenant Hergest, Mr. Gooch the Astronomer, and one of the Ship's Crew.

HAVING soon abandoned the idea of taking the Chatham further up, Mr. Broughton determined to proceed in boats, and departed with the cutter and launch, with a week's provisions,

* He expatiates largely on the wonderful merits of Senr. Quadra, who, regardless of a diplomatic difference of opinion between them in the Nootka business, had uniformly maintained a character beyond the captain's powers of encomium to describe. His benevolence was not limited to the common rights of hospitality, but was extended upon all occasions. Among the innumerable instances that might be adduced to prove his great liberality, the following must not be forgotten. When Captain Vancouver requested an account of the expences incurred by furnishing three vessels under his command with refreshments, with the charges attendant on the cattle, corn, &c. put on board the Dædalus, he not only disdained the idea of receiving payment, but gave peremptory orders that no account should be rendered; nor would he accept of any voucher or acknowledgment for the very liberal supply he had received.

† The venerable father president of the Franciscan missionaries, with the worthy members of that order; together

visions, in the prosecution of his plan, Between the ocean and what should properly be called the entrance of the river, is a space from three to seven miles wide, intricate to navigate on account of the shoals which almost extended from side to side. In this neighbourhood some of the natives approached in four canoes, clothed principally with deer skins, though some of them had garments of otter skins. These good people sold the party a few fish, and civilly took their leave. Their language was so different from that of the other American Indians, that not a syllable could be comprehended. The shores abounded with fine timbers; the pine was distinguished on the higher lands, whilst poplar, maple, elder, and several other trees predominated near the banks of the river.

Nine canoes, with a considerable number of Indians, took up their temporary abode in a creek at a small distance from the party; a circumstance which convinced the lieutenant, that the further he proceeded, the more populous he found the country. Their warlike appearance at first produced some caution, but their orderly behaviour banished all suspicions to their prejudice. The nine canoes continued to attend them, and their numbers kept increasing as they passed some small creeks and openings on the sides of the river. Approaching high land, a remarkable mount was seen, near which several canoes of dead bodies were placed, which was therefore denominated Mount Coffin. About a mile to the eastward, their Indian attendants stopped at a single hut; but Mr. Broughton continued rowing till three in the afternoon, when they landed to dine on the opposite shore. Mr. Broughton continued to proceed, and soon passed a small rocky islet, about twenty feet above the surface of the water. The top of this little islet was covered with canoes in which dead bodies were deposited *.

Proceeding on his course, he saw a very large village; and such of the strangers as seemed to inhabit it, strongly invited the party to walk thither; at the same time assuring them that if they persisted in going to the southward, they would certainly have their heads cut off. The same urgent intreaties had before been made to Mr. Broughton in the course of his excursion; but not supposing them necessary to be regarded, he still proceeded up what he considered the main branch of the river till eight in the evening; when, under the shelter of some willows, they selected a lodging for the night on a low sandy point, accompanied by twelve of the natives in a canoe, who made choice of a residence near them †.

The lieutenant having been seven days occupied in the examination of this river, and his remaining stock of provisions not being more than sufficient for two or three days, he gave up the idea of any further search; because, even thus far, the river could not be considered as navigable for shipping; he calculated also that he was now near a hundred miles from what he considered the entrance of the river; and that great frugality was required in the conduct of their meals, to preserve the existence of his party till they should rejoin the Chatham. But, before his departure, he formally took possession of the

together with Senr. Sal, and the whole of the Spanish officers our navigators were acquainted with, were also fully entitled to their highest sentiments of esteem and gratitude. Even the common people had a justifiable claim to their good opinion and respect, for uniformly imitating the exemplary conduct of their superiors, by their obliging and orderly behaviour.

* The lieutenant then arrived at a point, which he afterwards named Point Warrior, (having been there surrounded by twenty-three canoes with several persons in each all armed, and in their war garments.) These strangers, however, after conversing with the friendly Indians who attended the party, took off the war dress, and very civilly disposed of their arms and other articles for European toys and trinkets; but would not, on any consideration part with their copper swords, nor iron battle-axes.

† Advancing up the stream they had passed two Indian villages on the west side of the river, and had been joined by about one hundred and fifty of the natives in twenty-five canoes. To avoid surprize, they dined in their boats; though there appeared to be no necessity for such caution; for, on some trivial presents being made, trade immediately commenced, and was conducted with great decorum. Not an attempt was made to pass the line drawn on the beach, except by two who appeared to be chiefs, and who were permitted to communicate with their party. At the several creeks and branches they had passed, they gradually lost the company of most of the Indians, excepting one elderly chief, who on the most friendly terms had continued with them from the first, and had a village farther up the river. Having received considerable presents from the party, he became so strongly attached to them, that, to manifest his gratitude, he went forward to provide them with lodgings, and such acceptable refreshments as his village would afford. In the evening they reached his habitation; where he entreated them to remain; but, preferring a more secluded resting-place, they resorted to a shallow creek higher up the river.

river, and the country in its vicinity, in his Britannic Majesty's name. The venerable chief, who still continued one of the party, assisted at the ceremony, and drank his Majesty's health on the occasion. Some further information was anxiously endeavoured to be procured from this venerable man, but all that they could comprehend was, that higher up the river they would be prevented passing by a fall; which he explained by taking up water in his hands, and striving to imitate the manner of its falling on a rock: pointing also to the spot where the sun rises; intimating that its source in that direction would be found at a vast distance*.

At length the party arrived on board the Chatham, having consumed half the time in returning, that was exhausted in passing up that river, in consequence of the general rapidity of the stream downward; and of being often aided by a favourable wind. Though Mr. Broughton had received no orders for the investigation he had undertaken, he was convinced that such an enterprize would have been consonant to Captain Vancouver's wishes; he therefore deemed it expedient to join the Discovery with all possible expedition. Thus the Chatham quitted Columbia river: the rest of the time, till she joined the Discovery, was performed in a boisterous unpleasant voyage.

From Mr. Whidbey's account of Gray's harbour, and the transactions of the Dædalus, we shall extract a summary of the particulars, with the murder of Lieutenant Hergest at Woahoo, &c.†.

Mr. Whidbey supposed the natives of this place amounted to about a hundred: they spoke the Nootka language, and seemed, in many respects, to vary little from those the navigators had seen in the summer: their behaviour was friendly, civil, and courteous. In Mr. Whidbey's excursion to the head of the harbour, he was visited by several of them, who, having satisfied their curiosity, were about to depart, when the boat, endeavouring to approach a small rivulet, became entangled among shoals, stumps of trees, &c. and was rather in a perilous state, which the friendly Indians perceiving, instantly afforded them such assistance as totally relieved them from their embarrassment; after which they respectfully took their leave and departed.

The natives seemed to be divided into three distinct tribes or classes, each having one or two chiefs. Each partisan declared the other two were bad people. Hence it may be presumed that they were then at variance, or at least had separate interests. Some of their war canoes had a piece of wood wretchedly carved, perforated, and placed at each end, three feet above the gunwale: through these holes they could discharge their arrows, without presenting their persons to their adversaries; and each contained about twenty people. One of the Indians asked the mate of the Dædalus to shoot a pelican, on the water about fifty yards off: the mate fired twice with a ball, and missed it: The pelican still keeping his station, the Indian missed it with his first arrow, but with the second he pierced through the body of the bird, to the great exultation of the natives. They understand commercial pursuits, and deal honourably and fairly. For sea-otter skins they sometimes expected iron in exchange, but usually sold them for copper and woollen cloth. For articles of less value they were glad of pale blue beads; two of which would purchase a salmon. They seemed to be a hardy people, and regardless of the inclemency of the weather. This is the substance of the information procured by Mr. Whidbey, in his visit to Gray's Harbour.

* With these ceremonies and enquiries night had closed in; notwithstanding which Mr. Broughton immediately re-embarked, and, having the stream in his favour, proceeded on his return. All the Indians, except the old chief, and his suite, very civilly took their leave. They, however, continued to attend him, their route being the same way. At length the old chief took his final adieu of our navigators; when the part of the river on which this affectionate parting was solemnized, obtained the name of FRIENDLY REACH.

† Gray's harbour, in its present state, appears to be of little importance, as it affords but two or three situations where the boats can effect a landing: the shallowness of the water on the bar also renders it less commodious as a port, as it would be impracticable to pass it unless near high-water, even with vessels of a moderate size: Mr. Whidbey also supposes it to be a shifting channel. Wood and water cannot be easily procured; especially the latter, which is found only in small springs, running through the sand at the distance of a mile from the landing place. Both the Dædalus and Chatham had the advantage of the Discovery, by remaining in port while she was contending with the boisterous weather. There they were abundantly supplied with excellent fish and wild fowl. Salmon, sturgeon, and other fish, were plentifully supplied by the natives: and the geese, ducks, and other wild fowl, shot by themselves, were sometimes sufficient for the support of the crews. The south side of Gray's harbour was found to be the best sporting ground.

The

The following interesting intelligence is collected from letters written off Owhyhee, by the late Lieutenant Hergest, agent to the Dædalus transport, concerning the transactions at the *Marquesas**; together with Mr. New's account of the unfortunate death of that officer, and of Mr. Gooch. the astronomer. As the preceding part of Mr. Hergest's journals on board contained no interesting intelligence, the narrative commences on the arrival of the Dædalus at the Marquesas.

" Having made the Marquesas, Lieutenant Hergest proceeded for Resolution Bay in the island of Ohetahoo, where the Dædalus anchored on the 22d of March 1792. In a heavy squall about four the next morning, they parted from their anchor and drove out of the bay. Soon after the vessel had cleared the points, Mr. Hergest perceived the ship to be on fire: it had been so full of smoke during the night, that none of the crew could sleep; and those who had the watch on deck, imagined it had come from the shore. This opinion, indeed, was generally adopted without reflection, till Mr. Hergest was convinced, after going into the cabin, that the smoke originated from a more alarming cause. On lifting up the gun-room scuttle, an immense column of smoke instantly issued, strongly manifesting the peril of their situation, as the fire was close to the magazine. The powder was expeditiously removed into a boat along-side; though it was a task attended with much danger, as the gun-room itself was very hot, and full of smoke; and the powder had, very carelessly and promiscuously, been stowed among the ship's provisions. After hoisting up a large quantity of food to get out the powder, the smoke still appeared to ascend from below: this circumstance, with the extreme heat of the deck, fully demonstrated that the fire must be in the lazaretto below, where some pursers' beds were recollected to have been stowed, and from the seas shipped during the tempestuous weather had probably got wet, and taken fire. Confirmed in this opinion, Mr. Hergest stopped every avenue, and crevice about the after hatch-way, and scuttled the deck to enable him to extinguish the fire by pouring water over it. He was soon convinced that the fire had originated as it was at last conjectured, and perceived the good effect of their judicious labours. Other holes were bored over the beds for the purpose of pouring down large quantities of water; and they soon had reason to thank divine Providence for so critical a preservation. Some of the beds and coverings were absolutely consumed. As rum and oil were stowed with these beds, had the fire once broke out into a blaze, it would have been impossible to have extinguished it, or to have prevented its communication with these inflammable substances.

" The bedding which was scorched or rotten, was thrown overboard, and furnished employment for the natives to enrich themselves with the discarded remnants. In the afternoon Mr. Hergest in the cutter, with the second mate in the long boat went to procure water, and landed with the mate and three men. Many of the natives were assembled, who behaved very disorderly, as they had not a chief among them: they stole every thing they came near, so that hardly a bucket remained to fill the casks with water. Mr. Hergest, thinking the party on shore would require assistance to effect his purpose, was on the point of embarking, when one of his people claimed his attention. The natives amused themselves with teasing and pulling the hair of a young man, which at the same time diverted the rest of the Indians. These indignities were found so disagreeable to the poor fellow, that he instantly burst into tears. On being reproached by Mr. Hergest for his pusillanimity and childishness, he found himself suddenly turned round by the natives behind him, and his fowling-piece wrenched from his hand. Mr. Hergest, on the impulse of the moment, ordered the mate to fire, and bring down the thief; but fortunately his piece was not cocked, and he had time to recollect that there was no other musquet on shore; for had the thief been shot, as he at first intended, there was no judging of the extent of the consequences that might have resulted from it. Mr. Hergest and his party prudently returned to their boats; but, on re-embarking, it appeared that some of the Indians had dived under water, and cut the grapnel-rope belonging to the long-boat.

" Considering that to pass over such insults and injuries, would encourage the islanders to persevere in their depredations, Mr. Hergest endeavoured

* These islands were discovered by Mendana, who imposed the name in honour of Don Garcia de Mendoza, *marquis* of Canicute, viceroy of Peru.

deavoured to awe them into better behaviour by rowing close to the beach, and discharging a volley of musketoons and small arms over their heads. This measure was so far effectual, that it drove all of them, except one man, from the beach among the trees. This fellow had the temerity to remain, and throw stones with his sling at the boats. Mr. Hergest, however, took no further notice of him; but on his return to the Dædalus, fired four of their great guns over the village. This step threw them into such a terrible consternation, that the natives instantly flew, in every direction, towards the mountains.

" In the evening one of the natives swam off with the ensigns of peace, which was a green bough, inclosed in a white cloth, which he threw into the ship, and then returned to the shore. From this act of humiliation among the natives, Mr. Hergest supposed that he might get his future business conducted on shore, without interruption or molestation. On these considerations, he went the next morning, without meeting with any disappointment; but he still perceived that it was impossible to restrain entirely the exercise of their thievish practices, even on board the ship. One of them had taken the astronomer's theodolite, in its case; but being discovered swimming with it to his canoe, a musquet was discharged at the Indian by the chief mate; that induced him to abandon his prize, which was recovered, the case having been sufficiently buoyant to keep it from sinking.

" When Mr. Hergest returned to the shore, with a guard completely armed, to procure a supply of water, the natives, instead of interrupting, cheerfully assisted in filling and rolling down the casks, for which they were rewarded with trifles that were very acceptable. Their operations were now carried on very amicably, but the visitors were become too numerous; colours were therefore hoisted to signify that the ship was *tabooed*, which had the proper effect with regard to the men, but the women were not so easily restrained: they continued to swim from the shore in such multitudes, that musquets were obliged to be fired over their heads to deter them from advancing.

" Plenty of vegetables were obtained, but hogs and pigs were scarce and dear. Two chiefs, who had visited the ships, restored the grapnel that had been stolen, and promised to return Mr. Hergest's fowling-piece. Having a sufficient stock of water on board on the 29th of October, and having no business to detain him, Mr. Hergest was preparing to sail, when the two chiefs who brought back the grapnel revisited the ship, and repeated their promise of restoring the fowling-piece. On account of their former good behaviour, they had received several presents; and as Mr. Hergest now had them in his power, and as he knew they could cause the gun to be delivered for its owner, he informed one of them that the ship was instantly going to sea, and if it was not speedily sent on board, he should be taken from his island. Little attention seemed to be paid to this menace, till an armed centinel was placed to guard him in the cabin; when his apprehensions were much heightened. A message was sent to the chief who really had the piece in his possession, and in less than an hour a canoe was seen approaching the ship, and displaying the usual emblems of peace: the canoe contained a chief, and the contested gun; Mr. Hergest received the gun, and delivered up the prisoner unhurt. They parted amicably, and the two chiefs became reconciled on receiving some valuable presents*."

In the evening, about five o'clock, they weighed and steered to the northward, and the next morning came within sight of some islands, supposed by Mr. Hergest to be new discoveries. One of them was about six leagues in circuit, inhabited by a friendly tribe of Indians, some of whom visited the ship in their canoes: the whole island presented a fertile appearance, in the vallies of which were a great number of cocoa-

* Thus the Dædalus quitted the island, after continual misunderstandings with the inhabitants for their daring and repeated thefts. Mr. Hergest concludes his narrative of the transactions at the Marquisas by expressing much satisfaction at not having taken the lives of any of the natives for the preservation of their own property. This, he observes, was a fortunate circumstance, as the shot from the great guns went up the valley among many of their habitations; and their escaping unhurt was more than could possibly have been expected. A ball from a musquet, however, accidentally passed the calf of a thief's leg, who was detected in stealing a bucket: the intention was merely to intimidate him.

They may not perhaps be so fortunate on the arrival of future vessels, as their propensity to thieving seems to admit of no restraint or controul: not even a chief among them had sufficient inclination or authority to induce them to abandon such practices.

nut and plantain trees. From hence they stood over to the southernmost island, appearing at a distance like a very high rock, with three peaks. This is about the middle of the island. As they approached the shore they saw a country well cultivated, and numerously inhabited. Upwards of a hundred Indians were soon assembled round the ship in their canoes, disposing of their cocoa-nuts, &c. for beads, and other trifles in a very equitable manner. At the south-west end of this island is a good bay, with a sandy beach on its eastern part. On the first of April the south side of the island was passed: at its head was a break in the shores, imagined by some to be the mouth of a rivulet, but Mr. Hergest, supposing it to be too large for so small an island to afford, believed it to be only a deep cove. The island was named Sir Henry Martin's island; and immediately to the west of its south-east point, called Point Martin, is a deep well-sheltered bay.

About two leagues to the westward of Point Martin, a very fine harbour extends deep into the island, bounded by a fertile and delightful country. Mr. Hergest and Mr. Gooch examined the port, which was named Anna Maria; it was easy of access, and had no shoals or rocks but such as were sufficiently conspicuous to be avoided. An excellent run of water flows into the harbour, which possesses every advantage that can be wished. The country is highly cultivated, and fully inhabited by a civil race of people, who courteously supplied the adventurers with the refreshments that were required. They experienced the most hospitable reception from them on their landing, when about fifteen hundred of the natives, among whom were several chiefs, assembled on the shores of the harbour *.

Mr. Hergest observes, that while he was at these islands, and at the Marquesas, they had frequent heavy squalls, and much rain. He compares the inhabitants of this group, to those of the Marquesas, in size and colour; but in manners, behaviour, dress, and ornaments, they more resemble the natives of Otaheite, and the Society Islands; he admits, however, that they are less punctured. This is substantially all the information that could be collected from Mr. Hergest's papers with respect to his voyage thus far: the imperfect arrangement of which exhibits an additional cause for lamenting the melancholy fate of that valuable officer.

The adventures of persons, employed on public services, being naturally objects of minute enquiry, this section will be concluded with the account delivered by Mr. New, master of the Dædalus transport, of the untimely fate of Lieutenant Hergest, her commander, Mr. Gooch, the astronomer, and the unfortunate seaman who was murdered with them.

"In the morning of May 7, the Dædalus arrived in the bay, where the Resolution and Discovery had anchored in 1779, but Mr. Hergest declined anchoring there, considering the inhabitants of that neighbourhood to be the most savage of any in the islands. He therefore lay to, and purchased from the natives some hogs, vegetables, and water. In the evening he stood off shore, and requested the inhabitants to procure him a further supply of water and refreshments the following morning; but it falling calm, and the current setting the ship to the westward, they could not regain the shore till noon on the 11th, when Mr. Hergest unfortunately receded from his former determination, and ordered the ship to be anchored. The cutter was hoisted out and veered astern, that nothing might interrupt them in their necessary traffic for water; but before three casks were filled, he ordered the cutter along-side, the full casks to be taken out, and replaced by empty ones; and then, in company with Mr. Gooch, he went on shore, and another boat was hoisted out for water; those on board continuing to make purchases till it was almost dark. At this moment the cutter returned with only five persons, instead of eight, who went to shore in her.

* After leaving this island, two others were perceived to the northward of them: the largest of the two does not appear to have any coves or landing places; and though its surface was green, it had only a few shrubs and bushes thinly scattered over the face of the rocks; nor was it otherwise inhabited than by the tropical oceanic birds, which are extremely numerous. The north-west side had a more favourable aspect, a few trees making their appearance on its shores, and in the vallies: it also affords some coves, where good landing is to be found, particularly in one near the middle, which was called Battery Cove. Good anchorage, and regular soundings, was also found in a bay about a mile to the north of this cove; an excellent run of fresh water discharged itself into the bay near the grove, consisting of cocoa-nut trees: the landing is difficult, on account of the surf, but water may be obtained.

These communicated the distressing intelligence, that Mr. Hergest, Mr. Gooch, and two of the boat's crew, having landed unarmed with two water casks to fill, their defenceless situation induced the natives to attack them, who killed one of the people, and carried off the commander and the astronomer. The other, being stout and active, made his escape through a crowd of these savages, fled to the boat, and with two others landed again with two musquets, intending to rescue their officers, and recover the body of their mess-mate*.

" The officers were assembled by Mr. New, to consult the measures that were necessary to be pursued: in consequence of which a resolution was formed, to stand off and on with the ship during the night, and in the morning dispatch the cutter on shore, well manned and armed, to endeavour to recover their unfortunate commander and shipmates. An old chief, a native of Attowai, who had been on board the Dædalus from the time she entered the bay, and had been promised by Mr. Hergest a passage to his native island, attended in the boat to exercise his good officers. He landed, and proceeded towards the natives, demanding the absent gentlemen, when he was deliberately informed that they were both killed the preceding night. Returning with this message, he was sent back to demand their bodies. In reply to this, they said, the bodies had been cut in pieces, and divided among seven chiefs.

After this ineffectual effort to procure the bodies of those who had been murdered, great numbers of the savages repaired to the sea-side, and threw stones at the party in the boat, who fired several times, and at length compelled them to retire. Finding their errand was rendered wholly unnecessary, they returned on board, in which the old chief re-embarked, and the vessel bore away to land him at Atowai, as had originally been promised; but, when they were about five or six leagues to leeward of Woahoo, the old gentleman suddenly sprang overboard, and swam from the ship, without the least intention of returning on board; and having no particular business at Atowai, they proceeded to Nootka.

On the 13th of June they made the American coast, and bearing to windward arrived at Nootka on the 4th of July. Obedient to a letter of instructions, left by the late commander of the Dædalus in his bureau, addressed to Mr. Thomas New in case of his death, Mr. New opened the dispatches addressed to him from the Lords of the Admiralty; and conformably to the directions they contained, he delivered to Senr. Quadra, the commanding officer at that port, the letter therein inclosed, and addressed from the Spanish minister."

Thus ended the transactions of their voyage to the conclusion of 1792. In the following section, the narrative is resumed of the proceedings at Monterrey.

SECTION XI.

Lieutenant Broughton's Departure to England—Progress towards the Sandwich Islands—Vain Attempt in Search of the Island of Los Majos—Arrive at Owhyhee—Visited by the Chiefs—A general Taboo—Kahowmotoo's Wives—Anchor in Karakakooa Bay.

THE beginning of 1793 was not marked with any thing important: the benevolent disposition of Senr. Quadra encouraged Captain Vancouver again to be intrusive, by requesting some black cattle and sheep, that a breed of those valuable animals might be established in the Sandwich Islands. A dozen of them were immediately procured, consisting of four cows, four ewes, two bulls, and two rams. Though the captain was anxious to get away from Monterrey, that the further objects of his pursuit might re-commence, and Senr. Quadra be no longer detained by him, he could not get his charts, letters, and other documents, ready to

* They discovered that Mr. Hergest and Mr. Gooch were yet alive among a multitude of the inhabitants, who were stripping and dragging them up a hill behind the village. In attempting to get near the croud, they were so vigorously assailed by stones from the merciless wretches, that they were under the necessity of retiring; and, as night approached, they thought it prudent to return on board, that more effectual means might be adopted on this calamitous occasion.

be transmitted to England till Sunday the 6th of January. Proposing to sail with the land wind the following evening, he was honoured on board with the company of Senr. Quadra, Caamano, and many of his Spanish friends*.

No intelligence had yet been gained of the absentees, though the persons sent in pursuit of them were returned. To prove that these people had absconded, without the knowledge or connivance of the Spanish officers, Senr. Quadra offered to replace the armourer by substituting the only smith in his establishment. With much reluctance he was induced to accept the advantage of such an offer, which was only excusable from the urgency of the case. He was therefore received on board the Chatham, and Senior Quadra's vessels, as well as those belonging to our British navigators, were intended to sail together, so long as their southern course answered the purpose of their respective routes. Waiting only for a favourable land breeze to take their departure, Captain Vancouver consigned to the charge of Mr. Broughton the dispatches he had prepared, with orders to lose no time in repairing to England: he also directed his first lieutenant, Mr. Puget, to take upon him the command of the Chatham, during the absence of Mr. Broughton.

The night was perfectly calm; but about nine on the 14th, a light breeze sprung up from the eastward, with which the Discovery weighed; but, as neither the Chatham, nor the Spanish vessels were able to move, she waited for them off Point Pinos. The next morning she was farther from the shore than the captain expected: the wind blew a fresh breeze from the land, and they stood to the northward in quest of their friends. The Chatham joined them about nine o'clock, when an opportunity presented itself of making such observations as were thought requisite to prove the rate of the chronometers.

Captain Vancouver remained off Point Pinos till the evening, when, being joined by his Spanish friends, they directed their course to the southward with a light northerly breeze. The Active brig outsailed the little squadron, and the Aranfasu was so bad a sailor, that she was nearly out of sight astern. The tracks they each had to pursue shortly began to diverge, so that by continuing together they would have drawn each other from the proper line of direction: a separation was therefore thought necessary, and Senr. Quadra, Mr. Broughton, and such of their Spanish friends as could be spared from the brig, honoured Captain Vancouver with their company, to partake of a parting dinner. Mutual good wishes were afterwards exchanged, and an affectionate farewel. On reaching the Active, their friends took their leave, they were saluted with three cheers, which they cordially returned, and each pursued their respective voyages†.

Intending to determine the existence or non-existence of a cluster of islands, described in the Spanish charts as lying between the 19th and 21st degrees of north latitude, the captain endeavoured to obtain perfect satisfaction, but after much exertion, he concluded they could have no existence in the neighbourhood of the spot assigned to them: he therefore relinquished any further search, made the best of his way to Owhyhee; and at nine in the morning on the 12th of February he saw the east end of it, distant about seven leagues.

The navigators now directed their course towards the north-eastern part of this island, forming the eastern point of a very deep bay. They sailed within two or three miles of its shores, which were firm and compact, terminating chiefly in rocky cliffs; from which many streams of water fell, and discharged themselves into the ocean. The country was uncultivated, and had a dreary aspect, having only a few small destitute habitations, thinly scattered at vast distances from each other. Proceeding to the westward, culti-

* In the afternoon the wind blew a hard gale, attended with squalls, and a torrent of rain. An additional circumstance contributed to detain him some time longer: the armourer of the Chatham, a most excellent workman, and one of the Chatham's best marines, had absented themselves in the course of the day: the loss of a man of the Armourer's talents, and hitherto unimpeachable conduct, was a matter of no small consequence, especially as this little community had not a competent person to supply his place. He applied to Senr. Quadra, and to Senr. Arguello, the commandant of the Presidio. After consultation, a reward of twenty-five dollars was offered for the recovery of each of the deserters, and soldiers were dispatched in every direction. The loss sustained, and the exertions to repair it, would have induced the captain to wait a few days for the event of the researches; but adverse winds, and a succession of calms, prevented their sailing till Sunday the 13th, when the regular sea-breeze from the north-west prevailed.

† On the 21st Joseph Murgatroyd, one of the carpenter's crew was missing: he was last observed opening the gun-room ports, and was supposed to have sought his own destruction, by contriving to let himself down into the sea, as it was hardly possible that he could have met his fate there by accident.

vation

vation and population appeared on the increase. About nine a canoe was seen, coming from a small bay, towards the ship: they immediately brought to, expecting others would follow her example; but they did not*.

About noon they arrived off a part of the northern side of Owhyhee, where the coast is formed of high, steep, rugged, and romantic cliffs, discharging from their naked summits rapid cataracts into the ocean. The rushing of these torrents down the barren surface of the rocky cliffs, contrasted with the enchanting country to the east and west, present a very beautiful and picturesque appearance. Nearly in the centre of these cliffs is a small deepish bay; but it seemed too much exposed to the sea, and the generally prevailing winds, to be an eligible situation for shipping. The western part of the land, from this situation, descends gradually from the base of the mountains, and forms a capacious plain towards the water-side, which was highly cultivated, and abounded with the habitations of the natives. They passed at the west point at the distance of about a league, and hauled into Toeaigh bay, in 41 fathoms water. The night proved boisterous, attended with heavy gusts of wind directly off the land.

In the afternoon of the 14th it moderated, and the weather became serene and pleasant: the adjacent shores seemed fertile and populous, but none of the natives ventured to visit our Europeans. Supposing the taboo to be at an end, they imagined the shyness of the inhabitants arose from some more serious cause. About ten o'clock, however, a canoe ventured to come along-side; when the people in her informed them that they belonged to *Kahowmotoo,* who then resided at a village on an estate of his, in the bottom of the bay named Toeaigh; off which good anchorage might be had, and water easily procured. They said the reason of their not having been visited sooner was, that the whole island was under a strict taboo, which prohibited the inhabitants from using their canoes or quitting the shore; but that the rank of their master *Kahowmotoo,* enabled him to dispense with the restrictions upon the present occasion; hoping the vessel in sight was that in which his favourite servant *Terchooa* had embarked, he had therefore sent them to make the necessary enquiries, and if his expectations were successful, a present of a hog and some vegetables was in the canoe for *Terchooa;* whose gratitude for so distinguished a mark of respect was instantly testified, by a flow of involuntary tears on his receiving the message. This was accompanied by a very pressing request that the captain would anchor off *Kahowmotoo's* village, where he should be supplied with every thing he required as soon as the taboo was at an end, which had existed four days, and was now on the point of expiring†.

Soon after the ship had anchored, *Kahowmotoo* paid Captain Vancouver a visit, bringing with him half a dozen fine hogs, and a plentiful supply of vegetables. He took the liberty of acquainting *Kohowmotoo* that arms and ammunition were still tabooed; at which he expressed great regret, but did not suffer it to influence his hospitality, for he assured the captain that if he would remain a few days at Toeaigh, he should be furnished with every refreshment that he could possibly procure. After dinner he went with him on shore, to take a view of the watering place: it is situated in a small sandy bay, where, over a small space of rugged rocks, a fine stream empties itself. *Kahowmotoo* repeatedly urged his request of the captain's remaining a few days at Toeaigh; declaring he would afterwards accompany him to another of his mansions lying between this bay and Karakooa. To these solicitations the captain in part consented, by promising to stay the next day; not only in expectation of procuring provisions for his people, but also of procuring provender for the cattle and sheep; the poor animals being almost starved by feeding on what they procured at Monterrey.

* The visitors informed them that a general *taboo* had prevented the inhabitants coming off to them: they ventured at the extreme hazard of suffering death, should the priests or chiefs become informed of their transgressions: the taboo had been two days in force, but its operation was expected to cease in a day or two more. Intelligence was also received from these people that *Tamaahmaah* was then at Karakakooa, and that the disposal of hogs and other refreshments of the islands to European or American visitors, was prohibited under the penalties of death, except for *arms* and *ammunition.* Regardless of the taboo, however, the visitors disposed of their cargo, consisting of a hog, some fowls, and vegetables for some iron, with which they returned to the shore.

† He readily accepted this invitation, and a wind favouring his design, he steered for the village of Toeaigh. Mr. Whidbey, who was in the cutter sounding for an anchorage, made the signal for an eligible situation, where, about two, they anchored in twenty-five fathoms water.

To

To this cause the captain attributed the severe losses he had suffered in his passage, amounting to three rams, two ewes, a bull, and a cow*.

Paying their respects to Kahowmotoo's wives, and surveying this salt pond, occupied much of the time and attention of our navigators. Having gratified the former by a distribution of such articles as they knew were highly esteemed by them, they returned towards the boats, accompanied by the chief and his consorts, and attended by the natives, who conducted themselves with great propriety. They presented them with cocoa-nuts as they passed along, and seemed alert in affording them any little service or civility, without being troublesome. On reaching the boats, Captain Vancouver requested *Kahowmotoo* to accompany him on board to dinner; but, recollecting the taboo, he did not presume to solicit that favour from the ladies. They were, however, of a very different opinion; particularly Namahanna, Kahowmotoo's favourite, who contended that the taboo only prohibited their embarking in canoes belonging to Owhyhee. This ingenious method of explaining the arbitrary statute seeming to meet with the concurrence of *Kahowmotoo*, they soon embarked, leaving Mr. Menzies, one of their party, on shore, in search of vegetable productions; he returned in the evening, after receiving much civility from the natives.

Kahowmotoo went on shore with the lady who had so ingeniously expounded the tabooing law, in one of the European's boats. On its return a message arrived from Tianna, requesting to know who our navigators were?—Adding, that, if they were friends, he would lose no time in visiting them. But as it would be late before he could arrive, he would carry a large fire in the bow of his canoe, as a signal by which he might be known in the dark. He arrived about four in the morning of the 16th, just as they were getting under sail. In his canoe were half a dozen fine hogs, which he desired might be taken on board, and said he had others to follow the ship to the southward. *Kahowmotoo*, with his favourite wife, came on board, in consequence of a preconcerted signal, to conduct them to *Tyeatatooa*. The wind proved variable, as well in direction as in force. Sometimes the weather was perfectly calm, at others the navigators had gusts from the land: when night was approaching, a brig and a sloop were seen in the offing. From the natives they were informed that these were the Chatham and the Jackall trader, under the orders of Mr. Brown of the Butterworth. They instantly made towards them, and expected speedily to join their consort. But to their great astonishment, on Sunday morning the 17th, they found themselves about ten leagues from land, and had lost sight of both the vessels. The morning of the 18th brought the two vessels again in sight; and before noon the Chatham was so near them that he received a visit from Mr. Puget, by whom he was informed, that he had traced the shores on the south-east side of Owhyhee, without finding any place that presented a probability of anchorage. Mr. Puget also informed Captain Vancouver, that he would find Karakakooa a more formidable place than he expected; for the people of the Jackall, who had visited it, had declared it was far from being a desirable stopping place for small vessels, since *Tamaahmaah* had procured a number of cannon, and a quantity of ammunition. That these cannon were planted and protected by stone walls, along the beach in the bay before the houses, situated where the

* In the morning of the 15th Kahowmotoo visited the captain on board, for the purpose of conducting him to his habitation on shore. To render the visit more agreeable, sixteen fine hogs attended him, with a large assortment of vegetables, and a quantity of herbage for the cattle. Arms and ammunition were no longer solicited; he thought himself well repaid for these favours by about two yards of red cloth, a small piece of printed linen, with a few beads, and other trivial articles intended as presents to his favourite ladies. Of these he had four, under the denomination of wives, who, he said, were anxiously waiting on shore to see the captain; as the taboo, though expired with regard to certain particulars, was still in force with regard to women's embarking in canoes. Such of the female visitors as favoured the Europeans with their company on board, were therefore obliged to have recourse to swimming for that purpose.

Toeaigh is situated in a grove of cocoa-nut trees, behind a sandy beach: the village consisted only of straggling houses, of two classes; those intended for the residence of the inhabitants, were small, mean, miserable huts; but the others, appropriated to the building and repairing their canoes, were excellent in their kind: on these occasions, many were employed, who seemed to finish their work with neatness and ingenuity. About the middle of the village a reservoir of salt-water is enclosed by walls of mud and stones. These salt-works produce large quantities of salt, equal in colour and quality to any made in Europe, but the crystals are much larger.

habitations of the priests were destroyed after the death of Captain Cook*.

As they approached Owhyhee on the 20th, they met a great number of canoes, laden with the productions of the country, which were honourably and civilly exchanged for various articles of traffic. Beads, and some other trinkets, were only accepted as presents, and were not requited with any return. Among their visitors was *Tamaahmaah's* eldest son, the presumptiue heir to the sovereignty of Owhyhee: he was a shrewd lively boy, of about nine years of age. For the presents the captain had made him, he gave him three or four hogs on his quitting the ship, and promised an additional supply in the morning†.

After some ceremonious conversation between Tamaahmaah and the captain, he said the queen and several of his relations were in the canoe alongside, and requested they might be admitted on board. This was no sooner intimated than granted, and Captain Vancouver was introduced to her majesty, who they had previously understood was the daughter of *Kahowmotoo*, by his wife Namahanna now on board. The meeting of the daughter and her parents, sufficiently indicated their consanguinity. She was about sixteen, and one of the finest women they had before beheld in any of the islands. The object of this visit was to invite our navigators to Karakooa; but the reply to their solications was that their boat was examining at Tyahtatooa, and on her return a satisfactory answer should be given‡.

After several occurrences of no very considerable importance, our navigators proceeded to Karakakooa, and found themselves abreast of the bay on the 22d, when they were visited by a vast concourse of people, who brought in their canoes abundance of refreshments to barter for different

* Calms, and light baffling winds detained them in an inactive situation, the weather at the same time being oppressively hot and sultry: other disagreeable circumstances arose; the only bull that remained, and a cow that had brought forth a dead calf, were unable to stand, and without speedy relief must both infallibly perish. In the afternoon of the 19th they were visited by several canoes, though about eight or nine leagues from the land. In one of these was a chief named *Crymamahoo*, half brother to *Tamaahmaah*. On him such presents were bestowed as were highly suitable to his rank, and seemed to give him infinite satisfaction: encouraged by this circumstance, the captain expected, through that chief's good offices, to be enabled to get these poor animals conveyed to the shore. Strong intimations were given that such an act would be highly estimated by him; but a thousand evasions and excuses were immediately started: yet, as Captain Vancouver knew that avarice is the predominant passion with most of these islanders, he offered *Crymamahoo* an ample recompence for so desirable a service; the bull and cow were instantly placed in his canoe, in which there were some vegetables. Of these the bull ate plentifully, strongly indicating that he would soon recover by the help of nourishing food, which the shore abundantly supplied.

† Having now almost reached Tyahtatooa, Mr. Whidbey was sent in the cutter to examine the anchorage. About noon on the 21st Captain Vancouver was honoured with the presence of *Tamaahmaah*, the king of Owhyhee. From his own memory, and the description given of him by Captain King, he expected to have recognized his former acquaintance by a very savage countenance; but he was agreeably surprized in finding that his riper years had softened that stern ferocity which his younger days had exhibited, and his general deportment displayed an open, cheerful, sensible mind, combined with generosity and goodness of disposition. He was conducted to the ship in a very large canoe, accompanied by John Young, an English seaman, who was not only a favourite, but also had considerable influence with this great chief. *Terrehoa*, who had been dispatched to deliver the bull and the cow to the king, was also of the party, also informed Captain Vancouver that the cow had died in her passage to the island, but that the bull had arrived safe, and ate heartily.

‡ Captain Vancouver was highly pleased with the propriety and decorum of the royal party. Though it consisted of many, not a single article was requested; nor did a word escape that could be construed to express an expectation of receiving presents. They were particularly cautious to avoid giving offence: even the king himself was so scrupulous, as to enquire when and where he could be seated without incommoding or offending any person. The inhabitants, assembled round the ships, were numerous; but on being refused admittance on board, they remained perfectly quiet in their canoes, and carried on a friendly and honest intercourse.

Desirous of preserving that harmony which now seemed to exist, the captain distributed among his visitors such presents as were suitable to their respective ranks, and such as he knew would be acceptable to the whole party. Permission was now requested for the friends who were alongside in their canoes, to be permitted to come on board. Leave being granted, a number of new visitors of both sexes, instantly found their way aft, and almost filled the cabin; all of whom were pleased with what they had received. The party having been rendered happy by the distribution, the king, in addition to what he had before received, was presented with a scarlet cloak, reaching from his neck to the ground, adorned with tinsel lace, and further decorated with blue ribbons. The looking-glasses being placed opposite to each other, displayed, at one view, the whole of his royal person; when he was so infinitely delighted with his transformation, that the cabin could hardly contain him. He afterwards strutted upon the deck, and exposed himself in the most conspicuous places, to attract the applause and admiration of his subjects.

articles

articles; but, being sufficiently stocked with what they had to offer, Captain Vancouver directed that no more of them should be purchased till the ship was properly secured; which was accordingly effected by about noon.

This village, as before stated, was found to be the residence of Tamaahmaah; from whence eleven large canoes put off from the shore with great order, forming two equal sides of an obtuse triangle. The largest canoe being in the angular point, was rowed by eighteen paddles on each side, in which his Owhyhean majesty, clad in a printed linen gown, was seated: an elegant feathered cloak, reaching from his shoulders, and trailing upon the ground, with a handsome helmet upon his head, gave him an air of majestic dignity. Thus pompously equipped, he paraded round the vessels, with a slow and solemn motion, till, with infinite affectation of majesty, he ascended the side of the ship. Taking hold of Captain Vancouver's hand, he asked, if he and his suite were sincerely his friends? This question was answered in the affirmative. He then said, he understood they belonged to King George, and asked if he was also his friend? Being satisfied in this particular, he declared that he was their firm good friend; in testimony of which, according to the custom of the country, they saluted by touching noses. He then presented the captain with four beautiful feathered helmets, and ordered ten large canoes to approach the starboard side, each containing nine very large hogs; whilst a fleet of smaller canoes contained a profusion of vegetables. This supply was more than they could conveniently receive; the decks of the Discovery and the Chatham being both encumbered with good things, but he would not suffer a single hog to be returned to the shore.

The remaining live stock the captain had on board, consisting of five cows, two ewes, and a ram, were sent on shore in some of his canoes. They were all in a healthy state, but in a low condition *Tamaahmaah* himself was particularly careful in placing these animals in the canoes. In addition to his magnificent present of provisions, other canoes were now laden with cloth, mats, and other articles of their manufacture, and were delivering into the ship; but, as they could not then be received, the king permitted them to be returned to the shore, and ordered them to be taken care of, as they belonged to the captain, and not to himself. The remainder of this section is almost wholly taken up with an account of two English seamen residing on the island, and the characters of some of the leading chiefs; a circumstantial account of whom would probably be thought a deviation from the proposed plan of the work.

SECTION XII.

Occurrences at Karakakooa Bay—Visit from the Widow of Terrecoboo—A Sham Fight—A general Peace suggested—Departure from Owhyhee.

AS Karakakooa does not naturally furnish a sufficient quantity of fresh water, on visiting the well from which the Resolution and Discovery had been supplied, our navigators found but a small quantity, and that extremely brackish: it was therefore apprehended that the use of it would be pernicious to the health of the people. The vast quantity of that beverage required for the cattle in their passage hither, made the supply they now required very considerable; he therefore applied to Tamaahmaah to consult him on this important business: the result of which was that a certain number of his canoes should each take one, two, or three puncheons, according to their respective size, to different places on this side of the island, to be filled with that liquid from the little wells in their plantations. The plan was instantly agreed on, and speedily carried into execution. A dozen puncheons, by way of experiment, were dispatched to different destinations, some of which were expected to return in less than two or three days; but it so happened that on the following morning, the 26th, six of them were brought back, full of most excellent water; for which the procurers were amply repaid by a piece of iron for each cask, of the length of six inches, and the breadth of two. The people of the neighbourhood were also

also directed to bring down water for sale, and they continued that traffic with their usual integrity and honour*.

On Thursday the 28th, *Kerneecuberrey*, the unfortunate widow of the late *Terreeboo*, favoured Captain Vancouver with a visit. After lamenting the death of her husband, and witnessing nearly the extirpation of his whole race; and after surviving a long state of captivity, she had met in *Tamaahmaah*, a generous conqueror, and a kind friend and protector. During the conflict at the revolution, he was obliged to have recourse to some violence to shelter her from the vengeance of his nearest relations, and the fury of the populace, who clamorously demanded her immediate execution, and the lives of all her husband's adherents. Having seen her in 1779, when the captain visited these islands, he perfectly recollected the features of her countenance; but the high degree of vivacity it then possessed, compared with her present appearance, too strongly manifested that she had since experienced much sorrow and dejection†.

On Sunday the 3d of March, his material business being almost accomplished, the captain visited the three villages in the bay; and first of all the fatal spot where Captain Cook, so unfortunately, for the world, was deprived of his valuable life. Here, as well as in the other villages, the very numerous inhabitants behaved with the greatest civility and decorum. It may be proper to observe, however, that they repaired on shore with both boats completely armed, and, as it was usual on a Sunday, they were clothed in their best attire, and attended by a guard of marines. Perhaps this appearance had some influence on their behaviour; the vanity of *Tamaahmaah* was, however, much gratified by this parade, and he regretted that he had not an English dress to sport upon the occasion. But he substituted a garment which the captain had given him, which was much applauded by the surrounding multitude. *Tianna*, and other chiefs, were present; but the ambitious *Tianna* had envy strongly depicted in his countenance, on his not receiving the same degree of respect that was shewn to his sovereign. In walking through the village he asked the captain in a contemptuous tone of voice, why he gave that man so many things, and himself so few? The answer given was intended as a kind of explanation, but it was not thought satisfactory to the interrogator. Nothing further occurred during the perambulation on shore, that merited attention. When it was ended, they returned on board to dinner.

Having promised to give the king an entertainment with fire-works, that exhibition was fixed for Monday evening; and, in order to contribute to the pleasures of the day, the sovereign proposed to have a sham-battle in the afternoon, between the best of warriors that could be convened on so short a notice. On the 4th, as soon as dinner was over, they were summoned to the review; and *Tomaahmaah*, deriving consequence from all his ceremonies and formalities, requested the captain to be attended on shore by a guard.

The warriors assembled towards the north corner of the beach, and consisted of about one hundred and fifty men, armed with spears. They were divided into three parties. Their sham spears were blunt pointed sticks; the combatants were without any leader, making speeches as they approached, replete with vaunts and menaces. His Owhyhean majesty entered the lists for a short time, and conducted himself with great dexterity‡.

The

* The king passed the day in visiting the two vessels, where all his enquiries were pertinent, and directed to useful objects. Not visiting the Discovery on the 27th, the captain received a message from him, informing him that an axe, and some other articles belonging to the Chatham, had been stolen by some women who had been suffered to sleep on board: the articles were, however, restored the following day.

† In faltering accents she informed the captain, that she had accompanied *Tamaahmaah*, to pay him a visit and see the ship; that his name was familiar to her, but his person was so altered, that she could not for a long time be reconciled to the change in him, which fourteen years had produced. Curiosity induced her to visit several parts of the ship; and whilst she was so engaged, cheerfulness seemed to obtrude for a moment, and to suspend the weighty afflictions of her declining years. Captain Vancouver presented her with an assemblage of valuables, suitable to her former distinguished rank; and obtained, in her presence, a solemn promise from *Tamaahmaah*, that the articles he had given her should not be taken from her by him or any other person.

‡ But as the relation of this disorderly sham-fight would yield no information or amusement to the reader, the display of fire-works may probably have attractions. *Tamaahmaah*, and some of the chiefs, recollected to have seen some indifferent exhibitions of this kind, that were given by Captain Cook, on his being visited by *Terreeboo*, but those of Captain Vancouver, consisting of a greater variety, and all in the highest preservation, were viewed by the chiefs,

The following morning *Cavahera*, the chief of Kowrooa, who was present the preceding evening, informed him, that on his return home, the inhabitants considered what they beheld as a diversion only, but from its continuance, and the clamour attending it, they were exceedingly alarmed, and suspected that a quarrel had arisen between our navigators and *Tamaahmaah*, and that they were extirpating him, and all his people and houses, on that side of the country. The same opinion had prevailed with many of the women on board the vessels, who could hardly be prevailed on to believe otherwise*.

The weather was cloudy in the afternoon, accompanied with rain; the wind was also unsteady, blowing in squalls from the northern quarter. These squalls continuing brought a very heavy swell into the bay in the morning of the 7th, and obliged them, much to the satisfaction of *Tamaahmaah*, and others, to remain stationary. Soon after day-light they all flocked round the Europeans. The king was not, according to his general practice, among the earliest who made their appearance: his delay had been occasioned by his waiting to come off in state, in one of his largest canoes, that had been rigged for him with a full suit of canvas sails, with a union jack and a pendant. On his arrival he seemed highly delighted with his man of war, but admitted that she would make a better appearance with a few swivels properly mounted. The captain was of the same opinion, but the words "Taboo king George," prevented any further conversation on that subject†.

Kahowmotoo, performed his promise of visiting our navigators on the 9th, and presented them with twenty fine hogs, with a large assortment of vegetables: a handsome feathered cloak accompanied these provisions.

The servants of the king brought eighty large hogs for the Discovery, and half that number for the Chatham, with considerable supplies of vegetables for both. During the forenoon Captain Vancouver received a visit from *Tianna*, who

chiefs with astonishment, admiration, and fear; and from the repeated bursts of acclamation from the inhabitants assembled on this occasion, it was difficult to determine which of these passions most generally operated.

* The captain had long endeavoured to convince Tamaahmaah, and the chiefs, that a peaceable mode of life was infinitely to be preferred, and more conducive to real happiness, than the continued state of warfare that had so long disgraced their islands, from an inordinate ambition to possess each other's territories, which experience had shewn them they could not remain long the masters of.

A general periodical *taboo* was to take place on the evening of Tuesday the 5th, and most of the chiefs, having disposed of the articles they had brought with them, they took their leave, knowing the captain was speedily to make his departure. The *taboo* required the removal of the tents, observatory, &c. which were of course received on board; and the captain had informed *Tamaahmaah* that he intended to sail on Wednesday night, or the following morning. Supposing this might be his last visit, *Tamaahmaah* presented him with a pompous cloak, composed of red and yellow feathers; with a collection of other native curiosities, and at the same time delivered into his custody the superb cloak he had worn on his formal visit at their arrival. After expatiating on the beauty of this cloak, he pointed out the two holes made in different parts of it by the enemy's spears, in his last battle for the sovereignty of this island: he then carefully folded it up, and desired, on his arrival in England, that he would present it in his name to king George; and, as no person had worn it but himself, he strictly enjoined him not to suffer any person to throw it over their shoulders, declaring it was the most valuable thing in the island of Owhyhee, and he therefore did himself the honour to send it to so great a monarch, and so good a friend as he considered the king of England. When the captain received the cloak, he gave his majesty the most positive assurances of acting agreeably with his directions.

Thinking he had not sufficiently rewarded *Tamaahmaah*, for the very essential services he had rendered the Europeans, Captain Vancouver resolved to give him an additional testimony of his friendship, and their general approbation: a number of useful and ornamental articles was selected; among the latter were two handsome cloaks, and a quantity of variegated gartering tape; the latter being held in great estimation, as being much used in decorating a part of their dress called the *maro*. The useful articles were a variety of culinary utensils, and implements of husbandry; with an assortment of the most general smiths' and carpenters' tools. With this acquisition he was immoderately delighted. He then took a most affectionate leave, not only of the captain and all the officers, but of every person he saw upon the deck.

† On the evening of their departure, *Tamaahmaah* was required to resign himself to the strict obedience of a *taboo* which was at that time to commence. On this occasion all his people who had any commercial intercourse with the Europeans, were to present before him all the treasure they had acquired, and render to him the customary tribute. Such presents as the king himself had received, were also to be exposed to public view, when certain priests would perform exhortations, prayers, and other functions of their office. On the 8th the weather being pleasant, with a gentle breeze from the land, they sailed from Karakakooa, and stood along shore to the northward. *Tamaahmaah*, with his queen, and many of his attendants overtook them. The royal party continued on board till about two in the afternoon; when, taking a respectful leave of them all, and lamenting the shortness of their visit, they returned to Karakakooa.

brought with him about half a dozen lean hogs, for which he had neither room nor occasion. He was, however, rewarded with a farewel present, with which he ought to have been perfectly satisfied; as he could assume no merit, either for the supplies, or services bestowed upon them; yet his envious pride displayed itself in keen expressions of dissatisfaction that he had not been complimented with articles, equally valuable with those that had been offered to *Tamaahmaah*. His conversation was really in so domineering a stile, and so different from the language adopted by the other chiefs of Owhyhee, that the captain was induced to request he would return the scarlet cloth, axes, and other useful articles he had given him, observing that these were so inadequate to his claims, they could not possibly be worth his acceptance. With this proposal, however, *Tianna* was not willing to comply, pretending, on recollection, to be perfectly satisfied.

Having no further business at *Owhyhee*, our navigators made the best of their way out of the bay; but calms and light baffling winds rendered their situation stationary, which gave the natives an opportunity of displaying their dexterity in catching a small kind of bonetto. They were not only entertained with the sport, but also furnished with an explanation of the general *taboo* at the time they arrived on the coast. It was in consequence of the commencement of the season for the taking of these fish, which are excellent when fresh, and are to be taken in such abundance that they constitute a principal part of the food of the inhabitants, when preserved and salted. In the evening *Kahowmotoo*, and all the natives took their leave, after the strongest assurances of perpetual friendship, and expressing the highest satisfaction and happiness at their visit.

The astronomical observations made at Karakakooa, conclude this narrative of their transactions during their continuance at Owhyhee.

SECTION XIII.

Arrival off Mowee—Particulars of the Murder of Lieutenant Hergest, &c. Conversation respecting Peace with Owhyhee—Peace acceded to by the Chiefs—Departure from Mowee—Whytcete Bay, An Indian's Account of the Murder—Trial and Execution of the Murderers—Proceed to Attowai —Provision made for two Female Natives, found at Nootka—Quit the Sandwich Islands.

ARRIVING off the eastern shores of Mowee, on the 10th of March, our navigators availed themselves of a favourable breeze, and bore away along the coast about two miles from the shore They took a direction from hence to the south point of the island. From the number of villages and separate houses, they supposed the island to be tolerably well inhabited; but the scene was changed as they advanced a few miles to the westward. The appearance of the country was different: the shores shewed no indications of being inhabited, and were almost destitute of vegetable productions. Perpendicular veins separated the different strata, and descended down the mountains. They passed the south point at the distance of about half a mile: it is formed by craggy rocks, the sea breaking at a little distance to the north-west of it. Approaching these breakers, they gained soundings, and suddenly decreased the depth from twenty-five to ten fathoms; but on hauling off shore, they could reach no bottom with eighty fathoms.

While they were thus situated, they were visited by some of the poor natives from a sandy cove, where they had some wretched habitations. Their poverty was further apparent, by their having only a few small packages of salt to dispose of, and by the miserable plight of their canoes. In the afternoon they were visited by a chief, in the only decent canoe they had ever seen at Mowee. He had been sent by *Titeeree* to learn who they were, and to know if their intentions were friendly towards the island. His first question being answered, he seemed suspicious of the motives of their visit, in consequence of the late murders at Woahoo. The reports that had been propagated respecting that melancholy business, induced Captain Vancouver to endeavour to obtain the real circumstances

stances of that affair, that the offenders might be brought to justice*.

Captain Vancouver again expressed his wishes to *Titeeree* and his friends, that they would advance their happiness and welfare, by embracing the blessings of peace; when *Taio* requested, that on the captain's return to these islands, he would take him to Owhyhee, where, under his protection, he would treat with *Tamaahmaah*, that a permament peace might be concluded, and an amicable intercourse established between *Owhyhee*, and all the islands; and he requested that these his intentions might be made known to *Tamaahmaah*. This was accordingly done in the captain's letter to Owhyhee on this subject, which was to be entrusted to a sensible chief, who, invested with a sufficient authority, was instantly to proceed to Owhyhee, to negociate this important business with *Tamaahmaah*.

A chief named *Martier* was dispatched upon this embassy; a man whose appearance was far from being prepossessing, though he was known to be shrewd and sagacious. His countenance was strongly marked by ferocity; but he was remarkable for the mildness and urbanity of his disposition. In all their conferences he was a principal speaker; and from the attention paid by *Titeeree* and *Taio*, to what he advanced, it evidently appeared that his abilities were held in the highest estimation.

Having so far succeeded in this favourite object, the captain embraced the opportunity of a full assembly, to advert again to the murder at Woahoo. On this occasion he was hastily checked by *Titeeree*, who said that business was already settled; that they had full confidence in his assertions, and he ought not to doubt them! Having considered the restoration of peace to these islands, and the punishment of the assassins at Woahoo to be important to the commercial adventurers in this ocean, the captain had long contemplated these objects. The prospect of one of them being happily accomplished; and of justice taking place in the other, had given him great satisfaction.

As hogs and other refreshments were not to be procured, he was desirous of quitting this station. *Titeeree*, and his counsellors, were informed of this resolution, when, at their earnest request, he promised to pay them a visit on shore, while the vessel was preparing for her departure. The chiefs, however, requested he would defer his departure for a few days, and further solicited that a display of fire-works might be complied with; when they would repair to the ship, and accompany him on shore. The captain was readily induced to comply with their wishes; and on the morning of the 17th, the king, *Taio*, and the rest of the chiefs; and in the afternoon accompanied by Titeeree, and some of the naval officers in two armed boats, with a guard of marines, Captain Vancouver paid his compliments on shore, where the landing was but indifferent.

The captain, and those who accompanied him, were received by the natives with great civility and respect; their number amounting to about six or seven hundred, including the children. The king conducted them through the crowd, who readily made way for them, and behaved in an orderely inoffensive manner. They soon arrived at his residence, consisting of two small shabby huts, situated in a pleasant grove of spreading trees; where they were regaled with cocoa-nuts, and other refreshments. The captain requested *Titeeree* and *Taio* to walk with him through the plantations: they begged leave to decline this task, pleading their great age and infirmities; but they directed that *Namahanna*, *Tomohomoho*, and *Martier* should attend them,

* He had understood at Owhyhee, that three of the principal murderers had been put to death by the orders of Titeeree. These, and several other circumstances that were adduced, rendered it more than probable, that *Titeeree* and *Taio* were innocent of the murder with which they had been indirectly charged. A pusillanimous conduct, on such an occasion, would have sunk the character of Europeans into the lowest contempt; and atrocities would become more frequent; to the disgrace of human nature, and the destruction of the adventurers engaged in the commerce of the North Pacific Ocean.

On Wednesday the 13th, the captain was honoured with the presence of *Titeeree*, who, he was informed, was considered as king of all the islands to leeward of Owhyhee, and that *Taio* derived all his authority from him. *Titeeree* entered the ship with a sort of partial confidence, attended by several chiefs: he appeared to be upwards of sixty years of age, and greatly debilitated and emaciated; the colour of his skin seemed to indicate that the feebleness of his frame was occasioned by an excessive use of the ava. His faultering voice proclaimed the decline of life; but his countenance, though furrowed by years and irregularities, displayed a cheerfulness and sensibility, which time had only partially obliterated. Among the articles the captain presented to him on this occasion, was a superb cloak, not inferior to any of those he had given *Tamaahmaah:* his whole suite were also complimented with presents proportioned to their rank, and each appeared well satisfied.

who,

who were equally capable of preventing the obtrusion of the curious, and rendering them any other service*.

Having satisfied their curiosity, they returned to the royal habitation, where *Titeeree* and *Taio* were dining on raw pickled fish and *poc taro*, a dish prepared from the *taro root* resembling hasty pudding. Supposing the Europeans would not be much delighted with such food, they had provided two excellent baked hogs, which were immediately served up; but as the cook had provided no vegetables, which would have been an important article to mariners, they declined the repast; and the chiefs, having finished their meal, returned with them on board.

Thinking this would be the last visit he should receive from *Titeeree* and *Taio*, the captain presented them with an assortment of tools, utensils, implements, cloth, linen, and beads. To *Titeeree* he also gave some goats; which being the first foreign animals imported into Mowee, was regarded as an important present. The inferior chiefs and attendants were not neglected on this occasion, the captain having more than gratified their most sanguine expectations. They expressed an inclination to have been liberal of their favours to the Europeans, and lamented their want of ability, from the general distress of their country; but they promised to assist them on their return to the utmost of their ability. In the evening a display of fire-works took place, to the great terror and admiration of their visitors, and their attendants on board. All the natives, of every description, assembled about the ship in their canoes†.

Light baffling winds attended our navigators, after leaving Raheina roadstead, till the evening of the 18th, when they reached the channel between Mowee and Morotoi, and anchored for the night off the north-west part of Mowee. With a light easterly breeze; on the morning of the 20th, they directed their course so as to sail along the north side of Woahoo. They were visited by some of the natives in small canoes, who brought hardly any thing to dispose of. One double canoe also made its appearance, in which came James Coleman, one of the three men left by Kendrick at Atowai: this man had quitted Kendrick's service, and entered into that of *Titeeree*, who had stationed him at this island to regulate the trade, and assist such vessels as might touch at Woahoo for refreshments.

Coleman was accompanied by a chief named *Tennavee*, and a youth called *Ta-hooboo-ar-to*. The latter, having been to China in one of the trading vessels, had gathered a few English words and phrases, with which he could render his conversation intelligible to the natives of that country. These people informed Captain Vancouver that they were sent by *Tri-too-boory*, the eldest son of *Titeeree*, and Governor of Woahoo, to enquire who they were, and to tender them such supplies as the country afforded, though they could not at present boast of any abundance‡. He

* Attended by the guard and these chiefs, they visited the cultivated parts of the extensive plain of Raheina: the quarter which bordered on the sea was judiciously laid out in plantations of taro, sugar-cane, potatoes, the cloth-plant, &c. and well shaded by spreading trees, principally of the bread fruit; but the productions of these plains were less luxuriant than those of Otaheite, or the Society Islands. To the ravages in *Tamaahmaah's* wars, the impoverished appearance of these crops were to be ascribed; and the dreary aspect of the country was incontestible evidence of this melancholy truth. The tenements in the lands formerly cultivated, were now lying waste, their fences partly demolished, and their little canals destroyed. The larger portion of the plain was in this ruinous state; nor was a hog or a fowl any where to be seen: The very small part of the land which appeared to be in a flourishing state, bore the certain marks of very recent labour.

† The exhibition being ended, the captain expected to have taken leave of his Mowee friends; but the darkness of the night, and a heavy surf breaking on the shore, induced the king and Taio to request permission to stay on board. Contrary to the general rule, he consented to indulge them, and part of their retinue with the cabin. The night was more devoted to conversation than repose. *Tieteeree* departed suddenly the next morning, without the knowledge of the captain, who was therefore apprehensive that some accidental offence had been given him, but *Taio* assured him to the contrary, declaring that such was his usual method of retiring. *Taio*, *Martier*, and some of the other chiefs, continued with them till they sailed: about noon a light breeze from the westward, being favourable for their purpose, they took an affectionate leave of the captain, and he put to sea.

‡ Coleman introduced the melancholy subject of the murder at Woahoo; but for more particular information he referred them to *Tohoobooarto*, who was present, and would relate the whole of that melancholy tragedy. *Tohoobooarto* declared he had received much civility from Mr. Hergest, and the other gentlemen, on his visiting the Dædalus at Whymea bay: that when Mr. Hergest and Mr. Gooch were going on shore, he attended them in the boat as their interpreter: that, on their arrival at the beach, he advised Mr. Hergest not to attempt to land, assuring him that no chief was present, and the most abandoned wretches inhabited that part of the island: that, his caution being disregarded, they ventured on shore, and after taking some measures

He further declared, that having interfered to save Mr. Hergest, he received a wound in his left arm, the scar of which he shewed; and added, that the man who murdered Mr. Hergest, with two or three who assisted, were still living on the spot; the former of these he had pointed out to Coleman a few days before. *Toohoobooarto* having finished his narrative, he was interrogated by *Tomohomoho* with respect to the residence of the offenders; and he was requested to assist him in apprehending them, and bringing them to justice. *Toohoobooarto* wished to decline this office, fearing the friends and relations of the offenders would murder him: but, being assured of *Tomohomoho's* protection, he readily consented, and the whole party proceeded to the shore*.

Tohoobooarto did not appear as a witness against the accused, which occasioned Captain Vancouver some regret; but as it was extremely probable that Coleman's evidence would corroborate what the chiefs had asserted, he was ordered to attend. On his entering the apartment, he attentively surveyed the persons of the supposed criminals, and pointed out the same man whom the chiefs had pronounced the murderer of Mr. Hergest; but acknowledged that he knew nothing of the other two. Mr. Dobson, one of the midshipmen who came out in the Dædalus, without the least hesitation, pointed out the same man, and was ready to make oath to his identity†.

Many other particulars tended to confirm the perpetration of the murder, and that these men were at least accessary to it; but Captain Vancouver desired the chiefs would endeavour to find out, and bring on board every person who could prove the innocence of those in custody: but this injunction was little attended to, as every one was perfectly convinced that no such person could be found: he therefore wished that a number of the natives might be gathered together, to witness the awful punishment the culprits had brought upon themselves by their barbarity; and that they would publicly make it known, that the execution would probably take place on the morning of the successive day.

Early on the 22d. several of the natives were observed about the ship; and after breakfast, Coleman, with *Tomohomoho* and *Tennavee*, came on board. Immediate execution of the prisoners was demanded by the two latter. A short respite was, however, granted, but nothing appearing that could either palliate or extenuate their guilt, sentence of death was formally pronounced against them‡.

This

measures to facilitate a supply of water, Mr. Hergest, notwithstanding repeated cautions from the young man, persisted in accompanying Mr. Gooch from the sea-side, towards the habitations of the natives, by whom they were treated in a friendly manner. *Tohoobooarto* then left them, in order to wash himself in the fresh water (a prevailing custom with those who have been some time at sea;) and whilst these gentlemen were absent, a dispute arose at the watering-place, between the natives and the crew of the Dædalus. An affray ensued, and a Portuguese seaman was killed.

No molestation was offered or intended against the English gentlemen, who received great civility from the people of the village, till intelligence of this unfortunate transaction arrived; when, to prevent the effects of revenge, they thought it necessary to destroy the chiefs they had in their power; in consequence of which Mr. Gooch was instantly stabbed through the heart with a *pahooa*. By the first blow that Mr. Hergest received, he was only wounded; but, in endeavouring to make his way towards the boat, a large stone struck him on the side of the head, and he was afterwards most barbarously murdered. The fellow who stabbed Mr. Gooch, and that who first wounded Mr. Hergest, as well as another who had been active at the watering-place, had been apprehended by *Titeeree's* orders.

* The next day, the chiefs, after a due investigation of the business, pointed out the principal offender, whose description perfectly corresponded with that given by *Tohoobooarto:* half his body was rendered black by punctuating: the other two men were equally punctuated, but not with the same regularity. By these appearances alone, their persons could not have been sufficiently identified, as several of *Titeeree's* subjects were disfigured in the same barbarous taste; a practice which had been adopted in the preceding war, for the purpose of increasing the ferocity of their appearance, and creating terror in their enemies.

† Captain Vancouver ordered the prisoners into confinement till further evidence should be produced: Tomohomoho disapproved of the delay of punishment, and begged the prisoners might be immediately executed; but the captain persisted in the exercise of his own feelings. A fourth person had been suspected of being concerned in the murder, but from the little probability of his being taken, and other circumstances, any further search was declined.

‡ Before they were taken from the ship, they were placed in irons on the quarter-deck; where, in the presence of the whole ship's company, Captain Vancouver recapitulated the crime they had committed, and the solemn judgment of the chiefs; circumstances which were also made generally known among the Indian spectators who were present. To render the spectacle more awful, a guard of seamen and marines were drawn up on one side of the ship, and alongside of it next the shore, a canoe was stationed for the execution: the rest of the crew were properly arranged, to prevent any disturbance or commotion.

Another essential ceremony still remained to be performed: one of these malefactors had long hair, which the law

This public example so long after the perpetration of the crime, it was hoped, would have a saluary effect, as it would convince the islanders that no intervention of time would, in future, prevent the regular course of justice. The dead bodies were taken to the shore, attended by many of the natives who witnessed the awful scene, and who paddled slowly and solemnly towards the island. The captain had intended to have caused each of these dead bodies to have been hung upon a tree near the shore, to deter others from committing similar offences; but *Tomohomoho* assured him that such spectacles would be thought extremely improper, contrary to their religious rites, and would give offence to the whole priesthood.

The two chiefs urged Captain Vancouver to pay a visit to *Trytooboory*, protesting that had he not been extremely ill, he would have been present at the late unpleasant business; and that he was particularly desirous of the captain's friendship. Though he entertained no apprehensions for his safety, whilst he was under the protection of the chief, he thought it would have been imprudent, so soon after the execution of the criminals, to throw temptations of revenge in the way of an ill-disposed part of the people by placing himself and others in their power on shore: their civil invitations were therefore respectfully declined.

But as an interview only was required, and as *Trytooboory's* indisposition, and the want of a proper conveyance, prevented his coming on board, Captain Vancouver proposed, as it was a fine day, to make a commodious platform, on which he might easily come alongside; and then, if he should be inclined to enter the ship, he should be hoisted in by a chair, or the parties might converse together on the platform. Coleman, with *Tennavee* departed to communicate this plan to the chief, to whom he again sent a present of red cloth and other articles. These had the desired effect, and the messengers soon returned with *Trytooboory*, who without hesitation begged to be hoisted into the ship; this being readily complied with, he was securely placed upon the quarter-deck. *Trytooboory's* age did not seem to exceed thirty-three years; his countenance and frame were emaciated and debilitated; and he was so totally deprived of the use of his legs, that he was carried from place to place like an infant.

The usual compliments, and mutual exchange of friendly assurances having taken place, the captain requested the favour of his company below: To this he readily assented; but when the natives in the canoes about the ship were informed of his intentions, a general alarm arose, and he was earnestly requested not to quit the deck, expecting some disagreeable consequences might happen: *Trytooboory*, however, paid no attention to these remonstrances, and ordered the people who were carrying him in the chair, to proceed to the cabin, where he was comfortably seated, and appeared to be perfectly at home*.

With a pleasant breeze from the westward on the 24th, the navigators plied to the windward, along the south side of Woahoo, till the afternoon, when they anchored abreast of the westernmost opening, called by the natives *Opoo-ro-ah*. Whilst they remained in this situation, a few of the natives paid them a visit: their canoes were small, and very indifferent, and their visit was that of mere curiosity, as they had very few articles to barter. In the afternoon their attentive

required to be severed from his head previous to his execution, to be ceremoniously presented as a customary tribute to the king of the island. The captain was shocked at the want of feeling manifested by the two chiefs on this solemn occasion, who rudely and indecently contended for the honour of cutting it off, and presenting the tragic prize to the king. The odious contest being settled, the criminals were separately taken into a double canoe, where they were lashed hand and foot, and deprived of life by *Tennavee*, their own chief; and so dexterously was this office performed, that life instantly fled with the report of the piece, muscular motion seeming also to cease at the same moment.

* Though so extremely indisposed, his conversation was cheerful and agreeable, and the captain had the happiness of hearing him approve of the proceedings against the unfortunate wretches who had that morning suffered. The proposed peace with Owhyhee was next adverted to: he much applauded the measure, and said, if it could be effected it would be of infinite importance to them; and by the production of a greater abundance from the soil, they would be enabled to procure a more ample supply of European commodities. *Trytooboory*, having heard of the fame of the European fire-works, requested to be indulged with a sight of their effect. Willing to oblige, the captain gratified his curiosity by the display of a small assortment in the evening, from the after part of the ship. These were beheld by the surrounding natives, with a degree of awful astonishment he had never observed before. The exhibition being ended, *Trytooboory* was conveyed into his canoe in the same style he had been hoisted into the ship. Before his departure, the captain complimented him with some additional articles; and, with these and his reception, he seemed particularly delighted.

and

and useful friend *Tomohomoho*, having rendered them every assistance in his power, bade them farewel: on this occasion he was afforded the highest satisfaction in the choice of the articles which were presented to him. To these he was fully entitled for the integrity, by which he was ever actuated, from the first to the last moment he had associated with the navigators.

They were now visited by some of the natives in the most wretched canoes they had ever seen among the South-Sea islanders: Some time after, several of the inhabitants of another village earnestly intreated their anchoring; promising that if they would stay till the morning, their chiefs would be on board with a number of hogs, and a large collection of vegetables; but they could not visit them then, as it was *taboo poory*. The face of the country, however, did not promise an abundant supply; the situation being exposed, and the extent of anchorage limited and bad. Under these circumstances, having got clear of the shores by eleven at night, they prudently made the best of their way, with a light south-east breeze, towards Attowai.

The weather being calm induced some of the islanders, who were passing from Attowai to Mowee, to take the opportunity of visiting the ship. The foremost of these, undertaking so distant a voyage in a single canoe, attracted their attention; and, on her coming alongside, she proved to be the finest canoe they had ever seen among these islands. She was sixty-one feet and a half in length, exceeding by four feet and a half the largest canoes of Owhyhee; and the workmanship of the whole was performed in a very masterly manner. If the size of this canoe was a curiosity, the wood of which it was formed was still a greater: it was fabricated from a very fine pine-tree, supposed to have been drifted by the ocean, and probably the growth of some of the northern parts of America. The circumstance of fir-timber being drifted on the northern sides of these islands is not uncommon, especially at Attowai, where a double canoe was made from two small pine-trees, that were driven on shore nearly at the same spot. Three or four trees of the pine tribe were at that time lying on the island, which had occasionally been lodged there by the sea, and which time had rendered absolutely useless*.

In the morning of the 27th, a pleasant, though unfavourable breeze, rendered our navigators unable to weather the north-east point of Attowai, as they had intended, for the purpose of examining its northern shores. But being unwilling hastily to abandon the project they had in view, they tacked about two miles from the shore. A range of low hills, at the foot of distant mountains, presented a most pleasing appearance; from the richness of its verdure, the high state of its cultivation, and its romantic air.

About three miles to the south of the southern extremity, lies the south-east point of the island. Not far from this point is a small cove, accessible only for boats, where a village of the natives is enriched by a rivulet flowing into it. This portion of Attowai, the most delightful district of the island, is the principal residence of the king, or, in his absence, the superior chief. Here *Enemo* the regent, with the young prince *Tamooerrie*, were now residing; who sent Williams (the Welchman mentioned in their former visit) to acquaint Captain Vancouver, that in the course of the morning they would visit the ship. The captain had received private intelligence, that his behaviour on a former occasion had been so highly approved by *Enemo*, the young prince, and the principal chiefs, that hogs and many other articles had been a long time *tabooed*, that his demands might be the more amply supplied. Of these friendly intentions they were fully informed before they quitted Owhyhee; but knowing the great South-Sea nation of islanders to have little adherence to truth, he did not rely implicitly on such tales, and had fortunately availed himself of the bounty of *Tamaahmaah*, and his other Owhyhean friends. It was indeed intimated to him, that having ex-

* This canoe expedition, it was said, was undertaken to inform *Taio* of some commotions that had occurred against the government of *Enemo* the regent; but a spirited opposition having been made in an early stage of the business, they had subsided without any loss on the part of *Enemo*, or his adherents; whilst the conspirators had two chiefs and five men killed: several others were severely wounded, but they effected their escape to the woods. The leg-bones of the two chiefs were in the canoe, with some of the flesh and sinews adhering to them; to be thus presented to *Taio*, as trophies of victory over the rebels. This large canoe was charged with the official dispatch, and the others were conducting certain ring-leaders as prisoners to *Taio* to be examined respecting their conduct in the insurrection; among whom were several of his nearest relations.

ceeded

ceeded the period of their promised return, the importunate demands of the trading vessels, and the extravagant prices paid by their commanders, under the persuasion that they should not return, most of the supplies had been disposed of; some few hogs, however, were to be procured from the north side, and fortunately they were in the route he intended to pursue.

Williams corroborated the account of the insurrection which had been related the preceding day. He stated that it arose from the conduct of the regent *Enemo*, and that no injury was intended against *Taio*, or his son. Their aversion to him had principally arisen from his having put several people to death, and confiscated the property of others, for having been suspected of witchcraft; a notion very prevalent among the Sandwich islanders. They again stood in shore, and about noon received the honour of a visit from *Enemo*.

The captain expected much satisfaction from the renewal of their former acquaintance, but he experienced sensations of a very opposite nature. The limbs of *Enemo* were no longer able to support his aged and venerable person, being deserted by their former muscular strength; and a dry white scurf, resembling scales, overspread the whole surface of his body. The captain was indeed surprised and shocked that a person so wretchedly infirm, should have undertaken the trouble of this visit; which was, however, a flattering compliment to him, and for which he expressed his gratitude in the most appropriate terms*.

As the ship was not far from the shore, the good old regent took his leave about four in the afternoon, after acquainting the captain, that as the next day was *Taboo Poory*, neither himself nor the prince could leave the shore; but he would direct a chief to bring off such hogs and vegetables as could be procured by the morning; and that if they could remain off this part of the island till the day following, he would bring or send such supplies as could be obtained in the neighbourhood. A separation then took place, and little expectations were afterwards entertained by our navigators of ever seeing him again†.

Being near the shore, and seeing several canoes making towards the ship, the navigators gave them an opportunity of coming alongside. They contained *Poorey*, *Too*, and some other chiefs, having with them eight hogs, and some vegetables. This was but a scanty supply, and they had little probability of procuring more; the captain therefore bore up for Whymea bay. There he intended to complete his stock of water, and proceed immediately to the northward; having still remaining of his Owhyhean stock a considerable number of hogs, exclusive of a very large quantity that had been salted.

Poorey, and the rest of the chiefs, accompanied them to Whymea, anxious to render them any services within their power; but, owing to light baffling winds, they could not anchor till eleven at night. The next morning, the 29th, as the natives who had approached them had brought very little for sale, *Poorey* and his friends repaired to the shore, hoping to collect such articles as they required. The launch was also hoisted out, and dispatched with a guard of marines for a supply of water‡.

On the arrival of the captain on board, he found

* Though his corporeal infirmities were great, a ray of chcerfulness beamed forth, when he declared he was very happy to see him, and much concerned that he had not arrived on an earlier day; according to his promise, when he had a great abundance of refreshments for his use; and lamented that they were almost exhausted. The captain acknowledged that it was his misfortune, not his fault, that he had not arrived at the time appointed, and rewarded his friendship with presents equal to those he had given the principal chiefs of the other islands. With these he was much pleased, especially with the scarlet cloak, and a set of armourer's tools. *Enemo* continued on board a considerable part of the afternoon, making many judicious observations and enquiries; and warmly expressed his satisfaction at the steps he had taken to introduce a general peace. He then requested to know whether, on his return, he would take him to England, as his principal wish, in this life, was to see that country, and to have the honourable gratification of speaking to his Majesty King George; after which he should die in peace.

† After the departure of *Enemo*, *Tamooerrie* came on board: he appeared to be in high spirits, and much rejoiced by their return; but, like his guardian, upbraided them for not coming sooner, when the productions of his country were more abundant. The captain made him some presents suitable to his rank, after which he reluctantly took leave.

‡ Captain Vancouver then enters into a digression, respecting a comfortable establishment he had procured from the chiefs for two female passengers, *Raheima*, and *Tymarow*, whom he had met with at Nootka in October 1792, and had brought them to this their native country, from whence they had been forcibly taken. This office of humanity he was fortunate enough to accomplish to their satisfaction—" If," says the captain, " it were fair to judge of the dispositions of a whole nation from the qualities of

found his friends had not been very successful in procuring supplies: Seventeen leanish hogs, a few potatoes, and some taro was the whole amount of their collection. His stock of water was, however, completely replenished; and finding from the chiefs that no more provisions were to be procured, he informed them that he should depart with the first favourable wind. Having presented them with such articles as he thought most valuable to them, they took their leave with expressions of the highest satisfaction. A light breeze springing up from the land, our navigators put to sea about ten at night. A report having prevailed that Captain Cook had erroneously separated Orechooa from Onehow, it being asserted that the inhabitants walked from one place to the other; and that Captain King had stated the number of inhabitants at four thousand: to investigate these facts, Captain Vancouver steered over for Orechooa, and passed within half a mile of its shores: he declares that Orechooa is positively separated from Onehow by a channel about a mile in breadth; and from the colour of the water, it must have been infinitely too deep for people to walk across from one island to the other. On the subject of population, Captain King must have been egregiously misled: the island of Orechooa is of small extent, consisting wholly of one rugged naked rock, apparently destitute of soil; exhibiting nothing to indicate its ever having been the residence of human creatures: Having obtained this satisfaction, they hauled their wind to the north-west, and for the present bade adieu to the Sandwich islands, to pursue their route towards Nootka.

SECTION XIV.

Passage towards the American Coast—Anchor in Trinidad Bay—Inhabitants of described—Arrive at Nootka—Quit it, and proceed to the northward—Find the Chatham in Fitzhugh's Sound.

THE navigators took their departure from the Sandwich Islands on the 30th of March, and in one week afterwards they reached the variable winds, having a light breeze from the southward. A few albatrosses and petrels were occasionally seen about the ship; and on the morning of the 7th of April, the wind suddenly shifted to the north-west, attended with squalls and rain.

The pork, and other refreshments which had been procured at the Sandwich Islands, being exhausted, the regular provisions were now served, with portable soup, peas, wheat, and sour krout. Being plentifully stored with these healthy articles, Captain Vancouver ordered a double quantity to be regularly served, to preserve that excellent state of health the crew had acquired in New Albion, and at the Sandwich Islands. Several birds of the petrel tribe were seen about the ship; and on the 8th a number of whales passed through a quantity of the medusa villilia. In the night of the 13th they passed over a part of that space, where Mr. Meares states that Mr. Douglas found the compass so affected, as to make it impossible to steer the ship by it; but our navigators affirm that they

of these two young women, it would seem that they are endued with much affection and tenderness. At least such was their deportment towards us; by which they gained the regard and good wishes of, I believe, every one on board, whilst I became in no small degree solicitous for their future happiness and prosperity."—From the captain's panegyric on *Raheina*, many of his readers will imagine that he was more than a friend to that alluring female: he thus rapturously expresses himself—" The elegance of *Raheina's* figure, the regularity and softness of her features, and the delicacy which she naturally possessed, gave her a superiority, in point of personal accomplishments, over the generality of her sex amongst the Sandwich islanders: in addition to which, her sensibility and turn of mind, her sweetness of temper, and complaceney of manners, were beyond any thing that could have been expected from her birth, or native education."

Through the captain's influence with the chiefs, a comfortable estate was allotted and secured to each of these young women, which they respectively took possession of; and, in the warmest and most grateful terms, acknowledged the obligations they were under for this last mark of his attention to their future welfare, and for the kindness they had experienced from the Europeans during their residence among them. They attended the captain and several of his officers to the beach, where they took an affectionate leave: the latter embarked for the ship, leaving the amiable females to meditate on their new situation and independent circumstances.

never met with any phœnomenon of that nature, either now or at any former period of their voyage, unless the violence of the wind and sea produced such an agitation.

They continued to ply with adverse winds to little effect: on the 29th the weather was serene and pleasant. In the morning of the second of May it was for some time calm, and alterations in the wind were expected to take place; though a heavy swell continued from the northward. The land was in sight, but was so obscured with haze, that its parts could not be distinctly observed. The northerly wind returning, they stood for the land, and fetched it a few miles to the southward of Rocky point; just at the spot discovered by the Spaniards in Senr. Quadra's expedition to this coast in 1775, which they named Porto de la Trinidad. It had been recommended as an eligible place for shipping, but as they had passed it before, unnoticed as a port, the captain wished to become better acquainted with it. Their tardy passage had almost exhausted them of wood and water, and operated as an additional inducement for stopping.

In the evening they anchored in eight fathoms water in Porto de la Trinidad. Their station was in a small open bay or cove. When moored, the bearings from the ship were a high, steep, rocky, head land, projecting from the general line of the shore into the ocean, and forming a bay. Soon after they had anchored, they were visited by two of the natives in a canoe, who approached with confidence and a friendly aspect. In exchange for some arrows and a few trifles, they were presented with some iron, with which they returned to the shore, apparently much pleased. After dark, another party followed their example, having provided a fire in their canoe: two of them ventured on board, but could not be prevailed on to descend below the deck: they were, however, gratified with a few trivial presents, and retired, well satisfied with their visit.

The next morning the captain went on shore, attended by a guard of marines, and a working party, in search of wood and water; a supply of both which articles was easily found near a small Indian village. Most of the regular inhabitants of this village were absent in their canoes, trading alongside the ship, leaving some old women only, to attend the Europeans. After setting the crew to work, the captain accompanied these aged females to their habitations, amounting to five houses, built of plank, and rudely constructed like those at Nootka, but of a different form. The entrance to each is a round hole in one corner of the house, close to the ground, through which a grown person finds it very difficult to force himself. Four of these mansions appeared to have been recently built, and seemed calculated for six or seven persons each: the other was smaller, and perhaps intended for a single family. To the matrons of these humble habitations, the captain distributed some nails, and trinkets; who, in return, insisted on his accepting some large muscles, candidly acknowledging they had nothing better to offer*.

Having taken on board about twenty tons of water, and as much wood as was thought necessary, they stood to sea, without the least regret at quitting a station which they considered as an unsafe and unprotected roadstead for ships. The points of Trinidad Bay lie about two miles asunder. The round rocky barren islet, from the north-west point of the bay, has eight or nine fathoms water round it, and admits of a clear channel from nine to six fathoms deep, close to the above point: from thence to rocky point the grounds are interspersed with rocky islets, and some sunken rocks. The soundings of the bay are from nine to five fathoms, but they had reason to consider it not to be very good holding ground.

They had little opportunity of becoming acquainted with the country, as they never strayed beyond the vicinity of the water-side: the grounds bordering on the sea contained several rocky patches, without trees, though they were covered with

* After revisiting the party at work, he left them under the direction of Mr. Swaine, and returned on board, where he found a few Indian visitors trading with great integrity; their merchandize consisting principally of bows, arrows, sea-otter skins, and herrings. Though few of the natives visited the ship, the party on shore had the company of about a hundred; those of the village alone, amounting to sixty at the least; the others, who came from the southward, were armed with bows and arrows. These were constantly in readiness for action, and the repective possessors of them would not permit them to be inspected. They seated themselves together at a distance from those of the village, appearing to assume a kind of superior dignity: at length, however, they became more docile and familiar, and offered their bows and otter-skins for sale. Their arrows were dexterously made, and pointed with bone, agate, or common flint. They had knives fabricated of the same materials, many of which displayed great ingenuity.

with grass, fern, and other herbage. At a little distance from this margin, an uninterrupted wilderness was seen, producing a variety of stately pine-trees; among which were observed the black spruce, alder, maple, yew, and a number of shrubs and plants which are common to the southern parts of New Georgia. They could form no opinion of the land animals but from their skins, which served as clothing for the inhabitants, and were of the kind to be found in the more northern part of the Continent. The shortness of their stay among the natives, would not permit them to give a perfect account of them. They are indifferently formed, but stout, and of a lower stature than any tribe of Indians they had before seen: their hair, in general, was long, kept extremely clean, neatly combed, and tied; but they are much disfigured and smeared with paint. Like the other tribes on this side of America, they commenced singing when they approached the ship, and their music was not unpleasant to the ear: their cloathing, as already observed, consisted of the skins of animals. Whatever they were possessed of, they readily exchanged for iron, an article which they held in the highest estimation. The men were not very attentive to their dress; a garment was loosely thrown over them, which was very little calculated either for warmth or decency. The women were more delicate on these points; some of them being covered from head to foot with a kind of gown, consisting of thin tanned hides, and others with a smaller robe of similar materials; under this they wore a sort of petticoat of warmer untanned skins, descending from the waist below the knees*.

At noon the coast was in sight, and in the afternoon a range of high inland mountains were observed. In the evening of the 18th our navigators fetched well up along shore of the Isle de Feron; off which are many small islands, and some sunken rocks. At this time a schooner was seen to windward, and the clearness of the atmosphere gave them an opportunity of beholding the rugged mountains that compose this country, whose summits were encumbered with snow. The wind permitted them to fetch Nootka, and about four in the afternoon, they saw another sail which they supposed to be a brig. As this might probably be the Chatham, the private signal was made, but not acknowledged. At five they reached Friendly Cove, and anchored in eight fathoms water. An officer was dispatched on shore to inform Senr. Fidalgo of their arrival, and that he would salute the fort, on the promise of an equal return: eleven guns were therefore reciprocately discharged†.

The vessel they had seen in the offing anchored here soon after them, and proved to be the snow Saint Carlos, from St. Blas, commanded by Senr. Don Ramon Saavedra, ensign in the Spanish navy. Nothing of sufficient importance to require recapitulation occurred, since they had left Nootka, till Sunday the 26th of May, brought them opposite to the arm leading to Point Menzies; and where they expected to find the Chatham, about eight miles within the entrance of a cove on the south shore; but the wind and tide being adverse, they made little progress till six o'clock, when they worked up the arm with the flood tide, and a light easterly breeze. The Chatham was seen at eleven, and about noon they anchored within half a mile of her in sixty fathoms water.

Mr. Puget informed the captain that he had arrived here on the 24th, and that nothing important had occurred since he had left Nootka.

* Among these people, and most of the other Indians, some mutilations or lacerations are practised, either as ornamental, religious, or whimsical; or perhaps to answer some purpose of which our navigators were ignorant. At Trinidad the custom was attended with much pain in the process, and great inconvenience must arise from it ever after. The teeth of both sexes are all uniformly ground down, horizontally, to the gums; and the women, like European *Belles* who delight in the extremity of fashion, had their teeth reduced even below this level; and their upper lip was adorned with three perpendicular columns of punctuation. Had it not been for these depretiating circumstances, some of the younger females might have been considered as having pretensions to beauty. The men had also some punctuations about them, and, either from accident or design, many of them had scars upon their arms and bodies.

† A Spanish officer who visited them before they anchored, delivered to Captain Vancouver, a letter, and other papers, left by Mr. Puget. These documents informed him that the Chatham had arrived in this port on ths 15th of April, and quitted it on the 18th of May, in conformity to the instructions the captain had given Mr. Puget if he should not happen to arrive here by about the middle of May, every moment might be employed in prosecuting the survey of this coast.

SECT.

SECTION XV.

Two Boat Excursions—Fall in with a Tribe of Indians—A House of a singular Construction—Visited by a great Number of the Natives—A Female Party—Their Dress—Seaman poisoned by eating Muscles.

SOME repairs being required in and about the Discovery, Captain Vancouver came to a determination, on the 26th of May, that whilst those on board were employed on the necessary duties, two boat parties should be dispatched to examine the region before them. Recollecting a large cove to the northward, that he had noticed on his former visit, he went to take a view of it; and finding it a very eligible place, he anchored there at two on the 27th in twelve fathoms water, and moored the ship to the trees on the shore: an excellent stream of water flowed into the cove, through a fine sandy beach near the station he had taken; and a convenient place presented itself for the observatory and tents. The seine was hauled with such success as to afford moderate encouragement of acquiring some refreshment from the sea. These advantages exceeded the expectations of our navigators in this desolate region, where the rain had been almost incessantly pouring down in torrents ever since their arrival on it.

On the 28th the repairs were begun; and on the 29th, Mr. Johnstone was dispatched in the Chatham's cutter, attended by the Discovery's small one, to complete the examination of this inlet, which could not be accomplished the last year on account of the badness of the weather. The next morning, the 30th, Captain Vancouver, accompanied by Lieutenant Swaine in the cutter, set out in the yawl to examine the main arm of this inlet, which he had denominated BURKE'S CHANNEL.

Conceiving it expedient that those employed on boat service, should have an additional allowance of salutary food and spirits, to be used at the discretion of the officer commanding each party; he instantly adopted that practice, which he afterwards found necessary to be continued during the remainder of the season.

About nine in the morning the captain arrived in what he supposed to be the main branch of the inlet, leading to the north from Fitzhugh's sound. A fresh southerly gale was in his favour, but the cloudiness of the weather prevented his obtaining any observation for the latitude; though he landed for that purpose on some rocks near the western shore. He was visited by a few natives, who at first seemed shy, but a few trinkets, properly distributed, obtained their confidence. These people were very different from those our navigators had seen to the southward, spoke a different language, and were totally unacquainted with that used by the inhabitants of Nootka. They were stouter, and more robust than the Indians farther south; and the prominence of their countenances resembled the northern Europeans. Had they not been besmeared with filth, oil, and paint, even their colour would have differed but little from some of those, who are exposed to the inclemency and alterations of the weather*.

The appearance of the country they had passed by, in the course of the survey, did not vary from what has already been frequently described, excepting that the birch, maple, and other small trees, seemed to be more numerous: two or three whales, several seals, some sea-otters, and two black bears had been seen; all of which were wonderfully shy†.

This

* From these rocks they steered to the opposite shore, the channel being upwards of a mile wide. The evening of the 30th was rough, rainy, and unpleasant; and the steep precipices that constituted the shores would not suffer them to land till almost midnight, where they could hardly find a situation for constructing their necessary tents. A heavy fall of rain continued during the night; and at day-light on the 31st, their lodging was discovered to have been in a morass, and that most of their attire was wet. In this unpleasant abode the weather detained them till eight o'clock, when they proceeded northward to a point on the opposite shore.

† Being satisfied that all the land forming the sea-coast, from the south entrance into Fitzhugh's Sound, to the place where they looked into the ocean, consisted of two extensive islands, which were probably much subdivided, the captain considered the object of his errand accomplished, and commenced his return towards the station of the vessels, from whence he was then forty-five miles distant.

In the further course of the snrvey undertaken by our navigators,

This delicacy, as well as the cockles, they offered liberally, in return for nails and trinkets, but our navigators accepted only a few of the latter. About ten at night the captain arrived on board, where he found all well, and the principal part of the work had been completed.

The next morning Mr. Johnstone informed the captain, that on the forenoon of the 30th of May he reached a point of the inlet, from whence he found an arm lying in a south-east direction. The party had noticed, on the preceding evening, a house of a very singular construction, but saw nothing to indicate its being inhabited. As they now advanced, some smoke was observed, and three Indians cautiously approached them, intimating their disapprobation of their landing. A few nails and trinkets, however, soon reconciled them, and they attended Mr. Johnstone, and some of his party, to their habitations. These were of different construction from any they had before seen: they were erected on a platform, raised and supported near thirty feet from the ground by large perpendicular spars: the whole occupying a space of thirty-five yards by fifteen, and covered in by a roof of boards lying nearly horizontal. It seemed divided into three different dwellings, each having a separate access formed by a tree in an inclined position, with notches cut in it by way of steps, about a foot and a half asunder: Up one of these ladders, Mr. Johnstone, and a gentleman of his party only, was permitted to ascend. Removing a small board, placed as a kind of door, they found four of the natives posted, each bearing a coarse iron weapon not much unlike a dagger. They only permitted Mr. Johnstone to look about him; though indeed there was nothing to be seen that differed from the usual internal arrangements among the Indians, on the shores of North-west America. Not more than fourteen inhabitants were seen in this curious place, and among them there were neither women nor children. Hence it appeared that the landing of our navigators had excited no inconsiderable alarm.

From this extraordinary mansion Mr. Johnstone came back along the eastern shore; where he saw another habitation on a similar construction. Having completed the examination of this branch, the party returned along its northern shores, and near the point of entrance. The captain's directions were for Mr. Johnstone to return to the vessels, which they reached in the morning of the following day, having seen several bears in their passage: two of the young cubs were killed, and proved to be most excellent food.

The captain then directed Mr. Johnstone to examine the arm leading to the north-north-westward, and to gain what information he could respecting the channel they had discovered leading to the sea. With these instructions, and a week's provisions, he departed in the Discovery's small cutter in the forenoon, attended by Mr. Barrie*.

A small stream of tide making in favour of the party, they weighed, and though they had the assistance of all their boats a-head till near midnight, they did not advance above a mile before they were obliged to anchor in fifty-three fathoms water. In this situation they continued till the morning of the 12th, when they proceeded. The next morning they tried the seine, but without success. A quantity of muscles were, however, procured, of which some palatable dishes were formed. On the 14th they received the compliments of some of their Indian friends, among whom was *Whacosh*, with two other principal chiefs, one named *Amzeer*, the other *Nestaw Daws*. Dark, gloomy, rainy, uncomfortable

navigators, nothing further occurred which it is our province to relate; but in a bay on the western shore, they fell in with about forty men, women, and children of the same tribe of Indians they had observed before. They addressed them with caution, desiring they would land at a rock a little distant from the party. Complying with their wishes, they were visited by many of the men and boys, who, after receiving some presents, took care to acquaint them that the women would have no objection to their company; but the captain civilly declined their solicitations. These people were employed in collecting cockles, and in preparing a paste from the inner bark of a kind of pine-tree, intended perhaps as a substitute for bread: this was washed in sea-water, beat hard upon the rocks, and made up into balls. It was tender, had a sweetish taste, and was thought excellent food by the natives.

* During the captain's absence, the gentlemen were visited by the natives, who seemed to be of three different tribes, each having a separate chief, who were respectively named *Keyut*, *Comockshulah*, *Whacosh*. They appeared to be on amicable terms with each other, and conducted themselves with propriety on board; and their language resembled that used by the inhabitants of Queen Charlotte's islands. They brought for barter the skins of sea-otters and other animals, some of which were exchanged for copper and iron. This uninteresting region afforded nothing worthy of particular notice, excepting the soundings, and such astronomical and nautical observations as could be procured.

weather continued, almost without intermission, from the morning of the 14th, till about noon of the 16th; when the rain ceased, but the weather continued dark and gloomy.

Many of their Indian friends attended them, among whom appeared a chief they had not before seen, whose name was *Moclah*. The number of these visitors exceeded one hundred, who in general behaved with decency and order: a few trivial thefts were, indeed, attempted; but great displeasure being shewn at the detection of them, prevented a repetition of such proceedings. Amongst the skins produced for sale, was that of the animal which furnishes wool for the garments of the North-west Americans. Exclusively of the head and tail, it was fifty inches in length, and thirty-six in breadth: the quantity of wool produced, was in a small proportion to the size of the skin, It is found principally on the back, and towards the shoulders, where long bristly hairs force themselves through the wool; and a similar kind of hair forms an outer covering to the whole body of the animal, concealing the wool, which is short and very fine: the skins now produced were white, or of a cream colour. The pelts appeared thick and strong, but these were too much mutilated, to lead to a discovery of the kind of animal to which they had respectively belonged*.

The clothing of the natives here was skins of the sea-otter, or garments fabricated from the pine bark: some of the latter have the fur of the sea-otter curiously wrought into them; bordered at the sides and bottom, and decorated with various colours. The disposition of these people appeared to be friendly and good-humoured. Their vivacity and mirth indicated a lively genius; and from their frequent bursts of laughter, it may fairly be conjectured that they are not destitute of humour: their pleasantry was not confined to their own party, or wholly resulting from thence, but was frequently at the expence of the Europeans, so perfectly did they think themselves at ease in their society.

The chiefs, on their approach, usually rowed round the vessels, and adopted the same ceremonious method at their departure; singing a song that was not destitute of harmony. They seemed a cheerful happy people, and appeared to be extremely expert, as well as honest, in their commercial dealings: of the skins of sea-otters, upwards of one hundred and eighty were purchased by different persons on board; besides those of other animals. It seems probable that their stock was nearly exhausted, as many of the chiefs took their leave as if they did not mean to return†.

The first day after their departure from the vessels, they saw several of the natives with some hallibut, which had been recently caught; but though high prices were offered, the Indians would not part with any of them. As they passed a village on a rock, the inhabitants seemed to regard them with friendship and attention, for which they were rewarded with some presents. Nothing entitled to particular notice occurred till the 15th, when the party stopped to breakfast, where, finding some muscles, a few of the people ate of them roasted; about nine they proceeded in very rainy weather down the south-westerly channel, and landed about one to dine. Mr. Johnstone was now informed by Mr. Barrie, that soon after they had quitted the place where they breakfasted, several of those who had eaten muscles, were seized with a numbness about their faces and extremities; and soon after their whole bodies were afflicted in the same extraordinary manner, attended with giddiness and sickness. Mr. Barrie, when in England, was thus affected, and from the same cause; and was on the present occasion much indisposed. Recollecting that violent perspiration had relieved him

* In the afternoon they were honoured with a female party on board: such of them as appeared to be of the most consequence, had adopted a very singular method of decorating their persons. Though some sort of distortion or mutilation is a prevailing fashion with the Indian tribes, the peculiarity of that which they now beheld was the most extraordinary. A horizontal incision is made below the upper part of the under lip, from one corner of the mouth to the other, quite through the flesh: this orifice is gradually stretched till it is sufficiently capacious to admit an ornament of wood which is cemented to the gums of the lower jaws. These wood-ornaments are oval, and resemble a platter or dish made concave on both sides:—they are of various sizes. These horrid appendages are made of fir, and neatly polished, but present a most unnatural appearance. This is so strong an instance of human absurdity, that it hardly could have been credited without ocular demonstration!

† In the evening the Chatham's cutter, and the Discovery's small cutter returned, after a fatiguing and disagreeable excursion; rendered more distressing by the melancholy loss of John Carter, a seaman, who had been poisoned by eating muscles: two or three others of the party narrowly escaped a similar fate.

him on a former occasion, he took an oar, and advised those who were unwell to follow his example: John Carter, John Mc. Alpin, and John Thomas, being the persons diseased, he particularly addressed himself to. He found considerable relief from again adopting the same judicious plan; but as soon as the boat landed, and their exertions at the oar ceased, the seamen were obliged to be carried on shore: one man in the Chatham's boat was also thus affected*.

When this poor fellow resigned his life, and not before, the obstinacy of the others was removed, and they could be prevailed on to drink the hot water: his melancholy fate taught them obedience to their officers' advice, when they all obtained relief, and eventually preserved their lives. This unfortunate circumstance detained the boat about three hours; when, having taken the corpse on board, the party continued their route down the south-west channel, till they stopped in a bay for the night, where they interred the dead body; on which account it was named Carter's Bay; the spot where the muscles were eaten was called Poison Cove; and the branch leading to it obtained the name of Muscle Channel.

The very unfavourable weather, during their absence, did not afford them one opportunity of ascertaining the latitude. Mc. Alpin and Thomas, as well as the patient belonging to the Chatham, were a little recovered; but complained of numbness, dizziness, and a violent pain in their bowels; and were, consequently, immediately taken under the surgeon's care.

SECTION XVI.

Boat Parties dispatched on different Duty--Most remarkable Occurrences in their Survey.

IN the morning of the 18th of June, it being calm, all the boats were employed in towing our navigators round the point of the opening, which was not effected till one in the afternoon; and by eleven at night they had advanced two leagues further to the south-west, where they anchored. A brig or a schooner was seen the next morning, standing towards the sea, but it was not long visible; so many intervening islands existing between our navigators and the occan.

Saturday the 22d Mr. Whidbey, with the large cutter, and Mr. Humphrys in the launch, taking with them supplies for the week, were dispatched to the openings that had been left unexplored behind. And Mr. Johnstone, in the Discovery's small cutter, with Mr. Barrie in the Chatham's launch, were sent to examine the branch leading to the westward.

The poison received by eating muscles was not of so malignant a nature but it might have been subdued, could proper remedies have been applied in time. The means used for the recovery of those taken on board, was first an emetic; at bed-time anodynes procured them rest; and the next day these were followed with cathartics, which gave great relief, producing considerable abatement in the unpleasant symptoms. The assistance of diaphoretic medicines, and due attention to the complaints in their bowels, soon removed the malady. Besides the melancholy event above related, prudence directed our navigators to abstain from muscles in future, though they had found those fish a very pleasant and palatable fresh meal†.

On the 27th of June Mr. Whidbey observed, that the face of the country was, for a considerable

* Mr. Johnstone, not doubting of the cause from which this evil had arisen, and having then no medical assistant present, ordered plenty of warm water to be got ready, that the offending matter might be removed by drinking copiously of it. Carter attracted the particular attention of all present, who endeavoured to afford him relief by rubbing his temples and body, and applying warm cloths to his stomach; but all their efforts proved ineffectual, as he could not be induced to swallow the warm water: within half an hour after he was landed, the poor fellow died. It was not doubted that his death was occasioned by a poison contained in the muscles he had eaten about eight in the morning; at nine he began to find himself unwell, and died at half after one: he pulled his oar till the boat landed, but in attempting to rise to go on shore, he fell down, and could not get up without the assistance of his companions. When first seized his pulse was regular, but gradually grew fainter and weaker till he expired; when his lips became black, and his hands, face, and neck were considerably swelled.

† The remainder of this section, in the original work, almost entirely consists of experiments for discovering and ascertaining

able distance, an entire barren waste, almost destitute of wood and verdure; and presenting to the eye one continued mass of naked rocks, rising progressively into rugged mountains, whose towering summits seemed to overhang their bases, making them appear tremendous: the whole had a perpetual covering of ice and snow; and waterfalls of various dimensions were seen descending in all directions.

Proceeding in their survey, they were visited by eight Indians in two canoes, the first they had beheld during this expedition: their behaviour was friendly and civil; and they presented the party with two fine salmon, each exceeding the weight of seventy pounds, The natives were recompenced with a small piece of iron, and departed well pleased with the commercial transaction*.

By this time Mr. Whidbey's provisions were nearly exhausted, he therefore thought it prudent to decline the further examination of the continental shore, and return towards the vessels.

Mr. Whidbey was again dispatched, in the large cutter, attended by Mr. Barrie in the small one, to prosecute the inland navigation. Taking ten days' provisions with him, he departed about noon; and in the forenoon of Thursday, the 4th of July, he made sail to windward. The wind being adverse the whole day, the party was compelled at ten o'clock to anchor, and make fast to the trees, in fifty fathoms water. Nothing very interesting took place for some time: on the 10th the seine was hauled, and a satisfactory meal of fish procured for all hands; an abundance of berries were also found on the adjacent shores.

By noon of the 14th, the party reached point Ashton, where Mr. Whidbey had before quitted the examination of the continental shore. Proceeding up the northern branch, which had been left unexplored, they were visited by seven canoes, in which were about thirty natives, the greater part of whom were little old men: they brought with them an inferior assortment of sea-otter skins to dispose of, and their wretched appearance was a strong indication of the poverty of their tribe. At the south point of entrance into this arm, and for two miles within, the sea abounded with otters; playing about the boats in the most sportive manner; rearing themselves half way out of the water, and holding up the young ones in their fore-paws, as if they intended to give them a sight of the boats as they passed by them†.

In the afternoon, the tents, observatory, and instruments, were sent on shore, under the directions of Mr. Whidbey; and Mr. Johnstone in the Chatham's armed cutter, with Mr. Barrie in the Discovery's small cutter, taking with them a supply of ten days' provisions, departed to recommence the survey of the continental shore, northward.

The account which Captain Vancouver had

ascertaining the existence of navigable communication between the North Pacific, and North Atlantic oceans; and would not afford much gratification to the general reader. Some of the most remarkable particulars may however be entitled to narration—The seine and lines of one of the parties having been repeatedly tried without success, rendered their situation very afflicting; neither the sea nor the shores afforded them the smallest refreshment: and the weather being extremely unpleasant retarded the progress of their boats in the examination of this inhospitable region.

Mr. Whidbey, in the narrative of one of his expeditions, mentions that on the 24th of July, as he and his party were preparing to proceed, a smoke was discovered issuing from among the stones on the shore. On examination, a kind of stream of hot water was found passing among the stones, which at high water must be six feet at least beneath the surface of the sea. They could not discern its source, nor ascertain the exact degree of heat; but some of the seamen attempting to wash their hands in it, complained of the heat being troublesome and inconvenient. Its taste was saltish, and in that respect, as well as in the colour, it was thought to resemble the waters of Cheltenham.

* On the 29th, where the party had stopped to dine, they were visited by ten canoes, in which were about sixty Indians. The largest of these canoes, with the chief and his family, was decorated with carved work, both at the head and stern; and uncouth figures were painted, to add to their ideas of elegance. Skins of animals, as usual, were readily disposed of for copper, blue cloth, and blankets: these people were perfectly honest and civil, which induced Mr. Whidbey to permit the chief to dine with him; an honour which he seemed much to enjoy, and conducted himself decently. He drank some grog, and was particularly fond of bread and sugar; but he preferred the latter, and even seemed astonished at the taste of it. After dinner, Mr. Whidbey returned down a branch he had passed, accompanied by the chief and his attendants, who frequently entertained the company with songs not destitute of melody. The party, in the evening, stopped for the night in a small cove; and, on an intimation being given them that they were going to rest, the Indians retired to another cove at a little distance.

† Going on shore, they found a small canoe with three of the natives, who were employed in taking salmon, which were abundant up a fine run of fresh water that flowed into the cove. Some of these fish were purchased with trinkets, but they were of a very inferior kind, and destitute of the flavour of European salmon.

received

received of this famous inlet, induced him to undertake the principal management of it himself; for which purpose the Discovery's yawl and launch were equipped with supplies for a fortnight. Lieutenant Swaine was destined to attend him in the latter, and Mr. Puget, with Mr. Menzies, accompanied him in the yawl. From the appearance of the country on the western side of this inlet, no doubt was entertained of its being the continent; and they departed, in full expectation, that in this excursion, they should be able finally to determine the reality of the discoveries attributed to the labours of Admiral de Fonte.

SECTION XVII.

A very extensive Boat Excursion—Party attacked by the Natives, attended with serious Consequences —Indians endeavour afterwards to annoy the Europeans.

MATTERS being arranged, they departed at five in the morning of the 24th of July, in thick rainy weather, though in the afternoon it became fair and pleasant. Their course was first directed along the the eastern shore. They passed an island to the west of them, about two miles long, and half a mile broad; after which they entered a narrow arm, leaving to the west a coast much broken, and divided by water. They stopped to dine about a mile short of the low land which composed the head of the arm. Here they were visited by seven of the natives in a canoe, who cautiously approached them, and plainly intimated that they doubted of their friendly intentions: a few trivial presents, however, dissipated their apprehensions, and they cordially joined the party. They were well provided with arms, consisting of spears, and bows and arrows: and each man wore an iron dagger about his neck or wrist. The chief, by significant signs which were easily understood, desired to partake of their repast. He was served with some bread and dried fish, and afterwards he and his attendants were indulged with a glass of brandy; all of which they seemed to enjoy. These people differed very little from the generality of the surrounding natives. They invited the party to visit their habitations, which their motions indicated to be on the low land at the head of the arm; but this being out of their route, they declined these solicitations, and with a favourable ebb tide, returned towards the entrance of the arm.

At eight in the evening they reached this entrance, where they took up their abode for the night: after which they pursued the western shore of the inlet, towards the ships, where they arrived about noon. No longer entertaining the least doubt of this being the continental shore, the captain resolved to prosecute his researches in that quarter, and caused his stock of provisions to be recruited. After dining on board, he immediately recommenced an examination along the western shore of the inlet, and rested at night in a small cove, about twelve miles to the southward of the ships.

As they advanced, they were joined by two canoes, in which fifteen natives were contained. They approached the Europeans without much ceremony or hesitation; and their countenances exhibited a greater degree of savage ferocity, than had ever before fallen under the notice of Captain Vancouver, among the various tribes he had beheld. In painting themselves, they had contrived so to dispose of the red, white, and black colours, as to render their ugly countenances still more horribly hideous: This frightful appearance did not seem to be a new fashion among them, but had been long adopted by their ferocious dispositions; that their faces might correspond with the stern and savage deportment which they affected. The captain offered them some customary presents, which were disdainfully rejected; a few of them indeed condescended to receive them, but it was with with a thankless indifference*.

* Among the party a woman appeared, being additionally disfigured with the grotesque and unnatural lip-ornament. The captain offered her a looking-glass, and some trinkets, but at the instance of the most savage fellow of the party, she rejected them with contempt. This Indian then arranged about six or seven spears, as if he meditated an attack; at the same time putting on his war garments, and drawing his dagger.

As it was necessary for the captain to land on the point for the purpose of taking angles, the European party waited for the launch to come up; and during this interval, their endeavours were exerted to conciliate the good opinion of their visitors: but all was ineffectual; they refused to accept any more presents. Several of them pronounced the words *Winnee watter*, implying that they wished to trade or barter; producing, at the very moment, some wretched sea-otter skins. But by offering to trade with these savages, they were unable to procure their friendship; for neither cloth, iron, nor any thing they had, was thought sufficient in quantity, or equal in quality to the value of their skins, though they were declared to be the worst, without exception, that the party had ever seen upon the coast. On the launch arriving, the Europeans pulled towards the shore, when the natives seemed better pleased: their behaviour was more civil, but, though their demands in bartering were still exorbitant, they parted on better terms than they had met. They remained on the spot, and the Europeans proceeded up the arm; but their absence was not of any long duration; for they speedily returned, waving their skins, and exposing them to sale; and offered now to exchange them for those identical commodities which they had before rejected with contempt.

It is probable, however, that their resentment had been first excited, by the perfect indifference shewn respecting their commodities which were brought for sale; for, on their now being offered blue cloth for their skins, they began a song, which was not ended till they came very near them; when it appeared that all their arms and war garments were laid aside. After the disposal of such articles as they had for sale, they began to display their propensity for thievery. This drew from the captain the strongest marks of his disapprobation of their conduct, who made signs for their immediate departure, with which they reluctantly complied*.

On Friday the 2d, the European party passed through a labyrinth of small islets and rocks along the continental shore; this taking now a winding course to the south-west and west, discovered the south-eastern side of the channel to be much broken, through which was a passage leading towards the ocean. They passed this in expectation of finding a more northern and westerly communication; in which they were not mistaken, as the channel they were then pursuing was also found to communicate with the sea.

After encountering a succession of rainy and unpleasant weather for several days, during which no interesting circumstance arose; they observed the surrounding country to consist of a huge mass of barren rocky mountains, whose summits were perpetually covered with snow, excepting in one particular part, where they rose in perpendicular cliffs from the water's edge, producing a few scattered stunted trees. Near the ruins of a few temporary huts of the natives, they discovered a box about three feet square, containing the remains of a human skeleton, which appeared, from the confused situation of the bones, to have been thrust with great violence into this very small receptacle.

A small round island was soon after beheld, lying off the north-west point, from whence they saw a remarkable rock, resembling a ship under sail. Its situation and elevation, if accessible, promised a perfect view of the inlet; and its singular pyramidical appearance excited their curiosity. They reached the rock about seven, and found the main inlet to take a northerly direction, extending from two to three miles in breadth. This singular rock, bearing some resemblance to the Light-House rock off Plymouth, the captain named it the New Eddystone, and stopped on the base of it to breakfast. While

* The war garments of these people, were formed of two, three, or more folds of the strongest hides of land animals; in which the body is tolerably well protected, and both arms are left at liberty for action. Further to secure the part which covers the breast, thin laths of wood are sometimes fixed on the inside.

In the morning of the first of August, the natives offered for sale some sea-otters' skins, and a large black bear that seemed to have been killed by a spear in the course of the night: they rejected every article that was proposed to them by way of barter, though they followed the European party for about two miles, requesting they would. *Winnee watter*. Finding, at length, that no articles were tendered them but what they had before declined, they retired in disgust. This party, including a woman decorated with the lip-ornament, consisted of about eighteen persons, who, with respect to ferocity, nearly resembled those they had seen a few days before. The woman, who steered the canoe, was a complete termagant, and seemed to possess unlimited authority: she exacted the most rigid and ready obedience to her commands, which were given in a surly and supercilious manner.

they

they were thus agreeably employed, three small canoes, with about a dozen of the natives, approached them unarmed, and with great good humour accepted some presents; intimating, by signs, that they should be happy to make a suitable return if they would visit their habitations; which favour they pressingly solicited, declaring they had abundance of valuable articles to dispose of. But, for several reasons, their civil entreaties were declined. The circumference of the New Eddystone, at its base, is about fifty yards, standing perpendicularly on a surface of fine sand. It is entirely detached, at the distance of about two miles from the eastern, and one from the western shore of the inlet, and its height was found to be upwards of two hundred and fifty feet. The fissures and chasms in its sides afford nourishment to several small pine trees, and a variety of shrubs *.

After many unimportant incidents in the further course of their examination, the party saw some of the natives in their canoes near the shore: four of these canoes, apparently large and well manned, approached the launch, which was then at some distance astern of them; at the same time signifying their peaceable intentions by their singing. They were also visited by a small canoe, with only two of the natives, who civilly received some trifling presents; and related this circumstance of their kindness to some of their associates. These came off in two canoes, that just reached them as they were putting on shore to take the angles. Their behaviour was orderly, civil, and inoffensive; and seemingly grateful for the presents distributed among them. They offered their commodities to barter, and several exchanges took place; no apprehensions having been entertained by the Europeans, that these people had any evil design, though, like many of the natives they had lately seen, they were well armed. Captain Vancouver therefore landed, leaving Mr. Puget in the yawl to entertain his new visitors.

In a little time they grew clamorous, and turbulent; and on Captain Vancouver's return to the boat, Mr. Puget informed him, that they had manifested a thievish disposition; and that he was clearly of opinion they had some mischievous intention. He instantly ordered the boat from the shore, expecting by that means to get rid of them. It was with much difficulty, however, that hostile measures could be avoided, when the largest of the canoes, under the steerage of a termagant old woman, with a formidable lip ornament, laid them on board across the bow: this vixen snatched up the lead line which was lying there, and lashed her canoe with it to the boat; whilst a young man seated himself in the bow of the yawl, and put on a mask resembling a wolf's face, united with the human countenance. At this moment, the Indian who first visited them, stole a musquet from the boat. The situation of the Europeans was now very alarming, and to augment their embarrassment, the launch was too far distant to afford them any immediate succour. They had no other chance of preservation, than to introduce a kind of parley, to give their friends an opportunity of coming to their assistance.

With these ideas, Captain Vancouver went forward, with a musquet in his hands, to expostulate with the chief; on which about fifty surrounding Indians seized their daggers, brandished their spears, and pointed them against our navigators in all directions. The captain still entertained hopes of effecting an amicable separation. The chief, at his request, instantly quitted the boat, and said, if he would lay down his musquet, his people should instantly abandon their arms. The gun was parted with, and the treaty readily complied with on both sides.

Here the matter would probably have rested in tranquillity, had it not been for the vociferous efforts of their female conductress, who seemed to put forth all the powers of turbulent oratory to stimulate the men to act with hostility against them. Her language had so far operated on a ferocious looking old man, as to encourage a second outrage, and the spears were again brandishing, as if hostilities were immediately resolved on. Observing this, the captain again made signs for peace, and went immediately aft; where he found Mr. Puget attempting to

* The natives attended our adventurers for a short time, but finding that their course was not directed towards their habitations, they retired; after having significantly informed them, by signs, that at night they would find the inlet closed on all sides; and when they had slept at its termination, requested they would visit their habitations on their return.

accom-

accomplish the same desirable object, and pacific terms were on the point of being again adjusted*.

Those who were in the small canoes jumped into the sea, whilst such of them as were in possession of the large ones, raised the opposite sides, to protect them from the fire of the yawl, though they were partly exposed to that of the launch; and thus they scrambled sideways to the shore. The only arms remaining in the yawl, excepting those in the arm chest, were a blunderbuss, a musquet, a fowling piece loaded with shot, and a brace of pocket pistols; the rest of their arms, which consisted of three musquets and a fowling-piece, having been stolen in the affray. The arm-chest, however, afforded a supply for their future defence, and were expeditiously got in readiness for their protection†.

It was now thought expedient to be vigilant and cautious, to have all their arms ready, and to charge such as were unloaded. These suggestions were privately attended to, that no unnecessary alarm might be given to the Indians, who were required by signs to keep at a proper distance; and only one canoe at a time permitted to come near enough to receive the presents that might be offered: these were accepted with great civility; and the general tenor of their conduct manifested a friendly disposition. Apparently in this humour, they paddled hastily towards the yawl; a party of their comrades assembling at the same time about their boat. Though the gentlemen in the launch had observed, that these people had made uncommon exertions to reach the yawl, their efforts were at first attributed to a propensity to diversion; but when their spears began to be in motion, they did not delay a moment to come to afford relief to their friends against the machinations of these savages.

It must be admitted that the Indians, through the want of caution in our British navigators, had in this instance sufficient address to succeed by their friendly professions, in nearly assembling all their force around them; though in an earlier part of the voyage, they would have been more suspicious of their wiles; particularly their vociferous hollowing to each other, their immoderate haste, their throwing their dogs overboard, and other hostile indications which were of too menacing a nature to escape their suspicions: but a series of tranquil intercourse with the several different tribes of Indians, had almost obliterated the apprehensions which had formerly been entertained of them‡.

The navigators now directed their route across an extensive bay, in which several small openings were observed, appearing to lead to the eastward and south-east. Nothing but a journal of occurrences, nautical and astronomical, engages many of the following pages. The remains of

* But this apparent cessation was not very durable: the Captain had hardly turned round when he saw the spears, in the canoe which contained the old woman, all in motion; but on his again advancing, they were as suddenly dropped. While the Captain was thus engaged, the Indians near the stern of the boat, grew extremely troublesome; a general commotion seeming to have taken place: some spears were thrust; one or two of which passed very near him, and the Indians seized all the moveables in the boat that came within their reach: they had also recourse to several other acts of violence. The destruction of our European navigators now seemed inevitable; as the force they had to oppose against the number that surrounded them was, as they were circumstanced, in every respect inadequate. Fortunately, about ten minutes from the captain's return to the boat, the launch had arrived within pistol-shot; and being thoroughly convinced that their forbearance had given the Indians confidence, and stimulated them to acts of temerity, he gave directions to fire: this instantly taking effect from both the boats, was attended with the desired effect, and they were thus relieved from a perilous situation.

† On reaching the shore, the Indians ascended the high rocky cliffs, of which it is composed, from whence they attempted to annoy those in the launch by stones; and from whence also they fired a musquet. The arms they had stolen from the boat were all loaded; and they had fire-arms of their own, but they were not supposed to be charged. The launch being now ordered to join them, an equal distribution was made of the remaining weapons and ammunition in both boats. Being fully prepared to repel any other attacks that might be made, they rested on their oars, about a quarter of a mile from the precipice the Indians had fled to, till Mr. Menzies had paid due attention to the wounded men. Robert Betton, in assisting to remove the arm chest, first received a wound in the breast, but by his seizing the spear he destroyed its force: on a repetition of the blow, he received a deep and dangerous wound on the upper part of his thigh. George Bridgeman was also severely wounded by a spear that passed quite through one of his thighs. The captain, however, was afterwards informed by Mr. Menzies, that neither of the wounds were likely to be attended with any present danger, nor with consequences that might be inconvenient hereafter.

‡ What execution the Europeans' firing had effected, was never ascertained: some of the natives were observed to fall, as if killed or materially wounded; and excessive lamentations were heard when they had retreated to the woods: after which they did not find themselves disposed to renew the attack.

a large

a large village was observed on a high detached rock, much exposed to the inclemency of the weather, in which a sepulchre of a peculiar character was found. It was a vault, formed by the natural cavity of the rocks, meliorated by the rude artists of the country. It was lined with boards, and decorated with fragments of warlike instruments; and also contained a square box, covered with mats, and very curiously corded down. This our adventurers supposed contained the remains of some important personage, and the curiosity of many of them was excited; but as any further examination could answer no beneficial purpose, and might have given concern to the friends of the deceased, should it be their custom to visit the repositories of the dead, Captain Vancouver refused his consent to have the body disturbed. Not from mere superstitious motives, as was by some conjectured; but from a conviction of the impropriety of not restraining our curiosity, when the gratification of it could not possibly tend to any good purpose.

The provisions of the examining party were now so nearly exhausted, that each individual dined this day on half a pint of peas. They were under the necessity of keeping on their oars, or under sail, all night; and at seven in the morning of the 16th, they arrived on board, on which occasion they were not a little rejoiced, as they had been almost confined to the boats for twenty-three days; in which time they had traversed more than seven hundred geographical miles, without having materially advanced their primary object. Their return also afforded relief to the feelings of those on board, who had experienced great anxiety for their welfare.

By proper assistance and care, the two wounded men, who were each valuable in their respective stations, were in a fair way of recovery; and as they had no object to detain them longer in this situation, the Captain ordered every preparation to be made to proceed down the inlet in the morning.

SECTION XVIII.

Proceed to the North-West—Visited by the Natives—A second Visit from the same Party—Two Boat Excursions—Visit from a very formidable Number of Indians.

OUR navigators weighed on Saturday the 17th of August, but having a strong gale from the southward, they made but little progress windward. On heaving up the best bower anchor, they found the cable almost divided, and though it had been very little used, it was entirely worn out. The Captain, however, thought himself fortunate in saving the anchor, which, had the cable broke, must have fallen an unfathomable depth. At eight in the evening they anchored for the night, near some rocks on the western shore, in 85 fathoms water, and steadied with a hawser to the trees on the shore. At five on the 18th, they again made sail with the tide in their favour, but with a strong unfavourable gale from the southward.

The Indians, inhabiting the neighbourhood, approached them with deference and fear, and their countenances seemed to indicate that they were disposed to be friendly, but none of them would accompany them to the opposite shore; where, about three in the afternoon, they anchored in 45 fathoms water, steadied, as before, by a hawser to the trees.

The weather being calm on the 21st, it gave the natives of the western shore an opportunity of paying them a visit. On their approach, one of them who was a kind of inferior chief, desired to be admitted on board; a request that was readily granted. He informed our navigators that he was acquainted with most of the principal traders on the coast, and was an associate to a powerful chief named *O-non-nis-toy*, the *U-en-Smoket*, or *U-en-Stikin*, whose residence was up the north-west branch. He requested Captain Vancouver to fire a gun; on the report of which this great chief would instantly visit them, with salmon and skins in abundance, to barter for their commodities. A gun was consequently fired; when he desired to know if it was his intention to go up the north-west passage. Receiving an answer in the af-

affirmative, he seemed highly pleased; but when he declared he should first visit the north-east branch, he seemed equally disappointed and displeased. He endeavoured to convince our navigators that, in those regions, they would find neither skins, chiefs, nor any thing worthy of their research; and that the people who resided in them were addicted to thievery and every other vice.

On surveying the countenances of their new visitors, our navigators could not discover a face that they had seen before, they were therefore the rather inclined to give some credit to these representations; but adverting to some late instances of this treacherous tribe, they paid very little attention to his report. At two a breeze sprang up from the south-west, with which their course was to pass to the north-east of Cape Caamaro; which, being observed by our visitors, they declined attending us any further: and as the inferior chief had given Captain Vancouver the skin of a sea-otter on his coming on board, he made him an ample return; he also gave him a piece of blue cloth, which he desired him to present, in his name, to his chief *Ononnistoy;* a task which he undertook to perform with apparent satisfaction.

The Chatham being sent a-head in search of an eligible port, made the signal in the evening for having discovered one on the western shore, in which she shortly anchored; steadied, as before, with a hawser to the trees. On the 22d, the port was found to be formed by a small convenient bay; which being situated and circumstanced much to the wishes of our navigators, they ran in and moored in sixteen fathoms water, about a cable's length from the western shore. Plenty of excellent water might also be commodiously obtained.

The boats were immediately prepared for two long excursions; Mr. Whidbey in the Discovery's large cutter, with Lieutenant Baker in the launch, having supplies for a fortnight, were to proceed on the survey of those branches which had been before declined; and they were to continue their researches along the continental shore.

To Mr. Johnstone, with the two cutters, as usual, the other expedition was entrusted, taking with him provisions for ten days. He was directed to return to Cape Caamano, and to examine the starboard shore of the north-west branch, till it communicated with the ocean.

On the 22d. the navigators were again visited by the same party of Indians who attended them on the 21st. The man, who had undertaken to deliver his present to the chief, informed Captain Vancouver, that in a day or two *Ononnistoy* would wait upon him. He said the chief was at some distance, and required some time to prepare for his journey; but, in the mean time, he took the liberty to solicit a further present for him, as a testimony of his friendly intentions: he even intimated that molasses and bread would be very acceptable to *Ononnistoy*. Such articles, with several others, were accordingly entrusted to this man's care, and he departed the next morning. Rainy weather, attended with strong winds and squalls, continued till the 25th, when the sky being serene and clear, the captain was enabled to procure some good observations.

About midnight the Europeans were disturbed by the singing of a party of the natives, as they were entering the harbour. Judging, from the uproar they made, they at first supposed them to be a very numerous tribe, but, on a nearer approach, they were discovered to be only the freight of one canoe, in which seventeen persons were contained. After paddling round the vessels, with their usual formalities, they landed at an inconsiderable distance from them, and continued singing till day-light. They had bestowed much time in decorating their persons: their faces were painted according to the taste or fancy of the respective possessor, and their hair powdered with the white down of young sea-fowls. Approaching the Discovery again, with the same ceremony, they come alongside with the utmost confidence.

Kanant, the chief of the party, requested to be admitted on board; which being granted, he presented the captain with an otter-skin; who, on making him a proper acknowledgment, desired that his people and theirs might enter into traffic with each other. They accordingly had commercial dealings together till the 28th of August, when they separated on friendly terms, seeming much pleased with the honesty and propriety of all parties, and making honourable mention of *Ononnistoy,* their chief, and the head of a very numerous tribe.

In the afternoon Mr. Whidbey returned, after having traced the boundaries of the continental shore; when the several arms that Captain Vancouver had left unexamined were discovered to be

be of little extent. He saw several parties of Indians in the course of this survey, but observed nothing materially different from what he had seen before, excepting some of their dancing and singing, which we thought more savage and uncouth than any he had ever been entertained with. He observes, indeed, that a small party of the natives, consisting of seven men only, in going up one of the arms, seemed to be preparing to oppose the landing of some of the gentlemen of the European party*.

These actions being considered by Mr. Whidbey as pacific overtures, he threw some spoons and other trivial articles to the orator, and gave him some indications that he and his party wanted to eat. This intimation had the desired effect; the aged orator ordered those who were armed to retire, and some salmon was soon produced. He directed the boats to come to the rocks, and instantly delivered them the fish; receiving in return, what he considered to be amply satisfactory; still blowing the down into the air, as he plucked it from the ærial animal.

It would have been imprudent, for the sake of a minute enquiry into these mysterious ceremonies, to have attempted a further acquaintance with these people; they were therefore left in quiet possession of their dreary rocks, every inch of which they would probably have disputed; as there was reason to apprehend that this party had either been concerned in the attack upon the yawl, or had been made acquainted with the particulars of that transaction†.

In the afternoon, when these new friends were visiting the Chatham, they were surprized by the arrival of a canoe laden with men in the act of singing, and keeping time by the regularity of their paddling. Directing their course towards the Discovery, they seemed to have given offence to the other party, who immediately assumed their war-garments, holding their spears in a menacing position. Thus equipped, they advanced slowly to meet them, fulminating the most violent speeches, which were answered in the same boisterous tone of voice, by some persons standing in the large canoe. On a nearer approach they rested on their paddles, and entered into a kind of parley; when our European navigators observed, that all those who stood up in the large canoe, were armed with polished pistols and blunderbusses. Their conversation terminating in a pacific way, the opposing party returned with the new comers, who, on passing by the Chatham, laid down their arms: but when they came alongside the Discovery, one of the chiefs, who had been on board, hastily drew from within the breast of his war-garment, a large iron dagger, and seemed much irritated at some expressions that had dropped from those in the large canoe, who again very coolly took up their pistols and blunderbusses. An explanation, however, took place, when their arms were again returned to their proper places: their pistols and ammunition were carefully wrapped up, and both parties appeared perfectly reconciled.

The chief of the large canoe, at his particular request, was admitted into the ship, accompanied by a man of apparent consequence, who though not actually a chief, was appealed to by the chief upon all matters of importance; and his

* Their canoes were lodged close to them, near a wretched hut. Having put on their war garments, they advanced to meet the boat; one of them being armed with a musquet, and another with a pistol, both of which were cocked; the other five were provided with plenty of bows and arrows, in readiness for immediate service.

There was also an elderly person at a little distance, without either a weapon, or a war garment, making long and elaborate speeches, having in one hand the skin of a bird, and with the other he was plucking the feathers and down; which he blew into the air at the conclusion of the several subdivisions of his harangue.

† In the course of this examination, Mr. Whidbey received a visit from another party of the Indians, on the 30th of August. They were conducted by two chiefs, and consisted of twenty-five persons. They were extremely formal, and affected importance; not seeming to take hardly any notice of several articles that were presented to them, and being wholly engaged in their own conversation. The chiefs remained on board a considerable time, and at length became very sociable. One of them had a pleasing cheerful countenance, and was the finest figure of an Indian that they had yet seen upon that coast; a number of scars about him sufficiently pointed him out as a great warrior. Bread and molasses were the greatest treat that could be given to these people; the chiefs ate heartily of that food, and distributed some among their friends in the surrounding canoes. As an adequate return for this delicious repast, they earnestly recommended some of their whale oil, which stunk most intolerably: it was served into the cabin in a bladder, out of which a spoonful was deliberately poured by the chief; who expatiated on its superior qualities, pronouncing it to be equal, as a delicacy, to European treacle; Mr. Whidbey, indeed, found it attended with much difficulty to get excused from partaking of their nauseous meal, which they seemed to enjoy in the most superlative degree: a glass of rum concluded their angelic feast.

countenance

countenance pronounced him a man of penetration. This senator informed our Europeans that the chief who now visited us, was the great *Ononnistoy;* and his intelligence was confirmed by *Kanant.*

Ononnistoy accepted, with much cheerfulness, the presents which Captain Vancouver thought proper to offer him on this occasion. The chiefs of the other tribe came on board at the same time, and received such articles as gave them perfect satisfaction. Towards the evening this great chief, and two or three others of his suit, lamenting that they had not any habitation on shore, requested to be permitted to sleep on board; which was granted as soon as proposed, and fire-works were exhibited for their amusement. Bread and molasses, with rum and wine, were set before *Ononnistoy* for his refreshment; to which were added some of their own dried fish; on which the party fed heartily, and retired to rest with great composure*.

There were five chiefs belonging to the associated parties, who, having performed their several parts, were admitted on board. *Ononnistoy,* wishing to promote commeree, recommended that necessary employment; and wished it might be generally practised. Trading immediately began among the parties; when sea-otter skins, salmon, and several other articles were purchased. Fire-arms, and ammunition were at first earnestly requested in exchange; but finding they were positively withheld, they soon appeared reconciled to the prohibition, and trafficked briskly in bartering for blue cloth, and tin kettles, which they preferred next to fire-arms, in exchange for their sea-otter skins; but they were willing to part with their fish, and less valuable articles, for looking-glasses, pewter spoons, beads, and other trinkets. The Indian dealers, now assembled, amounted to about sixty persons, who all conducted themselves with great propriety.

About noon on the 4th of September, Mr Johnstone and his party returned from their expedition. He had not discovered a passage to the ocean by the way he had pursued, but he brought back sufficient evidence to prove that the channel he had navigated would ultimately be found to communicate with it†.

Being ignorant of the cause of their assembling and their numbers were so considerable, Mr. Johnstone declined any further acquaintance with them; as their intentions might probably be hostile; no such party having yet visited the ship at any one time, or ever attended in such numbers together. It may rationally be conjectured, that informed of the absence of the boats, the whole of the neighbouring natives might be collected on this occasion, to intercept the party on their return. A light breeze springing up, favourable to the boats, they kept under sail the whole night, and arrived on board about noon.

SECTION XIX.

Continue to the North-west—Proceed to Nootka—Quit Nootka—The Chatham sent to Port Bodaga—Port Francisco—Chatham arrives there—Proceed to Monterrey—Anchor at Sta Barbara—Visit Bueno Ventura—Arrive at St. Diego.

CALM weather not permitting our navigators to move till the 5th of September, they then directed their course, with the assistance of the boats, towards Caamano. After encountering adverse

* In the morning of the 1st of September, *Ononnistoy* and his friends joined the party on shore, where they were fully employed in decorating their persons till breakfast was ready; when *Ononnistoy,* attended by all the other chiefs, came off in his large canoe, singing as usual while they paddled round the vessels. Then, coming alongside the Discovery, they exhibited a kind of entertainment which our adventurers had never seen before. It consisted of singing, and a medley of rude, ridiculous, and extravagant gestures; the chiefs being the principal performers, each in succession becoming the leader of the song; at the several pauses of which, Captain Vancouver was presented, by the exhibiting chief, with a sea-otter skin.

† The narrative of this examination consists almost wholly of the repetition of inlets, arms, shores, capes, &c. to most persons uninteresting; excepting the following occurrence, on his return from the survey to the ships—In the course of the day, the party had passed three deserted villages, two of which occupied a considerable space, but discovered no signs of the humble mansions in them having been

adverse weather, till the 7th, it became more favourable; when they were visited by a party of Indians in six or seven canoes, who continued on board with them till it was time for them to retire to rest. An intimation being given them to that purpose, they repaired immediately to the shore, where they remained till the following morning, when they repeated their visit with many songs, having greatly augmented the number of their party: this addition, however, consisted principally of women, who without a single male assistant, conducted two or three canoes, and managed their paddles with great dexterity; they were also inclined to entertain our navigators with their vocal abilities*.

A light breeze springing up, our adventurers got under sail, and the Indians took their leave. Soon after the weather began to wear a very threatening appearance; but they were so fortunate as to find, before night, an excellent port; which, after the first lieutenant of the Discovery, received the name of Point Baker. This the Chatham entered, making the necessary signals to be observed; but just as they reached its entrance, the wind fell calm, and the tide sat them out. A light breeze springing up, blowing directly into the port, conducted them safe to a secure situation, where they anchored about seven in the evening. The threatened storm continued with increasing violence during the whole night; but they very providentially reached an anchorage, that completely sheltered them from its fury. Grateful for such an asylum, Captain Vancouver named it Port Protection. Had they not happily gained this place of safety, they must have past a most perilous night. Thankful, in the highest degree, for so providential a retreat, from the stormy season which now appeared to have commenced, he resolved to continue there while the boats should examine the broken region before them†.

Captain Vancouver waited on Senr. Saavadra, the commandant of the port; who informed him that he had not received any intelligence, either from Europe or New Spain, since his departure from thence in the spring; and that neither the Dædalus, nor any other ship with stores, addressed to him, had been there. The only vessel he found at Nootka, was the Saint Carlos, laid up for the winter; but it was understood from Senr. Saavadra, that in the course of the summer the port had been visited by La Flavia, a French ship, having on board a very valuable cargo of European commodities, which was taken to Kamschatka, to be bartered with the Russians for furs; with which a cargo of tea was to have been purchased in China; but that their expedition had not answered their expecta-

been lately inhabited. The next morning the party were in motion, and near Cape Caamano, they were surprized with the sudden appearance of twenty canoes, from behind a low projecting point of land that seemed to contain about two hundred and fifty Indians: a very formidable number, as experience had taught our Europeans, that the inhabitants of these regions never traversed the country without being well armed.

Mr. Johnstone, and his party, put themselves immediately on the defensive, and warned the Indians to keep off; but, regardless of his admonition, they still advanced directly towards the boats: he therefore ordered a musquet to be fired over them; and afterwards a swivel, loaded with grape-shot, was discharged, cautiously regulated to avoid doing any harm, but near enough to demonstrate its effect. They now stopped for a moment, though they again pushed forward. A musquet was then fired over the main body of the canoes; when they stopped till the boats rowed past them, and instantly paddled over to the opposite shore.

* Most of those who had attained womanhood wore very large lip ornaments; and among the other female attendants, they saw the progress of that deformity in all its stages, which in general was accompanied with the most excruciating tortures; while the process was as cruel as it was durable. These women were more sprightly and cheerful than any our Europeans had seen with this hideous mark of distinction. Could they indeed be prevailed on to dispense with this barbarous custom, many of them have such features as would justly entitle them to the appellation of comely.

Want of wind detaining our Europeans, they purchased from these people a large supply of excellent salmon, and some sea-otter skins; for which they received blue cloth, tin-kettles, spoons, and many other articles. In all these commercial transactions, the women took a very active part, and proved themselves perfectly adequate to the task. So far from considering the women inferior to the men, in these, or in any other respects, it is evident that they are looked upon by the natives as the superior sex, for they generally kept the men in awe, and under their subjection. No chief, or person of importance, was discovered to be among this party, unless such authority was vested in some of the females. They all conducted themselves with great integrity, and seemed perfectly to rely on the same honourable treatment from our navigators.

† Scientific remarks, and descriptions of entrances, inlets, arms, bays, coves, &c. then occupy a considerable space of the ingenious narrative; which could only prove interesting to those who are adepts in the superior branches of nautical mathematics. Let it be observed, however, that from hence our navigators directed their course towards Nootka, the port of which they reached on the 5th of October, 1793.

tions. Senr. Saavadra further stated, that the crew had been mutinous at Nootka, and could with difficulty be prevailed on to be obedient to their commander's orders: at length, however, a reconciliation was effected.

In the morning of the 8th, having requested Senr. Saavadra to take charge of a letter to the commander of the Dædalus, or of any other vessel that might arrive at Nootka, with dispatches for Captain Vancouver, he sailed from that port with a light northerly wind, paying and receiving from the fort the usual compliments.

On leaving the port of Nootka, the progress of our navigators was much impeded for want of wind; but, proceeding along the coast, they observed on the eminences and hills, near the shores, several large fires, burning throughout the night; a circumstance which had never before attracted their observation. Wishing to obtain information respecting the port of Bodega, of which the storms of the preceding season had disappointed him, Captain Vancouver directed Mr. Puget to make the best of his way thither, whilst he proceeded to St. Francisco: expecting to meet Senr. Quadra, either there, or at Monterrey, with sufficient credentials for adjusting the business depending about Nootka. Mr. Puget having received his directions, and having appointed St. Francisco as a rendezvous for either meeting him, or hearing from him, he immediately departed for the port of Bodega.

In the evening Cape Mendocino was seen bearing south-east, at the distance of seven or eight leagues: in the afternoon they passed Barro de Areno; the Chatham, though at some distance from the Discovery, being still in sight, and kept close to the land. Fogs and thick weather impeded their course till the 19th, when a pleasant breeze brought them to an anchor in Port St. Francisco, not far from their former birth off the Presidio*.

In justice to their once worthy friend, Senr. Sal, the captain remarks that it was evidently with the utmost repugnance, that he was compelled to deliver these injunctions, in compliance with the orders of his senior. In reply to which he told Senr. Sal that he had put into Port Francisco to procure wood and water, and such refreshments as the country might afford, and to wait the arrival of the Chatham; this port having been appointed as their next rendezvous, previous to their parting company: that when he should have obtained his supplies, which he supposed would not occupy more than two or three days, they should instantly depart; and that the restrictions imposed in the other letter, respecting their communication with the shore, should be punctually observed. This port, however, was the rendezvous of the Chatham, and as the captain had not been deprived of the privilege of procuring some fresh beef, he continued there till she arrived, which happened to be on Monday the 21st.

When our navigators were here before, they procured water in a low place behind the beach, which was then flooded by the rain: that temporary fountain was now quite dry, and they were induced to resort to a small stream of most excellent water; but as it was necessary to pass a loose morass to arrive at it, the accomplishment of this object was so tedious as to detain them till the evening of the 23d, when they prepared for their departure. On the 24th, having the ebb tide, and a fresh breeze, they turned out of the port. Though the wind in the offing was light and baffling, they directed their course as well as

* Being hailed from the shore, a boat was dispatched thither, which immediately returned with Senr. Sal, the once civil and attentive friend of our navigators, who not only made offers of hospitality and services, but gratified them with a communication of the interesting intelligence of the state of Europe up to a very recent period. After supper Senr. Sal repaired to the shore, and the next morning the captain received two letters from him: one requiring, in an official form, an account in writing of his arrival in port St. Francisco; of the supplies he should want; and the time he intended to continue in that port; that all those particulars might be immediately communicated to the governor of the province. The second letter stated, that under the superior orders, by which alone his conduct could be governed, he was obliged to inform him, that no individual could be permitted to come on shore, excepting for wood and water, but himself, and one officer, or midshipman, who would be received, and attended at the Presidio, as on their former visit.

These restrictions were so ungracious and degrading that Captain Vancouver could not consider them in any other light than as a dismission from St Francisco; and was under the greatest perplexity to account for a reception so totally different from what he had formerly experienced, and so contrary to what he had, on many occasions, been taught to expect. It was indeed intimated to him, that a captain in the Spanish infantry, named Arrillaga, had lately arrived at Monterrey: and, being the senior officer, had taken upon him the jurisdiction of the province, and that his sentiments were not the most favourable towards foreign visitors.

they

they could towards Monterrey; where they expected to find the deserters of the Chatham; and where the captain entertained hopes of meeting a favourable reception, by explaining the peculiar nature of his situation to Senior Arrillaga, notwithstanding his former restrictive orders.

It appeared by Mr. Puget's journal that he did not reach the entrance into Port Bodega, till the 20th, when he stood in between its north point, and the flat rock lying off it. On landing they were joined by some Indians, who had previously made a large fire on the north corner of the bay. These people, including all ages, and both sexes, did not exceed thirty, and appeared to be perfectly inoffensive: some of them had bows and arrows, which they readily disposed of to the European party for beads and trinkets; their language was a mixture of Spanish and their own provincial dialect. The men were in general naked, but the women wore skins of animals about their shoulders and waists, and were very much tatooed, or punctured: the hair of both sexes was black, and formed into a club behind.

The soil is sandy, containing bushes of different sorts of verdure: great numbers of the feathered tribe made their appearance, such as white and brown pelicans, gulls, plovers, and a variety of aquatic fowls. On the shores were observed eagles, hawks, crows, ravens, and the red-breasted lark: not a quadruped was seen, but they saw the track and dung of what they supposed to be black cattle. The wind coming to the south-west, with a very threatening appearance from that quarter, deterred him from pursuing his examination*.

The wind continued variable, and sometimes accompanied with foggy weather; in which though many guns were fired on the 28th to denote the situation of the navigators, the Chatham parted company, but the Dædalus kept her station. This unpleasant weather continued till they reached Monterrey on the 1st of November, where they anchored with the Dædalus about eleven in the forenoon. Here they found their consort, which had fortunately reached this place on the 30th of the preceding month. Whilst the people were engaged in securing the ship, Captain Vancouver sent an officer to acquaint the governor of his arrival, and of the object of his visit; and to offer, on his part, to salute the garrison, on a stipulation that an equal compliment should be returned†.

In the afternoon a signal was made from the shore for one of the boats, which attended and brought off a Spanish officer, who delivered two letters from Senr. Arrillaga to Captain Vancouver: one of them purporting, that he had no orders for the reception of foreign vessels into the ports under his jurisdiction, unless the rights of hospitality demanded his assistance; and requesting he would mention the objects which had brought him there, that he might regulate his proceedings accordingly: the other contained expressions of a desire to preserve the subsisting harmony; but at the same time stated that he could not depart from the *spirit* of the orders by which his conduct was to be governed, and therefore could not permit any persons to come on shore, excepting the commanders of foreign vessels, with one or two officers to each; or the individuals employed in procuring wood and water; which service must be expeditiously performed; and that his other wants would be supplied with the greatest dispatch, on his giving previous notice for that purpose.

* In proceeding towards Monterrey, our navigators descried a vessel, and in standing towards her, she proved to be the Dædalus. About noon on the 25th, Lieutenant Hanson came on board, and informed Captain Vancouver that he had pursued the route he had directed towards New South Wales; and that he had taken from New Zealand two of the natives to instruct the inhabitants of Port Jackson in the management of the flax plant. From Mr. Hanson, it appeared that Major Groce was very desirous that Captain Vancouver should again attempt to introduce the cattle of this country into New South Wales: though, of the number he had before sent thither in the Dædalus, only one cow, three ewes, and one ram, had survived the voyage; the failure of the rest being generally attributed to their being too aged. With regard to the swine, his endeavours had been more successful, as he had taken from Otaheite to Port Jackson, seventy of those animals.

† This being assented to, the captain waited on Senr. Arrillaga, the commandant, and was received with the usual ceremonies; but, on his preparing to state his reasons for having entered the ports under his government, the commandant stopped him from proceeding further, and begged the subject might be referred to a written correspondence, that matters might be more accurately explained. Captain Vancouver then started some enquiries respecting the deserters from the Chatham, and was informed by Senr. Arrillaga, that in the month of January, they had made their appearance, and were taken into custody: they were ordered to be sent prisoners to St. Blas, and to be removed from thence to Nootka.

The

The tenor of these letters differed so materially from what his conversation gave the captain reason to expect, when he visited him at the Presidio, that he thought it necessary to send him, the next day, a minute explanation of the objects of the voyage, and of the motives which had induced him to enter the ports under his jurisdiction. He particularly stated that his Britannic Majesty had intrusted him with a voyage of discovery, for the purpose of exploring various countries in the Pacific Ocean; of which the north-west coast of America was a principal object. That, before his departure from England, he had been taught to believe, that he should be hospitably received on this coast by the subjects of the Spanish crown: and that he was instructed to make a free communication of all discoveries made in the course of his researches to any Spanish officer he might happen to meet, engaged in similar pursuits with himself; and that he now proposed to transmit to Senior Quadra a copy of the charts and surveys that had been made since their departure from this port the preceding year. That the voyage was engaged in for the general benefit of mankind, and that the court of Spain would be more early informed of, and as much benefited by his labours as the kingdom of Great Britain. That, on his former visit here, he had been treated with great friendship and hospitality; and had received from the viceroy of Mexico, the strongest assurances that these attentions had been shewn in compliance with the desire of his Catholic Majesty. That our survey would require another year to complete it, and that he had made choice of this port, or St. Diego, for refitting the vessels, and making such astronomical observations as were become necessary. He added, that he hoped the officers and people might be indulged with the same recreation on foot and on horseback, which they had enjoyed on their former visit, under such limitations and restrictions as might be thought reasonable and proper.

On the 4th he received a reply to his letter from Senior Arrillaga, which he acknowledged to be ingenuous, and thanked him for the perusal of the Viceroy's letter, which he had inclosed. In vindication of himself, he said, there was no royal order for the reception of the vessels, like that produced by M. de la Perouse. That he did not suppose his excellency expected that they should repair a second time to those ports; and that even Senior Quadra had intimated that the attentions they had received on the former occasion, were for that time only. But, notwithstanding these objections, and being desirous of promoting a public undertaking, he requested the captain would inform him of the precise number of days in which the store-ship could be unloaded. He offered to give him the key of the warehouse at the landing place, for the reception of her cargo, near which he might erect the observatory; and permitted the officers and gentlemen to recreate themselves within sight of the Spanish officer, who should be stationed to protect the cargo and observatory; the latter of which was only to be erected in the day time, as he could not suffer any of their people to be on shore between sun-set and sun-rise. And lastly, he had no objection to their supplying themselves with wood and water, provided the persons employed on that service should retire on board at night, and that he would engage to be expeditious in these and all his other transactions*.

On due consideration of these circumstances, the captain declined accepting the assistance of Senior Arillaga; and resolved, after having investigated these shores, to retire to the Sandwich Islands; where he supposed the inhabitants of Owhyhee, or its neighbouring isles, would cheerfully afford him that accommodation which had been so ungenerously denied him at St. Francisco and Monterrey. In the forenoon of the 5th they unmoored, and about ten at night weighed and sailed out of the bay; on the 6th they hauled in close to mount Pinos, and there recommenced their survey of this coast south-eastward from Monterrey.

As they proceeded, the coast near the land was observed to be tolerably well wooded, even close down to the shore: some of the trees were very large, with spreading branches; and, being generally distributed in detached clumps, pro-

* The situation proposed for the reception of their provisions and stores, was not only inconvenient, but offensive and unwholesome, in the midst of the slaughtering place for all the cattle; from whence the offal had never been cleared away, but left from time to time in a continual state of putrefaction. In the centre of this nuisance they were obligingly permitted to erect the observatory, and to attend to their astronomical pursuits, but *in the day-time only;* and in a certain limited space, within sight of the Presidio, they might amuse themselves on shore.

duced a very pleasing effect. The inhabitants, like the country, seemed to benefit by its superior productions, as they soon discovered such a canoe approaching them as they little expected to have met with: it was formed of wood, after the Nootka fashion, and very adroitly navigated by four of the natives of the country; their paddles, which were about ten feet long, had a blade at each end, which they managed with great dexterity. Their exertions to reach our navigators were great, but as they were favoured with a fresh gale, the natives were unable to come up with them. The captain regretted that he could not afford time for a better acquaintance with these people, who, by the ingenuity displayed in their canoe, seemed to be very different from those insensible beings they had met with, in the neighbourhood of Saint Francisco and Monterrey *.

A light breeze springing up, they directed their course along shore to the eastward. About two in the afternoon they passed a small bay, which had a bed of sea-weed across its entrance: within this bay a large Indian village was pleasantly situated, from whence they were visited by some of the inhabitants; among them was a very intelligent fellow, who informed them, in the Spanish language, that there was a mission and a Presidio a little further to the eastward. About five in the evening this establishment was perceived in a small bay, which appeared to be in a state of civilization far superior to any other of the Spanish settlements. The buildings were regular, and well constructed, the walls clean and white, and the roofs of the houses covered with red tiles. The Presidio just shewed itself above a grove of small trees, forming, with the rest of the buildings, a very picturesque effect.

Proposing to continue somewhere for the night, and as this bay seemed likely to answer that purpose, as well as to afford refreshments, they hauled in and anchored in six fathoms water. Thus situated, before the Spanish establishment, Captain Vancouver sent Lieutenant Swaine to the commanding officer of the Presidio to inform him of their arrival; and, as he intended to depart in the morning, to request that the Indians might be permitted to bring, in the course of the night, such articles of food as they were willing to dispose of; which was understood to consist of hogs, fowls, dried fish, and vegetables.

Mr. Swaine returned, after meeting with a polite reception from the commandant Senior Don Felipe Goycochea, who very hospitably informed him, that every refreshment the country could afford was entirely at their command; and begged they would remain a few days to partake of those advantages, that he might enjoy the pleasure of administering to their wants. On learning from Mr. Swaine which way they were bound, he observed that wood and water would be found extremely scarce, farther to the southward; and recommended, if their stock should require replenishing, to embrace the moment which the present opportunity afforded for so doing.

The intelligence communicated to the captain by Mr. Swaine, and the liberal conduct he expected from the commandant, inclined him to think of accepting the advantages he had so obligingly offered. The next morning, accompanied by Lieutenants Puget and Hanson, he paid his respects on shore to Senior Don Felipe, the commandant of the establishment of Sta Barbara. He received them with politeness, and earnestly renewed the offers he had made to Mr. Swaine the preceding evening. He said he should be happy to render them any service that was not incompatible with the orders under which he acted; which orders only required that those who were employed for the service of

* Point Conception is rendered remarkable by its stretching out into the ocean, from an extensive tract of low land, falling perpendicularly into the sea, which broke against it with great violence. Immediately to the eastward of this point, they passed a small Indian village, the first they had observed along the shores of the southern parts of New Albion. The inhabitants made a fire as soon as they came within their view, but no one attempted to pay them a visit. The navigators endeavoured to approach the shores of the main land, in order to stop for the night. In the evening it was nearly calm; and having then soundings at the depth of thirty-seven fathoms, they anchored in company with the Chatham and Dædalus.

The want of wind detaining them in this situation, furnished the neighbouring natives with an opportunity of paying them a visit: their canoes were made of wood, and decorated with shells: they brought with them fish and ornaments, which they cheerfully disposed of for scissars, spoons, and beads. They displayed great vivacity and sensibility, and conducted themselves with decency and decorum; and seemed a perfect contrast to the inanimate stupidity of those indians they had seen under the Spanish jurisdiction at St. Francisco and Monterrey.

the vessels on shore, or engaged in their several recreations in the neighbourhood, were required to be on board every night. The captain assured him that his stipulation should be punctually attended to, as well as every other regulation which his prudence might suggest *.

The pleasing society of their good friends at the mission and Presidio was at this time augmented by the arrival of Friar Vincente Sta Maria, one of the fathers of the mission of Buena Ventura, situated about seven leagues to the south-eastward. The motives that induced this respectable priest to favour them with his company, strongly manifested his beneficence. Having crossed the ocean more than once himself, he knew how valuable the fresh productions of the shores were to persons in their situation; and had therefore brought with him, for their service, twenty sheep, and had laden twenty mules with various fruits and vegetables from the garden of the mission. This benevolent friend, accompanied by the commandant, and Father Miguel, honoured Captain Vancouver with their company to dine on board; where in the course of conversation he was informed, that the mission of Buena Ventura was situated in a small bay; and as Friar Vincente appeared pleased with his visit on board, the captain requested he would favour him with his company in the Discovery to his residence. This offer he cheerfully accepted, and the captain only regretted that he must speedily lose the society of a gentleman, whose observations through life, and general knowledge of mankind, rendered him a most entertaining and instructive companion. The next morning our adventurers were attended at breakfast by their friends from the shore; and were detained at anchor till almost noon, when they took leave of their Sta Barbara friends, and, accompanied by Father Vincente, they directed their course towards Buena Ventura †.

The party found their situation on the succeeding morning to be within about two miles of the shore; the landing place near the mission of Buena Ventura being three miles distant. The coast opposite, and to the northward of them, consisted chiefly of high steep cliffs, indented with some small sandy coves. The general face of the country was mountainous, barren, rugged, and dreary; but towards the mission, a margin of low land extended from the base of the mountains: a few trees in the neighbourhood of the establishment, tended to give this part of the country a less unpleasing appearance. Having taken an early breakfast, Captain Vancouver attended Father Vincente to the shore, where a large assortment of refreshments was ready for embarkation. The violence of the surf, at this time, prevented their landing; and it required great circumspection in the Indians to venture off to them. They were therefore determined to wait; and in the mean time the canoes brought off sheep, fowls, and vegetables in such abundance, that four boats were occupied in conveying them to the ships.

In this situation they waited at a grapnel till the afternoon; when it appearing that the surf was not sufficiently abated to admit of their landing in perfect safety; and the learned divine not having the courage to venture on shore in any of the canoes, they returned on board. But when they had proceeded about half way to the ship, Father Vincente recollected that he had entrusted his bible and prayer book to the care of a servant, with the strongest injunctions to deposit them securely on shore: this service had been inviolably performed; for on their return, these spiritual comforts had been forgotten to be recalled. The omission added greatly to the dejection of spirits which the holy father now experienced: an untoward accident, at the same instant, presented a situation of great alarm, but it was soon discovered to proceed from the

* They were introduced to Friar Miguel, one of the reverend fathers of the mission of Sta Barbara, who expressed the greatest anxiety for their welfare. The commandant had given directions that our navigators should be furnished with fresh meat, in such quantities as they might think proper to demand: vegetables and fowls were principally to be procured from private individuals; whilst the reverend fathers of the mission, and the commandant, shared with them the productions of the gardens, which, like those of the more orthern establi shments, were but of small extent.

Suspecting that the unpleasant restrictions which had been imposed on our navigators, had been occasioned by their abusing the liberty that had been granted them, Captain Vancouver issued positive injunctions, that no individual under his command should extend his excursions beyond the view from the Presidio.

† To sail into the bay or roadstead of Sta Barbara is attended with no difficulty, as it is open and without any kind of interruption; and the soundings on approaching it are regular, from fifteen to three fathoms.

plug

plug having worked out from the boat's bottom, by which means a great quantity of water was received, and it continued to increase till the cause was discovered and removed; when the effect instantly ceased, and the boat as instantly was relieved. This accident, however, appeared to be a matter of the most serious concern with the pious priest; which might perhaps be a little aggravated by some smiles at his distress, which it was impossible to suppress*.

The next morning our navigators received an early visit from some of the Indians, who came to inform Father Vincente that the surf was abated, and that he might land in security. With the assistance of the Discovery's light small boat, he was conducted with great ease, perfectly dry, and much to the satisfaction of his reverence; of whose bounty a large quantity of roots, and other useful articles were now remaining on the beach, in readiness to be sent on board. Five head of cattle formed a part of this liberal present; one of which, being a very fine young bull, was taken on board alive, in order to be conveyed to Owhyhee: the others were killed to afford an ample supply for food: more than these were equally at their service, had they required them.

Their hospitable friend then conducted them towards the establishment, which was almost a mile from the water-side. As they advanced, a great number of Indians, of all ages, and both sexes, came running towards them. This sudden collection of people was attributed to curiosity, and the desire of seeing strangers; but our navigators were soon convinced, that this grand assemblage was not to welcome them, but the return of their pastor and benefactor. Though it was then early in the morning, the happy tidings had reached the mission, from whence these adopted children issued; each pressing through the crowd to salute the hand of their paternal guardian, to receive his benediction: this being graciously administered, the little multitude dispersed with apparent satisfaction †.

With light baffling winds, they directed their course on Friday the 22d, to the southward, gratefully thankful for the hospitable reception, and benevolent donations of their reverend friend at Buena Ventura ‡.

The land wind blew a moderate breeze on the 27th, with which they stood to the southward along the shore: but the weather was then so hazy as to prevent their looking about them till eight o'clock, when they perceived they were near the south-west point of entrance into the port St. Diego, called by the Spaniards Ponta de la Loma. It is the southern extremity of a remarkable range of elevated land, and at a distance has the appearance of being insular: the fact, however, is not so; but when viewed from the sea, it has that singular appearance. It descends in steep rocky cliffs to the water-side, from

* The reverend Father was now so much disconcerted, that he almost despaired of arriving safe at the ship. They were, however, soon along-side, and the reverend pastor was by no means reluctant to leave the boat. When he found himself safely on board, he soon recovered from his former apprehensions of danger, yet the absence of his books was now a source of great vexation; and our navigators were unable to afford him any consolation, as those they had on board were in a language he did not understand. In the evening, to his great astonishment and joy, a servant came on board with the bible and prayer-book, neither of which had received the least wet or injury from the ocean. The very great comfort this circumstance imparted was strongly manifested by the countenance of the pious father: he retired, and was closeted about three quarters of an hour; when he returned to supper, and became as cheerful as he had been before these alarming events had happened. The captain apologized for having taken the liberty of smiling at his situation, and obtained absolute forgiveness, for he laughed heartily at the adventures of the day, and a comfortable evening ensued.

† When our navigators entered the mission, they were received by Father Francisco Dume, and most respectably entertained. The morning was employed in surveying the buildings of the mission, and the arrangements of the land in the vicinage; all of which appeared to be in a superior stile to any of the settlements they had before seen. The day passed agreeably in the society of their ecclesiastical friends; and the pleasure of it was much heightened by the arrival of a mail from Europe, to be forwarded to Monterrey. In the evening they returned to the vessels, which had been prevented moving by the calmness of the weather.

‡ On the 26th of November, about nine in the forenoon, another Spanish establishment presented itself, erected close to the water-side. Its appearance, and situation relative to the mission of St Juan Capistrano, corresponding with what Captain Vancouver had heard of that settlement, induced him to believe that it was the last etasblishment between Sta Barbara and the Presidio of St. Diego. This mission is delightfully situated in a grove of trees, whose luxuriant foliage, when contrasted with the adjacent rugged and dreary shores, gave it a most romantic appearance. The buildings of the mission were of brick and stone, and the soil in their vicinity displayed the most remarkable fertility: the landing on the beach in the cove appeared to be good, and had he not been at that instant indulged with a favourable gale, he would have been tempted to have passed a few hours at this enchanting place.

whence a bed of weeds extends into the ocean. With some difficulty, our navigators entered the channel leading into port St. Diego, across which is a bar; and about two in the afternoon anchored in ten fathoms water, at the usual place of anchorage in the harbour. Having taken this station without having been observed by any of his Catholic Majesty's subjects, Captain Vancouver immediately dispatched Lieutenant Swaine up the harbour to the Presidio, to inform the commanding officer of his arrival; and to enquire if any dispatches for him had been committed to his care. Mr. Swaine was also instructed to enquire whether such commanding officer would kindly condescend to forward such dispatches as he might think necessary to transmit to England*.

When Mr. Swaine returned, he informed the captain that he had been politely and hospitably received by the commanding officer, who informed him that he had neither seen nor heard of any letters or dispatches addressed to him; but that he would gladly take charge of, and forward to Europe, what he might have occasion to transmit. He assured Mr. Swaine, that such refreshments as the country afforded were perfectly at the command of our British navigators; and that he should be happy to shew them every civility within the line prescribed by the orders under which he acted.

After Captain Vancouver had answered the commandant's letter, and gratefully acknowledged the politeness and hospitality manifested in the reception of the officer who had been dispatched to him, he intimated an intention of waiting on him the following morning; when the visit accordingly took place, and the captain was accompanied by Lieutenants Puget and Hanson: On their landing, they found horses waiting for them, on which they rode to the Presidio, and were received with the most flattering marks of attention and respect. The commandant renewed his friendly offers; and similar assurances of assistance were given by Senr. Don Jose Zuniga, the former commandant, who was now promoted to the rank of captain of infantry, and was also appointed to an important charge on the opposite side of the gulph of California, whither he was then preparing to depart†.

Notwithstanding these ungenerous directions the gentlemen begged our navigators not to deprive themselves of a supply of such refreshments as the country afforded; for though they must appear to keep within the limits of the orders, they would rather mitigate than add to their severity, where they could prudently act a lenient part; assuring them that all rigorous proceeding were contrary to their own inclinations.

A continuation of southerly winds detained our navigators till Monday the 9th of December, when they quitted the port of St. Diego. The captain felt himself much indebted for the hospitable intentions shewn him at the mission, as well as at the Presidio of St. Diego; for which he not only tendered his most grateful acknowledgments, but requested their acceptance of a few necessary articles, which they could not readily procure through any other channel: he had the further satisfaction of seeing that these favours were very thankfully received. The captain concludes the transactions at St. Diego, by stating such astronomical and nautical observations as were made there, with those that had been made previously to their arrival, and after their departure from that port.

Having quitted St. Diego, our navigators were assisted by a pleasant breeze from north-west, with which their course was directed along the coast. During the forenoon, on the 10th of December, immense columns of smoke were seen to arise from the shore in different parts, but principally from the south-east, which towards noon obscured the shores in that direction. The whole coast was soon enveloped with these dark clouds of smoke to such a degree, that only a small part of it was visible. The easterly

* During the absence of Mr. Swaine, the captain received a polite epistle from Senr. Antonio Grajero, a lieutenant in the Spanish cavalry, and commandant of this port, requesting to know the nature of the business that had brought his little squadron within the limits of his command.

† Those gentlemen, however, informed our navigators, that they had lately, to their great mortification, received from Senr. Arrillaga such a list of restrictions as would inevitably deprive both parties of reciprocal satisfaction. These orders amounted to a prohibition of their transacting any business on shore, but that of procuring wood and water? particularly enjoining that the store-ship should not be unladen at St. Diego; and expressed, that when the above-mentioned supplies were furnished, (which must be done with all possible dispatch) it was expected they would instantly depart. Among other severe injunctions, they were not permitted to take any live cattle, or sheep, on board.

wind

wind prevailing brought with it from the shore immense volumes of this noxious matter,, which were not only distressing to their feelings, but adverse to their pursuit, as it concealed from their view every object at the distance of a hundred yards*.

The ninth chapter of the fourth volume of the original work is almost wholly devoted to the transactions of the Spanish missions, and missionaries; a further account of which the editor thinks would be more than his readers can require; a copious account of those religious settlements, and their spiritual conductors, having been given in the preceding pages.

SECTION XX.

Third Visit to the Sandwich Islands—Leave the Coast of New Albion—Arrive off Owhyhee—Visited by Tamaahmaah—Proceed to Karakakooa Bay—Transactions there.

THE progress of our navigators from the coast of New Albion was so slow, that at noon on the 15th of December, the shores were still visible. In the afternoon the wind blew a moderate gale, which brought them by day-light the next morning within the sight of Guadaloupe, an island about thirteen mile, in length, nearly in a north and south direction. On the 22d, they had a calm; after which they had a gentle breeze from the north-east: as they proceeded they had cloudy and gloomy weather, accompanied with rain and sudden gusts of wind. On the 25th a tropic bird was seen, and a common gull that appeared to be greatly fatigued, as she manifested an inclination to alight on board. On the 29th they passed the spot assigned to los Majos isles, but perceived no circumstance to indicate the vicinity of land.

On the 7th of January, 1794, the weather was favourable, and the wind from the northward settled in the north-east; to this they spread all their canvas, expecting to see the island of Owhyhee early the next morning. The wind, however, slackened during the night, and it was not till nine in the morning on the 8th, that Mowna-Kaah was discovered: at this time the east end of Owhyhee bore south-west at the distance of ten leagues. They stood in for the land till sun-set, when being within two leagues of the shore, they employed the night in preserving their station off the coast, expecting to find the harbour or bay of Whyeatea; in search of which Captain Vancouver dispatched Mr. Whidbey in the cutter, attended by a boat from the Chatham, and another from the Dædalus, all properly armed†.

Mr. Whidbey informed Captain Vancouver that, in some respects, Whyeatea might be a convenient bay; but it was entirely exposed to the northerly winds, which then blew very strong; and, being attended with a heavy sea from that quarter, it was almost impossible to land from

* Two opinions were adopted respecting the cause of these very disagreeable clouds of smoke and ashes. Volcanic eruptions was the first conjecture: but after some time the opinion changed to the fire being superficial in different parts of the country; and which, by the prevalence of the north-east and easterly wind, spread to a very great extent: and this latter opinion appeared to be the most correct. Large columns of smoke were now seen rising from the vallies behind the hills, and extending northward along the coast. To the south several manifest proofs were beheld of its fatal effects; as burnt tufts of grass, weeds, and shrubs, which were the only vegetable productions, were distinguished over the whole face of the country, as far as they could discern; and in many places, at a considerable distance, the rising columns of smoke testified that the fire was not yet extinguished. Under such circumstances, it cannot be a matter of surprize that the country should have a desolate appearance. The smaller portions of smoke induced our adventurers to exercise their glasses in search of population, but neither inhabitants nor habitations were within the limits of their survey.

† The boats had hardly departed, when several of the natives came off in their canoes, but a heavy swell prevented their bringing many refreshments. Discovering who our adventurers were, they informed them that *Tamaahmaah*, with several of the principal chiefs, was then on shore waiting for their arrival; and then hastened towards the shore, proclaiming their return to that country with shouts of joy. About ten in the morning they were honoured with the presence of the king, who expressed the highest satisfaction on seeing them again, and hoped they would be able to remain there some time, to enjoy the benefits arising from the fertility of the island. *Tamaahmaah* had observed the boats in their passage to the shore, and expected they would return with a favourable report.

their boats. The captain therefore resolved to proceed to Karakakooa, as that bay was the most secure and convenient port for shipping of any in the Sandwich islands. His intention was immediately made known to *Tamaahmaah*, and also that the captain requested the pleasure of his company thither.

After some miscellaneous conversation, *Tamaahmaah* expressed an inclination to accompany him, but the *taboo* appertaining to the festival of the new year demanded his attendance, and nothing could excuse his absence without the particular sanction of the priests. Aware of the superior influence possessed by the priesthood, and of the strict adherence of the people to their superstitions, he did not attempt to check him on that consideration; but pretended to attribute his declining the captain's invitation to a relaxation, in the friendship he had formerly shewn and professed*.

Their course was directed round the east point of the island, and as they passed the district of Opoona on the 11th, they had an excellent view of Mowna Roa's snowy summit, and the range of hills extending towards the east end of Owhyhee. From the tops of these, several columns of smoke were observed to ascend, which *Tamaahmaah* and his friends said were occasioned by the subterraneous fires, that frequently broke out in violent eruptions, creating a multiplicity of superstitious notions; volcanic rites being solemnly performed for the purpose of appeasing the wrath of the enraged demon†.

About noon they were opposite the south point of the island: the wind blew strong till the morning of the 12th, when it became variable, and their progress was very slow towards Karakakooa. *Tamaahmaah*, wishing to gain the place of their destination, went on shore to fix some conspicuous lights, to guide them in the evening to their former anchorage; where, about ten the following night, they anchored near an American brig, named the Lady Washington, commanded by Mr. John Kendrick. As they worked into the bay, the assembled inhabitants announced their congratulations by shouts of joy. The Discovery was secured nearly in her former situation on the following morning; and the Chatham and Dædalus were properly disposed of for the convenient execution of the respective services.

Tamaahmaah, convinced of the necessity of landing part of the cargoes of the vessels, appointed proper places for their reception; and undertook to be answerable for the safety and security of whatever might be taken on shore. Considering also that bartering with the several chiefs, and other individuals, would be troublesome and unpleasant, he only required that our navigators would daily make their demands known to him, and gave his assurances that the three vessels should be duly supplied with every necessary refreshment. This friendly arrangement, Captain Vancouver was happy to concur in; and at day-light on the 15th, three large canoes arrived, laden with forty large hogs, thirty small ones, and a considerable quantity of vegetables; which were, by the directions of the sovereign, distributed among the three vessels‡.

Captain

* *Tamaahmaah* had always been accustomed to attend their meals on board, but being thus reproached with a want of friendship, he refused to accept of any thing at table: his sensibility was probed to the quick; and he resolved, rather than be suspected of such coolness, to risk the displeasure of the priests by an unprecedented breach of their religious rites: he therefore immediately sent his half brother *Orymamahoo* to communicate his intentions of accompanying the captain. Their little difference being thus amicably adjusted, he ate a very hearty breakfast; and having given instructions to his brother respecting the mode of government in his absence, he was dismissed, with directions to return speedily with the answer of the priests. The result of their deliberations was, that they would unanimously accede to his wishes: the captain did not hesitate in giving his hearty concurrence to this determination, being anxious to proceed expeditiously to Karakakooa.

† On approaching the shores of Kaoo, they were met by several of the inhabitants, in their canoes laden with refreshments. Many of them expressed their astonishment at seeing their king on board, and wished to know whether he had broken the *taboo* by his own choice, or by compulsion: Matters being explained to their satisfaction, they were equally satisfied to be informed, that it was the king's pleasure that the hogs and vegetables they had brought off should be taken on board, without their receiving any equivalent in return.

‡ The three large canoes having thus delivered their very acceptable cargoes, they conveyed to the shore the live cattle which the captain had been more successful in bringing from New Albion, than on the former occasion. They consisted of a young bull, two fine cows, and two bull calves, all in excellent condition. These were also accompanied with with five rams, and an equal number of ewe sheep: two of these, with most of the black cattle, were given to the king; and as those he had brought the preceding year had been tolerably successful, the sheep having

Captain Vancouver, willing to make the most of his time, proposed sending the tents, observatory, and instruments on shore, to enable him to make his observations: on this occasion, however, he was surprized to find that the king had made some objections to their being placed in their former situation, near the morai; declaring he could not sanction his inhabiting the *tabooed* lands, without the permission of an old woman*. *Tamaahmaah* observing his disappointment, requested him to fix on some other part of the bay; but the captain insisting that no other spot would be equally convenient, he assembled some of the principal priests in the *morai*; and, after a serious conference with them, he was permitted to occupy the consecrated ground as formerly; and accordingly took possession of it on the 22d. To this spot, as on their former visit, none were admitted but those of the society of priests, the principal chiefs, and a few of their male attendants: no woman, on any pretence whatever, being ever admitted within the sacred limits of the *morai*.

The unfortunate son of *Kahowmotoo* had been brought by his father from his principal place of residence to the village of Kowrowa, for medical assistance, but without effect; for in the afternoon he breathed his last, The periodical *taboo* that ought to have commenced on the following evening, was, on this occasion, suspended, to manifest their displeasure with the deity for the death of their young chief, whose loss was deplored by the whole family, but more particularly by *Kahowmotoo*. Captain Vancouver took the liberty of enquiring when the body would be interred, and if he might be permitted to attend the funeral solemnities; when he was informed by *Kahowmotoo*, that the funeral would take place the subsequent day, and that he would come on board to accompany him on the melancholy occasion†.

The party that accompanied Mr. Menzies returned with him on the 25th. Their object had been to gain the summit of Mowna Roa, which they could not effect in the direction they had attempted; but they had reached the top of another mountain which is very conspicuous, and called by the natives Worroray. This mountain rises from the western extremity of the island, and on its summit a volcanic crater appeared, perfectly accounting for the formation of that part of the country, over which it was found so difficult and dangerous to travel‡.

Being much displeased with the ingratitude of his attendants, Captain Vancouver demanded of *Tamaahmaah*, in an expostulating tone, the two knives that were withheld; and expatiated on the disgrace the theft had attached on every individual of the whole party. *Tamaahmaah* expressed much chagrin that the captain should be thus unhandsomely treated; which was greatly aggravated by one of his most particular favourites

having bred, and one of the cows having produced a cow-calf, he flattered himself with the idea of having at length established a breed of these valuable animals.

Several of the principal chiefs were now in the neighbourhood; and *Kahowmotoo*, Captain Vancouver's former friend, paid him an early visit, taking with him a dozen large hogs, and a proportionable quantity of vegetables. He had lost much of his cheerfulness, and was indeed exceedingly depressed, in consequence of a wound his favourite son *Whokaa* had received in the exercise of throwing the spear with a man of inferior rank. The wound had baffled all their art to cure, and had reduced the youth to the last stage of his existence. His antagonist was therefore arrested, and the following day his eyes were pulled out: after remaining in that deplorable state about two days, he was executed by being strangled with a rope.

* The daughter of the venerable *Kaoh*, and wife to the treacherous Koah. *V.* Capt. King's account of Captain Cook's death.

† It happened, however, that *Kavaheero*, the chief of the village, where his son had departed this transitory life, had, in the course of the night, privately caused the body of the young chief to be conveyed to one of the sepulchral holes, of the steep hill forming the north side of the bay. This circumstance sufficiently evinces their extreme aversion to the discovery of their religious rites, and their determination to prevent the attendance of the curious on any of their religious formalities.

‡ The whole of the retinue who had attended *Tamaahmaah* from Aheedo, with the addition of several visitors, were supported on board the ships, and ought to have felt themselves perfectly happy in their situation; but such was their irresistible propensity to thieving, that five of the captain's table knives were missing. The Indian party protested they had not the least knowledge of the theft; but the knives having been stolen by some of them, he ordered every man, except the king, to quit the ship immediately, and that none of them should be re-admitted. He also intimated to *Tamaahmaah* that he expected the knives should be restored. He saw the propriety of the captain's insisting upon this demand, and in the course of the morning three of the knives were returned.

The *taboo*, which had been postponed on account of Whokaa's death, was observed this evening; it was attended, however, with tokens of resentment to their deity for permitting him to die; for it was only to be in force from sun-set to sun rising, instead of the usual time of two nights and a day. The king returned to our navigators as soon as the ceremonies were ended.

favourites having been justly charged as one of the delinquents. About noon he sullenly repaired to the shore, and did not return till sent for in the evening; when another of the knives was produced, which he declared was the only one he could find. The truth, however, was at length made known; the knife had been given by the pilferer to a person of importance, over whom *Tamaahmaah* was unwilling to enforce his authority. The captain readily acquiesced to the loss of the knife, as it relieved him from the inconvenience which a number of troublesome visitors had occasioned.

On the 30th our navigators were favoured with the company of *Terce-my-tee, Crymamahoo, Tianna,* and other chiefs, from the distant parts of the island. They had been summoned by the king to attend a grand council, to debate on the cession of the island to the crown of Great Britain, which was unanimously desired.

SECTION XXI.

Farther Transactions at Karakakooa—Cession of the Island of Owhyhee to the British Crown.

THE reception of our European navigators among these unlettered people, though distinguished by the appellation of savages, was such as is seldom equalled by the most civilized nations of Europe. They were not fettered with ungenerous restrictions, but immediately on their arrival, an ample space was appropriated to their service, protected by the most sacred laws of the country; whilst those of their little community who chose to visit the interior parts of the island, in pursuit of knowledge or recreation, received encouragement and assistance from the kindness of *Tamaahmaah*; hospitality and friendship was shewn them, at every house which they approached in the course of their different excursions.

A strict *taboo* was on the 12th of February to be enforced over all the island, and the chiefs were required to retire to their respective estates, for the purpose of rigidly observing their solemnities; which were to continue two nights and a day. Should the omens prove favourable, such chiefs would be allowed to eat what pork they thought proper to consecrate on this occasion; and high *poory,* that is, grand prayers, would be performed; but should the omens happen otherwise, the rites were immediately to be suspended. Captain Vancouver having expressed a desire to be present upon some of these occasions, *Tamaahmaah* obtained the consent of the priests that he should be thus indulged; on his promise, during the continuance of the interdiction, to observe all the restrictions which their religion demanded.

Having promised obedience to this condition, he was formally visited by several of the principals of their religious order; one of whom was named *Eakooa, no Tamaahmaah,* the god of *Tamaahmaah.* This priest had often been one of the captain's attendants; but, on this occasion, he was detected in stealing a knife, for which he was dismissed from the party, and excluded from the limits of their encampment*.

Tahowmotoo was a constant visitor, but his daughter, the disgraced queen, seldom appeared

* The restraints imposed were—1. A total seclusion from the company of women. 2. To partake of no food that is not previously consecrated. 3. To be confined to the land, and to avoid being wet, or afloat in sea-water. 4. Not to receive or touch the most trivial article from any one who had not attended the ceremonies of the *morai.*—These restrictions were required to be observed by the whole of the party resident on shore. At sun-set they obeyed the summons of the king at the morai, who was there officiating as high-priest, attended by the principal residents of their religious orders, chanting an invocation to the setting sun, with which they commenced their hallowed rites. In their devotions, they did not omit to pray for the welfare of his Britannic Majesty, and for the safe and happy return of our navigators to their native country. A certain degree of order was perceptible throughout their ceremonies, blended with many superstitious and mysterious formalities; among which, we shall mention one performed about the dawn of day. At this time the silence of every creature was required. The king then repeated a solemn prayer in so low a tone of voice as to be almost inaudible; in the middle of which he took up a live pig tied by the legs, and with one effort killed it against the ground, without breaking the silence by the cries of the victim. Hogs, plantains, and cocoa-nuts, were then consecrated for the principal chiefs and priests. Soon after the sun rose on the 14th, they were absolved from any further obedience to their sacred injunctions.

on that side of the bay: she was anxious, however, for a reconciliation with *Tamaahmaah;* and his unaltered affection for *Tahowmanno* was confessed with a sort of conviction of her innocence: he candidly acknowledged that his own conduct had not been such, as to warrant his having demanded a separation from his queen; and though it did not authorise, it pleaded a kind of excuse for her infidelity. With respect to himself, he alledged that his rank and supreme authority was a licence for such indulgences.

An accommodation, which appeared to be mutually wished by both parties, was strongly urged by the queen's relations, and Captain Vancouver's interference was frequently solicited by them. A plan was therefore projected which produced an interview, when the captain seizing *Tamaahmaah's* hand, and joining it with the queen's, their reconciliation was instantly completed. This was demonstrated by the tears that involuntarily stole down their cheeks, as they embraced each other, mutually expressing the satisfaction they experienced. A short pause produced by so unexpected an event, was succeeded by a flow of pleasantry and good humour; and a little refreshment, from a few cheerful glasses of wine, concluded the scene of this successful meeting.

The queen gratefully acknowledged the weighty obligations she felt for Captain Vancouver's services on this occasion; but, to his astonishment, as they were all preparing to go on shore, she said she had another important favour to request; that of obtaining from *Tamaahmaah* a solemn promise, that on her return to his abode he would not beat her. An application to this effect was made to *Tamaahmaah,* who readily complied with the solicitation, declaring that nothing of the kind should ever happen; but *Tahowmanno* still petitioned the captain to accompany them to the royal residence, where he had the pleasure of seeing her restored to all her former privileges and honours.

The domestic affairs of *Tamaahmaah* being thus happily adjusted, his mind became more at liberty for political considerations; and particularly the cession of Owhyhee to his Britannic Majesty. This subject had been seriously discussed by the chiefs of the island, and the result of their deliberation was, an unanimous opinion, that in order to obtain the protection of that monarch, it was necessary that *Tamaahmaah* should surrender it formally to Captain Vancouver, on the part of his majesty; that he should acknowledge himself and people, his British subjects, and that they should supplicate that power to protect them from future molestation.

Convinced of the importance of those islands to Great Britain, and in return for the services our British navigators had derived from the excellent productions of this country, Captain Vancouver lost no opportunity of encouraging the friendly disposition of these people towards them. Under these impressions, he felt it an incumbent duty to accept, for the crown of Great Britain, the cession that had been tendered; and therefore stipulated that it should be made publicly and unequivocally. The formal surrender of the island, however, had been delayed on account of the absence of two principal chiefs; *Commanow,* the chief of Aheedo; and *Tamaahmotoo,* the chief of Koarra.

On the day of a conciliatory interview between some of the chiefs, the dinner was announced; and as the captain's consecrated pork was exhausted, *Tamaahmaah* had provided a repast suitable to the keen appetites of their numerous guests,, consisting of fish, fowls, dogs, and vegetables. The glass was circulated freely after dinner, and Tamaahmotoo strove to excel in this accomplishment, by drinking without reserve. Captain Vancouver thought it his duty to remind him, that as he was not accustomed to drink strong liquors, the wine and grog might disagree with him; but as his spirits became exhilarated, he became less attentive to these admonitions, till the operation of the liquors compelled him to retire. As some persons were removing him, he indistinctly uttered *attowanni,* declaring he was poisoned; and many persons present appeared to be a little concerned for his safety. The king, however, laughed at their apprehensions, and briefly explained the cause of his indisposition: a little warm water almost instantly recovered him, and he rejoined the party who were still pleasantly regaling themselves*.

* One of *Tamaahmotoo's* most confidential friends contended, that he had been given a different bottle to drink out of, from that which had been used by the rest of the company, and produced a kind of dagger, formed from the widest part of an iron spit; but on seeing the king, and several other persons, drinking wine from the same bottle, he became pacified.

The convocation of the principal chiefs of the island, by the royal mandate, naturally occasioned another assembly. Most of the superior people, of both sexes, took up their residence in the neighbourhood; which became so populous that every temporary habitation was completely occupied. Several thousands of the natives were now collected, whose cheerfulness, good humour, and cagerness to oblige, could not be exceeded by the inhabitants of the most civilized regions. The days passed pleasantly to those who devoted them to mirth and innocent amusements, and advantageously to such as were expert in bartering one commodity for another; whilst our European navigators, who recreated themselves on shore, were received with the greatest hospitality, and enjoyed the amusements of the country; all of which could not fail of being interesting, whilst they were essentially contributory to health*.

Among the evening amusements in the neighbourhood, Captain Vancouver was induced to attend the performance of a single young woman of the name of *Puckoo*. Her dress, though the weather was intensely hot, consisted of a large quantity of thin cloth wound about her waist, and extended to her knees. It was so ingeniously plaited as to give a beautiful effect to the variegated pattern of the cloth, and the whole was displayed with elegance and taste. Her head and neck were decorated with wreaths of feathers, red, black, and yellow. Her ancles, and about half way up her legs, were ornamented with folds of cloth: this was encompassed by a piece of net-work, from the meshes of which small dogs' teeth were hung: her wrists were decorated with bracelets made of the tusks of hogs, which were very curiously displayed†.

The afternoon was to be dedicated to a more splendid spectacle, in which some ladies of the court of Tamaahmaah were to perform the principal parts. Our navigators were informed that about four o'clock was the time for attending the noble dames, whose theatre or place of exhibition, was in a small square, surrounded by houses and sheltered by trees; a situation equally well chosen for the performance, as for the accommodation of the spectators, who, including all ranks and descriptions of persons, amounted to at least four thousand. A difference of dress had been observed in the audience at the former entertainment, but here every one shone forth in the best apparel they could procure. Feathered ruffs, and gartering tape in wreaths, decorated the ladies' heads, and were also sported as necklaces. The dress of the female performers resembled that worn by *Puckoo*, though formed of superior materials, and more elegantly and tastefully disposed‡.

As their majesties withdrew, the ladies of distinction, and the principal chiefs, began to advance; when the reception of the former was marked with a singular degree of respect, and they placed themselves in such a manner as to form a commodious avenue to their respective stations; where they seated themselves on the

* The days were usually closed with singing and dancing, and the nights were as quietly passed as in the most orderly towns in Europe; though the inhabitants did not retire to take their repose till a late hour. From sun-set till the time of separation for the night, the hours were employed by some parties in social conversation, and by others in different games of chance; and it is worthy of remark, that the losers always conducted themselves with the greatest good temper and propriety.

† Thus equipped her appearance excited applause from the numerous spectators, before a single word was uttered. She performed in the open air, accompanied by two men seated on the ground in the character of musicians. Their instruments were made of the shells of large gourds open at the top, and the lower ends were flat and thin. They were occasionally struck on the ground, and in the intervals, regulated with their hands and fingers, to accompany their vocal exertions, and the motions of their hands and body; the vivacity of their countenances plainly testifying their enjoyment in the performance of their parts, as well as their satisfaction on hearing the plaudits bestowed upon the lady, on the fascinating gestures and motions of her person. Her speech, or poem, which began in a slow and solemn manner, gradually became more energetic: producing a vociferous oration, accompanied by violent emotions. Though our Europeans were not sufficiently acquainted with the language to be able to comprehend the subject, they were highly pleased with the performance. The music and singing was far from being discordant or unpleasing, and the attitudes were not destitute of taste and elegance.

‡ *Tamaahmaah*, who was considered as a profound critic in the habiliments of the ladies, was frequently appealed to by the most respectable among them, and his directions were implicitly obeyed in several little alterations. The party being fully attired, the king and queen, who had been present while they were dressing, were obliged to withdraw; the royal pair being prohibited by law from attending such amusements, excepting on the festival of the new year. The whole of this day's recreation was indeed an infringement on the established rules, but being intended as a compliment to the European strangers, the innovation was admitted.

ground,

ground, which was covered with mats. Most of the ladies being corpulent, they moved with great stateliness and dignity; attended by a number of their pages, with extended fans to court the refreshing breeze; or with fly-flaps to disperse the offending insects.

So much time was devoted to the decoration of the performers, that the audience grew impatient and clamorous; manifesting their great displeasure that the commencement of their diversion should be so shamefully delayed. *Tryhookea*, who was the manager of the ceremonies on this occasion, came forward, and made an apology of so conciliatory a nature as to prevent any additional murmurs; soon after which the music began. The band consisted of five men, all standing up, each with a polished wooden spear in the left hand, and a piece of the same material in his right: with this they beat on the spear, to produce an accompaniment to their voices in singing. The music, however, was speedily interrupted by the appearance of the court ladies, who were received with reiterated shouts of applause. The musicians then retired a few paces, and the actresses placed themselves before them*.

The piece was in honour of a captive princess, whose name was *Crycowculleneaow*, and the subject, enforced by gestures and appropriate actions. Whenever the princess's name was pronounced, every person present who wore ornaments above their waist, was obliged to take them off. The actresses indeed were excused from that ceremony during the performance, but at the conclusion of the act, they were required to comply with this mysterious ceremony. Among a variety of uncommon attitudes, some of these performers exhibited a degree of graceful action, for the attainment of which it seems difficult to account. The whole was supported with wonderful spirit and vivacity; and had their performance finished with the third act, the Europeans would have retired from the theatre with a much more exalted idea of the moral tendency of their drama, than was conveyed by the libidinous scene exhibited by the ladies towards the conclusion.

Having finished this curious representation with the descending sun, as the law prohibits such amusements after that period, the spectators retired with great order and decorum; but as Captain Vancouver had promised the additional amusement of fire-works, which could not be advantageously displayed till the absence of light, the multitude were permitted to re-assemble for the full enjoyment of that spectacle. They began about seven in the evening; and drew from the expecting multitude such acclamations of surprize and admiration, as may be more easily conceived than expressed. Tamaahmaah fired the two first rockets; but only one or two of the chiefs had sufficient courage to follow his example†.

Intelligence was brought in the afternoon that the travellers had reached the summit of Mowna Roa, and were on their return; but their arrival was not very soon expected, as they were to return by land, and the roads were in a very indifferent state.

Captain Vancouver having again resumed his residence on board the ship, he was, on the 21st, honoured with a formal visit of all the great personages in the neighbourhood, except *Cavaheero*, who was known to have accepted the stolen cartridge-box: the captain therefore considered him as an accessary in the theft, and would not suffer him to enter the ship. The pride of this chief was greatly mortified by this

* The heroine of the piece had once partook of the affections and embraces of *Tamaahmaah*, but was now wedded to an inferior chief, whose department in the household was superintendant of the king's apparel. This lady was distinguished by a green wreath round the crown of the head. The captive daughter of *Titeeree* was the next: the third a younger sister to the queen and the wife of *Crymamahoo*, who, as being of the most exalted rank, was placed in the centre. On each side of these, two of inferior quality stood, making in the whole seven actresses. These were arranged in the front of the square, which was wholly occupied by the ladies of quality and the chiefs.

† Captain Vancouver now began seriously to prepare for his departure, that he might be able to sail on the arrival of Mr. Menzies and his party. Most of the principal chiefs attended him as usual at breakfast, to whom he communicated this information. In the course of conversation at the breakfast-table, he discovered that a cartridge box, which the centinel had suffered to lie carelessly about, had been stolen from on board the Chatham. This unlucky incident drew, for a time, a veil of gloom over the cheerfulness which had for some time prevailed; especially as *Tamaahmaah* threw all the blame on the centinel for not having taken greater care of his accoutrements. On maturely considering this business, however, the king sent *Kahowmotoo* in search of the cartridge-box, who brought it to them in the course of half an hour. The accoutrement-box being restored, with its contents uninjured, and undiminished, all parties were instantly reconciled.

disappointment,

disappointment, and he lost no inconsiderable emolument from his perfidy; as none of his associates returned to the shore without a significant token of the captain's esteem.

The number of chiefs that were expected being now assembled, Captain Vancouver asked the king when the cession of the island was to be confirmed. A short conversation ensued between *Tamaahmaah* and some of his counsellors then present, and as *a taboo-poory* was appointed to commence on the evening of the following Sunday, which was to continue till the Tuesday morning, they thought it judicious to embrace that opportunity of reconsulting the priests, that each might be convinced of the propriety of the measure they were on the point of adopting. Understanding that a final appeal to the priests could not possibly be dispensed with, the captain readily complied with their wishes.

He was very much concerned that his endeavours to effect a reconciliation, and to establish a peace in these islands had proved unsuccessful: the mutual distrust of the people prevented the attainment of this desirable object. He was under the necessity of declining any more personal interference in this important business, though he knew the tranquillity of many thousands might have been secured, at least for a time, could he have accomplished this design. *Tamaahmaah* had been informed of the captain's intended route from Karakakooa, and, eager to embrace every opportunity of continuing his good offices, dispatched one of his principal domestics to Tocaigh, to make every necessary preparation for their embarkation on their arrival.

After these, and some less important arrangements had taken place, relative to their departure, the king and his attendants returned to the shore.

About this time the gentlemen from Mowna Roa made their appearance, having descended from the mountains to the shore, from whence they returned by water. On the 23d of February Captain Vancouver accompanied *Tamaahmaah* to the Morai, and complied with all the regulations and restrictions of the *taboo*. The ceremonies were similar to those he had before observed, though more concise, less formal, and attended by fewer persons.

The prominent features in the different speeches made by the chiefs on the cession of Owhyhee, particularly related to their religion, government, and domestic œconomy; and it was clearly understood that no interference was to be admitted in either; that *Tamaahmaah*, the chiefs, and priests, were to retain their respective stations, and that no alteration should take place in any of those particulars. After a full discussion of these preliminaries, the whole party (including the king) declared that they were no longer *Tanata no Owhyhee, i.e.* the People of Owhyhee; but *Tanata no Britannee, i. e. the People of Britain.* This was immediately proclaimed to the surrounding crowds in their numerous canoes about the vessels; and cheerfully repeated by the whole attending multitude *.

A distribution of such valuable articles was then made to the principal chiefs, their favourite women, and other attendants, as *Tamaahmaah* and Captain Vancouver esteemed most suitable to their respective ranks and situations on this memorable occasion. Such were the ceremonies of ceding Owhyhee to the British crown; but whether this addition to the empire will yield any additional happiness to the people, or ever be of any importance to Great Britain, time only must determine.

* Mr. Puget and some other officers repaired to the shore, and there displayed the British colours; taking possession, in his Majesty's name, of the whole Island, as requested by *Tamaahmaah* and his subjects. On the conclusion of this ceremony, a salute was fired from the vessels; after which the following inscription on copper was conspicuously displayed in the royal residence.

"On the 25th of February, 1794, *Tamaahmaah*, king of Owhyhee, in council with the principal chiefs of the island, assembled on board his Britannic Majesty's sloop Discovery, in Karakakooa Bay, and in the presence of George Vancouver, commander of the said sloop; Lieutenant Peter Puget, commander of his said Majesty's armed tender the Chatham; and the other officers of the Discovery; after due consideration, unanimously ceded the said island of Owhyhee to his Britannic Majesty, and acknowledged themselves to be subjects of Great Britain."

SECTION

SECTION XXII.

Quit Karakakooa—Visit Tyahtatooa Bay,—and Tocaigh Bay—Examine the Northern Sides of Mowee, Woahoo, and Attowai—Leave the Sandwich Islands.

OUR navigators had no inducement to detain them in Karakakooa bay, that memorable spot where Captain Cook became a sacrifice to his enterprising spirit; but it now proved an hospitable asylum for our British travellers; where the unremitted attention in the superior classes of the people to preserve good order, produced a cheerful and uniform obedience and respect, from those who acted in a subordinate degree. The general conduct of the natives was irreproachable, and they were perfectly fair and honest in all their commercial intercourse. Excepting in the instances of the table-knives, the cartridge-box, and some few others of less importance, our navigators had little to complain of; and those offences were principally occasioned by leaving irresistable temptations in their way. On this delinquency reflections are only due to the particular individuals concerned, and ought not to be mentioned as characteristic of the whole people.

All Captain Vancouver's friends were prepared to attend our adventurers: some of them were on board, and others appeared in their canoes, ready to follow the ship as soon as she had got under sail; which was effected about three in the morning of the 26th. The Discovery and Chatham directed their course along the shore towards Tyahtatooa Bay: the morning was pleasant, and the surrounding objects demanded attention and admiration. The country they passed rose with a gradual ascent from the sea shore, seemingly in a high state of cultivation, and decorated with a number of extensive villages; whilst their numerous companions moved on the bosom of a serene and tranquil ocean; and the rest, in their more humble conveyances, leisurely attended them, paddling along, and heightening the beauty of the interesting scene: thus exhibiting, by their numerous population, that wealth which the improved state of the island so strongly indicated. About eight they anchored in Tyahtatooa Bay.

Mr. Meares's account of Douglas's voyage, represents this place as equal, if not superior to Karakakooa, for secure anchorage; but it appeared to our navigators in a very different point of view; though they admit that it possesses an advantage with respect to landing, superior to Karakakooa. This landing is on a sandy beach, before a grove, consisting of those trees that produce the cocoa-nut, and bread-fruit; and contains a village in the midst of it. Near it is a small cove, towards the south part of which a spring rises rapidly from among some rocks that are usually covered with the sea-water; but when this is low, which is often the case, it produces a stream of excellent fresh water, the current of which might be easily diverted, and rendered subservient to the domestic use of the neighbourhood; as well as to the vessels refitting at Karakakooa *.

The captain was anxious to quit this station, but a light breeze from the sea, succeeded by calms, prevented their moving till midnight; when, with a gentle breeze from the shore, they proceeded along the coast to the northward. In the forenoon of the 27th, having a light breeze,

* Accompanied by *Tamaahmaah*, several of the officers, and some chiefs, Captain Vancouver visited the royal residence at this place; which consisted of three neatly constructed buildings; but from their not being regularly inhabited for some time, were considerably out of repair. This residence of his majesty, like that at Karakakooa, was situated near a grand morai, on the margin of the sea. It was the handsomest structure of the kind the captain had ever seen, and kept in the greatest order; it was ornamented with idols, fabricated from the trunks of large trees, with a desire of imitating the human form, but they were the most preposterous and gigantic figures that can possibly be imagined.

Having gratified their curiosity, they returned on board to dinner, which consisted principally of beef and mutton; to give the chiefs an idea of the value of those articles of food which the Captain had imported; when it was unanimously agreed, by a very numerous party, that both were excellent The beef, though salted, seemed to claim the preference in their opinion; though they admitted the mutton to be very similar in its taste to the flesh of their dogs, which they highly esteemed. On taking the opinion of the whole company present, whether mutton or dogs flesh had the preference, it was decided in favour of mutton, by the casting voice of *Tamaahmaah*.

they steered for the anchorage of Toeaigh. Though a strong current opposed them, the weather was pleasant, and the objects about them cheerful and entertaining: a dreary, volcanic, and uncultivated shore was, however, amply compensated by the number of their friends that accompanied them afloat in canoes; still preserving that cheerfulness and good humour which they had so universally manifested at Karakakooa.

The evening being appointed for a *Taboo*, to be continued till the morning of the 1st of March, the king and his friends went on shore to attend their religious duties. The weather in the evening being squally, induced the captain to believe, it was very probable that he should not reach his destination before it was dark: on intimating this circumstance to *Tamaahmaah*, he engaged to have a proper light placed in such a situation as to be distinctly seen, to which he might be conducted with safety. It was not, however, till near four the next morning that they gained soundings, when they anchored in thirty fathoms water. After day-light they removed to what was supposed to be the best anchorage of the bay; but which was, in his opinion, a very indifferent one. The only circumstances that seem to render it a desireable stopping-place, are the stream of water, which, however, does not constantly flow; and the probability of getting a supply of refreshments, from its contiguity to the western part of the district of Koarra, and the plains of Whymea.

The country, on their approach, had no very pleasing aspect; but at some distance behind where the plains of Whymea are stated to commence, it is rich, productive, and occupies an extent of several miles. In this valley, a large tract of luxuriant pasture presents itself, whither all the cattle and sheep imported by Captain Vancouver were to be driven; there to ramble unrestrained "to increase and multiply," far from the sight of strangers; and consequently less likely to tempt the inhabitants to violate the sacred promise they had made*.

The next morning the king, and most of their other friends, made their appearance about the vessels. In the course of the day Tamaahmaah displayed the excess of his liberality, by presenting our British navigators with about a hundred of his largest hogs, and as great a quantity of vegetables as the vessels would contain; with offers of a further supply if it should be required.

It was the captain's intention to have sailed with the land wind in the evening; but *Tamaahmaah*, lamenting that his necessary engagements had deprived him for some days of the captain's society, earnestly solicited that the last day might be dedicated to the enjoyment of each other's company, the captain consented to remain the following day. Sunday the second of March was therefore passed in receiving farewel visits, and making grateful acknowledgments to their numerous friends; who expatiated on the pleasure they had experienced during their residence among them, and demonstrated their regret at the approaching separation. By sun-set the group was nearly dispersed, prior to which strong impressions were made on the sensibility of our Europeans, from the repeated ardent solicitations that they would return to them again; and the genuine sincerity of their wishes and prayers for their future happiness and prosperity.

The first breeze from the land was to announce the moment of their departure: *Tamaahmaah*, and his queen, unwilling to take leave of them till the arrival of that moment, remained on board till almost midnight, when they parted with hearts too pregnant with sensations to give them appropriate utterance.

Our navigators bade adieu to Owhyhee early in the morning of the 3d of March, highly indebted for the reception, and the abundant refreshments they had procured. The land wind blew so faintly, that their progress from Owhyhee was slow, which induced a few canoes from the shores of Koarra to visit them as they passed; but they did not recognize any of the chiefs, or of their former acquaintances. Towards noon the sea breeze reached them, with which they stood to windward. On the 4th they bore away along the north side of the island. In this route they fell in with the south-east side of Mowee; where they anxiously looked out for the harbour

* This day being devoted to their holy rites, the king and his chiefs remained in sacred retirement; and the same cause deprived our navigators of the society of many of their visitors, particularly females, who are, on no consideration, permitted to be afloat on these occasions.

mentioned

mentioned by Captain King, said by the natives to exist in that neighbourhood; but nothing could be seen to warrant such a representation, but two small open coves, situated on each side of the eastern extremity of the island. Off this eastern extremity, at the distance of about nine leagues, a small islet appears, having some rocks between it and the shore: the north of this islet was covered with verdure, in which several houses were dispersed, but neither trees nor shrubs were visible. The adjacent country presented a fertile appearance, and seemed to contain a number of inhabitants. The wind being light, a few of the natives were enabled to visit them in the course of the afternoon; but having little with them to dispose of, they returned home in the evening. On the 5th a few natives paid them a visit, but were as little qualified for bartering as those they had seen before.

Having completed their intended survey of Mowee, they stood over and brought to near the north-east point of Morotoi, in expectation of seeing *Taio*; for whom they had reserved some sheep for establishing the breed in these islands: for *Titeerea* they had also reserved some of the same sort of animals, and for the same laudable purpose. But learning that the day was *taboo poory*, the captain knew he could not receive a visit from him; nor had he afterwards an opportunity of seeing him. Having finished their survey of Woahoo, they directed their course towards the north-east part of Attowai: soon after they rejoined the American brig Washington, which had sailed with them from Karakakooa, but had directed her course to the southward of the islands, for Whyteete in Woahoo, where she had continued five days *.

But to return. Our navigators were early attended by *Enemo* and *Tamoocrrie*, accompanied only by a few chiefs; but by a number of women of the first consequence, who were attendants on his court. From the regent and prince the captain received a few indifferent hogs, though estimated by them as some of the best on the island; the stock of these animals being lately much reduced, by the uncommon demand for them from the trading vessels. An ample supply of vegetables, they, however, depended upon procuring here, in which indeed they were more successful; though the yams, a very desirable article for sea-stores, were extremely scarce.

Not having had an opportunity of seeing *Titeeree* and *Taio*, the captain deposited with *Enemo* the breeding sheep intended for those chiefs; informing him, that in proportion as they multiplied, they were to be distributed among the other islands †.

On the following day, Wednesday the 12th of

* The wind in the afternoon being light and variable, they made little progress: but in the course of the day they obtained a scanty supply of hogs and vegetables: the night was passed in preserving their station. Having completed the survey of Attowai, they met the regular trade wind, with which they stood to windward for Whymea Bay, in that island, where they anchored on the 9th. Here they again met the Washington. Their arrival being presently known, they were visited by many of their former friends; among whom were the two young women Captain Vancouver had brought from Nootka and settled here. During their late absence they had been kindly treated, but they now expressed their fears, that on their finally quitting these seas, they should be deserted or neglected; but the captain was not inactive in obtaining from all the principal chiefs the most solemn promises of the contrary.

Since their late departure, Enemo had attempted to acquire the supreme sovereignty of these islands, independent of *Titeeree* and *Taio*. To effect this he had been assisted by several European and American renegadoes; but, after some disagreeable consequences, *Titeeree* solicited Mr. Brown to take him to Attowai, to effect, in an amicable way, an accommodation with the rebellious chief. Mr. Brown complied with the request, and after an explanatory interview on board his ship, all matters were mutually adjusted to the satisfaction of both parties; and from that period the island has enjoyed tranquillity, though it continued under the government of *Enemo* as regent.

† Having been invited by the regent to an evening amusement on shore, the Captain proceeded to the place of exhibition, where he found the performers assembled, who were numerous, and composed chiefly of women; they were habited in variegated apparel: and taste was visible in the arrangement of their feminine embellishments. The entertainment, which consisted of three parts, was performed by three classes of about two hundred women in each, who ranged themselves in five or six rows, in the singular attitude of sitting upon their haunches. A man advanced a few paces before the centre of the first row of the ladies, who, like a fugal monitor, directed the proceedings of the drama. In this situation and position they exhibited an infinite variety of astonishing gestures. The whole of the groupe was perfectly in unison both of voice and action. Their voices were melodious, and ease and elegance accompanied their motions. The several other parts of the performance were conducted with the same correctness and uniformity, but were less easy to be described. There appeared to be great variety, and little repetition, though the performers amounted to about six hundred persons. This *hoorah* was not degraded by that disgusting obscenity, which Captain Vancouver had formerly been constrained to notice in these public representations. The numerous

of March, the ships' companies had completed their water; and after procuring a few hogs and vegetables, and requiting the chiefs and others for the favours they had conferred, a formal leave was reciprocally taken. Wishing to procure a stock of yams, which they understood were plentiful at Onehow, the navigators quitted Attowai on the 13th, and proceeded to that island.

By their several visits to Attowai, they had found that the roadstead of Whymea was much confined in respect of safe anchorage; for if the Discovery's cables had not been injured by a foul bottom, yet the Chatham, in March 1792, had both her cables much fretted and damaged by the rocks at the bottom. Though a situation more convenient to the shore, in a less depth of water, is to be found by keeping the steep banks of the river not shut in, but just a little open; yet, from the lurking patches of rocks that have been found near the same kind of bottom, great caûtion should be observed to avoid those hidden dangers; instead of resorting to an operation that appears incredible. It had been positively assested, that the natives were capable of diving to the depth of forty fathoms, and there cutting through a fourteen inch cable. It is indeed generally admitted that these people are very expert swimmers, and have almost as much dexterity as fish in the water: their efforts, however, are chiefly confined to the surface. Wonderful must be their skill in diving, to be capable of descending to the depth of two hundred and forty feet; or to continue in that situation a sufficient time to cut through a cable!

One of the best divers in that country was employed at Karakakooa, to recover a caulking iron which had been dropped in twelve fathoms water. To stimulate his exertion, a considerable reward was promised him if he succeeded: but after two unsuccessful attempts, he was so exhausted as to be unable to make a third trial then, though he promised to renew his efforts the following day; when, however, he thought proper to decline another attempt, and the caulking iron was suffered to remain at the bottom. Captain Vancouver mentions this circumstance on his own knowledge, and not from the representation of others.

About two in the afternoon they anchored off the west side of Onehow; and in the evening, Mr. Puget, whom the captain had directed to examine the north-west side of this island in the Chatham, joined the Discovery. Having now accomplished their survey of the Sandwich Islands, and been disappointed of their promised supply of yams, they took their leave of Onehow on the 14th.

SECTION XXIII.

Part from the Chatham—Indications of Land—Proceed along the Coast—Enter Cook's River.

HAVING left the Sandwich islands on the 15th of March, their course was directed to the northward, with a fresh breeze; but as the Chatham was some distance astern, a chance was given her to overtake the Discovery; she did not appear by ten at night, nor answer a false fire, the captain therefore entertained hopes of seeing their consort at day-light; but in this he was disappointed, and wondered at the cause of their separation. Among other surmises, he thought it was not improbable, that by the low sail he had carried during the night, she might have passed unobserved, and was then a-head. He proceeded, however, towards the coast of America, hoping to join the Chatham at the appointed rendezvous.

On the 24th the wind blew a fresh gale from the south-east, accompanied with dark gloomy weather: on the 26th, two pieces of drift wood were passed; one which appeared to have been a considerable time in the water, as it swam deep, and was almost covered with barnacles;

numerous spectators were in their best apparel, and all retired decorously at the conclusion of the performance. This entertainment was declared to be in compliment to the wife of the regent on the proclamation of her pregnancy, which was to be repeated, at stated times, till the happy issue had taken place. Fire-works, as usual, were exhibited by Captain Vancouver, in return for the amusement he had received.

the

the other was more buoyant, and was attended only by a few of those shell-fish. These pieces of wood were the only indications of the vicinity of land that had been seen by our navigators, between the Sandwich Islands and the American coast. Mr. Puget afterwards said, however, that in passing these regions, about four degrees to the westward of their track, he saw petrels, and other oceanic birds. Messrs. Portlock and Dixon, in their voyages, mention their having seen seals, puffins, and other indications that some undiscovered land was not very remote; but the weather was so foggy at the time of the Chatham's passing, that this fact could not be ascertained.

With a fresh gale, chiefly from the western quarter, they proceeded rapidly to the north. On the 30th some sea-weed and a few divers were observed; and albatrosses and sheer-waters were perceived about the ship. The climate now began to assume a degree of severity unknown to them before: on the next day, monday the 31st, the mercury stood at the freezing point, and the scuttle cask on the deck was frozen. The frost, attended with snow and sleet, cased their rigging in ice. On the 3d of April a shag passed the ship, and in the afternoon high land was discerned almost wholly covered with snow, bearing north by east; which was afterwards distinguished to be an island*.

The season of the year increased the inhospitable aspect of the country; where, if any trees or shrubs existed, they were generally hidden beneath the winter garment of snow. About its shores some small whales presented themselves, which were the first our navigators had noticed during this passage to the north.

After sun-set on the 4th of April, the wind enabled them to stand nearly for Trinity Island; and at midnight, having soundings at the depth of fifty fathoms, they plied till day-light under an easy sail, with soundings from 70 to 82 fathoms. Early in the morning of the 5th they steered towards Trinity Island; but as they approached the shores, they found the lower parts of the coast were generally free from the snow: the frost, which had existed with severity since the 31st of March, now gave way, and the thermometer rose to 35. As they passed Trinity Island, it had the appearance of being divided into two, accompanied with several little islets lying to the north. As they proceeded they were visited by two of the neighbouring inhabitants, a young man and a girl, in a small skin canoe, who proved they were acquainted with some European nation, by having adopted their mode of salutation, by bowing as they approached the ship, and by their willingness to venture on board. The man took his dinner, *sans ceremonie*, drank brandy, and accepted such presents as were tendered him; but gave a preference to snuff and silk handkerchiefs. From his general appearance and language, they were inclined to suppose him to be a Kamtschadale, rather than a native of America, or any of its adjacent islands. They afterwards received a visit from a single Indian in a canoe, who was less familiar than the others; and after paddling at a distance round the ship, returned satisfied to the shore.

On the 12th of April, at noon, they were fast approaching the coast to the eastward of Cape Elizabeth; for which they steered, and passed that promontory to the entrance of Cook's river. The coast is composed of high land, with three small islands, and some rocks before it; the cape itself is the largest of these islands, which seemed to form a navigable channel between them and the main land; though some lurking rocks were discerned between the cape and the middle island. Another cluster of rocks are situated both above and beneath the surface of the water, to the south-west of the middle island.

For the first time this season, they observed some flocks of wild geese, and particularly remarked that they all flew to the southward; but on the 13th, the extreme mildness of the weather was succeeded by a sharp frost, and a very heavy fall of snow; and as our navigators were then in 20 fathoms water, they anchored till the weather should promise to be more favourable to their pursuit. Whilst they had a perfect view of every thing in the western quarter, a misty haze

* Though the captain did not consider this as a new discovery, yet its situation had not been properly ascertained: on taking a nearer survey the following day, it appeared to form an irregular four-sided figure, about ten leagues in circuit; having from its western part, which appeared to be insular, a remarkably high, flat, square rock, lying in a south-west direction, at the distance of about two miles; between which and the island, a ledge of smaller rocks are situated.

from the opposite side of the horizon totally obscured the opposite side*.

On the 17th, in expectation of finding a deeper channel, they proceeded, but the soundings decreased to six fathoms; and soon after the ship grounded in fifteen fathoms water; where they anchored to wait for the ebb tide, in order to return the way they had come. The shoal on which the ship had grounded, lies six or seven miles from the main land, and is near a league from the west side of the island; where also a flat extends some distance into the river. Not long after, the depth of water decreasing to four fathoms, the ship struck with some violence, occasioned by a heavy swell from the ocean, which for several days had been attendant on the flood tide. In this unpleasant predicament they remained nearly stationary for an hour and a half, the vessel frequently striking, and sometimes so heavily as to give birth to the most fatal apprehensions. Having, at length, got the ship's head to the eastward, she struck but once more in crossing the shoal, and the water deepened to fifteen fathoms; and they soon after had the satisfaction to perceive that the ship had made no water, nor suffered any other injury of importance. The Indian passengers were remarkably active and useful on board while the ship was in this perilous state, and gave the most unequivocal proofs of their excessive joy on seeing the Europeans again in perfect security†.

Not far from thence they were visited by two of the natives in a small canoe, who, hearing of the reception their neighbours had been honoured with, solicited similar indulgences: their canoe was therefore taken in, and they were permitted to continue on board. One of these, who affected a superiority of rank, presented the captain with some martin skins; for which he was requited with beads, iron, snuff, tobacco, and a few trinkets. They appeared to be acquainted with the Russians, and to know something of their language; but our Europeans lamented that they were unable to converse with them, as they appeared to be very civil and intelligent persons.

The Indian visitors informed our navigators, as well as they could, that their habitations were in this neighbourhood, on the western shore, and requested permission to take their leave. While they remained on board, they behaved with a degree of modesty and decorum rarely found among those in a more civilized state. They reposed implicit confidence in the integrity of the Europeans, and considered themselves as much at home in their society as if they had been most intimately acquainted with them.

In the morning of the 23d our navigators saw, on the surface of the water, large pieces of floating ice, which were violently drifted by the tide against the ship's bows; but it fortunately happened that they were not of sufficient magnitude to be materially injurious. The weather was fair on the 24th, when, at low tide a dry shoal was seen extending from the northward to the eastern shore, where the river took an eastwardly direction. For their satisfaction in this particular, as well as to find a more convenient station for the ship, and a supply of fresh water, the captain made an excursion after breakfast, accompanied by several of the officers. They were not long in discovering a fine stream of that element on the eastern shore, which might have been conveniently obtained after clearing away the ice. They next directed their attention to a bay or cove, where the captain entertained hopes of finding a commodious resting place for the ship. On reaching the south point of this

* On the 16th the air was so extremely keen that the sun's rays had no effect on the thermometer: they weighed about ten in the forenoon, with the flood tide, and a light breeze from the north-west, and proceeded up the river; they directed their course between the western shore, and the low island near it, noticed by Captain Cook. Shortly after noon they were visited by three of the natives, who came familiarly on board without the least hesitation, but bowed very respectfully on coming upon deck. They signified a desire for some snuff and tobacco, with some other trivial articles; which they seemed to be highly gratified by receiving, and manifested a degree of modest concern that they were incapable of offering any thing in return. At dinner, they did not hesitate to partake of the repast, with such liquors as were offered to them; though they drank very cautiously, seemingly aware of their intoxicating effect. Towards the evening a light breeze sprang up, when they, by significant gestures, wished to know if our European navigators were going up the river? Being answered in the affirmative, they agreed to accompany them; and, taking their canoes on board, which they had made fast along-side, the captain permitted them to enjoy that indulgence.

† The weather, though cold, was now become cheerful, and favoured them with an excellent view of the surrounding region, composed, at a small distance from the river, of stupendous mountains, clothed in a perpetual sheet of ice and snow; presenting a prospect magnificently grand, yet dreary, cold, and inhospitable. A volcano appeared near the summit of these, which from two distinct craters emitted large columns of whitish smoke.

bay, they observed near the edge of the steep cliffs that form it, some houses, which, on a nearer survey, appeared to be mere skeletons of habitations which had been deserted.

The watering place, already mentioned, lying to the south of their anchorage, they weighed with the latter part of the ebb, that they might place themselves as conveniently to it as the shores would admit; but in attempting this, they ran a-ground on a shoal between their last anchorage and the shore. The ship was, however, immediately hove off, without having sustained any apparent injury. The next morning Mr. Swaine was dispatched with a party to clear away the ice that impeded the run of the water, and select a spot for the convenient reception of the casks; whilst another boat was employed in search of commodious anchorage for the ship. Such a situation being found about a mile to the southward of the run of water, they took their station there in the evening, and moored in five fathoms depth at low water.

SECTION XXIV.

Much incommoded by the Ice—Examination of the upper Part of Cook's River—Its Termination—Found to be only an extensive Arm of the Sea—Obtains the name of Cook's Inlet.

HAVING taken a station at a convenient distance from the shore, our navigators earnestly engaged in the several duties they had to perform; among which the procuring of wood and water was not the least essential. This service was much interrupted by the floating ice, great masses of which were buoyant, and driven with great violence against the boat, menacing their destruction. Some anxiety was also experienced for the safety of their cables, though every precaution had been taken for their preservation.

In the afternoon twenty-three natives visited them in a large canoe; all of whom were without arms. They were conducted by a young chief named *Chatidooltz*, who was treated with the greatest deference by all the party. A younger man than the chief, distinguished by the appellation of *Kanistooch*, was also particularly regarded. This person attended the chief upon all occasions, and was the only man indulged with the liberty of sitting on the same seat with him; the others humbly squatting themselves down upon the deck. At first only six were admitted on board, but as the evening advanced, the chief requested they might all be allowed to enter the ship, and that their canoe should be taken on board*.

The drift ice being less abundant the following day, the chief and his party took their leave; evincing their approbation of the treatment they had received, by singing as they paddled round the ship; on which occasion *Chatidooltz*, who was the only person standing up in the canoe, entertained the spectators with a number of ludicrous attitudes and grimaces. The chief promised a repetition of his visit in the course of a few days; and the captain endeavoured to convince him that game or fish would be highly acceptable to him. But his signs in reply to this request, did not encourage him to expect a supply of such refreshments.

The drift already mentioned to have been so troublesome and perplexing, now seemed to be in a diminishing state; but it afterwards became so much augmented by the flood tide, that large masses, forming almost complete fields of ice, were driven by the velocity of the spring tides, against the bows of the ship with alarming violence. The following day, Tuesday the 29th,

* Captain Vancouver, knowing their propensity to pilfering, in which they had too frequently amused themselves, acquainted the chief with his suspicions; who, in reply, assured him he might rely on their honesty. This declaration, and the good behaviour he had witnessed in several of their countrymen, induced him to comply with the earnest solicitation of *Chatidooltz*. With this favour they seemed highly gratified, and were scrupulously exact in supporting the character their chief had given them; being honest, modest, and particularly engaging in their manners and deportment. After supping upon salt meat and biscuit, in company with five other Indians who had been invited on board, they continued there till the next morning; when the captain distributed among them presents of tobacco, snuff, ear-shells, buttons, beads, and needles, which were severally accepted with the most lively tokens of their gratitude.

brought

brought no favourable alteration. The quantity of ice, and the rapidity of the tide continued to increase to a very alarming degree: one large body of ice hooked the small bower cable, and with the force of the tide broke it about fifteen fathoms from the bows. At the same time the cable of the best bower, by which alone the ship now rode, was constantly pressed with such immense weights, that our navigators would have despaired of its being able to sustain them, had it not been for a new sixteen-inch cable, larger than those of their own establishment, which had been procured at the Cape of Good Hope. But great as their confidence might be in this circumstance, their situation was extremely irksome; for in the event of its breaking, they would have been reduced only to one anchor and a thirteen inch cable for their preservation*.

Towards slack water, they had some intermissions of these threatening dangers; in one of which, by means of creeping, they fortunately hooked the broken cable; but the rapid return of the ice only afforded time to affix a buoy to it, that it might be recovered with the greater facility. About the time of high-water they were visited by ten Russians, with double that number of Indians, in a large open rowing boat, who with great difficulty and circumspection advanced to the ship through the drift ice; they expressed great concern for the safety of our navigators. It was apprehended they had come with an intention of passing the night with them; but after remaining on board three very unpleasant hours, they were induced, by the prospect of an extensive open space between the fields of ice, to take their leave.

But whilst they were thus annoyed, and kept in a state of solicitude by the ice, the weather, though cold, was serene and pleasant; and on the 1st of May they had the happiness of observing that a less quantity of ice was brought up by the flood tide than usual; and at low water they fortunately recovered their anchor and cable. They were again much incommoded by the ice on the following day; but by moving their station a little to the south-eastward, the cable at low water was found to have hooked to a rock and the ship grounded; and so remained till she was floated off by the return of the flood tide. The weather altered on the 3d: the sky was obscured by thick misty rain and fog, which continued till the 4th; when the weather again became fair and pleasant: the surface of the water was nearly free from ice, and opened a communication for transacting business on the shore.

In the evening Mr. Whidbey and his party returned on board, after having accomplished the service he had been sent to perform; as his examinations were principally relative to nautical, mathematical, and philosophical objects, we again decline giving our readers a particular detail of those abstruse objects:—We mean, however, to introduce an account of such remarkable occurrences as may arise, independent of scientific subjects.—One evening, in particular, on the discharge of some musquets that had become damp, fifteen Indians came from the woods, and with great cheerfulness and affability welcomed them to their region, by presenting them with some dried salmon; for which Mr. Whidbey made at least an adequate return; and accompanied them to their habitations, which were about a mile from the boats, and consisted of two huts that seemed to have been recently built. Each of these fabrics contained a family of about fifteen persons, including different ages and both sexes; whose behaviour was marked with that decorum which had been eminently preserved among their countrymen who had visited the ship.

The next morning their survey was continued through the rocky labyrinth, extending about seven leagues along the shore. Great circumspection was necessary to conduct the boats clear of these dangerous pyramidical rocks, rising perpendicularly from a base at the depth of four

* All communication with the shore was now at an end; and by the violence with which the ice, almost as hard and ponderous as the solid rock, was frequently driven against the ship's bows, created serious apprehensions lest the hull of the vessel should sustain some irreparable injury. In addition to these unpleasant circumstances, on heaving the slack of the cable at high water, they saw it had been chafed by rubbing against some rocks at the bottom. To have quitted a station so precarious, and so pregnant with disasters, would have been a happy relief; but, had they been ever so much inclined, this resource was denied them, for not a breath of air had been in motion during the last twenty-four hours. Had they attempted to move, they must have resigned themselves to the influence and impetuosity of the stream, encumbered with huge masses of ice, through a narrow and intricate channel; without being able to convey any intimation for the guidance of the absent part of their little community in the boats.

to

to nine fathoms. Had any of their boats grounded on them with the rapidity of the falling tide, instant destruction could only be expected. This extraordinary rugged region appeared to join the southern side of the shoal, on which the Resolution had grounded in 1778: it must therefore be considered as a very fortunate circumstance, that neither Captain Cook nor themselves had attempted to pass on the south of that shoal*.

The Russians, who had resided at this station about four years, appeared to be perfectly content to live after the manner of the native Indians; partaking with equal relish and appetite their nauseous food, adopting the same fashion, and wearing the same apparel; differing from them only in their exterior appearance by the omission of paint upon their faces, and by their not decorating their persons with any of the Indian ornaments. They seemed to live on the most intimate terms of friendship with the Indians of all descriptions, who were perfectly satisfied in being subjected to the Russian authority.

Captain Vancouver observes, that as the navigators advanced to the north-east of this river, the western shore gradually inclined towards the eastern, till they were within half a mile of each other; and that by continuing to advance about two miles, their curiosity became satisfied, by seeing its eastern banks unite with those on the western side, and terminate in a circular form; the most distant part appearing to be within half a league of them, The water which flowed between the banks, still retained a very considerable degree of saltness, and clearly demonstrated that neither by falls, marshes, or fens, any large quantity of fresh-water found its way to the ocean by this communication; and that, consequently, " according to the general acceptation of geographical terms, this can be no longer considered as a *river:* I shall therefore distinguish it henceforth as an *inlet.*" Thus terminated this very extensive opening on the coast of north-west America, to which had the first discoverer of it, whose name it bears, dedicated one day more to its examination, he would have spared the theoretical navigators the trouble of ascribing to this arm of the ocean a channel, to which an existing north-west passage to the ocean might ultimately be discovered.

While our navigators were making these observations for ascertaining the termination of *Cook's Inlet,* they were attended by a party of the natives, who conducted themselves with great decorum, and earnestly invited them to their habitation, at the distance of about a mile from the water-side: it had the appearance of being constructed by the Russians, but was much out of repair, and seemed to be now considered as only a temporary resting place for travellers. Accepting the invitation, they were cheerfully and affably received by the whole party; who, on finding their intentions were speedily to depart, solicited them to prolong their stay. As an additional inducement, they added, that their friendly young chief *Chatidooltz* was at no great distance, and would speedily arrive at their dwelling. But having satisfied their curiosity, they repaired towards the ship with the first of the ebb tide; and arrived on board about four in the afternoon, where every thing was in readiness to take them down the inlet the next morning.

In the evening two guns were heard in the offing; and the next morning, Wednesday the the 7th, a brig was seen at anchor, which proved to be the Chatham. About noon Mr. Puget came on board, who related sundry particulars which had occasioned the separation, and other inevitable causes of delay.

* In pursuing his survey of Cook's river, Mr. Whidbey observes, that he saw one large house, about fifty feet long, twenty-four wide, and ten in height. It was appropriated to the residence of nineteen Russians, and superintended by an elderly man, who conducted their party into the house, by a small door, which was the only entrance. Having seated them at a table, near the upper end of the mansion, a repast consisting of dried fish and cranberries was produced. But the offensive odor of the house took away any relish for such dainties. The attentive host, perceiving a reluctance in the guests to partake of the refreshments that had been set before them, ordered the cranberries from the table, and caused them to be beaten up into a *ragout* with some train oil; when they were again served up, and were expected to have been eaten with avidity. But these hospitable endeavours to please proving unsuccessful, and the gentlemen having sacrificed as much to politeness as their stomachs could bear, sought relief in breathing the pure air, and instantly returned to their tents.

SECTION XXV.

Proceed from Cook's Inlet to Prince William's Sound—Meet a large Fleet of Canoes—Spring the Bowsprit in a strong Gale of Wind—Carried away the fore Yard—Survey of Prince William's Sound by the Boats—A Storm—Visited by a few Russians—Hospitally received by Colomenee and Ballusian—Icy Bay, and Mount Elias.

THE weather being remarkably serene, the morning of the 16th of May was ushered in by a sight that had been little expected in these seas. A numerous fleet of canoes collected about the Discovery, each carrying only two men; and at the same time a considerable number of them visited the Chatham; the whole fleet containing about four hundred Indians. With a true mercantile spirit, they instantly engaged in commercial dealings, bartering away their hunting and fishing implements, which had been neatly manufactured from the sinews of different animals: and with bags curiously decorated with needle work, performed on the thin membrane of the whale's intestines. These articles, with some fish, and their ingenious models of canoes, constituted the principal commerce with these people, as well as with the natives in Cook's Inlet. Furs seemed now no longer considered as forming a part of their apparel, as they had been on a former visit. These Americans were now satisfied with the skins of birds or quadrupeds of inconsiderable value. This frugal fashion was probably introduced by their Russian friends, in order to increase the number of the skins of the sea otter, ermine, martin, and foxes, and such other animals as come under the denomination of furs, which are worth the trouble of importing.

These good people conducted themselves with great probity, and continued with our navigators till near noon, when they all retired to a bay, they were then abreast of. The haziness of the atmosphere on the 18th prevented their seeing the coast; and in the afternoon they passed Chiswell's Isles. The intention of our navigators was to have passed along the south-east side of Montague Island, but the wind veering about to the eastward, and the weather being overcast, they bore up, and in the evening they anchored within the south point of this island*.

On the 23d they remained under sail till about ten o'clock, when a sudden flurry of wind vented its whole fury on them with such immense violence, that, though the topsails were down before it was at its height, all the masts were expected to have gone over the side; but fortunately they escaped with the loss of the foreyard only, and the splitting of most of their sails then set; and being then at no great distance from the shore of Montague Island, they anchored in fifteen fathoms water, struck the top-gallant-masts, and replaced their damaged sails.

Lieutenant Swaine, with the carpenters and a party of men, was sent on shore to procure a foreyard, in which they almost instantly succeeded: this was directed to be rough-squared, only in such a way as to admit of its being used for the present to convey them to Chalmer's harbour, where the ship was to remain whilst the boats were engaged in exploring the navigable extent of the opening. On the 26th the foreyard was sent on shore to be properly finished; and various necessary repairs, in and about the vessel, were diligently engaged in.

Two boat parties were now equipped: one under the direction of Mr Whidbey, and the other of Mr. Johnstone: the former with the yawl and large cutter; and Mr. Johnstone with the Chatham's and the Discovery's smaller cutter. Their respective objects were a survey of the western shore of the exterior coast of Cape Suckling; on which service they departed on the 17th.

The weather being serene and pleasant, was

* Whilst they continued at anchor, they were visited by four of the natives, in two small canoes, one of whom was an elderly man, who seemed to know they were from England; as he frequently made use of the words "English, Portlock, and Nootka". The meaning of the two former was perfectly comprehended; and by the latter was supposed to be meant the vessel in which Mr. Meares had passed a winter in this sound. These people had nothing to dispose of, nor could they be prevailed on to venture on board, though they had no objection to receive such trivial presents as were bestowed on them; expressing their acknowledgments in the Russian language, and intimating that they were people of that nation residing up the sound.

equally

equally favourable to these excursions, and to their respective employments. Among the latter our navigators attempted to take some fish with the seine, but without success: on the 28th the weather became gloomy and overcast, and the rain descended in torrents till the 30th, when it abated. During the night it became calm, and a favourable alteration was expected to have taken place: but about five in the morning of the 31st, the wind resumed its easterly direction with accumulated violence. The stream cable gave way, and broke near the anchor; and, on a closer examination, it was discovered to be stranded in three different places. By this accident they were obliged to remain unmoored during the storm, and at low water the ship took the ground for a short time, but on the returning flood tide she floated again. This very unpleasant weather continued till June 2d, when it became more tranquil, the ship was re-moored, the stream anchor recovered, and their other essential concerns were again in a train of execution. On the 3d they had the mortification to be convinced, by the carpenters employed on the bowsprit, that it was entirely rotten in the middle, and that all the time and labour upon that business had been applied to no effect*.

Early on the 5th they were visited by some strangers, who landed from their canoes at the brewing tent. As they intimated no desire of visiting the vessels, Captain Vancouver paid his compliments to the party on shore; which consisted of eight Indians and a Russian: he particularly invited the latter on board, and requested he would prevail on the Indians to procure them some fish, for which they should be thankfully rewarded. The invitation was positively declined, but he signified an inclination to procure some fish for them: in consequence of which the canoes were launched, and the party accordingly set off.

In the evening two of the canoes returned, with four of the Indian visitors; but the Russian was not of the party; nor did any of the Indians exhibit any fish, or other article for sale. The captain made them several presents, with which they seemed exceedingly delighted; and particularly informed them that he had an abundance of such articles, which he would gladly exchange with them for fish, wild fowl, &c. As the Russian had shewn, from his behaviour, that apprehensions for his personal safety deterred him from visiting the ship, the captain sent him by these Indians some beef, pork, bread, and rum, in order to dissipate his fears and encourage him to a perfect confidence in their pacific disposition.

The four Indians again returned, bringing with them two wild geese, and two divers, as a present from the Russian, who still evinced that he was much influenced by his fears; though he was still evidently desirous of being enriched by what our Europeans had to give away. This appeared from the instructions he had invariably given them to ask for such articles as they knew would be highly acceptable to him. These were readily entrusted to their charge, with a repetition of the strongest assurances of their friendship, and of their earnest solicitations to see them on board†.

On the 8th the wind blew fresh from the northward, accompanied with bright shining weather. In the forenoon Mr. Johnstone and his party returned, having completed the examination of his limits on the inside of the sound—The following particulars which came under his notice, have a claim to our attention in the general history of Captain Vancouver's voyage, and are not of too confined a nature to be introduced into a performance calculated for general amusement and information.

The evening became unpleasant as the day advanced, and a very hard gale of wind blew from

* On the 4th, being the anniversary of his Majesty's nativity, no work was engaged in but that of hauling the seine, in the pleasing expectation of procuring some fish for the people's dinner. A second disappointment was, however, the consequence; but as good a dinner was served as the ship's provisions afforded, and a double allowance of grog, with which the auspicious day was cheerfully celebrated.

† The Russian having been joined by two of his countrymen, the three paid our navigators an early visit on the 7th; but they came unprovided with any refreshments; which operated as some disappointment to the captain, as he relied on the performance of their promise of furnishing him with an ample supply of fish. The Russian who had given incontestible proofs of his unwillingness to enter the ship, was named Ammus Niconnervitch Ballusian. He was better acquainted with geography, and the sea charts, than any of his companions, and in other respects appeared to be a sensible intelligent man: speedily comprehending the object of the wishes and enquiries of our navigators in this part of the world. In the course of conversation, the captain having expressed a desire of seeing a Russian chart of their modern discoveries in this ocean, he said he had such a chart at Port Etches, which had been lately constructed: this he offered to procure; and, after taking some refreshments, departed for that purpose, leaving his companions behind.

the eastward, attended with heavy rain. About noon the party reached Snug-corner cove, where shelter might have been found from the existing inclement weather; but Mr. Johnstone, eager to prosecute his survey, and supposing that some other secure retreat might be met with before night, pursued his route between the south point of the cove, and the island lying off it. The easterly gale continued increasing, insomuch that the violence of the storm induced them to retire to the island they had just observed, where they hauled the boats on shore to preserve them from the wind and sea: to which they were much exposed by their critical and insecure situation.

Soon after the party had landed, a loud cry from the woods assailed their ears, of "*Lawlee Lawlee,*" signifying friendship; and four Indians instantly appeared, with extended arms, and making pacific gestures to shew their aversion to hostile purposes; which being returned, with some trivial presents from the party, friendship and civility were established on both sides. The Indians' canoe had been just hauled up within the skirts of the wood, but their residence was at a considerable distance; the violence of the storm only had driven them here for shelter. It afterwards appeared, however, that these worthy natives thought proper to steal away during the night. This abrupt departure occasioning suspicions of their delinquency, enquiry was made into the particulars; when it was soon discovered that an axe was missing which had been used the preceding day. This implement could not have been purloined without the unpardonable negligence of those upon the watch; a fault which in future was properly noticed by Mr. Johnstone, who adopted such measures as produced a different conduct in those who had been thus inattentive to their duty, during the remainder of his excursion. In the course of the survey, they discovered on their landing, an old bear nearly at the top of a pine-tree, with two cubs: the former instantly descended, and made its escape; but the young ones were shot, and afforded them an excellent repast. The party indeed fared tolerably well on this expedition, having killed several wild fowl, and collected an immense quantity of eggs on the rocks where they had landed.

This party had entered port Etches, which Mr. Johnstone had the captain's directions to visit, if circumstances would permit him so to do, to obtain some geographical information from the Russians established in that place, whose habitation they found situated in the north-west part of that port. Here they were received with every mark of politeness and respect by the principal person, Mr. Peter Colomenee, who had the direction of an extensive commercial establishment. Mr. Colomenee then conducted the party to the Russian residence, which was defended by a galliot of about seventy tons burthen, hauled on shore, placed erect, and forming nearly one side of the square, within which their houses were built. On board this vessel some armed Russians constantly resided, and on her decks some swivel and carriage guns were mounted: three of the latter were also observed at the entrance of the large common dwelling house. Here they were seated to partake of a breakfast, consisting of the following delicacies—boiled seal's flesh, train oil, and a small decoction of eggs; served up with a degree of neatness correspondent to the delicacy of the articles of which the repast was composed; the skin, and most of the hair, still adhering to the flesh of the seal, did not operate as a provocative on this occasion. Mr. Johnstone desired to add a portion of chocolate, beef, and bread to the breakfast; which was readily admitted, and to which their Russian host rendered ample justice.

Mr. Johnstone said there were but a few Indians in the neighbourhood of this settlement, but he believed they had a considerable village at the head of the port: the Russians were said to amount to about a hundred. In consideration of the attentive reception he had experienced from Mr. Colomenee, and in return for the favours their party had received from the Russians at the Indian village, Mr. Johnstone presented their hospitable host, with such articles of traffic and consumption as were then remaining; among which was about half a gallon of rum; which was considered as the most acceptable compliment of the whole. Mr. Colomenee declared he had not, for a considerable time, been in the actual possession of such a delightful quantity of spirituous liquor. The immediate, and immoderate use of it, indeed, soon proved it to be a fortunate circumstance that his situation precluded him the indulgence of such luxuries. Though his previous deportment, superior station, and venerable age, entitled him to the utmost respect of every rational individual; he became,

in

in an instant, an object of their pity: They found themselves under the absolute necessity of taking their leave, whilst he was thus intoxicated, and nearly bordering on a state of insensibility*.

The next section of the original work consists principally of geographical and other observations, respecting the adjacent country and its inhabitants; with some further particulars relative to the survey. Captain Vancouver informs us, that on the 19th of June light southerly airs, with the assistance of the flood tide, drove the Discovery directly towards the north point of the entrance of port Etches; where, with a hundred fathoms of line, no bottom could be reached within a quarter of a mile of the shore, on which the sea broke with great violence: fortunately, however, a breeze sprang up from the north-east just sufficient to enable them to stem the current, and relieved them from all apprehensions of danger. This breeze was succeeded by calms and light southerly airs, which, about noon, drove them into the entrance of port Etches, without their being able to resist their influence. They bore away for anchorage, and at last anchored in thirty-one fathoms water.

After dinner the captain went on shore, accompanied by several of the officers, and was as politely and hospitably received by Mr. Colomenee and Mr. Ballusion, as the poverty of their situation would permit them. Here they were also introduced to a gentleman named Smyloff, who presided over the maritime part of this mercantile company, and who superintended the galliot mentioned by Mr. Johnstone, as forming the side of an inclosure near the landing place at the Russian factory. On their return they were accompanied on board by Mr. Ballusian and Mr. Smyloff; the former, after supper, returned to the shore; but Mr. Smyloff remained with them till they were clear of the port; which they did not effect till about noon on the 20th†.

Captain Vancouver particularly mentions *Icy Bay*, and Mount St. Elias: he observes that, by ten in the forenoon on the 29th of June he tacked in twenty-three fathoms, within a league of the east point of the above icy bay, which he named Point Riou. It is low, and well wooded, with a small island to the westward of it. Eastward from the steep cliffs that terminate this bay, and from whence the ice passes into the sea, the coast has a spacious margin of low land, rising from a gradual ascent to the foot of the chain of lofty mountains, whose summits are the base from whence *Mount St. Elias* towers, majestically conspicuous in regions of perpetual frost. As they advanced along the coast from point Riou, the country became less woody, and further to the eastward vegetation gradually disappeared, and presented a naked barren country.

On the 7th of July the captain was visited by some of the inhabitants in a canoe, who came alongside without much hesitation; but would not venture on board, unless a hostage was sent into their canoe as a security for their safe return. Their request was, however, complied with: one of the European seamen was sent into their vehicle, and an Indian was received on board; to whom such presents were made as were expected to have been found acceptable, and to encourage them in offices of friendship. This treatment operated as might have been expected, for the Indian remained on board in a state of perfect ease and satisfaction; till a breeze from the south-west sprang up, which was favourable for our navigators' proceeding into Cross Sound, he desired his man to come on board, and intimated to the native that he must return to his canoe; but his countrymen expressed

* About noon on the 15th Mr. Whidbey arrived, having, as he conceived, completed the task alloted to his labours. His narrative is too nautical and scientific for our general work, and cannot therefore be circumstantially introduced.

† The only fish they obtained in the neighbourhood of Port Chalmers was a few indifferent crabs from the shores. In the outskirts of the woods they found a little white wild celery, and the spruce beer brewed in this quarter was superior to any they had before made upon the coast. A few geese, ducks, goosanders, and other aquatic birds were taken by the sportsmen, which proved very acceptable. They also captured an old black bear, but they hardly preferred the flesh of it to their own salted provisions.

They saw but few of the native inhabitants of the country; hardly any of them approached the ship: Though Mr. Whidbey had coasted near four hundred and twenty miles of the shores of the peninsula and continent, he did not meet with more than thirteen of the Indians: neither did he see any of their habitations, or deserted villages. Hence it appears that the population of Prince William's Sound is very inconsiderable, when compared with its extent. The appearance of the adjacent countries gave them every reason to believe that these regions were very thinly inhabited—It was also remarked, that, during the surveying excursions, not a sea-otter had been seen: whales or seals were seldom found; and wild fowl were less abundant in Mr. Whidbey's, than in Mr. Johnstone's expedition.

a resolution of detaining their new companion; and it was not till menacing signs were used, by produeing musquets, and hoisting out a boat, that he was suffered to quit the canoe. No sooner had the European sailor got on board the ship than he was presented with a sea-otter skin, and some other trivial matters, by a man who had the appearanee of the prineipal or ehief of the party, and to whom the captain made a very ample return. After this the Indians departed singing, and our navigators proeeeded up Cross sound, a spaeious opening in the coast; and, as Captain Cook correctly observes, braneh̃es into several arms, the largest appearing to take a northerly direetion*.

Chapter X of the original contains a survey of the exterior coast of King George the Third's Arehipelago; and relates two boat exeursions, rendering more complete the survey of the continental shore, of north-west Ameriea. To justify our omission of these and several other particulars of a limited and seientific nature, we have taken the liberty to quote Captain Vancouver's own words; which are as follow—"I have considered it essential to the illustration of our survey, to state very exaetly not only the traek of the *vessels* when navigating these regions, but likewise those of the *boats* when so employed, as well when I was present myself, as when they were conducted by Mr. Whidbey or Mr. Johnstone, on whom the exeeution of that laborious and dangerous service prineipally fell, and to whom I feel myself indebted for the zeal with which they engaged in it on all occasions. The perusal of *these parts of our voyage* to persons not *particularly interested*, I am conscious will afford *but* LITTLE ENTERTAINMENT."

The following particulars, however, from Mr. Whidbey's narrative of this survey, will hardly be found uninteresting—In order to dry the wet clothes of his party, and to give a thorough cleaning to the boats, Mr. Whidbey landed on a commodious beach; but before the party had finished their business a large canoe arrived; in whieh were several women and children, and sixteen stout Indian men, who were without fire-arms. Their behaviour on the beach was courteous and friendly for a little time, but their conduet afterwards assumed a very suspicious appearance: the children withdrew into the woods, and the others fixed their daggers round their wrists; exhibiting other hostile indieations. To avoid the chance of disagreeable consequences, Mr. Whidbey thought it most humane and prudent to depart, and he continued his route down the braneh along its south-west shore. The Indians did the same, but kept on the opposite shore, and suddenly the canoe disappeared†.

This conduct of the Indians greatly attracted the observation of the party, and whilst they were observing the motions of these people,

* Chapter VIII which is here introduced in the original work, is devoted to Mr. Puget's survey of the coast between Prince William's and Cross sounds. The transactions in chapter IX are foreign to our present purpose, as they are principally occupied in an account of a boat excursion, and a description of Althorp and Cross sound. The following circumstance may, however, be entitled to attention. On the 18th of July in the afternoon, the amicable intercourse of the Europeans with the inhabitants of the country, was in some measure interrupted, by the detection of one of them in the act of stealing some of the lower part of the rudder chains: Musquets were fired to induce the delinquents in the canoe to return their prize, but to no effect: the launch was therefore sent in pursuit of the canoe, and when the Indians were on the point of landing the canoe overset, and most of the stolen goods were left, besides several other valuables they had collected in the course of the day. The offenders, consisting of two women and one man, were taken prisoners, and, together with their canoe, conveyed on board. The three delinquents were ordered into irons; but they had not been long in this disgraceful situation before the captain received a very penitent petition from the two ladies, who, on their joint promise of future good behaviour, were liberated. The man remained in confinement till the 19th, at which time it was asserted that a similar theft had been committed on board the Chatham, it was therefore thought expedient to make an example of the thief in their possession, as it might be attended with the desirable effect of preventing further misdemeanours: for this reason only he was punished with four dozen lashes; after which his canoe was returned to him, and he and his ladies were discharged.

† To avoid any communication with these people, the party stopped to dine near the high bluff observed from point Vandeput, but before they had finished their repast, the same Indians were seen coming round the point of the cove where the party had retired, and within a quarter of a mile of their dinner station. As the canoe approached, a musquet was fired over it, to deter the Indians from advancing; but it had a contrary effect, as they came forward with greater eagerness; but on a second shot being fired at the canoe, they instantly retreated, and took their station behind the point. Still as Mr. Whidbey suspected they were projecting some method of annoyance by surprise, he hastened the meal of his party, and put off from the shore. His conjectures were soon proved to have been well founded; for instantly a number of armed people issued from the woods, exactly at the spot where the party had dined; and almost at the same point of time the canoe was again seen paddling round the point of the cove.

their attention was more agreeably excited by the return of the boats under the direction of Mr. Johnstone. On the sight of these the Indians disappeared.

The captain also informs his readers, that Mr. Whidbey had his directions to take possession of the continent, from New Georgia north-westward to Cape Spencer, with the adjacent islands they had discovered within those limits, in the name of his Britannic Majesty, his heirs and successors. This, on the parties stopping to dine, was carried into execution; the colours were displayed, the boats' crew drawn up under arms, and possession taken under the discharge of three vollies of musquetry, with all the usual formalities; and a double allowance of grog served to the respective crews for the purpose of drinking his majesty's health. This circumstance having taken place on the birth-day of Frederic duke of York, the sound in which the ceremony took place, was honoured with the name of PRINCE FREDERIC'S SOUND.

SECTION XXVI.

Passage to the Southward along the Western Coast of America—Arrive at Nootka—Transactions at Nootka.

WEARY of an inactive solitary situation, Captain Vancouver determined to put to sea, and in company with the Chatham departed from what he had before distinguished by the name of port CONCLUSION. The navigators plied towards the sea, but made no considerable progress, as they were continually attended with adverse winds and thick foggy weather. It was not till the morning of the 24th that they reached the open ocean, to accomplish which they were in imminent danger of losing the vessels about twelve the preceding night, by being driven on cape Ommaney. The variable winds, and the irregularity of the tides, conducted them so near to that promontory, and the rock in its vicinity, that their utmost efforts in towing were required to keep the vessels off from the land, or inevitable destruction must have been the consequence. A heavy western swell at this time broke with great fury within half a mile of them; and as no anchorage or bottom could be found, their situation was exceedingly alarming; but they were providentially extricated by a gentle breeze from the north-west, when they were in this critical and perilous state.

The wind at north-west, accompanied by clear and pleasant weather, brought our navigators, on the 2d of September, to an anchor in Friendly cove, Nootka sound. Here they found his Catholic Majesty's armed vessels the Princessa, Aransasu, and the St. Carlos, belonging to the establishment at St. Blas, and several other vessels. The princessa, commanded by Senr. Fidalgo had arrived from St. Blas the day before, and had brought hither Brigadier General Don Jose Manual Alava, colonel of the regiment of Puebla, and governor of Nootka. This gentleman had been appointed governor of Nootka, in consequence of the death of the much esteemed Senr. Quadra, who had died in March, universally lamented.

The Discovery having, in the course of the day, greatly outsailed the Chatham, the latter did not arrive till after it was dark; a formal visit to the governor was therefore deferred till the following day. On Wednesday the 3d the two commanders waited on the governor, who resided on board the Princessa, where they were received by him and Sen. Fidalgo with great attention and politeness. Captain Vancouver was informed by Senr. Alava, that he was appointed to this government in order to finish the pending negociation, respecting the cession of these territories; which, in consequence of different constructions on the first article of the Spanish convention of the 28th of October 1790, had since the month of September 1792, been entirely suspended. The present governor, however, was still unprovided with the credentials necessary for the completion of this business; but on his departure from St. Blas in June, these documents were hourly expected, and a vessel was waiting there in readiness to be dispatched to this port, if they arrived in time for her reaching Nootka on the 15th of October; but should she not effect a passage by that time, she was to repair to Monterrey.

terrey. In consequence of this arrangement, Senr. Alava proposed to remain here till that period should arrive; and Captain Vancouver also thought it extremely probable, that a duplicate of his instructions for the like purpose might be transmitted by the same conveyance*.

Since their arrival they had occasionally been visited by *Maquinna, Clewpanelow,* with some of the inferior chiefs, and several of the inhabitants, who brought to market some fish and venison: but most of the people had now retired to their winter habitations up the sound. Senr. Alava expressed a desire to visit these absentees, and as it was generally known that such an excursion would be highly flattering to *Maquinna,* and many others, a party was formed; three of the ships' boats, and a Spanish launch were destined to convey the luggage. Senrs. Alava and Fidalgo, with Mr. Menzies, accompanied Captain Vancouver in the Discovery's yawl; and Mr. Puget, with some of the officers of the Chatham, went in the cutter; Lieutenant Swaine, with some of the gentlemen of the Discovery, were in their large cutter; and with those in the Spanish launch, the party consisted of fifty-six persons.

As the wind had not been favourable to them, it was sun-set before they arrived at a pleasant spot near *Maquinna's* village, where they pitched their tents; but, as the day was so far advanced, their ceremonial visit was deferred till the next: a message was therefore sent by *Clewpanelow,* who had attended them from the ships. But *Maquinna,* who was in readiness to receive them, instantly dispatched a messenger, requesting the pleasure of their company that evening. This, however, they thought proper to decline; but some of the gentlemen walked to the village to explain to him that it was only the lateness of the hour that prevented their attending him that evening, but they would certainly wait on him in the morning.

After breakfast on the 26th, the party proceeded to Tahsheis, and were welcomed, on their approach to the shore, by a vociferous old man, exclaiming "*Wacosh, Wacosh*"—a term expressive of friendship, and the favourable intentions of the natives towards them. The sentiments being properly returned, they landed, and were received by *Maquinna,* and two of his brothers, with loud and reiterated expressions of "Wacosh." This ceremony being ended, they were conducted through the village to *Maquinna's* mansion, where they were complimented with seats covered with mats at the upper end of the saloon.

Having taken their places, twenty or thirty men began each to strike with a stick on a hollow board, to summon the inhabitants of the village to that spot. This signal being instantly obeyed, *Maquinna* addressed the assembled crowd with great earnestness in a speech of considerable length, in which he took occasion to mention the infinite honour conferred upon him by this visit; and particularly endeavoured to justify his own general conduct in his political concerns. He then proceeded to enumerate the good qualities that were distinguishable in the character of the Spaniards and the English; and that both were strongly attached to himself and his people. He added, that he hoped they would be agreeably entertained by their mode of receiving visitors.

The performers, it appeared, were ready and anxious to begin their performance; for the instant *Maquinna* had ceased speaking, the hollow board music commenced, and a man fantastically

* Under this impression, and in consideration of many other circumstances relative to the situation of both vessels, Captain Vancouver resolved to remain till that period with Senr. Alava; and if, in the mean time, he should receive any instructions for the government of his conduct respecting the restitution of these territories, by the expected Spanish packet, or any other conveyance, he should be ready to act with Senr. Alava as the nature of his orders might require.

The weather was wet and gloomy, but it did not prevent *Maquinna* and *Clewpanelow,* with some other chiefs, and several of the natives, from visiting the vessels: the two former received suitable presents, with which they were highly satisfied; and the latter disposed of a small quantity of fish at a very exorbitant price. The governor, Senrs. Fidalgo, Saavadra, and several of the Spanish officers, honoured our navigators with a return of their visit on the 4th; but in consequence of their reduced stock of powder, they were under the necessity of declining the usual ceremony of saluting, which was very politely excused and dispensed with by the whole party.

On the 10th the wind blew fresh from the south-east, and exhibited an uncommon instance of lightning and thunder in this country, which, accompanied with torrents of rain, continued during the night. Both wind and weather, as the autumnal equinox approached, became very changeable. On the 13th the atmosphere was gloomy, with drifting showers. In the afternoon the wind blew from the north-east in heavy squalls, accompanied by torrents of rain. This kind of weather continued till the 17th, but the violence of the equinoctial gales from that time appeared to have abated.

dressed

dressed in a war garment entered the house: he was curiously decorated, and his face besmeared with black and red paint; or more properly speaking his features were hardly distinguishable. His hair was powdered with the delicate white down of young sea-fowl; and in his hand he bore a musquet with a fixed bayonet, making a savage, though a whimsical appearance. This man was followed by about twenty more, all fantastically decorated, but differently armed: some of them had musquets; others displayed pistols, daggers, swords, arrows, fish-gigs, and hatchets*.

The presents that had been provided for the occasion, were now exhibited to public view, consisting of copper, blue cloth, blankets, ear-shells, and other inferior articles, These were distributed by Senr. Alava and Captain Vancouver, according to the rank aud consequence of the receiver; these tokens of amity were so judiciously given, that acclamations of applause resounded through the village. On these subsiding, a second vocal and instrumental performance was exhibited, which concluded by a return from *Maquinna* for the presents they had made—He afterwards placed a sea-otter skin at the feet of Senr. Alava; and paid a similar compliment to Captain Vancouver, Senr. Fidalgo, and Mr. Puget: after which Senr. Alava, and Captain Vancouver were each presented with a second sea-otter skin; thus completing the ceremonies of the visit†.

Their curiosity being satisfied, and their pockets emptied by the unremitting solicitations of the inhabitants of Tahsheis, of all the trinkets they had provided, they strolled for some time about the skirts of the wood, and then returned to their encampment. Here they found *Maquinna*, with several of their Tahsheian friends, who requested they would return to partake of an entertainment in the evening; but having made an appointment to visit *Clewpaneloo*, at his principal residence called Mooetchee, he could not comply with the solicitations of *Maquinna* and his fraternity. They were honoured at dinner with the company of *Maquinna*, several of his family, and some other chiefs, who after expressing their thanks for their visit, bade them farewel after dinner, and they departed.

Their progress was not very rapid, as both wind and the stream were adverse to their pursuit, which was through a region so inhospitable in its appearance, that Senr. Alava frequently expressed his astonishment that it could ever have been an object of contention, between the respective sovereigns. It was near three in the afternoon of the 27th before they reached the village of a Mooetchee, which consisted of a few houses huddled together in a cove; the inhabitants of which crowded about them, and gave them much inconvenience, though their intentions were perfectly innocent and inoffensive. *Clewpaneloo*, though he was their chief, had not sufficient influence to restrain this behaviour, even within his own habitation, to which they were led by a narrow passage between the houses; the filth of which combined so many offensive exhalations, that they lost no time in the distribution of their presents, that they might be at liberty to retire‡.

As

* This preposterous group were drawn up before our navigators; and though they were perfectly satisfied of their harmless and peaceable intentions, their savage and barbarous appearance was not a little augmented by their uncouth actions and vociferous behaviour: accompanied by an unnatural kind of jumping. After these people had performed their destined parts, *Maquinna* undertook a mask dance by himself. He seemed greatly elated during the performance of this character, and convinced the beholders that he took infinite delight in it. The masks he had chosen did credit to his imagination in point of whimsical effect; and his dress was different from any of those worn by the other performers. It consisted of a cloak, and a short apron covered with hollow shells, with small pieces of copper so placed as to strike against each other, and produce a jingling noise; which with their substitute for a drum, and some vocal exertions, produced a savage and discordant noise. But as the object of their visit was complimental to *Maquinna*, their plaudits were bountifully bestowed, which gave general satisfaction to the surrounding multitude.

† In passing through the village, they observed it to be extensive, but thinly inhabited, which *Maquinna* thus accounted for—Many of the inhabitants were still absent, not having yet procured their stock of provisions for the ensuing winter; at which time, if all their habitations are occupied, eight or nine hundred persons are resident in the village. *Maquinna's* habitation was larger than any of the others, and had a very superior advantage over all of them by being less filthy.

‡ Their store of trinkets being exhausted, they repaired to their boats, accompanied by *Clewpaneloo;* who, in return, made them presents similar to those they had received from *Maquinna;* to which he added one infinitely more valuable than all the rest.—It was indeed a very fine buck, just killed; which being placed in their boat, they took leave of Mooetchee, amidst repeated acclamations of "*Wacosh, Wacosh,*" with earnest entreaties for them to

As the month of October advanced, they knew that the summer season of this country was drawing to a conclusion; and therefore took an early opportunity of receiving on board the observatory instruments and tents. To complete their fuel and water could not fail of detaining them three or four days longer; so that waiting the stipulated time, after which the Spanish ship was not to be expected, could now be of little consequence, when compared to the importance of her arrival, in expediting their return to England. This, however, did not happen, nor any other circumstance deserving notice during this anxious interval. At midnight on the 16th the Discovery put to sea, in company with the Chatham. The Princissa, Captain Fidalgo, with Governor Alava on board, was to follow the next day. Monterrey was chosen as the next rendezvous, where these officers expected our navigators would meet with a reception suitable to their wishes and expectations.

SECTION XXVII.

Quit Nootka Sound—Violent Storm—Arrive at Monterrey—Receive the Deserters from the Chatham and Dædalus—Excursion into the Country—Extraordinary Mountain.

A LIGHT breeze from the land accelerated the progress of our navigators out of Nootka Sound, so that, by day-light on the 17th of October, they were about three leagues from the land, when the wind suddenly died away, and was succeeded by a calm with thick hazy weather; which gave the ships the appearance of being stationary the whole of the day. The haze was succeeded by a thick fog, without a breeze of wind. The obscurity in the atmosphere had concealed the Chatham since the preceding evening, but the stationary situation of the Discovery, induced Captain Vancouver to conclude that she could not be far off. Their powder being nearly exhausted, the fog signal had not been made; a gun was, however, fired, and to their great astonishment it was not answered. The fog and calm continued, and the depth of water was a hundred and five fathoms, with sandy bottom. The fog now dispersed, and the calm was succeeded by a light breeze: another gun was fired, and a false fire burnt as a signal to the Chatham, but neither was answered. On the 19th, they made all sail, steering to the south-east.

In looking round for their consort, a vessel was discovered astern, for which they shortened sail; but perceiving it to be the Spanish ship Princissa, they directed their course as before with all sails spread to a pleasant easterly breeze. On the 27th the wind increased to a gale so violent, as to render it necessary to strike the top-gallant masts, and bring to under the storm stay-sails: this gale was accompanied with a very heavy rain till midnight, when the storm suddenly moderated*.

The ship being secured, an officer was dispatched to the Presidio with the usual ceremonies, and with an apology for their not having saluted. The people who, on their first visit to this Presidio, had deserted from the Dædalus and Chatham, were found here, directions having been given for their being delivered up to our navigators; but as the governor of the province was soon expected, they declined taking any steps in this business till he should arrive. Nor did they

prolong their stay. But it was thought expedient to make the best of their way towards the ships, on board of which they arrived on the 28th; nothing particular having occurred, during their absence: the weather which had favoured their excursion, had been equally favourable to the several employments of re-equipment; and the serenity of the weather afterwards continued to further their operations.

* In the morning of the 6th of November, our navigators found themselves about three or four leagues from point Anno Nuevo, point Pinos in sight, and having a moderate breeze, with pleasant weather, they steered for Monterrey, where they anchored about two in the afternoon, and moored nearly in their former situation. Here they found the Chatham, she having arrived there on the evening of the 2d. By Mr. Puget a satisfactory account was given to Captain Vancouver, of the cause and consequences of the Chatham's separation from the Discovery. And after their professional enquiries were mutually satisfied, the captain had the pleasure to be informed by Mr. Puget, that he had been most cordially received by their former friend Senr. Arguello, the lieutenant of the Presidio, who then, as on their first visit to this place, officiated as governor during the real governor's absence.

erect

erect the tents or observatory on shore for the same reason, considering it more respectful to submit these matters to the approbation of Don Diego de Borica himself, than to Senr. Arguello the deputy governor; from whom they only solicited wood and water, and to obtain some necessary refreshments.

On Sunday part of the ship's company were indulged with a run on shore; and on Monday the 10th they were busily employed in procuring water. On the 11th Sen. Don Diego Borica reached the Presidio, where, the next morning, Captain Vancouver waited upon him, accompanied by most of the officers of both vessels, to congratulate him on his arrival; and to communicate to him his reasons for visiting the countries under his jurisdiction: these attentions afforded pleasure to the governor, and were thought perfectly consistent with the respective stations that each of the parties had the honour to fill. The indulgence which had been granted by Senr. Arguello, was now politely extended by the governor; with further permission to erect their tents and observatory on shore, under the direction of their own officers and guards. He obligingly added, that he would do every thing in his power to render their stay as pleasant and agreeable as their limited society could afford

They were informed by Senr. Borica, that, accompanied by his wife and daughter, with a suitable number of attendants, he had come from Mexico to this place on horseback; as no other mode of conveyance could be procured. They had taken care to provide a small camp equipage, to be pitched occasionally as a retreat from the heat of the sun, or for repose during the night. Upwards of eight months were employed in performing this journey through a solitary country, where few accommodations could be afforded for travellers,

An express arrived in the evening from Mexico, with dispatches from the viceroy of New Spain to the governor, and the long-expected instructions to Senr. Alava, respecting the cession of Nootka to the crown of Great Britain; but nothing addressed to Captain Vancouver accompanied these credentials. The embarrassment he had long experienced was now considerably increased, and he knew not what measures to pursue. He was however relieved from this dilemma the following day by Senr. Alava, who confidentially informed him that part of his instructions stated, that no farther altercation would take place respecting the precise meaning of the first article of the convention of the 30th of October, 1790, as the documents transmitted by Senr. Quadra and himself, had enabled their respective courts to adjust that business amicably, and nearly on the terms which the captain had repeatedly offered to Senr. Quadra in September, 1792.

Having maturely reflected on the several parts of this intelligence, Captain Vancouver concluded, from the various accidents to which his future services would render him liable, that government did not expect they should remain longer in these seas, than the survey of the American coast might require. The survey of the coast of North-West America being now accomplished, with a perfect reliance on the authenticity of the intelligence he had received from Senr. Alava, the captain resolved to make the best of his way towards England, by the way of Cape Horn, agreeably to his instructions.

The deserters from the Chatham and Dædalus had, at the request of the captain, been delivered up to him, or at least such of them as were the subjects of Great Britain. An account of the expences was exhibited against them, but as the captain did not think himself authorized to discharge this debt, he acquainted Borica that he would represent the business fully to the board of Admiralty, and the strictest justice might be relied upon. With this assurance the governor seemed perfectly satisfied*.

* Though materially engaged in various matters of business, and in a very debilitated state of health, under which he had severely laboured during the eight preceding months, Captain Vancouver was prevailed on to join in a party to the valley through which the Monterrey river flows; where he was gratified with the sight of the most extraordinary mountain he had ever seen. One side of it represented a splendid edifice, fallen into decay: the massy columns, which appeared to have been raised with great art, industry, and labour, were elegantly formed from beautiful cream-coloured stone; between these magnificent columns were deep excavations, resembling passages into the supposed interior parts of the structure: the whole presenting a most sumptuous display of apparent ruins, from the architectural knowledge and industry of remotest ages. In this excursion the captain had an opportunity of seeing, what he had often heard related, that the soil became more rich and fertile as they advanced from the ocean into the interior country.

All

All expectation of Mr. Broughton's return to resume the command of the Chatham being now abandoned, Captain Vancouver appointed Lieutenant Puget to that situation; and Messrs. Baker and Swaine to be first and second lieutenants of the Discovery. To Mr. Thomas Manby he gave the vacant lieutenancy; and appointed Mr. H. Humphreys to be master of the Chatham in his room.

The business with the shore now began to draw towards a conclusion: the yards, topmasts, and top-gallant masts were got up, and the rigging was in a condition for sea-service: but as a sufficient stock of water was not yet obtained, and a portion of time was required to be allotted for that purpose, the captain dispatched Mr. Swaine, on the 27th of November, with three boats, to the mission of St. Cruz, to procure a supply of vegetables; the continuation of dry weather here having made the usual produce of the gardens extremely scarce. Mr. Swaine returned on the 29th, and had been so successful, that, with the live stock, and the other refreshments which Monterrey afforded, they possessed a store of good things for the preservation of health, and for the necessary consumption of the people during a long voyage to a remote country.

SECTION XXVIII.

Quit Monterrey—Account of the Three Marias Islands—Proceed to the Southward,

WITH a fresh breeze from the north-east, attended with fair and pleasant weather, on the 2d of December our navigators quitted Monterrey, bidding adieu to governor Alava, and their other Spanish friends; from whose hospitality and kindness they had derived much happiness, and a prospect of the re-establishment of their health. From Monterrey bay their course was directed to the south-east, but in the evening the gale died away, and after twelve hours calm, it was succeeded by variable adverse winds; which continued till the 4th. The coast of New Albion was still in sight; but this was the last they saw of it. On the evening of the 8th, they beheld the island of Guadaloupe, which they passed in the night. At day-light on the 9th they saw the island of Cerros, about ten leagues distant, represented in the Spanish charts to be of the length of ten leagues, lying before an extensive bay on the shores of the peninsula.

Though our navigators were too far distant to attempt an accurate delineation of these shores, they could nearly ascertain the position of their most prominent points; and from the result of their calculations, the island of Cerros seemed to form on its western side a deep bay, between its north-west and south-west points. Several turtles were about the 10th, on the surface of the sea, one of which was taken by the small-boat of the Discovery*.

On the 15th at night, being then twelve leagues from Cape St. Lucas, and in the direction in which the Marias were said to lay, they plied under an easy sail till the next morning, which course, by nine in the forenoon, brought them in sight of those islands: in this direction they instantly steered, but could not gain an anchorage before dark; they passed the night in preserving their situation with the land, and in the morning steered for the passage between the northernmost and the middle, or Prince George's Island, so distinguished by Dampier. The largest and most northern island of this group is about thirteen miles in length. The south-west side of Prince George's Island is bounded by

* The part of the ocean in which they had now arrived was much frequented by bonitos, albicores, and other fishes of the tropical regions, besides a great number of turtles. These were so regardless of interruption, that Captain Vancouver was induced to send the small boat to collect some of them, and in less than half an hour she returned with thirteen very fine ones, each weighing from seventy to two hundred pounds: some of them were taken into the boat unhurt, but many of them were struck with the turtle-peg. They all proved to be most excellent food. The general face of the country was not very inviting, being almost destitute of trees, and other vegetable productions. At this time the northernmost part of the exterior coast of California bore north-east, distant three leagues.

detached

detached rocks at a small distance from its shores*.

The soil of Prince George's Island seemed to be principally of a sandy nature, on which the chief valuable production was *lignum vitæ*. It had also impenetrable thickets of small trees and thorny bushes: with the prickly pear, and several plants of the orange and lemon tribe. Some of the *lignum vitæ* which was cut close to the beach and brought on board, was very hard, ponderous, and of a close black grain. About the skirts of the woods many birds were seen; as hawks of several sorts, green parrots with yellow heads, paroquets, pigeons, and a variety of smaller birds, and many of them of the most beautiful plumage. Pelicans, curlews, and sandpipers were observed, but no quadrupeds were seen; Mr. Manby indeed noticed the footing of an animal, which he supposed must have been about the size of a fox. Many turtle tracks were noticed on the beach, and about a hundred of dead *manatee*, or sea-cows were conveyed beyond the present range of the surf. The carcases of these animals, from their advanced state of putrefaction, were supposed to have been so left about ten or twelve days before; and as they all seemed to be nearly in the same state of decay, they were supposed to be so deposited in a violent southerly storm. They were eagerly devoured by the vultures and other birds of prey assembled for that purpose. Captain Vancouver thought it extremely probable, that the carnivorous animals of the Marias are frequently regaled with such splendid repasts; for not only the sea-cows that remained entire, but the skeletons of many hundreds of those or similar animals, had also been cast on shore at different periods. Many sorts of fish, common to the tropical regions, were abundant about the shores: the sharks were the most daring among them; they followed the boats, and attempted to catch the oars; one of them indeed succeeded, but not without the loss of five of its teeth, which where left in the blade of the oar. A few snakes and guannas were perceived.

Such is the amount of the information acquired by calling at these islands, which are about a hundred and sixty leagues from Acapulco, and in the immediate vicinity of Saint Blas. On the 21st of December in the morning, our navigators had a sight of the American coast; but at so remote a distance that they lost every appearance of it by noon. During the two preceding days they had light variable winds from the eastward, with alternate calms and sultry weather. On the surface of the ocean great numbers of turtles were lying asleep in every direction: by lowering down the boat, without impeding the progress of the ship, they could select as many as they required.

The weather, though very clear, continued oppressively hot. Had it not been for their anxiety to get forward, and the extreme heat of the weather, their situation would have been rather enviable: the ocean was tranquil, abounding with a great variety of fish, turtles, and seafowls. They had no difficulty in providing for their fourth Christmas day since they had quitted the civilized world; which, with the beef, mutton, and poultry they had brought from Monterrey, the officers' tables exhibited such a scene of luxury as cannot be often seen in such distant regions of the ocean. An extra allowance of grog assisted in the celebration of the day, and to summon to their recollection their friends and favourites at home.

Light baffling winds greatly impeded their progress, and rendered it irksome beyond description. Intelligence was now communicated that some of their water-casks were discovered to have leaked out: in consequence of which Captain Vancouver was under the necessity of restraining the allowance of water to three quarts a man per day.

* The visit to these islands not having afforded an opportunity of taking an accurate description of their shores, or acquiring any essential information concerning them, the captain declined giving a circumstantial account of them; but he observes, that in navigating near them he observed no danger; there are indeed some detached islets and rocks about the shores, but they are all sufficiently conspicuous to be avoided; and so far as their examination extended, the regularity of the soundings gave them reason to believe, that secure anchorage might be obtained at a commodious distance from the shore.

SECTION XXV.

Proceed to the Island of Cocos—Description of that Island—Pass to the Southward—See Gallipagos Islands—Mention their Situation.

THE wind in the north-western quarter blew a steady breeze, and the heat was less oppressive. The atmosphere was clear, and the sea particularly smooth; dolphins, flying fish, bonitos, and a variety of smaller fish were immensely numerous: of turtles they could easily procure as many as they could dispense with. The two following days they were set to the southward at about half a mile per hour; and on the 7th the wind from the north-eastward became very light. and the process was engaged in for distilling fresh water from the sea. By this process, without much additional expenditure of fuel, about twelve or fourteen gallons of fresh water was procured in one day. If it could not be admitted to be of the first quality, it was perfectly fresh, and applicable to all the purposes of cooking.

As they advanced gently to the south-eastward, the riplings on the surface of the water, which our navigators had observed before, became more frequent, attended with agitation, and a rustling hissing noise; and with these particulars the Chatham was infinitely more affected than the Discovery. The soundings were tried, but no bottom was found in these riplings. with a hundred and forty to a hundred and seventy fathoms of line.

On the 20th of January, land was supposed to be seen from the mast-head at a great distance, bearing east north-east; which was not admitted to be land, till aided by a gentle breeze and the current the mariners had approached nearer to it, and it was peremptorily pronounced so to be. Concluding it to be the island of Cocos, at the distance of fourteen or sixteen leagues, the joyful tidings were communicated by signal to their little consort. The wind, which had been variable, became very light; and Captain Vancouver was not without his apprehensions that the current might force them past the island, before he had made choice of a situation for anchoring. That no time might be lost, Mr. Whidbey was dispatched in the cutter to make the necessary examination. About four o'clock, the captain had the pleasure to be informed by Mr. Whidbey that the shores abounded with excellent water, cocoa-nuts, and plenty of wood for fuel, which might easily be procured: especially in two small bays, both affording commodious anchorage sufficiently sheltered against the prevailing winds of the season. Mr. Whidbey made choice of the most eastern, for which they immediately steered, but could not stem the current till about nine at night, and at length moored in thirty three-fathoms water, good holding ground: the Chatham moored within them, in about twenty six fathoms water.

The ship being secured, Captain Vancouver went on shore, and discovered that a profusion of every requisite might easily be procured. Persons were immediately directed to obtain a supply of these essential articles, and to perform the the necessary business on board; where, at noon, the latitude was found to be materially different from that stated in Lord Anson's and other voyages; and the general appearance of this island so little corresponded with the island of Cocos, by Dampier and Wafer; that the captain entertained doubts of its being the identical island so described by those gentlemen. This island, however, did not fail to attract their attention from the many advantages it afforded them; and particularly as the soil appeared to be abundantly capable of affording variety of useful vegetables*.

* Near the place on shore where their operations were performing, evident marks of European visitors were displayed, by the trees having been felled with saws and axes; which the decayed appearance of the remaining stumps proved that they had been a long time cut down. Near a fresh-water brook, in this western bay, a bottle was suspended on a tree, containing a note addressed to the commander of any vessel that might happen to visit the island, signed "James Colnett;" stating, that the ship Ratler, South-sea whaler, of London, had arrived on the 26th of July, 1793; and after procuring wood, water, and other refreshments, had proceeded on her voyage, all in good health. It also stated, that, previously to her departure, a breed of hogs and goats had been left on the island; and a variety of garden seeds sown.

By the time they reached the vessels it rained very heavily, accompanied with a fresh gale from the south-west. Though this weather continued the whole of the 26th, they made a considerable progress towards completing their water and fuel. By the afternoon they had taken on board thirty-five tons of water, and as much wood as they could find a receptacle for; and having thus terminated their business with the shore, they quitted the island in the evening, in order to proceed to the southward*.

The sketch made by Mr. Whidbey of the island of Cocos, makes it four leagues in circumference, lying in a north-east and south-west direction: its length is about four miles, and its breadth two, with several detached rocks and islets dispersed about the shores. The small bay in which they had anchored at the north-east end of the island, is much preferable to the other westward of it. The western bay is larger, and more exposed; its soundings are less regular, and its bottom is not so good. The climate was thought temperate and salubrious, for though the thermometer was usually between seventy-eight and eighty, they experienced no oppressive heat.

This island has not a pleasant appearance in any point of view, though its inland surface is much diversified by hills and dales. With regard to its future utility, the abundant supply of water it affords is the first object of consideration. This abounds in every part, and can be easily procured. It is perfectly limpid, pure, and free from any unpleasant taste or colour. The soil near the streams that fall into the bays, is of a poor, loose, and sandy nature; but behind the beach, and in the fissures of the rocks, a rich black mould was observed, promising much vegetable nourishment; all its vegetable productions seemed to grow luxuriantly, covering the island in one entire wilderness†.

It is common for sea-faring persons to amuse themselves with these voracious animals, by hooking, or taking one from the others to feast upon; a practice attended with the ill consequences of drawing multitudes of them about the ship: the boatswain and a young gentleman narrowly escaped from being drawn out of the boat, by a very large shark which they had hooked in the midst of about a score of them. This circumstance induced Captain Vancouver to prohibit all further indulgence in this species of entertainment. These sharks appeared to be of three distinct sorts: the major part of them were of the tiger kind, beautifully streaked down their sides; the other sorts were brown and blue. It was, however, singularly remarked, that, though they all voraciously devoured the two

* It does not appear to whom we are indebted for the discovery of this valuable little island; nor do the several descriptions of the island of Cocos accord much with each other. After taking these, and several other circumstances into consideration, it seems probable that some other island might exist not very remote from this, to which these apparent discordant reports might more properly apply.

† Many of the trees that composed the forest, especially in the interior and elevated parts of the island, were of a considerable size, spreading into large branches towards the top. The cocoa-nut trees, which grow not only on the shore, but higher up on the sides of the hills, were the only trees that they had seen bearing fruit; though an unripe guava was picked up in one of the rivulets. Many different sorts of fern presented themselves: some of them having a stem of six inches in diameter, and growing to the height of twenty feet. Such were the most general vegetable productions of the island, that fell under their observation; to which our navigators added the seeds of peaches, apples, melons, with beans, peas, &c. These were sown by Mr. Swaine, in a spot selected and cleared for that purpose; where it was supposed such articles were likely to thrive.

Fish and fowl seemed to be in great abundance, and hopes were entertained that future visitors may derive some benefit from Captain Colnett's liberality; as a young hog was seen, by Mr. Swaine and some of his party; but on his observing them, he hastily retreated into the thicket. White and brown rats were extremely plentiful, and land crabs were almost as numerous. Birds of the oceanic tribe made their appearance in great flocks, and were not despicable food. Hawks, rails, and a species of brown and white herons, black birds, and a few others that chiefly inhabited the woods; with some ducks and teals, seemed principally to compose the feathered race.

Excellent fish frequented the shores in abundance: sharks were also numerous, bold, and voracious; these assembled in the bay in multitudes, and constantly attended on their boats, darting at the oars, and whatever falls, or is thrown overboard. It is remarkable, that when one of their own species was taken, and they saw he could no longer defend himself, he was seized, attacked and devoured by his companions, whilst yet alive; and, though these monsters were greatly annoyed by the harpoons, knives, &c. they were not deterred from renewing the attack upon that which was caught, till every part of the victim's flesh was severed from its bones. It was on this occasion discovered, that it is erroneous to suppose the shark must turn on his back to enable him to take his prey, as these sharks generally attained their object without first turning themselves, as has been generally asserted, and as generally believed.

former

former species, when one of the latter was captured, it remained unmolested by the rest, and even when killed, its flesh was abandoned by them*.

Having put to sea from the island of Cocos on the 27th of January, and having no intention of stopping short of the island of Juan Fernandez, or some other port to recruit their water and firewood, the ship's course was directed southerly. On the first of February the weather was pleasant, and the wind blew a steady breeze, which encouraged a belief that our navigators had at length reached the regular trade wind. The infinite numbers of fish that still attended them afforded a very profitable amusement, and many birds continued to accompany them.

Land was discovered on the 2d, to the west south-west, that had the appearance of being a small island; after which another island was discovered. In passing between these islands they perceived neither danger or obstruction: the largest, which is the southernmost, seemed to be about four miles in circumference, and the northernmost about half a league. The navigators advanced so slowly from these islands, that at sun-set the southernmost of them continued within their view. Standing to the south-eastward, at day-light on the 6th, they discovered a more extensive quantity of land than the islands they had just passed: this seemed to be very lofty, at a great distanse, and to consist of three or more islands. In the afternoon a breeze sprung up from the south-westward, and before sun-set they saw clearly that what they had for some hours before considered to be two islands, was all connected by depressed land, that had also appeared like a small island; and at a considerable distance beyond this low land to the southward, an extensive table mountain was visible.

On reference to the relative position of the land to which their attention had been directed since the 6th, the delineation of its shores will be found to bear a striking resemblance to that of the westernmost of the Gallipagos, as laid down in Captain Cook's general chart. The climate of that part of the Gallipagos islands they were now about to leave, seemed remarkably temperate for an equatorial country; the atmosphere felt light and exhilarating, and the wind, which was principally from the southern quarter, was cool and refreshing. The shores were steep and bold, and free from shoals or hidden dangers: some riplings were observed, which were attributed to the meeting of currents. The lofty mountains, of which most of the land is composed, seemed in general to descend regularly from a flat summit, and to terminate at the base on very low level land; so that a distant view of each of these mountains has the appearance of an island: hence the different statements of former visitors respecting the number of this group of islands, is in some degree accounted for.

Some assert that these islands afford large streams, and even rivers of fresh water, and others have more than intimated that they are scantily supplied with it. This is, however, of no importance, as, from their vicinity to Cocos, where perpetual springs enrich every part of the island, vessels may at all times procure a sufficient quantity to answer all their purposes.

SECTION XXVI.

Progress to the Southward—Discovery Springs her Main-Mast—The Scurvy became prevalent—Crew affected with the Scurvy—Pass Massafuero and Juan Fernandez—Arrive at Valparaiso—Visit St. Jago.

OUR navigators had now taken a final leave of the North Pacific Ocean; and as they had been long absent from their native soil, concerning which they had recently received unpleasant intelligence, they wished to make the best of their way towards those regions, where

* To commemorate their visit to the island of Cocos, Captain Vancouver directed that the date of their arrival, with the names of the vessels and the commanders, should be cut on the rock where the other inscription was found.

their

their services in another line might probably be more advantageous to their country.

The bad sailing of the Chatham had, throughout the voyage, greatly retarded the progress of their labours; and more particularly since their last departure from Monterry; Captain Vancouver therefore thought some advantages might be derived to the service from his preceding her: he therefore informed Mr. Puget, that he should, without delay, proceed with the Discovery towards the island of Juan Fernandez; and if he (Mr. Puget) should not arrive there before his departure, he was provided with further instructions, which, with such others as might be left for him at that station, would be sufficient for his future government. After digesting these arrangements, the captain made sail in the Discovery, with a pleasant gale from the south-south-east. Many oceanic birds, and vast quantities of fish attended them; some of the latter fortunately falling to their share. By the evening the Chatham was considerably astern, and by the forenoon on Monday the 16th, she was out of sight from the mast-head.

Their progress was equally pleasant and expeditious; and the wind blew a steady favourable gale. The trade wind during the two succeeding days, was light and variable; and on the 1st of March they appeared to have reached the variable winds, having a fresh breeze, with a heavy swell from the north-westward. From this time their progress was considerably retarded by adverse wind: the weather, however, was fair and pleasant till the morning of the 8th, when the gale freshened, accompanied with showers and squalls; in one of the latter, the head of the main-mast was discovered to have been much sprung, about five feet below the rigging, and seven feet above. The sails on the main-mast being taken in, and the wound further examined, the head of the mast was found to be in a weak and shattered condition. No time was lost in applying such remedies to the defect in the mast which they possessed; and, on the 9th, it being as secure as they were capable of rendering it, the mizentop-mast was substituted for a maintop-mast, and the maintop-gallant-mast was got up for a mizentop-mast. By this accident their quantity of canvas was so reduced, that their progress towards their rendezvous was much impeded*.

At day-light in the morning of the 18th, a strange sail was discovered astern; and as she had the appearance of being a brig, she was naturally supposed to be the Chatham: that opinion was confirmed about four in the afternoon by her answering the private signal; and as she had now the advantage of them in point of sailing, they did not shorten sail, but left her to overtake them, which did not happen till the 20th, when Mr. Puget came on board, and the two commanders were reciprocally informed that very fine weather had attended them ever since their separation. From the commander of a British vessel, Mr. Puget had been informed that the anchorage of Juan Fernandez was considered as very bad, and much exposed; that a Spanish frigate had lasely been lost there; and that the island was almost destitute of refreshments: he therefore recommended, if the Chat-

* On the 14th of March Captain Vancouver was astonished to hear from Mr. Menzies, that the sea-scurvy had made its appearance among the crew. This was a circumstance for which he was unable to account, as he had been particularly careful to adopt every salutary measure that could be devised for the preservation of that most valuable of all blessings, health. All his endeavours, however, had been rendered ineffectual, for the number of their scorbutic invalids continued to increase. This was the second time it had made its appearance during the voyage: the first was occasioned by the seamen having been many months exposed in a very arduous and fatiguing service to most inclement weather, with only a small portion of refreshments. These reasons not existing at this time, the captain was under the greatest perplexity respecting its origin, till at length it appeared to have been derived from a disobedience of his positive injunctions, on the part of the cook, "who had been strictly forbidden, on any account whatever, to allow the skimmings of the boiling salted meat to be eaten by the people."

Of this disobedience, the ship's cook made a voluntary confession; and, on his examination, attempted in some degree to justify himself by saying, the practice had frequently been defended by some of the people on board, who seemed to be acquainted with the opinions of the president of the Royal Society, and who urged, that pulse with any kind of grease was not only a wholesome food, but also very antiscorbutic.

The manner in which the cook acknowledged his transgression, and his contrition for having thus departed from his duty, entitled him to the captain's full forgiveness, on his solemn promising that he would faithfully attend to his directions in future; which promise he believes he punctually performed. But though all their antiseptics were resorted to, the number of scorbutic patients continued much on the increase; whence it was probable that the pernicious indulgence which had produced the disease, had been generally adopted among the crew.

ham had occasion for naval stores, that it would be most prudent to repair to the port of Valparaiso, as the most probable place of procuring such supplies of any on the coast of Chili.

The damaged and unserviceable state of the Discovery's main-mast demanded immediate repair; especially as the head of it appeared to be extremely rotten: a defect of so serious a nature admitted of no delay: and notwithstanding the strong injunctions contained in the captain's instructions, not to visit any of the Spanish settlements, but in cases of absolute necessity, he thought it expedient to submit to Mr. Puget, and the principal officers of the Discovery, the state and condition of the mast, &c. And this matter having been taken maturely into their consideration, they were unanimously of opinion, that for the good of his Majesty's service, and for the preservation of his Majesty's ship, it was indispensibly necessary, that the Discovery should repair to the nearest port, for the purpose of procuring a new main-mast; since the disabled one, even after it was repaired, must be very inadequate to the services that might be demanded of it in those tempestuous seas, which, at this season of the year, they must naturally expect to encounter in passing round Cape Horn.

The port of Valparaiso seeming to be the best calculated to supply their wants, and being the nearest to them, their course was directed thither with a fresh northerly breeze. At four in the afternoon the island of Massafuero was seen at eleven or twelve leagues distant: at midnight they passed within four leagues of the southern side. This island appeared to be about three leagues in circumference, with a rugged, hilly, and uneven surface, terminating abruptly in rocky cliffs near the water's edge. During the night they had a fresh breeze, with some squalls. On the 21st, the jury maintop-sail yard was carried away, not from a press of sail, but from being exhausted and rotten. This was immediately replaced with another, of the stability of which they were extremely doubtful*.

At ten in the morning on the 25th, they stood in for the land, which was very indistinctly seen, it being then enveloped in a dense haze; in the forenoon they were in with the shores, but saw no circumstance that could indicate their being in the neighbourhood of Valparaiso. Not thinking it prudent, in their crippled situation to risk a disappointment, they stood off shore till an observation from the latitude could be procured, which was accomplished about eleven o'clock. The view they had gained of the coasts of Chili did not much excite the curiosity, or attract the attention of strangers. A considerable part of the sea shore was composed of rude cliffs and rocky precipices; against which the western swell broke with violence. A few stunted shrubs and bushes were thinly scattered, but nothing like a tree was to be seen; and the landscape, bounded by the frozen summits of the towering Andes, exhibited a dreary, desolate, and inhospitable picture. As they proceeded they beheld a bluff point of land about three leagues distant, which proved to be the western point of entrance into Valparaiso Bay.

About two in the afternoon they were abreast of the point of Angels, off which some rocks extended to the distance of about half a cable's-length. In sailing round this point, the country expanded upon them, and presented a scene very different from that which they had lately beheld; the whole of the bay, terminated by a sandy beach, now presented itself; near the upper margin of which, situated on the sides of the adjacent hills, the town of Valparaiso was displayed; and though not remarkable for the pleasantness of its situation, it was neat, regular, and of considerable extent. The churches and forts were not deficient in point of elegance, and clearly announced that they were again approaching towards the civilized world.

In the bay several sail of merchant ships were observed; to and from which boats were continually passing and repassing to the shore, where a busy scene of men and cattle was represented; pointing out that commercial intercourse between distant countries, which the arts and civilization alone can effect. The wind from the southward blowing out of the bay, they sought a proper situation for anchoring, which they obtained about three in the afternoon, in ten fathoms

* In the afternoon they passed the south-side of Juan Fernandez, at the distance of about fourteen miles, but it was too indistinctly seen to enable the beholder to delineate its shores; its aspect from this point was by no means inviting: the whole composing a group of broken irregular hills, forming as grotesque a scene as the imagination can conceive. In the forenoon of the 24th they gained a distant view of the lofty coast of Chili to the eastward.

water.

water. An officer was instantly dispatched to inform the governor of their arrival, the object of their visit, and the assistance they should require. A ship that had been seen in the morning, anchored soon after them; and, with the Discovery and Chatham, made ten sail of vessels riding in the bay. A Spanish officer then came on board with congratulations on their arrival, from Senior Don Lewis Alava, governor of the port, and brother to their friend of that name at Monterrey. But from a Mr. Cook, who commanded the Lightning of Bristol, a South-Sea Whaler, they received little encouragement to expect a favourable reception at Valparaiso

The message from Senior Don Lewis Alava, contained strong assurances from him, that every assistance they might require, which was in his power to bestow, might absolutely be depended on, and that he hoped speedily to have the pleasure of seeing the captain and his officers on shore, where they could depend upon receiving every civility. It was difficult to reconcile two such very opposite reports, though Captain Vancouver was most inclined to give credit to the former; especially as the first representation was received from a person not perfectly sober. On the return of Mr. Manby, who had been dispatched to the governor to announce their arrival, he was confirmed in his opinion: he assured the captain, that if those on board the Lightning had been disagreeably restricted by the governor, it must be solely attributed to their indiscretion and improper conduct, which had rendered such coersive measures, on the part of the commanding officer, so indispensibly necessary for the preservation of good order.

Mr. Manby informed the captain, that Senior Alava had stated to him, that though he did not entertain the least doubt that the president and captain general of the kingdom of Chili would conform to all the promises he then made, yet it would be proper to obtain his excellency's sanction for their being carried into effect. For this purpose he should dispatch a courier that evening, to St. Jago de Chili, the residence of the president, and he hoped the captain would make some communication to his excellency by the same conveyance, on the subject of their visit, and the succours they should require. With this request the captain instantly complied: the messenger was then dispatched, and intimation given that a reply might be expected without delay. In the mean time the officers were not restrained from visiting the town; the markets were open to them to procure refreshments, and they were perfectly at liberty to increase their stock of wood and water*.

The town of Valparaiso being destitute of taverns or places of accommodation for strangers, our navigators were obliged to intrude on the hospitality of many of its inhabitants. Among the first of whom they were indebted to, in these respects, was Don Juan Barrara, the collector of the king's duties, and Don Praeta, the captain of the port; but as their habitations could not conveniently contain more than their respective families, a lodging on shore was not easily to be procured. The impaired state of the captain's health, however, rendered it necessary for him to sleep on shore, and take as much exercise as his strength would permit. He applied to the governor to allot him apartments for himself, and a few of the officers in some of the public buildings of the town, with which he very

* On these favourable communications being made, the garrison was saluted with thirteen guns, a compliment which was punctually returned; after which Captain Vancouver waited upon the governor. And, on Thursday the 26th, accompanied by Mr. Puget and several of the officers, he paid his formal visit to Governor Alava, and was received with every mark of politeness and attention: accompanied with repeated assurances that nothing should be wanting, on his part, to relieve their wants, and render Valparaiso as agreeable as its circumstances would allow. At the conclusion of these ceremonies they returned to their vessels, where their visit was immediately repaid by the governor, attended by his principal officers, and the inhabitants of the town: and on their coming on board they were saluted with thirteen guns. Pressing intreaties were also received from these gentlemen to visit their families, which were attended to with the utmost cordiality.

The captain now directed his thoughts towards procuring a supply of the abundant refreshments which this luxuriant country afforded: but his principal object was immediately to adopt efficacious measures for eradicating the scorbutic disorder which now prevailed, and which had alarmingly increased among the crews of both vessels. It did not appear, however, that the unwholesome indulgence connived at by the cook, had been practised so much on board the Chatham as it had been on board the Discovery. From this information, Captain Vancouver thought it expedient that the crews of both vessels should, besides the regular allowance of fresh beef and greens, and new soft bread from the shore, be daily served with a reasonable quantity of grapes, apples, and onions; and he soon perceived that this salutary diet was attended with the desired effect, by perfectly eradicating the disease.

obligingly

obligingly complied, and the Casa de Exercicios, was appointed for their residence, relying on the approbation of the president of Chili.

On the 28th the courier returned, and Captain Vancouver received from his Excellency Senr. Don Ambrosio Higgins de Vallenar, the president, the most ample confirmation of all the liberal offers they had received from Governor Alava, with a letter of congratulation on their having thus far accomplished the great object of their expedition, and having at length arrived in a country, where nothing should be wanting within the reach of his power to supply. These obliging offers were accompanied by a communication to governor Alava, that if the captain and some of the principal officers would choose to visit the capital, they had his Excellency's permission for that purpose; and should they take a journey to St. Jago, the governor was required by the president to see that they were properly provided for the excursion.

On the mast of the Discovery being examined, the damage it had sustained proved to be greater than had been expected, as it was sprung almost two-thirds through, a little below the hounds. Having no resource but that of applying the best remedy in their possession, two stout *cheeks* made of spare anchor stocks, together with two strong *fishes*, were fixed to the mast below the partners of the main deck, and continued up to its head; and even with these additional securities, it was a precarious stick to depend upon: they were therefore compelled to make the best shift in their power, and to act with the utmost caution in their passage*.

Their party was proposed to consist of Mr. Puget and Lieutenant Johnstone of the Chatham, and Lieutenants Baker and Swaine, and Mr. Menzies of the Discovery. The captain having informed governor Alava of his intention of visiting St. Jago, he very obligingly gave directions at Valparaiso, that a proper number of horses and mules should be provided for the expedition; the former for their riding, and the latter for the conveyance of their luggage. It further appeared that his excellency the president had also sent two dragoons from St. Jago, who were natives of Ireland, in his Catholic Majesty's service, to attended them as guides and interpreters.

The necessary preparations being made, they began their journey early on the 3d of April, with a numerous cavalcade; for though this country had been long settled, they were informed that no accommodations could be found on the road, between the two principal towns of the kingdom of Chili; excepting such as might be met within villages; which only consisted of a shed or uninhabited house. A supply of provisions might probably be procured, but there were no necessary articles or utensils to prepare them for the table: all these, as well as the cook, they were obliged to take with them: and, fearing to be disappointed of the promised shelter, they were provided with a tent, packed in convenient travelling trunks, and carried on the backs of the mules†.

The apparent sterility of the wide waste, which now encompassed them on every side, excited their astonishment, when they reflected on the

* The several services were arranged, and in a regular train of execution; but as the following day was the anniversary of their departure from Falmouth, and the commencement of the fifth year of their labours, they devoted it to mirth and festivity. Each man had a double allowance of grog, and an excellent dinner, consisting of a variety of the good things which the country so abundantly afforded. Having reviewed his several arrangements, Captain Vancouver determined to avail himself of the obliging permission of the president to visit the capital of Chili, and ordered the necessary preparations to be made for an excursion to Saint Jago.

† The town of Valparaiso is situated on a narrow tract of land at the foot of rocky precipices near the shores at the water side. There is no pass immediately into the country but for foot passengers: for the main road, which is the avenue into the interior parts of the country, passes through the village of Almandrel, and approaches the seashore: and to this route they were indispensibly confined. This village is situated on an extensive border of low land, bounded behind by steep and almost barren hills. The valleys and plains, however, in its vicinity, are fertile; and large gardens are cultivated for profit, and decorated for amusement. From Almandrel a tolerably good road has been made in a zig-zag way over a ridge of hills, the summit of which occupied them about two hours in reaching. The party were informed by their guides that the whole of the new road was not finished, but was then in a progressive state towards completion.

In the Missionary Voyage, page 107, are given the following particulars concerning a lady at Tongataboo: "This morning a woman of rank paid us a visit; she was attended by many chiefs, and a vast number of females, who were all officious in their care of the old lady, whose amazing corpulence rendered her coming on board rather difficult. After her there came four stout fellows, carrying

the abundant supply of good things they had daily seen in the market of Valparaiso. Instead of pleasant villages, fertile pastures, and cultivated fields, which they expected to have been charmed with, after passing over the hills in the neighbourhood of the shore, an extensive desert now appeared before them, destitute of wood, and almost of verdure: a few stunted trees and groveling shrubs excepted, widely scattered from each other. Amidst this poverty of vegetation, a few miserable inhabitants, barely existing on its surface, inhabited wretched huts, or hovels, fabricated of mud; seeming hardly to afford a shade against the rays of the sun, or the rude whispers of the wind*.

By adding to their own stores, the supplies which some of these hovels afforded, consisting of poultry, eggs, onions, potatoes, and fruit, the travellers made an excellent repast, whilst their animals were refreshing themselves. Little variation in the scenery was observed for a considerable time: at length they arrived at the village of *Caso Blanco*, or the *White-House*. Here their guides recommended a profound repose for the night, and the rest of the party were too much fatigued to object to the proposal.

Caso Blanco is a hamlet, containing a church and about forty houses in its neighbourhood; which, with some inclosures of cultivated land, formed an agreeable contrast to the barren naked country through which they had previously passed. The curate was the principal person of the village, who, having been informed of their approach, gave them a hospitable reception. In the exercise of his urbanity, he seemed unhappy that he had so little to bestow; but as the travellers fortunately required no other assistance from him than that of procuring them a lodging, they soon relieved him from his embarrassment. This gentleman, without hesitation, instantly provided for them a house, precisely of that description which they had understood were situated on the road for their accommodation.

The walls of this house were composed of dried pieces of earth cut square, nearly resembling bricks, which had been placed on each other in a wet state, and plastered over with a similar substance; but, being irregularly dried, the general appearance of the respective subdivisions acquired the aspect of deformity. The inside of this mansion consisted but of one apartment; which was found barely capacious enough to receive their baggage; for had the weather been rainy, the travellers would have had but very imperfect shelter for themselves. Whilst their supper was preparing, they visited the inhabitants in the village, by whom they were received with cheerfulness and affability. Some of the faces, among the younger females, would have been thought pretty, even among those of our fair country-women, had they not destroyed the natural delicacy of their complexion, by the intolerable custom of painting red and white.

The houses of this village gave it a pleasing appearance, at the first view, and induced the party to suppose that they should meet with such as were more commodious in other respects: but, on their accepting the invitations of the principal people, they saw the same want of cleanliness prevailed, and were confirmed in their opinion that wretchedness, indolence, and superstition were exhibited here, in as great a degree as among the cottagers in the desert†.

The new road was here directed across the less elevated

carrying a bundle of cloth, not quite so large but that two of them might have borne it with ease: this was presented in form to the captain, who gave her in return such things as fully satisfied her. The ship being under sail, we could not be quite so attentive to this great personage, as, according to their ideas of ceremony, they might expect; however, any omission of ours they found means to dispense with, by regaling themselves in the cabin over the kava bowl for about two hours—The respect paid to this old lady, and to many of her sex in Tongataboo, distinguishes them from the servile condition to which females are subjected in other savage states or tribes. Here they possess the highest degrees of rank, and support it with a dignity and firmness equal to the men."

* At one of these abodes, about five leagues from Valparaiso, they stopped to dine; when they found the internal accommodations well assorted with the external appearance of the mansion: a dirty table, a stool, a wretched bed, and five or six crosses constituted all its furniture. This residence, however, was not without some decorations of a religious nature; and, what was more extraordinary, the inhabitants apparently indulged in the luxury of taking the *mattee*, an infusion of an herb procured from Paraguay: Still to add to their surprize, they perceived that the very few utensils they possessed for common domestic purposes, were principally made of silver. The land surrounding these miserable cabins is in a perfect state of nature, without the vestige of any labour having been bestowed upon it. The very few wretched inhabitants of this dreary wild seemed to rely, without any exertion of their own, on the bountiful hand of Providence for their subsistence: Indolence and superstition seemed entirely to influence their conduct.

† Their time passed agreeably till supper was served, when

elevated part of the ridge, and here our travellers saw the labourers engaged progressively in that work. They could not avoid remarking, however, that their inactivity in this business, could be equalled only by the humble means they possessed for its execution. Three hundred and fifty men were employed with pick-axes and shovels; and to supply the place of wheel-barrows for the removal of the earth, the hide of an ox was spread upon the ground, and when as much earth was thrown upon it as would require the strength of two men to remove, the corners of the hide were drawn together, and dragged to the depressed side of the road, and emptied where it was thought requisite. The whole plan of proceeding in the construction of this new road, was indeed ridiculous beyond conception. The labourers received their provisions, and a rial and a half per day, which made the amount of their daily wages about seven pence sterling, and their food was estimated at about four pence. Hence it appeared extraordinary to our navigators, that more persons were not employed in agriculture, and other rural improvement; especially as the soil and climate seemed so well adapted for cultivation. By the introduction of more of the necessaries of life, and a proper share of its comforts, a general spirit for exertion would be diffused among the lower orders of the people, who might thus be encouraged to prefer a life of diligence to one of inactivity, which at present disgraces the greater part of the community.

After breakfast the party proceeded on their journey along a very narrow path, and at four in the afternoon stopped at a mud hovel within five miles of the mountain of Praow. The country they had passed through had little to entertain, and less to interest the traveller, being exactly similar to that which they had passed before, but without any striking objects to vary the scene. Being much fatigued with travelling, and the heat of the weather, the advice of the dragoons to make this their resting-place for the night, was readily acceded to by all parties. Lamb and poultry were procured, and dressed by their own cook for dinner, and both articles proved very excellent. Their table was spread under the shade of some vines, and they were attended by a few peasants drawn thither by curiosity, who conducted themselves respectfully. They retired early to their blankets, which, as before, were spread upon the ground in the hovel.

They rose early the next morning, and reached in a reasonable time the lofty summits of Praow; from the top of which the landscape was extremely interesting. To the eastward the travellers beheld the extensive valley in which St. Jago is situated, and which was terminated by the lofty Andes whose towering heights exhibit perpetual winter. In the opposite direction innumerable mud hovels were discerned, which had escaped their notice during the journey. They descended Praow to the north-east, after which the road continued almost in an eastern direction, and was nearly as broad, and in as good a condition as many of the turnpike-roads in England. Several orchards, and a few plantations of pasture land, on which cattle were grazing under the shade of a few scattered trees, were seen on either side; but the general dearth of cultivation occasioned a gloomy wild appearance, without hardly a single feature to indicate their near approach, to so large and populous a city as that of Saint Jago *.

Having finished their breakfast they resumed their journey: the road was level, firm, and broad; and, as they advanced, plantations and

when they were favoured with the company of every inhabitant of the village: the superior persons partook of the repast, whilst the others enjoyed the peculiar gratification of beholding a scene so novel and unexpected in their region. The glass circulated briskly, and the new friends did not retire till the night had far advanced. The blankets for the party were then spread, but their rest was tormentingly disturbed by the vermin, generated by the filth of former inhabitants, which indulged their revenge upon these strangers, for having endeavoured to dispossess them of their strong holds by sweeping out the place. They rose the next morning, without having received much refreshment, having been so violently annoyed by myriads of bugs and fleas.

* They stopped to breakfast at the distance of about fifteen miles from the capital, whose lofty spires over-topped the numerous houses of that extensive city: but notwithstanding their present vicinity to such an emporium, mud hovels were still the only receptacle for travellers; no improvement appeared in any of the building, or in any other respect, that might add to the comfort and convenience of life; the same want of cleanliness still debased the character of the inhabitants, who, notwithstanding their extreme wretchedness and misery, possessed a cheerful countenance, and manifested content in their deportment. Their natural disposition to oblige was highly grateful to the feelings of our navigators, though their excessive indolence demanded their censure as well as pity.

vineyards were seen on both sides; in each of which a white house was generally situated at a little distance from the road. At length they arrived at a habitation about a mile from the capital, where they unanimously agreed to halt, as well for the purpose of taking rest and refreshment, as to be able to equip themselves for the ceremonious visit to the captain-general. One of the dragoons was immediately dispatched with a letter to his excellency, announcing their arrival in the vicinity of the capital, and stating that they intended to do themselves the honour of paying their respects to him at the palace in the evening. Captain Vancouver also directed the dragoon to engage carriages at St. Jago, sufficient to convey the whole party thither. In the midst of these endeavours to make as smart an appearance as they could contrive, the dragoon returned, accompanied by an officer from the Captain General, whom he sent to congratulate them on their arrival, requesting they would immediately repair to the palace, on horses properly caparisoned for conveying them in a suitable manner to the capital.

Fearing they could not decline making this public entry, without giving offence to the president, they endeavoured to equip themselves as well as they were able in their old rotten uniforms. The fresh horses which had been sent from St. Jago, they expected would have been of the docile kind; instead of which they were now furnished with high-bred animals, decorated with elegant saddles and bridles, and richly fringed and embellished with a profusion of gold and silver lace. The captain's objections to a public entry were now greatly increased; he therefore requested they might be permitted to visit St. Jago in a more private manner. But on a representation of this circumstance to the officers, instead of yielding to this proposal, whips and spurs were instantly produced, and also required to be worn; expostulating with them on the glaring impropriety of appearing without them. But all their expostulations could not surmount their objections, and they presumed to mount without these additional equipments*.

A capacious room was allotted to Captain Vancouver in the palace, and a large contiguous apartment was appropriated to the use of Mr. Puget and the rest of the officers, in which were a number of beds for the party. The two dragoons were ordered to attend as servants. The politeness of the president did not end here; for he introduced to their acquaintance Don Ramon de Rosas, the corrigidor, and Don Francis Cassada, a captain of dragoons, who received the president's orders to shew them all the curiosities in St. Jago, and introduce them to all the principal families in that city†.

When they retired to rest, they found their beds were tolerably good, but with the filth in their apartments they were exceedingly disgusted. Their dragoons were applied to respecting some brooms or brushes to remove the nuisance; but, to their great mortification they were informed, that such things were not in common use at St. Jago: the only alleviation that could be obtained was a proper quantity of water to sprinkle the dust.

Every Sunday morning the president has a levee,

* The crowds of people who assembled to see the cavalcade, added to their embarrassment, which was occasioned by the slow and solemn pace in which they moved, till they arrived at the palace. On their alighting they were received by a guard, and formally conducted to the audience chamber. Here they were received by his excellency Don Ambrosio Higgins de Vallener with an unaffected welcome. They were now informed, by Don Ambrosio himself, that he was a native of Ireland, from whence he had been absent about forty years; and that at an early period of life he had entered into the English army, but not having been promoted according to his own estimation of his merit, he had embraced more advantageous offers on the continent. His first commission in the service of his Catholic Majesty was in the corps of engineers, after which he was introduced among the dragoons, and became a lieutenant-colonel. He afterwards obtained the distinguished post of military commander on the frontiers of Chili, and governor of Conception. In this service he remained twelve years, and had the good fortune and address to subdue the natural fiereeness of the inhabitants, and induce them to submit to the government of Spain. For this service he was promoted, in 1783, to the exalted station he now fills. His Catholic Majesty has since honoured him with repeated marks of approbation, having conferred on him the orders of Charles the Third and Saint James, with the rank of Lieutenant General in the Spanish army.

† The supper, which consisted of an elegant variety, was served up on silver, at which no one was permitted to be present but Don Ambrosio, Don Ramon de Rosas, and themselves. Ceremony was totally laid aside, and every individual considered himself as much at home, as if he had been partaking of a repast in England among particular friends. Supper being ended, several ladies appeared at the iron-grating which protected the windows of the palace, begging the company would accept of nosegays, and requesting they would join the rest of their party assembled near the palace; but their obliging invitation was declined till a future day.

which

which is usually attended by the military people, and the principal inhabitants of the city and its environs. In order to be formally introduced at this levee, they decorated their persons with the best apparel the exhausted state of their wardrobes would allow, and then repaired to the audience chamber. At the upper end of this spacious room, which was neatly but not extravagantly furnished, a small stage was raised a few feet from the floor, upon which was placed a chair of state, ornamented with a canopy of red damask; portraits of their Catholic Majesties being placed on each side of the president's chair. The levee was attended by about one hundred and twenty persons, and all superbly clothed. In such a company the thread-bare uniforms of our navigators suffered much by comparison; but his excellency kindly apologized for the reduced state of their apparel, by enumerating the hardships they had suffered during their absence from a civilized world. After they had severally paid their compliments to the president, the levee broke up, and they followed the rest of the party to the levee of the bishop of Chili, which always commences on the termination of the president's.

Here our navigators were again received with that politeness which had marked their reception at Don Ambrosio's. The bishop resides in a magnificent palace, and is the next person, in point of rank and consequence, to the president. Though the furniture was rather gaudy than elegant, it manifested the exalted station of the illustrious owner. The bishop appeared in a loose clerical garment of purple silk, buttoned close, a sort of apron surrounding his waist, and descending to his knees. Many priests attended the levee, one of whom always conducted to the bishop the person who was to be introduced, who bent one knee on receiving the benediction of the church. On this occasion, the bishop with one hand imitated the figure of a cross over the person introduced, and presented a ring which he wore on the finger of the other, to receive an additional homage, paid by touching it with the lips, in imitation of the act of kissing*.

Accompanied by their new friends, our navigators were introduced in the evening to the family of Senr. Cotappa's, an eminent Spanish merchant. The house of this gentleman, like most of the principal habitations, formed a quadrangle, inclosing an open area of about thirty yards square, one side of which is a dead wall running parallel to the street. As none of the houses exceed one story in height, this wall totally conceals every appearance of the buildings within. The entrance from the street into the fore-court, was through a gateway in the wall, whilst the wings, or two remaining sides of the square to the right and left, were divided into offices for servants, and sleeping apartments. This gentleman's house consisted of an anti-chamber, a spacious dining room, and a bed-chamber: all the rooms, if not superbly, were finely finished; but in the principal one, two chandeliers were suspended from the cieling, the subjects of which were selected from the sacred writings. The company they met here were divided into two parties; the ladies sitting on cushions on one side of the room, and the gentlemen opposite to them on chairs, among whom our navigators obtained a place. The entertainments of the evening consisted of a concert and ball, in both of which the ladies particularly shone, as they appeared to excel in the accomplishments of music and dancing. The concert was performed entirely by the ladies; one led the band on the piano-forte, and the others filled up the accompaniments on the flutes, violins, and the harp. The whole was capitally conducted, and afforded our navigators a musical treat to which they had been long strangers†.

* From the bishop's palace, they were conducted to the houses of the judges and great officers of state; and about two o'clock they returned to the palace, where the president was waiting their arrival for dinner, which was served up on a plain deal table, not in the least corresponding with the magnificence of the dinner service, which consisted entirely of plate. After taking coffee, which is always brought as soon as the cloth is removed, every one retired to his private apartment: between the hours of three and six in the afternoon, not a person is seen in the streets, the shops are shut up, and stillness prevails as if it were actually night.

† The ladies of St. Jago are not deficient of personal charms, and many of them may be considered handsome: they are principally brunettes, with expressive black eyes, and regular features; but a want of that neatness, so much the pride of English women, was conspicuous in many particulars; especially in the neglect of their teeth, which were suffered to become extremely dirty. They were generally sprightly and unreserved: it must indeed be admitted that such a degree of levity is observable in their conduct, not only in dancing, but on other occasions, as to induce strangers, particularly Englishmen, to have no very exalted opinion of their virtue: though our navigators could discover nothing that could impeach the fidelity of the married women, nor sully the character of the single ladies.

The

The city of St. Jago, including the suburbs, is upwards of three miles in circumference. It is well supplied with water from the river Mapocho, which has its source in the mountains at a distance from the capital, and is ingeniously conducted through the principal streets of the town. This river, from whence the city is thus supplied, overflowed its banks in June, 1783, in consequence of an inundation, and rushed down towards St. Jago with such fury, that it demolished all the dams which defended the country. Every individual was thrown into the utmost consternation lest a second inundation should succeed. In which case, as the city had been left defenceless by these unexampled torrents, it was reasonably apprehended, that not a single edifice would be left standing in the capital.

It was not, however, till January, 1792, that a new dam or wall was erected to defend the city from the river. This wall is said to have a foundation fourteen feet below, and to rise fourteen feet above the surface of the water. It is strongly constructed, and capable of resisting any weight of water that may come against it. Besides giving the most perfect security to the town, it affords an agreeable walk for the recreation of the inhabitants. The whole is built of brick; and on the commencement of it, an obelisk was erected, in imitation of that in St. Peter's square in Rome; on the pedestal of which is the following inscription in Spanish.

" D. O. M.
" In the Reign of Charles the Fourth,
" and
" During the Government of this Kingdom,
" by
" Don Ambrosio Higgins
" de
" Vallenar:
" Who ordered
" These Dams to be constructed
" in the Year
" 1792."

Two very sumptous fabrics were then building at St. Jago; the Cessa de Moneda, or the *Money-House*, and a cathedral. A large church is also constructing with bricks: the front is of the Doric order, with two large towers. The inside is of the Ionic order: it is to contain three aisles, and seven chapels.

The gaols here being in a falling state, and incapable of securing prisoners, a building of the Tuscan order was erected, and appropriated to that purpose.

St. Jago, the capital of Chili, was founded in 1541: it is the residence of the President, who is Captain-General of the whole kingdom, and presiding judge of the audience-chamber, or court of justice. The number of its inhabitants is estimated at thirty thousand five hundred. The subordinate cities are, Coquimbo, Chillan, Conception, and Valdivia; and the principal towns are Valparaiso, Capiapo, Vallenar, St. Francisco de Borja, St. Raphael de la Rosa, La Liqua, Quillota, Los Andes, Melipilla, St. Joseph, Anconcague, St. Ferdinand, Curico, Talca, Linares, Nueva, Bilboa, Caugeres, and others of less importance. The exterior commerce of the kingdom is principally carried on from the sea-ports of Conception, Coquimbo, and Valparaiso; but the latter, from its central situation, has the greatest share of trade.

Supposing the time our navigators had been absent from the vessels, had been sufficient for the completion of the services Captain Vancouver had directed to be performed, preparations were made for their return to Valparaiso; and, after expressing their grateful acknowledgments for the numerous obligations conferred upon them, they took their leave, and proceeded from St. Jago towards Valparaiso. On their arrival at Valparaiso they found their business in a very advanced state; but a serious disaster having happened to the main-mast, by its becoming rotten and unfit for service, Captain Vancouver gave up the thoughts of recommencing his survey of the coast to the southward of the islands of Chiloe, as there was not a probability of getting it repaired, or of procuring another to supply its place. He therefore determined on making the best of his way from this port round Cape Horn to St. Helena; and he was even afraid the vessel was too much crippled to encounter the boisterous seas in this passage, though every means was resorted to to render the repairs as permanent as possible*.

* On account of frequent earthquakes that happen in South-America, the houses consist of the ground floor only, like those of St. Jago. The walls are built with mud, and covered with a preparation of lime. In the town, and the village of Almandrel there are six churches, under the direction of a vicar, who is amenable for his conduct to the archbishop. All civil and military causes are heard at St. Jago. Capital offences are seldom committed.

Being anxious to make his departure, Captain Vancouver gave orders for the observatory and instruments to be received on board, and the vessels to be made ready for proceeding to sea the first favourable opportunity: but it was not till the 5th of May that they had sufficient wind to encourage them to unmoor, which was done about six in the morning, with a light breeze from the south. This dying away, they returned nearly to the place from whence they had come: on a fresh breeze springing up the next day, they unmoored, and after saluting the fort with thirteen guns, and taking a respectful leave of governor Alava, and their other hospitable friends at Valparaiso, they made sail from the port, in company with the Chatham and a Spanish brig and schooner.

The trade of this port is carried on in vessels from two hundred to seven hundred tons burthen; in which is annually exported to Lima, about fifteen thousand tons of wheat and wheat flour, small cordage, dried salt-fish, and large quantities of apples, pears, and peaches. Vegetables, and a great variety of fruits, were here produced in abundance; and were all excellent of their kind and very cheap.

SECTION XXVII.

Depart from Valparaiso—Pass the South of Cape Horn—Arrival at St. Helena—Leave St. Helena—Capture the Macassar Dutch India-man—Join the Convoy, and proceed with it to the Shannon—Proceed to the River Thames.

HAVING settled with Mr. Puget the next rendezvous to be at St. Helena, Captain Vancouver left the bay of Valparaiso on the 7th of May, and passed the point of Angels. The weather was clear and pleasant, but a heavy swell from the south south-west indicated boisterous storms from that quarter. From the worn-out state of their sails, the foretop-mast stay-sail split; and on a further survey, they were under the necessity of condemning a best bower cable, a foretop-sail, and maintop-mast stay-sail; which were unbent, and replaced by others, that were not perhaps in a much more serviceable condition.

On the 9th the wind blew a fresh gale from the north-west, when they would have been enabled to have made great progress to the southward, had not the Discovery been repeatedly under the necessity of shortening sail for the Chatham, which was considerably astern. Some petrels and pintados were seen about the ship on the 12th, and two days afterwards several albatrosses were observed. As they proceeded to the southward, the weather gradually changed for the worse; and the wind, which had hitherto been generally favourable, now became turbulent, and sometimes blew in very heavy squalls: in one of these on the 22d, they carried away the maintop-sail sheet; this obliged them to take in the sail: the starboard bumpkin was also carried away, and the wind continued to blow with great violence. False fires were burnt during the night as signals to the Chatham.

On the 23d, after lowering the topsails, in a heavy squall of wind and hail, they wore the ship to wait for their consort. In the afternoon the weather became more moderate; but that favourable change was not of long duration, for on the 26th the gale increased with so much violence, that they were under the necessity of landing their topsails, and getting the topgallant yards and masts down upon deck, to relieve the masts, and to make the ship as snug as possible. In the morning of the 27th, the wind changed to the south-west, and the weather became sufficiently moderate for them to get up the topgallant yards and masts, and to set their reefed topsails. Though, at this time, there was little pressure on any part of the rigging, their principal ropes and sails were so extremely rotten, that their starboard maintop-sail sheet broke, the gib-boom snapped short off near the middle, and the wind split the mizentop-sail.

Thinking they were now sufficiently advanced to the southward to avoid inconvenience from the islands which lie off Cape Horn, the captain determined to shape such a course to the north-eastward as might afford him an opportunity of determining the Isla Grande. On the 30th they were again visited by strong gales and heavy squalls of wind, and on the 1st of June the captain ordered the foretop-sail to be taken in, to

allow the Chatham time to come up with him, she being then at a considerable distance astern. At day-light on the 2d, she was in sight from the maintop, but not from the deck *.

The abundance of excellent refreshments with which they had been supplied during their residence at Valparaiso, had totally cradicated every appearance of the scurvy before their departure from that port, and completely re-established the health of every individual on board (the captain only excepted.)

On their arrival at St. Helena, Captain Vancouver took such precautions as were most likely to prove efficacious in preserving the health of both the crews; of which on board the Discovery they were in complete enjoyment †.

Before their departure from St. Helena they received certain intelligence that it had been decreed by the national assembly of France, that the Discovery and Chatham should be allowed to pass the seas unmolested by the French cruizers, notwithstanding the war which then existed between the two countries. This intelligence induced Captain Vancouver to alter the plan he had formed of waiting at this island for convoy. The East India ships, under the protection of the sceptre, had not been sailed so long from St. Helena as to divest him of all hope of overtaking them: he therefore determined to sail immediately, and not to wait for the uncertain arrival of any other vessel.

St. Helena afforded them a very ample supply of vegetables, but fruits of every kind were extremely scarce, occasioned by the want of rain. So severe had been the drought for the three preceding years, that most of the trees, which were not indigenous to the country, had withered and decayed. The herbage had suffered nearly in the same proportion; and during the period above alluded to, upwards of sixteen hundred head of cattle had died upon the island.

Much of the captain's time, after his arrival at St. Helena, had been devoted to the concerns of the Dutch prize Macassar, and in endeavouring to procure a safe passage for her to England; she was very leaky, and much out of repair. Having, from long experience, been convinced of Lieutenant Johnstone's skill and resources, he committed the charge of the Macassar to his care. For this purpose he received the captain's directions to quit the Chatham previous to her departure for St. Salvador; and in addition to the people to be engaged at St. Helena, to navigate the prize home, the captain spared him seventeen able seamen from the crew of the Discovery, on whose exertions Mr. Johnstone could confidently rely. With this supply of indefatigable and experienced men, and the kind assurances he received from governor Brooke, little danger was to be apprehended of the Macassar's safe arrival in some port of Great Britain.

After paying his respects to the governor, on the 15th of July, and returning him his best thanks for his great hospitality and attention, Captain Vancouver left Lieutenant Johnstone on board the Macassar, with ample directions in writing respecting the management of the vessel of which he was put in charge to England. About six o'clock on the following evening, with a light breeze from the south-east, they directed their course to the north-westward, anxiously looking forward to the happy hour that should restore them to their respective friends, and to their country.

The weather continued very pleasant, and our navigators made great progress to the north-

* On the 21st Richard Jones, one of the seamen, fell from the main-chains, and was drowned: the grating was immediately thrown overboard, and the ship was hove to, in order to afford him every assistance; but the poor fellow sunk, and was never more seen.

As they approached the bay of St. Helena, the captain saw a fleet of large ships standing out, apparently bound to the northward. At half past eight they anchored in sixteen fathoms water, and moored with a cable each way. After saluting the fort with thirteen guns, he waited on the governor, accompanied by Mr. Puget, to pay his compliments to him, and understood from him that the ships they had seen depart from the island in the morning were a fleet of East-India-men, with several sail of Dutch prizes under the convoy of his Majesty's ship Sceptre, commanded by captain Essington. The governor received the captain with his accustomed politeness, and informed him that war had commenced between the court of London, and the United States of Holland. On this information the Captain instantly sent an officer on board a Dutch East-Indiaman which he had seen coming into the bay, and took possession of her as a prize.

† By their mode of reckoning, this day was Monday the 6th of July, but at St. Helena it appeared (agreeably to their calculations) to be only Sunday the 5th of July: for by their having sailed round the world in an eastern direction, they had gained *one day* since their departure from England; but as it was now become expedient for them to subscribe to the estimation of time, as was understood by the civilized world, to which they were fast approaching, they abandoned their former reckoning, suppressed the day they had gained, and, after noon this day, they recommenced *Sunday the 5th of July.*

westward,

westward. On the 25th they crossed the equator; after which nothing occurred, worthy of remark, till the 5th of August, when one of the Cape de Verde islands was seen. At four in the afternoon of the 20th, three vessels were perceived to the northward, and at eight in the evening eight sail were seen from the mast-head. At day-light the next morning five ships only were in sight, but at seven in the morning, nine sail of large vessels were so clearly discerned as to remove all doubt of their being a part of the fleet for which they had so anxiously looked out, under the convoy of the Sceptre, commanded by Captain Essington. At five in the afternoon, a boat from the General Goddard East-Indiaman came on board, and confirmed them in the opinion they had formed. On this information, Captain Vancouver ordered a boat to be hoisted out, and waited upon Captain Essington, by whom he was politely and respectfully received. After putting himself under Captain Essington's orders, and receiving such instructions as were thought necessary, he repaired on board the Discovery, and by spreading an additional quantity of canvas, had the pleasure of speedily joining company with the Sceptre.

Though their progress was much retarded by the convoy, the time glided pleasantly away, as they had the comforts of a friendly intercourse with their surrounding countrymen; from the pleasures of whose society they had been long since estranged. Nothing material occurred till the 1st of September; when, after contending with a fresh gale, which had been attended with some heavy squalls of wind and rain, one of the Dutch prizes made a signal of distress. They immediately hove to, and Captain Vancouver sent the cutter to her assistance, but she was found to be almost a wreck; and was therefore abandoned, by order of Captain Essington, and set on fire in the evening.

About five o'clock in the morning of Saturday the 12th of September, a signal was made by one of the headmost ships, denoting she was within sight of land; and soon afterwards the glad tidings were announced from the mast head. At eleven it was known to be the western coast of Ireland, and arrangements were made by the Sceptre for entering the Shannon; where Captain Essington proposed to remain with his convoy till a force could be procured equal to the protection of the valuable fleet. Captain Vancouver having communicated to Captain Essington, such parts of his directions from the lords of the Admiralty, as applied to the government of his conduct on the present occasion, he received his orders to repair immediately to London; and the following day, after having seen the Discovery safely moored in the Shannon, and given proper instructions to his first lieutenant Mr. Baker, he resigned the command of the Discovery into his hands, with such books, papers, and charts as had been previously collected. In the course of a few days afterwards he arrived at the Admiralty, where he deposited his several documents.

There were few objects more particularly attended to by Captain Vancouver, than that of avoiding such a conduct towards the several tribes of Indians, as should lead to measures that might endanger the lives of a people, whose *real* intentions might possibly be misunderstood, from the want of a perfect knowledge of their respective dialects. He had fondly hoped to have completed his researches in those regions, without the loss of life to a single individual among them. In this anxious concern for the cause of humanity, he was, however, disappointed. The number of Indians from Traitor's Cove, which fell in the attack upon the Europeans boats, on the 12th of August 1793, cannot be ascertained; but, excepting that unfortunate affair, it does not appear that more than two men afterwards lost their lives in consequence of the expeditions from the Discovery or Chatham. These events, however, gave the captain infinite regret, from which he could find no relief but in the consoling reflection, "that nothing but the most urgent necessity for *their* own preservation, would have compelled them to have adopted coercive measures *."

* The captain had the singular happiness of beholding the same persons return on board the Discovery to the river Shannon, in perfect health, as had sailed with him from the Thames; excepting such as had been officially sent home, or had been promoted to the Chatham, and the seventeen seamen left at St. Helena; with the individuals who were unhappily lost in the course of the expedition.

John Brown, carpenter's mate, drowned off the South Foreland.—Neil Coil, marine, died of the flux, at the Cape of Good Hope.—Joseph Murgatroyd, one of the Carpenter's Crew, missing at sea, January 21st. 1793.—John Carter, seaman, poisoned by eating muscles, 15th of June, 1793.—Isaac Wooden, drowned by accident, off Wooden's Rock.—Richard Jones, drowned between the port of Valparaiso, and the Island of St. Helena, 21st of June, 1795.

END OF VANCOUVER'S VOYAGE.

A

MISSIONARY VOYAGE

TO THE

SOUTH PACIFIC OCEAN:

Performed in the Years 1796, 1797, 1798,

IN THE SHIP DUFF,

COMMANDED BY

CAPTAIN JAMES WILSON.

From the Journals of the Officers and the Missionaries: the Contents of which is principally the Composition of Mr. William Wilson, from the Captain's Papers, and the Missionaries' Reports.

THIS work is inscribed to his Majesty; and the dedication, which is prefixed to it, expatiates on the inducements which stimulated the *Missionary Society* "to endeavour to deliver mankind from the greatest possible portion of misery which besets them, and to confer upon them the most abundant measure of felicity which our nature is capable of enjoying." They were conscious this could only be effected by the gospel of the grace of God preached among all nations, as far as their opportunities or abilities might extend. For this end their meetings became frequent, and their plans were gradually matured for execution. "A Missionary Society was in consequence formed in England, and zealously seconded by their brethren in North Britain."

The laudable motives of the Society cannot be more emphatically displayed, than by a recital of their own words, in their DEDICATION TO THE KING: which are the following. "SIRE, To whom can the Missionary Society so properly dedicate these first fruits of their labours as to your Majesty, by whose order the voyages of discovery were first undertaken, which have brought into view the numerous islands dispersed over the Pacific Ocean? The reports made concerning them attracted the general attention of European nations; and your Majesty's subjects felt themselves peculiarly interested, whether their views led them to consider these discoveries as tending to enlarge the bounds of science, or as opening a field of commercial speculation. A nobler object, Sire, has engaged the attention of the Missionary Society, who, believing CHRISTIANITY to be the greatest blessing ever imparted to mankind, desired to communicate that inestimable gift, with all its happy effects, to these un-enlightened regions."

The situation of this untutored race, their mental ignorance, and moral depravity, strongly impressed on the minds of this Society, the obligation they lay under to endeavour to call them from darkness into marvellous light. The miseries, and diseases, which their intercourse with the Europeans had occasioned, seemed to upbraid their neglect of repairing, if possible, these injuries; but, above all, they longed to send to them the everlasting gospel, the first and most distinguished of blessings.

On submitting their intentions to the public, the Society met a spirit of zeal and liberality highly encouraging; applications manifold were poured in of candidates for the mission, with subscriptions adequate to the undertaking. Only the most select for piety were to be admitted. A committee of ministers, approved for evangelical principles and ability, was appointed to examine the candidates respecting their views, capacity, and knowledge in the mysteries of godliness. Many were rejected, and only those received who had the strongest recommendations from the ministers and congregations, with whom they had been joined in communion, and of whose intelligence and devotedness to the work they had

the fullest evidence. Thirty men, six women, and three children, were approved, and presented to the directors for the commencement of the mission*.

The Missionary Society very highly approved of the missionaries, and wished their selection of mariners had been equally choice; they had the satisfaction, however, of having been tolerably successful in that department. Captain Wilson, and the first mate, his nephew, were persons perfectly qualified for the undertaking, and as hearty in the work as the missionaries themselves. Several of the sailors were of a similar disposition; and about half of them were communicants.

During the first six weeks that they were detained in harbour, one of the missionaries, who continued with them daily, and often ministered unto them, declared he never heard the name of God blasphemed, a passionate word spoken, or saw an unbecoming action in any of the mariners; many of whom joined in the exercises of prayer and praise with the most cordial devotion. Surrounded as they then were by king's ships in the harbour, this excited no inconsiderable surprise at its novelty. The songs of Zion were daily heard over the deep.

The preparations being completed, and all the stores on board, a solemn designation of the ministers to their office was made. The prosecution of the voyage, for the accomplishment of the benevolent and evangelical purposes of the society, will, it is presumed, be found interesting to the navigator, the naturalist, and the politician; but, above all, will engage the peculiar attention of those who glory in the name of christian, and long to see, what they fully expect, the coming of the kingdom of the Lord, and of his Christ, when "the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and the nations shall flow unto it."

On the 10th of August 1796, at six in the morning, they weighed anchor, and hoisted the missionary flag: the morning was serene, and a gentle breeze blew from the north north-west. All was still and quiet; furnishing a favourable season for contemplation to those whose hearts were warmed with benevolence and ardour, for the extension of the Redeemer's kingdom. The hymn, "Jesus at thy command we launch into the deep, &c." was sung by upwards of a hundred voices, producing a pleasing and solemn sensation. The sailors in the ships they passed, heard them with silent astonishment; and their friends, who lined the banks of the river, waved their hands, and bid a last adieu!

At Woolwich a vast concourse of people were assembled on the shore, to salute them as they passed. The breeze freshening, they arrived at Gravesend before noon, and employed the remainder of the day in clearing the decks, which had been incommoded by the eagerness of a multitude of individuals from the neighbouring towns; who crowded every part of the ship, bringing various articles of refreshment, anxious to contribute to the comfort of the missionaries. The Rev. Dr. Haweis, the Rev. Mr. Wilks, and the Rev. Mr. Brooksbank, directors of the Society, had come on board at Blackwall; the two latter intending to go down the channel with their brethren to Portsmouth, and the former to remain with them till they should leave England. Captain Wilson, Mr. Hardcastle, and Mr. Fenn came on board from London, and settled with the crew for their river pay, and their bounty†.

On the 11th of August, at seven in the evening, they weighed anchor, and turned down into the Lower Hope, when they took an affectionate leave of Mr. Cox; to whose ability and unwearied diligence they must ever acknowledge themselves indebted, both, for forwarding their departure, and for his care in providing all things comfortable for those who had to perform so long a voyage.

At eight in the morning of the 12th, they weighed from Hope Point with a fresh gale at east south-east. As they were plying down, they were met by some kind friends from Sheerness, bringing with them three sheep, a hog, and some fowls for sea stock. Proceeding on

* In this list of Missionaries, who embarked on board the Duff at Blackwall, there were four ordained ministers; *viz.* the Rev. James Fleet Cover, aged 34 years; the Rev. John Eyre, aged 28 years; the Rev. John Jefferson, aged 36 years; and the Rev. Thomas Lewis, aged 31 years. The gentleman last mentioned had attended the hospitals and dispensaries, and understands printing. Among the six women, are Mary Cover, the wife of the Rev. Mr. Cover; and Elizabeth, the wife of the Rev. Mr. Eyre.

† The Duff's crew consisted of twenty-one men, and a boy; James Wilson was the commander; William Wilson, Thomas Godsal, and James Falconer, were next in command; and Thomas Robson was gunner.

their

their voyage, they came to a little below the Nore at midnight. This day Dr. Haweis, Mr. Wilks, and Mr. Brooksbank, the directors then on board, assembled the missionaries, and required them to elect by ballot four persons, to constitute a committee, in pursuance of the printed instructions of the body of the directors; in consequence of which the following gentlemen were chosen and admitted to that office by the directors; *viz.* the Rev. James Cover, John Eyre, John Jefferson, and Thomas Lewis*.

On the 12th at four in the morning they weighed, ran through the Five Fathom Channel, and passed through the Downs. At one in the afternoon they rounded the South Foreland, and had little wind during the remainder of the day. Calms and breezes from the westward alternately succeeded on the 14th, and but little way was made. It being sabbath-day, Dr. Haweis preached in the morning, Mr. Brooksbank in the afternoon, and Mr. Wilks in the evening, on the quarter-deck.

At eight in the morning on the 16th they anchored at Spithead, where they were speedily visited by the Rev. Mr. Griffin, of Portsea, and other friends of the mission, who manifested the most fraternal affection, and furnished them with salutary supplies. Here Captain Wilson arrived, and took the command of the Duff.

Mrs. Hudden was so much affected by the sea, that she fell into an extreme dejection of mind, which induced the Missionaries to send her on shore, at her request: her husband went with her, though reluctantly: he was a man of a meek and quiet spirit, and would probably have been an useful member of their community; but the directors thought it would have been improper to separate man and wife.

Their anxious enquiries respecting their departure, produced authentic information that they would shortly sail with a convoy for Lisbon and Gibraltar. Dr. Haweis, with Mr. William Wilson, went on board the Adamant, Captain Warre, who received them very politely, and readily offered to take them under his protection. Of this the directors were informed, and they were ordered to wait the opportunity. The delay, however, began to weary their patience, as they all longed for the day of their departure; and though entertained with the most cordial welcome by the brethren at Portsmouth and Gosport, they waited the signal from the Adamant with eager desire. Yet the stay was not unprofitable; the same gracious hand which directed them thither, gave them cause to acknowledge his loving kindness; some good, they hoped, might result from the preaching of many who visited the ship, and from the missionaries at Portsea, Gosport, and its vicinity. Here an ingenious clergyman of Portsmouth furnished Dr. Haweis and Mr. Greathead, two directors of the society, with a manuscript vocabulary of the Otaheitan language, and an account of the country, which he had preserved from the mutineers who were seized by the Pandora, which was of inconceivable service to the missionaries.

The missionaries, during this delay, constantly exercised themselves on board, in rotation, in preaching, prayer, and praise, which many attended; and they also usefully employed themselves in reading and writing, especially respecting the objects of their mission. In one of their assemblies, it was unanimously agreed to transmit to the body of the directors a very affectionate address; part of which the editor thinks it his duty to introduce as a specimen of the whole. "On looking forward to the length of our voyage, and deliberating on all the dangers and difficulties which those who traverse the bosom of the mighty deep are exposed to, and frequently meet with, we are by no means discouraged; but can cheerfully give ourselves up unto him, who holdeth the wind in his fist, and the waters in the hollow of his hand. When we extend our view across the great Atlantic Ocean, and contemplate the more extensive Southern Sea; when, in our imagination, we conceive ourselves landed on our destined islands, surrounded by multitudes of the inhabitants, earnestly enquiring, *From whence do you come? and what is your errand?*

* Mr. Wilson, as chief mate, being considered as president in the absence of Captain Wilson, who was to join them at Portsmouth, the committee proposed and established the following regulations: *viz.* That the Rev. John Jefferson be considered as the missionaries' secretary, and Wm. Smith his assistant: that the Rev. Thomas Lewis is appointed librarian, and Wm. Smith his assistant: That John A. Gilham, surgeon, shall be responsible for the medical books and instruments; but every missionary may read them under the library regulations. That John Harris be appointed to the office of missionaries' steward, to distribute the provisions, as delivered by him to the ship's steward, to the different messes.

errand? We answer, From a distant shore: the friends of God and human kind; touched with compassion at your unhappy state, as represented by our countrymen who formerly have visited you; moved by the spirit of our God, we have forsaken relatives and friends, braved storms and tempests, to teach you the knowledge of Jesus, whom to know is eternal life. Though Satan, and all the host of hell should be stung with indignation and resentment at our boldness in the Lord, and fire the hearts of their deluded votaries with all the fury and madness, which brutal ignorance and savage cruelty are capable of; though our God, in whose name we go—our Saviour, by whose rich grace we are redeemed, should deliver us up to their rage, and permit our bodies to be afflicted, yea, persecuted unto death; yet, trusting to the faithfulness of the Most High, the goodness of our cause, the uprightness of our intentions, the fervency of our affection for Christ our head, and the elect of God, our hearts remain undaunted; and being, by divine mercy, enlisted under the banner of the Great Captain of Salvation, we are desirous to be *accounted worthy to suffer for his sake,* and to endure hardship as becometh good soldiers of Christ."

After the convoy had been detained by delays unknown to our hearty and resolute adventurers, and subsequently by contrary winds, at length the welcome signal was made on the 10th of September: at nine in the morning the commodore and fleet began to weigh, and by ten were all under sail. The adventurers alone were still at anchor, detained by one of their missionaries. A messenger had been sent on shore, early in the morning, for the time-keeper, and to bring off Mr. John Harris, the absent person; but, after waiting a long time in vain, the officer was obliged to return without him. They afterwards followed the fleet, which was steering for the Needles; but when they had reached Cowes, the fine south-east gale failed them, aud veering to the westward, the signal was made to return, when they came into their former situation. Mr. Harris now came on board; he had been on a visit to Southampton, and having heard the fleet were sailing, hired a boat and followed them.

Here, from a variety of causes, they were detained thirteen days longer; but they received the most obliging and unremitting kindnesses from the inhabitants of Portsea, Gosport, Southampton; and even from their friends in London. At last the long-desired moment of departure arrived, and the signal was made by the Adamant to drop down to St. Helen's. Nothing could surpass the beauty of the scene; the day was remarkably fine, and the convoy moving on different tacks, with their canvas spread, gave additional splendor to it. As it was a state-holiday, the forts and ships of war practised the usual salutes whilst the convoy was under sail, which tended greatly to heighten the grandeur of the spectacle. On the turn of tide they all cast anchor, and waited for their final adieu in the morning*.

SECTION I.

Voyage from Portsmouth to Saint Jago—Run to Rio Janeiro—Reception—and Observations.

TAKING their final departure from Portsmouth, our missionaries launched forth on the great deep. The signal for sailing being given, they all appeared upon deck, with countenances elated with joy, considering it as a summons to commence their great, their benevolent employment. At five in the morning, the commodore and the fleet, consisting of fifty-seven sail of transports and Portugal traders, were under way; the Fly sloop bringing up the rear. Proceeding with a fine gale, they were off Falmouth by eight o'clock on the 8th; when the commodore made the signal for the fleet to lie by.

The last sight of Old England, which could probably be enjoyed by several on board, now presented itself; what an awful consideration! But it would have been dastardly in those who

* Dr. Haweis, who had been daily on board, and had often preached to them, now took his sorrowful leave of the adventurers, with an address from *Hebrews* iii. 1; his heart appearing to be full, while they parted with many tears, perhaps to meet no more till they should be re-assembled round the throne of God and of the Lamb.

had

had parted with country and friends, and taken up the cross, to look behind; every one was therefore happy with his destination. Fresh gales on the 25th, and a large easterly swell, occasioned the ship to roll, and many of the brethren experienced a severe sea-sickness, but their fortitude remained unshaken, knowing such temporary inconveniences were naturally attendant on travellers by sea.

In crossing the Bay of Biscay, they had favourable winds, and they perceived, by a comparative view of their ship, with those of a cruising squadron which they then beheld, that the Duff was a more rapid sailor than any among them. This was, indeed, a pleasing circumstance, as they had a long voyage to perform; and encouraged them to hope, that, should they be chased by an enemy, there might be a probability of their effecting their escape by sailing*.

The fleet soon disappeared, and a meeting of prayer and thanksgiving ensued among the brethren: praising God for his past mercies, and committing themselves to his protection, who hath promised, "when we pass through the waters I will be with you."

Sunday, the first of October, Mr. Jefferson preached in the morning, and with his other brethren administered the communion. Surrounded now only with the sea and sky, the missionaries seemed to have taken their leave of the abodes of the living, to approach the nearer to their heavenly father, drinking out of the overflowing fountain of his love.

Seeing a large ship on the 3d, they took care to pass to windward of her, lest she should prove an enemy; but the display of an American flag removed their apprehensions. On the 6th the sun rose refulgently, and they saw the island of Madeira; a spot celebrated all over the world for its wines: many excellent descriptions of it are given by different authors, which render further accounts unnecessary.

They passed Madeira, intending to touch at St. Jago, the principal of the Cape de Verd Islands, in order to be recruited with water, and other refreshments. On the night of the 6th, and the following day, they had frequent and very heavy showers of rain, which enabled them to fill some of their water-casks. On the 11th they crossed the tropic of Cancer, and saw several flying fish about them, which excited much surprise and admiration.

The 12th had been appointed a solemn day of fasting and humiliation, to prepare the missionaries for their great work, and to beg of God to forgive them whatever his pure eyes had seen amiss in them. Proceeding to the southward on the 13th, about nine in the morning they descried Sal, the northernmost of the Cape de Verd isles, which had a sun-burnt appearance. At four in the afternoon Bona Vista came in sight; a white haze, common to these islands, so far obscures the prospect of it, that it cannot be distinctly seen at the distance of two or three leagues. It has a good harbour on its west side.

At the dawn of day on the 14th, they saw the isle of Mayo, and the two dangerous rocks which lie off its north end. The sea broke upon them with great violence. A brig and a schooner were lying in Mayo road, waiting perhaps for cargoes of salt; abundance of which is annually shipped from these islands. By eleven in the morning they lost sight of Mayo, though they were at no great distance from it, occasioned by the hazy atmosphere already noticed: at the same time they could perceive St. Jago off the deck. At half after one in the afternoon, they came to with the small bower in eight fathoms, the south end of Green Island bearing west south-west.

They had now safely reached the first port for refreshment, after a pleasant voyage of three weeks from St. Helen's. As soon as the sails were furled, the first mate was dispatched from the captain to the governor, to request his permission to water and purchase refreshments, which he kindly and politely granted. He was informed that live stock, vegetables, &c. could not be purchased that evening; but as intelligence of the ship's arrival would be speedily circulated, the natives would resort early in the morning

* The sea-sick missionaries being somewhat recovered on the 29th, they applied themselves to the study of the Otaheitan language, and other useful pursuits. A hawk, this day, sought an asylum by resting himself on our rigging and was caught; when it was pertinently remarked by a missionary, "So might my poor soul, wandering from its true home, be lost, if not graciously prevented by divine mercy."—As the greatest danger was now over, and the missionaries would go but little further with the convoy without deviating widely from their course, they hoisted their ensign to signify their intention, when they were answered by the commodore, and making all sail, were followed by a South-Sea whaler, and two other vessels.

within the walls of the fort where the market is usually held; and as each individual would naturally bring with him such articles as he possessed, he might readily procure whatever the island afforded. This being the case, they could only proceed with their watering, which is here attended with much trouble; and when it is procured, it is brackish and very indifferent. That which is obtained for the use of the fort, is brought on asses or camels, from a distance of three or four miles*.

In the morning of the 15th, the missionaries were considerably disappointed, the market not being so well furnished as they expected; few of the country people being apprised of their arrival. All that they could procure for the cabin was one turkey, five fowls, an equal number of pigs, a quantity of oranges; and a quarter of a cask of Madeira wine, for the missionaries. For these articles they were indebted to the liberality of the captain of an American brig, that lay in the port. In return for this civility, Captain Wilson sent him a cheese, and some tea and sugar.

Their water being completed, at five in the afternoon, a gun was fired from the ship, a signal for the absentees to repair on board, and by seven they were clear of the harbour St. Jago is the most fertile and populous of all the Cape de Verd Islands, notwithstanding it is very mountainous, and has a great deal of unprolific land. The principal town, which is named after the island, is situated against the side of two mountains, between which there is a deep valley two hundred yards in width, extending almost to the sea. An irregular street appears in that part of the valley next the sea, with a rivulet at the bottom; which glides into a fine cove, where the sea is generally so very smooth that ships ride very safely in it. A small fort is erected near the landing-place of this bay, where a guard is constantly kept; and near it is a feeble battery of small cannon.

Port Praya is a small bay, about the middle of the south side of the island: Green Island lies on the west side of the bay; it has steep rocky sides, but is not very high. From this island to the west point of the bay lie sunken rocks, on which the sea continually breaks. It is customary for East-India men, Guinea traders, and others bound to the southward, to touch here for refreshments†.

Having completed their purpose of landing at Port Praya, a fine breeze sprang up at a little distance off the island, but afterwards gradually declined to calms and light airs alternately. At one in the afternoon they saw a sail to the westward, and at five in the evening she had got within a mile of them. She then hoisted English colours, and fired a gun to bring her to. The Duff also fired, and displayed her colours. The stranger was so much her superior in force, that the Duff must inevitably have fallen into her hands, had she been an enemy; but, on her being hailed, all their apprehensions vanished: her name was the Jack Park of Liverpool, bound to Africa. It was spontaneously ejaculated by one of the missionaries, on this occasion—"The Lord is better to us than all our fears!"

At sun-rising on the 19th, the sea was calm and serene, and the sky most beautiful. At a distance were beheld some water-spouts, extending from the clouds to the sea, forming a very

* The deputy-governor, who resides at Port Praya, had long laboured under a very obstinate complaint, from which he was now recovering; but, fearing a relapse, Dr. Gillam was applied to when he appeared on shore: his opinion agreeing with what had before been prescribed by the surgeon of an Indiaman, his services were gladly accepted: and he afterwards administered medical relief to the Governor and his lady, who were also indisposed. Their disorders were chiefly intermittents, diseases of the liver, and anasarca. Though the place is generally thought unhealthy, one of the inhabitants was, at that time, upwards of one hundred and ten years of age.

† Though their stay was short, their brethren on shore were not inattentive to their first object: the following is a simple narrative of what occurred on this occasion. The missionary was meditating on the great goodness of God to him an unworthy creature, when he met with a native black man, who invited him to his house. His mind was greatly impressed with the ignorance and superstition of the poor fellow; he therefore consented to accompany him, and found him extremely friendly. He was sufficiently acquainted with the English language to make himself understood; and, being asked what religion he was of, he said he was a Roman Catholic. After explaining himself, as well as he could, the missionary replied, "I fear you are wrong, God cannot be worshipped through the medium of Images;" and pointed out several passages of God's word which forbad such worship. Before parting from him, he desired him to read over the passages he had pointed out to him; for he had an old bible, and could read a little; he entreated him "to compare the word of God with the sentiments he had been taught, and to pray to God without images set before him, as they are an abomination to the Lord." Thus, after a few more words, they separated; and the missionary humbly hoped that the labour would not be in vain in the Lord.

wonderful object. The beautiful words of the Psalmist, may aptly be applied here. "They who go down to the sea in ships, &c. they see the works of the Lord, and his wonders in the deep*."

From the 18th to the 22d of the month they sailed through a part of the sea, which in the night exhibits a brilliant appearance, the ship's whole circumference seeming grandly illuminated. Some assert that this phenomenon is occasioned by animalcules, which thus glow in the dark, their shining parts being turned upwards by the turbulence of the waves. On the 29th they saw a large shoal of porpoises, rising in a straight line extending about half a mile, occasioning much noise and ruffle in the sea. About midnight they crossed the equator in long. 30°. W. In these latitudes they expected to meet calms and burning suns, instead of which they had a delightful breeze; and the sun-beams being broken by clouds and a haze, the heat was not more excessive than what they had often felt in England—"How great is his mercy!"

On the 31st, at six in the morning, they saw the island of Fernando de Noronha, bearing west north-west nine leagues. This island represented some detached hills, the largest of which had the appearance of a church-steeple. It has two harbours, capable of receiving ships of the greatest burthen: that on the north side has the preference for shelter, capacity, and goodness of bottom; but both are exposed to the north and west: these winds, however, are periodical, and not of long continuance.

The porter being exhausted, the captain proposed half a pint of Madeira wine to each of the missionaries, which was thankfully accepted. On the 2d of November, they caught two Portuguese men of war in a bucket. They were each about a foot long, having innumerable arms like worms. They are beautiful pink-coloured bladders in the shape of a curious shell. After rising to the surface, they scud before the wind like little ships. On being touched, they sting like nettles.

Met on the evening of the 7th to send up their united prayers with their brethren in England, for a blessing on this and all other missionary labours. On the 9th they sounded in the outer part of the Abrolhos banks in eighteen fathoms. On the 11th, at eight in the morning, they saw the scattered islands which lie to the northward of Cape Frio. At half past two it set into rain very hard, with brisk gales from the north-east; in consequence of which they put the ship under a snug sail, intending to pass the night betwixt the Cape and the entrance of Rio de Janeiro. On the 12th, at day-light, they made sail and ran for the harbour; but the breeze failing, it was one in the afternoon before they reached the entrance. When nearly there, a pilot boat came alongside, with the head harbour-master, who took charge of the ship. They came to with their small bower in seven fathoms, and moored with a kedge to the northward, the Monastery bearing south-west by south. As soon as they had anchored, a guard-boat came along-side, and other precautions were taken to prevent smuggling. The captain was obliged to land when he first entered the port, attended by a military officer from Santa Cruz.

Being now, on the 13th of November, safely moored, after a passage of five thousand miles, and through malignant climates, they poured forth thanks with grateful hearts for God's abundant goodness displayed in their favour. This day, being the sabbath, incumbent duties were observed as at sea: the officer of the guard-boat attended, behaved with great propriety, and at the close of the worship, expressed his approbation. When he became more familiar, he declared he had never before seen people conduct themselves so peaceably and soberly on their first arrival; drunkenness, swearing, and noise, having been always prevalent.

Since the captain was on shore, on their first arrival, no individual was permitted to quit the ship till he had been regularly examined by superior officers, whose visit they were patiently to attend. At four in the afternoon, on the 14th, these examiners arrived in the master-attendant's boat: they consisted of some military officers, the chief Justice, a Physician, the captain of a ship, and an interpreter. Their business appeared to be extremely trifling; and as the questions now asked were not deemed sufficiently conclusive, the captain, and some others, were ordered to attend at the Viceroy's palace, there to answer a similar string of interrogations:

* A number of sharks being observed playing round the ship, two of them were caught, measuring about five feet each in length: after they were cut in pieces, and the entrails taken out, their heads jumped about upon the deck for a considerable time.

as

as whence they came? whither they were bound? the motive of their voyage? what political intelligence they had to communicate? When these particulars were written and signed, the party was informed that the papers would be sent to Lisbon; and that such scrutinies were the common practice of the colony.

This ceremony being ended, the party was permitted to go on shore whenever they thought proper, taking with them a soldier in the boat; and, as soon as they landed, another soldier picked them up, and followed them through the town; watching them closely till they returned to the boat.

From Monday till Saturday the party was employed in refitting their rigging, watering the ship, and procuring live-stock, &c. for sea-store. On the 19th, at four in the morning, they unmoored, and about noon the sea-wind set in with a thick fog. At seven in the morning on the 20th, they weighed with a light breeze in their favour; but when they got abreast of fort Santa Cruz, it changed against them: they kept plying, however, to windward, and, having made a few tacks, the master-attendant took his leave. At three in the afternoon they passed between Razor Island and Round Island, when a fresh breeze springing up, wafted them speedily out of the sight of land.

The city of Rio de Janeiro is now the capital of Brazil, and since the diamond mines have been discovered in its vicinity, has been the residence of the viceroy. It is defended by cannon planted on the tops of the eminences, which command its entrance: it has also four regular forts, of which only Santa Cruz and Losia have much strength; and upon the whole, it is not so well fortified as it appears to be *.

Here the missionaries began to observe marks of the superstition of the inhabitants; for the cross was erected on the tops of the hills, and on their forts. On the Lord's day the Portuguese and Indians, who attended the brethren, looked on attentively during their worship, and behaved seriously, though unacquainted with the language; whilst those who remained in the boat, though it was Sunday, amused themselves with cards †.

The viceroy's garden was rendered beautiful by a picturesque assemblage of orange, lemon, and lime trees. A crocodile spouted water in the midst of some curious shell-work; and from the mouth of a tortoise issued a copious stream, though confined within the arms of a boy. From one of the terraces, the harbour has a most magnificent appearance.

Visiting the palace next, they were politely attended by the colonel commandant and his lady; and they regretted that they could make no acknowledgments in return: especially when they observed their rooted superstition, with beads and crucifixes hanging about their necks; bowing, and crossing themselves as they pass the objects of their idolatry. A grand procession of priests, nuns, &c. demanded their attention, as they were entering one of their cathedrals, which was hung with black, and magnificently illumined. The prayers were chanted, and chorusses sung, accompanied by a band of music. The brethren were afflicted to behold such external pomp of worship, without discovering a trace of the pure undefiled religion of Jesus.

With the substance of a letter, addressed by the missionaries to the directors, we shall close the transactions at Rio de Janeiro.

* The inhabitants, which are a mixture of Portuguese, Mulattoes, and Negroes, amount to about two hundred thousand, including the city and the suburbs. The churches, monasteries, convents, and some of the private houses, are splendid. The streets are narrow, straight, and regular. The government is extremely active in preventing the inhabitants from having any intercourse with strangers, without leave first obtained from the viceroy. This capital aims at surpassing all Roman Catholic cities in the parade of religion: the corner of every street is decorated with a figure of our Saviour and the Virgin, placed in a niche, with a curtain and glass window before it. When sable night arrives, the spot is illuminated with candles; and many assemble there to practise their devotions; their chantings to these images being successively continued during the remainder of the night. Even the common beggar struts about with a crucifix at his breast, which may be purchased for a trifle; at which the poorer sort cross themselves, and the beggar blesses them; but, like the Pope, he expects to be paid for his benediction.

† A party of the missionaries going on shore, were permitted to see the town, accompanied by two officers. On their landing, they were shocked at beholding a poor slave enfeebled with disease and labour, crawling to the water's edge. Shortly after, a scene disgusting to humanity presented itself; it was a cargo of naked human beings, exposed for sale in the market-place; whilst others, in small companies, chained together, were traversing the streets with burthens; suffering flagellation, like dogs or horses, according to the caprice of their unfeeling driver.

On

On board the Duff, Harbour of Rio de Janeiro, November 15, 1796.

Dear and Honoured Brethren,

WE arrived at this place on the 12th *Inst.* after a passage of seven weeks and one day. The Almighty has been singularly favourable to us, since our departure from our country and dear connections therein. The winds and waves, in the hands of God have been propitious to us. The scorching heat of the sun has been mercifully checked by intervening clouds, or refreshing gales; so that we have thus far passed commodiously through the burning zone. Our visitation of sickness has been partial and transient. We have carefully perused the accounts of the islands of the South-Sea, and acquired some knowledge of the Otaheitean language; and we have not sinfully omitted the worship of the most high. The whole body of missionaries present their "christian love to the body of directors, the society, and all true lovers of Christ, and his gospel. We pray the continuance of an interest in your fervent prayers for us, and for our undertaking; that we may acquit ourselves as men, faithful to the cause in which we are engaged, and be rendered mighty instruments, in the hands of God, for the conversion of the heathens of the South Sea." *The Epistle, of which this is a concise extract, is signed* John Jefferson, Secretary.

SECTION II.

Departure from Rio Janeiro, and Progress to Otaheite—Occurrences at that Place.

THE Missionaries proceeded on their voyage, the captain having previously laid in a fresh store of provisions. On the 20th, which was the Lord's day, brothers Eyre and Jefferson preached. In leaving this harbour, and again launching into the deep, they ruminated on the mercies of God, who had hitherto conducted them in safety through the pathless ocean: how happy therefore were they to trust in him for the future!

On the 24th they began to find it colder as they run to the south; the atmosphere was free from clouds, and the breeze was moderate; but in the evening of the 29th, the sky which had been so serene and bright was covered with sombre clouds, and the lightning came in quick and vivid flashes. But, blessed be God! within the space of two hours the storm abated. "See what the Lord can do! Let all the earth fear the Lord; let all the inhabitants stand in awe of him*."

In the morning of the 3d, the sea ran exceeding high, and the wind blew a complete storm. Several of the live stock died, either by the cold or the spray of the sea. Not only many of the missionaries were sea-sick, but also some of the seamen: even the crew felt the uncomfortable effects of such bad weather; the captain therefore apprehended, that in endeavouring to double Cape Horn, this raw unseasoned company of landmen, women, and children, might fall victims to the repeated storms and colder weather, which might be reasonably expected. After deliberately weighing these, and the connected circumstances, he prudently adopted the resolution of going the eastern passage; to pass a few degrees south of the Cape of Good Hope, and to sail to the southward of the south Cape of New Holland, keeping in the track of the westerly winds till near the meridian of Otaheite, and then to steer northward for that island.

The sea running tremendously high, they shaped their course right before it, steering north-east by east, and east north-east till it gradually

* After some vicissitudes of weather, a strong gale set in at the south, and the sea ran high on the 30th, when most of the missionaries were visited with the sea-sickness. On the 1st of December the gale moderated, the waves were less violent, and a few of the sick recovered. The cow had suffered much in the late gale, from repeated falls, and no hay had been procured at Rio Janeiro; it was therefore thought expedient to kill the poor lean animal; which was reluctantly assented to, as her milk had been found serviceable to the women and children. In the course of the night they experienced a less violent gale, but it was accompanied with rain, thunder, and lightning. At day-light they had more favourable weather, and the sea was remarkably smooth, though considerably discoloured, occasioned, it is said, by the out-set of the tide from the great river of Rio de la Plata. They sounded, but found no bottom with a hundred fathom of line.

became smoother. But, to particularize the various circumstances of so long a passage, would occasion a tedious repetition of winds and weather. The Missionary Journal will fill up the chasm.

On the 8th they had a great head sea; several whales were observed playing around, approaching so near the missionaries that they could observe them distinctly, when they rose to the surface to breathe; when they threw up the water to a vast height, producing a tremendous noise. "How manifold are thy works, O God! Heaven, earth, and sea, declare thy glory!" The climate here, though advancing to the midst of summer, seemed as cold to the missionaries, as the depth of winter is in England.

The gale still blew with violence, the sea running mountains high; the clouds low, thick, and gloomy; the ship scudding swiftly before the wind. They now truly saw the wonders of the Lord in the great deep. Sometimes the vessel appeared between two lofty mountains of water, and then ascended to the immense summit. Sometimes the towering billows were viewed with astonishment, following each other with their foaming tops, and seeming to threaten the destruction of the beholders: but so far from injuring them, they only pushed them on with the greater velocity to their desired haven. The brethren were unable to celebrate the Lord's Supper, through the agitation of the vessel; a meeting of prayer was therefore determined on between decks: in that situation, deprived of the light of the sun, and the sea often making a way over the ship, the Lord supplied every want, by vouchsafing his gracious presence.

The immense shoals of fishes around them, both astonished and amused them; the larger advancing in great pomp, followed by a more diminutive train; the flying-fish, after their aerial ascent, often falling on board the vessel: one of these soaring adventurers flew against their bell, and was consequently captured and eaten. Thousands of birds, about the size of pigeons, also skimmed around them.

On the 24th, Christmas-eve, some of the brethren passed a comfortable evening together, impressed with the remembrance of their dearest absent friends.

The missionaries were now closely applying themselves to the Otaheitan language; a part of the day being also appropriated to reading Mr. Greathead's account of the South-Sea Islands. A difference of opinion now arose on the propriety of their separating, and of the most eligible groups for the present itinerant members to settle in. Some preferred the Friendly Isles; others proposed Otaheite. John Harris alone was strenuous in favour of the Marquesas. In consequence of the probability of such a separation taking place, a meeting of the missionaries was held, when it was moved, that eight persons, and the chairman, (the Captain) be chosen to draw up a code of church government. This motion being carried, the following persons were then chosen by ballot to compose the committee: *viz.* Bowell, Buchanan, Cover, Henry, Jefferson, Lewis, Main, and Shelly.

At another meeting it was moved and carried, that, "On every Tuesday and Thursday, an hour and a half be appointed for the discussion of some doctrinal part of God's word. The text to be named by a moderator, duly elected."—Mr. Lewis was chosen first moderator. It was also voted that Messrs. Henry and Kelso do, in conjunction with the ordained ministers, join in the regular dispensation of the word of God.

On the 1st of January, 1797, it was remarked by some of the missionaries, that they had now sailed twelve thousand miles since the commencement of the preceding year. They were advancing rapidly towards the desired island: but nothing very remarkable occurred. The aquatic birds which had daily visited them, seemed now to have deserted them. Whales frolicked round the ship, and might probably have been taken had they been the object of their voyage. Mr. Smith, watching an opportunity, succeeded in striking a porpoise, the blubber of which produced four gallons of good oil *.

* As the directors held the doctrinal articles of the church of England, in the sense usually termed Calvinistic; it was an original decision, that none should be sent out as missionaries, who did not make an explicit confession of their faith, agreeable to this rule. It was supposed that all the missionaries were of one mind; but it now appeared that two out of the thirty entertained principles different from the rest. Supposing this difference of opinion might produce unhappy effects, it became a subject of discussion whether the two persons of different sentiments ought to be continued as fellow-helpers in the great work; but, after a variety of conferences on the subject, with the greatest calmness, the two seceders acknowledged they had received conviction from the arguments of their brethren, admitted the impropriety of their conduct, and were restored to friendship in the most ample manner.

On

On the 17th they had the heaviest and severest storm they had ever experienced. The sea ran mountains high: but the incomparable bark, with which God had blessed them, mounted over the waves. A calm and serene state of mind enabled the missionaries to cast their care upon God, which they did in a sweet prayer, meeting between decks. In the evening the wind subsided, and the stars displayed their brilliant faces.

On the 21st, the articles and rules being completed, they were approved and signed by the brethren.

Ninety-seven days had now elapsed since they left Rio Janeiro, and, with the exception of small vessels, they had not seen ship or shore in all this time, though they had sailed thirteen thousand, eight hundred and twenty miles. Tired with so long beholding a vacant horizon, and the familiar objects the sea daily presented to their view, they began eagerly to look out for a South Sea Island; and the time was now arriving when this curiosity would in part be gratified. At seven in the morning Toobouai was descried from the fore-yard by one of the seamen, bearing south-east by east, about nine leagues off, appearing at that distance like two separate islands, but on their nearer approach, they perceived the low lands which connected the hills.

It having now been fourteen weeks since they last saw the land, they thought it a delightful prospect. The wind blew fresh from Toobouai, and the captain had no intention of going near this island; but, to oblige some who were desirous of seeing it, they tacked to windward, and towards evening came within a few miles of it. They thought it imprudent to land there, as the natives were prejudiced against the English, on account of the mutineers of the ship Bounty, who had destroyed about a hundred of them. At some future time, however, they meant to visit them, to remove their prejudice with the glad tidings of the gospel of peace. A fine breeze continuing the whole night, they saw no more of Toobouai.

The adventurers having now been seven months penned together, since their embarkation at Blackwall, became well acquainted with each other's disposition; and reciprocal regard and friendship was naturally entertained. Several of the brethren having intimated a preference of a certain group of islands, the subject of the separation of the brethren among the Marquesas, the Society, and the Friendly Islands, was again started, and a meeting of the Society appointed on the 27th of February. A meeting was held accordingly, when there appeared for each group the list of the names in the following statement*.

Their passage from Toobouai was much longer than they expected, variable winds and unsettled weather militating against them. On the 1st of March, from two in the afternoon till four, it rained excessively. From four till seven an interval of fair weather succeeded: it then rained heavier than before from nine till midnight, accompanied with vivid lightning and awful claps of thunder. Though the sea was not remarkably high, nor the wind extremely violent, the darkness and conflict of the elements formed a sight so truly dismal, that all on board acknowledged they had never witnessed any event so tremendous.

After this storm nothing material occurred till March the 4th, when the island of Otaheite delighted their anxious eyes; but the distance was considerable. At noon the extremity of the lesser peninsula bore from north by west, twelve or fourteen leagues off: they stood towards it till ten at night, then tacked about four miles south of the reefs off Atahooro, and standing off and on till day-light, steered to pass between the west end of the island and Eimeo.

* Otaheite.—1. *Rev. I. F. Cover*, 2. *Rev. John Eyre*, 3. *Rev. John Jefferson*, 4. *Rev. Thomas Lewis*, 5. *H. Bicknell*, 6. *B. Broomhall*, 7. *J. Cock*, 8. *S. Clode*, 9. *J. A. Gillam*, 10. *William Henry*, 11. *P. Hodges*, 12. *R. Hassell*, 13. *E. Main*, 14. *H. Nott*, 15. *F. Oakes*, 16. *J. Puckey*. 17. *W. Puckey*, 18. *W. Smith;* which, with five women and two children, make twenty-five for *Otaheite*.

Tongataboo,—1. *Mr. B. Boxell*, 2. *J. Buchanan*, 3. *James Cooper*, 4. *S. Harper*, 5. *S. Kelso*, 6. *J. Nobbs*, 7. *W. Shelly*, 8. *G. Veeson*, 9. *J. Wilkinson*, 10. *Gaulton, a probationer*.

Santa Christina,—1. *Mr. J. Harris*, 2. *W. Crook*.

The business being thus far settled, the captain intimated to those intended for Otaheite, that it was necessary to choose their committee and president. This suggestion was attended to; Mr. Jefferson was elected president by a great majority, and Messrs. *Cover*, *Lewis*, *Henry*, and *Broomhall*, to compose the committee. Mr. Cover was also appointed Secretary and store-keeper, and Mr. Lewis Librarian. It was further agreed, that the president, secretary, &c. should possess their respective offices for six months, and that the committee should go out by rotation, one every three months.

With

With a gentle breeze, on Sunday March 5, the missionaries were abreast of the district of Atahooroo by seven in the morning, whence several canoes were seen putting off, and paddling rapidly towards them: a calm ensuing, seventy-four canoes surrounded them; many of which were double, with about twenty persons in each. The multitude was so great, that their exertions were necessary to prevent their crowding on board: but, in spite of all their efforts to prevent it, upwards of one hundred of them were soon perceived dancing and capering like frantic persons about the decks, crying *tayo! tayo!*—At the same time repeating a few broken sentences of English.

They had no weapons among them; but, in order to keep them in awe, some of the great guns were hoisted out of the hold, whilst they, without seeming apprehensive that any thing hostile was intended, cheerfully assisted to place them on their carriages. The first ceremonies being over, the missionaries began to view their new friends with some attention: their wild disorderly behaviour, the offensive odour produced by their cocoa-nut oil, and other unpleasant circumstances, contributed to lessen the favourable opinion they had formed of them: neither could they discern that beauty and elegance in the women, for which they had been so much celebrated. But this depreciation of their merits was gradually removed by their cheerfulness, good-nature, and generosity. A very old person, who called himself the priest of Eatooa, was very importunate to be tayo with the captain; others, pretending to be chiefs, selected those who had the appearance of officers for their tayos; but as they bore no marks of distinction, and did not seem to exercise any acts of authority, their proposals were declined till further particulars were known concerning them. They were, indeed, astonished at this treatment, and more particularly so when they perceived their indifference respecting the hogs, fowls, and fruit, of which they brought abundance.

In vain the missionaries endeavoured to make them understand that this was the day of the Eatooa. At length many of the natives departed of their own accord, several were driven away by the old man, and others by one named Mauroa, who now assumed a little authority. Those who remained were chiefly arreoies from Ulietea, amounting to about forty; and, being reduced to order, divine service was performed upon the quarter deck. Mr. Cover officiated, and was perhaps the first that mentioned the Saviour's name to these poor heathens*.

It afterwards appeared that Manne Manne, the old man, who was so desirous of having the captain for a tayo, had formerly been king of Ulietea; that he was nearly related to the royal family, and of considerable importance in the islands, being chief priest over Otaheite and Eimeo. On this information, Manne was invited into the cabin, and treated very respectfully. He now repeated his solicitations to be considered by the captain as a friend, when he requested he might be allowed a day to consider of the propriety of it.

The missionaries were further informed, that the former Otoo had transferred his name and title of king to his son, and had now taken the name of Pomarre: that, in a contest about twenty months before with Temarre, the chief of the south side of the greater peninsula, Pomarre's party prevailed, and reduced his adversary to a state of dependance, and soon after Tiaraboo was conquered: in consequence of which the whole island became his property, or rather that of his son Otoo, and had ever since remained so. Motuara, the chief of Eimeo, being dead, Pomarre claimed the government of that island; and having only the widow of the deceased to contend with, was, after a few skirmishes, acknowledged as king. The power of Omarre, and his son Otoo, thus became so formidable, than no longer any person dared to question their authority.

About thirty of the natives, and two Swedes who had been left here after the loss of the Matilda, remained on board all the night, and part of the following day, till they anchored in the bay. At the dawn of day the old priest awoke,

* Such hymns as had the most harmonious tunes were selected on this occasion; as, "O'er the gloomy hills of darkness"—"Blow ye the trumpets, blow,"—and at the conclusion, "Praise God from whom all blessings flow." The text was from the first epistle general of John, iii. 23. "God is love." During the service the natives were quiet and pensive; but, when the singing began, they were filled with amazement and delight. If they sometimes forgot themselves, and interrupted with talking or laughing, a nod of the head brought them instantly to order; but, upon the whole, their silence was astonishing.

and,

and, anxious to secure the tayoship with the captain, awoke him also. His importunities being no longer to be resisted, they now exchanged names, and Manne Manne, wrapping a long piece of cloth round the captain, and placing a taboota over his head, requested for himself a musquet, some shot, and gun-powder: but, being informed that none of these articles were to spare, and that he should be otherwise amply rewarded for his kind offices, he seemed perfectly satisfied.

At one in the afternoon they came to anchor in Matavai bay, distant from the beach about three quarters of a mile; soon after which all the areoies sprung into the water, and swam to the shore. Their place, however, was instantly supplied by others, who surrounded the ship with hogs, fruit, and other refreshments. About four o'clock the captain, Manne Manne, the two Swedes, with Messrs. Cover, Henry, and a few more of the missionaries, went on shore to examine a large house on the extremity of Point Venus, which had been named E. Fwarre no Pritane (the British House.) It is a large spacious building, said to have been built by Pomarre for Captain Bligh, who had promised to come back and reside there. It is one hundred and eight feet long, and forty-eight wide. "Thus," exclaimed one of the missionaries, "hath the Lord appeared to set before us an open door, which we trust none shall henceforth be able to shut."

The chief of the district, an old man, named Piteah, welcomed them to the island, and said the house should be ready for their reception the next day. He shewed the picture of Captain Cook, on the back of which was written the names of his Majesty's ships, and their commanders, who had visited Matavai since that great navigator's time. The natives on shore were delighted with the idea of men coming purposely from Pretane to fix their residence among them.

Early the next morning arrived, as a present from Manne Manne to his tayo, three hogs, some fowls, cocoa-nuts, and a quantity of cloth. He accompanied the present, and delivered a long oration on the occasion.

Soon after one of the Swedes, named Peter, arrived from a distant part of the island, with more fruit, and a very large hog*.

After discussing the subject maturely, it was at length resolved, that, as Otaheite was the most eligible island, the first settlement should be there, and that the friendship and protection of Pomarre, and his son Otoo, should be courted by kindness, and the most zealous attention to their interest; but never to interfere in their wars, except as mediators.

Torrents of rain discouraged the missionaries from landing till near eleven in the forenoon; when the captain, Mr. Jefferson, and a few more of the missionaries, went on shore, accompanied by Manne Manne, and Peter. Four or five hundred of the natives were assembled on the beach, some of whom ran into the water, and taking the captain and the missionaries on their backs, conducted them dry on shore. They were received by the young king Otoo, and his wife Tehea, both carried on men's shoulders: each of them seized the captain by the hand, surveying him attentively and minutely in the face, and examining every article of his dress: the same excess of curiosity was also practised among the brethren. The queen opened Mr. Cover's shirt at the breast and sleeves, expressing her astonishment at the sight of the blue veins.

The captain now informed the king, by Peter who acted as interpreter, that their only inducement for leaving Pretane to come and visit them was to do them good; and for that purpose only, some worthy men of their number intended to settle among them; requiring, on their part, the free gift of a piece of land, sufficiently stocked with bread-fruit and cocoa-nut trees; and so large as to contain a garden, and admit of houses being built upon it; that this land should be their own; that they would not intermeddle in their wars, nor employ their arms but for self-defence; and at all times should live free and unmolested

* Manne Manne, the aged high priest, now conducted four of his wives on board, not one of which exceeded the age of fifteen years, and requested he might sleep in the cabin. Complying with the custom of the country, he desired captain Wilson, his tayo, to take his choice, and seemed astonished at his declining the offer. A conversation naturally ensued on the nature of their customs, when the captain explained to the old priest, how little such a state of polygamy must contribute to happiness; that no woman could be truly affectionate and faithful, where the heart was not fixed upon a single object; and that in such a state only domestic felicity could be promoted. The old priest did not much approve of this doctrine, though the ladies admitted that it was very good.

among them; to which if he consented, they would continue on the island; if not, they would go elsewhere. Much pains were taken to make this proposal understood, but as Otoo's physiognomy did not indicate a large share of understanding, he probably did not comprehend half of it; though he signified that the large house was their own, and they might take what land they pleased.

After this Manne Manne stood up in the middle of a ring, and pronounced a long speech, passing many high encomiums on Pretane. The king then took the captain by the hand, and led him to the beach; after which, on his request, he was permitted to return on board. Otoo expressed a desire to hear the musquets fired, and, to gratify him, four were discharged twice, with which compliment he appeared very much pleased *.

Understanding there were women and children on board, they expressed a desire of seeing them; and when they exhibited themselves at the ship's side, they set up a cry of astonishment. A smart squall from the north-east came on presently after, attended with heavy rain, lightning, and thunder. The rain ceasing about nine in the morning of the 8th, the missionaries went on shore, with their chests and beds, and took possession of their house. By the captain's desire, Mr. W. Willson followed to assist them in planning their separate apartments. A vast concourse of the natives had gathered on the beach, to observe who should land in the pinnace, among whom was Otoo and his queen, carried on men's shoulders, as before.

Mr. Wilson having intimated that he had business to do within the house, was permitted to depart; but the king first introduced a woman to him named Whyeridde, the sister of Iddeah, and wife of Pomarre, whom he was required to take as a tayo; in consequence of which names were exchanged, and the usual ceremonies took place.

The first step respecting the house, was to close it round with the thicker sort of bamboo, and to fix a door on each side, to prevent the natives from crowding too much upon them. The several apartments were next planned, and partitions began. In the arrangement the married people had a part of one side to themselves, and the single men the other side. A store-room, and a library were then marked out; and a place for the doctor and his medicines. To enclose the whole, a partition was continued from side to side, with two lock doors. The remaining space was left for a chapel: and into it the outer doors opened †.

Manne Manne sent the missionaries three hogs, ready dressed for dinner, with baked bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, &c. Placing these on a large piece of cloth, he invited them to begin to eat, but not before they had called upon God to bless the provision. They found it very good, though unaccompanied with dish, spoon, knife, fork, table, or chair. Presents in abundance arrived from the different chiefs, who were soliciting their friendship.

The house was crowded with the natives during the day, which induced the brethren to keep a guard over their property, though no symptoms appeared of their having depredations in view. When the evening approached, silence was demanded; and, having sung a hymn, Mr. Jefferson offered up a prayer to our Lord; during which time the natives were very quiet and attentive, and retired peaceably when requested.

The king and queen shook hands with the missionaries, and minutely examined their apparel. In the morning of the 9th, the natives came to their house, boiled their water, and prepared the

* Otoo is tall, and well proportioned, and appears to be about seventeen years of age: his queen is handsome, and has seen about the same number of years. Though the captain supposed his majesty had a vacant countenance, some of the missionaries had a more favourable opinion of him. As he paddled round the ship, he was offered the compliment of firing the great guns, which he thought proper to decline, fearing the noise would be offensive to his ears.

† Several of the arreoies of Ulietea having arrived here about this time, willing perhaps te amuse the English strangers, began their heivas. In the afternoon they collected in great numbers before the house, and engaged in a kind of box-fighting or wrestling: first forming a ring, within which stood about a dozen stout fellows, with their backs to the crowd, and faces towards each other. The game commenced with an act of defiance or challenge, signified by beating heavy strokes with the flat hand on the left arm. At length one of them stept forward to the centre of the circle; another, supposing himself his equal in prowess, advances to meet him; sometimes only a blow or two takes place, and they fall back again into their respective places. At another time, after advancing and staring each other in the face, one will probably plump the top of his head into the countenance of his opponent, provoking laughter among the crowd, and causing the sufferer to retire in the dumps.

bread-

bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts. In the course of the day the king and queen visited them several times. This morning a visit was also received from Inna Madua, the widow of Oreepiah, accompanied by two chief women. Oreepiah was much attached to the English; and his widow, supposing them grieved for his loss, burst into tears on her entering the cabin. But this scene of sorrow was of short duration; cheerfulness succeeded, and they breakfasted and dined on board, Manne Manne being also present.

Otoo paddled round the ship in his canoe, and calling out for food, the captain sent him, in an English dish, half of a roasted pig, and some biscuit; with which he proceeded towards the shore, seemingly much pleased.

Whilst the business of the house, and other essential matters were going on ashore, the crew were employed in weighing the anchor, and mooring the ship with the two bowers. In the evening innumerable presents were received, not only on board, but at the house, consisting of live hogs, bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and cloth. More ready-dressed meat was also brought them than the brethren and the attendant natives could consume.

This day the captain landed to display some gaudy dresses to the king and queen. Intimation being given to his Majesty of what was intended, Peter desired Otoo to walk towards his house, a shed erected for the purpose of being near the brethren. This was complied with, and when the captain came under a certain tree, he ordered the people to form a ring, placing a box which had been brought in the midst. Otoo was desired to alight in order to be dressed, which, after some ridiculous delays, he consented to. The queen also descended from the man's shoulder, and was decorated with what was taken from the box. Equipped in this gaudy attire, the surrounding crowd gazed on them with admiration. She, yielding to the foibles of her sex, appeared exceedingly delighted; but Otoo declared that a musquet, a knife, or a pair of scissars were more valuable; a more sensible remark than was expected from his lips.

At the conclusion of the ceremony, Manne Manne appeared before the house, and calling the captain towards him, clothed him in the Otaheitean dress, putting on an elegant breast-plate over all. They then repaired to the British house, where the improvements were briskly carrying on. The old priest accompanied the captain on board to dinner. At the house they were very busy in fitting up the apartments for the women, who were intended to be landed in the afternoon. After dinner the pinnace was manned for the women and children, and vast numbers of the natives crowded to the beach to gratify their curiosity. The house was surrounded all the afternoon by the natives, who were much delighted with the two children, and often called upon them and the women to shew themselves at the door.

Manne Manne having already distinguished himself as a useful man, besides bringing several hogs, &c. the captain made him a handsome present. After prayer the brethren retired to rest. Before the Otaheiteans departed, they were informed that no labour would be performed the following day.

The Sunday passed very quietly, not a single canoe approaching the ship; nor was any interruption attempted on shore. A discussion took place among the brethren, respecting the propriety of addressing the natives on the important subject of their mission; when it was agreed that Mr. Jefferson should introduce the business, through the medium of Andrew the Swede, who was qualified to act as interpreter. Accordingly they met at three in the afternoon, several of the natives being present; and when Andrew interpreted the first sentence, which they perceived was directed to them, they became extremely attentive. When they began to comprehend a little of what was said, they asked some very pertinent questions.

Mr. Jefferson, pointing to his brethren, told them that "they were messengers of the only true God; and that, though all men had offended him, he was a merciful God; conferring on those who believed his word great blessings in this life, and after death took them to a state of eternal happiness." Otoo, who was present, was not much affected with this address.

Early the next morning several canoes were seen alongside, in one of which their constant friend Manne Manne was observed; with several chiefs and their wives: but the principal person now to be introduced was the father of Pomarre, Otew, formerly Whappai, a venerable looking man aged about seventy, with grey head, and a snow-

snow-white beard. His name had formerly been Otoo; but, on the birth of his son, in compliance with the general custom, he changed it to Otew. He presented the captain with a piece of cloth and a pig; receiving in return, two axes, four pair of scissars, four knives, two looking-glasses, and two old shirts, which were all the articles he asked for.

After breakfast Otoo and the queen sent off a request to the captain to make them some presents; in consequence of which they sent alongside thirteen live hogs, and three ready dressed, for the king; the present for the queen was six alive, one ready dressed, and a bale of cloth. Their Majesties followed in a large double canoe, accompanied by Otoo's younger brother, now prince of Tiaraboo.

At four in the afternoon Pomarre, and his wife Iddeah, having just arrived from Tiaraboo, paid their first visit to the ship, with a train of attendants. After some ceremony they ascended the side, and coming on to the quarter deck, the king wrapped four pieces of cloth round the captain as his own present; then, taking that off, repeated the operation with an equal quantity, in the name of Iddeah.

The first ceremonies being over, he informed the captain that he would send provisions, and whatever they had occasion for, while they continued at Otaheite. When seated in the cabin he spoke highly of the English, and called King George his friend. On this the interpreter was desired to inform him, that King George loved him, and the earees of Pretane did the same; that out of regard for him and his people, he had sent some worthy men, purposely to do them good; and then desired to know if any of them should be left on his island. He immediately answered in the affirmative. A piece of land for their use was then mentioned to him, and, after some consideration, he said, that the whole district of Matavai should be given to the English, to do whatever they pleased with it*.

On the 14th, in the morning, Manne Manne, and several others, came on board; all of whom behaved very respectfully to Pomarre. The captain, in order to cultivate his friendship, gave him an excellent metal watch, with which he seemed very much pleased. As he knew not how to manage such a prize, Peter, the Swede, was directed to wind it up for him every day. The captain having checked Manne Manne for indulging in wine immoderately, he replied, that as he was going on shore to sacrifice a man to the Eatooa, he took it to inspire him with courage. The brethren expressing their abhorrence of so cruel a design, he became silent; and his friend Peter desired him never to mention any thing of the kind to them.

In the afternoon Pomarre and Iddeah visited the house, and viewed the improvements made in it with a degree of astonishment. They partook of a dish of tea with the brethren; one of the attendants pouring the tea from the cup to the saucer, and holding it to Pomarre's mouth: this was indeed the custom at every meal, his dignity not permitting him to feed himself. When he had finished, he desired the saucer might be kept for his future use, and that no woman might be permitted to touch it†.

To-day he returned his watch, very much damaged, which was supposed to have been the cause of his absenting himself from the ship; a hatchet would doubtless have been more valuable

* These important matters being thus far settled, the chief began to think of amusements, and asked about rockets, violins, &c. Finding that the brethren had none of these things, many persons seemed dejected; but, to give a little spirit, a few tunes upon the German flute were played by Mr. Bowell, and one of the seamen. Pomarre having intimated a wish to sleep on board, it was granted: the same favour was requested and granted for his wife and servant.

Here it may be necessary to remark that Iddeah, though still considered as the wife of Pomarre, has not, for some time, cohabited with him, but with one of her toutous (or servants) by whom she has had a child, and is again pregnant; her younger sister, Whyreede, next cohabited with the chief, but left him for one of much inferior rank; and his present wife is a very stout young woman, though they could not ascertain of what condition. It is, however, extremely clear that those of rank hesitate little about mixing with the lower orders of the people; if issue should be the consequence of these connections, it seldom happens that the pride of rank suffers the poor infant to live an hour after its birth. At supper, the chief demolished a whole fowl, and two pounds of pork; with which he drank proportionally.

† Among the remarks of the 15th, it appears that Pomarre and his suite attended the brethren at family worship in the house; after which the president informed him of the nature of their mission; "to teach them our God and Saviour: to teach them to read the speaking book of wisdom, and to instruct them in all useful arts; which he much applauded, saying it was my ty, my ty, *very good*." Adding that "he would send his sons for instruction."

to him, though the glitter of the watch delighted him much at first.

An alarm of an insurrection of the natives against the body of Missionaries was now industriously propagated: but after due investigation of the business, it appeared to be entirely ideal.

The 16th being appointed for the cession, in form, of the district of Matavai to the English, the captain landed upon Point Venus; where he was received by the chief, and conducted to the vicinity of the Missionary house. Most of the brethren from the ship, and all on shore, were present at the ceremony; and Peter the Swede, as usual, undertook the office of interpreter. The scene took place before the door of the Missionary house. After many preliminary ceremonies, which would be thought tedious, were they to be minutely related, the solemnity concluded with the formal surrender of the district of Matavai; and the persons to whom it was ceded were authorised to take what houses, trees, fruit, hogs, &c. they thought proper. The particulars of this grant were proclaimed deliberately by the old priest.

None of the chiefs came near the ship on the 17th, and but few canoes attended. The young king and Pomarre paid a visit at the house, when Mr Jefferson addressed him on the education of his children; representing it as a matter of importance, both to them and the people of Otaheite. Impressed with the truth of what was said, he immediately spoke to Otoo; who said, "he did not wish to learn English."—"I have a very bad opinion of Otoo," replied Mr. Jefferson. Great delight was expressed, by the natives present, on the garden-engine playing, and conveying water on the thatch of the house.

In the afternoon of the 18th, Pomarre and Iddeah came on board, accompanied by Manne Manne, and Peter to interpret. A present of cloth was made the captain; and a large chest which they brought with them in the canoe, plainly intimated that they expected a proper return. After a little circumlocution, they at length candidly acknowledged, that the chest was to hold the present which the captain might be pleased to make to Pomarre and Iddeah. It was at length suggested by the old priest, who was always ready to give his opinion, to give ten axes for Pomarre, and ten for Iddeah; and to bestow on each five shirts, eight looking-glasses, six pair of scissars, six knives, fifty nails, and five combs. To these were added, on his part, one cast-iron pot, one razor, and a blanket. The whole was put into the chest, and secured by a lock and key.

He then acknowledged himself satisfied, but when he passed between decks, he saw several things lying loose, and requested something from every person he saw; but, knowing how well he had fared in the cabin, they gratified him with very little *.

It having been made known that the brethren intended to address the natives on the 19th, in the morning, numbers of them assembled early round the dwelling.

At ten o'clock the natives were called together under the cover of some shady trees, near the house: a long form had been placed on the spot, on which Pomarre was requested to seat himself with the brethren; the rest of the natives standing or sitting in a circle round them. Mr. Cover then addressed them from the words of St. John, "God so loved the world, that he gave his only-begotten son, that they who believed on him should not perish, but should have everlasting life." The Swede was the interpreter as before.

The Otaheiteans were silent and attentive; and, after service, Pomarre took Mr. Cover by the hand, and expressed his approbation by the word *my ty, my ty*. Being asked, if he understood what was said, he replied, "There were no such things before in Otaheite, and that they were not to be taught at once, but that he would wait the coming of (the Eatooa) God."

About three the ordination solemnity of the brethren Kelso and Harris took place: they were set apart for their work, by the imposition of hands of their ordained brethren †.

Peter, the Swede having offered to go with the brethren to the Friendly Islands, the captain

* The brethren intended for the Friendly Isles, having no ordained ministers to accompany them, chose from their number Mr. Seth Kelso to be their pastor, and urged to those on shore the propriety of ordaining him, and John Harris, previous to their departure. This was readily consented to, and they were accordingly ordained ministers to the places of their respective destination.

† Pomarre, and all their Saturday's guests, attended on the

tain consented, thinking he might be serviceable on some occasions, as interpreter. He also purposed taking with him a young woman named Tanno Manno, a man the mutineers had called Tom, and a boy named Harraway. The two last had already made great proficiency in the Otaheitean language, and were therefore expected to be useful: on which account they were also permitted to go.

Mr. Puckey coming on board, some conversation took place on the propriety of the brethren's arming themselves on shore, and keeping watch night and day; which those on board disapproved. He replied, that their intention in taking arms was not to injure the natives, or to plant the gospel by human power; but merely for the protection of their persons and property, during the absence of the ship.

SECTION III.

Short Voyage to Eimeo, and Return—Division of the Missionaries—Voyage to Tongataboo—Occurrences there on the First Visit.

ABOUT an hour before day-light they weighed, with a light air from the south-east. At seven in the afternoon a fresh gale sprung up from the north-east, attended with thunder and lightning; by ten o'clock they were off the north-east part of Eimeo, when it again fell little wind. They kept running along the edge of the coral reef, towards Taloo harbour, and had irregular foundings for eight, twelve, and fourteen fathoms. With a light breeze they run close up to the south-east corner of the harbour, and let go their anchor in ten fathoms water, and moored with a stream cable to a remarkable large tree, standing close to the water's edge.

Taloo harbour is on the north side of the island, and the bottom is so clear, that the coral may be distinctly seen, with all its beautiful branches. The harbour is about a quarter of a mile broad, at the mouth, and the water is of an astonishing depth. This led to a delightful bay of two miles wide and about three deep. This bay is surrounded with trees, and not the least agitation of the water is perceiveable on the beach, let the wind blow from what quarter it may. They lay under a mountain ten times the height of a top-gallant mast, and perpendicular: A fine fresh-water river runs up several miles, which a boat can ascend a mile or two, and ships water very commodiously. It is a very secure harbour. It has a border of low-land, like Otaheite, covered with bread-fruit, cocoa-nut, and other trees *.

After dinner, the captain, Mr. Falconer, Wm. Puckey, and Peter, set off in the pinnace, to see a vessel that was building for Manne Manne; of which they gave a favourable account on their return. In this excursion the captain shot a wild duck, and two small birds, and Mr. Falconer caught a dozen fish with the seine. All the afternoon the ship was surrounded by the natives, among whom were several women, who, by their amorous gestures, signified their desire to be taken on board, but had the mortification to meet with no encouragement. Several articles were offered to barter, but no hogs, the rahoo, a peculiar kind of prohibition, was then in force †.

Eight of the brethren, by the permission of the captain, took the jolly-boat to a fresh water creek at the end of the harbour, for the purpose of washing their linen, but almost instantly returned; suspecting, from the unaccountable be-

the 20th, bringing more cloth, and some fowls for sea stock. They staid dinner; the chief, who was fed by his head man, ate heartily, and drank freely of a bottle of wine; he manifested a covetous disposition on this occasion, not willingly permitting Manne Manne to have a glass with him.

* Here a tupapow was seen, the flesh of which was quite gone; the skin remained, extended like parchment over the bones; the natives seemed displeased at seeing it thus examined by strangers. Two posts, of the length of about six feet, are let into the ground at each end, on which a broad plank is laid, and the corpse extended, wrapped in a cloth: a small shed, like a boat inverted, is placed over it to keep out the rain.

† A rahoo is imposed by the chiefs, to repair the desolations occasioned by inordinate feastings. At this time none of the residents can sell a pig, or kill one for their own consumption: they are permitted, however, to take hogs from those districts that are free, and use them as they please. Sometimes a rahoo is laid upon the fish; which is signified by poles, with a flag at top, stuck upon the reefs where they are prohibited.

haviour of a multitude of the natives, that they meant to rob them of their bundles, and commit other atrocities. They were not, however, molested.

Soon after they were got on board, a general meeting of the brethren was held in the cabin, to debate on the propiety of taking fire-arms on shore with them at Tongataboo. After much discussion on the subject, there appeared, on a division—for taking musquets, brothers Harper, Kelso, Nobs, Shelly, Veeson, and Wilkinson—against it, Bowell, Buchanan, and Cooper.

Some remonstrances were afterwards addressed to Messrs. Harris and Cook, on their going to the Marquesas in so small a number; to which they replied, that they had long since made that place their choice, and still continued of the same opinion, not doubting of a favourable reception. On this account they did not think it necessary for the ship to revisit them, but would rather, with the captain's approbation, that the vessel should first go to the Friendly Islands, and then proceeding to the Marquesas, much time and expense would be saved, and the captain be enabled to stay a month, or more, to see them properly settled. This proposal was approved, and intended to be adopted *.

At night, about eleven o'clock, the watch saw a naked native standing in the main chains; who, when he attempted to seize him, made his escape, taking with him four yards of electric chain †.

Orders were issued for keeping a good look-out during the night, as it was apprehended they would be visited by thieves: two musquets were therefore placed in readiness. At two in the morning, when it was very dark, a man was heard swimming under the ship's bows, meaning, it was supposed, to cut the cable; a musquet was fired, and he fled with precipitation ‡.

The island itself appears to have suffered great convulsions, either from earthquakes, or other violent causes. The low lands are covered with cocoa-nut, bread-fruit, and other trees, all growing luxuriantly without culture. Here the cows remain, which Captain Cook had left, but they are little attended to: they are said to be so wild that the natives dare not approach them.

Towards evening they saw Tethuroa, about twenty-four miles from Otaheite, consisting of about seven little islets, covered with cocoa-nuts, but no bread-fruit, which they are not permitted to cultivate. It belongs to the king, but Manne Manne claims it. The natives amounting to about three thousand, are employed in fishing for the chiefs of Otaheite.

* About thirty canoes, containing men and women, kept paddling round them all the day. Many of the natives, who had no canoes, diverted themselves in the water several hours together; and if any trifle was thrown in, they would dive several fathoms after it, and were almost certain of bringing it up.

† On the 24th, many natives from different parts of the island, came to view the ship, and seemed greatly to admire it. They were unarmed, but manifested a disposition for plundering. None of them were suffered to come upon the decks, but they found means to steal the rudder out of the jolly-boat lying alongside. While the people were at dinner in the cabin, a tall fellow, getting upon the back of the rudder, reached his hand up, and snatched away a book, plunging instantly into the water. Thinking this action too atrocious to be overlooked, a few small shot were fired, which induced them to take to the water, and skulk behind the canoe. After much difficulty the offender was taken; and when brought alongside, trembled through fear of being put to death: a rope being fixed round his body, he was hoisted on board, and lashed to the rigging, in sight of his countrymen, who ranged themselves along the beach, in expectation of seeing him punished. As Peter was on shore at this time, the delinquent was kept bound till he returned on board. He was then directed to inform the man that as the offence had been committed before he had been warned of the consequence, he should be set at liberty; but if he should ever be found guilty of such a crime in future, he should be very severely punished. He promised never to do the like again, and retired with a joyful countenance.

The flagrant conduct of the captain's steward having been frequently experienced, he was turned out of the cabin before the mast. This evening, going on shore with others to bathe, he secreted himself, having got some of his things on shore, unknown to any but the Swede. This caused the brethren much sorrow of mind, as he had made a profession of godliness. They were afraid that this man, thus leaving the ship, and indulging in all the abominable practices of the heathen, would prove a reproach and plague to them.

‡ On the 25th, at six in the morning, they weighed, and stood out of Taloo harbour; several of the natives in their canoes following them to sea, expressing a desire, to trade with them. The brethren could learn but little of the people of this island, as they were afraid of trusting themselves in small parties on shore, lest they should retaliate on them the vengeance which Captain Cook inflicted on them for stealing his goats. They observed, however, that they were less frank and affable towards strangers, than the Otaheiteans were in general; and in every point of civilization, were far behind that people. In their persons they differ little from the Otaheiteans, except in a Jewish cast of countenance, which is here more general.

On

On the 26th, at four in the afternoon, they tacked the ship close in with One-tree hill, hoisted their colours, and fired a gun. On hearing of which several of the brethren came off in a double canoe, and reported that all was well. The chiefs also were behaving extremely well. They took leave of their friends, hoisted in the pinnace, and made sail for the Friendly Islands, after sending on shore materials for a flat-bottomed boat, to be built during their absence.

The natives were extremely kind and attentive: they daily attended devotions, and heard such addresses as they were able to make to them through an interpreter. This first experiment of the ship's absence had removed all the brethrens fears; and they saw them quit the harbour only with the tenderness of parting friends, who hoped again shortly to meet and rejoice together.

The transactions at Otaheite must now be interrupted to follow their brethren through the deep. The day after their departure from Matavai, they passed to the southward of the Society Islands, in sight of Huaheine, Ulietea, Otaha, and Bolabola. With a fair wind, and pleasant weather, they shaped their course for Palmerston's Island. Accordingly on the 1st. of April, at day-break, they saw it bearing west, distant about two leagues. A squall of wind and heavy rain coming on soon after, they returned to the ship, lest any accident should happen to the boats. About eight o'clock the weather cleared up, and a second attempt was made; as on account of the tide of ebb the surface had fallen considerably; but no place was observed where they could land the boats with safety. Cocoa-nut trees covered the islet, to get at which was the object of our adventurers. Otaheitean Tom, the third mate, and one of the seamen, taking with them the end of a line, leaped into the water, and ventured into the surf, where they effected a footing on the coral rocks, which compose the reef, after receiving several wounds on different parts of their bodies, with the sharp points of the coral. They had still a quarter of a mile to walk before they arrived at the dry beach; so that all the cocoa-nuts they could procure, would not compensate for the difficulty of obtaining them, but about half ebb, they saw an opening in the reef, which they found deep enough to pass clear over the beach; where they could step out dry, and lie within fifty yards of the trees. They now applied themselves to the object in view, and sent both the boats off loaded with cocoa-nuts; keeping the two Otaheiteans on shore to climb the trees. A second load of cocoa-nuts, and grass for the use of the goats, was afterwards procured; and late in the evening they returned on board, hoisted the boats in, and made sail, having acquired five hundred and thirty cocoa-nuts in the course of the day*.

No satisfactory evidence has been adduced of this island having ever been inhabited, though rats have been seen in it, and a piece of a canoe was found upon the beach. It has been suggested by some authors that those animals, as well as the wooden remnant of the boat, might have been drifted there on some hollow tree or root, and cast upon the shore.

On the 5th of April they saw Savage Island, the natives of which had shewn a ferocious and hostile disposition to Captain Cook and his people, in 1774; when he discovered it, and gave it that name.

They now shaped their course for Tongataboo, and on the 9th, about ten in the morning, they saw the land; and at noon the island of Eooa bore south-west, distant about eight leagues. Passing to the northward of Eoo-aje, they steered west south-west to the entrance, followed by several canoes which put off from the eastern part of the main island, and the islets on the reef.

* Palmerston's Island consists of a group of small islets, eight or nine in number, connected by a reef of coral rocks, and lying in a direction nearly circular. The islet they landed upon is about a mile in circuit, and at high-water not exceeding five feet above the level of the sea. The soil is coral sand, with an upper stratum of blackish mould. The inner area of the islet is covered with cocoa-nut trees; and near the beach are the wherra, and several other trees. Among them were observed plenty of red crabs, dragging after them a shell in the form of a periwinkle. They also saw the submarine grotto mentioned by Captain Cook in his Third Voyage, which affords a most enchanting prospect. "Its base, which is fixed to the shore, extends so far that it cannot be seen, so that it seems to be suspended in the water. Even this delightful scene was greatly improved by the multitude of fishes that gently glided along." The brethren beheld it with pleasure, and regretted, like many others, that a work so astonishingly elegant should be concealed in a place so seldom explored by the human eye.

In

In sailing into the harbour they kept the north reef on board, till they came to the narrow channel bending to the north-west, which they got through after making two or three short tacks, with a tide strong in their favour; then, passing Makahaa, they hauled to the southward, and anchored in nine fathoms, less than a mile from the islet of Pangimodoo, and moored with a stream anchor and cable to the south-west.

Their followers were now all eager to come on board, but thinking they were too numerous to have free access, only twenty of them were admitted; and sentries were placed on each side of the deck to keep off others who were very importunate to obtrude. The commodities they offered for barter consisted of hogs, cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, yams, spears, clubs, and various articles ingeniously manufactured; but their demands were extravagantly high. After dinner, a chief named Futtafaihe was introduced to the captain, as a person of eminence at Tongataboo: he appeared to be about forty years of age, well proportioned, of an open countenance, and noble demeanour, though rather too pompous. He talked much in the cabin, but the brethren could only collect from his conversation, that he was a great chief, that several white men were on the island, and that he would bring them with him on the following day. The captain made him a present of an axe, a looking glass, and some other articles, and he took his leave.

He had hardly quitted the ship, when two Europeans made their appearance. Without hesitation they came alongside, and stepped familiarly on board, giving the brethren the extreme pleasure of hearing their own language spoken by them: but that pleasure was much diminished when they perceived, in the countenance of one of them especially, so much of the abandoned villain, that in England a man of probity would have avoided him as a pestilence. But as they have to act a part in future, their own account of themselves may demand attention. One of them, named Benjamin Ambler, says he was born at Shadwell, near London; and that his parents now keep a public house in Cannon Street. He is a bold, presuming, loquacious fellow. John Connelly is a native of Cork in Ireland, a cooper by trade, and much less talkative than his comrade. Ambler declares they left London in a vessel called the Otter, in which they sailed to America; and there, to obtain better wages, quitted her to go in an American vessel bound to the north-west coast on the fur trade. On their passage outwards they touched at the islands of St. Paul and Amsterdam, where they remained some time, catching seals. They proceeded thence to the Friendly Islands, hoping to procure refreshments; but having only old iron hoops to barter, they could not get any hogs from the natives. Thus situated, these two men, and four others, were induced to leave the ship, their salt provisions being so extremely bad as to be hardly eatable, and they had the additional mortification of being put upon a short allowance. Dreading further inconveniences, they prevailed upon the captain to discharge them. They afterwards landed upon Anamooka, where an American vessel called soon afterwards, and being in want of seamen, three of their number were engaged. An Irishman, named Morgan, remained at Anamooka, and these two had been thirteen months at Tongataboo. They were both under thirty years of age

Ambler informed them that Futtafaihe was a great chief, presiding over all the eastern part of the island, but that Tibo Moomooe, an old man, had great power, and was generally considered as king over the island. He added, that he was highly esteemed by his people; and that humanity and hospitality were predominant *traits* of his character *.

At this time a large double canoe approached, in which were several chiefs, who, either to oblige the brethren, or display their arbitrary power, began driving the canoes from the ship, compelling them to proceed towards the shore as fast as they could paddle. One of these chiefs was Feenou, who was said to be brother to him who was so much attached to Captain Cook. On the approach of night they all retired very quietly.

* This respectable character encouraged the captain to mention to Ambler the purpose of their visit, and to enumerate the benefits which the natives would eventually receive from the talents and character of the missionaries; requesting at the same time, his opinion of persons settling at this place with such intentions. He replied, that he believed the natives would receive them gladly, and treat them very kindly; but, with respect to property, he could give no assurance of its safety.

In the evening the captain and missionaries held a meeting, when it was agreed, that, if Tibo Moomooe would give them a house, and protect their persons, some of the brethren should land as soon as possible, to examine the place, take a view of the natives in their habitations, and learn how they were likely to behave to them: when they might more easily determine what property they might safely take at first; and also consider the propriety of taking arms.

On the 11th, at day-light, a large double canoe came alongside, having on board several of the chiefs who had visited them the preceding day: they had brought with them two hogs, and a quantity of yams. They entered the cabin without much ceremony, and sat quietly while the brethren breakfasted. They refused to take tea, but seemed to relish the biscuit and butter. About ten in the forenoon, Ambler and Connelly brought three hogs and some yams from Moomooe, informing them that he would speedily follow. Punctual to his promise, the venerable chief was very soon alongside, but took time to consider about ascending the ladder, fearing he was incapable of the task: at length, however, he made an attempt, but was obliged to rest himself at the gangway. With considerable labour and difficulty (having previously been shaved that he might appear decent before the captain) he entered the cabin, followed by twenty-two attendant chiefs and servants: these squatted themselves upon the floor, but the chief was seated in a chair, which he admired so much that he requested it might be given to him. He accurately surveyed the cabin, expressed his admiration of whatever he beheld, and asked a number of very pertinent questions.

The captain took a favourable opportunity of interrogating Moomooe respecting his willingness for them to reside there, and what provision he would be pleased to make for them; he replied, that, for the present, they should have a house near his own, till a more suitable one could be provided: that a piece of land should be appropriated to their use, and he would cause their property and persons to be protected. He added, that, if they thought proper, they might go on shore, and examine the house.

For this purpose four of the missionaries, attended by Ambler, went in the pinnace, and landed about four miles to the westward of where the ship lay. The natives, excited purely by curiosity, crowded the shore, but behaved peaceably, and permitted them to pass unmolested. From the beach they had about half a mile to walk, and when they arrived at the place, they found it surrounded by a fence of reeds six feet high, enclosing upwards of three acres of ground, on which stood five habitations: the largest, intended for the missionaries, was thirty-six feet long, and fifteen feet high. On the inside, hung to the cross-beams, an anchor was perceived of about six hundred weight. It was of English form, and perhaps the same which Captain Cook lost in 1774, though Ambler said they had it from Annamooka, where it had been left by an American brig*.

The party, after this survey, returned to the ship, where they found the natives taking their departure for the shore. A meeting of the missionaries was held, to consult on the measures next to be pursued. They approved of the house, but thought the ground belonging to it, too small for the purposes of gardening and agriculture. Another difficulty arose, intimating that, as Moomooe was an old man, it might be reasonably supposed he would shortly die, when disputes would probably arise, especially among the chiefs, whose property the premises should be, or who should be their next protector. Other difficulties were started, and it was only agreed, to go to this house, if they could do no better; but that Ambler should be sent, early in the following morning, to Feenou Toogahowe, to propose their residing with him; and, if he readily embraced the offer, they would immediately land with such of their property as they thought necessary to take with them.

At the dawn of day on the 12th, the canoes hurried off to the ship, each endeavouring to get nearest to trade. Among the visitors of importance was Futtafaihe, who brought Connelly with

* From this they passed to another large house, which Ambler declared was sacred to the God of Pretane, in which Moomooe sleeps, when indisposed, hoping to obtain a cure. On the floor were seen four large conch shells, serving to alarm the country in times of danger; and on the rafters were exhibited spears, clubs, bows, and arrows, to receive supernatural virtue from their imaginary deity, to render them successful against their enemies. The other three houses on this spot are smaller.

with him, to ask the captain to place five of the missionaries with him. But they did not approve of living on this part of the island, nor to separate till they were better acquainted with the language and people: a promise to visit him when they settled, afforded him but little satisfaction*.

When he approached the ship the natives readily made way for his canoe, and appeared so much in awe of him as to amount to a kind of confirmation of what they had heard, and led the brethren to consider him as the most proper person for their protector. Ambler had before acquainted him with the nature of their design; but, for the satisfaction of the missionaries, the captain, in their presence, recited the particulars, and what was required of them; observing that their only inducement to come so far was to do them good. But if they were unwilling to receive the brethren, or were not desirous of their stay, the captain would depart in a friendly manner, without landing a man among them.

Toogahowe seemed to comprehend the greater part of what had been mentioned, and said, that if they chose to land, they might live there as they pleased, and nobody should molest them; and that, in the afternoon, he would send a double canoe to take their goods, &c. on shore†.

The truth of Ambler's information was never clearly ascertained: it was said that Feenou was at the head of this plot; being offended that nothing had been given him in return for a pig; but Feenou declared that he had never thought of doing them the least injury. The party, however, had the satisfaction of seeing the canoes disperse, as they contained about three thousand men, each armed with a formidable club or spear; and the party had only thirty undisciplined men to oppose them.

At this moment Moomooe came alongside with some yams for the captain, in return for which he requested a glass of red wine, saying he had received benefit from drinking a drop of of that liquor the day before. As they were all prejudiced in favour of the old chief, they beheld with concern that his dissolution might shortly be expected.

Futtafaihe and Mytyle, two great chiefs, came between decks, and joined with the brethren in their devotions; they endeavoured to prevail on them to go with them; but at Ambler's persuasion, and promise to learn them the language, they agreed to fix at his house.

In the afternoon the canoe arrived for the missionaries' goods, with which the boat was immediately loaded; Bowell, Buchanan, Goulton, Harper, Shelley, Veeson, and Wilkinson, accompanied by B. Ambler, embarked in it, and proceeded to a place called Aheefo. A petty chief was ordered by Toogohowe to go with them, to take care that nothing should be lost. Kelso, Cooper, and Nobs, remained on board to prepare the other things.

In the morning of the 13th, finding the natives crowd very much about them, and fearing they would be troublesome, a stream anchor was ordered on board. A passage out of this harbour by the north being desirable, either in case of a strong easterly wind, or an attack from the natives, the captain intended going in search of it; accordingly, with a fine breeze from the eastward, they stretched over towards the small island

* At nine Ambler came off with Toogahowe, who had already promised to take all the brethren under his protection: and to give them a house, with land attached to it, for their own use. Ambler declares that Toogahowe is the most powerful chief in the island, and the greatest warrior; that he is a terror to the chiefs of Tongataboo, and to those of the adjacent islands, which he had lately subjugated. That he holds his neighbours in a state of fear; insomuch, that when Moomooe dies, it is supposed he will be formally chosen into his office of great chief, or king of the island. He is a stout man, about forty years of age, and is sullen and morose. He speaks very little, but, when angry, his voice resembles the roaring of a lion.

† Ambler, with Toogahowe, had not been long on board, when he informed them of a design, which probably would have ended the voyage, if not their lives, at this place. The plot was to attack the ship; and, at that moment, all the men in eight large double canoes, and many hundred single ones, were prepared to join as soon as the attack commenced. Though this alarming intelligence was suspected to have been a forgery of Ambler's, it was thought expedient to prepare to repel such an attempt, should it happen to take place: the small arms were therefore laid in readiness, the great guns loaded with grape-shot, and every man stationed at his quarters. All the natives were immediately turned out of the ship, except Toogahowe and his attendants, and the canoes ordered from alongside. Observing an unusual stir upon the decks, and the guns levelled at them, the natives obeyed rather hastily, ranging themselves ahead and astern of the ship, seemingly in expectation of their firing a salute, as former navigators might have done. Finding, at last, that this was not intended, they wanted to come alongside again: but only a few single canoes were suffered to approach; nor would they, ever after, permit the double canoes alongside.

island of Fastae, and then stood towards Attataa; where, seeing a canoe coming with some of the brethren in her, they anchored in twelve fathoms broken ground.

About three in the afternoon she got alongside; three of the missionaries were on board of her: they said that Aheefo was farther from the ship than they supposed, and the landing with goods was extremely difficult; and after they had got to the beach, they had upwards of a mile to go to the house: hence the landing of the articles was found extremely troublesome, six hours having been fully employed in delivering them safe. They were not in the least molested; and, though it was dark, not an article of their property was lost. It was near one in the morning before every thing was safe, and the house left to themselves.

In the morning the natives provided a breakfast for them, and about nine they set off for the ship, when, the wind being unfavourable, they were six hours in their passage. Every thing was in readiness, therefore the canoe was instantly dispatched, leaving on board sufficient for another lading. And that they might have whatever was thought necessary, Buchanan and Nobs remained on board to take care that they were got in readiness.

The cargo brought on shore was surrounded by about a hundred persons, which created some alarm; but Mytyle ordered the chests into a neighbouring house, and dismissed the people, threatening every one with death who should approach to steal. The brethren then slept, in perfect security, upon mats, till waked by Mytyle at one in the morning, to partake of an entertainment of fish, hot yams, &c.*

On the 14th, they expected to have but few visitors; but, on the contrary, several canoes followed them quite without the reefs; but, on account of the adventure of the preceding night, none of them were admitted on board but Futtafaihe, who presented the captain with a fine turtle. He disapproved greatly of the behaviour of his countrymen; said he knew them, but as they did not belong to that part of the island over which he presided, he was not competent to punish them.

Being now without the shoals, they steered towards the west end to be nearer to the brethren, and, at three in the afternoon, the canoe came alongside, with Shelley and Cooper in her. They reported that all was well, and that themselves and those on shore were pleased with their situation, and that they experienced great favour from the natives. The canoe was loaded with what they thought sufficient for their purposes till their return. After some further conversation they took an affectionate leave of each other.

A fresh gale sprung up, which afterwards increased so much, that they could hardly carry double reefed topsails, and they found the ship was driving fast towards the reefs: by the time they were abreast of Attataa they saw clearly, that, except they could fetch the passage they had found out the day before, they could not escape shipwreck: providentially, however, they just weathered the reef on the west side of the channel, and running through with confidence, were soon in perfect safety, and grateful for so signal a deliverance.

They were now in the harbour, but not deeming it eligible to anchor in so hard a gale, as the wind blew fair for them to proceed in their voyage, they steered for the eastern channel out of the harbour, and were once more alarmed with danger. The captain was aloft looking out, and

* Before they weighed this morning, they were visited by a woman of rank, attended by a vast number of chiefs and females. This lady was so extremely corpulent, that it was attended with some difficulty to get her on board: three stout fellows followed her, carrying a bundle of cloth, which was presented to the captain in form; who gave her in return what fully satisfied her. The ship being under sail, perhaps less ceremony was used to this great personage than she expected; but she and her train seemed happily engaged in the cabin over the kava bowl for about two hours; when she was informed that the ship had got a considerable distance from her house, which induced her to hasten into the canoe, and sail instantly towards the shore. Here many females possess the highest degree of rank, and support it with becoming dignity.

About midnight, a canoe with four men was observed, lying ahead of the ship. Imagining that mischief was their aim, the brethren determined to drive them off without firing shot; and, for that purpose, a quantity of cocoanut husks was prepared upon the fore-castle. Under cover of a squall, they soon after dropped under the bow, when, without making the least noise, a volley of the husks was poured upon their heads; the sudden surprise of which caused them all to plunge into the water, whilst the canoe, totally deserted, drifted astern. To intimidate them still farther, a musquet was fired over their heads. It being very dark, they presently lost sight of the men, but thinking the canoe would lead to a discovery of the offenders, they lowered the jolly-boat down, and picked her up.

thought

thought he saw a shoal on the larboard bow; he called to port the helm, but, the appearance vanishing, he ordered it a-starboard. That instant they found themselves close to the reef, and running directly for it. After they had been in the utmost peril, the exertions of the crew contributed greatly to their preservation, and they became clear of danger, and had good sea-room: then steering between Eoo-aije and Eaooa, they proceeded to make the best of their way to the Marquesas. Thus, after the most imminent perils, and the most providential deliverances, they were preserved for the accomplishment of the great work appointed for them. They had humbly planted a seed of divine truth, which they hoped would take root and flourish to the latest generation.

SECTION IV.

Voyage to the Marquesas—Discoveries made—Transactions at Christiana—Occurrences at the Marquesas.

HAVING extricated themselves from the difficulties which surrounded them in Tongataboo harbour, the brethren once more passed into the open sea: for the first five days they had favourable winds; but afterwards, during most of the time that they were to the southward of the tropic, they experienced successive gales from the eastward, with high seas, and extreme cold weather. Their Otaheiteans were much affected with the severity of the cold: Harraway, the boy, indeed kept up his spirits, and Tanno Manoo behaved very well; for by conducting herself modestly, affably, and courteously, she was treated with respect by every person on board. Her understanding was naturally good, and very susceptible of improvement; her talents enabling her to be extremely serviceable to Mr. Crook, and others who were learning the language. The captain furnished her with a commodious week-day dress, and a more splendid morning gown and petticoat for Sundays.

Tom was extremely apprehensive of dying before he should again see Otaheite; and, in one of the gales, asked the captain if he did not think the ship would die: he was very low-spirited during his passage, and suffered more than the others from cold; he could not be taught to do any thing, and seemed to be remarkably indolent: while Harraway was a very useful boy in the ship. Hence it appears that Harraway and Tanno Manoo are proofs that the Otaheiteans, taken young, are capable of receiving instruction.

On the 23d of May they discovered land; on the 24th, at day-light, they stood towards it, and as they drew near, found it very low, and in the form of a crescent, with a lagoon in the middle; into which the sea broke on the south-west side, though no opening appeared capable of admitting a boat. Perceiving that it was inhabited, when they got within a mile of the north-east side, they hove the ship to, and putting two seamen in the jolly boat, with Peter and Otaheitean Tom (who dressed himself in a piece of his own new cloth on the occasion) they rowed towards the shore, intending to land if the natives appeared to be friendly; and to ingratiate themselves into their favour, took looking-glasses, beads, iron tools, and some English coin to leave with them. But, on their approach, the natives assembled to oppose their landing: as they walked along the shore, the women followed them with spears, which they shook in a menacing manner, and significantly warned them to be gone. Tom shewed them his skin, his cloth, and tattou marks, and spoke to them in his own language, which they seemed not to understand. Perceiving that all their manœuvres to conciliate them were ineffectual, and that, approaching so near them as to be able to give them any thing, might expose them to a stone or a spear, and provoke them to fire upon them, they returned to the ship, and hoisting the boat up, steered for the higher island, distant about ten leagues*.

At noon they left crescent island, and had a fresh

* This was named Crescent Island, on account of its form, and is six or seven miles in circumference. Many of the wharra trees grew upon it, and some others of a useless kind. The shore is grey coral sand and stones, thrown up by

fresh northerly breeze: at three in the afternoon they directed their course north north-west towards an island with two lofty hills, which are conspicuous even at the distance of fourteen or fifteen leagues: these were distinguished by the appellation of Duff's Mountains.

When within about three leagues, they saw a reef ahead, and the sea breaking very high upon it; they were therefore obliged to alter their course to the north north-west, which they supposed would lead them clear of every danger which lay on the east side of the island; but in this they were mistaken; for, after getting a better view, they discovered that Duff's Mountains were part of an island about three leagues in length, with several of considerable height to the south and south-east of it; the whole forming a group of about six leagues long. Upon this reef were several dry spots, whereon grew clusters of trees. It was now the dusk of the evening; and, being apprehensive that dangers might lie in their way, they resolved to spend the night within the space they already knew; and accordingly hauled their wind to the north-east under an easy sail. The natives on the north end of the island, having observed their approach, made a large fire to alarm their countrymen; which at times presented a very curious phenomenon; and as it was kept burning till almost day break, it proved very beneficial to the adventurers as a guide; the night being extremely dark, attended with variable winds and heavy rain.

At six in the morning the north part of the islands bore north-west, distant about three leagues: towards the northernmost part of the reef, they observed a small islet, upon which were assembled about fifty natives, armed with spears; they also perceived some boys taking stones off the beach, and assuming attitudes as if they meant to throw them at our adventurers: the men also exhibited tokens of a hostile disposition, but they at length retired behind the trees, The main island, and those scattered about it, are high, and present a view romantic, wild, and barren: the valleys, however, appear covered with trees; but of what kind they could not accurately distinguish, though cocoa-nut trees were said to be distinguished among others.

The group was denominated Gambier's Islands, in honour of the worthy admiral so named. Duff's Mountains lie in the centre.

The passage from the Friendly Isles having already been longer than was expected, the captain thought it necessary to push on for the Marquesas. On the 26th, at break of day, they thought they saw low land ahead, seemingly very close; they wore ship and stood from it about a quarter of an hour, and tacked towards it again, when the day presented to their view the imminent danger they had escaped; for that part which they were running for, and many others, were even with the water's edge, and they might have struck before they saw the rocks, or heard the sea beat upon them, so little noise was heard. This island is about seventeen miles in length, and nine in breadth, and has several clumps of trees upon it; but no fruit trees or inhabitants were seen.

In the afternoon of the 28th they discovered a low island bearing north-east; as they drew near, they found it a lagoon island, with patches of trees on different parts. On the north-west end some cocoa-nuts were growing, and near them a clump of high dark-coloured trees. In the morning of the 29th, they were farther off than they expected, owing principally to a leewardly current. Shortly after it fell little wind, and they tried to effect a landing by rowing close to the shore; but they found it impracticable, the high surf beating so violently upon the coral rocks. In expectation of finding a better place, they rowed two or three miles more along the shore; but finding it every where the same, they thought proper to return to the ship. Seeing no signs of inhabitants, and despairing of finding a landing place, the captain came to a resolution of proceeding on his voyage.

In the course of the night they passed to the windward of the island, and about six in the

by the violence of the sea, forming a wall to the south-east point. The natives whom they saw, were about twenty-five in number, including three or four women with children at their backs. They are of a light copper colour, and of a middling stature. Some of them were quite naked, except a piece of cloth round their middle; others had a piece of cloth thrown over their shoulders, and extending half way down the leg. One, who was probably a chief, had a piece of white cloth round his head like a turban. They have neither bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, nor any other fruit-tree, nor was any thing perceived on the island to denote that they procured an existence by fishing: they must therefore be either transient visitors, or their situation must be wretched beyond conception.

morning,

morning, encouraged by a smooth sea, hopes were entertained of procuring a few cocoa-nuts for the people, and herbage for the goats; induced by this, they again shaped their course towards it; but, before they came near it, it fell almost calm, when two of the officers, with Peter and Tom, set off in the pinnace; and, when they had got about half a mile round the point, all in the boat, except two who were but indifferent swimmers, stepped into the water, and effected a landing though the surf was very high. From the edge of the reef they were under the necessity of walking, knee-deep in water, over a hard coral flat, before they came to the trees.

They hauled off a few cocoa-nuts, though their manner of getting them was so tedious, that they were not a compensation for the trouble; but when it became low water, and the surf fell exceedingly, by putting the boat's stern to the rocks, the adventurers stepped out without wetting their feet. This being observed from the ship, induced those on board to send the jolly-boat with more hands to assist them. They now entertained hopes of getting a plentiful supply with the greatest ease, not considering that it was possible only at low water, for them to pass or repass; this they had afterwards the misfortune to experience; for though they had procured a considerable quantity of cocoa-nuts, they all narrowly escaped with their lives; eleven of them, including the two Otaheiteans, having been left upon the island.

The situation of those on the island, was both uncomfortable and alarming; but, in order to make the best of it, after seeing the boats safe off, they walked up to the large clump of trees; and, being wet and thinly cloathed, they endeavoured to make a fire: but, though Otaheitean Tom had in vain been labouring two hours to procure a light by friction, they were under the necessity of passing the night without a fire. At ten in the evening it began to rain, and continued to fall in torrents till three in the morning. A short interval of fair weather then ensued, and incessant rain continued till noon the following day. To all this they were nearly exposed, as the trees afforded shelter only till the branches were completely wet.

At the dawn of day, on the 31st, the ship stood close in, and the captain, anxious for their safety, sent the pinnace to endeavour to get them off; but they had the melancholy prospect of beholding the surf higher than on the preceding night, which obliged them to wait the opportunity low water might afford, happening on this day about one in the afternoon. They accordingly put back to the ship, and soon after came again to the edge of the surf; when one man leaped in and got safe to them with a bottle of brandy, which was found serviceable in raising the drooping spirits of the people. This done, they put off again, and about ten returned with a stage made of fir deals, with directions for its application to disengage themselves from their present difficulties; but that measure proved also ineffectual for the present.

Low water at last came, but the sea was so rough that Otaheitean Tom, Mr. Crook, and some others, walked up in despair towards the clump of trees, hoping to procure some dry wood to enable them to light a fire, which they now stood much in need of, being in a wet and shivering condition. To their great joy, however, they were hardly gone, when the sea at intervals became smooth; they successively put in practice every expedient that could be suggested, and at length arrived safely on board the ship*.

The trees are various, as at Palmerston's Island; but the cocoa-nuts are scarce, and only to be found on the north-west end. Under shelter of a grove, a morai of stones was built, with a perpendicular stone standing at a little distance: here they observed the remains of two or three huts, and a plain space, with one circular hovel near the end; not far off were strewed upon the ground vast quantities of clam shells; all which sufficiently proved that the island had been

* This was named Serle's Island, in compliment to a gentleman of that name, author of *Horæ Solitariæ*, and other valuable performances. The reef without, and the lagoon within, abound with fish, several of which were beautifully and richly variegated. Mr. Robson, by walking near the side of the lagoon in the night, observed thousands of young sharks, swimming close to the shore. Mullet are very plentiful; and when low water left part of the reef dry, spotted eels issued from holes, which when approached, reared upon their tails, seeming to declare hostility with open mouth. The birds were nearly the same as those at the other low islands. By their various notes, it was supposed that this place gave shelter to many different species, with this remarkable perfection, that they sung almost all the night long, though it rained, and was extremely dark. Here are rats, plenty of the red crab, and a kind of land lobster, which the Otaheiteans are strangers to.

been once inhabited; but whether the persons had emigrated elsewhere, or were become extinct, could only be a matter of conjecture. One circumstance, however, is very striking, that however small in number the wretched refugees might have been, they considered a morai, or place of worship, as indispensibly necessary.

From this period nothing material occurred till they made the Marquesas; trusting wholly to their time-keeper, they found themselves, after so long a passage, considerably to the westward.

On the 5th of June, when they got within four miles of Resolution bay, they saw two men paddling towards them in a small wretched canoe, which could only be kept above water by constant bailing. Not knowing their intention to come on board, they kept all sail set, and passed close by them with great velocity: this being observed, one of them leaped into the water, caught a rope which was hove to him, and expertly hauled himself hand over hand to the quarter gallery, where they took him in quite naked. At first he surveyed the cabin with surprize, but presently recovered himself and ran upon deck. He was so completely tattowed from head to foot, that his natural colour was hardly to be distinguished. He talked fluently, and was tolerably understood by Crook and the Otaheiteans: the earnestness which he had manifested, was to induce them to tack and pick up his comrade who was his father; and that if he did not take him in, he could not reach the island in so wretched a canoe, as the wind blew strong. To remove his fears, they took the father on board, and the canoe in tow; but she soon went to pieces and drifted away, a circumstance which seemed to give them little concern. These two natives, by the advice they gave, which was minutely attended to, gave evident proof of their possessing no small degree of nautical skill.

They found it difficult to work up the bay, on account of the heavy gusts of wind from the mountains; however, by seven o'clock, they were close up, and let go their small bower anchor in fifteen fathom water. Two females now swam off, expecting perhaps a favourable reception, but, finding they could not be admitted, they kept swimming about the ship for about half an hour, calling out in a plaintive tone, Wehcine! Weheine!—Woman! Woman! They then returned to the shore, when two of the ship's company followed them, who were extremely urgent for the captain to permit them to sleep in the ship; which he would readily have complied with, as a reward for their implicit confidence, had it not been to avoid a precedent.

Their first visitors from the shore, on the 6th, were seven beautiful young women, swimming almost naked about the ship; a few green leaves tied round the middle, being their only covering. For about three hours they were thus engaged, vociferating Weheine, till several of the native men had got no board; one of whom being the chief of the island, entreated that his sister might be taken in, which was complied with: she was fair, with a yellowish cast, and had a tint of red glowing on her cheek; she was rather stout, but possessed great symmetry of features, in which particular she was nearly equalled by her companions. Their Otaheitean lady was fair, and comely; but she was greatly eclipsed by these women, and seemed to feel her inferiority in no very small degree: but she was their superior in amiableness of manners, and possessed more of the softness and delicacy of the sex. She was abashed to see a women quite naked upon the deck, and supplied her with a complete dress of new Otaheitean cloth; which encouraged those in the water, who were now very numerous, to importune for admission. Influenced by compassion, and seeing they would not return, our adventurers took them on board, but they could not all be equally gratified, as clothes could not be provided for them; nor would the mischievous goats permit them to retain their green leaves, free from mutilation.

The chief already noticed is named Tenae, eldest son of Honoo, who was reigning prince in Captain Cook's time: he arrived in a respectable canoe, and introduced himself by presenting the captain with a staff, about eight feet in length, on which a few locks of human hair were neatly plaited: this present was accompanied with a few ornaments for the head and breast. Perceiving a musquet on the quarter-deck, he carefully took it to the captain, and requested him "to put it to sleep." He received an axe, a looking-glass, a neck chain to hang it to, and a pair of scissars. Though the latter article

article is much prized at the Friendly and Society Isles, he was perfectly indifferent about it, and entirely ignorant of their use.

This appeared to be a time of scarcity among them, as they were continually complaining of hunger, and requesting food; to some they gave a little, but it was impossible to supply them all. The women were in that wretched state of subjection, that if they were favoured with any thing, and could not find means to conceal it, the men were so destitute of gallantry as to take it from them. Towards evening, those who had not canoes, amounting by far to the greatest number, plunged into the water and swam on shore.

It having been mentioned to the chief by the brethren, that two of them were to settle among them, he seemed exceedingly delighted with the proposal, and declared he would give them a house, and a share of all he had.

After this he went on shore, followed by Mr. Harris, Mr. Crook, Peter, Otaheitean Tom, &c. Tenae received them upon the beach, and conducting them a little way, desired them to stop; when some of the natives formed a ring round them, while those who were nearest the centre were sitting, to enable those behind them to look over their heads. This exhibition continued about a quarter of an hour; after which the adventurers proceeded up the valley, accompanied by the chief, his brother, and several of the young natives. The road was very steep and indifferent, which induced them to rest three times before they reached the chief's mansion, and each time slaked their thirst with excellent water, in cocoa-nut shells from a rivulet that runs down the valley. Tenae conducted them to one of the best houses, intimating that it was for the use of the brethren, and they might occupy it as soon as they pleased. It was twenty-feet long, and about six wide, ten feet high behind, and four feet in front: the door is about the middle, on the low side. The greater part of their houses are miserable hovels.

The inside furniture consisted of floor mat, extending from end to end, some large calabashes, fishing-tackle, and a few spears: at one end the chief kept his principal ornaments which he exhibited; among other things, he shewed them two bamboo cases, and two bunches of feathers from the tail of the tropic bird, each of which contained at least a hundred.

Nothing of food was offered, except a few cocoa-nuts; nor was any thing of the kind observed, but those and sour mahie. Some few hogs and fowls, indeed, were seen walking about. Provision was extremely scarce; this was signified when our adventurers first landed, by a fellow who ran to one of the brethren, and stuffed a piece of mahie into his mouth, thinking, that, at this season of scarcity, he was doing him a great kindness.

On their return to the ship, the captain met the two brethren in the cabin, to know their sentiments respecting their settlement upon it. Mr. Crook said they had received encouragement, and the chief had behaved exceedingly well; that he never before nor since his engagement, had comforts in view, and, though there was then a kind of dearth in the island, plentiful seasons might perhaps follow. Mr. Harris's sentiments were entirely contrary to those of Mr. Crook, he disapproved of every thing that had been stated, and declared the scene before him was a very solemn one; his ardour and firmness seemed absolutely to have forsaken him. It was agreed, however, to go on shore the next day, take their beds with them, and make a trial; after which they might return, if events should not answer their expectations*.

In the evening Mr. Crook landed, with his bed and a few clothes; Mr. Harris declined going, having several small parcels to pack up, for the convenience of taking them up the valley. Tenae himself received on the beach, Mr. Crook, and another of the brethren, and treated them with respect and kindness. They proceeded up the valley, followed by a vast concourse of people, some of whom carried the baggage, and deposited it in the house intended for the brethren; and afterwards to another house of larger dimensions, about a hundred yards distant from the first. This house stood on a square platform, raised with stones, with a wall six-feet high, on the lowest side; (all of them being built upon a declivity;) a sort of escutcheon ap-

* It was remarked that honesty is not considered a virtue among the South Sea Islanders, exspecially if articles are exposed to tempt them. On the night of the 6th, they shifted the glass cover off one of the best compasses, stole the card and needle, and fitted the cover on as before.

pears in the inside in memory of Honoo, the chief's father. A drum, somewhat in the Otaheitean stile, but much longer, adorns each end*.

In the forenoon the captain received a letter from Crook, expressing his approbation of his new lodging. When night drew on, he was left to his repose, and, after recommending himself to the care of the Almighty, he went to rest, laying his clothes upon the ground near his hammock; but when he awoke in the morning, not an article of them was to be seen; he was therefore on the point of uttering very unjust surmises, when the chief entered with every thing that was missing, carefully wrapped up in a bundle.

Soon after the receipt of the letter, Tenae, Crook, and the chief's brother came on board, and were received very kindly in the cabin. The captain made Tenae a present of a decorated crown, which delighted him exceedingly: he also gave him a piece of cloth, a hammer, and some gimlets; a large conch-shell also gave him particular satisfaction; for which they barter eagerly, pigs, or any thing: one of them gave the cook a broad axe for a conch.

Tenae, who was now more familiar than at his first visit, surveyed the cabin with a considerable degree of attention. Happening accidentally to touch the wire of the cabin bell, he was struck with astonishment: he rang it again, and again, each time expressing his wonder whence the tinkling sound proceeded†.

In the afternoon Mr. Godsall landed a chest, and several parcels for the Missionaries, which were safely taken to the house. Tom and Harraway remained on shore this night, their service being required by Crook.

On the 9th the pinnace was sent on shore again, with more necessaries: Crook, resolving to stay, attached himself to the place, began to eat sour mahie, and contented himself with the food the island afforded, though not of a very delicate kind: but he consoled himself with thinking that, he should be able to procure pork once or twice a week, with fresh fish as often as he pleased, and regreted not the absence of Otaheitean delicacies. Tenae had adopted him as his son, an act which is ever after held sacred.

On the 10th, at two in the morning, the moon was totally eclipsed, but the roughness of the weather prevented an accurate observation of it. On the 12th the chief and his brothers came on board with Otaheitean Tom, who informed them that the boy, Harraway, had left them, and gone to the other side of the island; and as he had mentioned nothing of his having such an intention, they supposed he meant to remain there, for which Tom censured him severely: but the captain, in order to prove the reality of Tom's pretended great regard for his country, ordered him to put his things into the canoe, and go on shore also, at the same time intimating that he was privy to Harraway's elopement. The poor fellow, with tears in his eyes, declared his innocence, collected his trifles, and put them into the canoe, then sorrowfully shook hands with the crew. He put off, full of the most poignant distress, and having gone a little way, the captain called him back again, but it was

* At a little distance, on the same platform, another house presents itself, built on a small eminence, leaving a space in front, where two rude wooden figures of men are placed, nearly as large as life. Against the side of the house, three other escutcheons are placed, The house had no door, or opening of any kind; but excited by curiosity, one of the brethren opened a hole on the side of it, and beheld a coffin fixed upon two stakes, about a yard from the ground. At this moment Tenae came up, and seeing he was not angry, he again opened the hole, and pointed to the coffin. He instantly cried Honoo! and repeated it several times, plainly signifying that it was his father, pleased at seeing him notice the honours he had paid to his memory. This sepulchre, Crook's house, the trees, and every thing within the platform, was taboo, and must not be approached by women.

On the 8th, the natives crowded on board; the females were as numerous, and at the same time as naked, as before, which induced the brethren to bestow upon each a piece of Otaheitean cloth. Let it, however, be observed, that these women dress decently on shore; but when it is necessary for them to swim, their cloth will not stand the water; it is therefore the general practice to leave it behind, and supply its place with a proper quantity of leaves.

† It was interesting to see the seamen, while they were repairing the rigging, attended by a group of the most favourite females, who were employed to pass the ball, carry the tar-bucket, &c. This they performed with the greatest assiduity, often besmearing themselves with the tar in their novel occupation. No ship's company without a wonderful portion of chastity, could ever have resisted such temptations. Some of them would probably have offended, had they not been over-awed by the jealousy of the officers, and the prudent conduct of their messmates.

some

some time before he resumed his usual cheerfulness*.

Nothing of importance occurred till the 20th, when Messrs. Harris and Crook came on board, and held a meeting with the captain respecting their stay. Mr. Harris complained of the poverty of the place, declared he could not eat the mahie, &c. Crook expressed a determination to stay, even though Mr. Harris should desert him. The result of this conference was, that both went on shore to make further trial before their departure.

On the 22d a native stole the cook's axe; after the fact he saw the pinnace chasing him, but he paddled to the rocks, ran into the bushes, and got clear off. On the 24th, a fisherman swam off at break of day, and informed them that Mr. Harris had been on the beach all the night with his chest, and had been robbed of several things. This affair was little credited at first; supposing Mr. Harris could not have been so imprudent as to bring his property down without sending notice, that a boat might be ready to receive them. But, on enquiry, the truth was what had been related. He had come down in the evening; and as no person from the ship was on shore, the boats being employed at the anchor, and the ship too far off to hail, he spent the night sitting on his chest: at four in the morning, the natives drove him from the chest, as he supposed, that they might steal his property; and, imagining his life in danger, he fled to the adjacent hills. Mr. Falconer, who went to bring him off, found him in a very pitiable plight, appearing like one almost deprived of his senses. The surf was so high that they could not land, and were therefore obliged to haul the chest and its owner off by means of a rope. The principal reasons he gave for leaving his partner so abruptly, besides those already mentioned, were such as he might naturally have expected. Tenae it seems, wished to treat them with an excursion to another valley, to which Crook agreed, but Mr. Harris would not consent. The chief seeing this, and not considering any favour too great, he left him his wife, to be treated as if she were his own, till the chief returned—" Mr. Harris told him, that he did not want the woman; however, she looked up to him as her husband, and finding herself treated with neglect, became doubtful of his sex, and acquainted some of the other females with her suspicion, who accordingly came in the night, when he slept, and satisfied themselves concerning that point, but not in such a peaceable way but that they awoke him. Discovering so many strangers he was greatly terrified; and perceiving what they had been doing, was determined to leave a place where the people were so abandoned and given up to wickedness: a cause which should have excited a contrary resolution."

It having been mentioned to Crook that the captain was preparing for his departure, he remained stedfast in his resolution of staying in the island, desiring only such implements of husbandry, and other things, as would contribute to render him useful among the people; observ- that his happiness would have been greater, had his situation been with a friendly and agreeable assistant, who might have comforted him in the time of trouble; but, as the Lord had ordered things otherwise, he would resign himself to his fatherly care, and rest in his promises, rather than quit a station where a door of usefulness was so evidently opened†.

* While the brethren were at dinner on the 13th, one of the natives stole a pump-bolt, but he was detected and secured by Mr. Godsall. The rest all jumped overboard and escaped. The thief was lashed up, and, being shewn a loaded musquet, fully expected to be shot. A man of some consequence, who had come in the same canoe, brought the chief's second brother, with two pigs and a plantain-leaf, to plead for the offender, who was his father, but his suit was rejected. It was affecting to observe the farewell scene between the father and son; but to put a period to their anguish, the musquet was discharged, and the culprit liberated. Dumb gratitude deprived the astonished pair of the power of utterance, they were so completely overwhelmed with joy. A solemn warning was, however, given them, to avoid such practices in future, and they were sent on shore with the pigs, which the brethren would not deign to accept; thus giving them the most convincing proofs that their motives were disinterested.

† Crook is a young man of twenty-two years of age, serious, steady, and ever employed in the improvement of his mind. He applied diligently to the attainment of the language. He is a youth of understanding, and will doubtless contrive many things that will be beneficial to the poor creatures among whom he lives. He has various kinds of garden-seeds, implements, medicines, books, &c. His manly behaviour, on taking an affectionate farewell, did him great credit: the tears glistened in his eyes, but did not fall, " nor did he betray the least sign of fear to enter upon his new work alone."

At

At four in the morning of the 27th, they weighed, and stood out of the bay, with a light air easterly. Respecting the customs and manners of the people about Resolution Bay, we know little; but Crook, from his knowledge of the language, collected the following few particulars.

Their religious ceremonies resemble those of the Society Islands. They have a morai in each district, where the dead are generally buried under large stones: they have a multitude of deities. They only offer hogs in sacrifice, and never men.

The chief Tenae presides over four districts, Ohitahoo, Taheway, and Innamei, all opening into Resolution Bay, and Onopoho, the adjoining valley to the southward.

There is no regular government, established law, or punishments; but custom is the general rule.

They have no regular meals, but eat when they are hungry, and not a great quantity at a time. The women are not allowed to eat hog, and are probably under other prohibitions as at Otaheite. They are employed in making cloth and matting; but not in cookery, except for themselves.

The chief is said to have three wives: the youngest is with him here, the others in different parts of the island. He has several children, some of which live with him here, the others with their mothers.

Their diseases are few, and they are at present happily free from that fatal malady which has made such ravages in the Society Islands.

The women are rather of low stature, though well proportioned, and their general colour inclining to brown. Some of them were almost as fair as Europeans, on the first arrival of our adventurers; but became afterwards quite dark-coloured, by exposing themselves to the sun in coming off to the ship.

SECTION V.

Return from the Marquesas to Otaheite, with the Transactions during their Absence—Transactions during their Continuance at Otaheite—Return to Tongataboo—Occurrences during their Absence.

ON the 29th of June, the brethren having bent their course for the Society Islands, they proceeded on their voyage with a favourable gale. On the 3d of July they fell in with Tiookea, a lagoon island, many of which are disseminated in this part of the ocean, and render the navigation dangerous in dark weather. Smoke was observed ascending in several parts, and two men were seen following us along shore: they appeared dark coloured, with a piece of cloth tied round their middle, and each had a spear in his hand. When a lieutenant and the two Mr. Forster's landed here, two islanders received them by touching noses; a common mode of salutation all over the South Sea *.

The following Journal will give an accurate statement of their proceedings while they were absent.

March 26, The ship quitted the bay of Matavia this day, and was soon out of sight. The brethren who last departed from the ship in a canoe, had an unpleasant return, and landed at a distance, but they got to their companions in the evening, and received their canoe and its contents the following day.

27th. Brother Puckey informed the brethren

* At seven in the morning, on the 6th of July, they saw the high land of Otaheite; and at noon, they ran between the Dolphin bank and Point Venus reef, and came to anchor in Matavai bay in thirteen fathoms water. The natives crowded off, all happy to see them; the brethren followed in a flat bottomed boat, which had been prepared for passing the shallow entrance of the river. A report was spread which afforded great satisfaction; they had, in general, enjoyed good health. The natives continued the same respectful behaviour they had hitherto shewn, and daily supplied them abundantly with provisions. Respecting the purposes of the mission, they could at present only say, that appearances were encouraging. Though rooted in the traditions and prejudices of their ancestors, they supposed them docible; and they had already restrained the natural levity of the natives, and so overawed them that they seldom attempted to perform a heeva within their hearing. When they came near on the Sabbath, they always behaved with decency. In their dress they exhibited much improvement on the side of modesty.

respecting

respecting Eimeo, and the vessel there which he had been to examine. As Manne Manne and his people had been extremely friendly, he recommended that they should launch the vessel, and bring her to Matavai Bay to be completed. Puckey and Cock were appointed to go to Eimeo for this purpose. A consultation was held on Micklewright's conduct: the majority were of opinion, that, if he professed repentance, he should be received. Others thought he ought to have been wholly separated from them as a hypocrite.

28th. A large present of provisions received from Pomarre, and Iddeah, with a promise of a constant supply.

29. Daily visited by the king, queen, Iddeah, and many of the natives. Some of the Otaheiteans speak many English words, and are eager to be taught more. Provisions pour in upon them; a gracious providence evidently favours their design.

31st. Complained to the king and queen of the devastation committed by rats: four cats were therefore instantly sent.

April 1. Visited by the king and queen, and Mawroa, the husband of Pomarre's sister: a man of good sense, and great authority.

2d. Multitudes attended our worship, but for want of an interpreter they could not address them: they silently attended our preaching and administration of the Lord's Supper.

3d. Engaged three Otaheiteans to assist in cooking, and in the management of the hogs. The king and queen brought a quantity of cocoanuts to brother Cover and his wife, desiring to become their adopted children. The quantity of provisions poured in upon us, is incredible. We have not less than a waggon-load of fruit, with multitudes of hogs and poultry. "Surely the Lord hath done this."

4th. At a quarter past eight, assembled for our monthly prayer meeting.

5th. The royal visitors have taken up their abode at Matavai, in order to be near them.

6th. Early this morning Otoo sent ten men to prepare wood for the blacksmith's shop. The brethren, returning from Eimeo, report that they have been kindly received by the natives, who avoided stealing, and readily assisted us. Brother J. Puckey, on the Lord's day, had addressed them. They heard attentively, and admitted that it was *very good*, but that it would be useless for them to change their religion, as the brethren and the *Book* would go away. We promised to return again to teach them very soon. They said, if any of the chiefs embraced our religion, they should follow.

Micklewright's conduct distressed us; regardless of remonstrances, he would not keep from the natives.

8th. One of the arreoies, the tayo of brother Henry, came to us with his pregnant wife: they were taking leave of us, to destroy the infant which should be born, according to the rules of that diabolical society. The wife, with true maternal tenderness, wished to spare the infant, but the brutal chief was resolute to the contrary, though he acknowledged it a bloody deed. They offered to erect them a house for their pregnant women, and to take such children under their immediate care. For such an unnatural act, they threatened to exclude them for ever from their friendship, and assured him that the Eatoo, their God, would also punish him. The brethren failed not to open to him the wrath of God against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men. On this he walked off dejected. A few days afterwards he promised, if the child was born alive, that he would bring it to them, and, on another visit, renewed his promise.

9th. Brother Lewis preached from *Thou shalt not kill*, to the king, and a great number of the natives, who heard him attentively, and said, "Good is the word of Britain, not to kill children, not to sacrifice men*."

They renewed their attempts with Iddeah, desired her to suffer their women to take care of her child, and that her example would have the happiest

* Pomarre and Iddeah came at noon, went into the married brethren's apartment, and found them conversing with the arreoies on the crime of murdering infants. Iddeah was addressed upon the subject, who was then pregnant by a *toutou* who cohabited with her: they endeavoured to convince her of the horrid guilt of murder, especially in a mother, and promised to receive the child immediately. She was sullen, and made no reply. They then requested Pomarre to suppress such acts of inhumanity, and the offerings of human sacrifices. He said Captain Cook had declared, that such things ought not to be done, but did not stay long enough to instruct them. One of the brethren then informed them, that they were come for that express purpose. He warned them that if they despised their

happiest effects upon the nation. Knowing her eagerness for European cloth, they promised her three shirts, and many other articles, when the ship arrived, and that they would report her conduct to Queen Charlotte and the British earee ladies. She said, "the child was base born; had it been Pomarre's, it should have lived;—and marched off with her paramour, who heard the conversation with indifference.

In the afternoon they addressed the natives through the interpreter. Among their auditors was Mawroa, the husband of Pomarre's sister. In conversation he declared, he was resolved to throw away the gods that could neither hear, nor see, nor speak, and worship the English God.

12th. Iddeah appeared again in public, and intelligence was received that she had murdered her new-born babe. The brethren therefore resolved, to shew their detestation of her conduct, that no more presents should be received from her. Commenced a weekly lecture.

13th. Pomarre and Iddeah came with a present of hogs and vegetables. The articles from Pomarre were thankfully accepted; those from Iddeah were rejected, and the reasons assigned. She was much offended, said she had a right to do with her own children as she pleased; and walked off with her *toutou*. Her unnatural crime did not pass wholly unpunished; a dreadful milk abscess brought her under the surgeon's knife. As we refused Iddeah's present, we desired Manne Manne to distribute it to the natives; instead of which he conveyed it to his own house.

This, however, is but one among the many *unnatural crimes* which we dare not name, committed daily without the idea of shame or guilt.

It is remarkable, that Iddeah had not been more than two days absent from our residence, when she appeared as if nothing had ailed her; so little inconvenience arises from the most painful operations of nature in this benign climate.

16th. This day they thrice addressed the natives by their interpreter: they were attentive, but as soon as they retired, they fell, like children, to their own light amusements. The Lord grant the seed sown may take firmer root in their hearts!

18. The shop being finished, and brother Hodges and Hassel at work, the natives crowded round them, though much frightened with the sparks, and the hissing of the iron in water. Pomarre was highly delighted with the bellows and forge; and, catching the dirty blacksmith in his arms, heartily joined noses with him.

20. A native stole a box containing nails, for which he was confined three hours, and afterwards liberated; but severe vengeance was threatened against future thefts.

21st. Two of the brethren went with three natives to procure wood: they went up the valley, which is about seven miles long, and a quarter of a mile broad, through which a river on a little descent meanders slowly. High perpendicular mountains appear on each side, covered with shrubs and trees, where parrots, parroquets, and a grey thrush which warbles delightfully, build their nests. The natives are numerous and flourishing, and have provisions in profusion. Several of them, however, are infected with that horrible disease which Europeans have probably left them*.

At their return, brother Henry preached to the natives; and when he had finished his discourse, Manne Manne satirically observed, that "they gave them plenty of the word of God, but not of many other things."

24th. Drew up rules for every day's work; the bell to ring at six; to be assembled for prayer in half an hour; to employ themselves till ten in various occupations; from ten to three to be devoted to mental improvement; from three till night at their usual employment; bell to ring at seven for prayer.

27th. Five of them went to Eimeo with Manne Manne to finish the vessel. The brethren at Eimeo were most hospitably entertained. Having an address translated, brother Cover read it to them;

instructions, and continued in their wicked practices, they should leave them and repair to another island, where they could hope for more attention. Pomarre seemed evidently affected with what had been said, and promised to exert his authority to put an end to these practices. Manne Manne came in during this conversation, when he was frankly informed, that if he offered any more human sacrifices, he would forfeit their friendship. He replied, that he certainly would not. He was then informed, that the Lord knew his heart, whether he was sincere in his promises.

* Staying at a house till the rest returned, having been a little fatigued, the kind inhabitant presented his wife to one of the brethren. Begging to be excused from that favour, he instantly prepared a hog, which was ready when his companions came from the mountains.

them; after which they sung, "Salvation, O the joyful Sound, &c." Set off for Otaheite; slept uncomfortably at Popo bay in the canoe*.

2d. Their monthly prayer meeting: On this occasion the following passage was inserted in one of their journals: "O Lord, how greatly hast thou honoured me, that thousands of thy dear children should be praying for *me*, a worm! Lord, thou hast set me in a heathen land, but a land, if I may so speak, flowing with milk and honey. O put more grace and gratitude into my poor cold heart, and grant that I may never with Jeshurun grow fat and kick."

3d. Visited, and their wants supplied, by the king and queen. Our stock of hogs now increased to seventy. One of the sheep produced a fine young ram lamb, which was much wanted.

5. Held a meeting preparatory to the communion. Brother Lewis examined every one with great fidelity and tenderness. A happy openness of mind, and melting of heart prevailed. This was a truly profitable meeting: we experienced something of the healing and refreshing presence of God with us.

7. Visited by Temarree, a chief priest from Papara: he is called an Eatooa, and sometimes the man of the Eatooa: he was dressed in a wrapper of Otaheitean cloth, with an officer's coat doubled round him. Being timid, at his approach, he was invited in, and at breakfast asked to partake of the repast; but he first solemnly held out his hand with a bit of plantain, as an offering to the Eatooa, which one of the natives said they must receive. When they had taken it from him, and laid it under the table, he sat down, and made a hearty meal.

Brother Cover read the translated address to the guests, the natives listening with attention, and particularly the priest; but he appeared displeased at the idea of turning away their false gods.

9th. Temarree accompanied the king and queen, and staid to dine. He is of the royal race, and son of Oberea. He is also high in esteem as a priest. His name of Eatooa engrossed much of their conversation. They told him the Eatooa could not die, as he must.

14th. The tayo of Puckey returned from Oparre, bringing with him a present; they declined accepting it till the next morning, this being the Lord's day.

15th. Our brethren returned, in consequence of their letters.

16th. The account they give is, that they made the circuit of the greater peninsula, and entered Tiaraboo; then they returned by the south, and were every where kindly received. Pomarre, and the king and queen, wished to have detained them, not meaning themselves to return to Matavai till the ship came. Morning and evening the king, or some of the people, reminded them of prayer, and joined with them attentively; but sometimes the natives were noisy, and irregular.

Every where they were treated sumptuously, sometimes on a table, in the English fashion. One of the brethren, however, exclaimed, "Yet all this kindness is not the gospel: were we as gods among them, we should be wretched, if they believed not our message."

Entering Tiaraboo, they visited Pomarre's youngest son at Matowee, his district, which is populous, and in high cultivation†.

In this excursion they visited a chief, whose house was stocked with wooden gods, of different denominations: the god of the Sun, Moon, Stars, Men, Women, Children, &c. Each had a sword, axe, or hammer in his hand, to slay those who should offend him, unless they offered a sacrifice or atonement for their crime.

Many succeeding days are only marked with common occurrences: to-day our sister Henry increased our number with a healthy female child, after a safe delivery‡.

29th.

* On the way they saw the tuppapow of Orapiah, in a sitting posture, clothed in red cloth; a native constantly attending to offer food to the mouth of the corpse, which not being received, he eats it himself. Reached home after twelve o'clock, very much fatigued.

29th, 30th. Going to the Blacksmith's shop, a chief was observed peeping in; being asked why he did not enter, he said he was terrified, and angry with the fire for spitting at him.

† On their return, brother Bromhall was affected with a cold, and a slight fever; which was said, by one of the priests, to have proceeded from the anger of the Otaheitean Eatooa, who certainly would kill him. Broomhall said, their pretended God was a bad God, that their Jehovah had sent it, and would remove it the next day. The declaration was instantly spread among the natives, and Broomhall began to fear he had spoken too hastily of his recovery, and that God might be dishonoured if his illness increased: he therefore looked up earnestly to God in prayer to heal him. Fortunately he had a refreshing night's sleep, and on the morrow found himself recovered.

‡ 28th. After divine service in the evening, W. Puckey says,

29th. Resolved to erect a building, for Mr. Lewis to print a Vocabulary and Grammar.

30th. Manne Manne sent his tayo, Mr. Cover, a double canoe, three goats, and twenty fowls.

Intimations were given that Micklewright and the Swede intend to seize Manne Manne's vessel, as soon as she is ready for sea, and make for Port Jackson.

June 4th. Enjoyed the ordinance of the Lord's Supper, a large body of natives assembling. Read an address translated by the Swede, which they understood, and expressed their approbation of it.

7th. Natives living with the brethren found to be pilferers: one of them acknowledged having taken a large axe and a checked shirt. Other thefts were committed. Slight punishments and reprimands ensued.

9th. Dr. Gilham had his clothes stole while he was bathing. The thief was pursued, taken, and chained to a pillar of the house, but he contrived to go off with the padlock. He was again recovered, but dismissed. Though these wretches will run any risk to steal, they hardly ever use what they get, but lay it up.

11th. Brother Cover baptized the infant daughter of brother Henry, and preached a judicious discourse on the subject. A white woman producing a child among them occasioned much joy; and the natives were very fond of it. A heeva commencing on the other side of the river, the performers were ordered to desist. They immediately left off dancing, declaring they would do so no more, as it was the God of Pretane's day.

They walked up the valley about a mile, and sat down under a tree; the natives also flocked round them and sat down. The brethren sung a hymn, and prayed for the salvation of the heathen, in which themselves joined in attitude*.

14th. Visited by Mawroa, with an abundant supply of vegetables, and accompanied by three arreoies, all extremely fat and tattowed all over. This society wander continually from island to island. They are the most personable men that we have seen, and each of them is said to have two or three wives, which they exchange frequently, and inhumanly murder every infant that is produced among them. When they demand any thing, they must not be denied. They never labour, but live by plunder, and are highly respected, as none but persons of rank are permitted among them.

On the 24th several natives came from other districts where bread-fruit was become scarce, to gather some from the trees in Matavai; when those of the district, considering the brethren as proprietors, complained to them, saying, if such things were permitted there would be no fruit left. Two of their body were dispatched to talk with them on this business, who claimed an exclusive right to all the produce of the trees. The strangers, however, were permitted to take what they had got, on their promise to come no more as invaders.

Visited the morai at Oparre, where the great God resides, represented by a clumsy piece of wood: here the brethren saw several altars, and skulls of men who had been sacrificed.

A native coming into their apartments, a brother entered into conversation with him about God. The Islander admitted that the Otaheitean Gods were bad enough, for they ate men, hogs, bread-fruit, &c. which the Pretane God never did, and was a "good fellow." He further observed, that when he spoke to the Pretane God the good rain comes.

26th. Plenty of bread-fruit was brought today. It is wonderful to see how Providence has furnished this place: when bread-fruit fails in this district, it is ripe in another, so that the na-

tives

says, he walked with a native, and, from the survey of the beautiful scene around them, he took occasion to discourse of him who made all these things. He admitted that the God of Pretane made all things there, but not at Otaheite; that one of their gods ascended, and stuck the stars in the sky; and that Mawwa, a powerful being, limits and regulates the sun with ropes that it may not go faster than he pleases. Puckey endeavoured to ridicule these adsurdities of their priests; and, pointing to the house of Oparre, assured him that the Gods there were only the work of men's hands; mere superstitious idols. Such are the pretended great Gods Ooroo, Tane, and Taroa, which are stationary there, to whom the deluded people sacrifice in great extremities, when the priests pronounce them angry.

* 12. This evening, when one of the brethren sat writing in his birth, a young girl came in, and expressed her astonishment that they should behave so different to them from what all their countrymen had done. He assured her that such practices as she *intimated* were wicked, and if they indulged in them their God would be angry. "Then," said she, "I'll come to you in the night, when no one can see us."—He instantly replied, "Nothing can be hid from our God"

tives never want. With cocoa-nuts and plantain they are constantly supplied: as the evee apples get ripe on one tree, young ones appear in another. Few trees lose their foliage, and are only destitute of fruit for about two months.

27th. A present came from Pomarre for the two brethren who were working at the forge; consisting of a pair of canoes, seven lobsters, two hogs, &c. with an invitation to send for more when wanted.

28th. A looking-glass was stolen by a female native.

29th. Had a breed of six young rabbits: should they prosper, the hills will probably teem with them.

July 1st. Otoo sent a message requiring the discharge of several persons, whom he described as great thieves; at the same time recommending others in the capacity of servants, who were known to be mischievous, and his abandoned creatures, that they might be enabled to steal with the greater facility. His motion was therefore rejected.

6th. This morning the natives brought the brethren out of their house, when to their very great joy the white sails shone before them. Many of them went on board, to congratulate the captain on the perfect health and safety of all the crew.

Great was the joy of meeting, but the stay of the ship being no longer necessary, a speedy departure was announced, and every preparation begun. On the 6th of July a meeting was held, when the public journal was read, and many matters discussed; among which was that of the division of the things in the ship, between them and the party at Tongataboo.

7th. Four missionaries being appointed to divide the goods, began their work this morning: the captain superintended, and Mr. Jefferson acted as secretary. As this business would unavoidably occupy much time, the captain consented to stay till the 1st of August. The wives of the missionaries were invited to dine on board, and passed the day happily there. The natives also crowded on board, and few of them came empty-handed: many of them appeared in English dresses, which had been given them by the brethren. Some English phrases also escaped their lips, such as, "Welcome again; glad to see you, Captain Wilson."

8th. Iddeah sent to know if she might be permitted to come to their house; when, after consulting on the propriety of such a measure, brother Cover was desired to speak to her, and if she expressed contrition for her pass offence, and promised she would no more be guilty of such conduct, they would be glad to receive her. Under such professions, she came and drank tea with Mrs. Cover, and appeared much pleased with her reception.

9th. (Sunday). Not a canoe was seen off in the bay, and the whole district was remarkably quiet. Mr. Cover and Mr. Lewis came on board to act as chaplains for the day. The former preached from the second Epistle of Peter, Chap. iii. v. 18; the latter from Philippians, Chap. i. v. 28.

10th. Andrew the Swede came from Eimeo, and presented the captain with a fine turtle. Mawroa, a kind friend to the Missionaries, brought a hog, and a great quantity of bread-fruit.

Some of the brethren had made a tour of the island, and supposed the number of inhabitants, on both peninsulas, to be about fifty thousand. This amount, though less than a fourth of what Captain Cook had calculated them at, was still thought far exceeding the population; Peter and two of the brethren therefore undertook to take a survey of the island, and to try some method of estimating the number of people in each district. On the 11th, they accordingly set off, having first engaged a man to conduct them across the numerous rivulets, and to carry their necessary baggage*.

July 13th.

* The result of their tour, and the calculations they had made, from the best oral testimony they could procure, it appeared that the number of men, women, and children in Otaheite, is 12,042. The number of those at Tiaraboo, 4,008. Total, on the whole island, 16050.

Though it would be departing from the plan of brevity, we have professed, to relate the numerous extraneous circumstances which occurred in the course of their survey, the following particulars may deserve attention. It appeared, in the course of this ramble, that, besides the members of the arreoy society, it is the practice among all ranks to strangle infants when they are born. A perpetrator of this horrid act, was among those whom curiosity drew to visit us. She was a good figure, and thought a perfect beauty by the natives, which were supposed to have been the inducements that tempted her to murder her child. It may be necessary to observe here, that the number of women bear no proportion to the men; in consequence of which,

July 13th. The captain and six of the missionaries endeavoured to make choice of an eligible spot in the district of Matavai, for the purpose of building a house; but several being thought equally eligible, no preference was given to any.

14th. The weather serene and pleasant. Information had been conveyed to the ship that the young king was arrived at Matavai; but a report having been propagated that he had sacrificed a man, the missionaries expressed their disapprobation of the horrid deed. This so alarmrd the sovereign that he was preparing to set off for Pappara, when the captain landed, and stopped him as he and his queen was running along the beach. Being asked his reason for going away, he said that as the missionaries were angry, he supposed the captain might be equally so. The latter intimated that he had sacrificed a man, and he denied the fact. The captain besought him to abandon such inhuman practices, and desired him to return, promising to send him a canoe, which he had brought purposely from Tongataboo. At this information he was both pleased and reconciled, and accordingly took up his residence at Matavai.

15th. The captain and four missionaries employed in dividing the goods. Otoo and his wife came alongside: the Friendly Island canoe was given to him, with which he appeared much pleased*.

19th. Otoo sent a present of two hogs and some cloth. Whilst at dinner, a native requested the use of the ship's harpoon, to strike a large cavally he had observed: this he performed with much dexterity; but the wounded fish having disengaged the harpoon, the man dived after the cavally, and brought it up in his arms; it weighed about forty-five pounds.

21st. Mawroa and his wife came early in the morning, and brought with them a pig, some bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, &c. They also brought with them three relations, who each produced a present: one of them was at least seventy years of age, and very infirm. Iddeah was among this day's visitors; they were so numerous that the cabin was crowded with them. They would often make us uncomfortable, did they not plentifully supply us with good things.

23d. Service on board by brothers Henry and Broomhall.

24th. Three of the company made an excursion for two days through Matavai, Oparre, Tettaha, and Attahooroo; they were received every where with profuse hospitality, and were entertained with nine roasted pigs at different places. The young king came off in his Tongatoboo canoe, and several times paddled round. The captain gave him a handsome uniform coat of scarlet, but he sullenly refused to wear it†.

28th. This morning Andrew the Swede came on board, and was put in confinement; it appearing that he had enticed Tucker from the ship, and was endeavouring to form a party against the missionaries. Peter came also on board, and turning king's evidence, informed them that Matemoo, a native, had concealed Tucker in a thicket of Matavai. In consequence of this information, Smith, Main, and Clode, set off in pursuit of him; the captain being anxious to have him, that mischief to the brethren might be prevented, and desertions strenuously discouraged.

29th. No further account of Tucker; at

which, those who are thought handsome are courted with great gifts, and are so accustomed to change their husbands, accompany them from place to place, and mingle in the diversions of the island, that, rather than be deprived of these pleasures, they stifle a parent's feelings, and murder their tender offspring. As no odium is attached to this abominable deed, many hundreds are never suffered to behold the light. When either of the parents are disposed to save the child, they may sometimes succeed. More of the males, however, are said to be preserved than the females, which partly accounts for the disproportion of the sexes, and is one of the causes of the thin population.

* 17. Iddeah came on board, bringing with her two hogs, and two bundles of cloth; one of each was her present, the other that of Pomarre. The murder of her infant was again mentioned and condemned: she apologized, as before, and almost attempted a justification.

† 27th, in the dusk of the evening, William Tucker, a seaman, made his escape from the ship. As soon as it was known, the boat was manned to search for him. The pursuers landed at Point Venus. The two Swedes, Peter and Andrew, having been absent all the evening, created a suspicion that they had been concerned in the affair. To crown the misfortunes of the day, just before they set off with the boat, the ram which they had brought from England, came into the house and died; supposed to have been injured by the natives, as he had been a little mischievous among them. Still, however, they have a prospect of a breed, as one of the ewes had a fine ram now in an advanced state.

noon

noon three missionaries returned from a fruitless pursuit, very much fatigued.

30th. About ten at night a native paddled off, calling out as he approached the ship, "all's well." His business was supposed to have been to have made some communication respecting Tucker; but he was so intoxicated with ava that he could not articulate a word. Another canoe brought an explanation of the matter: in this conveyance were three of the missionaries, Iddeah, two of Otoo's servants, and Tucker in custody; the latter throwing out bitter invectives against against Otoo for his treachery. It appeared that Otoo had been privy to the whole affair, and had also fed and protected Tucker. Having got him on board, he was put under confinement till they should quit the island.

August 1st. Purchased two he-goats to take to the Friendly Island. Manne Manne arrived at Matavai, in the vessel he had just built at Eimeo. The Captain, on seeing her, declared she was a wonderful performance, considering her as the first essay. Fired a gun, as a signal for sailing, and received Dr. Gilham, and all his baggage, on board.

2d. Iddeah presented the captain with a mourning dress. The division of the goods was this day finished.

3d. Sent on shore an addition of small arms, &c. which makes their stock amount to two swivels, eight musquets, nine pistols, one blunderbuss, and nine swords, besides those in use*.

Unmoored the ship, and got all things in readiness for sailing, on the following day. Several of the missionaries came off to take leave of the captain, officers, and crew. At eight in the afternoon they weighed anchor; and stood out of Matavai bay. Vast numbers of natives crowded on board, to take leave of their respective friends, to see what they had more to bestow; it being evident from their general conduct, that they possess an equal share of generosity and selfishness. On parting from their tayos, some of them wept bitterly at one end of the ship, but after walking the length of the deck they became as cheerful as ever. Indeed all their passions are transient and momentary, especially that of grief; their behaviour, on this occasion, was only consistent with their general character and disposition.

After hoisting the pinnace in, they stood off and on, waiting the packets of letters which were brought off at noon, by Cover and others who had not taken leave. After such conversation as the scene suggested, an affectionate farewell was taken, and they parted, perhaps for ever in this world.

It was the intention of the missionaries, as soon as the ship sailed, to change their abode to a more eligible spot, and to protect their premises with a substantial wall. When that is accomplished, they propose building a vessel of a hundred tons, capable of visiting all the islands around them; for which they have plenty of materials, and very able workmen. It is hoped they will have widely diffused the glad tidings of salvation, with which they are sent, by the time that they may visit them again.

They now shaped a direct course to the Society Isles, and by noon on the 5th of August they were not far from Huaheine. As they rounded the south end, a few canoes came off, in one of which was observed the usual peace-offering, a pig and a green branch. Without hesitation they came on board, and seemed as familiar in their conversation as the Otaheiteans. Some hatchets, knives, and looking-glasses were distributed among them, after which they returned to their canoe, and paddled away†.

From

* The natives now crowded the ship exceedingly, many of them being very importunate to be taken to Pretane. Some of them laid in a large sea-stock of hogs, fowls, and fruit, for which was returned what was supposed useful and gatifying. Manne Manne was very urgent for sails, rope, &c. for his vessel; but those were articles the captain could not spare. The captain gave him his own cocked hat, and many other presents, but he still seemed much dissatisfied, saying, "People tell me that you want Manne Manne, and when I come you give me nothing." An observation of the same import as he had once made to the missionaries: "You give me much talk, and much prayers to the Eatooa, but very few axes, knives, scissars, or cloth."

† When they were to leeward of the island, several canoes came alongside, in one of which was Connor, an Hibernian, one of the Matilda's crew. He had so far forgotten his native tongue, that he could only recollect a few words of it. Both he and the natives entreated them to enter Owharre harbour, but finding they were determined to make no stay, he asked the captain to take him home, which was readily agreed to; as they had reason to suppose, from the conduct of his shipmates at Otaheite, that such as him would prove a hindrance to the mission. He then

From Huaheine they steered to go to the northward of Otaha, but as it was nearly calm, they were no farther than between Otaha and Borabora the next day at noon. Some canoes came off from both islands, but as it was Sunday, they observed their invariable rule, and had no intercourse with them, except that of giving them a few knives and hatchets, for which nothing was taken in return. But as they lay becalmed, they hung about the ship the greater part of the day.

8th. At noon saw the land bearing north, and supposed it to be the Scilly Islands, discovered by Wallis. They now shaped a course for Palmerston's Islands, where they had some business, and in the morning of the 12th came in sight of them. Hoisting the pinnace out, they landed at the islet they had formerly visited, but by a different passage. On this day they got about six hundred cocoa-nuts, for the ship's use, and planted thirty-four bread-fruit trees; of which there were none before on this island: if they flourish, some benefit from them may hereafter be found by some poor cast-away islanders, or distressed navigators. The tropic birds were now sitting on their eggs, and were so remarkably tame, that hundreds of them might easily have been taken.

15th. Hazy weather obscured Savage Island. On the 17th they saw Eooa, and next day moored ship in the harbour of Tongataboo. Before they anchored, George Veeson, one of the missionaries, came off to inform them that the brethren were all well, Isaac Nobs excepted; and that from prudential motives, they had separated into small parties, and were now with different chiefs. Bowell and Harper were both with a chief named Vaarjee, who resides at Ardeo; Veeson with Mulicamar, a chief of the district of Ahoge; and Cooper with Mooree at Ahoge: the rest are still at Aheefo. But, before the proceedings of the ship are mentioned, a few extracts from the Journal of the Missionaries may with propriety be inserted, which have been written since their departure.

April 15th. Were visited by Toogahowe, who was informed of our want of timber and land, both of which he said we should be instantly supplied with.

Sunday the 16th. About seven o'clock they had a prayer meeting. A cuckoo clock had been fitted up, the striking of which greatly astonished the natives; who considered it as a spirit and refused to touch it, supposing, if they stole any thing, it would detect them. In the forenoon brother Buchanan preached from Jer. xxii. 27. The natives present behaved very quietly. In the afternoon brother Kelso preached, from 2 Thess. iii. 1.

Toogahowe, their patron, made them a present of three pieces of land; two uncultivated, of an acre each; and one about the same extent, well stocked with yams and banana trees. In the evening he sent a large quantity of yams, a bundle of cloth, and three baked hogs*.

18th. After family worship, they pursued their different employments; seeds of various sorts were sown, and more land prepared. A chief, named Cosawer, kindly brought a hog, &c. and generously invited the brethren, whenever they

then asked the captain's permission to take leave of his wife and child, which was also promised; for which purpose he was conveyed on shore in a canoe, and, with Dr. Gilham, walked to his house through a crowd of natives, which he cautioned them to beware of, lest, for the sake of their clothes, they should contrive mischievous projects: he also requested that they would not go far from him. When he declared his intention of returning to his native country, his wife wept, but he treated her with the utmost indifference, and even declared he did not care what became of her. But when he took his beautiful infant in his arms, about nine months old, his grief was inexpressible, and he seemed almost undetermined whether he should stay, where, on account of the wars, his life would be in continual jeopardy, or extricate himself, and leave his beloved daughter to the mercy of the savages. At length his affection preponderated, and he told the captain that he found it impossible for him to leave his child: a declaration which, for the infant's sake, gave pleasure to every one who heard it.

* 17th. Sent Toogahowe a present of earthen ware, two gimlets, and a parcel of nails. He soon after sent a messenger, requesting the brethern to come and sing to him, before he set off for Noogollifva; but as he was then surrounded by some hundreds, who were drinking their morning kava, they declined going; declaring that singing was a part of their worship, and they did not make a practice of it at other times. He made some enquiries respecting the performance of the clock, but disapproved of such a spirit in his house. In the afternoon, the mother-in-law of Ambler, and her two daughters, made them a visit: her husband is commander in chief of the fleet of Toogahowe, and a most accomplished sailor. She told the brethren that if they should ever be in want of provisions, she would readily supply them. "Glory to God, we are not likely to know any want, he gives us enough, and to spare."

came near his residence, to take whatever his plantation afforded.

19th. Ambler returned this morning, to inform the brethren that the old king Moomooe was surprised that none of them had visited him since their landing, nor sent him a present.

After due consultation among the brethren, it was resolved that brothers Kelso and Buchanan, accompanied with Ambler, should visit Moomooe and Futtafaihe, and carry a present to each.

20th. Mytyle came and requested one of the brethren to shave him; after which he set off for Eooa, of which island he is the supreme chief.

Their clock excites wonderful attention: every tool they have attracts the notice of the surrounding spectators; many of whom are constantly muttering reproaches against themselves for their ignorance of the ingenious arts. A poor ulcerated object applied to the brethren, and was fortunately cured in about two months.

21st. They were visited by several, with small presents of fruit, &c. Leboolo, a petty chief, came in the afternoon. He is considered as the first spearman in the country, and on that account has been appointed chief warrior to Toogahowe.

22d. This week was dug and planted about a fourth part of their home plantation. Every new employment they engage in so strongly excites the attention of the natives, that they become so troublesome as frequently to render it necessary to drive them away. The musquitoes are found very unpleasant visitors: some of the brethren are confined with sore feet, attended with violent itching.

Sunday 23d. In the morning had a prayer meeting, as usual. About eight John Connelly brought a hog and some yams from Futtafaihe, who had also empowered him to make an offer of any islet they should choose, among those scattered about Tongataboo. As fish are very plenty at these islets, they will be particularly useful during the hungry season. Brother Buchanan discoursed from John i; before the conclusion of which, an old chief, named Attar, brought some cava, and a bunch of bananas: he sat quietly till the service was ended; after which, being informed the day was sacred, he apologized for intruding, and took his leave.

The admiral of the fleet set sail for Feejee to fetch a spirit (an idol) to cure Moomooe, who was at the point of death. "Oh" said one of the brethren, "may the time be hastened when they shall turn from these vanities, to serve the living God!"

24th. Harper visited Moomoooei's Fiatooka, not far from the missionary house at Bunghya, a beautiful solitude surrounded by trees, on which are hung multitudes of large bats: here are two houses, in one of which are contained a quantity of spears and warlike instruments, sacred to the Odooa, or spirit; in the other, a figure of the goddess Fyega; to whom they petition for a favourable season for making cloth.

25th. In the afternoon the brethren were visited by a young chief from Leetooka, called by Captain Cook Leefooga. His name is Foonogge, and he is one of the finest men that has been seen: he speaks several English words very accurately, and seems to have a surprising facility to learn any thing which is pointed out to him. About ten o'clock, brothers Buchanan and Kelso returned from Noogollifva, bringing with them sugar-cane, pork, fish, and yams*.

27th. A present of a turtle and some yams came in Moomooe's name: this is esteemed a very valuable present. Several of the garden seeds have now appeared, and look extremely well; but the rats and mice have done inconceivable mischief: many crops of peas have fallen a prey to their ravages, and the same disaster is expected to happen to the beans†.

Dreadful

* In the course of their excursion, they visited poor Moomooe, who was dangerously ill, and surrounded by several of his wives, the eldest of whom was devoted to be strangled at his death. They made him a present, with which he seemed well pleased; especially as a piece of soap was a part of it; and when he beheld it, he expressed a wish to be shaved, which was instantly complied with.

After the two brethren Buchanan and Kelso had been taken to the beach by Futtafaihe, he shewed them several islands, any of which, he said, were at their service. In consequence of this general and generous proposal, several among the cluster were examined, and the preference given to Makkahah; and the few natives, about thirty in number, now became their tenants; from whom they could afterwards draw whatever they wanted of the produce, or demand their fish, if they thought proper: or improve the island, by making what alterations in it they pleased.

† 28th. Great numbers of people arrive daily in the neighbourhood, bringing with them cloth, hogs, yams, &c. to be disposed of at the funeral of Moomooe, whose death is hourly expected. Temporary huts are erecting near Bunghya, and the Fiatooka. One of Moomooe's sons, resident

Dreadful, indeed, is the darkness that envelopes the minds of these poor heathens. Well might one of the brethren exclaim, "Oh, when shall the happy period come when they shall say, What have we to do any more with idols!"

29th. Foonogge and Mytyle paid them a visit this morning, the latter bringing intelligence that Moomooe had departed this life at four o'clock in the morning. The people passing from Noogollifva, with their faces bruised, and blood streaming down their cheeks, were numerous: instead of cloth they had matting round them, and a twig of the chesnut-tree encircled their necks. This was said to be their mourning dress. About one o'clock Toogahowe arrived; soon after which Ambler, accompanied by brother Bothwell, went to see him. He sat in a small neat house, giving orders to several chiefs around him, respecting the vast supplies of hogs, &c. that would be consumed at the funeral.

About three o'clock the body of the deceased king was carried near their premises, at a small distance from the beach: it was laid on a bier composed of the boughs of trees, and supported by about twenty men; several of the relatives of the deceased preceded the corpse in their mourning habits, as above described; some of whom had cut their heads with sharks' teeth, till the blood was streaming down their faces: a multitude of persons, of both sexes, followed in procession. A female chief, named Fefene Duatonga, who was remarkably corpulent, was carried on a frame made of two long bamboos, between which she sat on a piece of matting, being borne by four men. Futtafaihe walked next, with two women who were devoted to be strangled at the funeral; one of them was weeping, but the other did not appear to be much concerned; they had been wives of the deceased. Some of the brethren followed them to the Fiatooka, near which the body was deposited for the present, in a house which had been carried thither for that express purpose, and which was hung round with black cloth. This Fiatooka is situated on a spot of ground of about four acres; a mount rises with a gentle slope about seven feet, on the top of which a handsome house presents itself, of about thirty feet long, and fifteen broad; the roof of which is thatched, and the sides and ends left open. In the centre of this house is the grave; the sides, ends, and bottom of which are of coral stone, with a cover of the same. The etoa, and other trees, grow round the Fiatooka*.

20th. Preaching by brothers Buchanan and Kelso. Many of the natives crowded about the gate, but only a few of them were admitted†.

2d. As this was the day appointed for the funeral, brother Bowell accompanied Ambler to Bunghya, to see the ceremony, where they saw about four thousand people sitting round the area of the fiatooka. Soon after their arrival, they heard a great shouting, and a blowing of conch shells at a distance. About a hundred men then rushed into the area, armed with clubs and spears, and began to cut themselves most dreadfully. Others who had spears, thrust them through their thighs, arms, and cheeks; at the same time calling on the deceased in a most affecting manner. A native of Feejee, who had been a servant of the deceased, entered the area with fire in his hand, and having previously

sident in the neighbourhood of his father, was sent for, under pretence of having his little fingers cut off, a custom not uncommon here, with a view of appeasing the anger of the Odooa, that the sick person might recover; or, in fact, that he might be strangled. "On the arrival of Colelallo, he was saluted in a cordial manner by his elder brother Toogahowe, and soon after went to see his father, whose attendants seized upon him with a view to strangle him instantly, when he, guessing their intention, said, if they would use gentle means, he would submit to his father's will; but they continuing their violence, he by great exertion beat them off. Three feejee men were then called, and these being joined by a sister of the unfortunate Colelallo, they accomplished his death.

* To the left of the tomb, and without the enclosure, sat about four hundred persons, principally men, for whom yava was brewing. Opposite to these were placed five roasted hogs, twenty baskets of roasted yams, and about one hundred pieces of mahie. Not far from the provisions sat about seven men, who were tabooed, and prohibited from cutting themselves. One of these issued orders for the distribution of the hogs, yams, and yava; all that drank of the latter were mentioned by name by a person appointed to that office by Fefene Duatonga, who seemed to be the manager of the funeral. Persons of both sexes seated themselves in different parts of the ground, beating and lacerating their faces immoderately; and, after having drank the contents of two bowls of yava, they dispersed.

† May 1st. Three roasted hogs were sent to the brethren this morning. Futtafaihe paid them a visit, and was shaved by one of the brethren. Great care was taken, during this operation, lest any of the hair should fall to the ground; in which case not one of them would dare to eat under the roof again: fortunately, however, no accident of that kind happened.

oiled his hair, set it in a flame, and then ran about while it continued burning. When they had tormented themselves to their satisfaction, they sat down, beat their faces with their fists, and then retired. A second party performed the same cruelties, and a third entered: four of the latter held stones, which they employed in knocking out their teeth. One man run a spear through his arm, just above the elbow; another beat his head with a club, till the blood flowed down his shoulders. After this brother Bowell, unable to bear the scene any longer, returned home. Futtafaihe also came to their residence, where he continued about two hours.

At two in the afternoon, four of the brethren went to the fiatooka, when the natives were still employed at the dreadful work of cutting and mangling themselves. They had not been long there, when they heard at a distance the most expressive sounds of sorrow and lamentation. This proceeded from a party of about one hundred and forty women, marching in single file, with each a basket of sand: eighty men followed in the same manner, each having two baskets of coral sand, singing, at the same time, words importing, "This is a blessing to the dead;" and were answered in responses by the women. Another party of women, with a quantity of cloth, replied to the above responses. These three bands walked thus towards the tomb, covering the place where the corpse lay, and the grave, with mats and cloth. After some further ceremony, the body was conveyed to the grave on a bale of black cloth. Whilst these services were performing, more men and women came into the area, and cut themselves dreadfully. Nineteen females then brought each a bag of their most valuable articles, and twenty-one others had each a fine mat in their hands, all of which were deposited in the tomb, being denominated a present for the dead. Immediately after came a present from Toogahowe, consisting of thirty-five bales of cloth, each bale carried by four men. Then came another party of mourners, sixteen of which had recently cut their little fingers off. Those who held offices, or were related to the deceased, inflicted on themselves the greatest tortures. The grave was covered with a hewn stone. After this stone had been suspended with two large ropes, in which two hundred men assisted, they lowered it slowly; during which time women and children wept aloud, or sung to the following purport: "My Father; My Father, the best of chiefs, &c." More cloth was then brought to the tomb; and another party abused themselves as before. These paroxysms of grief being ended, they sat awhile in silence. A great shout ensued, which was answered by a general tearing of the leaves from the necks of all present; after which they dispersed.

4th. Ambler, who had received from us several articles of wearing apparel, and a box to preserve them in, pretended to have been robbed by the natives, and the empty box was brought back: but he was suspected to have robbed himself. One of the women he cohabited with, he had beat so inhumanly, that she ran away. But, though this fellow was atrociously wicked, he rendered the brethren great service, by instructing them in the language.

6th. Took a walk to Mooco, a fine elevated spot belonging to Feeou Towago. He made the brethren a present of a fine American dog*.

7th. About ten in the morning brother Buchanan preached from *Heb.* xii. 1. In the afternoon brother Kelso from *Cant.* 1. and afterwards administered the Lord's Supper. Several of the natives were within the enclosure.

8th. More than twenty double canoes arrived from the Harby islands, containing about fifty persons each: in one of them was Morgan Bryan, an Irishman, the former shipmate of Ambler and Connelly. As soon as he landed he came and staid some time, but gave such specimens of depravity as to excite a wish for him never more to come under their roof †.

10th. At five in the morning, brother Kelso being

* In the evening Ambler made use of very improper language to the brethren, desiring them to quit the abbey, and to sow no more seeds. On this they applied to their patron Toogahowe, who received them very cordially, and made them a present of a pig and some yams. When he had heard their complaint, he was very angry, and sent for Ambler, who came and attempted to palliate what he had said; but he received a very severe rebuke from the chief, who told him he had no right to their house, nor any thing about it. He desired him to let them alone in future.

† 9th. Morgan came again to see the brethren, who were afraid of having much of his company. After requesting iron tools of them, which they did not think proper to give, he joined with Ambler in taking the liberty to upbraid them. Though Ambler knew that their stock of tools was very much reduced, he did not scruple to say, that unless his request

being on watch, saw a man creeping through the fence: he struck the thief repeatedly till he ran off. Mytyle being informed of it, expressed his sorrow that the fellow was not killed. A sister of Toogahowe's, sent them a fine hog, and some yams.

11th. John Connelly informed them, that while the chiefs sat over the yava bowl in the morning, he overheard them laying plans for depriving the brethren of their possessions; but they were for deferring it till the return of the ship, when they would have a greater abundance of articles. This information gave them considerable uneasiness, and led them to consider what steps were the most prudent to be taken. After some debate, it was concluded, that the safest plan would be to separate, and, going two together, put themselves under the protection of the greatest chiefs, and place their property under their care; by which means they might secure their persons, and preserve their books; but that they might have one general place to resort to occasionally, to commune together; yet, in this distribution of themselves, it was thought proper that four of their number should remain with Toogahowe.

In the afternoon brothers Bowell and Veeson, accompanied by Connelly, visited Toogahowe, who seemed to discover little concern when this intelligence was communicated to him; but, if they did separate, he wished to have his share of the property. He was therefore invited to their house, and every box was opened in his presence; from each of which he took something by way of tythe, and departed satisfied.

12th. Toogahowe wished for them all to remain with him, but the more the brethren deliberated on the subject, the more they were convinced of the impropriety of remaining together; it being much easier for a chief to provide for two or four than for ten; they also supposed that they should acquire the language with greater facility. They consequently waited again upon Toogahowe, and acquainted him with their resolution: he said they might do as they pleased; but appeared somewhat dissatisfied. Mulcifer, a chief, was spoken to on this business, who agreed to take any two of the number. Feenou Allawallo, who is said to be the greatest chief of her family, said she would gladly take two of them, but that her brother Toogahowe was averse to their leaving him; that, as they had landed under his protection, he wished them to remain so; and that he should be offended with any chief who attempted to entice them from him. On this account she advised them only to visit the chiefs at their houses, where their stay might be either short or long; and that, at her house, they should be always welcome. This advice was approved, and they resolved to wait as they were*.

14th. Toogahowe was this day vested with the name and authority of Dugonagaboola, in the room of his father Moomooe. His name was also altered from Feenou Toogahowe to that of Talliataboo, the god of their family. None of his subjects dare address him by his former name in future, on pain of death.

22d. Prepared a piece of ground for turnips, which seem to thrive better than any other seeds.

The men began their diversions at Moomooe's fiatooka, and practice morning and evening. Next Sunday is fixed for the cartonga lahia, or great toomai; after which it is supposed many of the people will disperse.

28th. The great toomai was performed, by men in their finest robes and ornaments, the drums at the same time beating; those around them joining in a chorus. Some of the brethren make a practice of visiting one or other of the great chiefs every day, by whom they are very affectionately treated. Through the week they had a very liberal supply of provisions sent them.

29th. 30th. Two of the brethren were invited by Futtafaihe to Mooa; they reached that residence on the 30th: they found the abbeys and ladores of this village in a very ruinous state,

quest was complied with, means would speedily be adopted to enable him to satisfy himself. Having delivered this menace, he pompously took his leave. May he who said, "Be not dismayed, I am thy God," protect them with his almighty power from the machinations of these wicked men!

* A great heiva, or mai, was performed at the fiatooka of Moomooe, by women in their best garments; pieces of cloth and silk were added to their other ornaments, and perfumed cocoa-nut oil dropped plentifully from their hair. Two drums were accompanied by a vocal concert of men and women; the latter also danced, performing different evolutions in a very graceful manner. An old chief frequently applauded their performances.

A thief, delighting in iron, stole the wash-tub, took off the hoops, and concealed the staves in the grass; thus depriving the brethren of the only utensil of the kind that they had in their possession.

and

and the fences much out of repair. In several of the houses, which Connelly said were *spirits'* houses, they saw logs of wood, stones, and bundles of rags, which were considered as spirits, being brought from the Feejee islands. Though these places are falling down, they are so sacred that they must not be touched to repair them. Futtafaihe himself is very superstitious, and is esteemed an odooa, or god: he is also much devoted to pleasure, singing, and dancing; he has several wives, who are the first women of the country; one, the daughter of Moomooe, has features and a complexion like an European, as she seldom ventures out of the house, or exposes her person to the sun or air.

June 1st. The brethren returned to Aheefo. Futtafaihe made them a present of a hog and twenty yams, and accompanied them to the small island of Makkaha, which he had given them*.

5th. Informed by Vaarjee, a great chief, of some of the villanies of Morgan and Ambler, respecting articles which they had stolen: met some women dressed in the things that had been pilfered.

10th. Mytyle had given pleasure to many of the brethren, by his readiness and ingenuity in teaching them the language; they were therefore seriously concerned at detecting him in several petty thefts.

11th. Spent the Lord's day in their usual manner. Futtafaihe paid the brethren a visit, and requested to be shaved, They excused themselves by saying they never performed manual labour on the odooa day.

12th. Foonogge, a young chief, informed them that Morgan and Ambler had endeavoured to irritate the minds of the natives against them, by representing them as some of the meanest of the people. They even encouraged them to attack and plunder them. This being the case, they thought it would have been unsafe to have continued in the same house, and therefore removed to one more spacious, which stood in the enclosure next to Dugonagaboola; that chief having readily consented to such a procedure. Every thing, except the hogs, were taken to that residence the same evening; but, in the morning, when the brethren went for them, they found the sty had been broken, and only one of the animals remaining; two more were afterwards found near the spot, and afterwards a single one: their stock was therefore now reduced from nine to four.

14th. Ambler and Morgan having heard that they were suspected of having driven off the hogs, came to the house of the brethren, and uttered the most abusive language, and even proceeded to such unwarrantable lengths as to kick one of the fraternity. Observing their resolution to proceed further, a scuffle ensued; Morgan again struck with his club the person he had before kicked. Finding themselves overpowered, however, they thought proper to desist; but did not fail to utter the most horrid execrations on the brethren and themselves, if they did not prove inveterate enemies, and murder them before morning.

In the evening the brethren met again, to consider further the propriety of remaining together; and, after much conversation, there appeared, on a division, eight for parting, against two. It was then agreed, that a division of the public property should also take place. Dugonagaboola having been informed of this transaction, readily consented, and promised to repair to their house on the 17th, to receive a present which they had provided for him.

15th. A division of the public property now took place. Morgan and Ambler paid another visit, but seemed more peaceably disposed.

16. Connelly demanded a clock for Futtafaihe, saying it had been promised before. The brethren refused to comply with the presumptuous demand, no such promise having ever been made: he therefore went away exceedingly displeased. On the following day, he again preferred his petition, and received a similar answer. He swore he would injure them to the utmost of his power, and threatened to murder the first of them that came within his clutches. Thus they experienced perils among the heathen, but more from their own countrymen†.

* Pressing invitations were sent them by several of the chiefs to reside with them; offering them houses, and whatever they can desire; consequently, when they separate, there can be no fear of wanting an asylum.

† 20th. This morning Mytyle sent his servants with one of the lost hogs. In the evening two chiefs brought a fine lad, with his hands tied together: they wanted to barter him for an axe. On enquiring what he had been guilty of, or whether he was a bad boy, they said no; but he was good for roasting of yams, and running of errands. They told them they did not approve of such iniquitous practices as selling their fellow creatures, on which they took him away.

24th. Went to visit the Fiatooka of Feenou Lukolallo at Valoo. Several persons sat round the grave, which was covered with black cloth, and remarkably clean. They sat down to converse with them, for their instruction. They pointed to two logs of wood, wretchedly carved to imitate human figures, which they said were odoos brought from Feejee. The brethren assured them they were not spiritual beings, but mere rude pieces of wood, fit only for the fire: nor did it appear that they had themselves any idea of their great sanctity, by their tossing them about with the greatest irreverence and unconcern. It did not appear that these people have any regular priests, or any stated ceremonial worship; but they entertain many superstitious notions about spirits: and are of opinion that by strangling some relations of the chief when he is indisposed, the deity will be appeased, and the afflicted person recover*.

July 3d. Brother Veesonwent to reside with Mulicemar, in the district of Ahoge. The brethren have received pressing invitations to several of the neighbouring islands, which, nothing but their wanting a competent knowledge of the language has prevented them from accepting; but they hope speedily to remove that obstacle, and look for opportunities of promoting the glorious design in which they are engaged, which at first they little expected. "The Lord's way is in the sea, and his path in the great waters, and his foot-steps are not known."

7th. They were visited by the wife and daughter of Moore, a chief residing at Ahoge, who had been visited by brothers Gaulton and Cooper some time ago; when he gave them a large house and plantation to induce them to reside with him, and to which they had consented: but being since prevented, his impatience urged him to send this message for them.

This evening felt another, but a slighter shock of an earthquake.

8th. Brother Harper called to inform them that they are comfortable at Ardeo, with Vaarjee, who indulges them to the utmost of his power; that he has assigned them apartments wholly to themselves, and is equally capable and assiduous in teaching them the language.

12th. (At Ardeo.) Laid out the grass-plot before the house, in the European style, with the garden. Taught Vaarjee's men the method of digging with spades, and planted some pine-apples. Visited Tooboocovaloo, a chief, and a relation of their friend. Were entertained with great hospitality, and received of him a pregnant sow, in return for which was given a few tools and some earthen plates. Having told him that on the Lord's day they did not work, but devoted it entirely to the service of God, he jojularly asked whether it was proper to eat on that day? Being answered in the affirmative, he sent them a baked hog.

17th. They were visited by brother Veeson, and the son of Mulicemar, who brought a hog and some yams from that chief. Intelligence was received from them of the death of Tamaifuma on the 13th instant. This being the fourth chief who has departed this life since the arrival of the missionaries, the natives believe that our God, in answer to their prayers, kills them; and do not hesitate to say, that if they continue praying and singing, there will not be a chief left alive. This idea, originating from the father of lies, seems calculated to create some trouble; but it can prevail no farther than is consistent with the gracious design of our heavenly father, who will make his strength perfect in our weakness, so that we may boldly say, "The Lord is our helper, we will not fear what man can do unto us."

18th. The same idea gains ground, and is industriously propagated. On the 22d brother Bowell paid them a visit, and informed them that he had been at Mooa, where the minds of the people had received the same dangerous impression, and that their countrymen were the principal authors of it. Ambler had also endeavoured

* In the morning, a little after three o'clock, the people were alarmed by the shock of an earthquake, which lasted about a minute. It was sensibly felt by the brethren, and the consternation was much increased, by the dreadful shrieks of the natives around them: the surf on the beach produced a greater noise than they had ever heard from it before. Early in the morning, they were visited by many of the natives, to whom they mentioned the earthquake; but the impression it made on them was momentary; they imputed it to the odooa, or spirit, ascribing every thing to that which exceeds their comprehension. Ambler says it is the fourth shock they have had within about eighteen months. This day brothers Bowell and Harper left the brethren, to go and reside with Vaarjee, a principal chief at Ardeo.

deavoured to poison the mind of Dugonagaboola, who heard him with great indignation, and ordered him from his presence. Since that, he is said to be gone to Futtafaihe; so that Morgan, Connelly, and he are all together, and will doubtless be very active in plotting farther mischief. Their machinations were thus far destroyed without the interference of the brethren.

24th. The principal wife of Futtafaihe was delivered of a son, the heir of his dominions; on which occasion many presents were made.

25th. The great enude, or natche, described by Captain Cook, was held at Mooa. Men in procession carried a yam, suspended on a pole, &c. Ambler said this was a thanksgiving to the odooa for the late ripe yams. The brethren were invited to join the procession; but they did not choose to qualify themselves by making their shoulders bare, as the ceremony required. Particular honour is paid to Futtafaihe on this occasion. The ceremonial closes with a kind of cudgel-playing.

27th. This afternoon a sensible shock of an earthquake was felt at Ardea, and, as usual, the natives screamed loudly. These shocks, which are said to be very common, are sometimes so violent as to shake down their trees and houses.

August 1st. This morning Cooper and Mooree took their departure. What end the Lord may have in view in thus dispersing us we know not, but hope that it will tend to the advancement of his glory, by a more general diffusion of the gospel over this benighted island. Another shock of an earthquake was felt about sun-set. Ambler is again in the neighbourhood.

On the 3d. brothers Gaulton and Shelly returned from Mooa, where they had met with brother Veeson, who was in health, and high favour with his friends; having lodged one night with him, they received a remonstrance for it next day from Dugonagaboola, who assured them of a hearty welcome at his house, and expected they would make use of no other. Among other conversation, he informed them of what their villainous countrymen had said of them in their absence, and expressed his abhorrence of them on that account.

5th. Brother Bowell arrived in the evening, and on Sabbath day brother Buchanan and brother Kelso preached.

7th. Brother Bowell intending to remain with them till their monthly prayer-meeting was over, they held a assembly of their little society the next morning, when a general assembly was agreed to be held the first Monday of every month, in the morning, for prayer and religious conferences; and in the afternoon for reporting progress in the language, consulting on their proceedings, &c. A weekly prayer-meeting, in their respective parties, was also resolved on; and that the anniversary of their embarkation should be observed as a day of public thanksgiving.

9th. In the evening they began their weekly meeting, which brother Kelso opened with praise and prayer. He then read the second chapter of the First of Peter, and spoke from a part of it; after which the other brothers spoke in rotation.

10th. The anniversary of their embarkation completes the first year of their mission, and the most remarkable of their lives; wherein the Lord has, for the accomplishment of his gracious purposes, given them inumerable manifestations of his almighty power, and infinite wisdom. While upon the mighty waters, they were the peculiar objects of providential care and bounty. They were all brought in safe to their desired haven, where his hand has been most wonderfully "stretched out still" in opening a door of access for them, in giving them favour in the sight of the heathen, and in frustrating the machinations of their more heathenish countrymen. These are a part of his ways, but the tongue is unable to express all the wonderful things he has done for them. "O that men would therefore praise the Lord for his goodness, and declare his wonderful work to the children of men*.

On the 21st. early, several of the chiefs came

* A small axe was snatched this day from one of the brethren while he was cutting fire-wood; and in the evening some thieves broke into the dwelling, rifled the first box they came to, and took out a quantity of bark, jalap, nitre, and other medicines; but as those were not such articles as they delighted in, they left them in the yard, where they were found in the morning. What they really carried off was only a few clothes that lay upon the chests.

12th. Dugonagaboola sent them a quantity of provisions, which was very acceptable; but in the course of the day they were informed, that this great friend of theirs had accepted of the large axe from the person who stole it; and, after complimenting him on his dexterity in taking it, had sent him off to Vavao, to be out of the way when the ship arrived. This action gave them a strange idea of their great patron and noble friend; and yet, strange as the contradiction seemed, all their goods were every day in his power if he chose to plunder them.

on board, among whom was Futtafaihe; who, observing brother Buchanan, renewed his solicitations for him to go and live with him.

22d. Brother Gaulton went to Aheefo, to bring his chest, and other things, to Mooa, where Futtafaihe had given them their choice of several handsome dwellings, situated between his house and the lagoon. After choosing one about two hundred yards from his own, they returned on board *.

Brother Wilkinson brought off some turnips of their first crop, but many of them had been much mangled by the rats. A trap was made, by which a great many were caught; these were given to the women at their request, and eaten raw as delicate food.

26th. The noble lady visited the ship this day, with several female attendants; the captain delighted her exceedingly, by sending her on shore in an elegant English dress, which had been reserved for such an occasion.

SECTION VI.

Description of Tongataboo—Passage from Tongatoboo to China—Occurrences at China and Voyage home.

THIS island bears an unrivalled sovereignty over the whole group, Feejee not excepted. The inhabitants of Feejee, having long ago discovered it, frequently invaded it, and committed great cruelties; but in a late expedition against the Tonga people, under the command of Toogahowe, and others, they completely routed them, and brought them into subjection; so that they now pay tribute to Tongatoboo on certain occasions, the same as other islands. Tongataboo is divided into three large districts, viz. Aheefo, over which Dugonagaboola reigns with absolute sway. Mooa is under the same subjection to Futtafaihe; and Ahoge is governed in the same manner by Vaharlo: each of these sovereigns claiming a right of disposal over the lives and property of his own subjects, which the brethren have seen exercised most despotically. These districts are subdivided into those of smaller extent, which have their respective chiefs presiding over them, to whom they are, in some cases, accountable for their conduct: the whole has some analogy to the ancient feudal system of our ancestors.

These people possess many excellent qualities, which, were they enlightened with the knowledge of the gospel, would render them truly amiable: their bounty and liberality to strangers is exemplary, and their generosity to each other unequalled. After suffering extreme hunger, if they are so fortunate to receive a morsel, they instantly divide it among as many as are present, the first receiver generally leaving himself the smallest share, and often none at all. When they kill a hog, or dress a favourite dish, a portion of it is always sent to their friends, who are equally anxious to return the favour as soon as their circumstances will admit of it†.

Their marriages are attended with little ceremony: that of Vaarjee, with whom brothers Bowell and Harper had resided some time, was thus conducted: a young female having excited his partiality in her favour, he informed his mother that he wished to add her to the number of

* Fefene Duatonga, the principal woman of the island, came on board, with her first lady in waiting: their hair was plastered up with a composition resembling the powder and pomatum, much used by the London *Belles* a few years ago. In token of homage, her feet are kissed by all who approach her; and so exalted are her ideas of her own dignity, that no man can aspire to the honour of being her fixed husband: but she cohabits with such of the chiefs as she pleases to select, and has several children. A fine boy, aged about twelve years, attended her on board. Some presents of scissars were made, and thankfully received; and, on their leaving the ship, they jumped overboard, washing the snow-white decoration from their hair, before they paddled on shore with their canoe.

† Their honesty among themselves seems unimpeachable; it is to be wished that as much could be truly said with regard to their probity with strangers. The murder of children, and other horrid practices, which prevail among the Otaheiteans, are unheard of here. Their children are indulged, and old age honoured. Female chastity, indeed, is little regarded among the lower orders, it being a common practice with the chiefs, to offer to their male visitors some of their females to sleep with them.

his

his wives. This intelligence was instantly communicated to the damsel's father, who, approving of the proposed alliance, clothed her in a new garment, and with attendants, and such a quantity of baked hogs, yams, yava-root, &c. as he could afford, she was sent to her intended spouse; who being apprised of her coming, seated himself in his house, and received her as he would have done any other visitor. Feasting on the provisions, and a good draught of yava concluded the whole; and the bride might either return to her father till again sent for, or take up her residence with her husband; which, in this instance, she preferred. Polygamy is in common practice among the chiefs, each of them taking as many wives as he pleases; but they are strangers to domestic broils, owing perhaps to the absolute authority of the man, the wife being so much at his disposal that he may discard her at his pleasure.

Their deities are numerous; every district has its own, and every family of note has one, whom they consider as their peculiar patron, each of which deities are sometimes represented by the several chiefs of those districts; so that their natches and other annual exhibitions, are not mere public amusements, but religious observances. They have two natches in the year, one to procure the favour of Futtafaihe when their yams are set; and the other to express their gratitude when they gather them in. They suppose the winds to be under the control of a female, called Calla Fiatonga, who, they say, is very powerful, but being little regarded by them, she is sometimes provoked to blow down their cocoa-nut and other trees, to oblige them to bring offerings to a house sacred to her.

No person among the natives pretends to be religious, or to profess even the appearance of sanctity; there does not appear to be any such character as a priest among them. In all the offerings they make, each man kills and presents his own sacrifice. The frequent earthquakes among them are thus accounted for: they suppose the island rests upon the shoulders of a potent deity called Mowee, who has supported it for many ages. This heavy burthen sometimes exhausts his patience, and he vainly attempts to shake it off; which excites a horrid outcry over the whole country. Tongaloer, the God of the sky, and Fenoulonga, of the rain, they suppose to be females. They have many other Gods, of both sexes, whose names can hardly be enumerated, each acting in their proper sphere, and sometimes counteracting each other, as caprice or interest may lead them. They also acknowledge the existence of a number of strange Gods. They imagine every individual to be under the control of a spirit peculiar to himself, which they call odooa, who is interested in all his concerns; but is little regarded till he is angry, when they suppose he inflicts upon them all the disorders to which they are subject; and then, in order to appease him, the relations of the afflicted person, especially if he be a chief, have recourse to cutting off their little fingers, beating their faces, and tabooing themselves from certain kinds of food.

They believe the immortality of the soul, which at death, they say, is conveyed in a rapid-sailing canoe to a distant country called Doobludka, which they describe as a paradise.

In the morning of the 7th of September, they weighed, and sailing from Tongataboo by the northern passage, passed the small islands of Honga Harpy and Honga Tonga; these are both moderately high, and appear fertile. On the morning of the 10th passed Providence reef, which is a small spot, bearing east from the south end of Danger Island. They afterwards passed the north-east reef, where they appeared to have a clear sea. Table and Danger Islands, of which they had the nearest view, had the appearance of fertility, having the loftiest hills covered with trees to their summits.

On the 12th at noon they saw land bearing south, for which they hauled up, wishing to have some intercourse with the natives. The wind bearing east-south-east, they just weathered a reef lying eastward from a small high island: and standing a little further, tacked ship close to the north-east of what they called Sir Charles Middleton's Island, and chose a spot to spend the night in, having the bearings of several islands whereby to direct them clear of the surrounding danger.

At day-break on the 13th they bore away, and ran along the north-side of Sir Charles Middleton's Island. As they ran to the windward, compass bearings were taken of the islands and

reefs, to ascertain their relative situations. Leaving Middleton's Island, they passed close by what they called Direction Island; where they beheld some natives on the beach with spears in their hands: the island, which was moderately high, seemed to abound in the common produce, and was quite surrounded by a reef. Sailing thence west-north-west, about six leagues further, they came near the east end of an island, called Ross Island, where they saw vast numbers of the natives assembled upon the beach; but they were perfectly secure, being strongly fortified with a surrounding reef.

From the mast-head they observed a reef trending to the north east, to weather which they hauled their wind to the northward; and, passing it, stood towards some islands, which they called the Clusters. Night approaching, and being surrounded with reefs and islands, they put the ship under an easy sail, and chose the clearest place to make tacks in till the next morning. At nine, no danger appearing, they thought themselves safe; but they were presently alarmed by the ship striking on a coral reef, upon which the sea hardly broke to give the least warning. All hands were instantly upon deck, and, as she stuck fast, became under great apprehensions of being ship-wrecked: a misfortune greatly to be dreaded, as the Feejees were cannibals of a fierce disposition, from whom no favour could be expected. Supposing it to be a weather reef they were on, the moment she struck the sails were hove aback, and in the course of a few minutes they perceived that she came astern, and soon after was quite afloat; when they where relieved from their fears, and the vessel seemed to have received no injury. They could not ascertain at sea, what damage had been sustained, as she made no water; but, on her coming into dock, they saw how wonderfully they had been preserved. The coral rock on which they struck was providentially directed exactly against one of the timbers. The force of the blow had beat in the copper, greatly wounded the plank, and beat it to shivers. Had the stroke happened between the ribs of the ship, it must have gone through, and they perhaps would never have returned to adore the author of their mercies.

When the day had manifested the dangers which lay hid around them, it appeared wonderful that they had escaped so well; and seemed extremely desirous to get clear of them as fast as possible. With this view they steered between several reefs, which seemed to extend on both sides as far as the eye could reach. When they had passed these, and began to bring the islands astern, they thought themselves quite clear, and regretted that they should have no intercourse with the inhabitants. At nine in the morning another island came in sight to the south-west, for which they shaped their course, to try if anchorage could be found near it. At length, however, coming to the north-west point, they saw a shoal close to them, and a large flat ran south-east off the island: upon which they hauled their wind; and this being the last they saw of this dangerous group, they gave it the name of Farewell Island*.

At day-light on the 17th they bore away, and at half past eight they were opposite the north-east end of the island of Rotuma, when several canoes came off, containing from about three to seven persons each. At first they approached the ship with some degree of shyness, but presently grew bolder, and ventured alongside: one of them, with a fowl in his hand, took hold of a rope, dropped himself into the water, and was hauled on board. He informed them by signs, that he expected an axe for the fowl, by which they knew there must have been some intercourse between them and Captain Edwards of the Pandora, who discovered this island in August 1791. It is probable, however, that they have been visited

* These are probably the cluster which Tasman got entangled among, and which he calls Prince William's Islands. They are probably connected with those which the people at Tongataboo call the Feejees, as they lie in the direction pointed out by them.

Coral reefs surround every island; and though there appeared to them no openings through the reefs to the respective islands they enclose, it is probable that by a more diligent search both openings and anchorage might be found. But as the captain had to reach China at a specified date, much time could not prudently be spared in search of an uncertainty. Where they passed close, they saw many inhabitants. The natives of the Friendly Islands acknowledge that the Feejees excel them in many ingenious works; though they abhor them for their detestable practice of eating their unfortunate prisoners. They use bows and arrows in war; and from the blackness of their complexion, and the disparity of their language and manners, they seem a distinct race from the natives of those groups where missions are now established.

sited by none besides, as they seemed to behold them with astonishment and surprise. As this day happened to be Sunday, the brethren could not barter with these people; but they gave this man an axe, a few fish-hooks, and some other things, which made him leap for joy. Three others, encouraged by his success, ventured after him, and were equally fortunate. Many more would doubtless have come on board, but observing the brethren steered rather from the island, they pointed towards a bay, seeming to intimate that they wished they would come to anchor. This bay lays to windward of the highest bluff hill, on the west end of the main island; a higher islet, much resembles it, both being steepish on the north side; westward of this last lie three other small islets, the largest of which seems split in the middle, as if broken by an earthquake*.

Their canoes were like those of the Friendly Islands, but not so well proportioned, nor so completely finished. The only weapons seen by the brethren, were spears ingeniously carved, and pointed with the bone of the sting-ray. The natives were much surprised at the sight of the British sheep, goats, and cats. Hogs and fowls are, however, abundant in this island; and from the fertility of the spot, and the seeming cheerful and friendly disposition of the natives, it may become a very eligible place for ships, wanting refreshments, to touch at.

From Rotumah they steered north-west by west, and west by south eight days. At eight in the morning on the 25th, they saw land from the mast-head, and immediately steered for it. At five in the evening as they drew near to the land, they found it consisted of about half a score separate islands, two or three of which were of considerable size; and saw a canoe advancing towards them, in which were two men: they approached within hail, but would come no nearer. They brandished their paddles, hooped and hallooed in a harsh and dissonant tone, and used many extravgant gestures, not in the way of menace or defiance, but to manifest surprize at so extraordinary a sight, having perhaps never beheld a ship before. They had baskets of fruit in the canoe, to which they frequently pointed, as if they wanted to barter them; or perhaps they meant them as offerings. Whatever they might have intended, fear kept them at a distance, though the brethren used every method to allure them alongside. Nine other canoes were now seen coming off, but they all acted with the same caution and fear, keeping all together astern of the ship. Afterwards the brethren were making towards the largest of the islands, when a heavy squall of wind and rain coming on, and obliging them to bear before it, they were so near running over some of them, that the men in one small canoe jumped overboard and swam to another. The squall being over, and the deserted canoe not being far from the ship, they stood close to her and picked her up, hoping to have an opportunity of returning her the next day.

The length of this canoe was about twelve or fourteen feet, and the breadth fifteen inches; made of one tree, sharpened at the ends, and ornamented on the upper part.

Having put the ship under a snug sail, they stood to the eastward all the night, and at day-break found they had drifted considerably to the southward; but, still expecting some intercoure with the natives, they set sail, and plied to windward. At eleven in the forenoon they were near the largest island, when five canoes ventured off but acted with the same caution as before. Perceiving that their fears prevailed over their curiosity, and that there was little probability of their having any intercourse with them, they lowered the jolly-boat down, and intended to tow the canoe close to the shore, and there leave her with some of their articles in her. But observing that the ship could not get near enough to aid the boat in case of an attack, this design was relinquished, and they immediately bore away.

* The main island seems extremely populous and fertile; for in the space of a mile, upwards of two hundred houses were counted near the beach, besides what were probably concealed by the trees. In their figures, little difference could be distinguished between the natives and the Friendly Islanders, except that they appeared to be of a lighter colour, and their tattooing is somewhat different; many of these having the resemblance of birds and fishes; with circles and spots upon their arms and shoulders. The women wear their hair long, and have it dyed of a reddish colour; and with a pigment of the same, mixed with cocoa-nut oil, they rub their neck and breast.

The

The largest of this group was named Disappointment Island, and the whole cluster was denominated Duff's Group; they are about eleven in number, lying in a direction south-east and north-west; in the middle are two larger islands, about six miles in circumference, with a small islet between, and to the eastward three islets: on the north-west part of the group are five or six more. The small islands are apparently barren, but the two largest are entirely covered with wood, among which were several cocoa-nut trees. The natives are stout, and have copper-coloured complexions*.

From six in the morning till noon they steered west by north twenty-three miles. From noon they steered west north-west twenty-eight miles, and could just discern Volcano Island through the haze. Had the weather been clearer, they probably might have seen it much farther off; though even now they were distant from it about twenty leagues.

About noon they passed to the southward of Stewart's Islands, which are five in number, small, and low. On the following day they passed in sight of New Georgia, and saw no more land for several days. On the 10th of October they crossed the equator in longitude 152° E.

On the 25th they saw a low island bearing west by north, and presently observed some canoes coming towards them. About nine in the morning one of them came alongside without fear or hesitation, and by their frequent mention of the term "Capitaine," they were supposed to have been acquainted with Europeans before. These first were followed by many more, who exchanged their fishing hooks, lines, and rope for any thing that was given them. Several of them were admitted on board and, for a considerable time, shewed no inclination to steal; but those in the canoes soon gave very convincing proofs of their strong propensity to it by taking the rudder rings; and one fellow was detected handing a pump-spear into his canoe. As the brethren had been accustomed to such matters, they only drove them off the decks for these first depredations: but whilst they were sitting at dinner in the cabin, they were heard trying to knock off the bolt-head of the rudder-rings; when the captain instantly fired some small shot amongst them, and made them sheer off with precipitation. At this moment William Tucker and John Connelly were seen swimming close under the stern, hoping to make their escape to the canoes, and to skulk away without being fired at; but the captain, enraged at the former for his ingratitude and deceit, and desirous of parting with the latter, told them, that if they chose to go they might, for he would not fire at them. Connelly replied, "thank you Sir," and they both swam to the canoes, and were received by the savages with loud shoutings. Soon after, a breeze springing up from the north-east, they resumed their course, and left them behind. Connelly had been forcibly brought from Tongataboo for threatening the missionaries. Whilst he continued on board he behaved quietly, and being rated in the ship's books as an ordinary seaman, seemed happy in his situation, till the last transaction proved his hypocrisy. Tucker had also been reinstated, after running from the ship at Otaheite, and he had also frequently said he was happy in his present situation; it is probable that he had been seduced by Connelly. If the latter was really a Botany-bay convict, as they have since heard, he may be supposed to have been actuated by two motives, the fear of work, and the fear of punishment if discovered in England. Tucker's conduct had long made it evident that he was under the absolute guidance of his sensual passions.

This spot, on which they continued three days, is a small island on the bosom of the deep, about three miles in circumference; where the necessaries of life appeared to be so extremely scarce,

* From Duff's Group they steered west by south thirteen or fourteen leagues, and on the following day again saw land in the south-west quarter, which proved to be Swallow Island and Volcano Island. Further to the south-west they could discover Egmont Island; and a low island which lies about south-west from Volcano Island. As the moon was now just setting, and as running in the dark would be extremely dangerous, they hove to with the ship's head towards Volcano Island. Captain Cartaret informs us, in his narrative, that they saw smoke, but no flame, issuing from this volcano; but when the brethren passed close to it, and even when they were at a distance, they beheld it emitting a large brilliant flame every ten minutes, which was truly gratifying to all on board, who till then had never seen so grand a phenomenon. The height of this volcano from the surface of the sea is upwards of two thousand feet; and its height is to its base in the proportion of one to three.

that

that little could be procured by the natives but fish, roots, and cocoa-nuts*.

With light airs of wind from the north-east they proceeded on their course, leaving Tucker and his companion to ponder over the unhappy choice they had made, a choice replete with wretchedness: but, such is the prevalence of habit, and the enervating influence of idleness over the mind, that another fellow named Andrew Cornelius Lind, prevailed on the captain to set him on shore upon the next island they should discover.

At four in the morning on the 26th, they saw two islands, and as the day broke shortly after, they counted six more; for the most southerly of these they steered, and soon had several canoes about the ship, into one of which Andrew, after having taken leave of his shipmates, went, and was joyfully received by the savages†.

About ten in the morning of the 27th, they came in sight of another low island; here many of the natives came off, and trafficked with them. They thought it remarkable that hitherto, in their range among these islands, no females had appeared. At day-break on the 29th, when it fell calm, they counted six islands, and seven islets, to the whole of which they gave the name of the Thirteen Islands. About sixty canoes came off at first, and afterwards one hundred and fifty appeared in sight; each of which, on an average, containing about seven men, making together one thousand and fifty. From these, and other circumstances, it was moderately calculated that the population of this group alone, would amount to 3150. Here, for the first time, some of their women appeared, about a dozen of them coming off in three canoes: in two they were accompanied by men; the third was freighted by young women only. For some time they kept aloof, while they were attentively observed by their own men; but seeing they were not particularly noticed by the strangers, they permitted them to approach within a few yards of the ship, which they appeared to survey with delight. Some of them had good features; their lips were thick, but not in the extreme: nor were their faces remarkably broad. Their hair is long and black. Their complexion differs from that of the men, by a sickly kind of whitishness, mixed with the natural olive. Though they were now beheld almost naked, their behaviour was singularly modest and decent. Most of the men were also naked: some had a sash mat wrapped round their middle; others an ornamental belt. Some of them had a broad conical hat, somewhat in the Chinese taste. Their fishing tackle differs little from what the brethren had seen in the eastern islands, but their matting is remarkably curious, being wove in the form of a Spanish sash, with a fancy border at each end. The natural colour of these sashes is white; but many of them are dyed of a beautiful yellow: it is impossible to behold these elegant sashes, without wishing to know how they came by the art. Turtle is among the articles of their subsistence; as the adventurers purchased with an old iron hoop, one that exceeded the weight of twenty pounds.

Having now taken leave of the Carolines, for after the thirteen islands, they saw no more of them, they shaped their course to the Pelew Islands; but had rather a tedious passage, owing to light and variable winds. November the 5th, at sun-set, they thought they saw land in the south-west quarter, but could not be certain, as dull gloomy weather at that time prevailed. Supposing, however, that they were at no great distance from the islands, they shortened sail, and tacked to the south-east. During the night they had squally and rainy weather; but at eight in the morning of the 6th, it became more settled, and they got sight of the land, distant about ten or eleven leagues‡.

With a brisk gale from the southward, they continued their course till three in the afternoon, when they were within two miles of the reef ex-

* The natives are not a stout race; they have a dark copper complexion, and lively dispositions. No women were seen. Their canoes are raised high at each end, and are painted red. Their sails resemble those in the single sailing canoes of the Friendly Islands. Reflecting on the conduct of the run-a-way, they named this Tucker's Island.

† As the canoe paddled away with him, he stood up and waved his hand, seemingly more elated than depressed by his change of situation. Before his departure, the captain gave him two handsaws, two hatchets, a hammer, ten looking-glasses, two razors, eighteen knives, and three hundred deck nails; with several other trifles. These, and what he had of his own, particularly a bible, will doubtless make him an acquisition to the natives.

‡ Steering towards it, they were suddenly alarmed by the cook's cabouse catching fire. Every man exerted himself to suppress the flames, and happily they were soon extinguished. The fire was occasioned by the cook's incautious method of melting his fat.

tending almost to the shore of the largest island, called Babelthoup, divided into several districts, governed each by a separate chief, acknowledging the supreme authority of Abba Thulle. When they hove to they was opposite to the southern part of the district of Artingall. About two hundred persons were collected upon the beach, and not less than a dozen canoes were seen upon the water; but, as the weather then wore a gloomy aspect, only three of them came far enough to get alongside. The natives in these, having a piece of white cloth tied upon a stick, approached without fear or hesitation, and spoke to them very familiarly, but their language was wholly unintelligible; they kept talking, however, with great volubility, accompanying their words with violent and sudden gestures of the hands and body. As their comrades in the canoes bawled loudly for those alongside to rejoin them, the captain presented them with a few knives, looking-glasses, &c. when they hastily, though reluctantly, took their leave; but, before they paddled off, they endeavoured to shew their gratitude, by throwing a couple of cocoa-nuts upon their decks, which were all they had. This was the whole of the intercourse the missionaries had with the Pelew-Islanders; a circumstance which they much regretted, as they would have been happy to have mentioned the expediency of settling a mission among them: but, for the present voyage, they supposed every thing of this nature at an end, and proceeded to make the best of their way to China.

Soon after they bore away, and fell in with an extensive reef, trending north-east, about two leagues from Babelthoup, and perceived three small islands lying further to the north*.

From November 7th, when the brethren quitted the Pelew Islands, till their arrival on the coast of China, no interesting events occurred. The winds were so unsettled, that they hardly experienced any thing like the north-east monsoon, till within about three days sail of the Bashees, the most southern of which they saw the evening of the 17th. At day-break, supposing then they could clear the northern rocks, they bore away west, and, altering their course a little, sailed close past the northernmost isle†.

On the 20th they got into soundings, and passed some Chinese fishing boats. At seven in the morning a pilot came on board, who asked one hundred dollars to take them to Macao road; but afterwards accepted of thirteen, besides making the brethren a present of two fine fish.

21st. At ten in the morning they passed between the Grand Lamma and Potoy, and leaving all the islands but Lingting to the south of them, they sailed through with a fine easterly breeze. At three they came in sight of Macao, and at half past four anchored in the road, the town bearing west two leagues. The pilot was then discharged, and a signal made for another. They were anxious to learn what European ships were at Canton, but had the mortification to be informed that none were yet arrived, and consequently there could be no letters for them. They had, however, sent their boat on shore, with an officer, for provisions; which brought them a variety of refreshments, of which they were not however so much in need as many preceding navigators had been, who had been so long at sea as themselves. From the time of leaving England, they had run upwards of thirty-four thousand miles, and had been out fourteen months, eleven of them at sea; yet, in all this time, they had hardly experienced any sickness, and were now all in good health. They used no antiscorbutics, as malt, spruce, &c. but their crew consisting of only a small number to what are usually on board ships on voyages of discovery, they usually procured a sufficient stock of fresh provisions to last, with economy, till more could be obtained: by this mode the seamen had fresh meat at least twice a week; and during almost half the time they were in the

* Were the missionaries to admit the few Pelew islanders they saw to be a specimen of the whole, they think them, in external appearance, inferior to the Marquesans, the Society, or Friendly Islanders. They are deficient in stature and symmetry to the two first, and fall short of the muscular, bold, and manly appearance of the latter. Among some customs, which they seem to have in common at both places, is that of slitting the ear, through which some large vegetable ornaments are placed. In tattooing at Pelew, their legs and thighs are represented of a blueish black, as if they had been dyed, the same as at the Carolinas. They appeared before the spectators perfectly naked, unconscious of any shame; and they shewed great kindness and hospitality, by the earnest and repeated invitations given to strangers to visit their habitations.

† The Bashees consist of six or seven islands: two to the south-east are high; some are of a moderate height; the most northern, except one, is high and craggy; and between these lie two small rocks above water.

South

South Seas, they lived entirely upon the hogs of the different islands.

Captain Wilson observes, on his arrival in port, that, " he was exceedingly shocked at hearing around him, once more, that great and awful name blasphemed, which, for fourteen months, he had never heard mentioned but with reverence."

On the 22d of November, early in the morning, Captain Wilson went in the pinnace to Macao, hoping to get the obstacles to their going removed, while the crew were employed in painting and repairing the ship; and in the course of a few hours they had the pleasure to see her look almost as smart as when she left Spithead. They next morning were happy to embrace the opportunity of the windward tide to weigh their anchors, and run into the harbour of the Typa; mooring close to the Britannia, Captain Dennet.

On the 25th the Britannia left the Typa; and that their ship might be in readiness, they began to strip the rigging off the mast-heads, and found it necessary to put new cheeks to the main-mast. The whole of the rigging was examined and thoroughly repaired; and while this work was upon the finish on the 9th of December, the captain arrived with permission for the ship to go up the river. On the 13th they moored at Whampoa, where they found ships of different nations. Among others was the Arniston, belonging to the East-India Company, which had two or three days before arrived from England, having touched at the Cape of Good Hope; and by her they were informed of many particulars relative to their native country.

They expected to remain here three months at least before they should be sent home: but the supercargoes having determined to dispatch the Glatton, Boddam, and Amazon packet, they ordered an immediate survey to be made of their ship, and the report of the committee being, " That the Duff was in excellent order, and fit to receive a cargo," Mr. R. Hall, the head supercargo, informed their captain, that if he could take in their lading, and be ready to depart in five or six days, he would dispatch them. This the captain promised to perform; but though the ship was in all respects in very good order, they had many difficulties to encounter; however, on the 31st of December they were completely laden; and having, by the kindness of the supercargoes, got over the obstacles which the Chinese are continually throwing in the way, they ran down the river the same day, and joined the other ships at a place called the Second Bar, just as they were getting under sail*.

On the 2d of January, 1798, they got down to Macao, where they found three English men of war, and seven Bombay cotton ships at anchor, waiting for them to sail with them.

The Company's ship Glatton, commanded by Captain Drummond, was appointed to convoy them home, to take the country ships bound to Bombay under his care; and the Fox and La Sibylle were to accompany them some leagues down the China sea. Early on the 5th they put to sea, with a fresh gale from the north, when the Duff was found fully competent to keep up with them. Their passage down the China sea, was as favourable as they could have wished: in the course of the night the frigates left them, and they saw them no more.

On the 10th they passed Pulo Sapata, and at ten in the morning of the 14th, they came in sight of the Malay coast; at the same time they saw a strange sail a-head. A report having been spread that an enemy's squadron was cruizing in the straits, the commodore made the signal for the fleet to prepare for action, and that one of the fastest sailing ships should chase. She was soon recognized, however, to be a Portuguese vessel which had left Macao three days before them. The straits of Malacca are thought dangerous to navigate in the dark; but, as the wind was fair, the commodore ventured to keep the fleet running all the night.

Next day they had calms, which obliged them to anchor; but a breeze springing up at north-east they soon weighed, and the wind increasing at midnight, they passed the Water Islands, and at two in the morning of the 16th, came to with the small bower in Malacca road, in seven fathoms. They touched at this place to fill up their water, and obtain information for the

* The singularity of manners, observable among the missionaries, did not fail to attract notice; and as all immorality was utterly discountenanced, not an oath escaped the lips of any one, and an unusual appearance of devotion was supported; the company they had now joined pleasantly rebaptized the Duff, and named her *The Ten Commandments*.

safety

safety of the fleet; but they were disappointed in the hope of intelligence, as there was none of later date than what they had received at China. As this spoke only of war, it was their duty to prepare for all events on the passage.

On the 17th they received about four tons of water; and they also received an addition to their live stock, and were ready for sea that evening, had the large ships completed their water. One of the fleet, however, which had lain several months laden at Whampoa, had sprung a leak, when much time was expended to find out the place where the water entered. This was at length discovered, and deserves to be noticed as a hint to shipwrights, and to those who are interested: by ripping the copper off the under wales, a bolt-hole was found, left without the bolt; an act of negligence which might have been of the most fatal consequence, had it not been discovered*.

On the 20th, they sailed with the fleet, and proceeded down the strait till they came in sight of Pulo Pinang, when the Bombay ships left them, and steered for that island. Their fleet was now reduced, consisting only of the Glatton, Boddam, Amazon, and their own ship.

On the 31st they finished the last of their yams, which had plentifully supplied them for five months. They had a good passage, with few gales of wind, and met with no disaster. They did not even see a strange sail to alarm them till the sixteenth of March, when, in the morning, they made the Cape land, and fell in with two transports from Amboyna, which joined them.†

At three in the afternoon they anchored in the bay, where they found a squadron of men of war, under the command of Admiral Christian; two outward-bound East-Indiamen, and several other vessels. In the evening the health-boat came to examine the state of the crew, and finding them all well, gave permission for free communication with the shore. Then the admiral's boat upon guard took an account of the ship, whence she came, &c. They afterwards left the admiral's excellent directions, and departed.

On the 1st of April the signal for sailing was made, and the missionaries put to sea, with the addition of the transport Bellona to their fleet. The same day they shaped their course for the island of St. Helena, where they arrived on the 15th. Seven India-men, and two South-Sea Whalers, lay in the bay, all homeward bound.

On the 1st of May they sailed. As Captain Drummond was the senior in command, he had the charge of the fleet, consisting of twenty sail. In their passage they only saw two or three strange ships. In Latitude 20° N. they fell in with a Spanish vessel from Cadiz, bound to Vera Cruz. She was made a prize by the commodore.

On the 22d of June they beheld the coast of Ireland, west of Kinsale; and on the following day put into Cork harbour for a convoy. The Ethalion, Captain Countess, was appointed for that purpose by Admiral Kingsmill; and, after eight days' detention by contrary winds, they set sail, and on the 4th of July saw the coast of England. On the 8th they passed the Downs; and on the 11th came to anchor in the river Thames.

Thus finished a voyage in which the Missionary Society, and their Christian brethren in connection with them, are so deeply interested. Their prayers for them have been heard, and success beyond their expectations have crowned their endeavours, in every place where missions have been settled. They lost not an individual in all their extended voyage, and landed every missionary in perfect health. Every seaman was also restored to his country on the return of the

* Malacca has nothing prepossessing in its appearance: the houses, excepting a few, have a mean appearance; and the best, though convenient, are small and inelegant. The fortifications which surround the town, have originally been strong, but are now too weak to stand the shock of cannon planted upon them. To supply this defect, since the place came into their possession, our countrymen have strengthened the lines and outworks, so that they are now enabled to make a good defence. The streets within the ramparts cross each other at right-angles. The shops present for sale nothing that is enticing to an European. Till the English made a settlement upon Pulo Pinang, or Prince of Wales's Island, this city was the only place of trade in the strait, and has long been represented as of great importance. They export tin, canes, nutmegs, &c. Provisions are scarce and dear. The inhabitants are a mixture of Dutch, Malays, and Chinese. The garrison, at this time, is English.

† At day-break on the 17th, one of their boys, going up the the main shrouds to loose the main-top gallant-sail, fell into the sea; the jolly-boat was instantly lowered from the stern, and providentially got him on board: though far spent, he soon recovered.

ship.

ship. Many who peruse these pages will join the missionaries in acknowledging the gracious providence, that hath supported them hitherto. The road into the Southern Ocean is now open, and the facilities for enlarging the missionary labours considerably increased. "The generous and humane conductors of this benevolent undertaking, will doubtless be animated by the successes which hath attended their first attempt, to pursue with increasing energy an object which appears so fraught with blessings to mankind."

SUPPLEMENT.

Containing some Account of the Country of Otaheite, and its Inhabitants.

THE island of Otaheite consists of two peninsulas, connected by a low istmus about three miles across, covered with trees and shrubs, but wholly uncultivated. The larger, or Otaheite Nooe, is about ninety miles in circumference; the lesser, or Tiaraboo, is about thirty miles. They are divided into a variety of districts. The soil of the low lands, and of the valleys, is remarkably fertile: the mountains afford a great variety of trees of all sorts; and are, in many places, covered to their very tops with wood, in others with bamboos, and in others with fern and reed. The hills rise very steep, and swell into mountains almost inaccessible. In these higher regions only is to be found the precious sandal wood, of two kinds, yellow and dark coloured, from whence the natives draw the perfume for the cocoa-nut oil, with which they anoint themselves.

This country exhibits a mountainous aspect, interspersed by narrow valleys, which receive innumerable streams from the hills; some of which fall in beautiful cascades, and fill the rivers which meander through them amidst the verdant scenery to the sea. During the rainy seasons, these swell into torrents, and sometimes loosen rocks and trees from the precipices, and convey them into the valleys, which they overflow, and occasion much damage. When the trade wind gets far to the south, and blows fresh, it generally rains on the south side of the island, bringing the clouds from the mountains of Tiaraboo, and giving their contents to Pappara and the adjacent islands.

The hills afford a blackish stone, which seems a lava, in pieces from eight to ten feet long, and from four to ten inches thick, of which they formerly made their stone tools. The mountains are, in some parts, bare, and full of precipices, broken, as if by earthquakes. In the bosom of those mountains which bound the district Vyeorede, there is a very large fresh-water lake, called Vyeheera, which they say cannot be sounded by any line, and contains eels of a very monstrous size. The bay of Matavai affords safe anchorage eight months in the year, but is dangerous from December to March. The only harbour to the westward it that of Oparre: water is convenient and abundant in all parts of the island.

The government of Otaheite is monarchical, and hereditary in one family; of which there are two branches. Temarre, the son of Oberea and Oamma, reigned when Wallis first visited this island: he was then a child, and Oberea his mother was regent, Oamma and she having quarrelled and separated. On Temarre's accession, Oamma had retired to a private station in his own district of Pappara, and left his wife in trust with the reins of government for her son. Oamma was son of Tenai, who since has assumed the name of Otey. Whappoi's son Otoo was then a child of seven years old, Tootaha, their younger brother, was chief of Attahooroo.

Wars, and various changes, appear to have preceded the last grand revolution, when the partisans of Otoo, with the assistance of the mutineers, recovered the royal maro from the men of Attahooroo. By one of these intestine wars Temarre, the Tirridirri of Cook, had been previously deposed, and Ottoo, the present Pomarre, advanced to the dignity of earee rahai, After which he was invested with the royal maro, like a coronation. The royal maro, worn only that day, was afterwards deposited in its place in the morai. The feasting and heivas, on this occasion, continued two months.

Otoo, the present king, is about seventeen, and very large limbed. Though he is absolute, he lives in the greatest familiarity with the lowest of his subjects: he is differently represented; some pronounce him serious and thoughtful; others accuse him of stupidity. His queen, Tetua, is nearly of his own age. Her countenance is pleasing and open, but masculine, and widened by the usual method of pressure, called touroome*.

The next in rank to the king is his own father, Pomarre, who acts as regent for his son. He is the largest man on the island, being about six feet four inches high, and strong in proportion: his wife, Iddeah, is a woman of a very masculine appearance: they live together in great harmony, though they have ceased to cohabit. The next in dignity are the chiefs in the several districts; some of whom are supreme in more than one district. Next to these are the towhas, the near relations, or younger brethren, or tayos, of the chiefs. The next in rank is the rattira, who has one share to the towha's three. The lowest class in society, after the rattira, is the manahoune; they cultivate the land, and resemble our cottagers†.

The Otaheiteans are friendly and generous, even to excess; they seldom refuse any thing to each other, if importuned: their presents are liberal, even to profusion. They have no writings, or records, respecting property; but they have their land-marks; every man knows his own, and he would be thought of all characters the basest, who should attempt to infringe on his neighbour.

The natural colour of the inhabitants is olive, inclining to copper: those who expose themselves to the sun and sea are darker; but the women, who carefully clothe themselves, and avoid the sun, are not very much darker than an European brunette Their eyes are black and sparkling; their teeth white and even; their skin soft, their limbs finely turned, and their hair jetty. Still, however, their features did not appear beautiful, for they widen the face, and flatten the nose and forehead, by continual pressure with their hands. Their manners are affable and engaging, and their step easy, firm, and graceful; their tempers mild, gentle, and unaffected; slow to take offence, easily pacified, and seldom retaining resentment or revenge. The women here, as in all hot climates, come earlier to puberty, and fade sooner than in more northern countries.

As wives, the women are, in private life, affectionate, tender, and obedient to their husbands; extravagantly fond of their children, nursing them with the utmost care and caution: a cripple is hardly ever seen among them in early life. The men in general exceed the common size, and the chiefs are much larger; few of them being less than six feet high, and proportionably bulky.

The dress of both sexes is nearly the same, excepting that the men wear a narrow piece of cloth, which, passing round the waist, goes between the thighs, and is tucked in before, named the marro, and may be called their breeches. An oblong piece, not unlike a piece of printed calico, near a yard wide, with a hole in the middle, to admit the head, hangs down before and behind, with the sides open, falling loose to the knees, and leaving the arms quite uncovered: this is the teboota. A square piece of cloth, doubled sufficient to pass once and a half round the waist of men, and above the breasts of the women, under the taboota, is called paru: this falls down only to the knees of the man, but to the mid-leg, or ankles of the woman. The women also wear a piece of cloth, which they throw tastily over all, by way of cloak. Instead of the marro, worn by the men,

* It is considered as the distinctive mark of their regal dignity, to be every where carried about on men's shoulders. The king and queen were always attended by a number of men, as carriers, domestics, or favourites, who were sacred, living without families, and attending only on the royal pair; and are all adepts in thievery, plunder, and impurity. The queen has not at present any child, nor is it probable that she will have any, as she is said to be a perfect Messaline, and lives in a promiscuous intercouse with all her porters. The mode of carrying the king and queen is with their legs hanging down before, seated on the shoulders, and leaning on the head of their carriers: They very frequently amuse themselves with picking out the vermin, which there abound. It is the singular privilege of the queen, that she alone may eat them, which privilege she never fails to exercise.

† The servants of every class are called *toutou;* and such of them as wait wholly on the women, *tuti.* There remains a set of men of the most execrable cast, called *mahoos*, who affect the manner, dress, gestures, and voice of females, and are too horrid to be further mentioned.

the women have a small paru, beneath the larger, as an under-petticoat*.

The operation of the tattooing, however painful it may be, is generally persevered in, but if the anguish should be very great, the patient is admitted to cry out, as a kind of temporary relief.

No children are brought into the world with less pain or danger than those of Otaheite: the women have little or no confinement within doors. The infant soon crawls, and begins to walk; presently after it begins to swim. They run about entirely naked, and are remarkably healthy and active.

Their voice and speech are soft and harmonious, and their dialect is the Italian of the South Seas: it abounds with vowels, and expels every harsh and guttural sound from the alphabet. The ingenuity of all their works, considering the tools they possess, is marvellous†.

They have no partitions in their houses; but they have, in many instances, very refined ideas of decency: a long resident among them scruples not to declare, that he never saw any appetite, hunger and thirst excepted, gratified in public.

The deities of Otaheite are almost as numerous as the persons of the inhabitants. Every family has its *tee*, or guardian spirit, whom they set up and worship at the morai; but they have a great god, or gods of a superior order, denominated Fwhanow Po. The general name for deity is Eatooa. Three are held supreme. To these they only address their prayers on very extraordinary occasions, supposing them to be too exalted to be troubled with the affairs of less moment than the illness of a chief, storms, war, or some other great calamity.

The *tee*, or guardian spirit, is supposed to be one of their departed relatives, who, for his superior excellencies, has been exalted to an Eatooa. They suppose this spirit can occasion sickness, or remove it; and that he can preserve them from a malignant deity, who is solely employed in mischief‡.

They suppose the stars were the children of the sun and moon. With respect to their worship, the Otaheitean never draws near the Eatooa with carelessness and inattention; he is all devotion; he approaches the sacred place with reverential awe; uncovers when he treads the ground, and prays with becoming fervour. They put great confidence in dreams, supposing in sleep the soul leaves the body under the care of the guardian angel, and ranges at large through the regions of spirits.

The priests of the Society Islands are a numerous body; they are in every district. Manne Manne appears to be the first among them, for knowledge and traditionary information The priests have plenty of employment, being called in on all occasions, births, deaths, or sickness; and are physicians as well as divines. They affect to possess extraordinary powers. When a priest denounces the necessity of a human sacrifice, the manner of selecting them is by a council of the chief with the rattiras. If the chief, &c. on the requisition of the priest, declare they can find none deserving death in their district, or refuse to provide a human sacrifice, a hog may be substituted in his place, A woman cannot be offered at the Society islands, though they are the chief victims at the Friendly Islands. The sacred ground around the morais affords a sanctuary for criminals. Thither they may flee for protection, and cannot thence be taken by force, though they are sometimes seduced to quit their asylum. The habitations of the British Missionaries will afford them an assured exemption; and the whole district of Matavai being ceded to

* The women uncover their shoulders and breasts in the presence of a chief, or on passing the sacred ground. Both sexes wear garlands of flowers, and feathers. They sometimes dress with a garland of cocoa-nut fibres, decorated with bits of pearl shell, and the nails of the thumb and fingers of their deceased relations. The women have no morai, nor place of worship; nor are they ever present at their solemnities; but they suppose they shall be admitted to happiness with the Eatooa, as well as the men.

† The common habitations are about eighteen feet in the ridge-tree, oblong, and rounded at the ends. Their furniture consists of a few wooden trays and stools for making their puddings, posts to hang their baskets on, and a large chest on which the master and mistress of the house sometimes repose. Their pillow is a little wooden stool, neatly formed; or they use the stool they sit on in their canoes. Their usual seat is on the ground, cross-legged, but they have seats for the accommodation of strangers. The houses are full of fleas, which harbour in the floor, and are extremely troublesome. One of the missionaries declares, he has been obliged to get up at midnight, and run into the sea to cool himself; and to get rid of a swarm of such disagreeable companions.

‡ They suppose no person perishes, or becomes extinct after death; nor do they admit of any punishment after death, but are rewarded with degrees of eminence and felicity, as men have been more or less pleasing to the deity. They consider the spirits of their ancestors, male and female, as exalted into Eatooas, and their favour to be obtained by prayers and offerings.

them

them, no more human sacrifices will probably be demanded from them.

Both sexes go naked till they are six or seven years of age: they begin tattooing the males at thirteen or fourteen, and the females at an earlier period. They bathe three times a-day in the fresh water, and always wash themselves in it after coming out of the sea; and though the men and women wash together promiscuously, not the least immodesty is permitted. In their dances, indecency escapes censure. The single young men, who in the heivas indulge indecent gestures, would not presume to do so at any other time; and, however strangely the women act in public dances, no women of character would admit of improper liberties elsewhere. They extract every hair from the nose, arm-pits, &c. to prevent its harbouring any dust or foulness. They trim their beards with shells, and wear their hair short or long, as fancy dictates. They form their eye-brows into regular arches; and the men are not less attentive to these matters than the women. The fragant oil supplies the place of pomatum; and powder and civet can hardly furnish greater beaus. The ears of both sexes are bored, for the purpose of decorating them with beads, pearls, or other ornaments; and sometimes the aperture of the ear is stuck with an odoriferous flower. They never suffer a fly to touch their food, if they can by any means prevent it: should they happen to find one dead among their provisions, they throw it instantly to the hogs. To prevent the intrusion of these insects, they all carry fly-flaps, which are usually made of feathers, and fixed to a handle of wood ten or twelve inches long: Whenever you enter a house or place where provisions are preparing, this is the first thing they offer you.

Here, as well as elsewhere, there are some who make a trade of beauty, and know how to make it turn to their advantage; they have procurers, nominal relations, who agree for and receive the price of prostitution. The women of rank allow themselves greater liberties than their inferiors; and many of the arreoy women pride themselves on the number of their admirers.

They delight in dogs, especially those with a bushy tail, the hair of which they use in their fine breast-plates; the women not only fondle the puppies, but often suckle them at their breasts. The women must not eat with the men, nor drink out of the same cup; and many kinds of food are utterly forbidden them. If a man touch their peculiar food, they are obliged to throw it away.

They are not accustomed to regular meats, but usually eat as soon as they rise at day-break. Some are extremely voracious, especially the chiefs, who all live luxuriously. They have more wives than one, amidst the scarcity of women; they drink the yava daily: and when they are asleep, they are fanned and chafed by their women. Their mode of salutation differs considerably from ours; they touch noses; and wonder at our expressing affection by wetting each other's faces with the lips.

Swimming in the surf affords singular delight to the Otaheiteans: at this sport both sexes are extremely dexterous; and the diversion is reckoned great in proportion as the surf runs highest, and breaks with the greatest violence. In the course of this amusement they sometimes run foul of each other, when many are swimming together, those who are coming on being unable to stop their motion, and those moving the contrary way incapable of keeping their sufficient distance; they are frequently conveyed together by the rushing wave, and hurled on shore before they can disembarrass themselves. The women are excellent in this sport, and Iddeah, the queen's mother, is said to be the most expert in the whole island. The children take the same diversion in a weaker surf, learning to swim almost as soon as they can walk; and seldom meet with any accident, except that of being dashed upon the beach.

Their amusements on shore are, throwing the spear or javelin; shooting with bows and arrows, wrestling, dancing, and several other games; in all of which the women engage as well as the men. They frequently exercise at quarter-staff; and practice the sling for amusement, as well as employ it in battle. Their dances are various. The houses in which the heivas are performed are open at the ends and in front. Any number of women may perform at once; but as the dress is very expensive, seldom more than two or four dance. The pounara, or evening dance, is performed by any number of women, of any age, who choose to attend at the place appointed, which is usually the cool shade. They appear in their best apparel, and their heads are ornamented with wreaths of flowers.

END OF THE MISSIONARY VOYAGE.

Drawn & Engraved by J. Russell.

London Published Jan. 13, 1830 by J. Stratford No. 112, Holborn Hill.

AN ACCOUNT

OF THE

EARL OF MACARTNEY'S EMBASSY

FROM

THE KING OF GREAT BRITAIN,

TO THE

EMPEROR OF CHINA.

Including Observations made in travelling through that ancient Empire, and a Part of Chinese Tartary. Together with a Relation of the Voyage undertaken on the Occasion, by the LION and the HINDOSTAN; as well as of their Return to Europe.

Abridged chiefly from the Papers of his Excellency the EARL OF MACARTNEY, *Knight of the Bath, his Majesty's Embassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary to the Emperor of China; Sir* ERASMUS GOWER, *Commander of the Expedition, and of other Gentlemen appointed in the Embassy. By Sir* GEORGE STAUNTON, *Baronet, Secretary to the Embassy.*

LORD MACARTNEY was a nobleman whose reputation was established for talent, integrity, and aptitude for business. Few men had been tried in a greater variety of situations; he was perhaps the only man whose conduct (on his return from a high station in India) the opposite parties in the legislature, united in applauding; and his friends enjoyed the satisfaction of hearing his eulogy pronounced, from the mouths of the two great opposing leaders in the House of Commons. When he was formerly his Majesty's envoy at Petersburgh, he concluded an advantageous commercial treaty to subsist for twenty years. His lordship afterwards exerted both prudence and address, for the public advantage, in different quarters of the globe. He had subsequently indeed declined the government-general of Bengal, of which the power and the profit exceed any other within the recommendation of the ministry. But a visit to the court of Pekin was, on many accounts, so uncommonly inviting, and presented so much to an ardent and inquisitive mind, that, upon the first intimation, he readily engaged in the attempt. It behoved the British administration, therefore, to select a person of tried prudence, and of long experience in distant courts and countries, to enter upon a business of so much delicacy and difficulty.

His lordship made no stipulation with government, on accepting this employment; but he was permitted to select a friend to accompany his lordship, as his Majesty's secretary of the embassy, and eventual successor to the Embassador. His lordship's recommendations were accepted in every other department of the embassy. Though Pekin lies on the same side of the equator as London, with a difference of only eleven degrees of latitude, the passage by sea was thought most practicable, though it is so circuitous as to be more than thrice the actual distance between China and Great Britain.

On this occasion the first Lord of the Admiralty, supposing one of his Majesty's ships could not be better employed in time of peace, determined that a sixty-four gun ship should carry the Embassador out and home; and gave his lordship the privilege of nominating the commander. To every branch of the sea-service, Captain, now Sir Erasmus Gower, was generally known to be equal. Independently of the military exertions of this spirited and able officer, he had twice been round the world at an early age, and materially contributed to surmount the

the evils incident to such perilous and protracted voyages. At Lord Macartney's desire, he was appointed to the command of the Lion Man of War, and gratified with a selection of his own officers. Innumerable applications were made to serve under him on this occasion; and young gentlemen of the most respectable families, glowing with all the ardour and enterprize of youth, were admitted in the Lion, considerably beyond the usual complement of midshipmen.

A military guard was also appointed to attend the person of the Embassador, as practised in eastern embassies, not so much for the purposes of safety, as to add dignity to the mission; consisting of picked men from the infantry and artillery, in order to convey some idea of the European art of war, and be an interesting spectacle to the Emperor of China. It was, however, an indispensible precaution to maintain strict disciple among these men to prevent their being guilty of any excesses, which might appear flagrant in the eyes of the orderly Chinese, and tend to confirm the prejudices already inbibed against the English.

This object was secured, by putting the guard chosen for this purpose, under the command of good and attentive officers. There were also attached to the embassy, a professed painter and draughtsman. In Dr. Gillan, the embassy was provided with a skilful physician, a desirable circumstance for persons destined to pass through a variety of climates; especially as the Chinese are supposed to be far behind Europeans, in every kind of science. The doctor was also deeply versed in chemistry. Dr. Scot, a gentlemen of abilities and experience was appointed surgeon, having long served in that capacity in the navy. Dr. Dinwiddie, and Mr. Barrow, were conversant in many branches of the mathematics, and well qualified to be useful on such an expedition. Two botanic gardeners were provided at the public expence, and one at the expence of an individual of the embassy, principally for the purpose of collecting specimens of whatever productions nature might furnish in the course of the expedition.

A Chinese interpreter and translator was now much wanted, but they knew not where to procure a person capable of serving in that capacity. After much difficulty and enquiry, however, Sir William Hamilton, his Majesty's minister at Naples procured two Chinese of amiable manners, and of a virtuous and candid disposition, as well as perfectly qualified to interpret between their native language and the Latin or Italian, which the Embassador understood, who accompanied the secretary of the embassy on his return to England, in May 1792, to embark for China.

They began, from what they knew of their own country, to suggest some of the fittest preparations for an expedition thither. In the choice of presents, for the Emperor and his court, they mentioned what they conceived would be most acceptable; as extraordinary pieces of ingenious mechanism, set in frames of precious metal, studded with jewels, &c. Most of these expensive articles found their way, finally into the palaces of the Emperor, and his ministers; having been obtained by the Mandarines of Canton for the promise of protection to their inferiors, they were, after some time, transmitted by them to Pekin, in expectation of procuring the favour of their superiors.

The East India Company appointed one of the most commodious ships in the service, under the command of Captain Mackintosh to carry out such presents, and such persons, belonging to the embassy, as could not be conveniently accommodated on board the Lion; and a smaller vessel was provided as a tender. Three commissioners had lately been selected by the East India Company, to regulate their affairs at Canton, who were to communicate there, with due solemnity, the intended mission of Lord Macartney, and to deliver a letter, expressive of this intention, from Sir Francis Baring, Chairman of the Court of Directors, in so public a manner to the viceroy of Canton, as to prevent its being kept from the knowledge of the Emperor, if the viceroy should be so inclined.

This letter of Sir Francis stated that, "his sovereign, having heard that it had been expected his subjects, settled at Canton, should have sent a deputation to the Court of Pekin, to congratulate the Emperor on his entering the eightieth year of his age; but that such deputation not having been dispatched, he expressed great displeasure thereat; and, being desirous of cultivating the friendship of the Emperor of China, and of improving the connection and intercourse between the courts of London and Pekin, and extending the commerce between their respective subjects, had

had resolved to send his cousin and counsellor Lord Macartney, a nobleman of great virtue and ability, as his Embassador to the Emperor of China, to represent his person, and to express a desire that a perpetual harmony and alliance might be established between the Emperor and his Britannic Majesty; and that the Embassador, with his attendants, should soon set out upon the voyage; and, having several presents for the Emperor, from his Britannic Majesty, which, from the nicety of their mechanism, could not be conveyed through the interior of China, to so great a distance, without the risk of damage, he should proceed directly, in one of his Majesty's ships, properly attended to the port of Tien-sing, as near as possible to the residence of the Emperor of China." And Sir Francis concludes the letter by requesting "the information thus given, to be conveyed to the court of Pekin, expecting that imperial orders would be issued for the proper reception of the King of Great Britain's ships, with his Embassador and suite, as soon as they should appear at Tiensing, or the neighbouring coasts."

The presents mentioned in that letter were so choice and valuable, that they were, to some persons, supposed to be calculated for some very extraordinary purpose. One of the members of the diplomatic corps, still holding the exploded prejudice of the jealousy of commerce, failed not to attribute to the British administration, and East India Company, a design of engrossing the whole trade of China, by the exclusion of all other foreigners; and proposed a counter embassy to avert the evil.

The general scope, however, of the present mission, cannot be better ascertained than by his Majesty's private instruction to his Embassador, in which it is observed, that "more of his subjects, than of any other Europeans, had been long trading in China; that the commercial intercourse between other nations and that great empire had been preceded, accompanied, or followed, by special communications with its sovereign. Others had the support of missionaries, who, from their eminence in science, or their great ingenuity, had been frequently admitted to the familiarity of a polished court, and whilst they were zealous for the propagation of their faith, were supposed not to be unmindful of the views and interest of their country; while the English traders remained unaided, and at a distance so remote, as to admit of a misrepresentation of the national character and importance. That, under these circumstances, it became incumbent on his Majesty to extend his paternal regard to these his distant subjects, and to claim the Emperor of China's protection for them, with that weight which is due to the requisition of one great sovereign from another; that, a free communication with a singular people, among whom civilization had existed, and the arts been cultivated, through a long series of ages, was worthy of being sought by the British nation;" but that, in seeking to improve a connection with China, no views were entertained but those of the general interests of humanity, the natural benefit of both nations, and the protection of commerce under the Chinese government."

With equal candour, it is said in his Majesty's letter to the Emperor of China, that, "the disposition of a great and benevolent sovereign, like his imperial Majesty, whom Providence had graciously seated upon the throne for the good of mankind, was to protect the peace and security of his dominions, and disseminate happiness, virtue, and knowledge among his subjects; extending the same beneficence, with all the peaceful arts, as far as he was able, to the whole human race." That, "his Britannic Majesty, ever impressed with such sentiments, when he found his people engaged in war, had granted to his enemies, after obtaining many victories over them, the blessings of peace, upon the most equitable conditions." That, "since that period, not satisfied with promoting the prosperity of his own subjects, he had also taken various opportunities of fitting out ships, and sending ingenious men in them, for the discovery of distant and unknown regions, not with a view of enlarging his dominions, nor for the purpose of acquiring wealth, but for the sake of increasing the knowledge of the habitable globe; and for communicating the arts and comforts of life, to those parts, where they had hitherto been but little known: that he felt, above all, an ardent desire to become acquainted with those institutions of his Chinese Majesty's populous and extensive empire, which had excited the admiration of all surrounding nations." That "his Britannic Majesty, being then at peace with all the world, thought no time could be so propitious for extending the bounds of friendship and benevolence,

lence, and for proposing reciprocal benefits, which must naturally arise from an amicable intercourse between such great and civilized nations as China and Great Britain."

The object of this embassy was, indeed, so little limited to mercantile concerns at Canton, that Lord Macartney had discretionary power to visit ever other country in the Chinese Archipelago, from whence important imformation could be derived; he was therefore furnished with embassadorial powers addressed to the Emperor of Japan, and the King of Cochin-china, with a general commission to all princes and states, where he might occasionally touch in the Chinese seas.

Every thing, at length, being ready, and the ships at Portsmouth, all those persons who were in the suite of the Embassador, to the amount of about one hundred persons, including musicians, artificers, &c. joined his excellency there in September 1792, in order for embarkation. This collection of individuals had just quitted their former stations, and closest connections, to engage in a hazardous, but interesting enterprize; impelled by the strong incentive of curiosity, and eager to indulge the spirit of enquiry, they contemplated China at a distance. They willingly withdrew from the consideration of Europe and its events; feeling no regret but where the affections of nature intervened, when it was announced that the wind and weather were favourable for departure.

SECTION II.

Passage to Madeira—Observations on that Island—Passage to Teneriffe, and to St. Jago—Remarks on those Islands.

THE Lion and Hindostan, freighted with the Embassador and his suite, set sail from Portsmouth on the 26th of September, 1792; as did the Jackall brig, intended to serve as a tender to the Lion. The course of the voyage to China, immediately from Portsmouth, leading through the British Channel to the westward, required a wind which blows less frequently than others, and for a shorter continuance. Sir Erasmus Gower availed himself of such a wind, as soon as it took place, and the Embassador, anxious to have the whole benefit of it, to clear the channel, opposed his own inclination, though an invitation had been sent to him to stop at Weymouth, where their majesties then were. The weather, however, did not long continue moderate. The ships, in the darkness of the night, soon lost company of the tender, and they were themselves compelled to take shelter in Torbay. In the delay of two days here, which an adverse wind made necessary, the arrangements for the future voyage were made, to the general satisfaction*.

It must be admitted, indeed, that landsmen, reflecting on their situation when at sea, are conscious of their inferiority to seamen on this new element. They are unacquainted with the structure of the complicated machine which holds them, on the solidity and success of which depend the preservation of their lives. Such reflections as these, however, are slight and transitory, and hardly damp that happiness of which a passenger's life at sea is certainly susceptible†.

* In the vessels now devoted to the service of the Embassy, every comfort was provided. In the Lion, though burthened with the baggage and usual incumbrances of travellers, warlike-stores, and those required for navigation, sustenance for four hundred men including passengers and crew, for a considerable time to come, yet room was reserved for procuring many advantages of a residence upon land. Apartments were allotted and distributed among the principal passengers and officers, where they might partake of society, or withdraw to privacy, at their option; and the deck formed an open area, sufficiently capacious to allow the full enjoyment of air and exercise.

† Though the weather was extremely rough, very few were affected with sickness among the passengers in the Lion and Hindostan. A distinction appeared, on this occasion, in the temperaments of men, which their appearance did not in the least denote. The two gentlemen, who suffered most from sickness, were of an adult-age, of a frame sufficiently robust, had generally been healthy, and had already been at sea; while the honourable Mr. West, who was going in the Lion, to try the climate of Madeira for a consumption, was not affected with the most violent agitation of the ship.

On

On the 1st of October the ships set sail from Torbay, and stretching over from the hilly coast of Devonshire, soon beheld Britany, and the flat isle of Ushant; after which they saw no land for nine successive days. However usual such a situation is to every navigator, it is an awful spectacle for him for the first time; and the mind contemplates with admiration the ingenuity of man, in applying the quality of a particular fossil to the purpose of directing his way through the trackless ocean.

The English having at that time no enemy to apprehend or to attack, the progress of the voyage was not impeded by efforts to approach to, or to avoid them; and Sir Erasmus Gower, continued to steer, with favourable gales, in a direction parallel to Spain, Portugal, the Straits of Gibraltar, and the northern parts of Africa. Sir Erasmus observed, that all ships bound from Europe to Madeira, will perceive their way by a current or set, from the western ocean into the bay, formed between Ushant and Cape Finisterre, and into the Mediterranean. And from his observations, in five visits to Madeira, he supposes such current should be estimated to set south-east, about eleven miles in fifty leagues.

The ships steering their course by this estimate, assisted by several time-keepers and lunar observations, found themselves on the 10th of October in sight of Porto Santo and Madeira. Soon afterwards three very small islands, called the Desertas, were observed, of which the two most distant were little more than pointed rugged rocks. The third, named the Table Deserta, was elevated, but flat and in some degree cultivated: near it a rock rises perpendicularly out of the sea*.

The British government allows the contractors five shillings a ton for water, and sixpence a pound for beef for the use of the ships of war. The contract wine is too weak in quality to admit of keeping: the price is sixteen pounds for a ton, containing one hundred and twenty gallons. A fleet of twenty sail of men of war, may be completely supplied with refreshments here in the course of nine or ten days. Ships which are obliged to winter in Funchal road, should not be inattentive to the dark gloomy appearance of the weather to the southward, with a swell setting in, it being extremely dangerous to remain at anchor with those prognostics †.

Every honour and attention was paid, by order of the Portuguese governor, to the Ambassador, as well on board the Lion, as after he was landed. His excellency declined a military guard; but, yielding to the solicitation of the governor, he partook of an entertainment which was truly sumptuous, and to which were also invited the gentlemen in the suite of the Ambassador, the officers of the Lion and Hindostan, the merchants of the British factory, and several of the principal inhabitants of the island; amounting in the whole to about two hundred persons; but not one lady was present upon the occasion, except, in the beginning, the governor's daughter, a child of about ten years of age,

* Sir Erasmus advises, "all ships bound for the island of Madeira, to endeavour to make or steer for Porto Santo, and then proceed for the Brazen-head, or eastern point of the road of Fenchal, by going between it and the Desertas; off the northernmost of which is a high rock, frequently mistaken for a sail. The passage is about nine miles wide, but without soundings, except in very deep water, close to Madeira. The regulations of the port require all ships, before, or on entering, to send to the governor of the island an account of what they are, and their reasons for stopping there. Men of war are not permitted to send their boats to vessels coming into the road, till they are visited by the pratique-boat, whose business is to procure information whether any infectious disorder should be on board. The same caution is to be observed respecting vessels that are departing, which must not be boarded after the visiting officer has searched for natives leaving the island clandestinely, or for having prohibited goods. English men of war salute with thirteen guns, and are complimented with an equal number in return.

† On the first view, the island of Madeira appeared rocky, barren, and uncultivated; but on a nearer approach, its beauties expanded to the eye, and all was inviting and picturesque. The town is situated in a verdant valley, in which churches, and other white structures are interspersed, forming an agreeable contrast with the ever-green trees and plantations. Spring and summer are said to be the only seasons here, as heat and cold are seldom known to be so extreme as to be unpleasant. Having left England in the beginning of October, when vegetation, in many instances, began to fade, and announced the speedy droop of nature, its wild luxuriance in Madeira was the more striking, so soon afterwards, in that island: the whole creation seemed alive; myriads of insects were seen buzzing in the air; and swarms of lizards frisked along the ground in every direction. Hardly a plant was visible without fruit or flowers; every tree was in leaf; many of the humble herbs of Europe, approaching here to the size of shrubs. Nothing appeared languid or declining except man might be so considered. The common people had dark complexions, forbidding features, and were under the middle size of Europeans.

made her appearance, dressed in all the formality of a matron, and performed the honours of the table without embarrasment. At the desert, indeed, for which purpose fresh and cool apartments were appropriated, the governor's wife presided, she having been too much indisposed to endure the whole ceremonious task. She was addressed by the name of Donna Louisa, and her daughter by that of Donna Maria.

In the hall of the government house, the popular but doubtful story of the first discovery of Madeira was painted, by an Englishman, named Robert Macham, who lived near the conclusion of the reign of the third Edward. The particulars of this strange story, have, indeed, the testimony of Alcafarado, but de Barros, the Livy of the Portuguese, ascribes the Discovery of Madeira entirely to Gonzales Zarco, and Fristan Vas. The popular story, therefore, seems not entitled to a repetition.

Another native of Great Britain, Mr. William Johnstone, lately a merchant in Madeira, says the mean length of this island is about thirty-seven miles, and the mean breadth eleven miles, containing an area of 407 square miles, or 260,480 acres. It is divided into thirty-seven parishes, and contains about eighty thousand inhabitants. A considerable part of Madeira, however, seems incapable of cultivation; the sides of many of the hills being steep and rugged, and nearly destitute of soil*.

The chief produce of the island is the grape, from which are annually made about twenty-five thousand pipes of wine; half of which is exported to England, North America, and the East and West Indies: the remainder is consumed by the natives, either in its original state, or in spirit distilled from it. The grape of this island is generally white, and produces a white juice, but there are others that yield a deeper coloured juice, forming a red wine of the name of Tinto, of which a small proportion gives a darker tinge to the whiter juice. There is also a red skinned grape, called Bastarda, of which the juice is white: and, in some few soils, another grape is raised, from which the celebrated Malmsey wine is produced. The average price of every kind of wine is about fourteen pounds, which reduces the whole export value under two hundred thousand pounds; part of which is applied in the payment of manufactures from Great Britain, flour and salt-fish from America, and corn from the Western Isles, belonging, as well as Madeira, to the crown of Portugal.

The tyranny of the Inquisition is not upheld here as formerly; even the women are said to be less religious: none of them have taken the veil in Madeira for the last twenty years, though the influence of the Portuguese clergy was formerly so unbounded, that they governed every private family. The British factory has ever been protected from the attacks of the Inquisition; and is on the best terms with the governor and chief judge, to each of whom a small salary is allowed, by way of compliment.

The commercial houses in Madeira are open for the reception of all passengers, stopping for refreshments there, in their progress to Asia or America, if furnished with the slightest recommendation from any friend in Europe; and on the arrival of fleets, with many passengers, a continued round of entertainments and festivity ensues†.

Noxious animals, of any kind, are not known to exist in Madeira; no serpents, whether venomous or innocent; no hares or foxes. Salted cod, imported from America, is the common food among the poor, which it is supposed contributes much to the scorbutic eruptions on the skin, so common among the lower classes of the people here; who are also much afflicted with rheumatic complaints. The middle and higher classes experience paralitic affections, supposed to have been produced by indolence, repletion,

* Indolence is very prevalent in this island, particularly among the men, who are often basking in the sun, or stretching at their length upon their floors; while their wives and daughters are dispatched to a considerable distance upon the mountains, to cut down broom, which they load themselves with to sell at Funchal for fuel. Though the roads are wonderfully rough here, these women travel constantly bare-footed: the poverty of their food, consisting principally of pumpkins and salt-fish, added to their extreme labour, together with the warmth of the climate, give them all the appearance of age at a very early period of life.

† Among the most esteemed food at Madeira the hog must certainly be noticed: these animals are permitted to range wild amidst the mountains, when young, having been previously marked by their respective owners; they feed on nutricious roots, and are captured by dogs.

and

and the neglect of exercise. Intermittent fevers are not known in the island, where there are no marshes to produce them.

Sometimes the gusts of wind come down the mountains on the town of Funchal, with such violence as to unroof the houses; to prevent which they have a method of placing heavy stones upon the tiles, without reflecting on the danger of their rolling upon the people in the streets. Such perils, however, never intimidate gallants from giving, according to the custom of the mother country, nightly serenades under the latticed windows of a fair inhabitant*.

To Dr. Gillan it appeared that there had been several craters in the island, and that eruptions had taken place from them at very distant intervals: this was particularly manifest near the Brazen-head. As far, indeed, as external appearance can warrant a reasonable conjecture, the body of the island of Madeira may be considered as the summit of a primary mountain, from whence, at many subsequent periods, volcanic matter was exploded. The smaller islands of Porto Santo and the Desertas were originally joined to it, but have, in a variety of convulsions been separated from it, and the intermediate spaces have been covered with the sea.

The rocky shore of this island, and the violent surge continually beating on it, form a natural defence against invasion. What art has added to the capital, which extends three quarters of a mile along the beach, and nearly half a mile in depth, consists of four small forts; one situated at the eastern extremity of the beach of Funchal. This fort is so low as to be exposed to the fire of shipping. It is called Saint Jago: that of St. Lorenzo, near the western extremity of the town, is an irregular work, having three small bastions, and a battery towards the sea, and flanking the beach. This is occupied as the residence of the governor. A third, called Peak-Castle, is situated on a hill, at the north-west angle of the town, distant about a mile from the shore. It is difficult of access from the southward; but, when the hill above it is once gained, no formidable resistance could be expected from it. The fourth fort, which stands upon Loo rock, though higher than the largest ships, is not sufficiently so.

The Peak-castle seems, however, to afford the principal defence; being well built, and in tolerable repair; but it has no ditch. About twelve guns are mounted on it, of old English make, of different callibres and constructions. Peak-castle has a small armoury, containing about one hundred and fifty stand of arms, and three brass field pieces.

The forces on the island are one hundred and fifty artillery, and as many infantry; with two thousand militia. The regular troops are partly composed of the natives of Angola, a Portuguese settlement on the coast of Africa; pressed into the service from the most idle and disorderly inhabitants of the place.

Fresh meat, vegetables, a stock of good water, and wood for fuel, were procured within a single week for the Lion and Hindostan. The Jackall tender, which lost their company in the channel, had not yet joined them, but the Embassador wished to pursue his route without delay. His Excellency and suite, intent upon the object of arriving soon in China, quitted, with less regret, their amusements in Madeira. And, instructions being left for the Jackall, to proceed with all convenient expedition to Port Praya, in the island of Saint Jago, they embarked from Funchal, on the 18th of October, 1792.

Not far from the coast of Africa there are several clusters of islands and rocks, besides those mentioned in the preceding section, situated in different degrees of latitude, and near enough to the continent to be supposed to have been, at a very remote period, joined to it. The first cluster, which occurs in a southerly course from Madeira, are little more than rocks, called the Salvages, which are to be carefully avoided. Within one day's farther sail, lie another cluster, which the ancients named the Fortunate Isles, from the abundant fertility of the soil, as well as the salubrity of the climate. Without having lost the good qualities, significantly at first given them, they are now denominated the Canary Islands, belonging to the crown of Spain.

Next to them in succession, though far distant,

* The town has the advantage of streams running through the streets, but it is not kept very clean; it is said to contain about fifteen thousand people. An Almeyda, or mall, has lately been finished here. Population and cultivation are upon the increase, but the seasons are uncertain; the crop sometimes fails, and plunges the farmer into debt; but the lenient laws of this country, though they seize the property of the debtors, do not deprive them of their liberty.

are

are the Cape Verde Islands, so named from their vicinity to a continental cape with that appellation; the whole of which are subject to the king of Portugal. One of these islands is named St. Jago, where the Jackall tender had been ordered to follow Sir Erasmus Gower; and, to allow her time to overtake him there, as well as to procure better wine for the seamen of the Lion, than Sir Erasmus could get in Madeira at the contract price, he resolved to touch, in his way to Saint Jago, at Santa Cruz, in the island of Teneriffe, one of the Canaries. In proceeding to Teneriffe, Sir Erasmus Gower observed a constant current setting to the southward, at about the rate of one third of a mile an hour, being equal to twenty-five miles in the distance between that island and Madeira.

On the 20th of October, the Island of Teneriffe was seen through the haze, by the people of the Lion. The ships did not approach the land till the afternoon of the following day. The north-east of Teneriffe, called Punto de Nago, appeared, at about four leagues distance, to be a steep bluff point, not unlike the Brazen-head going into Funchal, though it is higher. The land, to the north or north-west, was rocky and irregular, and three rocky islands appeared detached from the main land. The island, called the Grand Canary, was seen lying to the south; and, to the south-east, the road and town of Santa Cruz. The Lion anchored in twenty fathoms, the south-east point of the island open, with the castle point bearing south-west by west, distant off shore about a quarter of a mile. The anchoring ground being very bad, in general, it is advisable, for ships that call at this place in the winter months, merely to procure refreshments, not to come to an anchor, but to stand off and on, sending a boat on shore to pursue the necessary forms with the governor, and to order supplies on board. Even in the summer months, it is necessary to buoy the cables.

This place is defended by batteries, and a line of musquetry towards the sea, and the surge is generally so high as to render it almost inaccessible to the boats. There is a good mole or pier, where boats may conveniently land in all seasons: the pier is also defended by a square fort, which appears in good condition; and there are forts and small batteries to the northward and southward of the mole.

Agreeably to the regulations of the port, no communication is allowed between the ships and shore, from the setting to the rising of the sun. Beef, mutton, pork, goats, poultry, fruit, and vegetables are good and reasonable. This place affords many advantages; the wine is of a stronger quality, and may be had at a cheaper rate than at Madeira*.

The markets here are stocked with a profusion of red grapes, though but few of white ones were seen; yet the wine, exported from Teneriffe, is generally of that colour. The season of vintage excites cheerfulness and activity, and the people in the streets partook of the general gaiety. This city is situated on an eminence, in an extensive and fertile plain. From higher grounds water is conveyed in fountains to Laguna, in an aqueduct composed of wooden troughs, and supported by poles properly fixed. The town of Ticoronte, with several adjacent little villages, formed a scene perfectly picturesque. The bosoms of the mountains were well cultivated, and their sides decorated with spontaneous plants of warm regions.

A heavy shower of rain overtook these travel-

* Two or three days being required for shipping a necessary supply of wine for the Lion, several of the passengers from that ship, as well as from the Hindostan, visited as much of the island as they could. The town of Santa Cruz, which is pleasantly situated, appeared not to be so crowded with inhabitants as that of Funchal, but it was cleaner, better laid out, and more compact. The well-built pier, stretching into the sea, the almeida along the quay, shaded with rows of trees, and the fountain adorned with marble statues in the square, denote a government attentive to the improvement of the place. The walks and rides in the neighbourhood of Santa Cruz, were more level and agreeable, than those in the vicinity of Funchal; and, from the lightness and purity of the air they breathed, they felt they were in a *fortunate* Island. A person, with whom some of these gentlemen entered into conversation, mentioned, as a received opinion, that the island contained several rich mines of gold; but that the king of Spain had commanded the search for them to be discontinued, lest they should prove a temptation to the English to get possession of the island.

The principal party from the ships took another course into the country, and visited the capital of the island, called Saint Christopher de Laguna. Here the courts of justice are held, though the governor now resides at Santa Cruz. The prisons of this capital were principally occupied by young females, who were accused of incontinency; a crime which the softness of the climate precipitates them into the commission of, though it is rigidly pursued by the ecclesiastical jurisdiction.

lers,

lers, amid the mountains, a little before noon: being driven for shelter among the habitations of a village, one of the occupiers informed them, that a similar shower falls about the same hour there almost every day throughout the year. At the bottom of these mountains, out of which rises the Peak of Teneriffe, is the villa or city, and the sea-port of Oratava is about three miles distant. The first is inhabited chiefly by persons of landed property; and at the second much commerce is carried on, principally for the exportation of wine.

From Oratava, the ascent of the mountain towards the Peak, is generally attempted. The time of the year, late in October, was, indeed, unfavourable to such an undertaking; but the ascent was not declared to be impossible. The opportunity to the same persons, would not probable recur, and they came to a determination to try their chance. The morning of October the 23d, was serene, and seemed to promise a good day. The huge cone of the Peak, towering above the fleecy clouds, seemed to overhang the city of Oratava, though several miles distant. The party set out about noon, and procceded through a pleasant vale, covered with vineyards: they soon began the ascent along the sloping side of a deep valley, on which a number of large chesnut-trees were observed; a few solitary huts were scattered on the edge of the mountain, almost concealed in the thick shrubbery which surrounded them.

Having passed the valley of chesnut-trees, they arrived at the summit of the Green, or first mountain, on which they found a level extensive plain, covered with lofty heath, interspersed with myrtle, laurel, and whortleberry shrub, all in great luxuriance, but no cultivation appeared to have been attempted by man; nor was any human habitation to be seen. At the termination of this plain a second mountain commenced, the sides of which were, steep, barren, and craggy. The road lay along a dangerous ascent on the brink of precipices: little verdure appeared, and a few pine trees were thinly scattered on its sides. Wild goats were the only quadrupeds which seemed to have residence on these mountains. The party continued to ascend, by rugged narrow paths, depending on the sure-footed mules for safety, till they arrived at the watering-place in the hollow of a huge rock, under the shade of a solitary pine.

Thibaut, a native of Turin, and an ingenious mathematical instrument-maker, attended the party, and found by the barometer that they had ascended, late in the afternoon, near six thousand feet above the town they quitted in the morning. But now the mountain began to be over-cast with clouds, from the hollows which intervened between the basis of the great cone and the second mountain, impetuous gusts of wind forcing and combating with each other, and seeming to prohibit any approach towards them*.

The party rose on the approach of day, little refreshed by repose, their clothes dripping with the rain which had fallen upon them. The summit of the mountain appeared only at a little distance, but the weather was tremendous; the wind being extremely boisterous, accompanied with deluging drops of rain. The point of the

* Throughout this second mountain were observed excavations resembling small craters of extinct volcanoes. Evening being now setting in, it became more difficult to trace out the usual path: the cold began to be unpleasant, the thermometer having fallen twenty-six degrees. The guides and muleteers proposed to halt; pronouncing it dangerous to advance farther, at least for that night. Promises and menaces were employed to induce them to proceed; they did so for another hour, to very little purpose; it then began to rain, the cold was more intense, and the wind more violent. The travellers were still at some distance from what had been named the Resting Place of the English. Thither they were extremely anxious to arrive, that they might reach the summit of the cone the next afternoon, if practicable. The guides, however, perceiving a tempest then approaching, in which they declared every unsheltered passenger must absolutely perish, insisted upon stopping on the spot, where they could secure themselves under the brow of a projecting rock. One of the party endeavoured to proceed up the hill on his mule, but finding it impossible to resist the impetuosity of the storm, thought it necessary to return to his companions. They had been supplied with a quantity of refreshments from Orotava, but they could only strew the ground with leafy branches of the Spanish broom, by way of beds to sleep on. They were a little sheltered from the wind, but not from the rain, which was frequent, but not violent: the air was keen, the thermometer at forty five degrees; but the branches of the cystius, which grew on this dreary mountain, proved to be excellent fuel, and readily produced a cheering blaze. An awful scene presented itself around them, as they lay under the grand canopy of heaven: the moon, then in its second quarter, shone with brilliancy, and the zenith happened to be clear, towards which the peak upreared its high and tapering point; whilst the base was lost in opaque rolling clouds, which whirled impetuously from thence into the vallies far below, reaching at last the ocean, over which some remained suspended, whilst others seemed incorporated with the waters.

upper cone was clear, but the conical frustum which supported it, was enveloped in thick clouds, rolling in rapid succession along its sides.

Some of the party, concurring in opinion with their guides, proposed to abandon the idea of proceeding farther; but Dr. Gillan, Dr. Scot, Mr. Barrow, and Mr. Hamilton, of the Hindostan, were strenuous for persevering in their attempt. The rest of them, however, all turned their eyes to Orotava, except a youth of about eleven years of age, who reluctantly separated from his more adventurous companions, to follow the retrograde steps of the person who had the care of him. Of the two guides, belonging to the party, one conducted the gentlemen going to Orotava, who, as they descended from the mountain, experienced a rapid change of climate as they approached the genial atmosphere below; such a change being little less astonishing than if, in that short space of time, they had suddenly been transported from Greenland, into the warm latitudes of the Pacific ocean; so much quicker is the transition, with regard to its effect, in a vertical than in an horizontal direction.

Before the travellers had reached the sea-port of Orotava, they passed through the city, or upper town, of the same name, neatly built of stone. Taking the dimensions of a large dragon's blood tree, growing near it, they found its trunk, at the height of ten feet from the ground, measured thirty-fix feet in girth; at the height of fifteen feet, this trunk divided itself into about a dozen branches, sprouting regularly, in an oblique direction upwards. Concerning this tree there was a tradition, very current in the island, that it existed, of no inconsiderable dimensions, when the Spaniards conquered Teneriffe, about three centuries ago; and that it was then, what it still remains, a land-mark to distinguish the boundaries of landed possessions in its vicinity.

The gentlemen who were anxious to pursue their journey upwards, were accompanied by the second guide. This man was a descendant of the Guanches, or original inhabitants, when invaded by the Spaniards in the fifteenth century. With this conductor, the four gentlemen above named, soon gained the summit of the mountain, from whence the great cone arose. On this summit another extensive plain appeared, not clothed with verdure, but loaded with huge masses of irregular black lava. The wind blew violently, the rain increased, and the apex of the peak began to be obscured with clouds. It now became extremely difficult for the mules to stem the current of the wind, or for the riders to insure their seats.

Having ascended about two thousand feet above the place where they had passed the night, the muleteers became refractory, and would not suffer the animals to be encouraged to proceed; the cold and sleet being then so excessive, that the reins could not be managed with steadiness or precision. By the violence of the tempest, Mr. Hamilton was literally blown from his horse. Dr. Scot, being extremely well mounted, boldly pushed forward, till he was lost to the rest, in the thickness of the mist. Dr. Gillan, in endeavouring to follow, had his mule forced by the wind to the edge of a steep precipice, where she fell into a bed of volcanic ashes, or both must have inevitably perished. No efforts could afterwards stimulate the animal to move forwards a step. Another ran under the shelter of a mass of lava, where he remained equally immoveable. As a last resource now left, the horses and mules were tied to the neighbouring rocks (the muleteers and guide having already disappeared) and they proceeded on foot, along a valley, whose ascent was gradual to the bottom of the great pyramid, from whence the peak arose, as from a second cone; but the difficulty of getting farther on, to persons already exhausted, was found to be insurmountable. Under all these circumstances, they returned to the place where they had left the cattle; whose faces where no sooner turned down the hill, than their ardour was found as difficult to restrain, as it had been to push them forward.

The party soon found themselves in the midst of very dense clouds, the contents of which were discharged upon them in torrents of heavy rain, which fell for about three hours: the weather soon afterwards cleared up, and the upper part of the peak appeared covered with snow*.

From

* As soon as they had reached Orotava, a fever confined Dr. Gillan to his bed, which had been brought on by the fatigues he had undergone: but care and attention, in the hospitable house of Mr. Little, soon restored him. The other

From this place they saw the town of Santa Cruz, and the shipping in the road, though distant, in a direct line, about twenty-five miles. At the foot of the Peak there were several caverns, in the midst of lava; some filled with pure water, extremely frozen, others, in winter, are filled with snow*.

The great height of the mountain of Teneriffe on which the intense cold produces abundance of ice, gives the inhabitants of the warmer climate below, an opportunity of using that substance to cool the wines for their own consumption. This is collected by the peasants, in winter, near the summit of the Peak, and preserved in caves where the cone begins to rise, from whence it is conveyed, in summer, to Orotava, and other places on the coast.

The exterior practices of devotion, in every dependency of Spain where the inquisition reaches, absorb much of the time which might otherwise be employed for the purposes of instruction. Religion is the principal business of the gentry of both sexes. Ladies of rank are seldom seen out of their own families, except in the churches at mass, matins, and vespers. The observance of religious duties is little interrupted in the Canaries, by pursuits of commerce. The net revenue of the crown, after defraying the expences of administration, of all the Canaries, amounts to about sixty thousand pounds a year. The monopolies, not the taxes, are said to be the greatest grievances of the inhabitants.

In his excursion through the island of Teneriffe, Dr. Gillan says, the appearances in it for volcanic formation and origin are more numerous and striking than at Madeira: all the stones of the beach, all the ground and rocks in the neighbourhood of Santa Cruz, are manifestly volcanic.

Teneriffe is about seventy miles in length, and twenty-two in breadth; the number of its inhabitants being calculated at about one hundred thousand; of whom, however, there is annually a drain to the Spanish colonies in South America, to increase the number of foreign settlers there. The poor of Teneriffe, being very scantily paid for their labour, are easily persuaded to emigrate, and they have not the resource of manufactures, except an insignificant one in silk. Besides corn and roots the subsistence of the common people is principally confined to cod-fish. They are not, however, very subject to disease; and instances of longevity, even to a hundred years, are not uncommon among them: the air is dry, and remarkably pure.

The native Canary bird is greyish, with a few yellow feathers on his breast, which increase in size and number with the age of the bird. But the Canary birds usually sold in England, are principally bred in Germany, and by domestication, are greatly altered from the wild natives of the Canaries; their notes are also less pleasing. Teneriffe is not the largest, though probably the most fertile of the Canary Islands.

On the 27th of October, the Lion and Hindostan continued their route from Santa Cruz towards Port Praya in the island of St. Jago. They met immediately with the trade winds, which blew over the ocean constantly from the eastward. The ships were therefore rapidly wafted beyond that portion of the globe, which was considered as dividing the temperate from the torrid zone: the latter would indeed deserve the name of uninhabitable, were it not for

other gentlemen partook of a ball in the evening, where their former sufferings were rewarded with the company of some agreeable English and Spanish ladies. On the following day the travellers returned to Santa Cruz.

The excursion to the Peak, sometimes so fatiguing in the attempt, and so difficult to accomplish, is often, attended with less difficulty. The prospect from the Peak is romantic and extensive, no other hill being of sufficient altitude to intercept the view: the north-west coast seems well cultivated, but the south-east appears dreary and barren. Within the summit an excavation or cauldron presents itself about eighty feet in depth, into which the gentlemen descended, and gathered some sulphur, with which the surface is covered. In many parts the foot cannot continue above a minute on the same spot, the heat penetrates so rapidly through the shoe; smoke also frequently issues from the earth. In the cauldron the sulphureous odour is very offensive.

* The storm experienced on the Peak of Teneriffe by this party, and which impeded their ascent at that time, was severely felt in the roads of Santa Cruz. "The winter," says Sir Erasmus Gower, "appeared to be there set in, but its approach was premature by at least a month. Several merchant vessels drove, or were dragged, from their anchoring ground, together with their anchors. The Hindostan lost two anchors, and, had the gale continued, might have been in danger of driving against the rocks."

those

those regular breezes which moderate the heat.

On the 2d of November in the afternoon the Isle of May appeared in sight: the north-east end of it was extremely low, not much above the level of the sea; the land rises, gradually, till it arrives at a volcanic mountain. At six the following morning the island of Saint Jago was discovered, and at noon the Lion anchored in Praya bay, in seven fathoms water. English men of war salute with eleven guns, relying on the return of an equal number. This bay has long been frequented by ships bound to the southward; as bullocks, sheep, hogs, goats, poultry, and fruit are plenty and reasonable. Fish was also caught in abundance with the seine. An excellent kind of rock-cod, was likewise taken from among the rocks with the rod and line.

From the ships' decks, the island now bore a brown appearance, but the verdure of the large leaves of the cocoa-nut, and other trees in the sand behind the beach, contributed to give it somewhat of the air of cheerfulness; but, as soon as the ships' boats had landed, a ghastly figure was seen, gliding hastily along the shore, which demonstrated the wretched situation of the island. It proved to be an English sailor, who had formerly been employed on board a Dutch East Indiaman, but had, by some accident, been left behind at Saint Jago. The island, he said, was absolutely in a state of famine; that very little rain had fallen there for three years before, and the rivers were all nearly dry. The surface of the earth was almost destitute of herbage, and the principal part of the cattle had already perished for want of sustenance; many of the inhabitants had emigrated, and others were absolutely famished. Even the figure of the miserable narrator was a striking confirmation, of the extreme distress he was attempting to describe. He admitted that he had not been long upon the island, but he had already suffered severely by the general want. He was without money, and had no occupation on shore. Of his scanty stock of common seaman's clothes, he gladly exchanged the chief articles, for roots, or any thing eatable, to support a wretched existence. English vessels, which called at Praya bay, since his arrival, refused to take him on board, because he had entered into foreign service. By a humane regulation of the British navy, a British sailor, left in foreign parts by British ships, is received on board any of his Majesty's ships which touch there; but this poor man was in a predicament which deprived him of that resource*.

The governor inhabits a small wooded barrack at the extremity of the plain, commanding a pleasant view of the bay and shipping. He received the Embassador, on his landing, with all the honours due to his dignified character, advancing a considerable distance to meet his excellency and conduct him to his residence. But having partook of the general distress of the country, arising from the drought which had so long prevailed, and rendered almost as barren as a rock, he had neither wine nor any other refreshments to present. Whatever was the cause, which thus arrested the bountiful hand of nature, by withdrawing the sources of fertility, it was remarkable that some few trees and plants continued to flourish luxuriantly, though a proper portion of humidity for the purpose of vegetable life was partially denied to others. A few verdant palm-trees, notwithstanding a general devastation, continued to flourish amidst the burning sands. The Asclepias gigantea, remarkable for its milky but corrosive juice, was rich in flower, and undisturbed: the jatropha curcas, or physic nut tree, not improperly called by the French West Indians *bois immortel*, had received no check. Some indigo plants, in shaded vales, were still cultivated with success, and a few cotton shrubs experienced great indulgence. The mimosa, or sensitive plant, growing to the magnitude of trees, did not appear to languish; and the annona, or sugar apple-tree, remained

* On a sandy beach, a little to the right of Saint Jago, close to the rock at the foot of an elevated plain, are the ruins of a once elegant Romish chapel, perhaps erected there by the grateful piety of some person who had providentially escaped shipwreck. On the same plain the town or hamlet of Praya is situated, the residence of the governor-general for the crown of Portugal. It contains about one hundred small habitations, one story high, promiscuously scattered. Not being commanded by any neighbouring eminence, it had been thought a situation capable of defence, and was now a sort of battery, nearly in a state of ruins. The militia consisted of three regiments, of about seven hundred men each; of whom the officers were chiefly negroes or mulattoes. The prison was the most superb building, and next to that the church, of which a dark-coloured mulatto officiated as priest.

in

in perfect verdure. The borassus, or great fan palm, in some places, reared its lofty head, and expanded leaves with undiminished beauty. In a bottom, behind the town of Praya, was still exhibited, in a healthy state, a phenomenon in vegetation, a tree known to botanists by the name of adansonia, and in England by the Monkey Bread Tree. Its trunk measured, at the base, fifty-six feet in girth, which soon divided into two vast branches, one measuring forty-two feet in circumference, and the other about twenty-six*.

Some of the party, who had visited the secretary's garden, made a longer excursion afterwards, crossing the country, to the town and former capital of the island, and which is also called St. Jago. The soil, as far as they went, seemed naturally fertile, and exhibited the marks of tillage, but looked as if it had suffered by the ravages of fire. A few lank meagre cattle, hardly capable of moving, excited their astonishment that they should still exist, so little nourishment could they derive from the scorched surface of the earth. They traversed a small river almost dried up, the little remaining of the stream losing itself gradually among the pebbles. On each side of this little stream structures are still remaining of considerable solidity and size; and the fragments of glass lustres, still hanging from the ceilings of the principal apartments, point out the elegance which was once displayed in these now deserted mansions. About half a dozen families, at present constitute the whole of their population; the rest had perished, or abandoned their situation, though almost hopeless of procuring a better.

Amidst the ruins of Saint Jago they found a Portuguese, to whom one of the party was recommended, who hospitably received them all in his house, and treated them with variety of tropical fruits. But all the islands of Cape de Verde had experienced a similar state of desolation: they are about twenty-two in number, and their present reduced population hardly exceeds forty-two thousand: of whom twelve thousand are supposed to be contained in the island of Saint Jago; eight thousand in Bonavista; seven thousand in the isle of May; six thousand in that of Saint Nicholas; four thousand in San Antonio; about the same number in San Phelippe de Fuego; five hundred in the isle of Brava; and still fewer in the remaining isles, not specified.

The scanty supply of provisions they had to dispose of to the Lion and the Hindostan, could be no inducement to delay: the water was not good, nor easily to be procured; it was drawn from wells, and that which afforded the best was at least five hundred yards from the beach. Sir Erasmus Gower recommends it to be drawn early in the morning, as it is soon afterwards disturbed by the neighbouring inhabitants, who take considerable quantities of it away.

They had now been five days at Praya bay, and the Jackall had not made her appearance. It was therefore determined to prosecute the voyage without her; and on the 8th of November the two ships accordingly set sail for the island of Saint Jago.

SECTION III.

Passage of the Line—Course across the Atlantic—Harbour, City, and Country of Rio de Janeiro.

THE settlements on the coast of South America generally afford abundance of refreshments, which are not always to be met with in other places; the Lion and Hindostan therefore directed their course to the port of Rio de Janeiro, a rich province of Brazil which promised

* The governor's secretary invited some of the gentlemen from the Lion to his gardens, distant about two miles. They were agreeably surprised with beholding a small clear rivulet, shaded by a fine fig-tree, not that of Europe with rough and deep indented leaves, but another species with entire long leaves, and of which the fruit was perfectly delicious. Wherever the transparent current ran, every species of vegetable near it flourished: among others, the maniota, or cassadre tree, made its appearance, whose expressed juice from the root is deadly poison, while the root itself is salutary food; as is also the sediment, deposited from the poisonous juice, being the substance sold in England under the name of tapioca.

every advantge. The weather continued hazy and sultry for some time, and many of the seamen, who suffered in Praya bay, were still indisposed on board. They had not much rain nor lightning to clear the atmosphere: hence mortality often rages; and ships of war, thronged with men, frequently lose no inconsiderable proportion of their complement. But Sir Erasmus Gower established such methods and regulations for ensuring cleanliness, and a constant circulation of fresh air, as contributed materially to preserve his people. Attention was also paid to the people's diet, by mixing a due proportion of vegetable matter with their animal food; and no spirituous liquors were allowed without a reasonable admixture of water with them.

The steadiness of the trade left little to occupy the hands or attention of the seamen, respecting the manoeuvres of navigation; other means were therefore had recourse to, that moderate exercise might not be omitted: some were employed in working the several ventilators, and others in cleaning every apartment and division of the ship. Many were employed in sewing new sails, or piecing those which had been torn; and some in repairing their own apparel; combining thus the oeconomy of individuals with that of the public service.

By these employments and amusements the men gradually recovered, and were in a condition to enjoy the festivities usual on the passage of the line. The lower orders of mankind, who know little of life except its labours, are not easily forgetful of any occasion, recurring to them so seldom, of enjoying a momentary gleam of happiness, which reconciles them to subsequent subordination. This consideration induced Sir Erasmus Gower to permit the ship's company to indulge themselves on this occasion: the navigators arrived under the equator, about eleven o'clock on Sunday the 18th of November, when the amusements on the passage of the line began. A sailor of a good appearance and a manly countenance, habited in imitation of the sea-god Neptune, and armed with a trident, his garment dripping with the element over which he reigns, appeared standing at the ship's head, as if he had just risen from the ocean. With an audible voice, he demanded the name of the vessel which was thus encroaching upon his dominions. An answer being given from the quarter-deck, where the embassador, Sir Erasmus Gower, the officers, and passengers were all assembled, announced the ship's name, and purport of the voyage. After which Neptune, properly attended, advances with great solemnity towards them, and, addressing his excellency, presents him a fish recently caught, as part of the produce of the deity's domains. His godhead was very respectfully treated by the whole company, and silver offerings were voluntarily made to him, for himself and his companions, by those who had crossed the line before; but which were rigourously exacted from others who had not, under the penalty of going through ceremonies not a little ludicrous. A plentiful repast, accompanied with the music of the bagpipe, and copious libations of exhilirating liquor, terminated this aquatic ceremony*.

Rio de Janeiro is hardly to be excelled for the extent and security of its harbour, or its convenience for commerce, as well as the fertility of the circumjacent country. The shores of the harbour are diversified and embellished with villages, farms, and plantations, separated by rivulets, and ridges of rocks, the whole terminated, in distant prospect, by an amphitheatre

* To keep up the charter, however, some novitiates are usually fixed on as victims for the ceremonial. It consisted of an ablution, to be performed in one of the ship's boats, filled with water, into which the party is plunged blindfold. After he has suffered a complete ducking, he is lathered and shaved by Neptune's tonsor, with a wooden razor. This operation is performed so solemnly and scientifically, as to excite, in the by-standers, the most convulsive peals of laughter.

In the neighbourhood of the line a stagnated atmosphere often suffers the equinoctial heat to act forcibly on the human frame; but in the present voyage there was very little calm: the south-eastern breeze was steady: the horison appeared nearer to the eye, and the clouds descended to the proximity of the ocean; they seemed to approach towards it, and to attract a part of its contents in the form of water-spouts. Few birds were observed in this passage, and very few fish were caught; a shark indeed was harpooned, whose wide-gaping jaws denoted the voracity of its nature, but it was destitute of lungs. A beautiful dolphin, which was conveyed on board, demonstrated how wonderfully this fish varies in colours, from yellow to blue and purple, in the several gradations of the agonies of death.

The equator was crossed in the 25th degree of western longitude from Greenwich, with a fresh breeze from the south-east.

of

of mountains, rising in a vast variety of forms, whose summit are covered with trees *.

The opulence and commercial importance of the place, appears by its Manchester manufactures, magazines, and every species of British manufacture: every thing at Rio denoted the thriving condition of the place, and the appearance of individuals was that of ease and comfort. Their habitations were, for the most part, in good condition, and many of them judiciously calculated for the climate. Besides the aqueduct, and other public buildings, already mentioned, here are also several public walks: and upon the beach, opposite the palace, a spacious quay of granite delights the observer †.

Men of the lower classes of society generally wear cloaks: the middling and higher ranks never appear without swords. The ladies wear their hair hanging down, in double tresses, tied with ribbands, and adorned with flowers: their heads are uncovered. They are extremely regular in their visits to the churches, both at matins and vespers: at other times they are usually at their windows or balconies. Many of them have fine dark eyes, with animated countenances, and their favourite musical instrument is the harpsichord or the guitar. The doors and windows, on these occasions, are thrown open for the admission of cool air, and they sometimes shew instances of extreme levity. If a stranger happens to make a pause to listen to the music, it is not uncommon for the father, husband, or brother of the lady who is playing, to step out and politely invite him to walk in. Ladies sometimes appeared with bunches of flowers in their hands, which they would exchange with gentlemen who are passing by: this may probably be in imitation of the Lisbon ladies, who, on what are called *days of intrusion*, throw nosegays from their balconies at persons walking under them. Company often met at a public garden, at one extremity of the town, near the sea-side. This garden was enriched with shrubberies and parterres, interspersed with spreading trees, and decorated with arched alcoves, jessamines, and other fragrant plants and flowers. In these recesses, during the dry season of the year, the gay society of Rio, after their evening promenade, partook of banquets, rendered more enchanting by vocal and instrumental harmony, accompanied with the display of artificial fire-works. Near the centre of the garden a large fountain of rock-work, with sculptural figures of two alligators, spout-

* The city of St. Sebastian, called also Rio, is built on a projecting tongue of land, four miles to the westward of the harbour. A convent of Benedictines, and a fort commanding the town, are situated on the extreme point, jetting into the harbour. Opposite to this is the Ilheo dos Cobras, or Serpent Island; and upon this island naval storehouses, and magazines are found in great abundance. Round its shores are the usual anchoring places for shipping which frequent the port. Rio has lately been considerably improved; many modern structures having been erected of hewn stone. The streets are well paved; particular attention being paid to the introduction of narrow foot-paths to procure the shade in so hot a climate. Refreshing fountains embellish and improve the squares; an aqueduct of considerable length supplying those fountains with the cooling and transparent fluid. A guard constantly attends at the fountains throughout Rio, to regulate the distribution of it. Sir Erasmus Gower admits the quality of this water to be remarkably good, and attributes the contrary opinion of Captain Cook to some accidental impurities remaining in the casks.

† The town is, however, thought insalubrious from local circumstances, and instances of longevity are extremely rare. It is situated on a plain, and nearly surrounded with hills covered with thick forest trees; which not only prevent a free circulation of the air, but occasion humidity in the mornings and evenings. From this cause, as well as from stagnant water in marshes near the town, arise putrid intermittent fevers.

No real or imaginary danger, however, curbs the propensity of society here towards pleasure. This city contains three convents for men, and two for the other sex; but none of them are remarkable for the austerity and self-denial supposed to have been intended by their original institution. Though the conquest of the country originally was undertaken for the avowed purpose of converting the natives to christianity, and ample endowments have been made for maintaining friars to preach the gospel to these infidels, yet not one of the former was now engaged in such a troublesome, unsafe, und perhaps hopeless enterprize. Neither the friars, nor the nuns of this place seemed disposed to run into the gloomy recesses of devotion; and nothing could be more gay or sprightly than the conversation of the latter, with strangers at the convent gates. There were but two booksellers in Rio; and their shops contained only books of medicine and divinity. But the religious system which once held its empire here, was now slackened and wearing out: no inquisition, or tribunal of the holy office, as it is called, was established in the Brazils. The ceremonies of religion, indeed, were strictly observed, and an addition had been made to them by ringing of bells, and the launching of sky-rockets, announcing, at every hour, some solemnity performing in the churches; and after sun-set the streets were crowded with processions. At every corner was stuck up, in a glass case, the image of the Virgin Mary, to which homage was regularly paid by those who approached it.

ing

ing water into a marble bason, arrested the attention of the multitude; in which aquatic birds, well imitated in bronze, were seen sportively indulging themselves.

At the extremities of the terrace on the side of the garden next the sea, two summer-houses were erected. Paintings representing views of the harbour, and of the whale fishery that was formerly carried on within it, were observed. The ceilings were ornamented with various designs, and the cornices exhibited the several species of fish peculiar to the country, in shell-work. On the walls are eight large paintings, though indifferently executed, emblematic of the principal productions which raised that country to its opulence, including views of the diamond and gold mines, and the manner in which they were worked; of the cultivation of the sugar-cane, with the processes for extracting its juice, and granulating it into sugar.

Contiguous to the shore, and not far from the town, another garden is exhibited, intended originally for promoting the progress of botany, but now principally curious for a small manufacture of cochineal. It was supposed that the insect which forms this dye at Rio, is not the same as that noticed by Linnæus, under the name of coccus cacti coccinelliferi, which is described as flat on the back, with black legs, and tapering or awl-shaped horns or attenna. The insect of Rio is convex, with legs of a bright red, in both male and female, and the attenna moniform, or bead-like. The male is a beautiful insect, the colour of the whole body of a bright red: the breast is elliptical, and slightly attached to the head; the legs are of a more brilliant red than that of the other parts; two fine white filaments, about three times the length of the insect, project from the extremity of its abdomen. The wings, which are erect, are two, of a faint straw colour, and of a delicate texture. The female has no wings, is of an elliptic form, and convex on both sides, but more so at the back, which is covered with a white downy substance resembling very fine cotton. The mouth is situated in the breast, having a brown beak, inclining to a purple tint, which penetrates the plant the insect feeds upon. It becomes pregnant about twenty days after its birth, and dies after bringing forth an innumerable minute offspring. For the space of about twenty-four hours they appear without life or motion, but soon afterwards shew signs of animation, and move with some agility over the surface of the leaf, on which they had been deposited by the mother. At this time they appear, through a magnifier, like small specks of red unshapen matter. With the increase of size they decrease in motion; and when they arrive at their full growth they adhere to the leaf in a torpid state. At this period they are taken from the plant for use: if they are suffered to remain, they will deposite their young, as already mentioned. Various cells, of a cylindric form, standing perpendicularly on the surface of the leaf, are discovered among the clusters of these insects, enveloped in their cotton. These cells are the chrysalides of the male, out of which the wings, in their nascent state, make their first appearance, and are visible about three days before the insect is in a state of completion or maturity. It enjoys existence, in that state, only three or four days, during which it impregnates the females. The plant, on which this insect feeds, is a species of the cactus, or prickly pear; probably the cactus opuntia of Linnæus*.

Within the harbour, and opposite the town, another species of manufacture is carried on, of which an exclusive privilege was given to a company on paying a fifth of its profits to the crown. It is for converting the blubber of whales into oil. The white whale, which supplies the spermaceti, is often sought for as far as the Pacific Ocean; an English ship from those seas, lately came into Rio harbour for refreshments. She had taken sixty-nine whales, each worth, on an average, two hundred pounds.

* The conversion of the insects into cochineal, is a very simple process; but if in corporeal sufferance, *the poor beetle feels a pang as great as if a giant dies*, the process is as cruel as it is simple. They are placed alive, in a flat earthen dish, over a charcoal fire, where they are slowly roasted till the downy covering disappears, and the aqueous juices of the animal are totally evaporated. During this operation they are continually stirred about with a tin ladle, and sometimes water is sprinkled upon them, to prevent absolute torrefaction, which would destroy the colour, and reduce the insect to ashes. The garden of Rio produces annually about thirty pounds weight of this commodity; though by proper treatment, from the same number of plants, ten times the quantity might be obtained. The insects breed, and are collected in dry weather, from October till March.

At a place called Val Longo, in another part of the harbour of Rio, are warehouses for the reception and sale of slaves from Angola and Benguela, on the coast of Africa. Out of twenty thousand, purchased annually for the whole of the Brazils, Rio took five thousand, of which the average price was twenty pounds sterling each. A duty of ten thousand rees a-head is paid to the Queen of Portugal's agent there; the whole amounting to about sixty thousand pounds per annum, which goes into her privy purse. The whole of the Brazils are supposed to contain about two hundred thousand slaves, born in Africa, or descended from those who were: the whites are estimated at two hundred thousand. The proportion of blacks to whites in Rio was supposed to be much greater.

Whatever may be the sufferings of slaves upon plantations, those who were resident in this town exhibited no proofs of wretchedness. The human frame feels fewer wants, and has fewer miseries to encounter in a warm climate than in a cold one. The spontaneous bounty of nature supplies food more readily in warmer, than in colder climates. The Africans seem naturally of a gay and active disposition, and are easily reconciled to their situation, and enjoy whatever share of pleasure comes within their reach. Many slaves were the property of the crown, of whom about ten thousand were employed in the Diamond mines. The Benedictines alone had a thousand upon their plantations*.

In the vicinity of Rio the roads were not passable many miles for carriages. Little industry appears to have been exerted in the cultivation of the soil or the improvement of the country. It consisted chiefly in raising garden vegetables for the whites, and rice and manioc for the blacks.

The cultivated valley of Tijouca merits observation, situated in a kind of bottom of a funnel, surrounded on all sides by mountains, excepting to the southward, where a small opening admitted an arm of the sea. This valley is watered by a clear stream, which precipitated down a steep and broad rock of granite, forming a magnificient cascade. Very little labour was required to encourage the plantations of Tijouca: almost without toil this fertile spot produced, growing promiscuously and spontaneously, in the space of a few yards—indigo, coffee, manioc, sugar canes, plantains, and orange and lime trees. The temperature of the valley was excessively hot, from its very confined situation, and the reflection of the sun's rays from the sides of the mountains, which in many places were rocky.

Several districts of the government of Rio produced sugar, coffee, cotton, rice, pepper, and tobacco, in great abundance. The vine also flourished, but the grape is not permitted to be pressed for wine, as such a process might interfere with the sale of that article in Portugal. The whole of the Brazils is divided into eight independent governments, beside that of Rio de Janeiro, of which the governor retains only the name of the viceroy of the Brazils. The revenue is estimated at a million sterling; of which one third is consumed in the expences of the administration. The principal seat of government, and chief mart for commerce, was formerly at Bahia dos Todos os Santos; but the discovery and improvement of the gold and diamond mines, within about one hundred leagues of Rio de Janeiro, and communicating immediately with it, gave a decided preponderancy to the latter.

The project of removing the seat of the Portuguese government to the Brazils, was once seriously in contemplation with the Marquis de Pombal, when that country was invaded by the Spanish forces in 1761, and means were proposed for conducting the Royal family across the Atlantic, together with the principal officers of the court, and their attendants. That pro-

* The original inhabitants of the Brazils are found not to be reducible to a state of slavery, or even to the domestic habits of civilized society. Many of the children of Brazilians have been taken into Portuguese families, from motives of curiosity, as well as of benevolence, and uncommon pains have been bestowed upon their education; but whatever improvements they had acquired, they constantly returned to their original habits of savage life, without retaining any of the principles which might regulate their passions or caprice.

The original inhabitants of Brazil are somewhat under the middle size, muscular, stout, and active, of a light brown complexion, strong black and straight hair, with very little beard, and long dark eyes; their looks are expressive, intelligent, and distinct, and the turn of their features is remote from vulgarity. They entertain an implacable antipathy to the invaders of their country; they shun the settlements of the Portuguese; but massacre individuals without remorse, wherever they are found scattered or unprotected.

ject, however, vanished with the danger that gave birth to it; and the Brazils continued to be considered as a colony exclusively destined to enrich the parent state.

One fifth of the gold extracted from the mines is exacted by the government, and whenever diamonds happen to be found in a gold mine, they are prohibited from searching any more for that metal; all diamond mines being seized as exclusively belonging to the crown.

The people of Rio were lately prohibited from working up even the gold of their own mines; and the tools and instruments used by artificers for such purposes, were seized and confiscated by the gripe of arbitrary power. The taxes were thought very oppressive, especially in the interior provinces, where the carriage and transit duties raised the price of every article so enormously, that a bottle of port wine cost the consumer ten shillings sterling*.

Rio is protected by several small forts and batteries, detached from each other, but so judiciously disposed as to impede the progress of an enemy. Its military establishment consists of two squadrons of cavalry, two regiments of artillery, six regiments of infantry, two battalions of disciplined militia, and two hundred disciplined free negroes; making, in the whole, a body of at least ten thousand men, exclusive of a numerous undisciplined militia. The entrance of the harbour which is hardly a mile from point to point, is crossed in every direction by heavy batteries†.

Whatever may be the political fate of Rio de Janeiro, its natural appearance must always attract notice. Its harbour, mountains, rocks, and woods, seem to be perfectly on a grand scale, and its productions flourish.

The gentlemen of the embassy were indulged with greater liberty than is usually given at Rio to any strangers. The viceroy dispatched his own barge to convey them round the harbour, and testified a desire of shewing every mark of respect and attention to the Embassador: he received him with distinguished honours on shore, provided accommodations for him and his suite, and offered a guard to attend upon his person.

His Excellency, who had been much indisposed at sea, recovered his health within a fortnight after his arrival on shore.

When the two ships had completed their wood and water, they weighed their anchors, and on the 17th of December, 1792, proceeded on their voyage.

SECTION IV.

Passage to the southern Part of the Atlantic, and of the Indian Ocean—View of the Islands of Tristan d'Acunha—and of the Islands of St. Paul and Amsterdam—Entrance into the Straits of Sunda—Visit to Batavia and Bantam, in the Island of Java—View of the southern Extremity of Sumatra—Passage through the Straits of Banka to Pulo Condore.

THOUGH the influence of the land of South America often counteracts, in some degree, the general tendency of the trade winds, that effect is more conspicuous at a still greater dis-

* These, and other hardships led, not long since, to a conspiracy against the parent country, which was indeed formidable and remarkable; some of the principal officers of the government, in which were clergy as well as laity, having entered into it. The troops sent from Portugal were seldom afterwards called home. The civil officers, except the viceroy, were also allowed to be stationary. These persons, though principally natives of Portugal, soon changed their affection for their mother country, into an attachment to that where there was a probability of spending their days; and were sometimes induced to sacrifice to their own, the interest of their employers. Their views, however, were happily discovered, and timely prevented. Clemency and good policy awarded capital punishment to only one person, who was the chief conspirator on this occasion. The rest were banished to the Portuguese settlements on the coast of Africa.

† The fort of Santa Cruz is the principal defence of the harbour; its general height being from twenty-four to thirty feet. It mounts twenty-three guns towards the sea, and thirty-three to the westward and northward. It is flanked by batteries to the eastward and westward, and protected by a regular front for musquetry, which runs between the hills. But the city of Rio is supposed to depend chiefly on the works erected on Serpent Island. The highest part of which is eighty feet above the water; on it is constructed a small square fort. The length of the island is about three hundred yards; it mounts forty-six guns, facing different points of the compass. The parapet-wall, now building along the front of the town, will afford a good line for musquetry and light guns.

tance

tance than Rio from the line; the Lion and Hindostan, therefore, in order to secure the trade winds, took a southerly direction from thence, till they got into the 37th degree of southern latitude, where the westerly winds are most prevalent, to favour a direct course to Asia. In those latitudes distant from the line, the winds are frequently as tempestuous as they are variable, and every precaution is necessary to be taken to guard against the danger, by putting the ships, while they remained in the harbour of Rio, in a condition to bear foul weather.

Every part of the Lion was carefully examined, and whatever injury had been suffered in the course of the voyage out, was substantially repaired; some of the suspected masts were changed, and others fished or strengthened. The sails, thinned and weakened by long use, were no longer able to resist rude blasts, and were laid by, and replaced by canvas yet unworn.

During the continuance of strong gales, a gentleman who had suffered by sea-sickness, was again affected by the increased agitation of the ship by the waves. Another of the passengers was affected, but in a less degree. The rest not only bore the voyage extremely well, but continued in health and in good spirits. Their minds were not corroded with present cares, and they had an object of desire constantly present to their imagination. To avoid that languor which often hangs upon passengers for want of occupation, it was recommended for each to fix himself a task, the performance of which would employ every moment of his leisure. The youngest followed the example of the midshipmen, in endeavouring to become acquainted with the name of every mast, yard, rope, and sail belonging to the ship, as well as the theory of navigation. He was also employed, as well as a few other gentlemen, in obtaining from the Chinese interpreters, some instruction in the language of the country where they hoped speedily to arrive. Most of the others had recourse to books for information and amusement, of which the Embassador, Sir Erasmus Gower, and another person on board, had provided a considerable store.

In a ship of war the rank of every man belonging to it is maintained with appropriate distinctions: the windward side is always considered as a post of honour. This side is reserved for the captain, who is an absolute monarch while on board: and for his lieutenants, the master, surgeon, purser, and cabin passengers. The opposite, or leeward side, is free for midshipmen, surgeons' and masters' mates, and some other petty officers: the main deck and forecastle are occupied by the remainder of the crew.

The navigation was continued in the parallel of thirty-seven degrees for several days, with a favourable breeze from the westward; and on the 31st of December, 1792, the islands of Tris tan d'Acunha came in sight. The largest only, however, bears that name, the others are distinguished by the appellations of *Inaccessible* and *Nightingale* Islands. Inaccessible, as Sir Erasmus Gower observes, seems to deserve that name, being a high, bluff, and apparently barren plain, about nine miles in circumference, with a very forbidden appearance, and may be seen at the distance of twelve or fourteen leagues. It is described as having anchorage on the north-east side. Its latitude is thirty seven degrees twenty nine minutes south, and longitude eleven degrees forty eight minutes west from Greenwich. Nightingale Island is irregular in form, having a hollow in the middle, and is about seven miles in circumference; with small rocky isles at its southern extremity. Its latitude is thirty-seven degrees, twenty-nine minutes; its longitude eleven degrees forty-eight minutes west, and may be seen at the distance of seven or eight leagues.

The largest of the islands, which comparatively may be called the great Isle of Tristan d'Acunha, is very high, and discoverable at the distance of twenty-five leagues: it appears to be about fifteen miles in circumference. Towards the north part of this island there is an elevation apparently a thousand feet perpendicular from the sea. A level then commences, forming, in the sea-phrase, table land, reaching to the centre of the island; and afterwards becomes a conical mountain, not very dissimilar to the peak at Teneriffe, as seen from the bay of Santa Cruz. Having examined the shore for a convenient place to land and water, the Lion stood in, and anchored in the evening on the north side, in thirty fathoms water, one mile from the shore. The ship, when anchored, was overshadowed by the dark mass of that part of the island, whose sides appeared to rise like a moss-grown wall, immediately from the ocean. On the right the elevation

tion was not so rapid, and between the rising part and the sea, a flat was left of some extent, covered with sedge-grass, interspersed with shrubs. The sea-coast abounded with sea lions and seals, penguins, and albatrosses: one of the latter, which was brought on board, had wings that measured ten feet from tip to tip; but others are seen much larger*.

These islands are fifteen hundred miles distant from any land to the westward or northward of them. A settlement in Tristan d'Acunha has twice been under the contemplation of adventurers, but has not yet been carried into execution. One project was to render it a mart for the light manufactures of Hindostan, suited to warm climates for the silver of the Spanish settlements in South America. The other as a convenient situation for drying and preparing the furs of sea-lions and seals, and for extracting the spermaceti of the white whale, and the whalebone and oil of the black species. Whales were seen sporting about here in great abundance, particularly near the setting of the sun; their enormous snouts sometimes elevated above the waves, with a fountain spouting through an aperture in the skull. Sometimes their huge curved backs appeared like rocks in the ocean, and sometimes they expanded their tails like fans, flapping them upon the surface of the water†.

The weather was now moderately warm, suitable to the season; January in this hemisphere being a part of summer. Those who usually reside on the other side of the equator must consider that pleasantness and vigour are to be transferred from May to December; and he who wishes to describe a chilling aspect, must point directly to the south; while, on the contrary, the north inspires cheerfulness and joy. As the ship approached the shore, two human figures were perceived moving upon the land. They exhibited a signal, by tying a handkerchief to a pole, and waving it in one of his hands. It was reasonably supposed that these two persons had survived some shipwreck upon this desart coast, and conceived a desire of rendering them assistance. The Lion anchored in twenty-five fathoms water, about a mile from shore. Here, by a boat entering into the bason, it was very practicable to get on shore. When the gentlemen from the Lion landed, they were not only received by the two men they discovered on the heights, but also by three others who were their companions. Two of them were English, and the rest French. One of the latter, named Perron, was very intelligent and communicative, and gave the following account: He said that himself and two of the others, were natives of France; England gave birth to the other two: the latter were bred in the British navy, but afterwards became Americans, sailing usually out of Boston. They came last in a trading vessel from the Isle of France, and had been left there for the purpose of providing a cargo of twenty-five thousand seal skins, of which they had already procured eight thousand, for the Canton market; which they hoped to complete in about ten months more, having already procured near eight thousand.

This vessel was now gone to Nootka Sound, on the north-west coast of America, in order to bring a quantity of sea-otter skins to China; proceeding thus, alternately between Nootka and Amsterdam island.

The Chinese have a particular art in dressing seal-skins; depriving them of the long coarse hair, and permitting only the soft fur, or under down to remain. The price of those skins at Canton differed from one to three dollars, or more, according to their quality, and the demand for them. The trade was, probably, well worth pursuing, to judge by the eagerness with which so many persons had engaged in it. Per-

* This island was left unexplored on account of an accident: a sudden gust of wind starting forced the Lion's anchor, and obliged her for safety to put to sea; but the spot where the Lion lay was determined to be thirty-seven degrees six minutes, south latitude, and eleven degrees forty-three minutes west longitude. In war time, an excellent rendezvous might be settled here, for ships which only require a supply of water. When circumstances demand particular dispatch, they may come from England to Tristan d'Acunha, without stopping in the way, and afterwards to the end of the voyage to India or China.

† On the 5th of January, 1793, the Lion crossed the meridian of London, at a distance from that capital of about ninety degrees of latitude. Sir Erasmus Gower observed, that throughout the whole of this passage to Rio, as well as farther on to the eastward, within four degrees of the Cape of Good Hope, a small current set constantly to the south-eastward; which was proved by solar and lunar observations, as well as by time-pieces, when within two hundred leagues of the islands of St. Paul and Amsterdam, in the Indian ocean.

ron

ron had a share in the adventure, but the people with him were paid in proportion to their diligence and expertness*.

The seals, which are thus become a material article of commerce, are found in greater numbers in summer than in winter, when they usually keep in deep water, and under the weeds, to protect themselves from the inclemency of the weather. Little of the oil, which these animals might furnish, is collected, from a deficiency of casks to put it in: part of the best is boiled, and serves the people for butter. The seal of Amsterdam is the *phoca ursina* of Linnæus. The male was much larger than the female: the latter usually weighs from seventy-five to one hundred and twenty pounds, and is from three to five feet in length. These animals are not shy; sometimes, indeed, they plunge immediately into the water upon any one's approach; but, at other times, they remain steadily on the rocks, bark, and assume a menacing appearance. The blow of a stick upon the nose is generally found sufficient to dispatch them. During the winter here are a number of sea-lions, *phocæ leoninæ*; some of them, eighteen feet in length, crawl out of the sea, making a horrid howling. Even the hollow mournful cry of the seals may be heard at the anchorage, though more than a mile distant from the shore. Whales are frequent here in the winter season.

The seal-catchers have erected a hut here on the border of an elliptic cove, or bason: the bank next the sea is low, and has recently been divided in the middle by a shallow communication with the sea. Van Fleming, who visited this island in 1697, reports that there was no such thing at that time: close to this now interrupted causeway, the land on each side rises suddenly from the bason, and is continued round to the height of about seven hundred feet. In almost every part of the slanting sides of the funnel near the water's edge, and in the causeway which divides it from the sea, several springs of *hot-water* were discovered. Fahrenheit's thermometer, which in the air stood at sixty-two degrees, on being immersed into one of those hot springs, ascended immediately to one hundred and ninety-six: in another, it rose to two hundred and four. On various trials, in several springs, it appeared that the general standard of heat was that of two hundred and twelve degrees.

One of the gentlemen of the party, with a hook and line, caught some of the fish out of the bason, and let them fall into the hot spring adjoining, when in the space of fifteen minutes they were boiled fit for eating†.

All the springs, or reservoirs of hot-water, except one, are brackish. One spring whose source is in the high ground, or ridges of the crater, is a strong chalybeate; small incrustations of ochre being seen adhering to the sides of the rock, whence it issues, as well as in the cavity into which it falls.

This island lies in thirty-eight degrees forty-two minutes south latitude, and seventy-six degrees fifty-four minutes east longitude. The length of the island, from north to south, exceeds four miles, and its breadth from east to west, two miles and a half, comprehending a surface of about eight square miles, almost the whole of which is covered with a fertile soil. This island is inaccessible except on the east side, where the great crater forms a harbour; the entrance to which continues deepening annually, and might, by the assistance of art, be made fit for the passage of large ships.

The small vessel, in which the present inhabitants of the island where brought to it in the preceding September, remained at anchor, or in the offing for eight weeks; during which time a

* Nothing but the prospect of considerable advantage could be supposed to induce human beings to reside fifteen months together, in a country so unpromising, and in an occupation so disgusting. They killed the seals as they were basking in the sun, upon the stones along the shore, and round the large bason. The skins being their only object, they left the careasses on the spot to putrify at leisure: a shocking spectacle was thus exhibited at every step, and the atmosphere was infected with the smell.

† All appearances seemed to confirm the assertion of Dr. Gillan, "that the Island of Amsterdam was the product of subterraneous fire, and bore evident marks of volcanic eruptions in every part of it. The eruptions that took place, at different periods, appear here distinctly marked by the different layers that are found with regular divisions between them, the glassy lava being undermost; the compact next; the cellula lava next above; over it the volcanic ashes and lighter substances, and a layer of vegetable mould covering the whole."

The volcanic inflammation is perceptible, in the daytime. only by its smoke, but at night from the ship's decks were observed, several fires, issuing from the crevices of the earth, resembling, in some respects, but far exceeding the nightly flames at Pietra Mala, in the mountains between Florence and Bologna.

boat was only able to land twice, and they were left with so scanty a supply of provisions that they must have perished, had not the island furnished them with plenty of fish and fowl. The sea supplies it with excellent fish, particularly a kind of cod, which was held in great estimation whether fresh or salted. Cray fish were caught in abundance upon the bar, by the hand; and at the ship's anchorage in baskets. A shark was captured, measuring eleven feet in length, and five in circumference, and in his maw a penguin was found*.

The island of St. Paul lay in sight, and to the northward of Amsterdam: it exhibited no very high land, nor any rising in a conic form. It was overspread with shrubs and trees, and was reported to abound with fresh water; but it has no good anchorage, nor any convenient landing place. In the evening of the 2d of February, 1793, the ships got under way, and lost sight of both those islands.

After having sailed a considerable time in high southern latitudes, the embassador, and other passengers of the Lion and Hindostan began, at length, to indulge the hope of getting soon into a track, where they might obtain intelligence, through the homeward bound ships from China, what impression the notification of the embassy had made there. By taking an oblique course to the north-east, in order to get into the straits of Sunda, there was a probability of falling in with ships homeward bound.

While the breeze was fresh, the weather, notstanding the sun's vertical heat, was always pleasant. The tropic birds, remarkable for their very high flight, began to appear again; and the porpoises to frisk upon the waters; while the flying fish were seen in numbers, escaping from their finny pursuers to become a prey to the winged tribe, watching to dart upon them as soon as they rose above the water. Several water spouts were now observed, some resembling jets d'eaus, and others towering towards the clouds, not unlike the blowing of a whale.

Scorbutic symptoms now began to affect the crews of both the ships, though every measure was taken for the preservation of their health. Marinated cabbage, called sour crout, was mixed with their general aliments, and a beverage administered to them from the essence of malt. They were also much gratified by the indulgence allowed them of tobacco. The air of land, to which they were now approaching, and the use of fresh vegetables to be found, seemed to presage effectual remedies. The next day, being the 25th of February, they came in sight of the most westerly point of the island of Java, called Java head; and, soon afterwards, Prince's Island was seen, at the entrance of the straits of Sunda.

The great island of Sumatra, by its south-east, and that of Java by its north-west extremity, form the straits between them, which are interspersed with a number of small isles; displaying a scenery hardly inferior to the lofty range of mountains round the harbour of Rio de Janeiro. The two great islands, Sumatra and Java, are low, and marshy in many places towards the shore, but afterwards rise gradually to the interior of the country; admitting, in their ascent, every variety of situation, and all the different tints of verdure. Of the smaller islands, a few have steep and naked sides. In the middle of the strait is a little island, which the English navigators have named Thwart-the-way; and two smaller, are, from their figures, appropriately named Cape and Button; but most of the others are level, founded upon beds of coral, and covered with trees.

One of these coralline productions is North Island, where the Lion found the Hindostan at anchor. The latter met, near the mouth of the Straits, with one of the East India Company's ships, returning from China. She had brought

dispatches

* Respecting the birds there was a less variety: of the larger kind were several species of the albatross, and the fierce voracious black petrel. One of the latter, however, soon grew tame on board the Lion, quietly eating whatever offal was set before it, and taking great delight in bathing in a tub of sea water. This bird is a more fatal enemy to the blue petrel of Amsterdam, or *procellaria forsteri*, than to the albatross. It devours only the heart and liver of the former, leaving the rest untouched: many of them, thus eviscerated, were found lying on the ground, throughout the island. But the most beautiful of the feathered tribe, inhabiting or visiting Amsterdam, is the silver bird or *sterna hirundo*, about the size of a large swallow, with a forked tail. These birds range about in considerable numbers, little apprehensive of danger; but when a young one was taken, the others fluttered about the captor for a considerable time, making a great noise, and seeming determined to dart upon his head to make him relinquish his prize.

dispatches from the Company's Commissioners at Canton to the embassador; which, after the ship had waited ten days for his excellency at Batavia, were left there for him.

Of the great variety of aquatic animals, independently of those which produce the coral islands, a large proportion is doomed to move only at the bottom of sea, of which the most numerous here were the sea urchin, star fish, and the holothuria. These are some, among the many instances, of the regular gradations of animal life, from rapid motion, and exquisite sensibility, to the borders of mere vegetable irritability, where those two kingdoms of nature appear to meet, and to be confounded together.

On the 6th of March the ships anchored in Batavia road, situated in six degrees ten minutes south latitude, and one hundred and six degrees fifty one minutes, eastern longitude; the variation of the compass about half a degree to the westward of the Pole. In this passage to Batavia several shoals are noticed, and beacons are fixed to some to point out the danger.

A circular range of islands protects the roads of Batavia from any heavy swell, and renders it a safe anchorage for shipping; and it is large enough to receive all those that double the Cape of Good Hope. The vast quantity of Dutch vessels lying before the city, clearly pronounced it to be their chief place of trade, as well as the seat of their chief government in Asia. Few of the buildings of the city of Batavia, were visible from the road, except the dome of the great church; the rest being shaded or concealed by the large leaves of lofty palms, and other umbrageous trees.

The embassador, after having been complimented on board, on the part of the Dutch government, was also received on shore with distinguished honours; though his mission had created there some very strong alarms. His Excellency, however, endeavoured to remove their apprehensions by assuring them, that the administration of Great Britain had offered to the States General its mediatorial assistance, if necessary, on behalf of their trade. The council, ignorant, of this proffer, acknowledged their intentions of counteracting the embassy, as much as lay in their power, and resolved to send immediate instructions to Canton, for uniting with, instead of opposing, the efforts of the embassador; whence it was hoped aud expected, that every European nation, trading to China, would be ultimately benefited.

The dispatches which his Excellency received here, from the commissioners of the English East India Company, at Canton, argued favourably for his honourable reception at Pekin: The commissioners set forth that, "having applied to two of the principal Chinese merchants, to solicit an audience from the Fonyen or Governor of Canton, in the absence of the viceroy, to deliver a letter to him from the chairman of the court of directors of the East India Company, those merchants guessed that the letter related to the embassy, and expressed some degree of apprehension lest the measure might affect the trade, property, or security of the merchants of Canton; but that the commissioners assured them it would rather be productive of good than ill consequences to the trading part of the community; that the motives of the embassy were enquired into, on the part of government, as a preliminary step to the audience required by the commissioners; who declared that nothing farther was intended than to effect a stricter friendship between the courts of London and Pekin, and an increase of that intercourse, which had been carried on for many years, to the advantage of both nations."

After many suggestions of similar import, the commissioners added, that, the impression looked for from the embassy, had already taken place on the officers of government at Canton. Less interruption to foreign trade, and a more ready attention to the representations of the commissioners were very apparent; and the Hoppo was already said to have in contemplation to abolish the extravagant charges at Macao, by which means one of the principal impositions upon foreigners would be suppressed."

The communication of these dispatches to the Batavian government, which now felt interested in the present embassy, induced them to celebrate the anniversary of the birth of the prince of Orange, Stadtholder of the United Provinces, with additional festivities. A salute of twenty-one guns was fired from the Lion, on the 8th of March, on the occasion; and it was on that day that his Excellency first went on shore*.

But

* The united luxuries of Dutch and Eastern entertainment, to which the Embassador and his suite were invited, were

But notwithstanding these occasional scenes of merriment, the Dutch settlers in Batavia appeared languid, wan, and weak, as if labouring with the "disease of death." Their place of residence, indeed, is situated in the midst of swamps and stagnated pools, from whence they are every morning saluted with an assemblage of pestilential vapours, whenever the sea breeze sets in, and blows over the morass. The meridian sun raises from the muddy canals, which intersect the town, deleterious miasmata into the air; and the trees which crowd the quay and streets, emit noxious exhalations in the night.

Dr. Gillan says, that there were but few examples of strangers remaining in Batavia long without being attacked by fever, which is there the general denomination for illness of every kind. Europeans, soon after their arrival, first become languid and feeble; and in a few weeks, sometimes in a few days, are taken ill. The disorder, at first, is usually a tertian ague, which, after two or three paroxysms, becomes a double tertian, and then a continued remittent, which frequently carries off the patient in a short time. It is supposed that of the Europeans, of all classes, who come to settle in Batavia, not always half the number survives the year. The place resembles, in that respect, a field of battle, or a town besieged. The frequency of deaths renders familiar the mention of them, and little surprise is shewn on hearing that the companion of yesterday, is to-day no more. Female Europeans, however, suffer less at Batavia than the men. The former seldom expose themselves to the heat of the sun, make frequent use of the cold bath, and pay more attention to temperance*.

The established opinion of the unhealthiness of Batavia for Europeans, deters most of those, who can reside comfortable at home, from coming to it, notwithstanding the inducement of a rapid acquisition of a fortune. Hence the preposterous unfitness, with which offices and professions are filled and personated, may be accounted for. There were two men in the place, who had been originally barbers, that now moved in a more exalted line of life; one of them being a reverend clergyman, and the other a respectable physician.

The most salutary season here is from March to November; the sea breeze commences about ten o'clock in the morning, and continues till four or five in the afternoon. A calm then succeeds till about seven or eight, when the land breeze sets in, and continues, at intervals, till day-break, followed by a calm for the remaining hours of the twenty four. Fahrenheit's thermometer was, in Batavia road, during the Lion's remaining there, from eighty-six to eighty-eight degrees †.

The defences of the river were the water fort, situated at its entrance. It consisted of a parapet, originally well constructed. This fort was protected, on the land side, by a noxious swamp, and towards the sea, on the north-west, by extensive flats, over which no boats could pass. The next work upon the river, was a battery, mounting seven guns; opposite to which was another of six guns. A little above was the castle, a regular square fort, but without ravelins, or other out-works. It had no ditch, but a canal surrounded it at some distance. Not far from the town, three or four small star forts of earth are erected in particular passes, perhaps for defence against the inhabitants of the island.

The establishment of regular troops is twelve

displayed upon the occasion. The entertainment took place at the house of the Governor-General, a little way out of the town; the road to it leading though an avenue of trees, bordered by canals. On one side were exhibited the humours of a Flemish fair, for the amusement of the people; while, on the other, a Dramatic Performance was represented by several Chinese actors. A grand ball preceded the banquet, and fire-works, with splendid illuminations, were displayed thoughout the garden till the morning.

* But of the fatal effects of the climate upon both sexes, the following assertion was made by a young lady there. That out of eleven persons of her family, who came to Batavia only ten months before, her father, brother-in-law, and six sisters, had already paid the debt of nature. There are constitutions, however, so formed, as to be little affected by causes fatal to many others.

† Diseases of the teeth, so prevalent in the northern parts of Europe, are strangers to the native Javanese, who principally feed on vegetable food. Yet such is the caprice of taste, that jet-black is the favourite colour, and the standard of beauty for the teeth among them; comparing those to monkies who keep them of their natural colour. All their teeth, except the two middle-ones, which they cover with gold-leaf, are painted of the deepest black. The operation is performed as often as it is found necessary.

Its fortifications are not such as would be deemed formidable in Europe; though it was rather pertinently observed by Mr. Parish, "that the most effectual protection of that settlement from an European enemy proceeded from its climate."

hundred

hundred Europeans, of whom three hundred are to be artillery, and the rest infantry. There were also three hundred volunteers of the town, formed into two companies, but they were not disciplined. Their regulars were very numerous, consisting of enrolled natives of Java, who were never embodied, and of Chinese, of whom the Dutch were so jealous, that they armed them with lances only. In addition to these, every man who comes to settle in Batavia, is compelled to take up arms in its defence.

The castle is constructed of coral rock, brought from some of the adjoining islands; and part of the town wall consists of dense lava, resembling that of Vesuvius. No stone, of any denomination, is to be found for many miles behind the city of Java: Marble and granite are brought thither from China, in vessels belonging to that country, usually called junks, which sail from the ports of the provinces of Canton and Fokien, and are generally laden with tea, silks, and porcelain*.

Immediately before dinner, two men slaves go round with Madeira wine, when every guest is served with a bumper of it, as a tonic or whetter of the appetite. Then follow three females, one holding a silver jar containing water, or sometimes rose-water to wash with—a second with an empty silver bason and low cover of the same metal, pierced with holes to receive the water after using; and the third, laden with towels for wiping the hands. Other female slaves wait at table, which is covered with a great variety of dishes. A band of music, the performers being all slaves, play at a small distance, during the repast. Coffee immediately follows dinner. The twenty-four hours are here divided, as to the manner of living, into two days and two nights; each person retiring, soon after drinking coffee, to a bed, consisting of a mattrass, bolster, pillow, and chintz counterpane, but no sheets; and puts on his night dress, or muslin cap and loose long cotton gown. If the person is a bachelor, which is most frequently the case, a female slave attends to fan him while he sleeps. About six they rise, and dress, drink tea, take an airing in their carriages, and form parties to pass the evening together till a very late hour. The morning meetings consist generally of men, the ladies seldom choosing to attend till the evening†.

Every native lady is constantly attended by a female slave, handsomely dressed, who, on her mistress being seated, sits before her on the floor, holding in her hand her mistress's gold or silver box, divided into compartments, to contain areca nut, cardamom seeds, pepper, tobacco, and slacked lime; all which, rolled within a betel-leaf, constitute a masticatory of a very pungent taste, and in very general use among the ladies.

When, in the public assemblies, the ladies feel themselves incommoded with heat, they retire to relieve themselves by changing their inconvenient robes for lighter attire. The gentlemen follow the example, and substitute white jackets, sometimes indeed embellished with diamond buttons, for their heavy formal vestments: the elderly gentlemen, when thus circumstanced, quit their periwigs for night-caps. Except in these moments, the members of the government, combine their personal gratification with the eastern policy of striking vulgar minds with reverential awe, by the assumption of exterior and exclu-

* The Dutch settlers here, acquiring wealth and influence under the company, neglect their former habits of industry and temperance, and too frequently sacrifice health and life to indolence and voluptuousness. Convivial pleasures are pursued with avidity in many respectable houses throughout the settlement: besides tea, coffee, and chocolate, fish and flesh are served for breakfast; after which Madeira, Claret, Gin, Dutch small-beer, and English porter are placed in the portico before the great hall, when pipes and tobacco are presented to every guest, with a bright brass jar provided for the reception of the saliva. This occupation continues, sometimes, with little interruption, till near the hour of dinner, which is one o'clock.

† Few of these are natives of Europe, but many are descended from Dutch settlers here, and most of them have been very carefully educated. The features and contour of their faces are wholly European, but their complexion, character, and mode of life, approach more to those of the natives of Java. A pale languor overspreads the countenance, and every tint of the rose is an alien to the cheek. While they continue in their houses, they are clothed like their slaves, in a long red chequered cotton gown, descending to the ankles, with large wide sleeves. They plait their hair, and fasten it with a silver bodkin on the top of the head, like many of the female peasants of Switzerland. The general colour of their hair is black, which they anoint with the oil of the cocoa-nut, and decorate it with chaplets of flowers. When they go abroad on morning visits, or to take an airing in their carriages, more especially in their evening parties, they dress splendidly, in gold and silver spangled muslin robes, with a profusion of jewels in their hair, which, however, is worn without powder. They are not solicitous in forming the shape from any fancied idea of elegance, or any standard of fashion.

sive distinctions. They are the only persons, for instance, who are privileged to appear abroad in crimson velvet; their carriages are distinguished by heraldic ornaments; and others meeting, are obliged to stop and pay them homage. They are, indeed, successful in supporting absolute sway over the aborigines of the country, as well as over the slaves imported into it, and of the Chinese attracted thither in the hope of gain.

The native Javanese are too remote from civilization, to have any wants that are not easily satisfied in a warm and fertile climate. The Sultan of Mataram rules to the east, the King of Bantam to the west, and the Emperor of Java in the centre; while the coast and effective power almost entirely belong to Holland. The other sovereigns are the descendants of foreigners, who imported the Mahometan religion into Java, and acquired the dominion of the country, a few inhabitants in the mountains excepted, who have preserved their independence and their faith; and, among other articles, that of the transmigration of souls.

The emperor is said to maintain his authority by an army of many thousand men, dispersed throughout his territories, and by a numerous female guard attending about his person. These heroines are trained to a domestic, as well as a military life; among whom many from mental accomplishments, are the companions, as well as the attendants of his imperial majesty. This singular institution may owe its origin to the facility of obtaining recruits, if the same accounts be correct, that the number of female births in Java, far exceeds that of males*.

When they are determined to pursue revenge, they have a method of acquiring artificial courage, by swallowing a more than ordinary dose of opium, which renders them equally desperate and frantic. In this state, they not only stab the object of their hatred, but sally forth, and attack at random, every person they meet, till self-preservation renders it necessary to destroy them.

The Chinese are much attached to gaming, as well as opium; but the habits of moderation, in which they are bred, and the cautious principles instilled into them, prevent them from falling into similar excesses. They are, indeed, much more capable of forming designs against the government; and in the year 1740, they joined in a revolt against the Europeans, under the command of a pretended descendant of the Emperor of China; but they were repulsed and disarmed. The alarm, notwithstanding, was so great that, under the orders of the Dutch, all the heads of the Chinese families, were massacred, and their effects seized. The directors of the company in Holland execrated the horrid deed: and much apprehension being entertained that the fact would excite the indignation of the emperor of China, deputies were sent to him the following year, to apologize for the measure, as founded upon necessity, and were agreeably surprised when he returned them the following answer, that, "he was little solicitous for the fate of unworthy subjects, who, in the pursuit of lucre, had quitted their country, and abandoned the tombs of their ancestors†."

On the day of interment the whole family are collected, and the corpse is conveyed to the grave with much solemn pomp. In the first procession persons, bearing images of men and women, relatives of the family, (as among the ancient Romans) and even images of animals, with wax tapers and incensories. Then follow the priests, accompanied

* The slaves imported into it are principally from Celebes, and other eastern islands. They are not forced to excessive labour, nor are they deprived of proper sustenance; but many of the males among them, who had lived an independent life till they had been made captives in their wars, have been known to take offence against their masters upon very trivial occasions, and to aveuge themselves by assassination. Under this apprehension it is that female slaves are preferred in Batavia, for every use to which they can possibly be applied; and their number, of course, surpasses that of the males.

† They have, however, the highest veneration for such of their ancestors as have paid the debt of nature: a cemetary is appropriated for their remains, and much expence incurred in erecting monuments to their memory. Every respectable family has a separate vault, generally surrounded by a wall. When a Chinese of rank departs this life, his nearest relations announce the melancholy event to the surviving relatives. The body of the deceased is washed, perfumed, and clothed in his best apparel; it is then seated in a chair, before which his wives, children, and relations prostrate themselves, and usually weep most immoderately. On the third day it is put into a coffin, and placed in one of the best apartments, hung round, on this occasion, with *white-linen*, the emblem of their mourning. An altar is erected in the middle of the apartment, and on it the portrait of the deceased is placed, with incense burning near it. The sons, dressed in coarse white, stand near the coffin, manifesting every token of sorrow, while the mother, and female relations, are heard lamenting behind the curtain.

accompanied with musical instruments, and after them the corpse is borne upon a bier, attended by the sons of the deceased, clothed in white, and leaning upon crutches, as if unable, from extreme sorrow, of supporting themselves in an erect position. The female relatives are carried in chairs, encircled in white silk to conceal them from view: but their lamentions are so far from being suppressed, that they are very distinctly heard. To these were added some hired persons, trained to utter the loudest shrieks and lamentations with mimic sorrow.

The Chinese, from their industry and ingenuity, have become so necessary to the Dutch, that they almost acknowledge the settlement could hardly subsist without them. Their residence at Batavia is in the suburbs; their houses are low, built principally of wood, and crowded with inhabitants. They are expert in all mechanical employments: in town they become clerks, agents, or hucksters; and in the country, they commence farmers, particularly in the cultivation of the sugar cane.

The shops of Batavia, like those of brokers dealing in second-hand articles, were thinly supplied with British merchandize; a plain demonstration that the interior inhabitants of Java are either unable or unwilling to purchase curious or costly manufactures. But there are large magazines for holding the rich products of the Molucca or spice islands, to be distributed from hence to every part of the world; besides coffee, pepper, sugar and arrack.

The Dutch Company, from an immoderate thirst for gain, wished to monopolize the whole of the spice trade to themselves. To effect this, as well as to prevent even their own commodities from over-stocking the market, they employed a set of men, under the name of *extirpators*, for the purpose of actually rooting out from every place where they could penetrate, every tree which bears those valuable productions; hoping thus to counteract the bountiful intent of nature, and to secure to themselves the exclusive sale and property of those articles. The nutmeg-tree had been accordingly destroyed by the *extirpators*, in all the Moluccas, except Banda; and a dreadful eruption of a volcano in that island, a very few years ago, so effectually buried in its ashes, or otherwise injured the vegetable productions there, that, for some time, no slight apprehension was entertained of a great diminution in the supply of that valuable spice.

The medical garden, at Batavia, is now well stocked with spice-trees, and the Delegates are become more liberal in their ideas. The nutmeg tree is a beautiful vegetable: the stem, with a smooth brown bark, rises perfectly straight; its fruit, when fresh, is nearly the size of a common nectarine. The upper, and outer surface of the leaf is smooth, and of a deep green: the whole leaf is characterised by its fragrant odour. What is known by the name of nutmeg, is the kernel within the shell. The same medical garden at Batavia contains a clove-tree. The clove is only the germ of the fruit, with the flower-cup containing it. The leaf is oval, smooth, small, narrow, tender, and aromatic. The camphor tree bears leaves not unlike those of the clove, but stronger. The pepper, is a creeping plant, or vine, generally supported on a living tree. The pepper grows in clusters, like the grape, but of a much smaller size*.

The whole country abounds with esculent fruits, which, like all places within the tropics, may be gathered throughout the whole circle of the year. The mangosteen, about the size of a nonpareil, considered as the most delicious of all fruits, was ripe in March. It abounds in Java. It consists of a dark red, thick, and firm rind, containing from five to seven seeds, of which a white pulp that covers them is the only part that is eaten. It is of a delicate subacid taste, not much differing from the same sort of pulpy substance, which incloses the sour-sop in the West Indies. Pine apples are planted here in large fields; they are carried to market, like turnips upon carts, and sold for less than a penny each. Sugar sold for about five-pence a pound; and provisions of all kinds, were remarkably cheap. The ships' crews, fed on fresh meat every day.

In a place so low, warm, and marshy, noxious animals

* With respect to the supposed *upas*, or poison tree of Java: it was believed to be nothing more than a bold attempt to impose on the credulity of the public. One of the keepers of the medical garden at Batavia, however, assured Dr. Gillan, that a tree distilling a poisonous juice was in that collection, but its qualities were not made known to the people in the settlement, lest the knowledge of them should be communicated to the slaves, who might be tempted to make an improper use of such information.

animals are expected to be numerous; but not many accidents arose from them. The lacerto, or guana, an inoffensive land animal, is exteriorly formed like the *lacerto crocodilus*, or crocodile, which frequents the canals and rivers of this country. From being an object of fear, by a transition of sentiment, it became an object of veneration, and offerings are now made to it, as to a deity. When the Javanese feels himself diseased, he builds a kind of coop, and fills it with such eatables as he supposes will be most agreeable to the crocodiles. He places the coop on the bank of the river or canal, confidently expecting that, by the means of such offerings, he shall get rid of his complaints; should any person prove so wicked as to take away these viands, that person would then draw upon himself the malady. The inhabitants, in the environs of Thebes, and the lake Moeris, are fully persuaded of their sanctity. Both these tribes bring up and tame the crocodile, adorning his ears with earrings of precious stone, and gold, and fixing ornamental chains about his fore-feet. They also supply him regularly with victuals, offer victims to him, treat him respectfully while he is living, and embalm and bury him in a consecrated coffin*.

In the midst of such gloomy prospects, their attention to their guests was not diminished. The embassador, and his suite, were treated with every mark of attention and respect. His excellency, being indisposed, was intreated to pass a few days at one of the governor's houses, in a healthy spot amidst the mountains; but, wishing to proceed upon his mission as soon as possible, he waved the invitation, and left Batavia on the seventeenth of March, intending to proceed to the Straits of Banca.

In her passage from Batavia, the Lion touched upon a small unnoticed sunken rock, with three fathoms depth of water over it, with six or seven round its base. This circumstance pointed out the necessity of such a tender as the Jackall, and, as the company's commissioners at Canton had been disappointed in sending two small vessels to precede the Lion and Hindostan, in order to sound the depth of water in suspected places, his excellency sent back to Batavia, to purchase such a one as the service required, and named her, out of respect to his Royal Highness, the Duke of Clarence.

The little squadron then proceeded towards the opening which leads to the Straits of Banca. The island of Sumatra, on its eastern side, forming the western side of those Straits, as its southern extremity forms the northern side of the Straits of Sunda. The depth of water near that island is very irregular, shoaling, in some spots, from twelve to seven fathoms, and in others from seven to four,

Soon after the Lion's return to this spot, the long lost Jackall appeared in sight. It had been supposed that in the stormy night, in which she lost company of the ships, or in her attempt to follow them, some misfortune had happened to her. She had unfortunately arrived, both at Madeira and St. Jago, a few days after the Lion had quitted them. She experienced many difficulties in her passage, but she was soon ready to proceed to sea†.

Having afterwards occasion to visit the small islands of the Cap and Button, they observed in the Cap two caverns, which ran horizontally into the side of a rock, and in these they also beheld a number of birds-nests, which are much sought after by the Chinese epicures. They are con-

* In the districts round Batavia, subject to the Dutch, it is calculated that about fifty thousand families are settled, containing six persons, upon an average, to a family, or three hundred thousand persons in the whole. The city of Batavia, with the suburbs, contains about eight thousand houses. Those of the Chinese are low, and crammed with people: those inhabited by the Dutch, are clean and spacious, and their construction adapted to the climate: the doors and windows are wide and lofty, and the ground floors are laid with marble Many of these houses, however, were uninhabited, which indicated a declension of their commerce. The company's vessels were lying useless in the road, for want of cargoes to fill, or men to navigate them. They had no ships of war to protect their commerce, even against pirates, who attacked their vessels sometimes in the sight of Batavia road.

† The monsoon being still adverse, and the crews of both ships sickly, the ships kept moving along the coasts of Java and Sumatra, to make choice of the coolest and healthiest spots, where they might wait for the favourable moment of proceeding farther. During this period observations were taken to ascertain the accuracy of former charts. On this occasion, an alarming circumstance occurred. As Dr. Dinwiddie was preparing to apply his face close to a tree, to be in a proper position to observe a passing star, while some other person was to have his eye fixed upon the time-keeper, a snake of some magnitude, which had crept along the trunk of the tree, and within the bark that had been loosened from it, luckily displayed its head soon enough to put the gentlemen on their guard, and to make choice of another tree for pursuing their observations.

structed

structed by the small grey swallow, of which great numbers were perceived flying about. These nests not only adhere to each other, but also to the sides of the cavern, almost in regular rows. They seem to be composed of fine filaments, cemented by the transparent viscous matter resembling those gelatinous animal substances found floating on every coast. They feed on insects, which they find hovering over stagnated pools, and for catching which, their wide-opening beaks are particularly adapted. They prepare their nests from the best remnants of their food. Their greatest enemy is the kite, who frequently interrupts them in their passage to and from the caverns. The nests are a considerable object of traffic among the Javanese; many are occupied in it from their infancy. The birds, after they have completed their nests, lay only a couple of eggs, which are hatched in about fifteen days, and the proper time for taken the nests is, when the young ones are become fledged.

The Javanese go regularly three times a year to take them; but the operation is attended with much danger, and several break their necks in the attempt. The inhabitants of the mountains, usually employed in it, commence by sacrificing a buffalo, a custom constantly observed by the Javanese on the eve of every extraordinary enterprize. They also pronounce prayers, anoint themselves with sweet scented oil, and smoke the entrance of the cavern with gum benjamin. Near some of those caverns a tutelar goddess is worshipped.

The natives of this part, as well as at most of the islands in the Chinese seas, are called Malays; they are remarkable for vindictiveness, indolence, and indocility. The are low in stature; have broad faces, wide mouths, brown complections, long black hair, and very little beards. The southern extremity of Sumatra is thinly peopled by a set of them, who seem to lead an indolent and miserable life. Their dwellings near the shore, are little more than sheds, in which they cannot stand upright. Their condition, which in many parts of Europe, would imply the utmost wretchedness, is guarded by the climate from any actual suffering. Though half naked, for their dress descends no lower than their waist, they never go abroad without being armed with a criss or dagger, with a point that has been imbued in a poisonous juice.

The squadron weighed from North Island, and proceeded to Nicholas bay; an easterly course from which leads to Bantam, formerly a place of great trade. But the Dutch having conquered the neighbouring province of Jagatra, where they have since built Batavia; and trade in other respects having taken a new course, Bantam was reduced to a poor remnant of its former opulence and importance. The power of the sovereign declined with the loss of its trade.

In Nicholas Bay was a convenient rivulet for watering; and at no considerable distance from the shore, a village, where buffaloes, poultry, fruit, and other vegetables may be procured at reasonable rates. Fresh provisions were daily served here to the Lion's crew; and here, as well as at Angeree Point, many of the invalids and convalescents were sent on shore for air and exercise. Here indigo was manufactured from the leaf, growing in the neighbourhood*.

It is extremely difficult to get far into the Java forests, from the abundance of underwood, and the vast number of creeping plants, forming a sort of net, supported by other trees. The heat, for want of a current of air, was extremely troublesome. The eye was often charmed with the sight of trees in superb blossom, and with the beautiful plumage of the birds; some of which, however, threw out a hissing sound by way of notes, and spread the alarm of serpents about to dart their venom.

Two ships, arrived from China, confirmed the former favourable accounts. Very soon afterward the winds were so far shifted as to encourage the Lion to set sail; but from very light breezes, little advance was made, and the anchors were often lowered, to prevent the ships

* Notwithstanding the perverse disposition of the natives, the British seamen got into the habit of trafficking familiarly with them. Some of them readily parted with their dearly-earned wages in purchasing from them monkies, particularly the *simia aygula* of Linnæus, having a forehead on which a fashionable toupee is combed back: his cheeks are capable of great distention, in which he crams, for future use, such provisions as he cannot immediately consume. Others preferred a bird called a Mino, not unlike a jackdaw in form and size. The fish, called skip-jack, by the sailors, was sometimes an amusement to them: it is the blennius ocellatus of the naturalists, having eyes uncommonly prominent, and is often seen skipping upon the surface of the water, near the shore.

from being driven back, till the 26th of April, when the current changed its direction to the east-south-east, and the next day to the north-east, half a mile. Of the slight airs that blew, the utmost advantage was taken by crowding sail. While the squadron was at anchor, within three miles of the two islands called the Brothers, their latitude, by observation, was found to be five degrees eight minutes south, and their longitude one hundred and six degrees four minutes east. About this place several whales were seen, after the ships had left the island of Amsterdam.

On the 28th of April, the hills on Banka, island, were descried above the haze, which hid the lower grounds. The Clarence and Jackall were ordered to lead, and soon gave notice of the water's shoaling to three fathoms, which obliged the Lion to come to anchor for a short time. The Hindostan got aground to the north-west of the small island of Lucipara. In the efforts of the Lion to drag the Hindostan from the shoal, the cable, though six inches in circumference, soon snapped; but not till the Hindostan was already loosened from the rock; and she got clear soon afterwards.

The eastern coast of Sumatra was continually in sight; and the sea, for a considerable distance, was rendered muddy and less salt, by the quantities of fresh water poured from the large rivers. Detached pieces of land were also observed sailing along: they were literally floating islands, torn from the parent shores by the violence of the floods. On the 30th, the ships came to anchor close to the western shore, near Banka the southermost of the three Nanka Isles. This island is celebrated throughout Asia for its tin mines, to which England owed its celebrity in Europe in very ancient times. Banka lies opposite to the river Palambang, in Sumatra, on which the sovereign of Banka keeps his constant residence. He maintains his authority over his own subjects, in a great measure, by the assistance of the Dutch, who enjoy the benefit of a contract with the king of Banka for the tin which his subjects procure from thence. The advantage arising from it to the Dutch company, is estimated at one hundred and fifty thousand pounds *per annum*.

The vessels sailed from the Nanka Isles on the 4th of May; the squadron continued its route, and crossed the line on the 10th of May, in longitude one hundred and five degrees forty-eight minutes east. The equinoctial line crosses Pulo Lingen, an island of considerable magnitude, terminating in a fork, like that of Parnassus; but to which the unharmonious seamen bestow the appellation of "Asses' ears." Every day now presented new islands to the view; displaying a vast variety in colour, form, and shape: some isolated, others appeared in clusters. Many were clothed with verdure; and some had small trees growing on them; others were barren rocks, the resort of myriads of the feathered race. In this passage the weather was often squally, and accompanied with thunder, lightning, and heavy rain, which compelled the squadron frequently to anchor. The sea was seldom deeper than eight fathoms. Several of the seamen were afflicted with a dysentery, who were therefore removed on shore, to stop its contagious influence*.

The English had a settlement on Condore till the beginning of the present century, when some Malay soldiers, in their pay, in resentment of real, or imaginary ill usage, murdered their supriors, with the exception of a few who fortunately escaped from the island, in which no European has since resided. Close to a sandy beach, at the bottom of the bay, a village was situated, to which a party being detached, armed, they were met by some of the inhabitants, who welcomed them on shore, and conducted them to the residence of their chief. It was a neat bamboo cabin, larger than the rest; the floor being elevated a few feet above the ground, and strewed with mats; on which were assembled as many persons as the space would receive. One of the apartments contained an altar, decorated with images; and the partitions

* On the 17th of May our navigators anchored in a spacious bay on the eastern side of the island of Pulo Condore. The whole of this bay is formed by four small islands, which approach so nearly to each other, that, in some points of view, they appear to join: they all seem to be fragments of primitive mountains, separated from the great continent in the lapse of time. The principal island is about twelve miles in length, and three in breadth, in the form of a crescent, and consisting of a ridge of peaked hills. A nest of turtles was found here upon the beach, each of which was capable of growing to the weight of several hundred pounds; though they did not then exceed a few ounces.

were

were hung with figures of monstrous deities. But the countenances and deportment of the people seemed to excite no religious awe, nor was any person observed in the act of adoration. A few spears stood against the wall with their points downwards, together with some matchlocks, and a swivel gun. Their dress consisted principally of blue cotton, worn loosely about the body; their faces were very flat, and their eyes remarkably small, seeming to denote a Chinese origin, or relation*.

The writer of this letter had perhaps received improper treatment from former strangers, and it was resolved that they should not continue to think ill of all who came to visit them. On their return, they were as much surprised to find their houses undemolished, as their visitors had been to see them all deserted. Not an article had been removed; and a small present, such as it was supposed would prove acceptable to the chief, was left for him in the principal mansion; with a Chinese letter, purporting, "That the ships and people were English, who called merely for refreshment, and on fair terms of purchase, without any ill intention, being a civilized nation, acting with principles of humanity, which did not suffer them to plunder or injure others, who happened to be weaker or fewer than themselves."

This letter could not be expected to fall into the hands of those to whom it was addressed, while the ships remained in the bay. Their apprehensions could only subside, by removing the exciting cause; and, as it was essential to get the invalids comfortably provided for on shore, the signal was made to weigh anchor on the 18th of May, when the squadron quitted this place, and steered away to the northward.

SECTION V.

Cochin China—Passage to the La Drone Islands, near Macao; and thence to Chu-San—Transactions and Observations there.

THE state of health of the Lion's Crew became daily more alarming, and the necessity for removing them on shore more urgent. Besides the dysentery, many were afflicted with diseases of the liver; others with violent spasms. Out of three hundred and fifty men on board the Lion, one hundred and twenty were, at times, in the list of patients. From the reports of former voyages, Turon Bay in Cochin China, promised the advantages of good anchorage for the ships, and shelter and provisions for the men. The squadron steering for that bay, came, on the evening of its departure, within sight of the southern extremity of the great continent, which may properly be called Chinese.

This part is divided into three small kingdoms, or territories, named Canbodia, Tsiompa, and Cochin-China. It is recorded to have been anciently a part of the Chinese empire; but on the Mogul invasion of China, from Tartary, in the thirteenth century, the Chinese governor of the southern peninsula, containing Tunguin to the northward, and Tsiompa and Cambodia, to the southward of Cochin-China, took the opportunity of setting up the standard of independence. He, and his posterity, resided in Tunguin. In

* It was proposed to purchase provisions here; and the specified quantity were promised to be ready by the following day, when, if the weather happened to be favourable, the invalids were to have been landed. Messengers were dispatched on shore, to receive, and pay for, the promised provisions; but, when they arrived at the village, they were much astonished to find it abandoned. The houses were left open, and none of the effects had been removed. In the chief's cabin was found a paper, written in the Chinese language, of which a literal translation purported, "That the people of the island were few in number, and very poor, yet honest, and incapable of doing mischief, but they were greatly terrified at the arrival of such large ships, and powerful persons; especially as they were unable to satisfy their wants in regard to the quantity of cattle, and other provisions, of which the poor inhabitants of Pulo Condore had hardly any to supply, and therefore could not afford the expected satisfaction. Through dread and apprehension, they therefore resolved to have recourse to flight, to preserve their lives. That they supplicate the great people to have pity on them; that they left all their property behind them, and only requested that their cabins might not be burnt; and concluded by prostrating themselves to the great people a hundred times."

the

the course of time, the Tunguinese governor, imitated the example of the ancestor of his sovereign, and also erected his government into a kingdom. Both of them, however, acknowledged a nominal vassalage to the Chinese Empire, and, occasionally, did homage at the court of Pekin. This connection with China, though slender, rendered it more interesting to the present embassy.

No part of Cambodia came within view of the squadron; but Tsiompa was seen on the 19th of May, and was more elevated from the sea than Cambodia. Tyger Island was observed near it; and the next day, two other islands called Pulo Cambir de Terre, and Pulo Cecir de Mer. Tsiompa presented to the naked eye, a fine well cultivated country, gently sloping from the sea, and beautifully diversified with luxuriant pastures and corn fields.

On the 22d of May, Pulu Canton, called also Pulo Ratan, appeared in sight, bearing the semblance of two islands, at some distance, being high at both extremes, and low in the middle. The squadron was now abreast of the kingdom of Cochin-China. The passage between its shore, and a vast multitude of small islands and rocks, called the Paracels, forming a lengthening cluster lying north and south for near four hundred miles, was not without some peril; and required no inconsiderable caution to guard against the effects of easterly currents, which in these seas, are called typhoons, as they are hurricanes in the Atlantic. Some preternatural appearances in the atmosphere indicated the approach of one on the 23d of May. An uncommon redness of the sky at sun-set, a hazy atmosphere succeeded to a fine clear day. The clouds, however, after some time dispersed.

Several canoes were seen fishing between the squadron and the land, and some of them were hailed to come along-side, but terrified at the sight of strange vessels, they immediately made sail, and scudded away directly before the wind. One of these, however, was overtaken by a boat dispatched from the Hindostan, and a fisherman was conveyed on board; he was an old man, with his head thinly covered with grey straggling hairs, and a countenance haggard with age and terror. His mind was soothed, and his alarms dispersed by attention and presents; and he conducted the Hindostan into Turon bay; but, before she came to, sudden squalls of wind, accompanied with thunder and lightning, drove all the ships again to sea, and they could not return to anchor till the 26th of May, when the Lion moored in seven fathoms water. The old Cochin-Chinese was now dismissed, with a compensation for his fright, as well as for his services. When conveyed to the shore, he jumped from the boat, almost with the alertness of youth, and, hastening away, never afterwards approached the ships*.

But a communication soon opened between the officer and interpreters, by means of the written characters of the Chinese languages. The pacific disposition of the squadron was announced, its general object declared, and an immediate supply of provisions was requested. The governing magistrate of the place had previously dispatched a messenger to the capital, to obtain instructionss how to act, and, in the interim, had checked the sale of all provisions.

In the course of three or four days, a person of considerable rank arrived at Turon, who complimented the embassador on the part of his master. He came in a large decked galley, of a light construction, conducted by numerous rowers. A state cabin was erected near the centre of the deck, curiously painted; and the head and stern were decorated with variegated streamers: the sides of the state cabin were encircled with spears, and various ensigns of authority. The principal officer, who came in her, was clad in elegant silk robes, and his manners were highly

* The first consideration was to find a salutary spot to accommodate the sick and invalids on shore. Gibraltar Hill, near the Lion's station, was determined on, where the ground was perfectly dry, and a clear stream of water was running behind the tents which were pitched for the men. With all possible dispatch the invalids were taken on shore, and a dispatch was preparing to be sent to the town of Turon, to announce the arrival of the ships, with the cause of their detention, and to request a supply of fresh provisions: but an alarm had already taken place; for as soon as the Lion anchored, an officer came on board, to know the reasons for the squadron's appearance: they were justified in supposing it to be hostile, having never before seen ships of such magnitude and warlike construction. Besides the usual squadron, another vessel from Macao, under Genoese colours, followed them into the bay, which added to the inimical aspect.

polished

polished and refined. Nine boats attended his galley, containing variety of provisions, as presents, from the chief, for the passengers and crew. From that instant the markets were abundantly supplied, and the articles disposed of at very reasonable rates.

The governor of the district also came on board, and invited the embassador and his suite to an entertainment on shore. He even proposed to keep an open table for their constant reception. Every mark of attention was shewn hence forward, and no effort neglected to cultivate the friendship and good wishes of his excellency and the squadron*.

Turon, before its civil commotion, was a more considerable place than it is at present. Many of the best buildings were in the centre of gardens, planted with the areca-nut tree. The market in the town was plentifully supplied with all the vegetable produce of tropical climates, and fish and poultry were abundant. At an entertainment given by the chief of the place, to a party from the ships, the tables were spread with many dishes, or rather bowls, consisting of pork and beef, cut into small square pieces, served up with a variety of savoury sauces; in others were stewed fish, fowls, and ducks: before each person was placed boiled rice, to serve instead of bread, and two porcupine quills performed the office of knife and fork. The spoons, in imitation of shovels, were made of porcelain. After dinner, an ardent spirit, obtained from rice, was served around in cups; when the host, in the genuine vein of joviality, after filling his vessel to the brim, and drinking its contents, turned up his cup, to demonstrate that no deception had been practised. He afterwards accompanied the gentlemen to a theatrical entertainment, where he had ordered a comedy to be performed: the principal characters were, a passionate old man, and a clown not without humour: both the characters were supported with such characteristic simplicity as to give satisfaction to the audience†.

Some Cochin-Chinese young men then displayed a singular instance of eastern agility in a game at shuttle-cock, in which their feet were employed as dexterously as their hands. But it is not to sportive games alone, that these ingenious people apply their feet as well as their hands. The lower orders, and even many of superior rank, are accustomed to go barefooted. By which practice they have acquired a strong contractile power, and rendered the foot an useful auxiliary to the hand.

Though these people possessed not, scientifically, the art of reducing the metalic ore into the metal, they had attained the practice of making very good iron. Their earthenware was very neat; and their dexterity appeared in every operation they undertook: sometimes, indeed, it was applied to improper purposes, and many of them, without much ceremony, appropriated privately to themselves, whatever suited them in the possession of another; nor were they much disconcerted by detection‡.

The soldiery of Cochin-China were armed with sabres, and had also long pikes decorated with tassels of hair dyed *red*, a colour forbidden to be worn in dress or equipage, by any except in

* The bay of Turon was more properly entitled to the name harbour. It is very capacious; and has good holding ground. The bottom is mud, and the anchorage safe throughout. In common weather, ships may be placed in such a manner as to have the advantage of the sea wind, coming in at the harbour's mouth, from the hours of three or four in the morning, to the same hour in the afternoon. This bay abounds with fish. In some of the boats, the fisherman, his wife, and children continue with him, sheltered with a circular roof, instead of a flat deck. Broad pieces of gourd, or calabach, kept their bodies afloat, and their heads from sinking, should they happen to fall overboard. As often as the fishermen return safely on shore, they erect altars to their deities among the bushes, making offerings of rice and sugar, and burning pieces of odorous and consecrated wood.

† On the return of these gentlemen from the entertainment, they were requested, by signs, to stop till an ancient lady walked towards them. Not having ever seen any Europeans before, she approached them with looks of curiosity, but with a suavity of countenance implying a willingness to apologize for the liberty she took to stop and gaze at them. She viewed them with great attention, and, after testifying her thanks, exulted in the gratification of an ardent curiosity.

‡ Wives and daughters are said to be transferred here on very easy terms, and without much scruple. All affairs of gallantry were passed over without much censure. There did not appear among the Cochin-Chinese, the least traces of painting or sculpture, but they had made some proficiency in music. The embassador was induced to accept of an entertainment, given on shore on the 4th of June, being his Britannic Majesty's birth day, and a grand repast was provided on the occasion: after which a play was exhibited in a style of peculiar excellence. The piece appeared to be a kind of historical opera. The warblers all observed time accurately, and their hands and feet were obedient to the regular movement of the instruments.

the service, or by order of the sovereign. The guard, which attended the embassador on this occasion, fired a salute in honour of the day, and performed a number of military evolutions to the astonishment of the surrounding multitude.

Among the Cochin-Chinese, elephants are served for food, and their flesh is esteemed a great delicacy. When these animals are slaughtered for the table of the king, or his viceroy, pieces are cut off and distributed among persons of rank, as distinguished marks of favour. Buffalo is preferred to other beef. It is not customary to milk any kind of animal, and therefore that salutary fluid constitutes no part of their food.

Before the troubles in Cochin-China, great quantities of gold were brought from the hills in dust, and bartered by the inhabitants for cotton, cloth, iron, and rice. The present mountaineers are descendents of the original inhabitants of their country. They are represented as a rude and savage people, differing as much in their manners, as in their features, from the less dark-complexioned low-landers, who were considered as a courteous, affable, and inoffensive race. The ancient simplicity of manners still, however, subsisted among the agricultural inhabitants*.

The dresses of these people are sometimes hardly sufficiently different to discriminate the sexes. They consisted of loose robes, with small collars round the neck, and folding over the breast, with large long sleeves covering the hands. Persons of rank, indeed, especially among the ladies, put on three of these gowns, of different colours. Linen was not worn among them, but they had, next the skin, vests and trowsers of slight silk or cotton. Turbans were frequently worn by the men. A few of the women appeared in hats; but neither sex enjoyed the luxury of shoes. Nothing attracted more the attention or admiration of the Cochin-Chinese than manufactured ornaments of polished steel. Silver-hilted swords were much coveted by the military men.

Swarms of uncommon insects were observed busily employed upon small branches of a shrub, then neither in fruit nor flower, but in its general habit bearing the appearance of a privet. These insects hardly exceeding in size, the domestic fly, were of a curious structure, having pectinated appendages, rising in a curve, bending towards the head, like the tail-feathers of the common fowl, but in the opposite direction: every part of the insect was perfectly white, or it was at least completely covered with white powder. The particular stem being frequented by these insects, or by this powder. The white wax of the east is said to be composed of this powder; a certain proportion of vegetable oil being mixed with it. The fact is ascertained, in some degree, by dissolving one part of this wax in three parts of olive oil made hot; the whole will then coagulate into a mass, with nearly the firmness of bees' wax.

The country, in general, is supposed to be healthy, the scorching rays of the summer being tempered by the regular breezes of the sea. The rainy season commences in September, and ends in November, during which time the low lands are frequently inundated by torrents descending from the mountains. The inundations, like the periodic overflowings of the Nile, rendered this country one of the most fruitful of any on the globe: many parts of the land produced three crops of grain in the course of a single year. But its most valuable produce, besides the precious metals, consisted in pepper, cinnamon, sugar, silk, and cotton, which were readily bartered by the natives for European manufactures.

Many circumstances concurred to hasten the destruction of the commerce of the country. Permission to trade was only to be obtained by purchase: extravagant duties were levied on goods for sale, and presents demanded by those invested with power; and recourse had been had to perfidy to cut off ship and cargo, an instance of which is recorded, by the East India Company, to have happened in the year 1778.

The French, it is said, considering the danger and insecurity of trading to those countries, without some independent settlement, had formerly conceived an idea of purchasing the small island of Callao, situated a few miles to the

* Persons of both sexes, and all ranks, chew the areca-nut with betel, and smoke tobacco: a silken bag, suspended from the girdle, containing those ingredients, properly separated, constitutes a necessary part of dress. Concubinage is here considered as no dishonour; and in this instance, there appears to be less difference in the morals of the two sexes than in Europe.

southward

southward of Turon. Such an intention rendered that island of importance, and a professional visit was made to it by Captain Parish and Mr. Barrow.

Callao, called Campello by Europeans, is opposite to the mouth of a large river on the coast of Cochin-China, about eight miles to the eastward; on the banks of which stands the town of Fai-foo, a place well known at a little distance from the harbour of Turon. The south-west coast is the only inhabited part of the island. The number of houses upon the island was about sixty, thirty of which were in the principal village, and chiefly built of wood; many others were constructed of stone, covered with tiles. The lower grounds contain about two hundred acres of rich fertile land, diversified with temples, shrubberies, and trees of various kinds: a stream of pure water, issuing from the mountains, is directed through sluices along the ridges of the vale, to refresh the rice grounds. Behind all those houses which were erected at a distance from the village, were growing, in a state of exuberance, tobacco, sugar-canes, and various kinds of vegetables*.

The whole of the Cochin-Chinese dominions fills the space between the twelfth degree of northern latitude, and the tropic of Cancer; but their breadth does not amount to two degrees of longitude. The whole comprehends about ninety-five thousand square miles.

Soon after Mr. Jackson's return to the Lion, the speedy departure of the squadron was announced to the officers of the government. This was answered by a complimentary message from the reigning prince, and accompanied by a second present of provisions. The embassador made an appropriate reply, expressing his intention of returning to Cochin-China, if practicable, after he should have visited the court of Pekin. The squadron then weighed anchor, and sailed from Turon on the 16th of June, 1793.

In the course of the first three days after their departure, they met with currents which set in various directions, from a variety of causes; and on the 20th of June a high peaked mountain presented itself, called by Europeans the Grand Ladrone. Near it was another, whose summit was less aspiring: and, on the same day, the main land of China appeared in sight, bearing north north-east.

On the 21st of June the squadron anchored in twelve fathoms water, under the lee of Chook-choo, another of the Ladrones; the Grand Ladrone bearing west-south-west, distant three leagues, and Chook-choo south by west three miles. The margins or rocks of the Ladrone Islands next the sea, are of a dark brown colour, and much corroded by the action of the salt-water. The rock consists of a mixture of clay, calx of iron in a small proportion, and a great deal of siliceous earth and mica. The soil upon the surface of the island seems to partake of their combined properties†

The squadron being now almost arrived at the destined scene of action, the embassador gave directions for the Jackall and Clarence brigs to proceed to Macao, on the business of the em-

* After about a fortnight's stay in Turon harbour, preparations were making by the squadron for their departure. The monsoon was now perfectly favourable for an expeditious passage to the coast of China. The invalids from the Lion, who had been on shore, were returned on board in better health, and the ship was purified from all traces of contagion. The passengers had, however, to regret the loss of a worthy man, Mr. Tothill, purser of the Lion. This gentleman had formerly been round the world with Sir Erasmus Gower, and chose to accompany his friend on the present occasion, though he had quitted a sea-faring life several years before.

About this period, another temporary uneasiness arose: Mr. Jackson, master of the Lion, had gone in one of the ship's boats, to take the soundings and bearings of the eastern shore on the peninsula of Turon, and was expected to return the same night. All the following day elapsed without any tidings of him, at which his friends were exceedingly alarmed, reflecting on the perfidy, and cruelty which had been exercised against strangers upon the coast. A rumour speedily reached the ship, that Mr. Jackson, his boat, and crew, had been seized and detained: this fact was afterwards confirmed by a Mandarine, who acknowledged that some foreigners had been taken up for attempting to penetrate, in the night-time, one of the rivers in a suspicious unwarrantable manner. The embassador, however claimed them, and a promise was made that the boat, effects, and crew should be restored. A few days after they did return; but, during their captivity, they had suffered much fatigue, and many indignities from the people.

† The Ladrones, and clusters of islands between them and the southern extremity of China, are so near to each other, and to the main land, and appear so broken and irregular, that they are supposed to be fragments disjointed from the continent, and from each other, at remote periods, by successive violent torrents, or in some sudden convulsions of nature. They often serve as retreats for pirates, and for the temporary abode of fishermen.

bassy

bassy. On this occasion two Chinese, brought from Europe, who had been companions of the interpreters, and to whom his Excellency had granted a passage in the Hindostan, wished to embrace this opportunity of returning to their native land, and solicited his Excellency's permission for that purpose. The conduct of both had given general satisfaction during the passage; and one of them was such an adept in the Chinese characters, that he had occasionally assisted the interpreters in the way of their profession. Before his departure his Excellency wished to make him a compensation for his trouble, but he was inflexible in his refusals, declaring at the same time his gratitude and esteem for the English nation; and that ample justice should be done to its character in China, should his opinions on the subject be adopted by his countrymen.

One of the interpreters wished also, at this time, to retire from the service of the embassy, through fear of being detected and punished for leaving his country without licence, and for accepting an employment from a foreigner. The case of the other interpreter was almost similar, but he had fewer apprehensions and more fortitude, and was determined to fulfil his engagement To prevent detection, he put on an English military uniform, with sword and cockade: he thought himself justified in taking these precautions for his safety, and was prepared for any event that might take place.

The other three Chinese embarked on board the brigs for Macao, with the persons dispatched thither by the embassador, for the purposes already mentioned. Dispatches were also forwarded from the government general of the Dutch East-India settlements, to their resident in China, containing orders for his co-operation with the views of the British ministry.

Through the English East-India Company's commissioners, the embassador had information that, " His Imperial Majesty's disposition to afford a reception to the embassy, suitable to its dignity, had not suffered the least diminution, as appeared by his repeated instructions on this subject to the different governments upon the coast. He had given orders for Mandarines to await his excellency's arrival, and the pilots to be properly stationed to take charge of his Majesty's ships, and to conduct them in safety to Tien-sing, as well as to prepare for receiving the embassador, and conveying him and his suite to Pekin; concluding his commands with these remarkable words, " *that as a great Mandarine had come so far to visit him, he must be received in a distinguished manner, and answerable to the occasion.*"

The embassador was informed also by the commissioners, that " two of the native merchants of Canton had been ordered to hold themselves in readiness to proceed to any part of the coast, on the report of his Majesty's ships being arrived there with the embassador, and in all probability to accompany his Excellency to court." It was conjectured they were to serve as interpreters, as well as to treat for any merchandize which might be sent with the embassador for sale. But the commissioners were of opinion, that " the embassador was already sufficiently provided with interpreters, and that the company had sent no goods for sale in the ship which attended the embassay, as she was chiefly laden with the presents for the Emperor."

It had been the custom, on former embassies, to send one of the *missionaries* dependent on the palace, to meet and accompany the embassador to court. Due precautions had been taken since the late French Revolution, and its concomitant calamities were known at Pekin, to prevent the introduction of similar principles. And though foreigners were not excluded from entering into Canton, and missionaries were still admitted into China, and encouraged in the capital, yet their conduct was now narrowly watched, and examined with suspicious vigilance.

Soon after the return of the brigs from Macao, the squadron got under weigh, and quitted Chook-choo on the 23d of June. They proceeded with a favourable gale towards the straits which separate the continent of China from the great Island of Formosa, or, as the Chinese call it, Tai-wan. The same day the ships passed between two small islands, one called Asses' Ears, the other Lema. The next day a large elevated rock appeared in sight, which being perfectly white, was named *Pedra Branca* by the Portuguese, who first discovered it.

On the 25th of June the squadron crossed the tropic of Cancer; and the setting sun was, that evening, attended with an unusual degree of redness. The morning of the 26th came in with heavy squalls, accompanied with thunder, lightning

ning, and rain; but there was a calm before noon. On the 27th of June the squadron continued to have squally weather, with heavy rain, chiefly from the westward, with a cross confused swell of the sea. On the 28th the wind was moderate and variable.

On the 3d of July the squadron weighed anchor, in order to stand in nearer to Chu-san, a vast number of Chinese boats of different sizes crowding round them; the novelty of European vessels having excited the most eager curiosity in the people of these boats, some thousands were in sight. Upwards of three hundred were enumerated about the Lion, from one of which a pilot was procured by the Hindostan. He conducted her off Tree-a-Top island. There the Hindostan anchored; but the Lion and Jackall stood in between the Plowman and Buffaloe's Nose. From hence some of the gentlemen, with the interpreter, were dispatched in the Clarence to Chu-san, to bring down the pilots ordered to be in readiness there to conduct the squadron to Tien-sing*.

Three hundred islands are supposed to be comprised between the Quee-sans and Chu-san harbour, through a space of about sixty miles in length, and thirty in width; among which there are many commodious harbours, fit for ships of the greatest burden. This advantage, together with that of their central situation, in respect to the eastern coast of China, and the contiguity to Corea, Japan, Leoo-keoo, and Formosa, make it a place of considerable trade. From one port, twelve vessels are dispatched annually for copper to Japan.

As soon as it was known to the governor that the Clarence belonged to the embassy, he ordered provisions of every kind on board. The next morning he also politely received the gentlemen on shore, invited them to plays and entertainments; and expressed his hope that a formal deputation, which he had already dispatched to the Lion, would prevail on the embassador to come ashore, where preparations were making to receive him with all due honours. The ardent desire of repairing speedily into the presence of the emperor, served as a full apology for declining to accede to any proposition which might tend to delay them.

The Governor had provided pilots who were competent to convey them to the next port, at which others were successively to be procured, till they should arrive at Tien-sing. The danger of coasting with such large ships, the frequent occasion to cast anchor, and the idea of a direct navigation to the gulf of Pekin being insisted on, he requested till next morning to determine on the business.

In the mean time the party went to take a view of the city of Ting-hai, about a mile distant. The way to it is intersected with rivulets and canals, in various directions; which might probably serve, among other purposes, to identify the property of the respective individuals. The ground was cultivated like a garden, not a single spot was wasted; and the road, though good, was very narrow, that as little as possible should be lost to culture.

The city is environed by a wall of thirty feet high, overtopping the houses, most of which consist of only a single story. Along the wall, at the distance of every hundred yards, square stone towers are erected upon it. In the parapets were also embrasures, and holes in the merlons for archery. There were no cannon, except a few old wrought iron pieces, near the gate. The gate is double, within which is a guard-house, where military men are stationed; and the bows, arrows, and pikes, are orderly arranged †,

While

* The Lion got a supply from Plowman's Island, consisting of bullocks, goats, and fowls, on very moderate terms; and of fish, from other boats which were along side. The sight of a vessel of such uncommon construction, as well as size, as the Lion certainly appeared here, almost put a period to labour both by sea and land: the number of visitors, who came to see the ship was so great, that all the decks were filled. Some of them, entering into the great cabin of the Lion, where the embassador had a portrait of the Emperor of China, immediately recognized it, and prostrating themselves before it, kissed the ground repeatedly, with great devotion.

† The city was, in some degree, surrounded, as well as intersected, by canals: the bridges thrown over them are steep, and ascended by steps, like the Rialto at Venice. The streets are narrow passages, paved with square flat stones. The town is full of shops, consisting chiefly of articles of cloathing, food, and furniture, pompously displayed. Even coffins, decorated with a variety of lively colours, are exhibited to allure those who meditate upon mortality. "Dogs, and other small quadrupeds intended for food, were exposed alive for sale. Loose garments, and trowsers, were worn indiscriminately by both sexes. No paupers appear about the streets, and industry seems uni-

While the party of Englishman were gratifying their curiosity with observing the surrounding objects, they were themselves still more the occasion of astonishment in their beholders. Few of the people here had ever seen an Englishman before. They collected now in multitudes round the strangers, who were attended by a guard which had been ordered for them. The people, however, pressed close upon them: it was then the month of July, and the crowd added to the sultriness of the weather. As the party were dressed in the European style, and consequently their clothes adhered closely to their bodies, some of them began to suffer exceedingly from the heat; while the surrounding multitude, in habits hanging loosely, felt no sort of inconvenience. The party took shelter from the heat and crowd, in a temple full of monstrous and grotesque figures of the supposed deities and guardians of the city; and soon afterwards returned in sedan chairs, followed by new multitudes.

The next morning the governor made his appearance in the hall, accompanied by a civil magistrate. The latter was distinguished by a square upon his breast, in party-coloured silk, in which an imaginary bird, the phœnix of the Chinese was wrought; as was that of a tiger on the Governor's robes, denoting his military functions. Tea followed an interchange of compliments, and the magistrate then began a speech, accompanied with a multiplicity of tones and gestures, and appeared to have been intended for a display of eloquence. He asserted, however, that it had long been the practise among the Chinese, to navigate along the coast from province to province, and that mode, in the present instance, must be the most eligible; that Chu-san was only a subsidiary port to the greater one of Ning-poo, and could not furnish such pilots as were now demanded. To this it was simply answered, that as the English ships were much larger than the Chinese, and of a different construction, they required a mode to be followed different from their usual practice: and that as Ning-poo might supply such pilots as were not to be found at Chu-san, they would immediately proceed thither in search of them.

The Governor instantly took the alarm. Their departure for Ning-poo, he observed, would be construed by the Emperor, as a disapprobation of their reception at Chu-san, which probably would occasion the loss of his office and of his dignity, pointing to a red globular button which then decorated his bonnet, and denoted the second class of magistracy in the empire, of which there are nine, except which, strictly speaking, there is no rank or dignity in the country.

The governor, to avert the danger, undertook to procure persons capable of conducting the squadron to the place required. Orders were instantly dispatched for all persons who had ever been at Tien-sing to repair immediately to the hall of audience. Several came, and after minute examination, two of them were found who had often traded to that port, and who said, the squadron might be conducted to a safe and commodious harbour for large vessels, under the island of Mi-a-tau, within a day or two's sail of Tien-sing.

These two men received directions from th governor to prepare themselves to go immediately on board the Clarence, and to pilot the English ships into the harbour he mentioned, or as near to Tien-sing as was practicable. To get themselves excused from this business, these men declared they had large families, which would be involved in the most extreme distress, if they were separated from them. These, and other arguments, were enforced in vain; the Emperor's orders, he said, must be obeyed, and he could hearken to no remonstrance.

versally to prevail. Men only were observed passing briskly through the streets. Women were seen, chiefly, in their shops, and at their doors and windows.

Of the latter, even the middling and inferior classes, the feet are unnaturally small, or rather truncated. Considering a small foot as a mark of beauty, they suffer much pain and inconvenience by having their feet maimed and distorted. The great toe is the only one permitted to act with freedom, the rest are doubled down under their foot in their tenderest infancy, till at length they unite with, and are buried in the sole. Hence they bring upon themselves an awkward hobbling gait, being obliged to walk upon their heels, and to totter as they pass. The same pressure is applied by some to the ankle. This artificial diminutiveness of the feet, though it does not entirely prevent their use, must considerably cramp the general growth, and injure the constitution of those who have been subjected to it. Some of the female mountaineers of the lowest class are exempt from this barbarous custom; but they are held by the rest in the utmost degree of contempt, and are employed only in the most menial domestic offices. So inveterate is the custom, that if of two sisters, otherwise every way equal, the one had been thus maimed, while nature was permitted to take its due course with the other, the latter would be considered as in an abject state, unworthy of associating with the rest of the family, and doomed to perpetual drudgery and obscurity.

The

The gentlemen returned on board the Clarence to make ready for departure; and they were soon after visited by the governor, influenced perhaps by curiosity, as well as by civility. The pilots being now on board, the Clarence got under way. The next day she passed through the straits called Gough's passage, and joined the Lion at her place of anchorage.

During her absence the embassador had been attended by the deputation mentioned at Chu-san, and by another from the governor of the province. Both had solicited his excellency, and his suite, to partake of entertainments on shore, which he declined, alledging the necessity of the immediate prosecution of his voyage towards the Emperor's court.

SECTION VI.

Navigation through the Yellow Sea—Embassador's Entrance into the River leading to Tien-sing—Progress of the Embassy, along the Pei-ho, towards the Capital of China—Departure of the Ships from the Gulf of Pe-che-lee.

THAT part of the coast of China along which the squadron had sailed, from the eastern limits of Tung-quin to the Chu-san islands, measures upwards of one thousand nautical miles. What remained of the Chinese coast from hence to the port nearest to Pekin, is of an extent still more considerable. But at Chu-san the squadron was arrived at the utmost boundary of recorded European navigation. The yellow sea derives its name from its receiving the water of the *Whang-ho,* or Yellow River of China, which abounds with yellowish mud. The Yellow Sea is bounded by China, Tartary, and the peninsula of Corea*.

The nature and cause of the qualities of the magnet have, at all times, been subjects of contemplation among the Chinese. Their theory, in this and many other instances, is the reverse of the European philosophers. It is obvious that while the magnetic needle, suspended by its centre, points at one extremity to the north, it looks, at the other, to the south; but each retains its own polarity. Thus the power, which principally attracts the needle, may be supposed to reside towards either or both portions of the earth. In England it has been supposed that the needle has its chief tendency to the north pole; but in China the south alone is considered as containing the attractive power.

The Chinese pilots had soon occasion to observe, how much more essential the perfection of the compass was, to the bolder navigators of Europe than to themselves; as the commanders of the Lion and Hindostan, trusting to that instrument, stood out directly from the land into the open sea.

The squadron entered the yellow sea on the 9th of July, in dark cloudy weather. Vast quantities of yellowish brown mud were disturbed by the motions of the ships through the water, when they were sailing in six fathoms water; a circumstance which, to persons who knew not the cause, might have created alarm, lest it should denote a sudden shoaling of the water.

On the morning of the 10th of July, they had thick hazy weather, with a constant heavy swell from the eastward. Two islands were perceived, which the pilots called Tchin-san, and Shoo-tong-yeng, bearing north-west by west, about nine leagues. On the 11th at five in the morning, two new islands were seen, called Patcha-san and Te-tchong. On the 12th the pilots observed, that the squadron was then opposite the Chinese province of Kiang-nan, and that in the neighbourhood were large shoals. The fog became so thick, that it was hardly possible to see from one end of the Lion to the other. It may be difficult to explain why a shallow sea should generally have the atmosphere over it foggy;

* The pilot being upon deck, gazed with astonishment at the manoeuvres of the ship, and the alacrity of the seamen in preparing her for sea. He had brought with him a compass, but no chart; nor any instrument for taking an observation. But as the Chinese seas are narrow, and every where intersected with islands, they have less occasion for charts, and they depend principally on the polarity of the needle.

foggy; but the fact has also been observed on the banks of Newfoundland, and other places thinly covered with water.

Efforts were made to keep the ships together during the fog, guns were fired, notwithstanding which the Hindostan was separated this day from the rest of the squadron. The pilots observed that the thickest fogs accompanied the south-east winds, which often continued four or five days at a time. On the 14th the wind continued in the same quarter; but the fog was dispelled. Several junks were observed steering different courses. Land birds also made their appearance, and sea-weed and bamboos were observed floating upon the water. The Hindostan, it afterwards appeared, had that day fallen in with the Endeavour brig, commanded by Captain Proctor, belonging to the East India Company. She had on board a young man who could speak the Spanish and Chinese, who intended to offer his services as an additional interpreter to the embassy.

Both divisions of the squadron had, on the 15th, the wind from the southward, accompanied part of the day with a fog. The Hindostan, in clear intervals, descried a small conic-shaped island, denominated Ka-te-noo by the pilot; and, on the following day, observed the craggy promontory of Shan-tung, and a small island to the south of it. From hence the Lion steered north by west by compass, till she got into the latitude of thirty-six degrees twenty minutes north. Here the soundings lessened from forty to twelve fathoms *.

On the 18th, the wind was for the most part easterly, and the weather foggy: in the afternoon, the squadron passed a very spacious harbour, in which were several junks. Between Cape Macartney and a projecting point of land in the form of an oblate cone, the coast in general is bold; and the mountains seem to extend far into the country. They are interspersed with beautiful villages along the shore. The bay of Ki-san-seu is very spacious, extending ten miles from east to west, and nearly the same distance from north to south: there are two harbours within this bay; one at the back of a high bluff point, called Zeu-a-tau; the other near the mouth of a river, called Ya-ma-too. The squadron remained one day in this bay, having procured new pilots; but on the 21st of July they made sail through the passage between Cape Zeu-a-tau and the island. In the evening they hauled round a projecting head-land, which with a bluff point due west from this, forms the entrance of Ten-choo-foo bay, in which the squadron anchored in seven fathoms water, within two or three miles north-east of the city of that name. The anchorage foul, with a hard ground and shells. The Clarence was therefore immediately ordered to Mi-a-tau to examine its harbour. In the mean time, an officer was dispatched to the governor of Ten-choo-foo, to proclaim the arrival and object of the squadron. As soon as the governor of Ten-choo-foo was informed that the embassador was on board the Lion, he instantly sent off a present of fresh provisions and fruit, and went afterwards in person to compliment his excellency †.

The governor invited the embassador, and his suite, in the most pressing manner, to entertainments and plays on shore. He wished for an opportunity of shewing his excellency, on a small scale, what a splendid reception was preparing for him, by his sovereign on his arrival at the imperial court. To a nation like the Chinese, among whom subordination is observed with unremitting strictness; and who look up to the throne with the profoundest degree of veneration, it might tend to impress them with a general sense of the importance of the English nation. Every consideration demanded, at

* On the 17th of July the whole squadron again joined company. Two capes or headlands were this day discovered. There was an inlet within Cape Macartney, in which several small vessels were seen at anchor. The ground being foul, it was thought prudent not to approach too near; but a snug harbour appeared to be within the low point, the entrance to which was between Cape Gower, and a reef of rocks running out from a neck of land.

† The governor had a numerous train of attendants, one of whom, having had occasion to speak to him as he passed along the deck, immediately threw himself upon his knees, and in that posture communicated his business, to the great surprise of the English spectators; a surprise that was much heightened by the undisturbed countenance of the governor; and he remained in that degrading situation all the time he was conversing with him. This instance of extreme distance between ranks did not, however, appear to proceed from haughtiness on the one part, or abjectness in the other; but indicated the respective disposition, brought about by forms, for inducing habits of subordination in society.

the

the same time, that the individuals who composed the embassy, should adopt such a cautious and circumspect conduct as to avoid giving offence where it was so easily taken; and thus to counteract the prejudices, which the Company's records testify to have been entertained in that country, against the morals and manners of the English.

The squadron being now pretty far advanced in the yellow sea, and expecting speedily to arrive at the destined port in the gulf of Pekin, his excellency thought it expedient to disperse a paper throughout the fleet, which was publicly read to the crews and passengers of each vessel. This paper, among other things, purported, that the success of the embassy depended upon gaining the good-will of the Chinese; and this might also depend on the ideas entertained by them of the English nation: that the unfavourable impression retained by the Chinese against the English, for irregularities formerly committed at Canton, could only be effaced by a conduct diametrically opposite: he therefore recommended particular caution and mildness in every intercourse, or accidental meeting with the poorest individual of the country. He trusted also that the propriety and expediency of maintaining the credit of the English name, would secure their voluntary obedience; and that the same incentives would produce similar conduct on every person concerned in the embassy.

His excellency declared that he should report the good conduct of those who merited commendation; but that he should be equally ready to censure misconduct, or to suspend or dismiss transgressors. His excellency further observed, that however impelled by a sense of duty to promote the objects of his mission, and to inspect into the conduct and punish the crimes of the disobedient; he should, on the other hand, be always happy to be able to report and reward the merit of every person as far as was compatible with the honour and welfare of the public*.

It now became a matter of importance to know whether the squadron could be safely sheltered in the harbour of Mi-a-tau. On the return of the Clarence from thence, the officer reported, that that harbour did not afford them a secure retreat, "on account of a dangerous reef of rocks lying off the east end of the easternmost of the Mi-a-tau islands, called Chan-san; that the reef was a dangerous object, and could not be approached nearer than where the soundings were nine fathoms, as the water shoaled close to it very suddenly." The Clarence, however, anchored in this bay, within a mile of the shore, in a clayey holding ground. This is about three miles long, and nearly as many broad; it is populous and well cultivated.

The report of the Clarence would not admit of a hope that any permanent shelter, for ships of such a size, could be had in the harbour of Mi-a-tau. It was now determined by Sir Erasmus Gower, before the officer should venture into the Gulf of Pekin, of which the strait of Mi-a-tau might be considered as the entrance, to send an officer to survey the mouth of the river which fell into it from Tien-sing. The Jackall was no sooner dispatched for this purpose, than a new Chinese pilot was recommended, perfectly acquainted with the matter in agitation. He was a man of venerable aspect, plausible in his manner, and appeared to be expert in nautical affairs. He asserted, that there was a very commodious harbour within six miles of Pei-ho, or White River, flowing from Tien-sing, with plenty of water for ships of any magnitude; and to confirm his assertion, he drew a sketch of the place, with its relative situation with regard to the northern coast of the gulf, and to the mouth of the river.

On the 24th of July, the Clarence, which had been sent a-head, fired several musquets as signals of danger; upon which the ships wore round, and stood off to east south-east. On the 25th, with the wind south and south-westerly, light breezes and clear weather, the squadron stood to the westward under easy sail. The depth of water regularly decreased from fifteen to seven fathoms. At midnight, the Clarence made the signal of danger: the ships consequently hauled their wind to the south-east,

* The reader will probably be gratified at being informed, that the paper produced the desired effect upon the persons to whom it was addressed. Their conduct was meritorious and exemplary, and met with the approbation of the embassador, who made a favourable report. It was also highly extolled by a Mandarine of rank, who accompanied the embassy throughout, who declared before he parted from it, that the same number of Chinese, taken from the different ranks of society, could not have behaved with more propriety and decorum.

and the Lion soon got into from six to ten fathoms.

On the 26th of July it rained most violently, accompanied with tremendous claps of thunder, and vivid flashes of lightning. The Jackall was perceived, returning from the westward, surrounded by a number of Chinese junks; and from the report of Captain Campbell, who had been sent to explore, it appeared that no secure harbour was to be found on the shores of the river Pei-ho.

The Jackall, in going up the river, was accosted by some Chinese soldiers in a boat, who desired her to cast anchor. Soon after a Mandarine, with several attendants, came on board; and when he was thoroughly satisfied that she belonged to the embassy, he made many enquiries respecting the embassador, and wanted to know what presents he had brought for his imperial Majesty. When he had gained what information he could, he closed his interrogatories by declaring, that the emperor had given special orders for the reception and accommodation of the embassy, and offered to supply whatever might be wanted*.

The Mandarines, on being assured that the ships were too large to cross the bar, supposed their size to be immense, and formed a proportionate idea of the quantity of presents that must have been required to fill them. Orders were instantly given for a sufficient number of junks to bring those presents, as well as the passengers and baggage, on shore. An extensive building, near the river's mouth, had been provided for the reception of the embassador, supposing he might have thought it necessary to have remained there a few days, to recover from the fatigue of so long a voyage†.

In the same plentiful and gratuitous manner were provisions constantly supplied; not only here, but at Turon bay, Chu-san, and Ten-choo-foo, without having been previously demanded.

Two Mandarines of rank, one in the military, and the other in the civil department, with a numerous train of attendants approached the Lion to pay their respects to the embassador: in the emperor's name, and their own, they congratulated him on his safe arrival, after traversing so great a portion of the ocean. The civil Mandarine, whose family name was *Chow*, was honoured with the additional title of *Ta-zhin*, or *Great Man;* and had the honorary distinction of a blue globe upon his bonnet: he was grave, but not austere, in his manners, and his address indicated a plain and solid understanding. He had been preceptor to some of the imperial family, and was considered as a man of talents and literature.

The military Mandarine had an open manly countenance, and had also the honourable addition of *Ta-zhin*, or *Great Man*. He had signalized himself in battle; and had received many wounds. Besides the red globe above his bonnet, he was honoured with another mark of favour for his services. This was literally a feather, and it was taken from a peacock's tail. It was given him by the Emperor, with directions to wear it pendant from his bonnet. He was celebrated for his skill in archery; the bow and arrow being still in use in the Chinese armies, and generally preferred to fire-arms. His person was perfectly suited for a warrior; he was above the middle size, erect, and muscular; and his activity and strength, as well as his other martial qualities, were highly prized.

A third person of high distinction, of a Tartar race, had been appointed by the Emperor as a principal legate on this occasion, but feel-

* The Mandarines spoke also about the articles of merchandize, which they supposed were brought for sale to Pekin. The idea of trade was so associated with that of Englishmen, that they could hardly give credit to the assertion, that the persons composing the embassy were not merchants, and that ships of war never carried out, or dealt in any kind of merchandize.

† Soon after the return of the Jackall, an astonishing quantity of live stock, fruit, and vegetables, were brought to the squadron in junks. The articles arrived in such profusion, that the surplus was necessarily returned. The reader may probably be surprised, on perusing the following authentic list. Twenty bullocks, one hundred and twenty sheep, one hundred and twenty hogs, one hundred fowls, one hundred ducks, one hundred and sixty bags of flour, fourteen chests of bread, one hundred and sixty bags of common rice, ten chests of red rice, ten chests of white rice, ten chests of small rice, ten chests of tea, twenty-two boxes of dried peaches, twenty-two boxes of fruit preserved with sugar, twenty-two chests of plums and apples, twenty-two boxes of ochras, twenty-two boxes of other vegetables, forty baskets of large cucumbers, one thousand squashes, forty bundles of lettuce, twenty measures of peas in pods, one thousand water melons, three thousand musk melons, besides a few jars of sweet wine and spiritous liquors; together with ten chests of candles, and three baskets of porcelaine.

ing

ing no inclination to trust his valuable person upon the ocean, he waited to receive his excellency on shore.

Concerning the presents, the Mandarines were particularly solicitous to enquire; a list of them was formally demanded. A mere catalogue could neither point out their qualities, nor their value, or indeed be properly understood by any effort of translation. They were therefore described by circumlocution, in all the pomp of oriental language*.

Orders were issued to prepare a number of junks to convey the whole across the bar, after which they were to be removed into different vessels, better calculated for the navigation of the river; other junks were also procured to convey the persons and baggage of the embassy from the ships to the river, where proper vessels were also ready to receive them.

The sea-junks which attended the ships amounted to about thirty, each of which was of the burden of two hundred tons. The hold, or cavity, below the upper deck, is divided into twelve compartments, by partitions of two inch plank, and the seams are caulked with a cement of lime, so prepared as to render them perfectly impervious to water. It is very glutinous, and soon acquires solidity. This cement, Dr. Dinwiddie observes, is composed of lime and oil, with a few scrapings of bamboo; the latter serving the same purpose as hair in English plaster.

While the necessary preparations for sea were going forward, which the commander could commit to the attention and ability of his officers, the embassador wished to have the satisfaction of his company with him to Pekin. One of the brigs might remain in the Peiho river to convey him to the Lion, after which his excellency requested that Sir Erasmus would quit the coast of China, and not revisit it till the month of May.

Sir Erasmus Gower declined the proposal of going to Pekin, conceiving his presence with the squadron indispensably necessary. He said he should return to one of the bays mentioned, and on the re-establishment of the health of the crews, he should proceed to accomplish the objects contained in the instructions for the advantage of the public. The Mandarines, having been applied to for that purpose, procured from the viceroy letters to secure good treatment for the Lion. On this occasion there was a general meeting on board the ships, between those who were to depart from thence, and those who were to remain behind, and they took an affectionate farewel of each other.

The embassador and gentlemen of the embassy, embarked on the 5th of August, 1793, for the Pei-ho river, on board the Clarence, Jackall, and Endeavour brigs; while the servants, guards, musicians, and other attendants, accompanied the presents and baggage in the junks. With a favourable breeze, and a spring tide, the crossed they bar in a few hours, and in the afternoon came to, for a short time, opposite a small village called Tung-coo, with a military post, where the troops were drawn up in compliment to the embassador. The situation of Tung-coo was not inviting; the land was low and swampy. From this place the vessels were dragged or trailed along by a number of Chinese peasants. In their progress, they soon passed another village, named See-coo, and reached the same evening the town of Ta-coo. Many of the houses in these places, as well as those interspersed upon the river's banks, were little better than huts, with mud-walls, and thatched roofs. A few buildings were large, elevated, and ornamented like the dwellings of opulence, but hardly any thing indicated the existence of middle ranks, or the multiplied gradations between abundant wealth and absolute indigence.

The embassador entered immediately into the

* The presents consisted of an orrery, a reflecting telescope, a celestial and terrestial globe, several chronometers, an air pump, a machine exhibiting the mechanic powers, five pieces of brass ordnance, musquets, pistols, sword-blades, a model of a first rate man of war of one hundred and ten guns, ornamented vases, various kinds of earthen ware, a large burning glass, a pair of magnificent glass lustres, specimens of the productions of the manufactures of Great Britain in wool, cotton, steel, and other metals, representations of several cities, towns, churches, seats, gardens, castles, bridges, lakes, volcanoes, and other antiquities, of battles by sea and land, dock yards or places for building ships, horse-races, bull-fighting, and of most other objects curious or remarkable in the dominions of his Britannic Majesty, and other parts of Europe: also of some of the most eminent persons, including the royal family of Great Britain; the representations themselves being monuments of the arts by which they are made in their present advanced state.

yacht

yacht prepared for his reception. It resembled the passage boats on the English and Dutch canals, but being intended for a longer route, was made more spacious, better decorated, and fitted up with greater conveniences. The apartment allotted for his excellency comprised most of the vessel, consisting of an anti-chamber, a saloon, a bed-chamber, and a closet. A square sopha, or seat *of honour*, such as are met with in the mansions of all chief Mandarines, and on which they give audience to their suitors. On each side the yacht, from head to stern, a gangway was constructed, projecting about two feet beyond the gunwale. Upon this the crew conducted the vessel. The cabin allotted for the crew was next the stern; in a corner of which perfumed matches were constantly, kept lighted, and placed round an idol upon a small altar. Boats attended with provisions, and cooks to supply the embassador's table, without the necessity of going ashore*.

The transhipping of luggage, of which there were six hundred packages, most of which were heavy and unwieldy, occupied about three days. While they were thus engaged, the chief conductors of the route, Chow-ta-zhin and Vancta-zhin occasionally visited the embassador, as well to testify their respect, as to observe that he was comfortably accommodated. Their politeness even extended to the principal gentlemen of the embassy, who were also honoured with visits of civility. The inferior Mandarines were equally attentive to the accommodation of the passengers. And even the Chinese soldiers and sailors manifested a disposition to please, beyond what could have been expected from persons of inferior rank.

The gentlemen in each yacht were served after the eastern manner, with a separate table, and occasionally with all the delicacies of the country; in which awkward attempts were sometimes made to imitate English cookery. Stewing, however, was their usual method of preparing animal food; of which beef and pork was the most plentiful, mixed with vegetables, and seasoned with a variety of savoury sauces. The common fowls of Europe were abundant here†.

Wheat grows in many provinces in China; but their flour is principally obtained from buckwheat, which (as well as the other species) is cultivated in many provinces of China. It is perfectly white, when separated from the bran.

To each yacht were sent jars of yellow vinous liquor, and also of a distilled spirit. The management of the latter seemed to be better understood than that of the former; for the wine was generally muddy, and ill-tasted, and soon became sour. The spirit was strong and clear. In the northern provinces it was usually distilled from millet, and in the southern from rice: the strength of some of it was ascertained to be above the common proof for ardent spirits. It is called by the Chinese, *hot-wine, show-choo.*

Fruits of various sorts, as plums, pears, apples, grapes, apricots, and oranges were served. Peaches were presented as coming from Pekin, in the neighbourhood of which, greater attention is supposed to be paid to the culture of that fruit than in the provinces. Green and Bohea tea were supplied in abundance. It appeared, however; to have been too recently gathered for an English palate, and it was common to hear a wish expressed for *London tea.*

The imperial mandates, upon all occasions, are received with a degree of reverential awe, and to be executed with a rigid punctuality; strongly implying that any infringement of them would receive a punishment adequate to the offence. The authority of government is dele-

* There were sixteen other yachts in the procession, besides the embassador's; many of them were eighty feet in length, and very capacious. The cabins were lofty and airy; above them were births for the crew, and beneath the floors were lockers for necessaries. Great magnificence was displayed out of compliment to the embassy. A guard of Chinese soldiers were devoted to the attendance of the embassador on shore, but a few only could be distributed among the yachts. Whenever an European went ashore from one of them, the presence of a soldier with him announced the immediate protection of the government; and might have been also intended as a check upon his conduct.

† Though roasting is very little practised in China, the Mandarines thought proper to dress some of the provisions in that style, and pigs, turkeys, and geese were brought whole upon the table. Baking was as seldom practised as roasting: no proper oven was indeed to be found in any part of the country. Instead of bread, boiled rice, or other grain, was generally used. The rice swells considerably in boiling; and this operation is supposed to occasion facility of digestion.

gated,

gated, on particular occasions, to the superior class of Mandarines*.

Soon after the embassador's return to his yacht, the viceroy unexpectedly sent there a sumptuous repast for him; and three others, each consisting of twenty-four dishes, not less expensive, were also sent to the three gentlemen who accompanied his excellency on the visit. It is observable that more than four persons seldom sit at the same table in China; but a banquet is frequently served upon small tables in the same apartment. It is probable that some circumstance of delicacy towards the embassador, might have induced the viceroy to adopt this particular mode of hospitality.

Every necessary arrangement having been completed for the embassy's proceeding up the river, the signal was made for sailing on the morning of the 9th of August. No guns are fired in China by way of signal; but circular rimmed plates of copper, in which there is a certain mixture of tin or zink to render it more sonorous, are used. These being struck with a wooden mallet, covered with leather, produce a noise that may be heard at the distance of two or three miles. This instrument is called *loo* by the Chinese, and *gong* by the Europeans in China. The drum is not used as a martial instrument, but it forms a part of religious music in the temples†.

The motions of the embassy on the river were not rapid; the meandering course of the stream tending to retard, in some degree, its progress; but it furnished a favourable opportunity of surveying the banks and circumjacent places, adorned with pleasant villas, and delightful gardens; the fields were in the highest state of cultivation, and principally covered with the *holcus sorghum*, the tallest vegetable producing grain. It is usually called Barbadoes millet, growing ten or twelve feet high, and is said to increase a hundred fold.

Near some of the towns and villages several pyramids were observed of the height of about fifteen feet, but of different dimensions with respect to length and thickness. They were composed of bags of salt heaped together in that form, as peat is preserved in many parts of Europe. Though these bags were covered with only common matting, they were sufficiently sheltered against the dissolution of their contents by rain‡.

Not only the first, but also the second day's progress up the Pei-ho, the banks were lined with innumerable spectators. On the third day they reached the port of *Tien-sing*, which literally signifies in the Chinese language, *heavenly* spot: an appellation which it claims from its situation in a genial climate, a fertile soil, a dry air, and a serene sky. It is the general mart for the

* During his excellency's stay before Ta-coo, an interchange of visits took place between him and the viceroy of the province, who, by the emperor's order, came from Paoting-foo, his usual place of residence, a hundred miles distant, to compliment his excellency on his entrance into the Chinese dominions. He was a person of the highest rank, that the embassador had before had an apportunity of seeing in China; and was certainly a man of the most refined manners. Though almost tottering with age, he was not less dignified than he was venerable. In this visit the constraint of eastern forms, especially on the introduction of tea, was dispensed with, and his excellency was received with a degree of ease and politeness, seldom surpassed in the polished courts of Europe.

The viceroy had taken up his abode at the principal temple of Ta-coo, consecrated to the God of the Sea, the proximity of which doubtless occasioned frequent invocations to that deity, under the name of *Toong-hai-vaung*, or King of the Eastern Sea. There are several figures of him in different brilliant edifices of porcelain. He is represented sitting on the waves, with ease, dignity, and firmness; and, though without a trident, he seems conscious of security by the possession of a magnet in one hand, while the dolphin, which he holds in the other, denotes his power over the inhabitants of the ocean. His agitated locks, and disordered beard, flowing in all directions, seem intended to convey an idea of that troubled element. The circumstance of the divinity's reliance upon a magnet, sufficiently indicates how intimately the knowledge of its properties has been incorporated with the mythological doctrines of the Chinese, as well as at what an early period that knowledge must have been applied to navigation.

† The approach of the embassy was an event of which the report spread rapidly. Crowds of spectators were assembled on the banks of the Pei ho, to see the procession pass; while the females, as shy as they were curious, took a glance at them through the gates, or peeped over the walls to enjoy the sight. A few, indeed, of the ancient dames almost dipped their little feet into the river, to get a nearer view; while the younger part of the sex kept behind at a more cautious distance.

‡ When night came on, the banks were illuminated with a diversity of variegated lights. The transparent lanterns, affixed to the mast-head of the vessels, denoted the ranks of the passengers they contained: all which, with the refulgent glittering of the lights from the cabins of the junks, reflected from the water, produced an enchanting moving illumination; a species of magnificence affording much gratification to the Chinese. The shrill sound of the *loo*, and the sting and buz of musquitoes during the night, afforded, however, no additional enjoyment.

northern provinces of China, and is built at the confluence of two rivers, from which it rises in a gentle slope. The palace of the governor stands on a projecting point, commanding the prospect of a broad bason, or expanse of water, produced by the union of the rivers, and which is almost covered with vessels. Across the rivers a bridge of boats extended, which occasionally separated to permit vessels to pass between them. Temples, and handsome edifices, adorned the quays; contiguous to which were yards and magazines for naval stores.

Yet in all the ardour of curiosity, the people preserved the greatest degree of decency and regularity in their demeanour. The gradual rise on every side from the water to the furthest extremity of the city, rendered the whole one great amphitheatre. It was literally lined with heads gradually and judiciously elevated one above another as their situation directed. Every face was seen, and the number surpassed any multitude that had ever been observed in the country.

The fleet which conveyed the embassy, stopped opposite the centre of the city, where the viceroy, who had come by land from Ta-coo, was in waiting for the embassador. His excellency disembarked, with all his suite, attended by his whole train of servants, guards, and musicians. He was received on shore by the viceroy. A body of Chinese troops was drawn up behind them, and the following order was observed:

Three military Mandarines, or principal officers.
A tent, with a band of music outside the tent.
Three long trumpets.
A triumphal arch.
Four large green standards, with five small ones between each, and bowmen between each small colour.
Six large red standards with matchlock men, and five small colours between each standard.
Two large green standards, with swordsmen between each.
Music Tent.
Triumphal Arch*.

At the upper end of the pavilion, where the majesty of the emperor was supposed to be constantly residing; it was expected a respectful obedience should be paid to that ideal glory: this, however singular, was accordingly performed by a profound inclination of the body.

Tea, sweatmeats, and other refreshments being served, the legate informed the embassador that the emperor was at his country mansion at Zhehol in Tartary, where he proposed to celebrate the anniversary of his birth-day, being on the thirteenth of the eighth moon, answering to the seventeenth of September; and that it was his desire to receive the embassy in that city.

When the embassador, and the gentlemen of his suite, had returned to their respective yachts, a magnificent repast was sent them on the part of the viceroy, as at Ta-coo, together with presents of tea, silk, and muslins. He also sent a plentiful dinner, and presents to the soldiers, musicians, artificers, and servants of the embassy†.

One of the dramas particularly attracted the attention of those who recollected scenes somewhat similar, upon the English stage. The piece represented an Emperor and Empress of China living in supreme felicity, when a revolt suddenly takes place, a civil war ensues, battles follow, and at length the arch-rebel, who was a general of cavalry, kills his sovereign with his own hand, and routs the imperial army. The captive Empress appears upon the stage in the deepest agony of despair, lamenting the loss of her husband and her dignity, when the conqueror enters, approaches her with respect, sooths her sorrow, talks of love and adoration, prevails on the Chinese princess to dry up her tears, forget her deceased consort, and yield to a consoling wooer. The nuptials, and a grand procession conclude the piece.

* The weather being then extremely warm, several of the troops carried fans with their military arms. Fans are worn in China by both sexes, and by all ranks. Officers in other parts of the east are frequently seen exercising their battalions with umbrellas over their heads.

† Among other instances of his great attention to the embassador, a temporary theatre was erected opposite to his excellency's yacht; where a company of comedians, at various times of the day, exhibited dramatic pieces. The dialogue was spoken in a kind of recitative, accompanied by a variety of musical instruments. Female characters were performed by boys or eunuchs. Unity of place was apparently preserved, for there was no change of scene during the representation of one piece.

The

The weather in the evening proving favourable for departure, the yachts and other vessel belonging to the embassy proceeded up the Pei-ho, a little way beyond Tien-sing. The houses of this capital are chiefly built of brick, of a leaden blue colour; some few are red, and others of a pale brown. Those last-mentioned had been exposed to no other heat than that of the sun. Some of the houses at Tien-sing are two stories high, contrary to the usual mode which the Chinese affect in building. They generally prefer those of a single story, in conformity to the original form of all dwellings. Many of the Chinese feel themselves awkward in ascending the stairs, or looking down from heights. In the making of bricks from the clay, thin layers of straw are placed between them, to prevent their adhering together while they are drying; hence, it appears that the Chinese, like the children of Israel, could not make brick without straw.

As the embassy proceeded, the lands continued to appear cultivated with the utmost care. The Barbadoes millet was frequently planted in alternate rows, having between them other distinct rows of a smaller grain and humbler stems. Sometimes in small spots, accidentally vacant near the edges of the bank, or along ridges of corn, was planted a species of *dolichos*, not very dissimilar to the kidney bean. Sometimes whole fields of beans were observed: but no weeds appeared to diminish useful produce, or to share with it the fruitfulness of the earth; every field had the neatness and regularity of a garden.

Few trees or cattle exhibit themselves in these plains: the eye, however, is delighted with the unbounded prospect of habitations, and the flourishing display of culture: yet the people have experienced the dreadful effects of famine, from the destructive depredations of locusts, or the inundations produced by the fall of torrents from the mountains. On these occasions, robberies are frequent; but as they are committed from necessity, and the cravings of hunger, those crimes usually cease on the return of plenty*.

The variety of objects upon the shore, attracted the notice of the travellers, who often quitted the yachts to take occasional excursions upon land. But they began to perceive that they were watched with a degree of jealousy and suspicion, beyond what they had ever heard of the cautious police of China. It appeared that this change of behaviour was in consequence of orders from the legate. At length, however, the interpreter discovered, from scattered hints in the familiarity of discourse with the Mandarines, that some recent dissatisfaction had been conceived at the court of Pekin against the English nation. The only explanation, which could be obtained on this occasion, was the following.

In 1791, the Emperor of China dispatched an army into the country of Thibet, to drive back the Rajah of Napaul, who had made predatory excursions thither; and in the contest, his army met with more resistance, and suffered greater losses than had been expected from so feeble an enemy. Mortified at their want of success, some of the Chinese officers imagined they perceived European troops, and European tactics opposed to them. They discovered hats, as well as turbans among their enemies, and they concluded that the former must have been English. Hence it is politically and industriously propagated among the people of China, that the English had, on this occasion, actually afforded assistance. Though the embassador took it for granted, that neither of these surmises could be relied on, he was induced to believe that the bare assertion would be sufficient to alienate the administration of China from any favourable disposition towards the government of Great Britian.

It had been the common policy of many countries in the east, prior to a menaced attack on the territories of a foreign prince, to send a friendly embassy thither, the better to discover their real situation, strength, and plan of operations. The British administration well knew with what a jealous eye the Chinese beheld their acquisitions in Bengal, and the prejudices which might be raised on the score of ambition; and

* The low and sometimes marshy country, through which the river passes, contributes to the production of insects; many of which are troublesome from their sting, and others from their unpleasant noise. The music produced by a species of cicada, was not of the vocal kind, but was occasioned by the motion of two flaps or lamellæ which cover the abdomen of the insect. It is the signal of invitation from the male to allure the female to amorous dalliance, who is not furnished with these flaps. A species of moth, little inferior in size to the humming bird, was also frequent in this quarter.

the

the most judicious method had been pointed out to the embassador to follow, to allay any suspicions arising from a dominion so accidental, and so little sought for; but it was impossible to foresee, or prepare against the imputation of an interference with the Chinese arms which had never taken place.

It may be necessary to observe, that the government of China has not established any mode of conveying letters for the convenience of the people. The emperor *only* receives and sends expresses at the rate of a hundred and fifty miles a day. For the exigencies of government, as well as for the use of the officers of state, slower couriers are appointed, who are rarely permitted to carry letters or packets to individuals. But information is conveyed to the body of the people, or withheld from them at the discretion or caprice of government*.

Persons of rank in China are particularly careful about the quality of the water, and generally use distilled water for their own consumption: even the lower classes among the Chinese never drink it till tea, or some other salubrious vegetable has been infused in it. Not only is this infusion drank hot, as common beverage, but even wine, and every other liquid. In other climates warm beverages are also found most wholesome. In the hot climate of Hindoston, choultries or inns are founded along some of the public roads, as buildings for pious uses are elsewhere. The Chinese, however, enjoy, in the heat of summer, the grateful coolness produced by ice; but it is principally with fruits and sweetmeats. In bowls, which are generally used in China instead of dishes, alternate layers were placed of ice, with kernels of apricots and walnuts, or the seeds and slices of the hairy root of the linen-wha, were frequently presented to the embassador and his suite, at breakfasts, given by some of the principal Mandarines†.

The Chinese of superior rank are courteous, familiar and affable; but they are vain and national. The two Mandarines who conducted the embassy, took great pleasure in satisfying the enquiries made about their country, as far as they were able. At every military post, and every respectable town along the river; troops were drawn out while the yachts carrying the embassy were passing, and a salute of three guns was fired. Of military posts, some were passed every day, when the high road happened to approach, the river. Few carriages were seen upon it, and none with more than two wheels. Gentlemen travel usually on horseback, and in sedan chairs, or chair palanquins: ladies are generally carried in close litters, suspended between mules or horses. There are no coaches in the country.

The custom mentioned by former travellers, of applying sails to land carriages, is not entirely laid aside. These vehicles are small carts, or double barrows, made of bamboo, with one large wheel between them. When there is no wind to favour the progress of one of these, it is drawn by a man, who is regularly harnessed to it, while another regulates it behind, and assists in pushing it forward. When the wind is favourable, the sail saves the labour of the former of these two men.

On the 16th of August, the yachts having proceeded as far up the river Pei-ho as the depth of water would admit, came to anchor near Tong-choo-foo, which is ninety miles distant from Tien-sing; beyond which the Peiho was no longer navigable except for boats.

At Ten-choo-foo Sir Erasmus Gower experienced the good effects of the orders that had been

forwarded

* The river being shallow, the mud, or diluted clay, raised from its bottom by the large vessels passing over it, or detached from its loose banks, is suspended in the water in such large quantities, as to render it turbid and hardly potable. But the Chinese have a method of refining it by the following simple process. A small quantity of allum is put into the hollow joint of a bamboo, in which several perforations are made. A convenient quantity of water is taken from the river, and stirred about three or four minutes with the bamboo; by which the allum unites with the earthly particles, and precipitates them to the bottom, leaving the water above them pure and transparent. The water of the Nile is also said to be purified by allum.

† Though tea is the common beverage of the Chinese, which they are accustomed to take at all hours, and is usually presented to visitors; yet there are some, especially in the northern provinces, who delight in spirituous liquors, and are disposed to be very convivial. The Mandarines indulge themselves greatly in habits of luxury. They daily partake of several meals of animal food, highly seasoned; each repast consisting of several courses. The intervals of leisure were devoted to smoking tobacco, mixed with odorous substances, and sometimes a little opium, or in chewing the areca nut. The books of entertainment, such as histories, novels, and plays abound in China. Sedentary gratifications of the senses, rather than exercises of the body, or pleasures of the mind, were principally attended to in their vacant hours.

forwarded in his favour by the viceroy of Pechelee. A supply was furnished of provisions for all his people. From thence he proceeded to examine the bay of Ki-san-seu. He arrived there the 15th of August, and found the bay sufficiently secure for a well-sound ship to winter in. Wood for fuel, and fresh water were, however, at a distance in the bay. The difficulty of obtaining these might prove injurious to the Lion's crew, in their weakened state. The barren aspect of the neighbouring country, and the poverty of the inhabitants, left it doubtful whether the sick and convalescents could be supplied with things necessary to recruit them. It was therefore determined to continue the voyage to Chusan, where more effectual assistance might be expected. The distance was short, and the season favourable; and it had been found, in the former passage, "that in no part of the world was the sea so clear of danger as from Chu-san to the river Tien-sing."

SECTION VII.

Embassy lands near Tong-cho-foo, proceeds through Pekin to a Palace in its Neighbourhood, returns to the Capital.

TOWARDS the western extremity of an immense plain stands Pekin, the present capital of China. The route lay through it from Tong-choo-foo, to the autumnal palace of the Emperor, called yuen-min-yuen, or garden of perpetual verdure; where such of the presents as could be safely conveyed to Zhehol were to be deposited: and the embassador and his suite were to be accommodated close to yuen-min-yuen, while preparations were making for the journey into Tartary. Every thing brought by the embassy, was taken out of upwards of thirty vessels, and housed in the course of a single day. But materials and labourers are, in China, at the instant command of the state: a promptitude and cheerfulness of obedience argued a confident expectation of an adequate recompence*.

Almost the whole of the habitable parts of the temple were occupied by the numerous train of the embassador; only one priest remained in it to watch over the lamps of the shrine, and to attend his excellency's commands; while the rest retired to a monastery in the neighbourhood. The rooms had boarded platforms, elevated a foot from the floor, like those which are sometimes seen in military guard-rooms in Europe: thick woollen cloths were spread upon them, which, with the addition of a cushion, constituted the whole of the bedding of these priests. Little more is used by other classes of society in China, where the common people continue to wear at night, a considerable part of the dress which covers them in the day.

A public banquet or breakfast was prepared the following morning by the Mandarines, to which every one belonging to the embassy was invited. It was denominated a breakfast from the time of giving it; but from the quantity of viands of which it consisted, it formed a very substantial repast. Tables were spread in the vacant parts of the new store-rooms; no other place, under cover, being sufficiently ample. It seemed, in this instance, to be the Chinese etiquette, when an extraordinary mark of civility is intended, to include, with the principal object of it, the whole of his attendants.

The assemblage of the people was so great, from the beach to the temple, that it had the

* The temple, now converted into a place of accommodation for the embassador and his suite, had been founded several centuries ago by a munificent bigot, for the support of twelve priests of the religion of Fo, which is the most general in China. It professes the doctrine of the transmigration of souls. This edifice is occasionally converted into a kind of caravansera, where travellers of rank are lodged in their journies upon the public service, through this part of the country. The most conspicuous deity in this temple was a personification of Providence, under a graceful female figure, holding in her hand a circular plate, with an eye pourtrayed upon it. Two halls of worship belonging to this temple, contained several statues of male and female deities; some carved in wood, and painted with a variety of colours: others were of porcelain.

appearance of a crowded fair, in which booths were erected for the sale of liquor, fruit, and other articles. Among the multitudes of people in Tong-choo-foo, not a person had been observed to solicit charity. A small portion of the people seemed, indeed, to be in a state approaching to indigence; and none were driven to the necessity of craving assistance from a stranger. In seasons of great calamity the emperor of China always comes forward: he orders the granaries to be opened; he remits the taxes of those who are visited by misfortune: he appears to his subjects, as standing almost in the place of providence in their favour *.

Some of the Mandarines, who accompanied the English to Tong-choo-foo, were acquainted with the true nature of eclipses; but the Chinese, in general, did not seem to be sufficiently skilled in numerical computation, to be able to solve any intricate problem. They calculate by the assistance of a machine called *Swan-pan*, in which balls are strung on wires in different columns, and arranged upon the plan of Arabic figures.

Among the Chinese, silver is properly a merchandize. None of it is coined, though large payments are made of that metal in masses of about ten ounces each, having the form of the crucible they were refined in, with the stamp of a single character upon them, to ascertain their weight. Its value, in currency, rises and falls according to its relative scarcity or plenty. Spanish dollars are known at Tong-choo-foo, and are current throughout Asia. Gold is often used in articles of dress or luxury.

There are those circular and lofty edifices in China, which the Europeans term pagodas, dedicated to several uses; but none to religious worship. The temples consecrated to such a purpose differ little in height from common dwelling houses. In many instances there is a similarity in the exterior forms of the religion of Fo. There is no state religion acknowledged or encouraged in China: but the faith of most of the common people is that of Fo. The Emperor is of one faith; many of the Mandarines of another. Upon the altars of the Chinese temples are placed, behind a screen, an image of *Skin-moo*, or the Holy Mother sitting with a child in her arms in an alcove, having rays of glory round her head. Tapers are also constantly burning before her.

No people are more superstitious than the common Chinese. Besides the common offices of devotion on the part of the priests and females, the temples are often visited by the disciples of Fo previous to any undertaking of importance, whether to marry, go a journey, or conclude a bargain.

The Chinese, in their turn, had an opportunity of seeing an European ceremony of religion, in the funeral of a person belonging to the embassy, who died near Tong-choo-foo. He was an ingenious artist of the name of Eades, belonging to the embassy. He came from Birmingham, and was induced, though beyond the middle age, to undertake a long and perilous voyage, in hopes of acquiring, among other arts, that of making a kind of tinsel that did not tarnish, as practised at Pekin. By order of his excellency, the funeral rites were performed the next day, with military honours. It was attended not only by the greatest number of his late fellow travellers, but by a vast concourse of Chinese. The ceremony of interment was performed with becoming decency, suitable to eastern custom, which considers the least mark of levity, on these occasions, as barbarous and inhuman. His body was interred amidst several Chinese tombs, interspersed with cypress trees.

The Chinese burying-places are no otherwise consecrated, than by the veneration of the people,

* In passing along the streets to purchase a few trifles, a party of gentlemen, accompanied by some Mandarines, observed on the sides of houses, the projection of a lunar eclipse, which was speedily to happen. In the clear and pleasant atmosphere of this climate, all classes of men are inclined to be attentive to the appearances of the heavens; which they acquire gradually the habit of connecting with sublunary events, as if the latter were dependent on the former. Some accidental coincidences taking place served to strengthen this belief; and the vanity of prediction had certainly its share in forming the pretended science of astrology. The people of China have, from the earliest ages, considered a solar eclipse as portending some national calamity: and as they estimate their own happiness by the degree of virtue possessed by their sovereign, they attribute to some deficiency on his part whatever they think portentous. He never ventures an any important undertaking at the approach of such an eclipse, but affects to avoid the converse of his ministers, that he may take a review of his past actions, for the purpose of correcting their errors, for which the approaching eclipse may be sent as an admonition, and invites his subjects to offer him freely their advice.

ple, the remains of whose ancestors are deposited in them. The people preserve those sacred repositories with great care, visit them annually, remove any weeds that may have grown, or dirt that may have been thrown upon them.

The country, for some miles round Tong-choo-foo, is level and fertile. Some of the English gentlemen were supplied with horses, to enable them to ride about the neighbourhood. Mules are, however, more esteemed than horses, as subsisting on less food, and capable of more labour. Many of the horses were as regularly spotted as a leopard. The riders met several Chinese, who, on approaching, alighted in civility to the strangers. This is a mark of respect shewn here, and has been extended to other parts of the east.

The principal autumnal crops are Indian corn and millet: there are few inclosures, and few cattle to enclose. Hardly any fields are to be seen in pasture; the animals for food and tillage being principally fed in stalls, and fodder collected for them. Beans, and the finer kind of straw cut small, formed a considerable part of the food for horses. The roots of corn, and coarser stems, are often left to rot upon the ground, for the purposes of manure*.

But however meritorious their conduct may be found, their husbands arrogate an extraordinary dominion over them, and treat them with great severity: holding them sometimes at such a distance as not to permit them to sit at the same table with them; behind which they frequently attend as handmaids. But this dominion is sometimes tempered by the maxims of mild conduct in the different relations of life. The old usually reside with the young to temper their impetuosity; and obedience to them is enforced as well by habit as by moral precepts. Plain sentences of morality are hung up in the common hall, where the male branches of the family assemble. The child is bound to labour, and provide for his parents' maintenance and support; and the brother for the brother and sister in extreme distress. The most distant relative, if in ill health, or in distress, has a claim upon his kindred for relief. While these are the practices of the Chinese, we cannot be surprised at seeing no mendicants or objects of distress among them†.

The embassador, and three gentlemen of his suite, travelled in sedan chairs, the usual vehicles for persons of high rank in China. The other gentlemen, and all the Mandarines, were on horseback. Chinese soldiers on foot were occupied in clearing the way. The servants and privates of his Excellency's guard were in rough carriages or waggons. The road forms a magnificent avenue to Pekin, and is perfectly level; the middle of which is paved with granite, bordered, in many places with trees. The travellers soon passed over a marble bridge, which is wide and substantially built over a rivulet not subject to inundations, and is little elevated above the level of the roads which it connects together.

A halt was made to breakfast at a small village upon the road. The inn bore no resemblance to the modern edifices of that kind in England. No elegance; no decorations; but the rooms, though small, were clean and cool. Every sort of refreshment was provided. From this place, if not before, the mind was at every step in anxious expectation of discovering that capital, which was said to be the greatest in the world. They arrived at length at one of the eastern suburbs. The street, through which they passed, was paved, and full of people. It exhibited a busy scene of manufacturers, shop-keepers, and buyers. Though the concourse of people was diverted, for a while, with the passing spectacle, they afterwards returned to their own concerns.

* The houses of the peasants are scattered, instead of being formed into villages: the cottages, however, seem to be clean and comfortable. They have neither fences nor gates to guard them against wild beasts or thieves. Robbery is seldom committed, though not punished by death, unless accompanied by acts of violence. The wives of the peasantry are truly industrious. Besides the rearing of their children, and carefully attending to every domestic concern, they are assiduous in exercising certain trades within doors. They rear silk-worms, spin cotton, and even work at the loom.

† Many heavy and bulky packages were carried in the following manner by men. To each side of the load are fixed two strong bamboos. If four men, that is two to each bamboo, should not be sufficient, two shorter than the first are fixed to the extremities of each of the original long ones. These eight extremities are brought to rest on the shoulders of eight men. And by bamboos fastened upon others, the strength of a greater number of men may be applied in a geometrical proportion, each sustaining an equal degree of pressure in raising and carrying very considerable weights.

To

To traverse this suburb took about fifteen minutes, when the party appeared before the walls of the city of Pekin. The arrival of the embassador was announced by the firing of guns; and a banquet was provided for all the gentlemen, at a resting place within the gate. Over the gate was a watch tower several stories high. Round the gate, on the outside, was a semicircular wall, with a lateral gate, on the plan of European fortifications. The city walls were about forty feet in height. Several horsemen were able to ride abreast upon the ramparts, ascending to them upon slopes of earth on the inside *.

Most of the houses in this main street had shops painted, gilt, and decorated like those of Tong-choo-foo, but in a grander style. Several circumstances contributed to throng so wide a street. A funeral procession was met in it, which, from the *white* colour of the mourners, was taken for that of a wedding;—but the lamentations of the young men attending the corpse, inclosed in a handsome square case, shaded with a canopy painted in lively colours, soon undeceived the travellers. The female relatives followed behind, in sedan chairs covered with white cloth. Soon after a nuptial procession presented itself to view. The lady, whom the bridegroom had not yet seen, was carried in a gaudy chair, ornamented with festoons of flowers, attended by her relations, friends, and servants, supporting the paraphernalia, being the only portion given with a daughter, in marriage, by her parents.

When the embassy had arrived at the eastern side of the yellow wall, they observed much less bustle than before, and instead of shops for business, the houses were all private. Before the courts of these houses, a wall curtain obstructed the view of the passengers; and this was called, *the wall of respect*. They halted opposite the treble gates, which are nearly in the centre of this northern side of the palace-wall: it appeared to inclose a considerable space of ground. In some spots were steep mounts; in others deep hollows, now filled with water, with varied margins. Out of these artificial lakes, small islands rose, beautified with fancied fabrics, and interspersed with trees. On the hills of different heights the principal palaces for the Emperor were erected, and some of these eminences were embellished with lofty trees; forming a scene irresistably charming. The whole had somewhat the appearance of enchantment.

Continuing in a westerly course through the city, the dwelling house of some Russians was pointed out; together with a library of foreign manuscripts, among which was said to be an Arabic copy of the Koran. Some Mahometans were seen, distinguished by their red caps. Among the spectators of the novel sight, some women were observed, natives of Tartary, or of Tartar extraction, whose feet were not distorted, like those of the Chinese. Many of them were genteely dressed, and had delicate features: a thick patch of vermillion on the middle of the lower lip, seemed to be a very favourite mode of embellishment. Some of these ladies were in covered carriages, and others rode on horseback astride, like men.

The embassy had now reached the villa intended for its reception, situated between Hai-tien and Yuen-min-yuen. It contained a garden, divided into serpentine walks, and diversified with artificial inequalities. The building comprised several distinct pavilions, embellished principally with landscapes; a rivulet meandering round an island; a grove of trees, with scattered grass spots, and craggy rocks heaped rudely upon each other.

The governor of this palace, after an interchange of the accustomed compliments of civility between him and his excellency, agreed with the latter that the most advantageous mode of displaying the presents, would be to place the principal articles on each side the throne, in one of the halls of audience. The approach to this hall, the external appearance of which was truly magnificent, was through three quadrangular courts,

* On entering Pekin nothing was perceived that could excite particular attention: few of the houses were higher than one story; none more than two: the street was about a hundred feet wide, but unpaved, having water sprinkled on it to keep down the dust. Across the street, a triumphal arch is erected, built of wood, having three elegant gateways. Over these were constructed three roofs, above each other, richly decorated. The first street extended on a line directly to the westward, till it was interrupted by the eastern wall of the imperial palace, called the Yellow Wall, from the colour of the varnished tiles on the roof. Immense magazines of rice were seen near the gate; and looking from it to the left, along the city wall, was perceived an elevated edifice, as an observatory, erected by the Emperor Yong-loo, who has greatly embellished the city of Pekin.

surrounded

surrounded by buildings separated from each other. It was erected on a platform of granite, raised four feet above the level of the court before it. Two rows of large wooden columns, the shafts of which were painted red and varnished, supported its projecting roof; and the capitals were decorated with various scrolls and devices in vivid colouring; particularly with dragons, whose feet were armed with five claws each. On the edifices and furniture of the princes of the Emperor's court, four claws only appear in their feet; the fifth is reserved for his Imperial Majesty alone.' The hall, in the inside, exceeds one hundred feet in length: it is forty feet in breadth, and its height is above twenty feet.' This spacious hall was well calculated to display the presents; having nothing left in it but the throne, a few jars of porcelain, and a musical clock, playing twelve old English tunes, made early in the present century, by *George Clarke, of Leadenhall Street, London**.

These prostrations are required from strangers, as well as from the subjects and tributary princes of the empire; and the legate now pressed the embassador to practice them in his presence before the throne. His excellency having received his Majesty's instructions on this head, was prepared to answer the demand. He well knew the etiquette of the court in exacting ceremonies, as degrading to one party as exalting to the other. Attending to this spirit, orders were given to write in large Chinese characters, not only on the flags of the yachts up the river Pei-ho, but also on those which accompanied all the land carriages of the embassy, EMBASSADOR BEARING TRIBUTE FROM THE COUNTRY OF ENGLAND.

As his excellency might probably be supposed to be unacquainted with the meaning of those characters, he forbore making any formal complaint, as it could answer no other purpose than that of abruptly terminating the embassy. The characters, however, had attracted general notice; they were inserted in the Court Gazette, and would find their way into Europe. The embassador was therefore attentively on his guard with respect to any act of his own which might tend to lessen the dignity of his sovereign.

Wishing to gratify the supposed wishes of the Emperor, without failing in duty towards his own sovereign, he did not refuse to accede to the ceremony of prostration, but offered to perform the whole on a condition which did not render it less personally respectful to the Emperor, while it removed the principal objection attached to it as an act of homage in his representative character. The condition was, "that a subject of his Imperial Majesty, of equal rank to his own, should perform, before the picture he had with him of his Majesty, dressed in his robes of state, the same ceremonies that the embassador should be directed to do before the Chinese throne." It was of importance that this proposal should be given in writing, to avoid the possibility of misconception: but the embassadorial interpreter was unacquainted with the style requisite for the palace; and the missionaries hardly ever attempted to write official papers. The legate, who aimed at nothing less than unconditional compliance, resisted any compact in writing, and was unwilling to allow any assistance for such a purpose.

After many applications on the part of the embassador, several of the missionaries were introduced to his Excellency; but in a formal and cautious manner, and in the presence of the legate and a Portuguese jesuit, whom the Emperor had raised to a higher degree than any of his brethren. This man was inimical to the interests of Great Britain, and encouraged the legate to resist the Emperor's request to remove to the capital, where preparations might be more conveniently made for the journey to

* The throne was ascended to by steps in the front and on each side; and above it were the Chinese characters of Glory and Perfection. On each side were tripods, and vessels of incense; and before it a small table as an altar, for offerings of tea and fruit to the spirit of the absent Emperor. Being the period of a full moon, a religious festival with the followers of Fo, it was a day of sacrifice. Among the many appellations given to his Imperial Majesty in his sovereign capacity, he has one which corresponds in sound, as well as in written characters, with that sometimes given in China to the deity; doubtless as an attribute of power, residing, almost exclusively, in the person of the sovereign, whose dominion they consider as virtually extending over the whole world. If they sacrifice to him in his absence, it is not surprising that they should adore him present. The adoration, or *Koteou*, as the Chinese word expresses it, consists in nine prostrations of the body, the forehead touching the floor each time. It is difficult to imagine an exterior mark of more profound humility, or that more strongly implies a conviction of the omnipotence of that being towards whom it is made.

Zhe-hol. But the governor of the palace of Yuen-min-yuen, who was superior in power to the legate, interfered on the occasion, and the removal to the capital took effect immediately.

At Pekin, the whole of the embassy was lodged in a spacious hotel, or palace, consisting of several edifices, built on the general model of the dwellings of the great Mandarines. Annexed to the principal apartment, now destined for the Emperor, was an elevated building, intended for the purposes of a private theatre, and concert room, with retiring apartments behind, and a gallery round it for spectators.

The memorial of his excellency was addressed to Ho-chioong-taung Coloa, first minister of the Empire, and represented that "his Majesty the King of Great Britain, in sending an embassy to his Majesty the Emperor of China, fully intended to give the strongest testimony of particular esteem and veneration for his Imperial Majesty; that the embassador entrusted to convey such sentiments, was earnestly desirous of fulfilling that object of his mission with zeal and effect; that he was ready likewise to conform to every exterior ceremony practised by his Imperial Majesty's subjects, and the tributary princes attending at his court, not only to avoid the confusion of novelty, but in order to shew, by his example, on behalf of one of the greatest as well as most distant nations on the globe, the high and just sense universally entertained of his Imperial Majesty's dignity and transcendent virtues; that the embassador had determined to act in that manner without hesitation or difficulty, on this condition only, of which he flattered himself his Imperial Majesty would immediately perceive the necessity, and have the goodness to accede to it, by giving such directions as should be the means of preventing the embassador from suffering by his devotion to his Imperial Majesty in this instance, for the embassador would certainly suffer heavily if his conduct, on this occasion, could be construed as in any wise unbecoming the great and exalted rank which his master, whom he represented, held among the independent sovereigns of the world; and that this danger could be easily avoided, and the satisfaction be general on all sides, by his Imperial Majesty's order that one of the officers of his court, equal with the embassador in rank, should perform before his Britannic Majesty's picture at large, in his royal robes, and then in the embassador's possession at Pekin, the same ceremonies which should be performed by the embassador before the throne of his Imperial Majesty."

This paper was properly addressed, and delivered to the legate; who seemed to approve its contents, and promised to forward it immediately; whose acquiescence was little doubted. In this persuasion preparations were made immediately, for the journey to the Emperor's presence. The articles destined for Zhe-hol were brought back to Pekin, among which were six small brass field-pieces, on light carriages. His excellency caused them to be tried by the artillery-men, previous to their exhibition before his Imperial Majesty, and they were fired with great celerity. This dexterity in military manoeuvres, gave great umbrage to the legate, though he affected to say that the Imperial army were equally expert. He now countermanded the orders respecting those field-pieces, which before were destined for Zhe-hol. The few barrels of gun-powder, intended for salutes, and the musquetry of the embassador's guard, were also become objects of suspicion, and he desired they might be given up.

The request was immediately complied with as a matter of no importance. The whole tenor of his conduct now strongly indicated a mind agitated by apprehension, that the Chinese should attribute superior prowess to the English nation. Even in a display of presents, to gratify the curiosity of the natives, he cautiously avoided every expression of approbation, though most of them were entitled to the most enthusiastic praise*.

The solemn adoration of heaven and earth is confined to the person of the Emperor, and for his accommodation it is performed at Pekin, where

* This capital, with regard to the proportion it bears to the rest of China, is by no means equal to that of London in Great Britain. The principal part of it is called the Tartar city, from the circumstance of its having been planned anew in the thirteenth century. It was in the form of a parallelogram, of which the four walls face the four cardinal points. They include an area of fourteen square miles; in the centre of which stands the Imperial palace, comprising within its yellow walls one square mile at least: the whole being about one third larger than London, on its present extended scale. Adjoining to the southern wall of the Tartar city, is another, called by way of distinction, the Chinese City. Its walls, which are much on the decline, include about ninety square miles: a small part, however,

where he annually appears abroad in several magnificent processions. But the ceremonies which constitute the chief public spectacles in that city, have been compared to those religious ones of his holiness at Rome, under the name of *fonzioni*.

Riches, in China, give little importance, and no power: there is no hereditary dignity to give it weight; and property, without office, is not always secure. The delegated authority of government often leans more heavily on the unprotected rich, than on the poor, who are less objects of temptation. There are properly but three classes of men in China: men of letters, from whom the Mandarines are selected; cultivators of the ground; and mechanics, including merchants. In Pekin, alone, the highest literary honours are conferred on those who excel in the sciences of morality and government, as taught by the ancient Chinese. These are chosen by the Emperor, to all the civil offices of state, and to the great tribunals of the Empire. Military rank is conferred on such as surpass in military tactics*.

But children, in China, are more frequently deserted than parents neglected. Female infants are generally chosen as the less evil, and devoted to the river; because daughters are considered more properly to belong to the families into which they pass by marriage; the sons continue the support and consolation of their own. These infants are exposed soon after birth, before the countenance is animated to seize parental affection. Many are snatched from the jaws of death by persons appointed by government to watch the river, which provides for those taken up alive, and buries those who have expired. One of the missionaries, who had been vigilant in this work of humanity, asserted that about two thousand are thus annually exposed, of whom a very small portion was preserved.

A missionary must appear a singular spectacle to every class of beholders: to see men actuated by motives very different from those of most human actions, quitting their country and their connections, to effect a change in the tenets of a people they had never seen; and in pursuing that object to suffer every persecution, encountering every risk, and sacrificing every comfort; overcoming the prejudice of being strangers in a country where most strangers were prohibited; and where it was *a crime to have abandoned the tombs of their ancestors;* and gaining at length establishments necessary for the propagation of their faith, without deriving any personal advantage. The several missionaries were permitted to build four convents at Pekin, with a church to each of them.

The evening before the departure of the embassy from Pekin, a Mandarine of exalted rank waited on his excellency, with a gracious message to him from the Emperor, to learn the state of his health, which he had heard had lately been affected; and recommending him to travel by easy journeys into Tartary; and informing his excellency that he and his suite would be accommodated at the palaces where his Imperial Majesty usually stopped in his way to Zhe-hol.

is occupied by irregular buildings; a considerable part of the rest is in cultivation. Within this compass has been raised the *sien-mong-tan, or eminence of venerable agriculturists.* Thither the Emperor repairs every spring, and according to ancient usages, directs with his own hand the plough, through a small field, by way of doing honour to the profession of the husbandman; a group of peasants, chanting hymns in praise of husbandry. The celebration of this exemplary festival, is made known in the remotest village of the empire. It gratifies the humblest cottager, in the disappointments which the vicissitudes of the season frequently occasion, when he recollects that his calling has been dignified in being adopted by his sovereign. In the summer solstice, when the power of the sun is set at the highest, the Emperor comes in awful procession to pay obedience, and offer thanks for its benign influence; and in the winter solstice similar ceremonies are performed in the temple of the earth; but personification does not take place in either.

* All the branches of a family residing under one roof, is attended with important effects: it teaches temperance and order to the younger, under the authority and example of the older; and enables the whole to subsist, like soldiers in a mess, with prudence and oeconomy: yet the poor are sometimes compelled, by necessity, to live on vegetable food only, the price of labour not being always proportionate to the price of provisions.

Order is so generally observed, that the commission of crimes is rare. Every tenth housekeeper is answerable for the conduct of the nine neighbouring families. The police is observed with particular strictness within the walls. Marriages, among the poor, is a measure of prudence, the sons being obliged to support their parents. The custom of early marriage being considered in the light of a religious duty, this union usually takes place whenever there appears a prospect of procuring future subsistence: that prospect, however, is not always realized; and children. born without means being had of providing for them, are sometimes abandoned by the wretched authors of their existence. Superstition has stepped forward to sanction this horrid deed, rendering it a holy offering to the spirit of the adjoining river, to throw an infant into it, with a gourd suspended from its neck to keep it from immediate drowning.

SECTION

SECTION VIII.

Journey to the northern Frontier of China—View of the Great Wall.

THE embassador, with most of his suite, set out from Pekin on the 2d of September, 1793. In this part of the journey his excellency travelled in an English post-chaise, in which he accommodated some of the Mandarines. At first they were under great trepidations from the apprehension of the vehicle over-turning; but their fears soon subsided, and they became inexpressibly delighted with the easiness, lightness, rapidity, and elegance of their carriage.

The land, as they passed, appeared to be in a high state of cultivation, and its produce was nearly the same as on the other side of the city. One field, however, attracted more particular attention; as, from its regularity, it evidently proved itself a species of the polygonum, and had been regularly *planted*. The leaves, when macerated and prepared, imparted a dye of a blue colour, nearly equal to that produced by indigo. A dye of a green colour was also said to have been extracted from the buds and tender leaves of a plant of the species of colutea*.

A narrow river was crossed early in the first day's journey which was deep enough to be navigated by small boats, of which a considerable number was seen upon it. Goods were conveyed frequently down these rivers from the confines of Tartary; and furs, with the richest of its produce, are transported thence on the backs of dromedaries, which are stronger and fleeter than camels. Sheep, with short fleshy tails weighing several pounds, were seen grazing upon the plains. These are highly prized by Chinese epicures.

A few miles farther on the travellers stopped for the day, at one of the palaces built for the convenience of the Emperor, encompassed with a park and pleasure grounds. Some mineral springs, in the neighbourhood, are occasionally resorted to by the Emperor, and are thence denominated his baths.

In the progress of the second day, several plantations of tobacco were observed upon the low ground. Its smoke is inhaled through bamboo tubes by the Chinese, and is very prevalent among persons of both sexes, and to those of very tender age. Girls who had never reached their tenth year, coming from the houses near the road to see the strangers pass, had long pipes constantly in their mouths. The powder of tobacco is also taken as snuff. Powdered cinnabar is often employed for the same purpose. A Mandarine is seldom without a small ornamental phial to hold his snuff, of which he occasionally pours a quantity, equal to a pinch, upon the back of his left hand, to be conveyed to the nose as fancy may suggest.

In the third day's journey the population seemed to diminish: the route led through a small walled town, but without cannon, though troops were stationed in it for the protection of the public granaries. At the bottom of some of the hills a river ran to the southward, over which a bridge was thrown upon caissoons of wattles. Such bridges are common in this part of the country, as they are constructed at a trifling expence, and are well calculated to resist the torrents, which rush suddenly and impetuously from the impending precipices †.

On the morning of the 4th day the travellers came

* There is hardly a vegetable growing in China, of which the different uses have not been discovered by experiment or accident, so as to have enabled them to have succedanea among themselves, for articles which would otherwise be necessary for them to procure from other countries. Thus, for example, they substitute the seeds of a species of the sagara, by way of pepper, and an oil, little inferior to the olive, is extracted from the kernels of the apricot; but oil for common purposes is drawn from the seeds of sesamum, of hemp, of cotton, of turnips, of a species of mint, and of several other vegetables. A species of cultivated memordica is an excellent substitute for cucumbers: the cup of the acorn serves them to dye black, and the leaves of an ash are made to answer for those of the mulberry in rearing silk-worms.

† In their progress towards Tartary, the number of Tartars inhabiting the towns and villages on the road, seemed to be nearly equal to that of the Chinese; and the difference in the manners of those two nations became less striking. The Tartar women were principally discriminated by having feet of a natural size. The head-dress of both consisted of natural and artificial flowers, a practice of embellishment never omitted by the poor or aged: the culture of natural flowers for this purpose is a regular occupation throughout the country.

came in sight of what had been, and still continued to be the wonder and admiration of ages—a work of stupendous magnitude, the great wall of China, said to extend fifteen hundred miles in course. The travellers were now able to determine, from their own feelings, that it was not alone the dimensions of those walls, that created wonder in the persons who had hitherto seen these intended barriers against the Tartars. Astonishment is seldom excited by mere labour that may be performed by common means. It was the extreme difficulty of conceiving how the materials could be conveyed, and such structures raised, in situations seemingly inaccessible, which principally occasions astonishment. One of the most elevated ridges, over which the wall is carried, has been ascertained to measure five thousand and two hundred and twenty-five feet.

The road which led to the wall was by a steep ascent, which took them to the southern gate thrown across the road; where it passed over the summit of a range of hills, apparently inaccessible in almost every part. Along this it ran through a narrow pass to a military post, where some men, placed at certain distances, turned out, generally unarmed, as the embassy passed. A man at the top of the tower beat upon a loo, while another fired a salute of three cannon placed vertically in the ground.

After passing another gate nearer to the old Tartar boundary, and going through a perpendicular defile, they arrived at Koo-pe-koo, the residence of the strong garrison placed for the defence of the outer wall in this part of it. Concentric works, united with the main wall, inclosed the fortress. Military honours were paid to the embassador, on his arrival at this northern boundary of China proper. "The troops were drawn up," as Capt. Parish relates, in two lines, facing inwards. They were formed by companies, each of which had its leader, its standard, and five camp colours. In entering the lane formed by the two lines, there were Mandarines on each side; then music, tents, trumpets, and pai-loos or triumphal gates, twelve companies in succession on each side; and lastly, about ten small field-pieces of various forms and constructions. The parade of the companies were each as follows:

	"The leader usually a bowman; The Standards,	
"One Sword and Swordsmen; five deep."	five small colours; Matchlocks and Swordsmen in number nearly equal; five deep."	"One Sword and Swordsmen; five deep."

"The number of the whole amounted to twelve hundred. The interval between the companies nearly equalled the extent of their front."

A general consideration of this barrier, evinces the resolution and comprehensive views of that government, which could embark in so vast an undertaking; the advanced state of society which could supply the resources, and regulate the progress of such a work; and the vigour and perseverance with which it was carried to perfection. The line it has traced, continues still to be as a demarkation between the respective nations of Chinese and Tartars. Though since their being under one absolute dominion, the word of the monarch alone is implicitly obeyed, on the part of all his subjects indiscriminately, yet each people have local claims and jurisdictions*.

A dog in Tartary is the faithful companion of the peasant. It is a small species, with a long recurved tail, of which caprice or fashion seldom robs him, and which generally leans to the left, as Linnæus remarks of the domestic dog. That of Tartary seldom barks in the day-time. The peasants of this part, like those of Switzerland and the Alps, are very subject to a swelling in the glands of the neck, called by the French *Goitres*, supposed to be in consequence of the frequent use of snow water: both sexes are subject to these swellings; but females more than males. The part of Tartary where this disease

* The Embassy had now passed the Chinese wall, when a Tartar, who was one of the attendants, was ordered to be punished by some of the Chinese Mandarines, for improper behaviour; the offender made a vigorous resistance, and loudly exclaimed, that no Chinese had a right to inflict punishment on a Tartar, after having passed the Great Wall.

On this side of the Wall, the season became gradually cooler, the mountains less richly clothed with verdure; and the roads more rugged; the woods, inhabited by wolves, bears, and tigers, had little to adorn them but a scanty covering of parched grass and thorny shrubs. Hares remarkable for the length of their feet and toes, and for being brown or red in summer, and white in winter, were driven into snares by men, instead of being hunted by canine enemies.

abounds, has many alpine features, much resembling Savoy and Switzerland.

During the seventh, or last day's journey, the ridges of the mountains, containing immense rocks of granite, ran nearly parallel to the road. Between the upper ridge and bottom of the valley, an antique ruin claimed attention: it was a perpendicular rock, two hundred feet high, of an irregular form, having tall shrubs growing on its surface.

The ascent to Tartary is such, that some parts of it have been ascertained to be at least five thousand yards above the surface of the yellow sea. This elevation must have greatly contributed to the cool temperature of the atmosphere. A little beyond the towering rock above described, through a recess of mountains, the valley of Zhe-hol, the summer residence of his imperial majesty, appeared in view.

The embassador, with his suite, proceeding towards Zhe-hol, was received with military honours, and conducted to a suite of spacious edifices, amidst a crowd of spectators, on horseback and on foot. Several of the latter were clad in yellow garments, and their heads were covered with round hats of the same colour: some boys were also in similar attire. All these were a sort of inferior lamas, or friars, and novices belonging the temples of Fo. The imperial garden, the palaces, and the temples, situated immediately beyond the town, exhibited a scene of grandeur and magnificence. The town of Zhe-hol, excepting the houses of Mandarines, consisted of miserable hovels, full of people, The streets are crooked, unpaved, and dusty*.

Soon after the Embassador's arrival, he was waited on by two Mandarines of rank, with compliments from his imperial majesty; and by another Mandarine on the part of the great Coloa, or prime minister, Ho-choong-taung. The legate called on him the same day, and without preface or apology, delivered back to his excellency *open*, the memorial respecting the ceremony of reception, which had been delivered to him sealed, under the promise of transmitting it to Ho-choong-taung. The legate pretended he had kept the memorial in his possession, though it was well-known that it had been forwarded to Zhe-hol, and its contents approved. This change of sentiment was supposed to have been brought about by the vicercy of Canton, lately arrived at Zhe-hol from Thibet, where he had commanded the Chinese troops. He was a professed enemy of the English, and represented them as restless, enterprising, and dangerous.

The colao was now of opinion that the homage of vassals to the emperor should be performed by the embassador, without any return of the independence of his own sovereign. On this ground it was thought his excellency's memorial to the court ought not to be avowed, and of course no answer returned. A firm opinion was consequently entertained, that when the embassador should be introduced into the presence of the emperor, he could not avoid making the accustomed prosternations without stipulating any condition.

The legate, with two other Mandarines on the part of the colao, waited on his excellency the next day, and urged him to give up the contested point, concerning which they were driven to the necessity of fluctuating between the opposite and contradictory efforts, of representing the prostration as a mere unmeaning ceremony, when proposed to the embassador; but of serious import from a Chinese to his Britannic Majesty. After much had been said by both parties on the subject of prostration, Lord Macartney very judiciously observed that, to his own sovereign, to whom he was bound by every bond of allegiance and attachment, he bent upon one knee when approaching him; and that he was willing to comply with the same form, to express his respectful sentiments towards his imperial majesty.

This proposition seemed perfectly satisfactory to the Mandarines, who promised to return speedily with the determination of the court. In a private visit, which the embassador afterwards made to the colao, he was received with politeness and affability, and with due attention to his rank and character. Intimation was then given to him, that his imperial majesty would be pleased to accept of the same form of respectful obedience from the English, which they were ac-

customed

* The principal buildings in this part of Tartary differed little from those of China. The great door of each separate building opened into a hall, communicating with a room of which part was raised by a platform covered with thick cloth and cushions, for sitting in the day, and sleeping in the night. There were also varnished tables, and chairs for visitors.

customed to pay to their own sovereign. It was also formally declared, that the reception of the embassy by the emperor would take place on the 14th of September, three days prior to his birth-day. In the mean time several flattering messages were conveyed to his excellency, expressive of the perfect satisfaction which the presents gave to his imperial majesty*.

Ho-choong-taung was a finished statesman, of refined manners, and the deepest penetration. He was called to office and authority, indeed, by the mere favour of the sovereign; and the approving voice of persons of rank and influence maintained him in it. In those governments in Asia, the prince is not, as in Europe, afraid of debasing his dignity by alliances with his subjects; and the number of children of Asiatic monarchs, by different wives and concubines, create so many matrimonial connexions with the crown, that the influence arising from them is counteracted by competition. Such a tie, added to power already acquired, increases and secures it: a daughter of the emperor is married to a son of Ho-choong-taung. This connection, however, alarmed some of the imperial family, and other loyal subjects of the empire, who were fearful of the heights to which the ambition of that favourite might aspire. One person, indiscreetly zealous, was punished capitally by the present emperor, for daring to present a memorial to him, exhorting him to proclaim his successor, as a measure of safety, to prevent future dissentions in the empire.

On the day of the embassador's presentation to the emperor, he was accompanied by most of his family; the scene was in the garden of the palace of Zhe-hol. A magnificent tent was placed in the centre of the garden, and within it was a throne. The furniture of the tent was elegant, without glitter or affected embellishments. Several small round tents were pitched in front, and one of an oblong form, having a sopha in it at one extremity for the emperor to retire to occasionally. One of the small tents in front was appropriated to the use of the embassy, till his imperial majesty should arrive; the others for the several tributary princes of Tartary, and delegates from the tributary states, who were assembled at Zhe-hol to be present at the cele bration of the birth-day, and now attended to dignify the embassador's reception. In the great tent his imperial majesty was to receive, seated on his throne in his large state tent, the representative of the king of Great Britain. The tributary princes, those of the imperial family, and the great Mandarines of the court, formed a very considerable group, while they were in the front of the grand imperial tent; each decorated with distinctive marks of the rank conferred upon him by the emperor†.

These personages had each, in his own district, a circle of courtiers dependent on him; but here their grandeur was lost in the contemplation of that of his imperial majesty. The etiquette of respect requires long waiting. The embassy assembled before the dawn of day, and many of

* In the course of conversation in the last private visit, his excellency was desirous of impressing the Colao, with a full sense of the propriety of his past conduct, and of the sincerity and purity of his future intentions towards China. He expatiated on the pacific and benevolent maxims of his government, whose chief object was the extention of commerce for the general benefit of mankind, and he slightly touched on the affairs of tributary princes; on the dissolution of the Mogul empire of Hindoston, in whose contests, though they claimed the protection of the neighbouring countries, the English did not interfere. The Colao, however, gave not the least opening to be more particular in the disavowal of any aid against the people of Thibet.

His excellency was no stranger to the haughty notions entertained by the Chinese, that they were independent in point of commerce, and that every such transaction with foreigners was by them considered as a favour, not admitting that they could possibly derive any advantage from a mutual interchange of commodities. Such were the avowed or affected notions entertained by the Chinese government, of the superiority or independence of the empire. The embassador, therefore, was not averse to their considering a commercial intercourse as a condescension on their part, and expressed a willingness to negotiate on such terms. The Colao obligingly replied, that they should have frequent opportunities of meeting during the continuance of his excellency's visit. The conference ended as it had begun, with every appearance of satisfaction on both sides. Messages of civility, accompanied with presents of fruit and sweatmeats, soon followed both from the Emperor and the Colao.

† Purely to compliment the British embassy, the Emperor permitted his courtiers to appear in English cloth, instead of silk or furs, in which only they had hitherto been allowed to appear before his Imperial Majesty. The princes were distinguished by the transparent red button, indicating the highest of the nine orders, as fixed by the present Emperor. No person appeared on this occasion, who was inferior to the second rank in the state, the characteristic of which is the opaque red button. Some were honoured with peacocks' feathers stuck in an agate tube, and pendent from the bonnet. Those persons who had received three feathers, as tokens of Imperial favour, conceived themselves trebly happy.

the

the courtiers remained the whole night in the garden.

Soon after day-light the emperor's approach was signified by the sound of musical instruments; and his imperial majesty was preceded by persons loudly proclaiming his virtues and his power. He was seated in a triumphal car, borne by sixteen men, followed by his guards, officers of the household, standard and umbrella bearers, and a band of music. He was clad in plain dark silk, with a velvet bonnet, similar to that article of dress among the Scotch highlanders, ornamented with a large pearl in the front, the only jewel he appeared to have about him. His imperial majesty entered the tent, and ascending a few steps consecrated solely to his use, seated himself upon the throne. Ho-choong-taung, and two officers of his household, were next him, and knelt whenever they addressed him. The princes of his family, the tributaries, and great officers of state, having taken their respective stations in the tent, the president of the tribunal of rites conducted the embassador, attended by his page and Chinese interpreter, and accompanied by the minister plenipotentiary, near the foot of the throne on the left-hand side, denominated the place of honour. The other gentlemen of the embassy, a great number of Mandarines, and officers of inferior dignity, placed themselves at the great opening of the tent, where the ceremonies that passed within could be distinctly observed.

His excellency appeared in a rich suit of embroidered velvet, adorned with a diamond badge and star, the order of the Bath; and over this a long mantle of the same order, sufficiently ample to cover the limbs of the wearer. The minister plenipotentiary, being an honorary Doctor of Laws of the University of Oxford, assumed the scarlet gown of that degree, which happened also to be suitable in a government where degrees of learning lead to every kind of political situation. The embassador, instructed by the president of the ceremonies, held the magnificent square gold box, adorned with jewels, in which was enclosed his majesty's letter to the emperor, between both hands lifted above his head; then, ascending the few steps that led to the throne, and bending on one knee, presented the box, with a suitable laconic address to his imperial majesty; who graciously receiving the same with his own hands, placed it by his side, and expressed "the greatest satisfaction at the testimony which his Britannic Majesty gave to him of his esteem and good will, in sending him an embassy, with a letter and rare presents; that he, on his part, entertained sentiments of the same kind towards the sovereign of Great Britain, and hoped that harmony would always be maintained among their respective subjects*."

After a little more conversation with the embassador, his imperial majesty gave, as the first present to his Britannic Majesty, a gem, or precious stone, exceeding twelve inches in length, highly valued by the Chinese. It was formed into the resemblance of a Sceptre, such as is always placed on the imperial throne, allusive of peace and plenty. The embassador, complying with Chinese etiquette, and the minister plenipotentiary, respectfully offered presents in their turn, on their own behalf; which his imperial majesty condescended to receive, and gave others in return. These presents, on both sides, were probably less valuable in the estimation of the receivers than in that of the donors; but were mutually acceptable when considered as tokens of respect on the one part, and of favour and good will on the other†.

At the conclusion of these ceremonies several Hindoo embassadors from Pegu, and Mahometans from the neghbourhood of the Caspian, were introduced to the emperor, who, when

* The splendid manner in which the embassy was received by the Chinese court, was particularly honourable and distinguished. Embassadors were not usually received by the Emperor on his throne; nor were the credentials delivered into his hands, but usually into those of his ministers.

† His Imperial Majesty, adverting to the inconveniency of having recourse to an interpreter to explain whatever occurred during the interview, asked the Colao if there were any persons in the embassy who understood the Chinese language? and being informed that the embassador's page, George Staunton, a youth then only in his thirteenth year, was the only one who had made any proficiency in it, the Emperor expressed a desire of having him produced: when he approached the throne, and answered some questions proposed to him by the Emperor in the Chinese language, accompanied with the most elegant and graceful manner of address, his Imperial Majesty was so delighted with the conduct of that accomplished young gentleman, that he took from his girdle the areca-nut purse, which hung to it, and presented it to him with his own hand. It was formed of plain yellow silk, having on it the figure of the five-clawed dragon, with some Tartar characters wrought upon it.

they

they had repeated nine solemn prostrations, were instantly dismissed. The English embassador, and the three persons who accompanied him, were then conducted to the left hand of his imperial majesty, and seated upon cushions. The princes of the imperial family, the chief Tartar tributaries, and the distinguished officers of court, were seated according to their respective ranks, nearer to, or more remote from the throne: before which was placed a table for his imperial majesty; and he seemed to partake heartily of the viands and the fruits that were set before him. Tea was also introduced, the dishes and cups being carried to him with hands uplifted over the head. Much silence and great solemnity were observed during the whole of this pompous business. No conversation occurred among the guests; no bustle among the attendants. The commanding feature of the scene was the calm dignity and sober pomp of Asiatic grandeur, which European refinements have not yet attained.

His imperial majesty was remarkably attentive to his European guests. During the repast he ordered several dishes to be conveyed from his own table to theirs; and when it ended, he sent for them, and gave them with his own hand, a goblet of warm Chinese wine. He asked the embassador the age of his sovereign, of which he was respectfully informed; and he expressed a wish that he might attain his years, which then amounted to eighty-three, in a perfect state of health. The festival at length concluded, and he descended the throne, walking firm and erect, without the least symptom of infirmity, to the open chair which was in waiting.

Soon after the embassador's return home, he received from the emperor presents of silk, porcelain, and tea for himself and all the gentlemen of his suite. Among the fruits were some very excellent white grapes of an uncommon form, more oblong in form than Spanish olives, and about their size. At or after all intercourse in China, between superiors and inferiors, an interchange of presents takes place; but those of the former are granted as *donations*, while the latter are considered as offerings *.

The embassador was not a little surprised when he found the person appointed to attend him on the proposed excursion, was even the prime-minister himself; Ho-choong-taung, he was informed, was then waiting in the pavilion for him. The great Vizier of the empire, whom the people almost considered as a second emperor, was now ordered to give up some part of his time to keep a stranger company in a mere tour of pleasure and curiosity. But this idea was soon repressed by the appearance of the Thibet general, who joined the Colao, as if he apprehended the embassador was endeavouring to gain some ascendency over him, or that comments on the Theban war should pass between them; he therefore thought proper to deprive them of that opportunity. The general's brother, and another in administration were also present.

They conducted his excellency and suite through a vast inclosure of pleasure grounds; the remainder being reserved for the use of the female part of the Imperial family, was inaccessible to these ministers as well as to the English. Passing through a verdant valley, in which they observed willows of an extraordinary magnitude, they arrived at a lake; on which they sailed in yachts till they came to a bridge in the narrowest part; and beyond which it seemed to lose itself in distance and obscurity.

Near the borders of the lake several small palaces were situated; each containing a public hall, and a throne in the middle: several side-rooms were furnished with European works of art, and with the curious natural productions of Tartary. Among the latter was an agate of unique beauty and size, placed in one of the pavilions upon the lake: this agate is four feet in length, carved into a landscape, on which are cut some lines of poetry which were composed by the emperor †.

One,

* An invitation was soon after given from the Emperor to the embassador and his suite, to visit the garden and pleasure grounds of Zhe-hol. In proceeding towards them at an early hour in the morning, they happened to meet his Imperial Majesty, who stopped to receive the embassador's salutations, and to inform him, that he was proceeding to his devotions in the temple of Poo-tala; that as they did not worship the same gods, he would not desire his excellency to accompany him; but he had directed his ministers to attend him through the gardens.

† The gardens were enlivened by herbaceous animals, both quadrupeds and birds, but no menagerie of wild beasts was perceived. Some monstrous varieties of gold and silver fishes were seen sporting in ponds of pellucid water, upon

One of the curiosities, said to be in the garden of Zhe-hol, *the town in miniature*, was not permitted to be seen by the party; being inclosed within the limits set apart for the ladies of the palace. Something of this kind is now in one of the imperial palaces at Petersburg.

During the excursion through the gardens of Zhe-hol, which occupied several hours, Ho-coong-taung paid great attention to the embassador, displaying all the politeness of an experienced courtier: the deportment of the other minister was also affable and courteous; but the manners of his brother, the general, was formal and repulsive. The violent prepossession he had imbibed against the English was not attempted to be concealed by him. While the gentlemen of the embassy were passing through the several buildings in the purlieus of Zhe-hol, they embraced every opportunity of expressing their approbation of what they saw; and they certainly found no difficulty in concurring with the general opinion of the curious mechanism, which had formerly been shewn in London under the appellation of Cox's Museum: but the general, unacquainted with that fact, exultingly demanded whether such performances were to be found in England, when he suffered the poignant information of hearing that it was from thence they came to China.

In the course of conversation between Ho-choong-taung and the embassador, the former mentioned the arrival of the Lion and Hindostan at Chu-san, when his excellency seized that opportunity of requesting that Captain Macintosh might now be permitted to join the ship, having had the happiness of paying his obeisance to the emperor; but the general, who kept close to the Colao, instantly interfered, exclaiming, that it was not proper he should be allowed to traverse the Chinese empire. Nothing decisive was determined on for the present; but a renewal of the subject was proposed on a future opportunity.

By the fatigue of this day's exercise Ho-choong-taung found himself much indisposed, and sent to request the embassador would permit his English physician to visit him. Dr. Gillan accompanied the messenger to the Colao's house, where several of the faculty were assembled. By the answers to the questions which Dr. Gillan proposed to the patient, it appeared that he laboured under two distinct complaints: one was rheumatism, which first attacked him in the mountains of Tartary; and the second was discovered to be a completely formed hernia. The doctor's description of the disorders, and the proposed method of cure were put down in writing. The Colao approved of his proceedings, and made him a present of a piece of silk.

Though the patient was speedily relieved from the most pressing of his complaints, the rheumatism, no interview could be had with him for some time by the embassador, he therefore determined to write to him on the subject of Captain Macintosh, to renew his solicitations to rejoin his ship at Chu-san; and as no Chinese would venture to carry a letter without leave of the legate, the interpreter to the embassy undertook the business, (though it was attended with much risk, and produced great personal insult from the rabble) and put the letter in a proper channel for its speedy delivery*.

The awful impression intended to be wrought on the minds of men, by this devout veneration of a fellow mortal, was not to be effaced by any immediate scenes of gaiety or merriment; amusements of that complexion were postponed till the following day. In the mean time the em-

a bottom studded with pebbles of agate, jasper, and other precious stones. There were no gravel walks in these grounds; no belts of trees, nor clumps of shrubs; every appearance of regularity of design was studiously avoided; but natural subjects seemed scattered round by accident, in such a manner as to render their position pleasing.

* Early in the morning of the 17th of September, the embassador and his suite were called upon to be present at the celebration of the Emperor's anniversary: a festival which continued many days, though the principal ceremony was that of rendering profound and devout homage to the supreme majesty of the Emperor. The ceremony was no longer performed in a tent: nor did it partake of the nature of a banquet, The ceremonial passed in a vast hall, in which were assembled the princes, tributaries, embassadors, great officers of state, and principal Mandarines. To the sound of cylindrical bells, as well as to the music of various other instruments, a slow and solemn hymn was sung by eunuchs, who had such compass and modulation in their respective voices, as to resemble the effect of the musical glasses at a distance. The whole had a very grand effect. During the performance, and at particular signals nine times repeated, every person present prostrated himself nine times, except the embassador and his suite, who made only one profound obeisance. But the person to whom the act of adoration was made, in imitation of the deity, remained invisible the whole time.

bassador,

bassador, accompanied by Sun-ta-zhin, lately promoted to the rank of Colao, visited the grand temple of Poo-ta-la, comprizing one immense fabric, and several which were less stupendous. The principal was a grand cathedral of a square form, each of whose sides was two hundred feet. In the middle of the chapel, there was a space railed off, and elevated above the floor, presenting three altars superbly decorated, and three colossal statues of Fo, his wife, and child. No less than eight hundred lamas, or priests, were attached to this temple; some of them from their early infancy.

This extravagant devotion of the Emperor towards Fo was supposed to have arisen from this circumstance, that, from a contemplation of the great length and unparalled prosperity of his reign, he had gradually brought himself to imagine, that his favourite deity had vouchsafed to become incarnate in his person. Enthusiasm is often known to accompany the most shining talents; and whatever ground there may be for attributing to this great prince so whimsical a fancy, he has certainly displayed much vigour, capacity, and attention in the administration of his government.

The next day were exhibited, on the lawn before the Emperor's great tent, a variety of entertainments; and his Imperial Majesty, surrounded by his court, graced them with his presence. Every person who excelled in strength, dexterity, or in the performance of any extraordinary feat of agility, were assembled on the occasion. After the ballets, various kinds of fire-works were exhibited: the whole concluding with a volcanic eruption of artificial fire in a superb stile*.

The Emperor divides his time according to the seasons: the winter in his Chinese territories, and the summer in Tartary; and as his Imperial Majesty had resolved on a speedy return to Pekin, it was agreed that the Embassador should leave Zhe-hol before him. Every male in China, of Tartar parents or descent, is allowed a stipend from his birth, and is registered among the servants of the prince. Of these his body guard is composed, to whom his personal safety is confided.

Before his excellency's departure for Pekin, he received an answer from the Colao to his letter, signifying that the Hindostan should be permitted to sell goods and purchase a cargo at Chu-san, by the permission, and under the protection of the Mandarines, who would not permit the natives to exact; and that as she had come from Europe, laden principally with presents for the Emperor, no duties should be demanded on her return; but that it was inconvenient to suffer Captain Mackintosh now to join his ship, the business of which must continue to be done by the people to whom she was then entrusted.

SECTION IX.

Return to Pekin—Observations and Occurrences there, and at Yuen-min-yuen.

THE principal of those who attended on the anniversary of the Emperor's birth, departed from thence on the 21st of Seqtember, in different directions. Almost at the commencement of this journey, one of the embassador's guards died in consequence of a surfeit occasioned by eating immoderately of fruit. This event was not divulged, it being contrary to rule to suffer any one to breathe his last within the imperial precincts: the next morning, therefore, the corpse of this European was conveyed from thence in a palaquin, as if still alive; his death being afterwards announced at some distance upon the road.

The embassy arrived at Pekin on the 26th of September, to the inexpressible joy of such of their fellow travellers as had been left behind them, who had remained ever since immured in a state bordering on captivity. The embassador's entrance into the city was, however, marked with

* The inhabitants of the different districts of the Emperor's wide domains, appeared in separate groups, and in the costume of their several countries. Whatever was peculiar in their exercises, or habits, was here displayed' Several of them danced in a pleasing manner, and with graceful attitudes.

the usual honours, and he received the customary visits from the principal Mandarines; many of whom were in waiting for him at his hotel.

His excellency, judging from circumstances, that a system of precaution originating in jealousy, had been uniformly adopted with regard to the embassy, foresaw the expediency of fixing some future day for his departure; and he was informed that such a proposal was expected; the unbounded hospitality afforded to the English, being defrayed out of the public purse, was one of the many very powerful arguments advanced against the prolongation of the visit. His excellency was therefore determined to ask permission to depart, after the great festival, in the beginning of the Chinese year, in February; before which time it might rationally be supposed a friendly commercial intercourse might be established*.

The religion of the Emperor is performed with great magnificence in Tartary, but in China it is new. The Mandarines, and men of science, venerate Confucius, and assemble in halls simply constructed: the lower classes of the people cannot afford to contribute to the erection of splendid edifices for public worship; and their religious attention is much engaged with their household gods; for every house has its altar, and its deities. Their books of mythology contain similitudes of those whom they suppose preside over their persons and properties†.

The officers of the household, and other attendants in the Imperial palaces, are obliged, before the age of puberty, to be deprived of the means of becoming men; though it is sometimes done from childhood to forty years of age. Nothing but the fortures of a maddening jealousy could have first suggested the idea of mutilating one sex, in order to render it an unsuspected guard upon the other; and nothing less than the abuse of unlimited authority, could effectuate so cruel and unnatural a purpose. No longer belonging to either sex, held in horror and contempt by both, without the possibility of offspring. Thus mutilated, they may be supposed to be more firmly bound by the factitious tie of servitude, and more devoted to the prince by whom they are employed. Menial servants in the beginning, and pretending to no importance, they are the ready and servile ministers to the potentate's private pleasures and amusements, and creep gradually into familiarity and favour. From thence they sometimes pass into situations of power and authority; in which, when they once get a secure footing, they revenge themselves, as if it were on mankind, for the wrongs they have suffered in their persons.

The qualification for such offices consists in that operation, which in some parts of Europe is adopted for meliorating the voice. It may seem astonishing to the English reader, that the operations for this purpose, however delicate in themselves, are performed, even upon Chinese of an adult age, with little accident or peril with respect to life. Such a fact is the more extraordinary, as the art of surgery is so little understood in China, that the operation of opening a vein is never attempted there; and anatomy is not only unknown, but held in horror.

Such as are willing to become eunuchs are immediately received into one of the palaces, and promoted to some employment in it, which gives him the advantage and importance of a gentleman. It detracts nothing from his title, whether he carries a besom or a bunch of keys: very few of them, however, are dignified with a ball upon the cap, the badge of office of both civil and military Mandarines‡.

When

* Exterior ceremonies performed in honour of the Emperor, to inspire people with sentiments of respect towards him, are practised generally throughout the Empire. On his Imperial Majesty's birth-day, all the Mandarines of Pekin, clothed in their ceremonial robes, assembled at noon in the great palace of that city; where each prostrated himself nine times before the throne, upon which incense was burning, making offerings of viands and liquors, not considering that he could not partake of them when absent. Incense is also burned, and offerings made, every new and full moon, before the throne of the several palaces, by all the officers of the Emperor's household.

† That huge animal the elephant was seen about the palaces of the Emperor. Several of them were brought to China from the vicinity of the equator, and some of them were bred to the northward of the tropic: they are smaller, and of a lighter colour than those at Cochin-china. The elephant is said to be the only quadruped that has a proboscis, though instances of it are not uncommon in the insect tribe.

‡ But simple castration is not sufficient for those who attend on the ladies of the court. They undergo entire emasculation, all traces of sex being absolutely removed. The beard of an adult thus formed into a black eunuch, speedily begins

When a new Emperor ascends the throne, the principal persons of the country take their daughters to the palace for his choice; and those who are accepted reflect no inconsiderable honour or credit upon their families. Besides those selected for his Imperial Majesty, others are presented as wives or concubines to the princes of his blood. The latter, in China, are regarded in the same light as handmaids in the old testament. Shortly after the embassador's return to Pekin, the Emperor's approach to Yuen-min-yuen was announced, with an intimation to his excellency, that the usual etiquette of the court required that he should proceed some miles upon the road to meet him. Though at this time much indisposed with the rheumatism, his excellency went early in the morning to the rendezvous pointed out. The Emperor came with regal pomp and dignity; and, perceiving the embassador, stopped to deliver a gracious message, requesting him to retire without delay from the cold and damp of the morning, so unfavourable to the complaint which attended him.

The embassador received intelligence from some of the great Mandarines, friends to the embassy, that a council had been called to take into consideration the letter brought by him from the king of Great Britain; and the conduct necessary to be pursued respecting his subjects. On this occasion the prime minister had summoned the Thibet general, and a former Hoppo who was a declared enemy of the English, then a state prisoner, convicted of embezzling the public treasure, to give their testimony and advice; as being competent to judge of the disposition of the foreigners trading to that port, but really to strengthen the Colao against the more favourable inclinations of his Imperial Majesty. As nothing auspicious could be expected from the suggestions of such persons, the embassador formally notified his desire to the prime minister, to leave Pekin early in the month of February.

Instead of an answer to this message, the embassador received an invitation from the Colao, to call on him at Yuen-min-yuen, where he had some English letters to deliver to him. His excellency accordingly found some letters, dated Chu-san, from the Lion and Hindostan; the contents of which he communicated to the Calao, and informed him that the Lion would soon put to sea, but that the Hindostan would wait for her commander: and his excellency put the letters into his hands. The Colao expressed a wish that the ship would wait to carry back the embassy. He also intimated that his excellency and his suite might materially suffer in their healths, if they did not depart before the rivers were frozen up, as travelling by land was very inconvenient. The embassador saw clearly that other motives were concealed under the pretended solicitude for the embassy's health, and made a proper reply. He was, however, suffered to take leave, without being informed that the emperor's answer to the king's letter was ready, and would be delivered the following day.

Early the next morning the legate waited on the embassador, to acquaint him that the Colao wished to see him speedily at the great hall of audience in the palace of Pekin. Though the embassador was indisposed at the time, he speedily set out, properly attended, to the palace, to which he passed through a considerable part of the Tartar city; he there found the Emperor's answer comprised in a large roll, covered with yellow silk. It was placed in the midst of the hall, from whence it was afterwards to be sent to his excellency's hotel. Whatever favour it might contain, could not be attributed either to the Colao or his associates, whose unfriendly dispositions had clearly been demonstrated by their obstinate refusal of the presents usual from foreign ministers. But in conversing with Hochoong-taung, on the points desireable to be obtained from the English East India Company in China, he begged to be favoured with a brief abstract of them; and, without engaging to support them, promised they should be taken

begins to fall off, and the whole shortly disappears: his frame also withers, and his face becomes full of furrows. The missionaries are more afraid of giving offence to an eunuch than to a Mandarine; and knowing they have the ear of the Emperor, they endeavour, by meekness and civility, to conciliate their good wishes.

At the death of an Emperor, all his women are removed to an edifice called the *Palace of Chastity*, in which they are secluded from the world for the rest of their days. There are, in China, a few instances of Pagan nuns, who make a vow of remaining virgins. Though the laws of the country do not admit of religious convents, these women are admired for persevering in efforts so difficult to be accomplished. The adultery of women is punished, but not capitally.

into immediate consideration. He therefore forwarded the statement without delay *.

At this juncture one of the Neapolitan Chinese, who had quitted the Lion near Macao, brought his excellency a letter from one of the East-India Company's commissioners at Canton, mentioning the probability of an immediate rupture with the republicans of France and Brabant. Under all these circumstances, and being attentive to the safety of the British ships homeward bound the ensuing season from Canton, his excellency signified to the Colao his intention of joining Sir Erasmus Gower, at Chu-san, as soon as possible; and requested that a letter from him might be immediately forwarded containing such information.

This resolution was perfectly agreeable to the Colao, and every consideration proved the propriety of it. Chinese decorum required that the embassy should cease with the receipt of the Emperor's answer, and of *the farewel presents;* nor could any personal communication afterwards take place with his Imperial Majesty. So sudden a removal from Pekin disconcerted several persons of the embassy, who had made their arrangements for passing the winter in it; but they were forced to yield to imperious necessity. The route was directed through Han-choo-foo, and Chow-ta-zhin; and Van-ta-zhin, with other persons of the first rank, who were in the confidence of the court, were appointed to accompany these suspected strangers in their long journey through the empire, to watch their conduct, and penetrate, if possible, their real character and designs.

On the morning of the 7th of October, Ho-choong-taung, with two other ministers, came to a pavilion within the gates of Pekin, to engage in the ceremonies of parting with the embassador, and delivered some gracious messages on the part of his Imperial Majesty. They expressed a hope that his excellency was satisfied with the treatment the embassy had hitherto received during its stay among them; and their assurances that nothing should be wanting to render his journey to the port of embarkation commodious and agreeable to him. Two tubes of bamboo wood, covered with yellow cloth, were placed upon a table, containing rolls of yellow paper resembling vellum, on one of which was written an enumeration of the imperial presents; and upon the other, an answer to the requisitions made by the embassador respecting the English factory at Canton †.

Besides the multitudes employed in supplying Pekin, or drawing supplies from it, the many attendants upon men in office, and the slow processions, particularly of funerals, sometimes occupy almost the whole of a very broad road. No person is permitted to be buried in the city, and the ceremonies of removing the bodies out of it, seem to throng the gates as much as the supply of provisions for the living. Whatever be the rank or fortune of a Chinese, he makes habitually no parade or show, reserving his principal expence for solemn festivals, or particular events in his own family. The loss of a parent here, is considered as a loss indeed. The sentiment of affection and respect towards such while living, is not suddenly extinguished in the breast of the survivors. The heart is both indulged and consoled by paying superfluous devoirs to the manes of the deceased. Every institution tending to maintain the habits of duty on behalf of the offspring towards their progenitors, is sanctified into a precept not to be neglected, but at the peril of being infamous. The first procession observed this day, was preceded by several performers on solemn music: then followed a variety of insignia, with silken colours, painted boards and devices displaying the rank and office of the person, who is no more. Immediately before the corpse, the male relations walked, supported by friends who were

* The Emperor's answer arrived the same evening, accompanied with several chests of presents for his Majesty; others came also for the embassador, and all the persons of his suite; even tokens of his beneficence were extended to the officers and crews of the ships who had brought the embassy to China.

As no positive directions had been given respecting his excellency's departure, it was inferred from the Emperor's last declaration at Yuen-min-yuen, that recourse would not be had to absolute command; but it would be ineffectual to stay against the Colao's inclination, and he had to regret the little progress made as to the purport of his mission. He had also been privately informed, that the Chinese entertained no other idea of an embassy, than that of a visit with presents on some solemn festival, and to last only during the continuance of it.

† After parting with the Emperor's ministers, the embassador, attended by his former retinue of English and Chinese, passed through one of the eastern gates of Pekin, where he was saluted with the usual honours, and proceeded immediately for Tong-choo-foo, to embark upon the Pei-ho.

occupied

occupied in preventing them from yielding to the excess of grief: over the mourners were carried umbrellas, with deep curtains hanging from the edges. The people, among other superstitions, are extremely scrupulous about the time and place of burying their dead; the delay occasioned before these difficult points are ascertained, has often long detained the coffins of the rich from their last repository: many of them are seen in houses and gardens under temporary roofs, to preserve them from the weather during this period of irresolution; but necessity obliges the poor to banish such scruples, and they deposit at once, and with little ceremony, the remains of their relatives in their final abode*.

The offerings from flocks and herds, and those of oil, salt, flour, and incense, mentioned in the Levitical law, are known and observed by the Chinese; and they have their lares and penates like the Romans. It was not surprising that a priest of another sect should have been a visitor at this time at the temple of Fo. He was a disciple of Lao-koun, whose original doctrines differed little from those of Epicurus. He maintained that to live happily should be the principal object of man; and that indifference with regard to events was one of the principal means of attaining that end: that it was useless to reflect much upon the past, or to be solicitous concerning the future: the wisest employment being to enjoy the fleeting moments as they pass.

The yachts were ready the following day, and the presents embarked upon the Pei-ho, whose waters were already low, and continuing to decrease: in a few days more, it was apprehended that they would be too shallow to float the yachts. Very little progress had been made when Van-ta-zhin came to inform the embassador, that the Colao Sun-ta-zhin had just received a letter from the Emperor, an extract of which he read to the following purport. "That he (Sun-ta-zhin) should take the embassy under his particular care, that every proper distinction should be shewn, and attention paid to the embassador and his suite in their route to Chu-san, and that he should see them safely embarked on board their ships; but that if those ships should be sailed from thence, to proceed in the same manner, and for the like purpose, to Canton."

Sun-ta-zhin was not only a Colao, he was also honoured with the yellow mantle, covering, like a Spencer, his other garments; the highest distinction that could be enjoyed in China, and tends to render the wearer a sacred character. He was elegant in his manners, but tenacious of his rank and dignity. Without disclosing his private instructions, he gave the embassador to understand that his letter to Sir Erasmus Gower had not been forwarded, having been retained through the suspicions of Ho-choong-taung. Sun-ta-zhin, however, was soon convinced, by the explanation which the embassador gave him of that letter, of the necessity of sending it; and he wrote concerning it to his Imperial Majesty.

The inhabitants along the Pei-ho bore strong marks of poverty in their habitations and apparel, but their general cheerfulness testified that they did not consider their condition as the consequence of any particular act of injustice done to them. A few sheep were seen grazing upon some small spots; but the greater number are brought from Tartary, as well as other cattle. A scanty proportion of animal food serves as a relish to the vegetable diet of the common people. Milk, cheese, and butter, the principal resources of pastoral life, are little known among the Chinese: the common people seldom taste of animal food, unless of such as die by accident or disease.

Their crops of corn being got in, and the stubble taken off the ground, it is ploughed with a single buffalo: their plough is of a simple construction, and where the soil is very light, it

* The celebration of marriage is ostentatious and expensive. Though celibacy in either sex is not deemed a virtue by the Chinese, they recommend constancy; and the rules of exterior decency are guarded by the manners and sentiments of all persons of education and refinement.

One of the gentlemen of the embassy went into an open temple, where he observed a curious figure, which he supposed was intended to represent the *lingam* of the Hindoos, or heathen god of gardens. It was, however, only a simple short column, resting upon the back of an animal of the lizard kind. The column was probably only meant to bear a monumental inscription in Chinese characters, which almost occupied one side of it.

The embassy was cheerfully received at Tong-choo-foo. The temple, its former residence, was again prepared for its accommodation; and in the evening the city was decorated and illuminated. Troops were drawn out before the temple in various uniforms, some of which were fanciful and picturesque, but apparently fitter for the stage than a field of battle.

is drawn by men and women. In passing by some villages, several women were seen at their doors with rocks and reels employed in spinning cotton. Some of that sex also assisted in the harvest, and are hardly to be distinguished from the males by any delicacy of feature or complexion. The general character of the persons of these women, according to the observation of Mr. Hickey, who had particularly studied the human form, "was the reverse of what is generally considered as elegant or beautiful. Their heads were large and round, and their stature low, apparently not above six lengths of the head. Their shape was wholly concealed from the neck downwards by loose dresses; they wore wide trowsers from the waist to the small of the leg; and their feet and ankles were wrapped round with bandages." Those of a more elegant form were probably not employed in these labours.

It is common here for young maidens, distinguished by their faces or their figure, to be purchased from their parents at the age of fourteen, for the use of the powerful and opulent. Accident had thrown a few of these within the view of the gentlemen of the embassy, who considered them, from the delicacy of their complexions, and the beauty and regularity of their features, as entitled to admiration. To the circumstance of small eyes, attributed generally to the Chinese of both sexes, Mr. Hickey adds, that "most of the men had blunt noses turned upwards, high cheek bones, and large lips, with complexions dark and muddy. Their hair was universally black, thick, and strong. The Chinese often wear whiskers, and encourage the growth of a beard upon the chin, which is suffered to descend in straight lines*."

Each town is supposed to be under the protection of certain stars or constellations, of which last the Chinese reckon twenty-eight; and they have also a division of the stars answering to the signs of the zodiac, and which they call the twelve mansions of the sun. Their astrologers pretend to foretel, and annually publish almanacks, in which they mention the variation of the weather in the several seasons of the succeeding year; which operates as a voluntary tax upon superstition. The Chinese, in general, are fond of sobriety; they marry early, and are less exposed to the temptations of debauchery†.

A small spot of ground is allotted to every cottage for raising culinary vegetables; and hogs and poultry, particularly ducks, seemed attendant upon almost every dwelling: the latter are frequently hatched by artificial heat.

On the 18th of October the embassy entered the province of Shan-tung. All its provincial attendants were then changed for others destined to conduct it to Han-choo-foo. Two cities were passed in the course of the afternoon; before each of which a great number of junks and barges were observed at anchor‡.

On the 25th of October the yachts reached the highest part of the canal. Here the river Luen, the largest which feeds the canal, descends rapidly into it. The opposite western bank is strengthened by a strong bulwark of stone, against which the waters of the Luen strike with such violence as to divide, and follow a part the northern, and a part the southern course of the canal. A little farther on they arrived in the

* The sumptuary laws of China regulate the dwellings, as well as the apparel of the opulent: the more spacious the apartments of the rich, the more confined must be the cabins of the poor: and the more splendid the establishments of the former, the more miserable will be the condition of the latter; as the more is consumed in supplying the superfluities, the less remains for obtaining the necessaries of life. The windows are small, and are of paper instead of glass. Very little iron is used in their buildings; even nails are seldom introduced. All public buildings, and most of their palaces, have their chief doors and windows to the south.

† The Chinese have no Sunday, nor even such a division of time as a week. Their temples, however, are daily open for the visits of devotees. Persons of that description have made some grants, though not to any considerable amount, for the maintenance of their clergy; but no lands are subject to ecclesiastical tithes. A land tax to government has been lately substituted to a poll-tax, as better proportioned to the faculties of individuals. Many imports, and all luxuries, are also taxed, but the duty being added to the original price of the article, is seldom distinguished from it by the consumer. A transit duty is likewise laid on goods passing from one province to another. Taxes upon rice, and some other articles, are received in kind: the several species of grain, on which the poorer classes principally subsist, are exempted from taxation.

‡ This being the full of the moon, the night was employed in religious ceremonies: guns firing almost continually; bands of noisy music were zealously occupied; fire-works exhibited; and perfumed matches were continually burning from midnight till the rising of the sun. On the 22d of October, the yachts stopped before Lin-sin-choo, a city of the second order, near which stood a beautiful pagoda of nine stories.

vicinity

vicinity of the place where the Leu-tze, or famed fishing bird of China is bred, and taught the art of supplying his owner with fish in great abundance. It is a species of the pellican, resembling the common corvorant, which Dr. Shaw has distinguished in the following terms; "brown pelican or corvorant, with white throat, the body whitish beneath, and spotted with brown, the tail rounded; and the irides blue; the bill yellow."

On a large lake close to this canal, an immense number of rafts and small boats are constantly employed, built expressly for this kind of fishery. On each boat or raft are ten or a dozen birds, which, on a signal being given by the owner, plunge into the water, and bring up fish, sometimes of an enormous size; grasped within their bills. They seemed so perfectly trained as not to require either ring or cord about their throats, to prevent them from devouring any portion of their prey, except what the master thought proper to reward them with. The boats, constructed for this purpose, were so light, that two men often carried one to the lake, together with the fishing birds.

This part of the canal is strongly embanked on both sides; the water being brought into a narrower channel, and raised considerably above its former bed. The lands below are overflowed several months in the year, and cultivated with that species of rice which requires to be immersed in water till it is nearly fit for the sickle. Two crops are annually raised, one of which is ripe in May or June; the other in October or November.

To remove the shell or husk of rice, a large earthen vessel, or large stone mortar, is fixed into the ground; and the grain, placed in it, is struck with a conical stone fixed to the extremity of a lever, and cleared, sometimes indeed imperfectly, from the husk: the stone is worked frequently by a person treading upon the end of the lever. The same object is attained by placing the grain between two flat stones, of a circular form, the upper of which turns round upon the other, but at such a distance from it as not to break the intermediate grain. This operation is also performed, on a larger scale, by water mills.

On the 2d of November, the yachts arrived at that part of the canal where it forms a junction with the Yellow River, so called from the large quantities of yellow mud suspended in it. This stream is so rapid in its current at this spot, as to induce the Chinese to think it necessary to make sacrifices to the spirit of the river, to insure a safe passage over it. For this purpose the master of the yacht, attended by the crew, assembled upon the forecastle; and holding a cock in his hand as a victim, wrung off his head, and threw it into the stream. He then consecrated the vessel by sprinkling his blood upon the deck, the masts, and doors of the cabins; upon each of which were stuck some of the feathers of the bird. Several bowls of meat were then brought forwards and ranged in a line across the deck. Before these were placed a cup of oil, another of tea, one with ardent spirit, and a fourth with salt. The captain at the time making three profound inclinations of the body, lifting up his hands, and uttering a few words, as if addressed to the deity: the *loo* was also forcibly beaten, and lighted matches were held towards heaven, covered with silver leaf. Libations were afterwards made by the captain to the river, by throwing into it the cups of the liquids; and afterwards that which held the salt. The ceremonies being ended, the people feasted heartily on the bowls of meat, and confidently launched the yacht into the current. As soon as he had reached the opposite shore, the captain returned thanks to heaven with three inclinations of the body.

During the progress of the yachts towards the yellow river, letters frequently passed between the Emperor and Sun-ta-zhin, and the latter often paid friendly visits to the embassador. Sun-ta-zhin frequently quoted from the Imperial dispatches, expressions of kindness and attention towards the embassador. And as testimonies of the Emperor's personal regard, his messages were often accompanied with presents of dried meats from his table, preserved after the eastern manner. His Imperial Majesty, in a recent reply to Sun-ta-zhin's letters, assured him that he "entertained a high esteem for the embassador and his nation, notwithstanding the various surmises which had been made concerning them; and that he was determined to protect their trade, concerning which his excellency appeared to interest himself so warmly. That as a particular mark of his Imperial Majesty's attention

tention to the wishes of the English, he had appointed, as viceroy in the government of Canton, a person of his own blood, and endued with sentiments of justice and benevolence towards strangers; and that he had received instructions to revise the regulations of the port of Canton, and to suppress the vexations and grievances of which the English complained."

Soon afterwards the yachts arrived before a handsome town, of which those houses which fronted the terrace on the banks of the canal, were all two stories high, and white-washed. The inhabitants were more decently clad, and the women fairer, and more beautiful than those which they had seen to the northward. Some of the walls and buildings were in ruins, but the town had still the appearance of carrying on an extensive trade, there being about a thousand vessels, of different sizes, lying at anchor close to it. A garrison of two thousand men turned out, with colours and music, seemingly in order to be reviewed. The country near it was a plain, well cultivated and abounding with rice and mulberry-trees.

Proceeding farther, they perceived large plantations of mulberry-trees; some of which bore white, others red or black fruit. The Chinese do not graft their trees; but some of the larger branches were observed to bear the misletoe. The trees are frequently pruned or dwarfed, to enable them to produce a constant succession of young shoots and tender leaves; which are more nutricious for silk-worms, than those gathered from older branches.

After the silk is wound off, the aurelias furnish an article for the table, as well as the white earth grub, and the larva of the sphinx moth; in which however the Chinese are not singular; for in the West Indies a large caterpiller that feeds upon a palm, is esteemed a delicious morsel*.

Beyond Sou-choo-foo, the whole face of the country presented a forest of mulberry-trees, interspersed with a few tallow-trees. From the fruit of the last, the *croton sebifeum* of Linnæus, the Chinese obtain a kind of vegetable fat, which has the properties of tallow, but in stripping it off it does not soil the hands. This fruit, in its external appearance, resembles the berries of the ivy. When it is ripe, the capsule opens and divides into two, or sometimes three divisions, and falling off, discovers as many kernels, each attached by a separate foot-stalk, and covered with a snow-white fleshy substance, contrasting beautifully with the leaves of the tree, which, at this season, partake of the purple and the scarlet. The fat substance is separated from the kernels by crushing them, and boiling them in water. The candles made of this fat are firmer than those made of tallow, and are perfectly free from all offensive odour, but they are not equal to those of wax or spermaceti.

The yachts stopped at a village near the city of Han-choo-foo, to receive the new viceroy of Canton. He came in his barge to pay the first visit to Sun-ta-zhin, and to the embassador. He confirmed the assurances which had been given to Sun-ta-zhin, in relation to the English, and mentioned his own favourable opinion of them.

In addition to the honour conferred by the Emperor on Caung-ta-zhin, the viceroy, the inhabitants of Che-kiang, which he had just resigned, and where he had administered impartial justice, gave him the most flattering of all titles, by calling him "the second Confucius." The viceroy accompanied Sun-ta-zhin and the embassador, on their entrance into Han-choo-foo, on the 9th of November, 1793.

* Solid and permanent bridges are thrown over the canal in many parts of the province, the arches of which are variously constructed. Some of them are semicircular, and others of an elliptical form; some of them resemble a horse-shoe, the space being widest near the top of the arch. To pass under these bridges, one of which, situated in the suburbs of Sou-choo-foo, it is necessary to strike the mast of the yacht, and to erect in its stead, somewhat like a pair of shears, formed of two poles, one from each side of the vessel, which uniting at the top, form two legs; but the arches of some of the bridges are sufficiently lofty to admit the vessels to pass under in full sail.

The city of Sou-choo-foo, in the vicinity of Nankin, is large and populous, and is termed the Paradise of China: the houses are well built, and handsomely decorated: the inhabitants, many of which are clad in silk, appear cheerful and happy. The women are fairer, and dressed in a better taste than those they had seen in the north, many of whom were distinguished by a small cap of black satin, adorned with jewels: they had also ear-pendents of gold or crystal.

SECTION X.

Han-choo-foo—Journey from thence to Chu-san; and to Canton—Passage of the Lion and Hindostan from the former to the latter—Residence of the Embassy at Canton, and Macao—Passage to St. Helena—Remarks on that Island—Return home.

THE city of Han-choo-foo is situated between the bason of the grand canal, and the river Chen-tang-chaung, which falls into the sea about sixty miles to the eastward. In population, it is nearly equal to Pekin; and it is the grand emporium for merchandize between the northern and southern provinces. It has nothing grand, however, in its appearance, except its walls. The houses are low; none exceeding two stories. The streets are narrow, paved with large smooth flags in the middle, and with small flat stones on the sides. The principal of them consist of shops and warehouses, many of which are not inferior to the most splendid of the kind in London. An extensive trade is carried on in silks, and not a little in furs and English broad cloths. The ladies, instead of linen, wear next them a silk netting; and over that a waistcoat and drawers of silk, lined, in cold weather, with furs. A satin robe is worn above all, neatly gathered round the waist, and retained by a sash.

Information was received at Han-choo-foo, that Sir Erasmus Gower had sailed from Chusan; but as he had mentioned in a former letter that he should repair to Canton to procure a supply of medicines, a dispatch was sent to the company's commissioners at Canton to stop the Lion. From this place the new viceroy permitted Captain Macintosh, and some of the embassador's suite, to go to Chu-san, where the Hindostan was taking in a cargo. Sun-ta-chin accompanied this party: they set out on the 13th, and arrived there on the 19th of November; when their conductor, after making presents to them on behalf of the emperor, shook the captain familiarly by the hand, and bade him a cordial adieu.

The embassador and the viceroy set out the same day for Canton, the route to which lay upon the river Chien-tang-chaung. Two bodies of Tartar cavalry, in superb and various dresses, were drawn out upon the beach, and saluted his excellency as he passed to his barge. They had a spirited and warlike appearance. An immense crowd of boats were assembled on this occasion, but they were all conducted without confusion. The watermen were uncommonly expert; and, among the experienced boatsmen was one who rowed, steered, held the sheet, and smoked his pipe at the same time*.

A plant much resembling tea, called by the Chinese cha-whaw, is the *camellia sesanqua* of

* During a temporary obstruction to the progress of the boats, two young men came up who were anxious to have a sight of the embassador: they were also embassadors from the king of the Lequese islands, and were proceeding to pay tribute and do homage from the sovereign to the emperor. Their dress consisted of a fine brown shawl, the manufacture of their country, lined with the furs of squirrels, and they also wore silk turbans. They were of a dark complexion, communicative, and well bred.

On the sides and tops of earthen embankments, dividing the garden grounds, and groves of oranges, the tea-plant was seen growing like a common shrub, scattered carelessly about. In China, wherever it is regularly cultivated, it rises from the seed sown in rows, at about the distance of four feet from each other. Its perpendicular growth is impeded for the convenience of collecting its leaves, which is done once in spring, and twice in the course of the summer. Its long and tender branches spring up almost from the root, without any intervening naked trunk. It is bushy, like a rose-tree, and the expanded petals somewhat resemble those of the rose. The largest and oldest leaves are least esteemed, and are therefore destined to the lowest classes of the people: on the young leaves much preparation is bestowed before they are delivered to the purchaser; every leaf passes through the fingers of a female, who rolls it up nearly to the form it had assumed before it became expanded in the progress of its growth. It is then placed upon thin plates of iron or earthenware; but it is confidently said in the country that no plates of copper are ever employed for that purpose, as has been unjustly asserted. The colour and astringency of green tea, is supposed to be derived from the early period at which the leaves are plucked; and which, like unripe fruit, are generally green and acrid. The tea is packed in large chests, lined with very thin plates of lead, and the large dried leaves of some vegetable. It is, however, true that the tea is pressed down into those chests by the naked feet of Chinese labourers. But notwithstanding this indelicate operation of Chinese packers, the upper ranks of China are particularly fond of tea. That of good quality is dearer at Pekin than in London.

the botanists. It yields a nut, from whence is expressed an esculent oil, equal to the best which comes from Florence.

Arriving near the town of Chan-san-shen the river was no longer navigable. During their route, as well as when they came there, there were several interchanges of visits between the viceroy and embassador, while preparations where making for the journey by land. The oppressions to which foreigners, and particularly the English, were exposed at Canton, frequently were mentioned in the course of conversation; and the benevolent disposition of the viceroy induced him to be attentive to such complaints; and Chow-ta-zhin, whom he had taken into his confidence, and upon whose attachment the embassador had reason to rely, undertook to urge the business to him in private.

Every necessary preparation being made, the embassy pursued their journey towards Canton. Not a mile was travelled without a village, nor hardly a spot that was under cultivation: the villages were not surrounded by walls, but they were adorned with handsome gateways at their extremities. Where the face of a hill or mountain is not nearly perpendicular to the surface of the earth, the slope is converted into several terraces, one above another; each of which is supported by mounds of stone. These stages are not confined to the culture of any particular vegetable; pulse, grain, yams, sweet potatoes, carrots, onions, turnips, and other culinary plants, are produced upon them. On the top of the mountain was a reservoir to catch rain water, and convey it by channels successively to the different terraces.

To collect manure is an object of so much attention with the Chinese, that the old and young, who are incapable of any other kind of labour, are continually in pursuit of it. They rummage every street, road, river, and canal, holding in their hands small wooden rakes to pick up the dung of animals, and offals of every kind which can answer the purpose of manure.

Through the whole of this short journey, not a spot was seen that was not cultivated with industry. The soil in many places was indifferent, but the people were the more active in their efforts to fertilize it. On the small terraces, the hoe serves the purpose of a plough in turning up the soil. The husbandry is singularly neat.

Though inns are common in the great roads of China, so few travellers passed through this part of the country, that not a house could be found fit for the reception of the embassy in the town where they arrived at night. They were therefore accommodated with the public hall, in which young men were examined who were candidates for degrees.

The examinations of these students are said to be always public; and the governors and magistrates who preside, with the numerous auditors who attend, suppress any inclination to partiality in the judges. Oral and written questions are put to the candidates, as in England; and the successful one, after being elected to the University, may gradually attain to the highest offices and dignities of the state; that honour being open to all classes of men. The general persuasion also, that authority has been acquired through merit, must contribute to insure respect and obedience to it; except in cases of notorious abuse, against which rank and learning do not always afford security. Such a system of government promises great benefits to society, and can only fail when the temptation to do evil preponderates over the strength of principle, and the hazard of detection in the sacrifice of it. The poor and private individuals of China, who have opportunity of communicating their complaints, or declaring their sentiments on the conduct of their rulers, may be said to be left almost at their mercy; and the same conclusion will apply to foreigners when left in the same predicament. The embassador therefore seized every opportunity of impressing on the mind of the viceroy, the necessity of his protecting the strangers of Canton, from the extortions of the collectors of the customs. The viceroy was guarded in his promises, but seemed inclined to do all the service in his power*.

The embassador was not certain whether the apprehension

* In a subseqent visit, the viceroy informed the embassador, that he was certain no pains would be spared by the persons he was about to govern, to impress their minds against the English nation; but that he saw the necessity of a change of conduct, as well from a principle of justice to the English, as for the honour of his own country. But though

apprehension originated with the viceroy, or from a higher source; but it was certainly an indication, that from a sense of the English land forces in India, and of their vast maritime strength, the British nation was thought too powerful not to require some delicacy of conduct, even from the haughty empire of China. His excellency acknowledged that he had entertained doubts of the disposition of the court or minister of Pekin towards his country; but from the explanations of the emperor's minister who accompanied him to Han-choo-foo, as well as he, the viceroy, had given of the genuine sentiments of his imperial majesty, he relied on the assurances that were thus solemnly made to him, of a particular attention to the interests of the British subjects in China, and had already imparted this confidence to the English government, which, he doubted not, would confide in the accomplishment of the promises made to him. The viceroy then asked the embassador, whether he would empower him to certify a continuance of this amicable disposition, by the king's writing speedily to his imperial majesty, and by sending again a minister to China, if the emperor were disposed to admit of such, not with the expensive parade of the present embassy, but merely as a testimony of the continued amity of his Britannic Majesty.

His excellency, not having expected such a proposal, said, that the king would probably have no difficulty in writing to the emperor, to acknowledge the receipt of the presents sent by him, and to thank him for the distinguished manner in which he had received the embassy; a circumstance very distinct from the objects of it, all of which he still hoped might be effected in time; but that the vast distance between the two empires, and the difficulty and uncertainty of navigation, made it impossible to ascertain the arrival of a new embassy. The viceroy concluded by observing, that he would instantly dispatch a courier, to relate the substance of the conference, accompanied with such suggestions of his own, as he hoped would prove satisfactory to the emperor.

The embassy again embarked, but their progress was much impeded by the violence of the wind and rain. When the showers had ceased, their effect in swelling the river still continued, and its current being favourable, they advanced rapidly along the stream. Proceeding rather in a northerly course, they passed by a vast extent of swampy land, in the midst of which was the largest collection of water in the country, called Poyang Lake. Into this lake several rivers flow, and several canals are formed from it, inclosed within high banks for the security of vessels in tempests and inundations. The billows of the lake sometimes rise as high as those at sea, and are supposed to be equally dangerous. Small sandy islands were perceived in the lake, just peeping above the surface of the water, the solitary abodes of fishermen*.

In this province, the women of the lower rank are exonerated from the prejudice of little feet; and they are so very robust and diligent, that peasants of other provinces come to Kiang-see, to purchase what they call a working wife. A farmer in that province has been seen to drive with one hand, a plough, to which his wife was yoked, while he sowed with the other hand in drills. The wives were distinguished from the maidens, by the latter permitting the hair near the forehead to hang down towards the eye-brows, while the former have all theirs bound upon the crown of the head.

The river, against the course of which the yachts had for some time tracked, was now become shallow, and soon ceased to be navigable: a second land tour was therefore unavoidable. The travellers set out early in the morning, and arrived the same day at Nan-shoo-foo, where covered barges, on the river Pekiank, were

though his power was great, and his footing apparently firm, his situation was not without its difficulties. Besides the men in office at Canton, interested in preventing the redress of the grievances, and whose guilt would be implicated in a redress, there were other prejudiced enemies at court, who might also consider reform as a censure upon them: that exclusive of all these, he could not avoid thinking of the peremptory manner in which Ho-choong-taung had refused the requisitions of the embassador; that if in a representation of these matters to the British court, an endeavour were made to excite resentment, any subsequent appearances of resentment against this country, might involve him criminally in the eye of his government, for favours shewn by him to the English in the mean time, and that he wished to be perfectly satisfied in that respect.

* Plantations of the bamboo abounded in the province of Kiansee, in several spots in the vicinity of the river, on which the embassy was now embarked. With the large camphor tree, that grew a little more distant from the river, was sometimes mixed one of still greater magnitude, a species of the ficus, or Chinese yang-shoo, of which the branches spread horizontally to such an extent, that one tree is almost sufficient to cover half an acre of land.

found in readiness to receive the persons and baggage of the embassy. This river continues its course through an extent of about two hundred and sixty miles to the city of Canton. From thence it falls, after a course of eighty miles, into the southern sea of China; near which it has, among foreigners, the name of Bocca Tigris*.

The influence of the extensive trade carried on by the English in China, was apparent some days before they reached the city of Canton; for upon the river, as well as on its banks, some broken English was frequently spoken: many boats were also seen going down the river with merchandize for the English market. The stream was also crowded, in many places, with rafts of timber, chiefly of the larch and camphor trees; destined for the middle and northern provinces.

The viceroy had thought it expedient to proceed to Canton before the party, to procure a proper reception for the embassy. He sent from thence some magnificent barges, adorned with a profusion of glass, gilding, and painting, in which the embassador made his entrance into Canton on the 19th of December 1793. The splendid manner in which his excellency was received, added to the personal attentions of the viceroy, must have taught the inhabitants that the English were no longer destitute of protection, or unworthy of esteem.

Many of the embassy had now the happiness of hearing from their friends at home; and intelligence had arrived that France had commenced hostilities against Great Britain. The embassador had also the satisfaction of learning, that the Lion, after which ship the company's commissioners had sent a messenger, had been overtaken, and was then lying at Bocca Tigris.

The Lion sailed from Chu-san on the 18th of October, after having continued there about seven weeks, during which time the crew were almost restored to a state of health. She then stood over for Formosa, and anchored near the Ladrones on the 23d of October.

When the company's commissioners had supplied Sir Erasmus Gower with the medicines, and the other articles which he required, he again shaped his course for Formosa, and sailed through its straits; but having, in a gale of wind, sprung her fore and maintopmasts, the Lion returned to the Ladrones to refit.

Several piratical vessels, whose crews were Chinese, were hovering in this neighbourhood, and had lately taken several Chinese junks, besides plundering the adjacent islands. Their practice is, after taking out whatever they deem valuable, to set fire to the habitations, to sink the junks, to make slaves of the stout and robust, and put the rest to death.

On the 21st of November the Lion fell in with a brig, which, on examination, proved to be the same vessel to which the seal-catchers belonged, whom the embassy, in the preceding February had found, and left on the volcanic island of Amsterdam; where it is probable they will now end their days, as Sir Erasmus seized the brig as a lawful prize, she having been fitted out from the isle of France. Before the damages were repaired, which the Lion had sustained in tempestuous weather, Sir Erasmus Gower fortunately received the dispatches which had been forwarded to him by the commissioners, in consequence of which he returned to the Bocca Tigris.

The Hindostan, Captain Mackintosh, also returned to Canton sooner than he expected. The Chu-san traders were not prepared for so extensive a concern, neither was it convenient for them to purchase the European commodities: tea and silk were cheaper there than at any other place; but they wanted the amount in specie, which Captain Mackintosh was not prepared to comply with. He therefore found it expedient to proceed to Canton, where he was to enjoy, for the present voyage, the same privileges and exemptions as at Chu-san.

* As soon as the river became sufficiently deep and wide, the passage barges were changed for more commodious yachts. The volume of water was increased by a junction with another considerable stream from the north-west. At their confluence stood the city of Chau-choo-foo, the environs of which were pleasant and romantic. The boats which ply from one part of the city to another, are chiefly managed by females, who are generally young and neatly dressed to attract the attention of the passengers. These frail damsels did not make choice of this double occupation on account of misconduct or loss of character; but their parents, taking no other interest in the chastity of their daughters, than as it might contribute to an advantageous disposal of them to wealthy husbands, feel little reluctance, when no such prospect offers, to devote them to one employment with a view to the profits of another. Women, especially in the lower walks, are bred with little other principle than that of implicit obedience to their fathers or husbands.

SECTION XI.

Residence of the Embassy at Canton, and at Macao.

THE city of Canton, in which the embassy now lodged, like any other sea-port or frontier town, has a number of foreigners mixed with the natives. The handsome factories of the different European nations, each with its national flag flying over it, arranged in a line along the river, contrast with the Chinese buildings, and are an ornament to the whole. The neighbourhood of the foreign factories abounds with warehouses for the reception of European merchandize. All purchases are made by individuals belonging to the ships, or by the agents of Companies in Europe. The probity, punctuality, and credit of the English East India Company, in particular, and their agents, are so well known among the Chinese merchants to be such, that their goods are received, with respect to quantity, or quality, as they are declared in the invoice, without examination, throughout the empire*

The viceroy in his favourable disposition towards the English, was perhaps influenced by the opinion he had conceived of their science and acquirements. Accident contributed towards inspiring him with such sentiments. The custom of inhaling the vapour of tobacco is very general in China, and extends to the highest ranks. The viceroy once requiring to light his pipe in the absence of his attendants, the embassador took a phosphoric bottle from his pocket, and having opened it, he kindled a match that fully answered the purpose wanted. This singularity of a person's carrying fire about him without the apprehension of injury, attracted the viceroy's attention, who asked for information on the subject. His excellency explained the phenomenon to him in general terms, and made him a present of the bottle; which he thankfully received.

The state of physic is extremely low in China: there are no public schools, or teachers of it. A young man has no other method of acquiring medical knowledge, than by engaging himself to some practitioner. The emperor's physicians, as well as most of his domestic attendants, are chiefly eunuchs. Amputation, in cases of compound fracture and gangrene, is utterly unknown; death is the speedy consequence of such accidents. No male physician is permitted to attend a pregnant woman, and still less to practise midwifery; in the indelicacy of which both sexes seem to agree in China. Books, indeed, are written on that art for the use of female practitioners, with drawings of the position of the infant at different periods of gestation: the whole accompanied with a number of superstitious observations†.

The public revenues of China proper are said to be about two hundred millions of ounces of silver, or about sixty-six millions of pounds sterling. No certain account could be procured of the Tartar revenues. Besides what the emperor derives from his demesnes there, the chiefs pay a tribute which increase according to their capability of affording it‡.

However imperfect in the science of astronomy the Chinese are, they have some idea of imaginary circles in the heavens; such as the ecliptic which they call the yellow road, the equinoctial,

* During the embassador's stay at Canton, an interchange of visits frequently took place between him and the viceroy; and also between the former and the gentlemen of the factory. The pride and reserve of rank were not indeed much cherished by the viceroy. He was the first in that exalted station who ever admitted the native merchants of Canton to sit in his presence; and he is also said to be the first viceroy who condescended to sit at table with gentlemen of the English factory, at a repast prepared by them for the embassador.

† The marriages in China are early and prolific: the exposition of infants implies the excess of population beyond the means of subsistence. Population in China, is not subject to be diminished materially by war. Extraordinary drought, as well as excessive inundations, occasionally produce famine in particular provinces.

‡ In point of taxation, the Chinese are more favoured than many of the subjects of Europe; supposing silver to bear the same proportion to the consumable productions among the former, which it does among the latter; for if all the revenue were reduced to a capitation, it would not amount to more than five shillings a head on the population of the empire; but by an analogous computation, the people of Ireland would pay to government eight shillings a head; those of France, under the monarchy, sixteen shillings a head; and each individual, in Britain, at least thirty four shillings.

and

and the meridian line. The number of planets known to them is five, which corresponds to that of the elementary, which they suppose to enter into the composition of all bodies; namely fire, water, earth, wood, and metal, over each of which a planet is supposed to preside. Few of the Chinese seem to have any idea of the earth's motion; but imagine that the sun actually moves through the fixed stars.

The viceroy promised the embassador that government would not oppose the acquisition of the Chinese language by foreigners. He was, indeed, confirmed in his good disposition to protect the English, by the late dispatches from the emperor, in which his imperial majesty expressed how welcome the return of an English minister to his court would be to him. He requested that notice should be immediately conveyed to him of the minister's arrival at Canton, to which place he should dispatch proper persons to receive and conduct him to Pekin. The viceroy added, from another of the emperor's letters, that, as he intended to resign his crown in the 57th year of the current cycle, answering to the year 1796 of the Christian era, he should be happy to see such minister by that time, or as soon afterwards as might be convenient.

The present embassador, his suite, and attendants, continued at Canton to have all their expences defrayed by his imperial majesty. The same honours were paid to the embassador on his leaving, as he had received on his arrival at Canton. The attention of the viceroy towards him was uniform throughout. His personal regard seemed to increase in proportion to his further acquaintance with his excellency, as well as the consequent inclination he avowed in favour of the English.

The embassador was received and entertained with great politeness by the governor of Macao. This Portuguese settlement is situated at the southern extremity of an extensive island, separated only by rivers from the southern continent of China. But the settlers of Macao, enervated by the effects of a climate within the tropics, gradually fell from its former prosperity: they still, however, send cargoes to some of the neighbouring countries. Others lend their names, for a trifling consideration, to foreigners belonging to the Canton factories, who reside part of the year at Macao. These, with more capital, credit, and connections, are more successful; but they require to be nominally associated with Portuguese, to be allowed to trade from the port of Macao*.

Soon after his excellency's arrival at Macao, his subsequent destination was determined on by the receipt of letters from England. Several considerations induced him to continue no longer in China than he could avoid: he determined therefore to accompany home the fleet in the Lion, destined to attend him, that he might thus secure the protection of a line of battle ship for a considerable mass of property. This determination being made known in the different ports of Eastern Asia, two richly laden ships, one from Manitly, the other a Portuguese, put themselves under the convoy of the Lion.

When all the ships were ready, and assembled near Macao, the embassador embarked, leaving none of the gentlemen behind who accompanied him to China, but Mr. Henry Baring, now a supercargo at Canton; and the Chinese interpreter who, in the name and dress of an Englishman, continued with his excellency till the moment of his embarkation.

SECTION XII.

Passage to St. Helena—Observations on the Island—Return home.

THE Lion, with fifteen of the Company's ships, one Spanish, and one Portuguese Indiaman, sailed from the little island of Samcock, near Macao, on the 17th of March, 1794.

* Of the two pagan temples at Macao, belonging to the Chinese, one is curiously situated among a confused heap of immense masses of granite. It consists of three distinct buildings, one above the other, and accessible only by a winding flight of steps cut out of the solid rock. The cave of Camoen is visible: tradition informs the world that Camoen, a Portuguese poet, wrote the celebrated poem of the Luciad. This interesting cave is now in the middle of a garden, belonging to a house where the embassador, and two of his suite, resided at Macao.

in

In the Straits of Banca they fell in with three armed ships from Bengal, and near the straits a squadron of Malay pirates, consisting of a snow and ten proas. The former carried fourteen six pounders, and each of the latter from four to eight three pounders. These vessels were full of men, with pikes and side-arms; and the decks were strewed with a kind of grape shot. Though it clearly appeared they were fitted out for hostile purposes, Sir Erasmus Gower had too important a charge to be diverted from it, by any occasional occurrence: they were therefore permitted to proceed without molestation.

On the Java side of the Straits of Sunda the fleet completed its stock of wood and water. That being effected, the Jackall tender was dispatched with the armed India-men, to Calcutta; having on board some tea, tallow, and varnish plants to be conveyed to Bengal, under the care of Dr. Dinwiddie. The convoy put to sea again on the 19th of April, and experienced, after the first month, several gales of wind, particularly off the Cape of Good Hope.

On the 18th of June Sir Erasmus Gower was joined by all the ships under his convoy, and by his Majesty's ships the Samson and Argo, from Europe. They were all then in sight of St. Helena, the lofty sides of which bear so terrific an appearance, that probably there had anciently been a cluster of islands in its neighbourhood. The fleet, in doubling the island, kept within pistol-shot of its steep and rocky coast, in order to secure their anchorage in the road opposite to a valley, of which the pleasing scenes are justly said, by an ingenious traveller, "to be laid in the lap of horror."

St. Helena lies in the southern part of the Atlantic Ocean, distant many degrees of longitude and latitude from any continent or other island; and may be considered as the summit of a great mountain, whose roots are buried in the bottom of the sea. It was discovered more than two centuries ago by the Portuguese. The English took it from them, and the Dutch from the English. The last recovered it again, by surprise, from the Dutch; and it now belongs to the East-India Company, who have spared no expence to render it a convenient place of resort for ships in their homeward passage. The summit of the island is wooded; but is so cold that fruit will hardly ripen in it. Clear rills of water issue from the highest peaks, and pursue their course abruptly down towards the vallies, which they contribute to fertilize. Storms are seldom experienced in the immediate neighbourhood of this island. Thunder or lightning rarely display their awful and tremendous effects: hence it is concluded that little electric matter is scattered in its atmosphere.

The numbers of visitors in this island, including the crews and passengers of the ships lying there at anchor, are sometimes equal to the whole number of the settlement. The chief officers, passengers, and invalids reside generally on shore, during the stay of their respective ships. There are no inns; every house being open for the reception of strangers, who are considered, for the time they stay, as a part of the family. A moderate compensation is fixed for the host for furnishing his guests with the comforts and conveniences of life. Supplies of fresh water and fuel are also provided here for the remainder of the voyage. The long drought and scorching winds, which for three years had desolated the island of St. Jago, extended their baneful influence to Saint Helena at the same period; nor had the island at that time entirely recovered from the calamity. Upwards of three thousand horned cattle perished for want of food and water.

The valley, and some of the higher lands, however, had regained their pristine verdure; and the garden grounds were in excellent condition: a botanic plantation also contained trees and plants of different climates. An insect had destroyed many of the fruit trees, except the apple, which has ever since been successfully cultivated. The plantain and banana throve well; but cotton, indigo, and canes were unsuccessful. The land was principally cultivated by black slaves, brought into the island by the first European settlers. These men were harshly treated by their owners, till the East India Company interposed, and caused them to be placed under the protection of government, and nearly put on a footing with the other free inhabitants, who, when accused of crimes, are entitled to a jury, as well as in civil causes. Previous to this regulation, one tenth of their number died annually. These regulations, at first, may have hurt the feelings of the owners of slaves, but not their real interests; for it clearly appears that,

before their introduction, there was generally a loss of about ten in a hundred slaves every year, to be supplied at a very heavy expence; but under the present system they naturally increase. All future importation of slaves into the island is prohibited.

The principal settlement of St. Helena has the peculiar advantage of uniting the shelter of a leeward situation, with the coolness of windward gales. The country is so fertile, and the climate so congenial to the human feelings, that it would perhaps be difficult to find out a spot where persons could have a better chance of protracting their days in ease, health, and comfort.

Nothing material occurred till the 21st of July, on which day a fleet of ships of eleven sail of the line, was discovered in the north-east; five of which appeared to be of considerable magnitude. These were observed to have formed a line of battle abreast, and were bearing down towards the convoy. The private signal not being answered, the strangers were concluded to be enemies: the weather coming on suddenly thick, accompanied with rain, the two fleets were concealed from each other for ten or fifteen minutes; after which it cleared up as hastily. The supposed enemies, were, however, discovered to be a fleet of Indiamen from England, under convoy of the Assistance man of war, of fifty guns.

The homeward bound fleet continued its course with variable winds, making no very rapid progress. They passed near the Western Islands in the middle of August, when the Spanish and Portuguese ships parted, steering directly for their own coasts. On the 2d of September the fleet saw the southern extremity of Ireland. In steering afterwards for the English channel, they had some difficulty in keeping sufficiently to the southward of the Scilly Islands. In passing the British Channel, in the night of the 5th, the wind blowing very strong, they fell in with the grand fleet, under the command of Earl Howe, standing down the channel. The weather was dark and tempestuous, in consequence of which several of the ships ran foul of each other, receiving and producing considerable damage. The Lion, however, anchored safely the following day in Portsmouth harbour, where the embassador and other passengers disembarked; after an absence of nearly two years, in a voyage devoted to the service of his country, and in pursuit of an object which he sincerely wishes may be ultimately obtained.

Observations on the GENIUS, MANNERS, *and* CUSTOMS *of the* CHINESE, *resulting from the Consultation of the best Authors, such as Du Halde, Ides, and Dionysius Kao; and occasionally the original Work from which our Abridgment has been taken; and being thus materially assisted, we have been able to present our Readers with the following authentic and interesting Communications.*

THE Chinese are remarkable for paying the greatest deference and respect to old men. They are, in general, of a mild and humane disposition, but they are violent and vindictive when offended; frequently avenging themselves in slow but persevering and methodical gradations: many of them are so litigiously disposed, as to sell their property to enable them the more effectually to support a law-suit, and to heighten the distress or punishment of their adversaries. But though they indulge a vicious propensity in this particular, they love virtue, and honour those who practise it.

Interest is one of the greatest foibles of the Chinese; and the extreme love of life another. Those who have only a few pistoles in their possession will readily part with the whole to purchase a good coffin twenty years, perhaps, before it may be wanted, and consider it as the most valuable article in their possession.

The Chinese are generally low in stature, and of brown complexions; though, in the northern provinces, they are as fair as the Europeans. A perfect beauty among them, according to their idea of perfection, must have a large forehead, a short nose, small well-cut eyes, a large flat face, a moderate-sized mouth, and black hair.

The Tartar sovereigns have obliged the men to shave their heads, leaving only a single lock in the middle of the crown. They have small beards, full whiskers, and some long hairs at the bottom of the chin: they wear a vest, with long sleeves; over which they sometimes wear a short loose

loose coat; but, when they are dressed for paying or receiving visits, they have a long silk gown, and over that a kind of spencer extending to the knee. They always wear silk or stuff boots, and carry a fan in their hand. They are scrupulously exact in performing certain ceremonies and compliments; the whole of which may be reduced to bowing, kneeling, and prostrating, as prescribed by time and place, as well as by the age or quality of the persons. And though from the prejudice of education, we may consider their customs as *fantastic*, the Chinese, in their turn, may censure our's as *barbarous*.

Their feasts are particularly troublesome to Europeans, consisting almost wholly of ceremonies and compliments. They usually require sixteen, and those of the more solemn kind of feasts, twenty-four dishes upon each table, as well as a greater number of other formalities. Sometimes there are as many tables as guests, who sit upon stools or chairs; but usually two persons sit at one table, which is not covered with a cloth, but curiously japanned; from the front of which hangs a piece of silk, richly decorated with needle-work. Two pointed sticks of ivory or ebony are the substitutes for a knife and fork: their food is cut into small square pieces, and served up in bowls. Their soups are excellent, but being unacquainted with the use of spoons, they sip the fluid part of it, and the grosser substances are conducted to the mouth by their chopsticks. After the first dish, wine is served up to each of the guests, but none is tasted till the entertainer has set them the example. A comedy is performed during the repast, and when the desert is brought in, money is collected for the domestics.

Their marriages, like their feasts, are celebrated for several days with much splendour and festivity. Husbands are permitted to have concubines, but they are subordinate to the wife. Their usual time of mourning is three years; but it is frequently reduced to twenty-seven months.

Criminals are punished, in China, commensurate to the enormity of the crime. Capital offences pass through five or six different tribunals, before a definitive sentence is pronounced. The women have apartments in prison separate from the men; and debtors are not compelled to associate with felons. For slight offences the culprit is bastinadoed; for others, he is doomed to wear a heavy collar about his neck. Certain enormities cause the offenders to be marked upon the neck with Chinese characters, denoting their crimes: others are condemned to temporary or perpetual banishment, or to drag the royal barks for one, two, or three years. Their capital punishments are *strangling*, *beheading*, and *cutting into ten thousand pieces;* the latter is incurred for *assassination*. No person is put to death without the Emperor's express orders; and these executions take place on a certain day in the year throughout the whole empire.

The great wall of China was built some centuries before the birth of Christ, by the Chinese Emperor Chien-Chu, Voang (according to Du Halde by Tsin-Shi-Wang, who makes it two hundred and twenty-one years before the birth of Christ) to prevent the incursions of the Western Tartars. To raise men for building this wall, which is said to have been completed in five years, the emperor commanded that, three out of every ten men throughout his dominions, should work at it; and, by a subsequent order, two out of every five were compelled to labour at this vast undertaking *.

* Mr. Bell, who resided for some time in China, and whose travels are deservedly esteemed for the accuracy of their intelligence, assures us that this wall was built about 600 years ago, (that is about the year 1160,) by one of the emperors, to prevent the frequent incursions of the Monguls, whose numerous cavalry used to ravage the provinces, and escape before an army could be assembled to oppose them. Renaudot observes that no oriental geographer, above 300 years in antiquity, mentions this wall: and it is surprising that it should have escaped Marco Polo; who, supposing that he had entered China by a different route, can hardly be conceived, during his long residence in the north of China, and in the country of the Monguls, to have remained ignorant of so stupendous a work. Amidst these difficulties, perhaps it may be conjectured that similar modes of defence had been adopted in different ages; and that the ancient rude barrier having fallen into decay, was replaced, perhaps after the invasion of Zingis, by the present erection, which even from the state of its preservation can scarcely aspire to much antiquity. *Pinkerton's Modern Geography*, ii. 87.

END OF EARL MACARTNEY'S EMBASSY.

THE

VOYAGE OF GOVERNOR PHILLIP

TO

BOTANY BAY.

With an Account of the Establishment of the Colonies of PORT JACKSON and NORFOLK ISLAND: Compiled from Authentic Papers, obtained from the several Departments.

To which are added the Journals of the Lieutenants SHORTLAND, WATTS, BALL, and Captain MARSHALL. With an Account of their New Discoveries.

ARTHUR PHILLIP, like his distinguished naval predecessors Drake, Dampier, and Cook, has raised himself by his meritorious services. His father, Jacob Phillip, a native of Frankfort in Germany, settled in England as a teacher of languages, and by his learning and abilities became enabled to maintain his family, and educate a son. He married Elizabeth, the widow of Captain Herbert of the navy, by whom he had a son, named Arthur, the subject of these memoirs, born in the parish of Allhallows, London, on the 11th of October 1738.

Being intended for naval or maritime services, he was sent to the school of Greenwich, where he received an education suitable to his early propensities. At the age of sixteen this youth began his career under Captain Everet of the navy, at the commencement of hostilities in 1755; and, while he acquired the rudiments of his profession under that able officer, he shared with him in the misfortunes and glories of the seven years war. At the capture of the Havannah, when he was in the twenty-third year of his age, he was appointed a Lieutenant of the Stirling Castle, by Sir George Pocock, a consummate judge of naval accomplishments.

But peace, with all its blessings, was restored in 1763, and Arthur found leisure to marry, and settle at Lyndhurst in the New Forest, where he amused himself with farming; assiduously discharging those provincial duties, which necessarily fall to the lot of owners of land, as well as to other inhabitants. But sailors, like their own element, must frequently be in motion. Those occupations, which delighted him while they were new, had no longer any charms for him, when they became familiar. He therefore offered his skill and services to Portugal, when it engaged in warfare with Spain; and his offer was cheerfully accepted. But when the interference of France, in 1778, made it his duty to fight for his king, and to defend his country, the Portuguese court greatly regretted his departure, though they applauded his motive.

His return afforded pleasure to those, who knew his value, and were desirous of advancing his rank; for he was made master and commander in the Basilisk fireship on the 2d of September 1779. But in her he had little opportunity of displaying his zeal, or of acquiring additional fame. This step, however, placed him in a higher situation, and caused him to be appointed Post-captain in the Ariadne frigate on the 13th of November 1781, when he was upwards of forty-three. In the Ariadne he had not much time for active adventures, being appointed to the Europe of sixty-four guns on the 23d of December 1781. During the memorable year 1782, Phillip promoted its enterprizes, and partook of its glories.

And in January, 1783, he sailed with a reinforcement to the East Indies, where superior bravery contended against superior force, but the policy of our negociations terminated unequal hostilities by a necessary peace.

The activity and zeal of Phillip was now directed to more peaceful objects. It having been determined to form a settlement in that part of New Holland, to be denominated New South Wales, he was selected as a proper officer to conduct such an enterprize, which at once required professional knowledge and habitual prudence*.

SECTION I.

Great public Utility of Voyages—New Holland—Reasons for fixing a Settlement there—Origin of Transportation to America—Cessation—Experiments made—The present Plan adopted.

AN expedition from motives of legislative authority, commenced by public authority, and concluded by a fixed establishment in a very remote country, promises to lead us to some points of knowledge which could not by the former mode have been attained. A transient visit to the coast of a great continent, cannot produce satisfactory information respecting its inhabitants, soil, climate, and productions; but when these essential particulars are contemplated by resident observers, errors inseparable from hasty observation, will then be corrected from infallible experience: many objects will then present themselves to view, which before had escaped observation.

On a full discovery of the extent of New Holland, by our illustrious navigator, Captain Cook, a doubt has arisen whether, to a land of such magnitude, the name of island or continent may more properly be applied. But though the etymology of the word island, points out only a land surrounded by the sea, or by any water; yet, in the usual acceptation, an island is conceived to signify, a land of only moderate extent surrounded by the sea. A distinction formed on this circumstance is therefore sufficient, for con-

* A view of the fleet and establishment sent out with Governor Phillip to New South Wales.

Captain Arthur Phillip, of the Navy, Governor and Commander in Chief of the territory of New South Wales, and of his Majesty's ships and vessels employed on that coast.

Major Robert Ross, Lieutenant governor.
Richard Johnson, Captain.
Andrew Miller, Commissary.
David Collins, Judge Advocate.
John Long, Adjutant.
James Furzer, Quarter-Master.
George Alexander, Provost Martial.
This gentleman did not go.
John White, Surgeon.
Thomas Arndell, Assistant Ditto.
William Balmain, Ditto Ditto.

His Majesty's ship SIRIUS
Captain Arthur Phillip.
Captain John Hunter.

His Majesty's armed tender SUPPLY
Lieutenant H. L. Ball.

Six Transports carrying the CONVICTS.

Alexander,	210 men convicts	*Women Convicts.*
Scarborough,	210 Ditto	
Friendship,	80 Ditto	24
Charlotte,	100 Ditto	24
Prince of Wales,		100
Lady Penrhyn,		102

Each transport had a detachment of marines on board.

Three STORE SHIPS.

The GOLDEN GROVE, FISHBURN, and BORROWDALE; with provisions, implements of Husbandry, Cloathing, &c. for the Convicts.

Lieutenant JOHN SHORTLAND, agent for the transports.

The garrison is formed from the Marines.

This gentleman did not go.

The Names of the Transports:

Ships.	*Officers Names.*
Lady Penrhyn,	Captain Campbell, Lieut. G. Johnson, Lieut. W. Collins.
Scarborough,	Captain Shea, Lieut. Kellow, Lieut. Morrison.
Friendship,	Capt. Lieut. Meredith, Lieut. Clarke, Lieut. Faddy.
Charlotte,	Capt. Tench, Lieut. Creswell, Lieut. Poulden.
Alexander,	Lieut. J. Johnston, Lieut. Shairp.
Prince of Wales,	Lieut. Davy, Lieut. Timmins.

Total of the Detachment.

4 Captains, 12 Subalterns, 12, Serjeants, 12 Corporals, 8 Drummers and Fifers, 160 Privates.

N. B. 40 Women, wives to the Marines, were permitted to go out with the garrison.

venience at least, if not for speculative accuracy. If we suppose this extent to be about one thousand miles each way, the claim of New Holland to be called a Continent will be indisputable. The greatest extent of that country being, from East to West, two thousand four hundred English miles, and, from North to South, two thousand three hundred miles.

To New South Wales, England is allowed the claim of prior discovery. The whole of that eastern coast, except the southern point, having been untouched by any navigator, till it was explored by Captain Cook. This consideration, added to other favourable accounts given of this side of the continent, decided the choice of the British government, in appointing a place for the banishment of a certain class of criminals. And the cause of the determination to send out thus the convicts under sentence of transportation, was the cessation of their removal to America; and the inconveniences experienced by the other modes of destination adopted after that period.

Virginia, greatly in want, at its first settlement, of labourers to clear the forests, which impeded cultivation, was willing to receive those English criminals, whom our courts of law deemed not sufficiently guilty for capital punishment. The planters hired their services for limited terms; and they were latterly committed to the care of contractors, who were required to prove, by certificates, that they had disposed of them according to the intention of the law*.

The benefits of this regulation were, that the colonies received by it, at an easy rate, a very necessary assistance; and the mother country was relieved from the burthen of subjects, who at home were not only useless but pernicious to her. Though the individuals, in some instances, proved incorrigible, it sometimes happened, that during the period of their legal servitude, they became reconciled to a life of honest industry; and, rising gradually by laudable efforts, to independence, honour and estimation, and proved valuable members of society.

By the contest in America, and the subsequent separation of the thirteen colonies, this traffic was annihilated. Other expedients have since been tried. The deliberations on the subject have more than once employed the attention of Parliament. On December 6, 1786, orders were issued by his Majesty in Council, and an Act establishing a court of judicature in the place of settlement, besides making other regulations, received the sanction of the legislature early in the year 1787.

The objects principally aimed at are the restrictions of the number of capital inflictions, as far as the security of society will admit, and the employment of every method that can be devised for rendering the guilty persons serviceable to the public and themselves; to correct their moral depravity, induce habits of industry, and arm them in future against the temptations by which they have been once ensnared.

For effectuating these purposes well-regulated penitentiary houses were in contemplation: a plan was therefore accordingly formed by the united efforts of judge Blackstone, Mr. Eden, and Mr. Howard, which was adopted by Parliament in the year 1779. Difficulties however occurred which prevented the execution of this design.

In some countries, such malefactors as are not capitally convicted, are sentenced to the gallies or mines; punishments often more cruel than death, and here absolutely impracticable. In other places, they labour in public works, under the care of overseers. This method has been partially tried in England on the Thames, but has not produced the benefits expected from it, and there seems to be little temptation to pursue it to a further extent.

It is therefore necessary to adhere as much as possible to the practice approved by long experience, of employing the services of such criminals in remote and rising settlements. For this purpose the establishment on the eastern coast of New Holland has been projected, and carried on with care and caution. That some difficulties will arise in the commencement of such an undertaking must be expected; but no moral obligation requires that convicts should be conveyed to a place of perfect convenience and security.

* To define at what point of magnitude a country shall begin to be a continent, could not answer any purpose of utility: as long as the peculiar advantages of an insular situation can be enjoyed by the inhabitants of such a country (which is that of being capable of a convenient union under one government) let it have the title of island; when it exceeds those limits, let it be considered as a continent.

SECT.

SECTION II.

Preparation of the Fleet destined to Botany Bay—Particulars of its Arrangement—Departure—Passage to the Canary Isles—Reasons for touching there.

THE squadron destined to the execution of the above design, began to assemble at the Mother Bank, in the Isle Wight, about the 16th of March, 1787. This fleet consisted of the following ships: his Majesty's frigate Sirius, Captain John Hunter, and the armed tender Supply, commanded by Lieutenant H. L. Ball. Three store-ships, the *Golden Grove*, *Fishburn*, and *Borrowdale*, for carrying provisions and stores for two years, including instruments of husbandry, cloathing, &c. And lastly six transports, the *Scarborough* and *Lady Penrhyn*, from Portsmouth; the Friendship, and Charlotte, from Plymouth; the *Prince of Wales*, and the *Alexander*, from Woolwich. These were to convey the convicts, with a detachment of marines in each. Altogether they formed a little squadron of eleven sail*.

Two months had nearly elapsed before the ships were properly enabled to quit this station, and proceed upon their voyage; and even then some few articles were unprepared or neglected. Part of the cloathing for the female convicts, for example, being unfinished, was obliged to be left behind; and the ammunition of the marines was not completed at their first embarkation; an omission which, in the course of the voyage, was easily supplied.

The necessary interval was usefully employed in pointing out to the convicts the advantages they would derive from good conduct, and the certainty of severe punishment in case of turbulence or mutiny. But from the testimony of those who commanded it appears, that their behaviour, while the ships remained in port, was regular, humble, and suitable to their situation; such as could not excite alarm, or require the exertion of severity.

When the fleet was at length prepared for sailing, the convicts and marines on board the transports were thus arranged. The *Friendship* carried a Captain and 44 marines, with 77 male, and 20 female convicts. The *Charlotte*, a Captain and 43 men, with 88 male and 20 female convicts. The *Alexander* had two lieutenants, and 35 marines, with 213 male convicts. In the *Scarborough*, a Captain and thirty-three marines, with 208 male convicts. The *Prince of Wales* transport had two Lieutenants and thirty marines, with 50 female convicts. The *Lady Penrhyn*, a Captain, two Lieutenants, and 3 privates, with 102 female convicts. Ten marines were also sent as supernumeraries on board the Sirius. The whole complement of marines, including officers, amounted to 212. Twenty-eight women, wives of marines, carrying with them seventeen children, were also permitted to accompany their husbands. The number of convicts was 778, of whom 558 were men. Two, however, on board the Alexander, was pardoned before the departure of the fleet, and consequently remained in England.

Governor Phillip, on his arrival at the station, hoisted his flag on board the Sirius, as Commodore of the squadron. At day-break on the 13th of May, he gave the signal to weigh anchor. His Majesty's frigate Hyena was ordered to attend the fleet, in order to bring intelligence of its passage through that most difficult part of the voyage. On the 20th of May the Hyena returned; but brought no exact account of the state of the transports; the sea at that time running so high that the Governor could not sit to write, nor could he send on board the several ships for exact reports of their situation, and of the behaviour of the convicts. All, however, had not been perfectly tranquil; the convicts in the Scarborough had formed a plan of getting possession of that ship, which the officers had happily detected and frustrated; and the Governor

* Banishment was first enacted as a punishment for rogues and vagrants, by 39 *Eliz. c.* 1. But no place was specified. The practice of transporting criminals to America commenced in the reign of James I. The transport traffic was first regulated by 4 *G.* I. *c.* 11. and the causes expressed in the preamble are, the failure of those who undertook to transport themselves, and the scarcity of servants in his Majesty's plantations. Subsequent statutes enacted further regulations.

The Abbé Raynel mentions the policy of this species of banishment, in the 14th book of his History.

vernor had ordered two of the ring-leaders on board the Syrius for punishment. These men, after receiving proper chastisement, were removed into the Prince of Wales; and no other attempt of the kind was made during the voyage.

The high sea which had impeded the intercourse between the ships, as they were out of the reach of rocks and shoals, was not an unfavourable circumstance. On the whole the weather might be reckoned fine, and the passage very prosperous from Spit-head to Santa Cruz, in the Isle of Teneriffe, where the fleet anchored on the 3d of June.

The chief object proposed by the Governor in touching at Teneriffe, was the obtaining a fresh supply of water and vegetables. In this, and every other port, the crews, soldiers, and convicts, were supplied with fresh meat, fruit, and vegetables. The allowance was, to the marines, a pound of bread, a pound of beef, and a pint of wine *per* man daily: the convicts had three quarters of a pound of beef, and of bread, but no wine. Figs and mulberries were plentiful and excellent. Precautions respecting health were successfully employed throughout the voyage, as the reports of the number of sick and dead will sufficiently evince.

If the number of convicts, who died between the time of embarkation, and the arrival of the fleet at this place, should not perfectly agree with this assertion, it must be considered that the deaths were confined entirely to that class of people, many of whom were old, or labouring under diseases contracted in prison, or elsewhere.

The Governor of the Canaries, at this time, was the Marquis de Brancifort, a Sicilian by birth. He was resident at Santa Cruz, and paid particular and polite attention to Governor Phillip, and the other officers. The port of Santa Cruz, though not excellent, is the best in the Canaries, and the usual place for vessels to touch at for refreshment.

To enter into much detail respecting the Canary Islands, which lie in the course of every ship that sails from Europe to the Cape, would be superfluous; but perhaps a few general notices concerning them may not be unacceptable. They are in number about fourteen; of which the most considerable are *Canary, Teneriffe, Fortaventure, Palma, Ferro, Gomera, Lancerotta.* Their distance from the coast of Africa is from forty to eighty leagues. The circumference of Teneriffe does not exceed one hundred and twenty miles, but that of Canary, or as it is generally called, the Great Canary, is one hundred and fifty. They have been possessed by Spain from the beginning of the 15th century *.

The capital of Teneriffe is *Laguna,* or *St. Christopher of the Lake;* so called from its being situated near a lake. Both this and Santa Cruz are built of stone, but the latter is the most pleasing: they are about four miles distant from each other. The capital of the Great Canary is the *city of Palms,* but that place has, for a considerable time, been the centre of ecclesiastical government only.

The ships were preparing to depart, when on the evening of the 9th of June, a convict found means to escape from the Alexander, by cutting away the boat: but he was missed and speedily retaken. By the 10th of June the ships had completed their water, and early the next morning, the Governor giving a signal for weighing anchor, the fleet pursued its course †.

Charlotte - -	Marines	4
	Convicts	16
Alexander -	Marines	2
	Convicts	26
Scarborough - -	Marine	1
	Convicts	9
Friendship - -	Convicts	13
Lady Penrhyn - -	Convicts	11
Prince of Wales -	Marines	2
	Convicts	7
Total	Marines	9
	Convicts	72
Convicts dead since the first embarkation -		21
Children of Convicts - - - -		3

Of these only fifteen, and one child, had died since the departure from Spithead.

SECT.

* The ancients made these islands the region of fable, and their poets decorated them with imaginary charms, the moderns cannot wholly be exempted from similar imputation. Travellers speak of the peak of Teneriffe as the highest mountain in the ancient world, though, by the best accounts, Mont Blanc exceeds it by 3523 feet, of perpendicular altitude. The Isle of Ferro was celebrated, for a century or two, on the credit of a miraculous tree, enveloped in perpetual mists, and distilling sufficient water for the ample supply of the island: but this wonder, though vouched by several voyagers, vanished at the approach of sober enquiry; nor could a single native be found hardy enough to assert its existence.

† *Report of the Marines and Convicts under medical treatment, given in to Governor Phillip, June 4th,* 1781.

SECTION III.

Attempt to put in at Port Praya—Weather—Sail for Rio de Janeiro—Reasons for touching at a South American Port—Pass the Line—Arrive at Rio de Janeiro—Transactions there—Departure—Passage from Rio to the Cape.

AS a sufficient supply of vegetables could not be procured at Santa Cruz, Governor Phillip intended to anchor for about twenty-four hours in the bay of Port Praya. The islands on this side of the Atlantic offer to vessels, without any material variation from their course, admirable stations for supply and refreshment. The Azores; the Mandeiras; the Canaries; and the Islands of Cape Verd, successively present themselves to the voyager, affording abundantly every species of accommodation. On the southern side of the equator, a good harbour and plenty of turtles give importance even to the little barren island of Ascension; and St. Helena, by the industry of English settlers, presents elegance and plenty. Without these sources of assistance, the interval of almost forty degrees on each side of the line, in a sea much exposed to heat and calms, would even discourage the navigators of the eighteenth century.

The fleet came in sight of the Cape Verd Islands on the 18th of June, and was directed to steer for Saint Jago; but as it seemed probable, from several circumstances, that all the ships would not be able to get into the bay, the Governor changed his plan. The signal for anchoring was therefore hauled down, and the ships were directed to continue their course; to the great disappointment of many individuals on board, who were eager to enjoy the refreshments of the shore.

In the passage from the Cape Verd Islands, the fleet suffered much inconvenience from heat and heavy rains; but the precautions unremittingly observed in all the ships, prevented any violent sickness; nor did the oppressive heat continue so long as might have been expected in these latitudes; for before they reached the equator, the temperature had become much more moderate.

On the 5th of July, 1787, the Botany Bay fleet passed from the northern into the southern hemisphere. Three weeks more of favourable weather conveyed them to Rio de Janeiro; and on the 6th of August they anchored in the harbour. *Rio de Janeiro,* or *January River,* so called from having been discovered by Dias de Solis on the feast of Saint Januarius in 1525, is not in fact a river, though it was then supposed to be so: it is an arm of the sea, into which several small rivers descend.

The city of Rio de Janeiro, called also St. Sebastian, is situated on the west side of this bay. It is now the capital of all Brasil, and the residence of the Viceroy. The port is one of the finest in the world, very narrow at the entrance, and capacious enough to contain a great number of ships. It has soundings from twenty to one hundred and twenty fathoms. A hill shaped like a sugar-loaf, on the west side, marks the bearings for entering the harbour: the situation of which is fully pointed out by some small islands. The mouth of the harbour is defended by two forts, named *Santa Cruz* and *Losia.* The usual anchorage in it is before the city, north of a small island named Dos Cobras*.

Don *Lewis de Varconcellos,* the Viceroy, is one of the first families in Portugal, and brother to the Marquis of *Castello Methor.* Governor Phillip, who was some years a captain in the Portuguese navy, is much honoured by that nation. As soon as Don Lewis was informed of the nature of Governor Phillip's commission, he ordered the garrison to pay the same honours to that officer as to himself; a distinction which the Governor modestly wished to decline, but

* Established fees are paid here by all merchant ships, whether Portuguese or strangers: three pounds twelve shillings each on entering the bay, and the same on going out; with five shillings and six-pence a-day while they remain at anchor. Great appearances of suspicion were shewn on Captain Cook's arrival at this place in 1768; but the reception given by the present Viceroy to Governor Phillip and his officers was extremely different; it was polite and flattering to a very great degree.

was not permitted. His officers were all introduced to the Viceroy, and received every possible mark of attention to them, and regard for their country*.

The root of a shrub called *Cassada,* or *Cassava satropha,* in its crude state is highly poisonous; but by washing, pressure, and evaporation, it is deprived of all its noxious qualities, and being formed into cakes, becomes a salubrious substitute for bread; and is, indeed, the bread of thousands in tropical climates †.

On the 4th of September, the Governor having furnished his ships with necessaries, weighed anchor, and, as he passed the fort, he was saluted by twenty-one guns. The salute was returned by an equal number from the Sirius; and thus ended an intercourse honourable to both nations.

The passage of the Botany Bay fleet from Rio de Janeiro to the Cape of Good Hope, was marked by no extraordinary accidents. They left Rio on the 4th of September, and on the 13th of October the ships came to anchor in Table Bay. Here they were to take their final refreshment, and lay in every kind of stock with which they were not already provided. Table Bay, on the north-west side of the Cape of Good Hope, has its name from the Table Mountain, a promontory of great elevation, at the foot of which stands Cape Town, the principal Dutch settlement in this territory. This bay is not entitled to the name of a port, from its not being a station of security: it is exposed to all the winds which set into it from the sea; and is not properly secured from those which blow from the land. The gusts from the summit of Table Mountain are sufficiently violent to force ships from their anchors, and greatly to annoy persons on shore, by destroying tents, and other temporary edifices. The storms from the sea are still more formidable: ships have frequently been driven by them from their anchorage, and wrecked at the head of the bay. But these accidents happen chiefly in the winter months, from May 14 to August 14, when few ships venture to anchor here.

The Cape of Good Hope, though popularly called the most southern point of Africa, is not so in fact. The land projecting furthest to the south is a point to the east of it, called by the English Cape Lagullus; a name corrupted from the original Portugueze *das Agulhas,* which is descriptive of its form, and might properly be translated *Needle Cape.* Table Mountain is so named from its appearance, terminating in a flat horizontal surface, from which the face of the rock descends almost perpendicularly. This mountain rises to 3567 feet above the level of the sea. Devil's Head is situated to the east of the former, and is about 3368 feet in height‡.

But though the country in the neighbourhood of the Cape could not be rendered so pleasing as that of Rio de Janeiro, yet the governor, Mynheer Van Graffe, was as attentive to the English officers as the viceroy of Brazil. They were elegantly entertained at his table, and had every reason to be perfectly satisfied with his behaviour and disposition. In about a month, the live stock and other provisions were procured; and the ships, containing about five hundred animals of different kinds, but principally poultry, excited the idea of Noah's ark.

On the 12th of November the fleet set sail, but was considerably delayed by strong winds from the south-east. On the 25th Governor Phillip left the Sirius to go on board the Supply tender; in hopes, by leaving the convoy, to gain time for examining the environs of Botany Bay, to enable him to fix on an eligible situation for the colony, before the transports should arrive. Major Ross, the commandant of the marines, now quitted the Sirius, and went on board

* Provisions were so cheap here, that though the allowance of men was fixed by Governor Phillip at twenty ounces a-day, the men were victualled completely at threepence three farthings a-head, including rice, vegetables, and firing.

† The great abundance of images dispersed throughout the city, and the devotion paid to them, is astonishing, particularly to protestants. Being placed at the corner of almost every street, they are never passed without a respectful salutation; but at night they are continually surrounded by their respective votaries, who loudly vociferate their prayers, hymns, and divine songs: but the strictness of manners in the inhabitants did not appear to be equivalent to the warmth of this devotion.

‡ Provisions were dearer and less plentiful in Cape Town than our voyagers had been taught to expect. Board and lodging stood the officers in two rix-dollars, or nine shillings sterling a-day. This place is of no great extent, though the only spot in the whole colony that deserves the appellation of a town; and the country, colonized here by the Dutch, is so unfavourable to cultivation, that it seems astonishing how they could raise provisions from it sufficient to supply themselves, and the ships of so many nations which resort to the Cape.

board the Scarborough, to accompany that part of the detachment which probably would be landed first. Captain Hunter, in the Sirius, was to follow with the store-ships, and the rest of the transports; and he had received the necessary instructions for his future proceedings. From this time to the 3d of January, 1788, the winds were extremely favourable, The Supply however sailed very indifferently, and suffered so much in the voyage that she was hardly thought a safe conveyance, yet she performed in forty-one days a voyage of seven thousand miles. On the day above-mentioned she was within sight of the coast of New South Wales. But the winds then became variable, and a current sometimes setting strongly to the southward, so much impeded her course, that she did not arrive at Botany Bay till the 18th.

SECTION IV.

Interview with the Natives—Examination of the Bay—Arrival of the whole Fleet—Port Jackson—Second Interview with the Natives—Third Interview—Governor Phillip returns to Botany Bay—Orders given for the Evacuation of it—Removal from Botany Bay—Arrival of Two French Ships—Description of Port Jackson.

AS soon as Governor Phillip landed on the shore of Botany Bay, an interview took place with the natives. They were all armed, but on seeing the Governor approach with indications of friendship, alone and defenceless, they returned his confidence by laying down their weapons. Though totally devoid of cloathing, they seemed very fond of ornaments, fixing the beads and red baize that were given them on their heads or necks, seeming perfectly happy in the enjoyment of such embellishments.

An examination of the bay very naturally succeeded this interview, when it appeared that, though it was extensive, it did not afford a shelter from the easterly winds; and that it was too shallow for ships even of a moderate daught, as they must be obliged to anchor with the entrance of the bay open, where they must be exposed to a heavy sea, which rolls in whenever it blows hard from the eastward. Several runs of fresh water were observed in different parts of the bay; but no situation presented itself to which there was not some very strong objection. In the northern part a small creek appeared, which runs a considerable way into the country, but it has water only for a boat. In the western branch of the bay, which is continued to a great extent, the officers could not find a supply of fresh water, except in very small drains. Point Sutherland offered the most eligible situation, having a run of good water, though not in very great abundance: besides, to this part of the harbour the ships could not approach. Smaller numbers might, in several spots, have found a comfortable residence, but no place could be found calculated for the reception of so large a settlement. The Supply had not been so expeditious as to give Governor Phillip the advantage he had expected in point of time. On the 19th of January, the Alexander, Scarborough, and Friendship, cast anchor in Botany Bay, and on the 20th, the Sirius, with the remainder of the convoy.

Not approving of the openness of the bay, and the dampness of the soil, the Governor had already determined to seek another situation. He resolved to examine Port Jackson, a bay mentioned by Captain Cook to the north of this. There he hoped to find a better harbour, and a more commodious place for the establishment of his new government. That no time might be lost, the ground near Point Sutherland was ordered to be cleared, and preparations to be made for landing, under the direction of the Lieutenant Governor.

Governor Phillip then prepared to proceed to the examination of Port Jackson. He went round with three boats, taking with him Captain Hunter, and some other officers, that the greater dispatch might be made. Early in the afternoon of the 22d of January, they arrived at Port Jackson, which is distant about three leagues. Here Governor Phillip had the inexpressible satisfaction to find one of the finest harbours in the world, in which a thousand sail of the line might ride in the most perfect security.

The

The different coves of this harbour were expeditiously examined, and the preference was given to that which had the finest spring of water, and in which ships can anchor so close to the shore, that quays might be easily constructed, at which the largest vessels may unload. This cove, which is about half a mile in length, and a quarter of a mile across at the entrance, the Governor distinguished by the name of *Sydney Cove*, in honour of Lord Sydney.

On the arrival of the boats at Port Jackson, a second collection of the natives appeared about the place of landing. These were also armed with lances, and at first were extremely vociferous; but recourse being had to the gentle means which had successfully been employed before, they were easily pacified, and thankfully accepted whatever was offered to them. One person, in particular, who seemed to be the chief of his tribe, not only gave marks of confidence in his new friends, but also proofs of determined resolution. Conducted by Governor Phillip, to whose guidance he voluntarily intrusted himself, he went to the spot on the beach, where the men belonging to the boats were then boiling their food: when he approached the marines, who were drawn up near that place, and perceived that by such a step he should be separated from his companions, he resolutely stopped, and with great firmness, seemed by gestures to denounce revenge if any unfair advantage should be taken of his situation. He then calmly examined what was boiling in the pot, and by his expressions of admiration, evidently shewed that he intended to profit by what he saw*.

Preparations for a general removal were now expeditiously made, but on the 24th of January much astonishment was spread throughout the fleet by the appearance of two ships under French colours. In this remote region visitors from Europe were very little expected, and their arrival occasioned a multiplicity of conjectures, many of which were exceedingly ridiculous. Governor Phillip, however, recollected that two ships had been sent out some time before from France, for the purpose of discovery, and rationally concluded these to be the same. But more important matters demanding his attention, he did not think proper to delay his departure for the sake of making further enquiry.

On the 25th of January, seven days after the arrival of the Supply, Governor Phillip left Botany Bay in the same ship, and sailed to Port Jackson. The rest of the fleet, under convoy of the Sirius, was ordered to follow, when the abatement of the wind should facilitate its working out of the bay. The Supply was hardly out of sight, when the French ships again appeared off the mouth of the harbour, and a boat was sent to them offering them any information or assistance they might require. It was now discovered that these were, as the Governor had supposed, the *Boussole* and the *Astrolabe*, on a voyage of discovery, under the direction of Monsieur la Pérouse.

On the 26th the transports and store ships, accompanied by the Sirius, evacuated Botany Bay, and speedily they were all assembled in Sydney Cove, the place now destined for their port, and for the reception of the new settlement. The debarkation was now made at Sydney Cove, and the work of clearing the ground for the encampment, as well as for other buildings, was begun. But the labour attending this operation was greater than can possibly be conceived. The coast, and the neighbouring country is covered with wood; and though in this spot the trees were less incumbered with underwood than in many other places, their magnitude was such as to render the felling and removal of them a task of no small difficulty. By the habitual indo-

* In passing near a point of land in this harbour, the boats were observed by many of the natives, twenty of whom waded unarmed into the water, received what was offered them, and minutely examined the boat. Their manly behaviour induced Governor Phillip, who was highly pleased with it, to give the place the name of *Manly Cove*. The same people afterwards joined the party where they had landed to dine. Two of them were then armed with shields and swords, and the rest with lances only. The swords were made of wood, small in the gripe, and less formidable than a moderate sized stick.

That Botany Bay should have appeared in a more advantageous light to Captain Cook, than to Governor Phillip, may easily be reconciled. Their objects were different: the one required only shelter and refreshment for a small vessel, and for a short time only: the other had a great many to provide for, and was under the necessity of finding a place wherein ships of very considerable burthen might easily approach the shore, and lie at all times in the most perfect security. The appearance of this place is picturesque and pleasing, and the harvest it affords of botanical acquisitions, made it extremely interesting to the philosophical gentlemen engaged in that expedition.

lence of the convicts, and the want of proper persons to encourage them to do their duty, their labour was rendered less efficient than it might have been*.

February was ushered in by a violent storm of thunder and rain. The lightning struck and shivered a tree, under which a shed had been erected for some sheep, and five of those animals were unfortunatsly destroyed by it. The encampment still went on with alacrity, so that early in this month, public storehouses were projected and undertaken. Unremitting diligence began to triumph over the obstacles which circumstances had presented.

Port Jackson was not visited by Captain Cook; he only saw it at the distance of about a league from the coast. Governor Phillip, however, pronounces it to be a harbour, with respect to extent and security, superior to any he has ever seen. Other experienced navigators, who attended him, are of the same opinion. From an entrance not exceeding two miles across, Port Jackson gradually extends into a very capacious bason; having ample soundings for the largest vessels, and space sufficient to accommodate in security any number that could be assembled. It runs principally in a western direction about thirteen miles into the country, and contains about a hundred small coves, affording admirable shelter from all winds.

The soil about Port Jackson is of various qualities. The neck of land which divides the south end of the harbour from the sea, is chiefly sand. Between Sydney Cove and Botany Bay, the first space is occupied by a wood, beyond which a kind of heath presents itself, poor, sandy, and full of swamps. As far as the eye can reach to the westward, the country is one continued wood.

The 7th of February, 1788, was the memorable day on which a regular form of government was established on the coast of New South Wales. All possible solemnity was given to the necessary proceedings on this occasion. On a space, previously cleared for the purpose, the whole colony was assembled: the military appeared under arms; the convicts stationed apart. Those who held the principal offices under the Governor, were placed near his person. The royal commission was then read aloud by Mr. D. Collins, the Judge Advocate. By this instrument Arthur Phillip was constituted Captain General, and Governor in chief in and over the territory of all New South Wales; extending from the northern Cape, called Cape York, in the latitude of ten degrees, thirty-seven minutes south, to the southern extremity of the said territory of New South Wales, &c. and of all towns, garrisons, castles, forts, or other fortifications, which may hereafter be erected on the said territory.

The act of parliament, establishing the courts of judicature was next read; and then the patents under the great seal, authorizing the proper persons to hold those courts upon proper occasions. Major Ross of the Marines, was appointed Lieutenant Governor; and a triple discharge of musquetry concluded this part of the ceremony†.

This address, which was received with universal

* On the 26th of January the colours were displayed on shore; and the Governor, with his principal officers, assembled round the flag-staff, drank the king's health, and success to the settlement, with all that display of form which on such occasions is thought propitious, as it enlivens the spirits, and impregnates the imagination with pleasing presages. From this time to the 7th of February, all was hurry and exertion. The receivers, as well as the givers of orders, were fully occupied; nor can a busier scene be imagined than this part of the coast exhibited during the continuance of these first efforts towards establishment. The plan of the encampment was quickly formed, and places selected for different purposes, so as to introduce the strictest order and regularity. The frame of a work to construct a temporary habitation for the Governor, had been taken from England ready formed: these materials were methodically and expeditiously put together. Hospital tents were also erected, for which there was shortly too much occasion. In the passage from the Cape little sickness had been experienced, and but few deaths had happened among the convicts; but soon after landing, a fatal dysentery prevailed; and the scurvy began to rage with such violence as to furnish a constant supply of patients for the hospital tents. For those afflicted with this disorder, fresh provisions could rarely be procured; and esculent vegetables could not be obtained in sufficient plenty to produce any material alleviation of the complaint. But, with regard to the dysentery, the red gum of the tree which abounds on this coast, was found a very powerful remedy. The yellow gum possesses the same property, but in an inferior degree.

† After this, Governor Phillip advanced, and addressing himself to the private soldiers, thanked them sincerely for their general good conduct. He then explained to the convicts the nature of their present situation; charging the greater part of them to recollect, that they had already for-

versal acclamation, terminated the ceremonial peculiar to the day. The assembly was now dispersed, and the Governor reviewed the troops on the ground cleared for a parade: after which he entertained his officers with a dinner, and the first evening of his government was concluded in good order, and innocent festivity, amidst reiterated wishes for its prosperity.

Governor Phillip seems to have every requisite to ensure the success of the undertaking entrusted to him, as far as the perfections of one man can ensure it. Intelligent, active, firm, and persevering, with complacency and mildness to render those qualifications pleasing, it seemed reasonable to suppose that he might bring the native inhabitants of New South Wales into a voluntary subjection, or at least establish with them a strict amity and alliance. But notwithstanding the rectitude of his intentions, a friendly intercourse could not speedily be established. M. De la Pérouse, while he remained in Botany Bay, had a dispute with the inhabitants, which obliged him to use his fire-arms against them: this unfortunate affair, joined to the ill behaviour of some of the convicts, who officiously wandered out among them, produced a shyness on their parts which could not be removed, though every proper measure was pursued to regain their confidence. Some of the straggling convicts have been killed in the woods, and others dangerously wounded by the natives; but it is reasonably supposed that the convicts have usually been the aggressors.

As the month of February advanced, heavy rains began to fall, which urged the necessity of procuring speedy shelter: but only sixteen carpenters could be hired from all the ships. No more than twelve of this profession were found among the convicts, and several of them were sick. These therefore formed but a small party, in proportion to the work required. One hundred convicts were also added as labourers; but with every effort, the barracks for the men, or the huts for the officers, could not be erected so expeditiously as they were wanted. So late as the middle of May those essential matters were unfinished, as well as the hospital, and the storehouse for those provisions which were not landed at first. The Governor himself was still lodged in his temporary house of canvas, which was not perfectly impervious either to wind or weather.

On the 14th of February a party was dispatched in the Supply, to settle on a small island to the north-west of New Zealand, discovered and much commended by Captain Cook, and by him named *Norfolk Island.* To the office of superintendant and commandant of this island, Go-Phillip appointed Philip Gidley King, second lieutenant of the Sirius, an officer of great merit, who might fully be depended on. As Norfolk Island was then without inhabitants, only a small detachment was sent with Lieutenant King, consisting of one subaltern officer, six marines, a midshipman, a surgeon, two flax-dressers, with nine men and women convicts. The substance of the instructions, delivered to Mr. King at his departure is here subjoined.

Instructions for PHILIP GIDLEY KING, *Superintendant and Commandant of* NORFOLK ISLAND.

You are appointed to superintend and command the settlement to be formed in Norfolk Island, and to obey such orders as you shall receive from me, his Majesty's Governor in Chief, and Captain-General of New South Wales, or from the Lieutenant Governor in my absence.

You are to proceed in his Majesty's armed tender the Supply, whose commander has my orders to receive you, with the men, women, stores, &c. forming the intended settlement, and, on your landing at Norfolk Island, you are to take upon you the trust reposed in you.

After pursuing the necessary measures for securing yourself and people, and for the pre-

forfeited their lives to the justice of their country; but that the lenity of its laws had again put it in their power, by industry and rectitude, to regain the advantages and estimation in society of which they had once deprived themselves. They were now particularly encouraged to make that effort, and they were fortunately almost removed from every temptation to guilt. There was little opportunity for plunder in so small a society, and certain detection must almost instantly follow every flagicious attempt. To persons detected in future in such atrocities, he could not promise any mercy. What mercy could do for them they had already experienced. Against future offenders, therefore, the rigour of the law would certainly be put in force; while those whose behaviour should indicate a resolution to reform, might depend upon encouragement fully adequate to their deserts. After many other judicious observations, he concluded by declaring his earnest desire to promote the happiness of all who were under his government.

servation of the stores, you are immediately to proceed to the cultivation of the flax plant, which you will find growing spontaneously on the island. You are also required to attend to the cultivation of cotton, corn, and other plants, with the seeds of which you are furnished, and which you are to consider as public stock, and of the increase of which you are to send me an account. It is left to your discretion to use such part of the corn that is raised as may be found necessary; but this is to be done with the greatest oeconomy; and, as the corn, flax, cotton, and other grains are the property of the crown, you are to keep an exact account of the increase; and you will in future receive directions for the dispoal thereof.

You are to learn the nature of the soil, what quantity of land is fit for the cultivation of corn, flax, and cotton; what quantity of cattle may be bred upon the island, and the number of people you judge necessary for the above purpose. To observe also what are the prevailing winds in the different seasons of the year, the best anchorage for the season; the rise and fall of the tides; and when the dry and rainy seasons begin and end.

You are to be furnished with a four-oared boat, and are not on any consideration to build, or permit to be built any vessel or boat whatever that is not decked, whose length of keel exceeds twenty feet: and if any vessel or boat that exceeds twenty feet should be driven on the island, you are to cause it to be scuttled, or otherwise rendered unserviceable, letting her remain in that situation till you receive further directions from me.

You will be furnished with six months' provisions, within which time you will receive an additional supply; but as you can procure fresh fish and vegetables, you are to make the provision you receive serve as long as possible.

The convicts being the servants of the crown, till the time for which they are sentenced is expired, their labour is to be for the public; and you are required to take particular notice of their behaviour, that they may hereafter be treated according to their different merits.

You are to cause the prayers of the church of England to be read with due solemnity every Sunday, and to enforce a due observance of religion and good order, transmitting to me, as often as opportunity offers, a full account of your situation and transactions.

You are not to permit any intercourse or trade with any ships or vessels that may stop at the island, whether English, or of any other nation, unless they should be in distress, in which case you are to assist them as much as may be in your power.

Given under my hand, at Head-Quarters, in Port Jackson, New South Wales, this 12th of February, 1788.

ARTHUR PHILLIP.

SECTION V.

Hold a Criminal Court—Broken Bay explored—Interview with the Natives—Peculiarities remarked—Friendly Behaviour and Extraordinary Courage of an old Man.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP discovered, with considerable regret, that in the community committed to his care, the strict enforcement of the sanctions of the law was necessary. There were in it many individuals whom lenity could not touch, nor rigour terrify; who seemed to have lost all sense of social duty, and with it to have lost all value for life itself. Towards the latter end of February, a criminal court was convened, in which six of the convicts received sentence of death. One, who appeared to be the head of the gang, was executed the same day: one of the rest was pardoned, and the other four reprieved. Those last mentioned were exiled to a small island within the bay, and fed only on bread and water. They had frequently robbed the other convicts, as well as taken the stores. The criminal who suffered, and two others, were detected stealing from the stores on the very day that they had received a week's provision; at the time when their allowance was the same as that of the soldiers, spirituous liquors excepted. So great was their propensity to dishonesty, that even the want of a motive could not repress them.

On

On the 2d of March Governor Phillip went with a long boat and cutter to examine the broken land, noticed by Captain Cook, eight miles to the northward of Port Jackson, which he named *Broken Bay*. The Governor and his attendants found the bay very extensive; but they slept in the boats in the north-west part of the bay, as the natives were numerous, though they appeared to be friendly. The next day, after passing a bar which had water only for small vessels, they entered an extensive branch, whence the ebb tide came out so strong that the boats could not oppose it. Most of the land in the upper part of this branch was full of swamps, and visited by great numbers of pelicans, and various other birds. Among others an uncommon kind called then the *Hooded Gull;* but it appears, from a drawing sent to England, to be of that species called the *Caspian Tern,* and is described by Mr. Latham as the second variety of that species.

Leaving this branch they proceeded across the bay, and went to the south-west branch, which is also very extensive, from which runs a second opening to the westward, affording shelter for a number of ships. Continual rains prevented their taking a further survey. The land, which was much higher than at Pork Jackson, was more rocky, and equally covered with timber. Large trees were seen even on the summits of the mountains, and appeared accessible only to birds. Round the head-land, forming the southern entrance into the bay, there is a third branch, which Governor Phillip declared to be the finest piece of water he had ever seen, and therefore he honoured it with the name of *Pitt Water*. Either this, or the south-west branch is capable of containing the whole navy of Great Britain. But on a narrow bar running across the entrance, it has only eighteen feet depth at low water. There are from seven to fifteen fathoms within the bar.

In the course of this excursion some interviews with the natives took place. When the party first landed at Broken Bay, several women are companied the men to the beach: one of whom was remarkably talkative and chearful, which was thought extraordinary, as the women are less lively and volatile than the men. This vivacious young lady, when she joined the party the second day in her canoe, stood up and entertained them with a pleasing song. The men readily assisted the English in making a fire, and seemed much inclined to render any friendly services in their power. In a bay where the Governor and his company landed to draw the seine, a number of the natives again approached them; when it was first observed by the Governor, that the women in general had lost two joints from the little finger of the left hand. As these appeared to be married women, it was at first conjectured, that this privation was a part of the marriage ceremony; but going afterwards into a hut in which were several women and children, he saw a girl of about six years of age whose left hand was thus mutilated. Several instances were afterwards observed of women with child, and of others that were wives, who had not lost those joints, and of children from whom they had been cut *.

The women, however, were not particularly forward in producing the mutilated finger, nor could it always be ascertained whether they had lost the joints or not. For though they did not attempt to secrete, nor seemed impressed with the idea that one part of the body more requires concealment than another, yet there was a shyness and timidity among them which often kept them at a distance. They never approached so readily as the men, and frequently would not land from their canoes, signifying, by signs, that what was offered them should be given to the men. Whether this reserve proceeds from the fears of the women, or from the jealousy of their husbands, seems a difficult point to determine †.

* Whatever may be the cause of this mutilation, it appears to have been performed on females only. Considering the imperfection of their instruments, such an operation must be attended with intolerable pain, as they have nothing calculated for performing such an amputation, but a shell fixed to a short stick, and used generally for pointing their spears, or for separating the oysters from the rocks.

The men are differently distinguished: their fingers are not mutilated, but most of them have lost the right front tooth of the upper jaw. Governor Phillip having remarked this, he informed them that he had himself lost one of his front teeth, which occasioned a general clamour: and it was supposed he derived some merit in their opinion from this circumstance.

† In Patterson's travels in Africa, we are informed that he met with a tribe of Hottentots near Orange River, all of whom had lost the first joint of the little finger: the reason they gave for cutting it off was, that it was a cure for a particular sickness, to which they were subject when young. *Fourth Journey, p.* 117.

When

When the southern branch of Broken Bay was first visited, an attempt was made to land, where there was not sufficient water for the boat. An old man and a youth were then standing on the rocks where the boat was trying to approach. Having observed how much our adventurers had laboured to get under land, they were solicitous to point out the deepest water, and seemed desirous of rendering any service in their power. Two of the officers permitted themselves to be conducted by the old man to a cave at some distance, but declined his pressing invitations to go in: this was unfortunate, as the rain at that time fell in torrents, and the cave was found next day sufficiently capacious to have sheltered the whole party. The old man took infinite pains to make this understood, but to no purpose, and his visitors suffered for their suspicions. He afterwards assisted in clearing away the bushes, and making preparations for the party to sleep on shore; and next morning he was amply rewarded for his civility and attention. Two days afterwards, when Governor Phillip returned to the same spot, the old man saluted him with a dance and a song of joy, attended by his son, and several of the natives. A hatchet and some other presents were given them; and the Governor flattered himself that a durable friendship would have been the consequence. As soon as it was dark, however, the old man stole a spade, and was detected with it in his hand. Governor Phillip saw the necessity, on this occasion, to shew his abhorrence of such acts, and when the culprit approached, he gave him two or three slightish slaps upon the shoulder, and then pushed him away; at the same time significantly pointing to the spade. This gentle chastisement at once terminated their friendship. The old man instantly seized a spear, and advancing towards the Governor, poized it, with a determined resolution to strike. But perceiving that his threats were disregarded, or perhaps dissuaded by some of the other natives, he dropped the spear and departed. From this circumstance, and other similar events, it appears that the inhabitants of New South Wales are not deficient in point of personal bravery. The old man returned the following morning with many other of the natives, but, to convince him of his error, he was less noticed than his companions, who were gratified with hatchets and many other articles.

On the 9th of March Governor Phillip returned to Port Jackson, having obtained some useful knowledge of the country, and maintained a social intercourse with the natives. The rain, which was abundant, rendered it impossible for the governor to return by land as he had intended; which would have given him an opportunity of exploring a part of the country that appeared to be good, and free from timber.

On the 10th of March the French ships sailed from Botany Bay. M. De la Pérouse, during his stay there, had set up two long boats, the frames of which he had brought from Europe. Very little intercourse had taken place between the French and English in this interval. A few of the convicts absconded and endeavoured to get admitted into the French ships, but they were very properly rejected. Those vessels returned to the north, where they were to make another voyage*.

On the 19th of March Lieutenant Ball arrived in the Supply from Norfolk Island. He had made that island on the 29th of February, but was five days off the coast before he found it possible to land his stores and provisions. The commandant wrote in high spirits at the promising appearance of this new territory, and subsequent accounts have proved that his opinion was not erroneous. He mentioned Norfolk Island as an entire wood, or as a garden, over-run with the noblest pines in straightness, size, and magnitude.

From the different accounts which have been received of Norfolk Island carefully united, it is about seven leagues in circumference, and, if not originally formed by the eruption of volcanic matter from the bed of the sea, must doubtless have contained a volcano; which clearly appears from the quantity of pumice stone distributed in every part of it, and mixed with the soil. This

* While M. De la Pérouse remained at Botany Bay, Father Le Receveur, who had come out in the Astrolobe as a naturalist, died in consequence of some wounds he had received in a rencounter at the Navigators' Islands. A monument was erected to his memory, which was soon after destroyed by the natives; but Governor Phillip caused the inscription which had been on it to be engraved on copper, and affixed to a neighbouring tree. M. De la Pérouse had paid a similar tribute of respect to the memory of Captain Clerke, at the harbour of St. Peter and Paul in Kamtschatka.

island is extremely well watered, and near the middle of it, is a small mountain, which the commandant has named Mount Pitt, near which rises a strong and copious stream. This flows through a delightful valley, and afterwards divides itself into several branches, each of which retains sufficient force to turn a mill. Several excellent springs have also been discovered in several parts of the island*.

When the European settlers landed, there was not an acre clear of wood in the island, and the trees were bound together by a creeping shrub, called Supple Jack, so intimately interwoven in all directions, that there was no penetrating far among them. The commandant, even with his small numbers, soon caused a space to be cleared sufficient for the requisite accomodations, and for the production of esculent vegetables. According to the declarations of Mr. King himself, in his letters to Governor Phillip, "There was not a doubt that this colony would be in a situation to support itself entirely, without assistance, in less than four years."

Fish are taken in great plenty; and fine turtle in the proper season. The woods are inhabited by innumerable tribes of birds, many of which are very gay in plumage. Pigeons are numerous, and a white bird not unlike the Guinea fowl, except in colour: both of these were at first so tame as to suffer themselves to be taken by hand. Vegetables for the table are chiefly the cabbage palm, the wild plantain, the fern-tree, a kind of wild spinage, and a tree bearing a diminutive fruit somewhat resembling the currant†.

A small island, entirely uninhabited, was discovered by Lieutenant Ball in his passage to Norfolk Island. He examined it, in his return, and found the shore abounded with turtle; but there was no good anchorage. He named it *Lord Howe Island*. It is in 31° 36′ south latitude, and 159° east longitude.

To expedite the cultivation of Norfolk Island, a further detachment was sent thither in October; consisting of an officer, and eight marines, with thirty convicts, *viz*, ten women, and twenty men. Thus, there existed on this islet 44 men, and 16 women, who, having eighteen months' provisions, passed the time comfortably on this sequestered spot, under the management of a young ruler, of whose busy life the following are some of the particulars:

Phillip Gidley King, who conducted the original settlers to Norfolk Island, was born at Launceston in Cornwall, on the 23d of April 1758. He is the son of Phillip King, of that town, draper, who married the daughter of John Gidley, of Exeter, Attorney-at-Law. He was much indebted for his scholastic learning to Mr. Bailey at Yarmouth. At the early age of twelve, he went to the East Indies on board the Swallow sloop, Captain Shirley, by whom he was rated a midshipman. At the end of five years he returned to England, with much knowledge of his business, and some knowledge of the world. In 1775, he entered upon real service, and has continued in active employment from that period to this great epoch of his life. He went to Virginia, in the Liverpool, during the year 1775, with Captain Bellow, with whom he continued till that frigate was wrecked in Delaware Bay.

* The climate is pure, delightful, and salubrious, preserved from oppressive heats by continual breezes from the sea, and of so mild a temperature during the winter that vegetation has no interruption, one crop regularly succeeding another. A series of refreshing showers maintain perpetual verdure; but not of grass, for none has yet been seen upon the island; but of trees, shrubs, and other vegetables which grow abundantly in every part. On the leaves of these, and particularly of some kinds, the sheep, hogs, and goats not only live, but thrive and fatten exceedingly. To the salubrity of the air every individual in this little colony can bear the most ample testimony, from the uninterrupted good health they have generally enjoyed in it.

† But the productions which give the greatest importance to the island, are the pines and the flax plant; the former rising to a great size and perfection, and promising a valuable supply of mast and spurs for the navy; the latter is equally estimable for the purposes of making sail-cloth and cordage. The pines measure from one hundred and sixty, to one hundred and eighty feet in height, and are sometimes nine or ten feet in diameter at the bottom of the trunk. They arise to about eighty feet without a branch, and the wood is said to be of the best quality. The fern tree measures from seventy to eighty feet, and affords excellent food for sheep, and other small cattle: a plant, supposed to be the true oriental pepper, has been lately discovered in the island growing in great plenty.

Rats are the only quadrupeds, which have been seen in the island; and from these and the ants, much mischief was apprehended; but no great inconvenience has been yet experienced from them: further proper exertions, it is presumed, will reduce the number of such enemies. On the whole, Norfolk Island may justly be considered as an acquisition of importance, and will probably answer the most sanguine expectations which have been formed from it.

In

In October 1778, he entered on board the Princess Royal, and was made a lieutenant in the Renown, by Admiral Byron on the 26th of November following. He returned to England the subsequent year; and served in the Channel on board the Kite cutter, and Ariadne frigate, till the beginning of 1783. With Captain Phillip he went to the East Indies, as Lieutenant of the Europe, in January, 1783; from whence he returned on the restoration of peace in May 1784. In this service Phillip and King became acquainted with the merit of each other; and when the expedition of New South Wales was projected, King was appointed Lieutenant of the Sirius, on the 25th of October 1786, when Phillip was nominated commander of the voyage.

SECTION VI.

Three of the Transports discharged—Two Excursions into the Country—Huts of the Natives—Their Notions of Sculpture.

THE Charlotte, Lady Penrhyn, and Scarborough transports, having been cleared of all their stores, were discharged from government service on the 25th of March, and left at liberty to proceed to China, whenever their commanders should think proper. The other ships were detained till the store-houses could be finished.

The month of April was only distinguished by two expeditions of Governor Phillip for the purpose of exploring the country. On the first of these he set out on the 15th with provisions for four days, attended by some officers, and a small party of marines. Landing at the head of a small cove, called Shell Cove, near the entrance of the harbour, they proceeded in the same direction till they arrived at a large lake, which they examined, but not without much difficulty, as it was surrounded by a considerable extent of bog and marshy ground. Here they first beheld a black swan, a species proverbially rare in other parts of the world, though not uncommon here. It is larger than the common swan, and equally beautiful in form. When it rose, its wings were observed to be edged with white, and its bill was tinged with red.

With some difficulty they passed the swamps and marshes near the harbour in about three days. Quitting these low grounds, they found them succeeded by a rocky and barren country. Though the hills were covered with flowering shrubs, variety of obstacles rendered the ascending and descending extremely difficult, and in many parts impracticable. At the distance of about fifteen miles from the coast, Governor Phillip obtained an excellent view of the inland country, and to several of the mountains he gave new appellations. The most northern of them he named Carmarthen Hills; the most southern Lansdown Hills; and one which he observed between these, was denominated Richmond Hill.

On the 22d of April another excursion was undertaken. The governor landed with his party near the head of the harbour, where they found a good country, but shortly arrived at a very close cover, which they endeavoured to pass through, but found themselves obliged to relinquish the attempt, and return. The next day, by keeping close to the banks of a creek for three or four miles, they were enabled to pass the cover, and for three successive days continued their course to the westward. The country through which they travelled was fine, pleasing, and picturesque; and the soil, in general, was excellent. The trees grew at the distance of twenty to forty feet from each other, and almost wholly free from underwood. Ascending a small eminence on the 5th day, they saw Carmarthen and Lansdown Hills, for the first time in this second expedition. The country round this hill appeared so beautiful, that Governor Phillip named it *Belle-vue*. They were now apparently about thirty miles from the mountains which they had proposed to reach, and not having taken more than six days' provisions with them, they were obliged to return. Water for the consumption of the day was always taken with them, as they could not depend upon the mere casual supply of that essential article. The extent of this excursion

cursion in a direct line, had been about thirty miles, and had taken up five days; but the return of the party was effected with much more ease, the track having been made, and the trees marked where they had passed. Thus circumstanced they reached their boats in about a day and a half.

It was still the general opinion, from the appearance of the country, that a large river would be descried in that district, by pursuing the line they had entered upon: another expedition was therefore planned, and a resolution formed to reach, if possible, either Lansdown or Carmarthen Hills; and the expectation of so important a discovery made every one anxious to go, regardless of the fatigue with which such undertakings were unavoidably attended.

But the design was for the present deferred, as Governor Phillip had added to a former indisposition a severe pain in his side, by sleeping frequently on the wet ground. It was therefore thought absolutely necessary to allow himself the respite of a few weeks, before he ventured to encounter any new fatigue*.

The huts seen here consisted of single pieces of bark, about eleven feet in length, and from four to six in breadth, bent so as to form an acute angle, resembling cards when set up by children. These imperfect structures are supposed to be principally intended to conceal them from the animals, for which they are obliged to lie in wait: they may also afford shelter from the rain, for one or two persons. The bark of many trees was observed to be cut in notches, as if to facilitate the climbing of the natives. In several of them holes appeared, apparently the retreat of some animal, but enlarged by the people in order to catch the inhabitant. The animals that take refuge in these places are the squirrel, the opossum, or the kangu-rat: at the bottom of one of these trees, the skin of a flying squirrel was picked up.

Several fires appeared to have been lately made; but the shells of oysters or muscles, were seen in only one of them, and did not then exceed half a dozen. No fish bones were perceived; whence it may be intimated that these people do not take with them any provisions of that kind. Kanguroos were frequently seen, but they were so extremely shy, that it was very difficult to shoot them. It is remarkable that the kanguroo, though it resembles the jerboa in the puculiarily of using only the hinder legs in progression, does not belong to that genus†.

In all the country hitherto explored, the parties have seldom proceeded a quarter of a mile without seeing trees which had been on fire. Violent thunder being very common on this coast, it seems probable that they have been burnt by lightning, which the gum-tree is said particularly to attract; but it is equally probable that they have been set on fire by the natives. The gum-tree is supposed to be highly combustible, and it is the practice among these people to kindle their fires at the root of one of these trees. When they quit any place, they never extinguish the fire they have made, but permit it to burn out, or communicate its flames to that or any other tree, as accidental circumstances may determine.

* The country explored in the last journey was found so extremely fit for the purposes of cultivation, that the governor resolved upon sending a detachment to settle there, as soon as a sufficient number could be spared from works of more immediate necessity; but as the natives know not how to avail themselves of its fertility, the most considerable part of their food is procured by fishing; but in the inland country, where recourse cannot be had to such means, it seems hardly possible that they should be able to procure any kind of animal food, as their spears appear to be the only missile weapons among them. These parts are, however, frequented by the natives, which was sufficiently proved by the temporary huts which were observed in several places. Near one of these huts the bones of a kanguroo were found, and some trees were seen on fre. A piece of root, like that of the fern-tree, was picked up by Governor Phillip, which appeared to have been so recently chewed that it could not have been left there many minutes. From this, and other evident marks, it appeared certain that the natives had only fled at the approach of the European party; but so effectually did they conceal themselves that not one of them was perceived.

† The natives of New South Wales, though they make no attempt towards clothing themselves, suffer considerably, at times, from the cold and wet. In the neighbourhood of Botany Bay and Port Jackson, the natives are not without notions of sculpture: the figures of animals, of shields, and weapons, and even of men, have been seen carved upon the rocks. Though these figures are far from being perfect, they are sufficiently so to ascertain the object intended. Fish were frequently represented; and the form of a large lizard was sketched out in one place with tolerable accuracy. On the top of one of the hills, the figure of a man in the attitude of dancing, was executed in style, and displayed great genius.

Governor Phillip, on his return from this excursion, was informed that he had lost five ewes and a lamb. To heighten the distress, it appeared they had been killed near the camp, and in the middle of the day. The three transports bound to China, sailed the 5th, 6th, and 8th of May: and the Supply, having been caulked, sailed to Lord Howe Island on the 6th, for turtle, hoping it would afford some check to the scurvy, with which the people continued to be so much affected, that about two hundred of them were incapable of performing their business.

The great labour attending the clearing of the ground, would not leave time for getting much grain into it. They had not yet sown more than eight or ten acres with wheat and barley :* And even this inconsiderable stock was expected to suffer from the depredations of the ants and mice.

On the 25th of May the Supply tender returned from Lord Howe Island, but without bringing any turtle. Having met with squally weather, she had been obliged to cut away her best bower anchor, but had suffered no other damage. About this time one of the convicts, in searching for vegetables, had wandered a considerable way from the camp, and returned very dangerously wounded. He reported that another man, who had gone out for the same purpose, had been carried off by the natives in his sight, after having been severely wounded in the head. A shirt and hat were afterwards found, both pierced with spears, in one of the huts; but no intelligence could be procured respecting the man. The convicts were suspected to have been the aggressors, though the man who returned declared he had not given any kind of provocation. On the 30th of May, two men who had been sent to collect rushes for thatch at some distance from the camp, were found dead, one of whom had four spears in his body. As the rush-cutters' tools had been taken away, the Governor supposed it might be possible to discover the natives who had been active in this affray; and to make them understand that the conduct of the assailants had been wholly unwarranted, and very highly disapproved.

The next morning, therefore, the Governor went out with a small party, consisting of twelve persons, and landed at the spot where the men were killed. They traversed the country for upwards of twenty miles, and then arrived at the north shore of Botany Bay, without having met with any one of the natives. Here they saw about twenty canoes engaged in fishing. And when the fires were made, and the party prepared to pass the night upon the beach, some of those in the canoes were fully expected to have joined them, but not one among them made his appearance. The next morning, though about fifty canoes were drawn up on the beach, not a person could be found belonging to any of them.

Governor Phillip had now resolved to return to Port Jackson, but as he was proceeding for some time near the coast, he saw a great number of natives, assembled at the mouth of a cave. The party was within ten yards of them before they were perceived; and the Governor could hardly make his people halt before a great many of them appeared in arms. A man who seemed to be the leader, as he advanced, gave signs for the Europeans to retire; but when he saw Governor Phillip approach, alone, unarmed, and making friendly overtures, he threw his spear away, and met him with perfect confidence. In a few minutes the European party were surrounded by two hundred and twelve men, but nothing occurred to shew that the natives were accustomed to act with treachery, or that they intended to take any cruel advantage from their great superiority in numbers*.

The finest stream of water was seen here, that

* Exclusive of what was sown by the Lieutenant Governor and other individuals, for the support of their own stock.

* When the offer of friendship was accepted on their side, they instantly laid down their spears and stone hatchets, and joined the party with great cordiality. Many of their women and children continued at a small distance, some of whom were afterwards brought down by the men, to receive the little articles which were offered them as presents. Nothing was discovered among these people that in the least degree tended to prove, that any of them had been concerned in the affray of the rush-cutters. The governor parted with them on the most friendly terms, being more convinced than ever of the necessity of treating them with becoming confidence. Had he gone with the whole of his party, or had even hesitated before he made the signals of friendship, a lance would probably have been thrown, after which a rencounter could not have been prevented, which in such circumstances must have terminated fatally.

had hitherto been discovered in the country, but the cove in which it runs lies very open to the sea. When the natives perceived that the English were proceeding towards the next cove, an old man made signs that he might be permitted to go first. He did so, and when he had ascended the hill, he called out, holding up both his hands (their usual signal of amity) to inform the natives in the next cove, that the people who were advancing were friends. The Governor's party, however, did not descend to that cove; but as he saw about forty men, and did not suppose they had assembled on any particular occasion, it was evident that they were more numerous in that part than had been imagined. Governor Phillip had calculated before, from what he had seen, that all the inhabitants, in Botany Bay, Broken Bay, and the intermediate country, could not exceed fifteen hundred. In crossing the country between Botany Bay and Port Jackson, smoke was observed at the top of Landsdown Hills, which clearly proves that the territory is inhabited as far as those mountains; a distance that cannot be less than fifty miles from the sea*.

On the 22d of June a slight shock of an earthquake was perceived, which continued only two or three seconds. It was felt by most of the people in the camp, and by the Governor himself, who at the same time heard a noise from the southward, resembling the report of guns fired at a considerable distance.

On the 24th a convict who had absconded on the 5th, having committed a robbery, returned into the camp almost starved. He had supposed he could subsist in the woods, but found it impossible. One of the natives after having given him a fish, made signs for him to go away. He afterwards declared that he joined a party of the natives, who would have burnt him, but he found means to make his escape. He even pretended to have seen the remains of a human body actually lying on a fire; but such a report, from such authority, was entitled to little credit. He said that the natives were at this time, in the greatest distress for food, and that he had seen four of them dying in the woods; making significant signs for something to eat, as if they were perishing through hunger. When this man was tried for his offence, he pleaded guilty, and suffered with another criminal.

By degrees the settlement of Sydney Cove was now advancing towards maturity. Large spaces were opened, plans formed, lines marked, and a prospect, at least, of future regularity was clearly discerned, and appeared the more striking by the recollection of the former confusion. By the plan given in the original work, lines are traced out which distinguish the principal street of an intended town, to be terminated by the governor's house, the main guard, and the criminal court. The principal streets, according to the design in this plan, will be two hundred feet wide. It is also proposed by Governor Phillip, that when houses are to be built here, the grants of land shall be made with such clauses, as will prevent the building of more than one house on one allotment, which is to consist of sixty feet in front, and 150 feet in depth. These regulations will preserve uniformity in the buildings, prevent narrow streets, and many inconveniences. It has also been an object of the Governor's attention to place the public buildings in eligible situations, and to give the store-houses and hospital sufficient space for future enlargement.

The first huts that were erected here, were composed of very perishable materials, the soft

* From further enquiries it was reasonably conjectured that one of the natives had been murdered, and several wounded, before the attack made upon the rush-cutters; Governor Phillip therefore, on his return, proclaimed the reward of emancipation to any convict who should discover the aggressors. If this step did not procure any information, it possibly might prevent such acts of violence in future.

About this time, the two bulls and four cows, belonging to government, and to the Governor, from the neglect of the person appointed to attend them, strayed into the woods, and never could be recovered—a loss which was much to be regretted.

The fourth of June demanded due celebration! It was a day of remission from labour, and of general festivity throughout the settlement. At sun-rise the Sirius and Supply fired each a salute of twenty-one guns: at one o'clock the salutes were repeated, when the marines on shore fired three vollies. The same honours were again repeated from the ships at sun-set. Large bonfires were beheld blazing, and the whole camp exhibited a scene of joy. That the happiness of the day might be general in the settlement, the two convicts who had been banished to an island in the harbour, received a full pardon, and took their part in the general exultation of the day. The governor's house was the centre of conviviality to all who could be admitted; nor was any thing neglected, which in such a situation could mark a day of celebrity, consistent with propriety and good order.

wood

wood of the cabbage palm; being only intended to afford immediate shelter; and as this wood was used when it was quite green, it was the less likely to prove durable. The huts of the convicts were slighter still, being composed of only upright posts, wattled with twigs, and plaistered up with clay. Barracks and huts were afterwards formed of more durable materials. Buildings of stone might easily have been raised, but there was no means of procuring lime for mortar. In building a small house for the Governor, on the eastern side of the cove, the lime was made of oyster shells, but it could not be thus supplied for many buildings.

Excellent clay for bricks is found near Sydney Cove, and good bricks have been made from it.

The hospital is situated on the west side of the cove, on a very salutary spot, entirely clear of the town; and is so substantially erected that it will probably be lasting. On the high ground, between the hospital and the town, if water can be obtained by sinking wells, the Governor intends to erect the barracks, surrounding them with proper works. The ground marked out for the church lies still nearer the town, that edifice being proposed to form one side of the principal parade. A store-house was in contemplation that might be secure from the danger of fire; as in a country exposed to frequent storms of thunder and lightning, it excited uneasy sensations to have all the provisions and necessaries lodged in wooden buildings, covered with a combustible kind of thatch. On an elevated spot, forming the west side of the cove, a small observatory has been raised, under the direction of Lieutenant Dawes. A small house built by the Lieutenant-Governor for himself, forms the corner of the parade; and the principal street will be carried on at right angles with the front of the buildings. Instead of thatch, shingles are now much used, made from a tree resembling a fir; but producing wood not much inferior to the English oak. The principal farm is situated in the next cove to the east of the town.

Sydney Cove lies open to the north-east, and is continued in a south-west direction for about a thousand yards, gradually decreasing from the breadth of fourteen hundred feet till it terminates in a point, where it receives a small stream of fresh water. The anchorage extends about two thousand feet up the cove, and has soundings of four fathoms near the shore, and from five to seven near the middle of the channel. It is perfectly secure in all winds; and for a considerable distance, on both sides, ships can lie almost close to the shore; nor are there rocks or shallows, in any part of it, to render the navigation dangerous. Such a situation could not fail to be desirable to a discerning man, who wished to establish a settlement, which must for some time depend for support on the importation of the principal necessaries of life*.

The climate at Sydney Cove is supposed to be equal to the finest in Europe. The rains are never of long continuance; fogs are seldom seen. The soil, though light and sandy in this part, is as good as can usually be found so near the sea-coast. All the plants and fruit-trees, brought from Brazil and the Cape, which received no damage in the passage, thrive exceedingly; and vegetables are now become plentiful; not only of the European sort, but of such as are peculiar to this country. The orange trees flourish, and the vines and fig-trees are in high perfection. Should not other articles of commerce direct the attention of the settlers to other points, the wines of New South Wales may perhaps be hereafter sought with avidity, and become a part of the luxury of European tables.

The flax-plant, which was seen by our Europeans at their first arrival, has not been found since in any great abundance; a very ample supply of this article may, however, be obtained from Norfolk Island. It is supposed that the natives pull up the plant when it is in flower, to be used in their fishing lines.

On the whole, notwithstanding the difficulties and disadvsntages at first experienced, and the

* Metals of various kinds are supposed to abound in the soil on which the town is placed. A convict, who had formerly worked in the Staffordshire lead mines, confidently declared, that the ground they were now clearing, contained a large quantity of that ore; and copper is supposed to lie under some rocks, which were blown up to facilitate the sinking of a cellar. The Governor himself entertained an idea that several metals were contained in the earth near the spot, and that mines might hereafter be worked to great advantage.

In places, where they were digging to make wells, they found a substance that was at first taken for a metal, and was afterwards found to be black lead. The kind of pigment which the painters call Spanish brown, is found here in great abundance; and the white clay, with which the natives paint themselves, is still in greater plenty.

sicknesses which from various causes have prevailed, the settlement at Sydney Cove wore a very promising aspect when the last accounts were sent; and little doubt remains but it will hereafter fully answer the expectation which was formed when the design was projected. The scantiness of the streams of fresh water was for a time thought unfavourable, but that difficulty has been removed, by plenty of good springs, which have been discovered by digging. Though the house built for Governor Phillip stands fifty-six feet above high water mark, yet even there, by sinking a well fifteen feet in the rock, an excellent spring of pure water has been obtained.

SECTION VII.

Fish outrageously seized by the Natives—Another Expedition of the Governor—Further Particulars of the Manners, Customs, &c. of the Natives of New South Wales.

IT being generally understood that the natives were much distressed for provisions, and highly resented the incroachments made upon their fishing-places; a general order had been issued to those sent out upon such parties, to give a part of what they had got to the natives, if they happened to approach; in consequence of which they went away seemingly well satisfied: but on the 9th of July, about twenty of them, armed with spears, visited the spot where the Europeans were fishing, and, without any apology or pretence, violently seized the greater part of the fish which were in the seine. While this detached party committed the act of depredation, a much greater number presented themselves, at a small distance, with their spears poized, ready to have thrown if any resistance had been made. But the cockswain, who was at the head of the fishing party, prudently permitted them to take away what they chose, and they parted upon friendly terms. This is the only instance in which these people have proceeded to an unprovoked act of violence; and even this they may have been driven to by necessity. Since this transaction an officer has always been sent down with the boat.

Governor Phillip, with a small party, went out about this time, to examine the land between Port Jackson and Broken Bay. Many hundred acres of land were here found free from timber, and extremely fit for cultivation. He proceeded to Pitt Water, and on his way saw many of the natives, but none of them thought proper to approach. Returning to the boats, near the mouth of the harbour, they saw about fifty of the people, including men, women, and children, who had assembled there. Some hours were passed with them in a friendly amicable manner, but though in all this time they manifested no uneasiness, they seemed somewhat delighted when their visitors were preparing to depart. This has always been observed since it has been known among them that our Europeans intend to remain on the coast. Many of the women were now employed in fishing, a service frequently performed by them, the men being principally engaged in making spears, canoes, fish-gigs, and the other articles that constitute their necessary stock of implements*.

It having been supposed that many of the natives had quitted the coast on account of the scarcity of fish, the different coves of the harbour were examined in one day. Only sixty-seven canoes were then counted, and no more than one hundred and thirty of the people were seen. But it was the season in which they devote almost the whole of their time to the construction of new canoes: large parties of them

* The sailors, who were ordered to wait on the beach to take care of the boat, saw about two hundred men, divided into two parties. After some time they drew themselves up on opposite sides, and from each party men advanced singly and threw their spears, at the same time guarding themselves with their shields. At first this seemed to be merely a kind of exercise, especially as the women belonging to both parties remained together on the beach. Afterwards, however, it wore a more serious aspect, and the women ran up and down, in great agitation, uttering violent shrieks. But it does not appear that any of the men were killed or wounded.

were

were consequently seen in the woods preparing materials for that essential purpose *.

From the extraordinary shyness of these people since the arrival of the settlement, little addition has been acquired to the knowledge of their manners, as related by Captain Cook; but most of his observations have been confirmed. The assertion that they have not any nets, is among the very few that have been found erroneous †. Small nets have been brought over to England, the manufacture of which is very curious; the twine of them appears to be composed of the fibres of the flax-plant, with very little preparation: it is strong, heavy, and so extremely well twisted that it seems to have a near affinity to the best whip-cord. Governor Phillip mentions lines of their manufacture, made of the fur of some animal, and others that seemed to be of cotton. The meshes of their nets are formed of large loops, curiously inserted into each other, but without any knots. At a little distance they appear like common nets, but when they are inspected, a peculiar mode is observable. This net seems to have been used as a landing net, or for the purpose of carrying the fish when taken. These people are also provided with small hoop nets for catching lobsters and cray-fish.

The inhabitants have few ornaments, except those which are impressed upon the skin, or laid on as paint. The beards of the men are short, and are supposed to be kept in that state by occasionally scorching off the hair. On the first arrival of Europeans among them, they took particular delight in being shaved. They frequently hang in their hair the teeth of dogs, and other animals, the claws of a lobster, or any kind of small bone, which they fasten with a kind of gum; but no such decorations are ever seen upon the women. Though they never attempt to cloath themselves, they are not insensible of the cold; rain is irksome to them: during a shower they frequently cover their heads with pieces of bark, and are observed to shudder exceedingly. Governor Phillip was convinced that cloathing would be very acceptable to them, if they could be induced to learn the use of it. He therefore applied for a supply of frocks and jackets to distribute among them. They are to be long and loose, and equally calculated for men and women.

The persons of these people smell strongly of oil, and their colour is rendered darker, by dirt. But though they have so little delicacy in these points, they seem exceedingly disgusted if they meet with strong effluvia to which their organs are unaccustomed. One of them, who had touched a piece of pork, presented his finger for his companions to smell, with strong marks of distaste. They never refuse to accept of bread and meat, when it is offered to them; but they usually throw it away soon after. Fish they accept with great eagerness.

They are supposed to burn the dead; this is evident from the following account. The ground seemed to have been raised in several places, like the graves of the inferior people in England, Governor Phillip ordered some of these barrows to be opened. In one of them a jaw-bone was seen, not quite consumed; but in general they contained only ashes; and they were so disposed, that it clearly appeared the body must have been laid at length, raised a few inches only from the ground, just sufficient to admit a fire under it; and having been consumed in this position, it must afterwards have been covered lightly over with mould. Fern is generally spread upon the surface, with a few stones, to prevent its being scattered by the wind. These graves are not numerous, nor are they near any of their huts.

Late accounts from Port Jackson mention, that the natives still avoided all intercourse with our

* Shortly after this examination, Governor Phillip went again to explore the coast between Port Jackson and Botany Bay. In this journey he saw very few of the natives, but he observed additional proofs of their having been distressed for food. In the preceding summer they could not eat either the shark or the sting-ray, but now much coarser food was highly acceptable, or any thing that afforded the smallest nutriment. A young whale having just been driven on the coast, they were busily employed in carrying it away. Not a native was seen without having large pieces of it, which appeared to have been laid a short time upon the fire, that the outside might be properly scorched. In this state they swallow all their fish, never suffering it to broil for more than a few minutes. The winter months, in which fish are extremely scarce upon the coast, are June, July, August, and part of September.

† It is only meant, that they have no large nets for fishing, like the seine, as the New Zealanders have. *Cook's First Voyage*, Hawkesworth. Vol. iii. 233.

settlement, either from dislike, or from contempt. They perhaps suppose that we cannot teach them any thing, that will make them amends for our encroachments upon their fishing places. They seem perfectly honest among themselves, and often leave their spears and other implements upon the beach, in perfect confidence of finding them untouched. But the convicts too frequently make free with them, and dispose of them to vessels coming to England, though they thus become liable to be prosecuted for theft, or for purchasing stolen goods.

Except in the affair of seizing the fish, the natives have not attempted to annoy the settlers, by setting fire to the grass, as they did when Captain Cook was on the coast; nor have they manifested any desire to burn the crops of corn. Should any design of this kind ever appear to be entertained, it must at all events be counteracted; but in no other case, harsh measures will be adopted. Conciliation is the plan to be pursued: but Governor Phillip, when he last wrote, seemed to think he should never get any of them to remain long enough among his people, for either to learn the language of the other, except by constraint.

Some Specimens of

ANIMALS OF NEW SOUTH WALES.

OF Quadrupeds, the whole stock in the country appears to be confined to a very few species: Wolves have not been seen, though the tracks of them were frequently observed on the coast by Captain Cook's party. Birds are numerous, but they generally belong to classes already known to naturalists. A few drawings, however, and specimens of both, have been sent over, and a short account of them is given. Of reptiles, few have been seen that are in the least curious. A large lizard of the *Scincus* kind, with the peculiarity of a horn standing near the extremity of the tail, is said to be among some specimens sent over as private presents. Also a kind of frog, of a blue colour; but these do not, in other respects, differ materially from the usual form of their respective species.

QUADRUPEDS.

The KANGOOROO has been already described.

THE SPOTTED OPOSSUM.

THE length of this animal, from the nose to the extremity of the tail is twenty-five inches, of which the tail makes about nine or ten. The general colour of the animal is black, inclining to brown beneath: the neck and body are spotted with irregular roundish patches of white. The ears are large, and stand erect; the visage is pointed, and the muzzle furnished with long slender hairs: all the legs, from the knees downward are almost naked, and ash-coloured: on the fore feet are five claws; and on the hind, four and a thumb, without a claw: about an inch and half of the tail, from the root, is covered with hairs like those on the body; from thence to the end with long ones resembling those of a squirrel. The specimen from which this account was taken, is a female, and has six teats placed in a circle, within the pouch.

VULPINE OPOSSUM.

THIS resembles the common fox in shape, but much smaller, being, from the point of the nose, to the setting on of the tail, only twenty-six inches; the tail is fifteen inches: the upper parts of the body a mixture of dusky and white hairs, with rufous-yellow tinge: the head and shoulders partaking most of this last colour: round the eyes blackish: above the nostrils ten or twelve black whiskers, four inches or more in length: all the under parts of the body are of a tawny buff-colour: the tail is the colour of the back for about a quarter of its length, from thence to the end black: it has five toes on each fore foot, the inner one being placed high up: on the hind feet four toes only, with a thumb, consisting of two joints, without a claw, placed high up. The whole foot serves the purpose of a hand, as in many of the opossum genus. The legs are shorter in proportion than those of the common fox. The ears are about an inch and a half in length: in the upper jaw are six cutting teeth, and four grinders with two small canine teeth at an equal distance between them.

NORFOLK ISLAND FLYING SQUIRREL.

ABOUT the size of the American grey squirrel, and the colour of the upper part nearly resembling that animal; the under parts white: a streak of dusky black runs from the nose to the tail,

tail, and another springs on each side of the head behind the nostrils: ears not rising from the head: on each side of the body is a broad flap or membrane, as in other flying squirrels, which is united to the fore and hind legs: this membrane is black, fringed on the outer edge with white: the tail for two-thirds of the length, is of an elegant ash colour, paler than the body; from thence to the end dusky black: the toes on the fore legs are five in number; those of the hinder uncertain, the legs behind being wanting: length from head to rump nine inches: the tail ten inches.

BIRDS.

Blue Bellied Parrot.

THE length of this beautiful bird is fifteen inches. The bill is reddish; orbits black: head and throat dark blue, mixed with lighter blue feathers: back part of the head green; towards the throat yellow green; back and wings green: prime quills dusky, barred with yellow: breast red, mixed with yellow: belly of a fine blue: thighs green and yellow: tail cuneiform; the two middle feathers green; the others the same, with bright yellow on the outer edges: legs dusky. Inhabits Botany Bay.

Tabuan Parrot.

THE length of this parrot is about twenty-four inches: the bill brown, the upper mandible tinged with red: the head, neck, and under parts of the body a bright scarlet: the back and wings a beautiful green. On the lower part of the neck, between that and the back, a crescent of blue: the tail long, and cuneiform, most of its feathers deep blue: the legs ash-coloured; on the upper part of the wings is seen a narrow line of lighter green.

Pennantian Parrot.

SIZE of the scarlet Lory; length about sixteen inches: the bill of a blueish horn colour: the general colour of the plumage scarlet; the base of the under mandible and the chin covered with fine blue feathers: the back black, the feathers edged with crimson: wings blue, but much paler down the middle: the quills and tail black, the feathers edged outerly with blue, and three of the outer tail feathers, from the middle to the end, of a pale blue: the tail wedge shaped, the middle feathers eight inches in length; the outermost only four: the bottom of the thighs blue; legs dusky, claws black.

Pacific Paroquet.

THE length twelve inches, bill of a silvery blue, end black: in some the forehead, and half the crown, of a deep crimson, in others, the forehead only: behind each eye a spot of the same colour: on each side of the vent a patch of the same: the plumage of a dark green, palest on the under part; the tail is cuneiform; the two middle feathers five inches and a half in length; the outer ones two and a half; upper parts of the same green as the body; beneath ash-colour: the outer edge of the wings, as far as the middle of the quills, deep blue: the ends of the quills dusky; legs brown, claws black.

The Sacred King's Fisher.

THE size is rather less than a blackbird: the bill black; the lower mandible yellowish at the base: head, back, wings and tail, blue, tinged with green: the under parts of the body white, extending round the neck like a collar: legs blackish. The bill is strong at the base, and sharp at the point.

Superb Warbler—*Male.*

THE length five inches and a half; the bill black: the feathers of the head long, and erect like a full crest; from the forehead to the crown of a bright blue; from thence to the nape, black like velvet: through the eyes from the bill, a line of black; beneath the eye springs a tuft of blue feathers: beneath these, and on the chin, a deep blue feeling like velvet: on the ears another patch of blue, and across the back part of the head a band of the same. The hind part of the neck, and upper parts of the body and tail, deep blue: the under pure white; wings dusky, shafts of the quills chesnut: tail two inches and a quarter long, and cuneiform; the two outer feathers very short: legs dusky brown, claws black.

Superb

Superb Warbler—*Female.*

THE Female Superb Warbler is entirely destitute of all the fine blue colours, pale as well as dark, by which the male is adorned; except that there is a very narrow circle of azure round each eye, apparently on the skin only: all the upper feathers consist of shades of brown, and the throat and belly is white. Except from the shape and size, this bird would not be suspected to belong to the same species as the male. The epithet of *Superb* seems ill applied to the female.

The Caspian Tern—*Web-footed.*

THE length of this bird is nineteen or twenty inches; the bill three inches, stout and of a pale yellow: nostrils pervious; crown of the head black; the feathers longish, and forming a kind of pensile crest at the nape; the rest of the head, neck, and under parts of the body white: back and wings pale cinereous grey: quills grey, with the ends dusky; the inner webs, half way from the base, white: tail grey, forked; the end half of the other feathers white: legs black. This is supposed to inhabit China, the Friendly Isles, and Hapaee, one of the Sandwich Islands.

Norfolk Island Petrel—*Web-footed.*

THE length sixteen inches; bill one inch and a half long, and hooked at the tip: the head as far as the eyes, the chin and throat, waved, brown and dusky white: the body, on the upper parts, of a sooty brown, the under of a deep ash colour: the inner part of the quills, especially next the base, very pale; and the wings, when closed, exceed the tail by about an inch: the tail is rounded in shape, consisting of twelve feathers of the same colour as the upper parts of the body: the legs are pale yellow, the outer toe black the whole length, the middle one half way from the tip, the webs also correspond, the outer one being black, except at the base; and the inner one black for about one third from the end; the claws black: the spur, which serves as a back toe, is also black, This inhabits Norfolk Island, and burrows like a rabbit in the sand; continuing in the holes throughout the day, and coming out in the evenings in search of food.

Bronze-Winged Pigeon.

THE size of a large dove-house pigeon; the general plumage ash-coloured, brown on the upper parts, the feathers margined with pale rufous; the under parts pale ash-colour, with pale margins; the wing coverts the same colour as the back, but the greater ones have each a large oval spot of bronze on the outer webs near the ends, forming together, when the wings are closed, two bars of very brilliant bronze, changing into red, copper, and green, in different reflections of light. Several of the feathers, among the other coverts, have also the same spots on them, but they are irregularly placed: the quills are brown, with the inner webs, from the middle to the base, pale rufous, as are the sides of the body, and all the under wing coverts: the tail has sixteen feathers; the two middle ones brown, the others pale lead, or dove-colour, with a bar of black near the tips: the bill of a dull red, the forehead very pale, passing a little way under the eye: the chin and throat pale grey: the legs red. This bird inhabits Norfolk Island.

White-Fronted Hergn.

THIS bird is little more than half the size of the common heron: the length is twenty-eight inches: the general plumage blueish ash: top of the head black; the forehead, sides of the head, chin, and throat white, passing downwards, and finishing in a point about the middle of the neck before: on the lower part of the neck the feathers are long and loose, and of a pale cinnamon colour: the under parts of body also incline to this last colour, but are considerably paler: the quills and tail are dark lead colour, almost black: on the back the feathers are long and narrow, and hang part of the way on the tail: the bill is four inches long and black; but the base half of the under mandible is yellowish; the legs are formed as in other herons, of a yellowish brown colour, and the claws are black. This bird was sent from Port Jackson in New Holland.

Wattled Bee-Eater.

The length of this bird is about fourteen inches and a half: the bill one inch, and of nearly the shape and size as in the Poe bird: the colour black; the general colour of the plumage brown, palest

palest on the under parts: most of the feathers are pointed in shape, having a streak of white down the middle: the fore part of the head as far as the eyes, is smooth; the rest of the head appears full, the feathers being longer; from the gape of the bill, a broad streak of silvery white passes under the eye; and beneath this, on each side of the throat, hangs a pendulous wattle, about half an inch in length, and of an orange colour: the wings, when closed, reach about one third on the tail, which is about half the length of the bird, and cuneiform in shape: the quills and tail feathers are of a darker brown than the rest of the bird, and have the tips white: the middle of the belly is yellow: the legs are of a pale brown, the hind toe very stout, and the outer toe connected to the middle one as far as the first joint. It inhabits New Holland, and was received from Port Jackson.

Psittacaeous Hornbill.

THIS bird is about the size of a crow: the length two feet three inches: the bill large, stout at the base, much curved at the point, and channelled on the sides: the colour pale brown, inclining to yellow near the end; the nostrils are at the base, and are surrounded with a red skin, as is the eye also on the upper part: the head, neck, and under parts of the body of a pale blue grey; the upper part of the body, wings, and tail ash-colour; most of the feathers are tipt with dusky black, forming bars of that colour across the wings: the wings, when closed, reach to near three quarters of the length of the tail: the tail is long, and cuneiform; the two middle feathers measuring eleven inches, and the outer one on each side little more than seven; a bar of black crosses the whole near the end, and the tips of all the feathers are white: the legs are short and scaly, and the toes placed two forwards, and two backwards, as in those of the toucan or parrot genus: legs and claws black: this bird was killed at Port Jackson*.

A section then follows containing *Nautical Directions, and other detached Remarks by Lieutenant Ball, concerning Rio de Janeiro, Norfolk Island, Ball Pyramid, and Lord Howe Island.* As these remarks are purely nautical, and cannot afford information or amusement to the general reader, we shall pass over that section, and proceed to another, which professes to be,

SECTION I.

A Concise Account of Lieutenant Shortland—His various Services—Appointed Agent to the Transports sent to New South Wales—Ordered by Governor Phillip to England, by Batavia—Journal of his Voyage—New Discoveries.

LIEUTENANT JOHN SHORTLAND had, very early in life, a strong predilection for the navy, and, in 1755, at the age of sixteen, entered into his Majesty's service, in the Anson, of sixty guns, which went out in the fleet under the command of Admiral Boscawen. On the Banks of Newfoundland this fleet fell in with, and took the Alcide and Ly's, two French ships of seventy-four guns. Returning from this expedition, Mr. Shortland went on board the Culloden, of seventy-four guns, and was in the fleet under Admiral Byng, off Minorca. He went soon afterwards into the Hampton Court, commanded by Captain Harvey, in which he was present at the taking of the Foudroyant and Arpe. Arriving in England, he went on board the Vanguard, Commodore Swanton, to the West Indies, in the fleet under Admiral Rodney, and was present at the reduction of Martinique, the Grenades, and the other islands which were then captured. In 1763 he was appointed Lieutenant by Admiral Swanton, since which period he has al-

* Such is the account of the birds of which specimens have been obtained from Port Jackson, or from Norfolk Island. Wild ducks, teal, quails, and other common species, are numerous in both places; and the variety and number of small birds is considerable. Birds of the Cassowary kind have frequently been seen; but they are so shy, and run so rapidly that only one of them had yet been killed. Should it, on examination, exhibit any remarkable peculiarities, a description of it will be obtained, if possible.

ways been engaged in important services. During the late war, and for some time afterwards, he was principally employed in going to and from America, except in 1782, when he commanded the transports with the 97th regiment on board, destined to relieve Gibraltar, under convoy of the Cerberus and Apollo: he succeeded in getting in all the transports in perfect safety, and landed the men without loss or accidents.

On his return from this service, in attempting to get through the Gut of Gibraltar in the night, he was chased by a squadron of Spanish frigates, who took three of the transports in company, but he fortunately escaped in the Betsey transport, and arrived safe in England. In 1786 he was appointed agent to the transports sent by Government to New South Wales, where he arrived in January 1788. After remaining six months at the New settlement of Port Jackson, he was ordered to England by Governor Phillip, who honoured him with dispatches for Government. He arrived in England on the 29th of May, 1789.

This concise recapitulation of Mr. Shortland's services sufficiently points out his merit and ability as an experienced seaman, without any further elogium.

The ALEXANDER, the FRIENDSHIP, the PRINCE OF WALES, and the BORROWDALE, were got ready, early in July 1788, to sail for England, under the conduct of Lieutenant Shortland. Governor Phillip took the opinions of the masters of these transports concerning their route. After which it was agreed that they should go to the northward, either through the Endeavour Straits, or round New Guinea. Unfortunately, however, the ships were very ill prepared for every mode of return: their complement of men was small, only six to an hundred tons, officers included: they were without a surgeon, and unprovided with sour crout, portable soup, and the other antiseptics recommended by the Royal Society. It cannot therefore be a matter of surprize that the sailors should have suffered so dreadfully from the scurvy: in the length of time necessary for exploring a passage through an unknown sea perplexed with islands; and had not the good fortune to obtain a supply of salutary refreshments.

Lieutenant Shortland, in the Alexander transport sailed from Port Jackson on the 14th of July, 1788, directing his course to the east-north-east, with intention to touch at Lord Howe island, and there to appoint each ship a place of rendezvous in case of separation. This necessary step, which ought to have been previously taken, had been omitted; the Alexander not having been able to join the other transports till the evening before their departure. Even then, the boats, booms, and spare anchors, were stowed loose between decks, in a manner which must have produced dangerous consequences, had the ship been thus exposed to a heavy sea. As soon as the weather appeared tolerably favourable for working out of the harbour, Lieutenant Shortland made the signal to the masters of the other transports to get under way, without waiting for his ship.

Lieutenant Shortland having, at length, lost sight of the Prince of Wales and Borrowdale, was resolved to go to Lord Howe Island to wait a day or two for them, supposing they might touch there with similar intentions. On the 19th he steered a direct course for that island, but he afterwards thought it more prudent to relinquish the design of calling there. The Prince of Wales and Borrowdale transports were seen no more throughout the voyage, and it has since been known that they took another course.

On Monday July 21, at ten in the morning, the master of the Friendship went on board the Alexander, and Carteret's harbour was appointed by Lieutenant Shortland as the place of rendezvous. The same day, at five in the afternoon, land was discovered, bearing from south-west-by west, at the distance of eight leagues: it was about six or seven leagues in length, the land very high, with a remarkable peak: It was now named Sir Charles Middleton's Island. It lies in latitude 28° 10′ south, and in longitude 159° 50′ east*:

The leaves of the plantain served the Indians to

* In the forenoon of the 6th of August, several canoes were seen with Indians in them, who came close up the ship, without seeming apprehensive of danger. Ropes were thrown, which they readily took hold of, and suffered the ship to tow them along; in this situation they willingly exchanged rings which they wore on their arms, and beads of their own manufacture, for nails and other trifles, shewing a decided preference to whatever was made of iron. Gimlets

to make boxes, or small cases, of which every man had one to contain his little rings and beads. At noon a point of land was seen, running from the Two Brothers, now named *Cape Satisfaction;* and the rock, which had been mistaken for a ship, was called the *Eddystone,* and bore north by west, distant four leagues.

The superiority of these people over the New Hollanders, in size and strength, Lieutenant Shortland says, is very remarkable. Their canoes, which contained from six to fourteen men, are well put together, the bows and stems very lofty, carved with different figures, and stained with a kind of red paint. They were, indeed, formed exactly on the same model and construction as those of Otaheite. The ornaments worn by the inhabitants of Simboo (the name given to this island) were large rings of white bone, one or two of which every man had upon his wrist, and a shell with a feather, which was tied upon the head. About two in the afternoon the Lieutenant's visitors thought proper to depart, finding they had followed the ship as far as they could venture to trust themselves, and made immediately for the shore. From what these people had in their possession, it appeared that their land produced cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, bananas, and many other vegetables of the Society and Friendly Isles. Nor was it without regret that Lieutenant Shortland declined the invitations of the natives to partake of their refreshments; but the length and uncertainty of his passage seemed to forbid the least delay. The bay from which these men had come, he named *Indian Bay*: the furthest point of land north was named *Cape Middleton.*

After lying to in the night, the ships sailed at four in the morning of August 7th, and bore away to the north by west. At five they saw the land which they had left the preceding night, and six or more small islands; the latter were called the Treasury Isles; they are moderately high and well clothed with trees and herbage.

The Alexander and Friendship had now run from the latitude of 10° 44′ south, and longitude 161° 30′ east, to the latitude of 7° 10′ south, and longitude 156° 30′ east, the whole way almost in sight of land. As proceeding westward might have entangled them with New Guinea, Lieutenant Shortland resolved to try the passage which was now before him. At ten in the evening, the Alexander was nearly abreast of the two points that form the passage, and the soundings were from ten to thirty fathoms, on a soft sandy bottom. At two in the morning of the 8th of August, a strong ripple of a current was plainly perceived; and by five the ship had nearly cleared the straits*.

Mr. Shortland now congratulated himself on having cleared this large tract of land, which he had supposed united the whole way from the place at which he first fell in with it. The only places in which Lieutenant Shortland suspected there might possibly be a passage, was between Cape Phillip and Cape Henslow, and again between the Capes Marsh and Pitt. The ascertaining of these matters he leaves to other navigators, but strongly recommends the route he took, as the safest and most expeditious passage from Port Jackson to China.

SECTION II.

Appearance of the Scurvy—The Boats land at one of the Pelew Islands—Some Account of the Natives—Distresses—The Friendship cleared and sunk—Wretched Condition of the Alexander when she reached Batavia—Lieutenant Watts's Narrative of the Return of the Lady Penrhyn Transport; containing an Account of the Death of Omai, and other Particulars at Otaheite.

ABOUT the 10th of August the scurvy began to make its appearance, and, for want of proper remedies, increased to a destructive malignity. So many lives had been subdued by

lets had many charms for them; and pieces of old iron hoops were not seen with indifference. They acted very conscientiously, without the least attempt to defraud or over-reach. But though they so willingly suffered themselves to be towed after the ship, they could not be prevailed upon to venture alongside. They seemed, however, extremely desirous that our people should anchor on the coast, and go ashore with them; and, by way of inducement, held up the rind of an orange or lemon, the feathers of tame fowls, and other things, signifying that such things might be had on shore.

* Lieutenant Shortland judged these straits to be between four and five leagues in length, and seven or eight broad.

Conceiving

by its ravages, that it was found necessary to sacrifice one of the ships, and finally to reduce the consolidated crews of both in the remaining transport to such a state of weakness, that without immediate assistance they must have perished even in port, or would again have been turned adrift, from total inability to take the necessary steps for their preservation.

On the 13th of August five seamen, belonging to the Alexander, were on the sick list, complaining of pains in the legs and breast; having also loose teeth, and swelled gums to such a degree, that they could not without difficulty eat even flour or rice. The weather was now very variable, sometimes sultry, and sometimes squally, with occasional showers*.

The scurvy increased rapidly in the Alexander, though the precautions of smoking the ship, and washing it with vinegar were taken; the distribution of porter, spruce beer, and wine among the seamen also took place. On the 2d of September six men and a boy, on the 5th eight, and on the 8th no less than ten were rendered unable from illness to perform any duty. So great an increase of the malady, in the midst of all the efforts that could be made to counteract the malignity of it, was too certain a prognostic of its future ravages.

At six in the morning, September 11th, a small island was seen, bearing west-south-west, distant five leagues; and the wind coming round to the south-south-west, Lieutenant Shortland bore away for a passage between two islands. Having entered the passage, at nine he sounded, and found thirteen fathoms, with a fine sandy bottom. Many cocoa-palms were seen on the shore, which seemed to promise effectual refreshment for the sick: a boat from each of the ships was therefore manned and sent out. Many Indians approached these boats in their canoes, and invited our Europeans on shore, intimating that they might be supplied with cocoa-nuts, and many other things. But when they attempted to land at a place which had the appearance of being a morai, they would not permit it, giving them to understand that they must proceed further one way or the other. During this time many persons of both sexes swam off from shore, with bamboos† full of water, which they supposed the ships to be in want of.

Mr. Sinclair, the master of the Alexander, being in the boat, gave the following account of this expedition: "Finding that he could not make them understand that he wanted cocoa-nuts, and not water, he was determined to land, and accordingly put on shore at a convenient place, amidst a concourse of between three and four hundred people. He immediately fixed upon an old man among them, whom he supposed to be a chief, and made him a present of some nails and beads, which were thankfully received. This circumstance fortunately secured his friendship; he afterwards frequently exerted his authority, by checking the most insolent of his people, when they pressed forward to steal whatever they could touch. A seaman, holding his cutlass in a careless manner, had it snatched from him, and the thief had so much address in the transaction, that he was almost out of sight before he was distinguished. Notwithstanding the apparent willingness of the natives in the canoes to give satisfaction, Mr. Sinclair could not procure above thirty cocoa-nuts, and even those were green: perhaps the people did not comprehend his signs. These islanders were moderately tall, well-limbed, and had long hair. Several of them chewed the betel nut, and these were furnished with a small hollow stick, out of which they struck a kind of powder like lime. Their arms were a lance, and a kind of adze. Finding himself unsuccessful in the chief object for which he was sent out, Mr. Sinclair returned as expeditiously as he could. In exchange for his presents, the chief gave him one which was not

Conceiving himself to be the first navigator who had sailed through them, he gave them the name of *Shortland's* Straits. But on comparing his account with the narrative of M. Bougainville, he saw reason to suspect that this is the same passage through which that navigator sailed in June 1768. To corroborate this suspicion, M. Bougainville's description of the canoes and natives, agrees entirely with that given by Mr. Shortland. A small difference only in longitude affords the principal reason for doubting the identity of the passage.

* The ships were supposed to be at no very considerable distance from the land, as birds were frequently seen in great numbers: on the 16th the Friendship made the signal for seeing land, but it could not be descried from the Alexander. Sharks were also caught with the hook; and floating wood and vegetables were frequently seen.

† Bamboos were the only water vessels in the Pelew Islands. Wils. c. xxv.

very

very acceptable: it was a composition of fish, yams, and several other things; the odour of which, perhaps from the staleness of the composition, could not have been agreeable to any European. When our people first landed, many of the natives mentioned the word *Englees,* as if desirous of knowing whether they were of that nation; but when they understood that we were, they shook their heads, and said, *Espagnol.* Perhaps the discovery of our nation might have made them less courteous on shore than they had been in their canoes*."

On the 3d of October, the Alexander, being in danger of driving with the current upon the shore of Karkalang or Sanquir Island, was obliged to drop her anchor, which happily brought her up in four fathoms water. In the evening of the 17th, the Friendship struck upon a reef on the coast of Borneo, when the Alexander immediately cast anchor, and sent a boat to her assistance; but at day-light the next morning, she also lay so encompassed with sand-keys and shoals, that it was difficult to discern how she sailed into that situation, or how she could be extricated from it. The Friendship, however, got off from the reef, without sustaining any material injury: and on the 19th a narrow channel was discovered, through which the Alexander sailed out of her dangerous station. The ships were now about eight leagues from the coast of Borneo.

The scurvy had reduced both the crews to a most pitiable situation The Alexander had lost eight of her complement, and had only two men in a watch; there being but four seamen and two boys capable of duty; and though these were anxious to do their best, being also excited by a promise of double wages when they should arrive at Batavia, their exertions were inadequate to the necessities of the ship, which they were hardly able to put about. The Friendship had but five men who were not disabled, and their stock of provisions was very short. This being the wretched state of the two ships, it was thought indispensably necessary to give up one for the preservation of the other. On this subject the masters consulted, and it was agreed as follows. As the Friendship was the smaller vessel, and would be sooner cleared than the Alexander, Mr. Walton, her master, consented that she should be deserted and sunk, on his being allowed half freight of the Alexander, after which she was boarded and turned adrift. The ship's company, thus consolidated from both vessels, was still very deficient, not amounting to half the proper complement of the Alexander, nor was it more than was absolutely necessary to work that ship to Batavia.

At five in the morning on the 29th of October, a land wind springing up from the coast of Borneo, the Alexander got again under way. At five in the afternoon Pulo Laoot bore from south-south-west to south-west by south, distance fourteen leagues; but the wind being now southerly, and the current strongly against the vessel, she did not get round this island till November the 5th.

Wine was regularly served, in due proportions, to the sick and well; but neither that, nor any other expedient that could be devised, amended the condition of the people. Sickness continued to spread so extensively among them, that in the beginning of November, only one man, besides the officers, was capable of going aloft. A short alarm by no means tended to console them in their situation: on the first of November four large boats, three of which rowed eighteen oars, and the fourth about twelve, bore down upon the ship, apparently with hostile intentions. When they approached within about a mile they lay to, seeming to consult with each other, and afterwards occasionally rowed and sailed after the Alexander. Lieutenant Shortland hoisted English colours; when one of the boats immediately hoisted Dutch, and another Portuguese colours. They continued in chase till five in the afternoon; and it was concluded that they had resolved to board and seize the ship in the night. During the pursuit, the whole of their little strength was put in motion,

* Lieutenant Shortland's people were doomed to find their destresses augmented. Towards the conclusion of September, agues and intermittent fevers prevailed among them; the proportion of those disabled by the scurvy was very considerable; some deaths had happened, and the few men who still had sufficient health to drag through their necessary duty, were tortured with swelled legs, and violent pains in the breast. Hitherto the Friendship had been more happily circumstanced; on the 23d of September she was spoken to, and had then only one man disabled by the scurvy; but a rapid increase of the malady made a fatal compensation for the delay of its commencement.

all were stationed at their quarters, and the carronades and great guns put in order. Lieutenant Shortland was determined to give a display of his own resolution, and to provoke a trial of that of his assailants, by firing a shot in a direct line over them. This manœuvre fully answered the intentions; they immediately desisted from the pursuit, and hastily proceeded towards the shore.

Had the Alexander been now a very few days' sail more distant from Batavia, she must inevitably have been lost, from mere inability to conduct her into port, as every man on board must have been totally disabled. On the 17th of November, only one man on board was able to work, besides the officers; a little longer continuance must infallibly have reduced her to the condition of floating at the mercy of winds and waves, without the least possibility of assisting, impeding, or directing her course. At six that evening the wind was too scanty to carry her into the roads of Batavia, an effort was therefore made by all who were able to work, and anchor was cast between the islands of Leyden and Alkmara; a gun was soon afterwards fired, and a signal made for assistance. At two in the afternoon on the 18th, no assistance arriving, they even ventured at endeavouring to weigh the anchor, a task which they indeed accomplished, but not without the utmost difficulty: after which, standing in with the sea-breeze, the ship came again to anchor at five, in nine fathoms*.

At five in the morning of the 19th, a boat appeared in sight from the Dutch Commodore, which he had generously laded with refreshments. She also brought a boatswain's mate, and twelve seamen, to assist in refitting the ship for sea. On the 20th the sick were conveyed to the hospital, where many of them expired, being in too advanced a stage of disease for skill or accommodation to recover them. A fresh crew was at length made up from the Bridgewater and Contractor East Indiamen that lay in the road; and from the Raymond, Asia, and Duke of Montrose, which came in a few days after, with the assistance of a few men from the Dutch Commodore. In this crew only four of the original seamen remained, the rest being either dead, or not sufficiently recovered to return with the Alexander, when she sailed again on the 7th of December.

The remaining part of the voyage was attended with few remarkable circumstances, and was made in a track too well known to all navigators to require a more minute description of it. At the Cape they met with Captain Hunter, in the Sirius, who, when the Alexander arrived on February 18, 1789, had been in Table Bay six weeks. From him Lieutenant Shortland received intelligence that the Borrowdale, and the Prince of Wales, had returned by the southern passage, and had been heard of from Rio de Janeiro. In Table Bay the Alexander continued at anchor till the 16th of March, when she sailed again, and arrived off the Isle of Wight on the 28th of May.

Thus ended a voyage, the first part of which was rendered important by discoveries; the next was involved in gloom from the virulent attacks of disease and the ravages of death. Much was certainly performed, and much was endured; but from the whole we may reasonably conclude, that the settlement of our countrymen on the new southern continent, must considerably tend to the improvement of navigation, and the extension of geographical knowledge. It is not necessary that disagreeable apprehensions should be excited by the misfortunes of the Alexander and the Friendship. It may not again happen that ships shall quit Port Jackson, so ill prepared with antidotes against the poison of the scurvy: nor, if they should, it cannot be reasonably expected that their visitation will be equally severe.

The Lady Penrhyn, Captain Sever, quitted Port Jackson on the 5th of May, 1788. In the evening of the 7th, supposing they saw a fire on shore, they sounded, but found no bottom with ninety fathoms of line. The scurvy began to make its appearance among them, so early as the 9th of May: one man was rendered unfit for duty by it, and several others complained much

* The boat was now hoisted out and sent to implore assistance from the Dutch Commodore, the crew of the Alexander not being able to furl their own sails. A party was instantly sent to assist, and six of the Dutch seamen continued all night on board, lest any unwelcome weather should come on. Never, perhaps, did any ship arrive in port more helpless, without being shattered from weather, from the cruel effects of a dreadful and invincible disorder.

of

of the severity of its attacks. The weather was generally squally, attended with thunder, lightning, and rain.

In the morning of the 14th, they saw an island, about eighteen or twenty leagues distant; at seven in the afternoon, it was about nine leagues distant, on which they brought to for the night, and next morning made sail and stood for it. At noon they spoke to the Supply, Lieutenant Ball, who informed them that this was Lord Howe's Island. During the afternoon and night they stood off and on, and at nine the next morning, Lieutenant Watts with a party went on shore in search of turtle, but they could not discover the traces of any, and about noon Mr. Watts returned on board. But this disappointment did not deter them from making another effort: Mr. Anstis therefore went with a party, in the pinnace, to try his success in the night. About noon the next day Mr. Anstis returned, without having seen a single turtle, but the party had not entirely lost their labour; so successful had they been in fishing, that they had caught a sufficient quantity to serve the ship's company three or four days.

Lord Howe's Island was discovered by Lieutenant Ball, on his passage to Norfolk Island, in February, and on his return he stopped to survey it: he then caught a great quantity of fine green turtles, which were found in great abundance. Induced by this success, Governor Phillip sent the Supply a second time to this island, but she was not then successful; the weather might probably be so cold as to occasion the turtle to remove to the northward. This island is about two leagues in extent. It is broad at each end, and very narrow, with low land in the centre, forming two bays. There are regular soundings on the west side, but the ground is too hard for holding well, being coral rocks. This island has also every appearance of having undergone a volcanic revolution, great quantities of pumice stone having been found in it*.

This island is well covered with wood, the principal of which is the large and dwarf mangrove, the cabbage tree, and bamboo. The vegetables we met with were wild celery, spinach, endive, scurvy-grass, and samphire.

In the afternoon the pinnace was hoisted in, and they made sail to the eastward. Nothing material occurred till the 31st, when, at three in the afternoon, they saw two islands; one seven leagues, and the other about six distant. Not having an opportunity of getting well in with the land before night came on, they plied occasionally, and at day-light next morning made sail and bore up for it. On approaching the southernmost land, they saw it formed two barren isles: the north island lies in a north half east direction from these, and about five leagues distant. They were in hopes of finding this island productive of something beneficial to the people, as the scurvy was daily gaining ground, but they were greatly disappointed; the north and south sides are surrounded by rocks, over which the water flows, without any opening for a boat. Captain Sever, however, ordered the small boat to be hoisted out, and went on shore accompanied by Mr. Anstis: they found very great difficulty in landing, and, after they were upon the rocks, to ascend a dangerous precipice to gain the level part of the island. The whole of it bears the strongest marks of being a volcanic production: the extent of it is about two miles and a half; and the inhabitants are the brown gull, the light grey bird, ganets, and a parroquet resembling those met with at Lord Howe's Island. The gentlemen could hardly walk a step, without being up to the knee: they saw a great many rats and mice, and found many birds lying dead at the entrances of their burrows. This island was named *Macauley's* Island, in honour of G. M. Macauley, Esq.;

* The inhabitants of this island were all of the feathered tribe, and the chief of these was the ganet; of which there seemed to be prodigious numbers. This was perhaps the time of their incubation, the females being all on their nests: these are places simply hollowed in the sand: here they were apparently secure, there not being a single quadruped that could be found upon the island to disturb them: a great many of their eggs were, however, brought by the people on board. Large pigeons were met with in great plenty; with beautiful parrots and parroquets: also a new species, apparently, of the coote, and of the rail and magpie. A most beautiful small bird was seen; it was brown, with a yellow breast, and yellow on the wings; it appeared to be a species of the humming bird: a black bird was also observed, like a sheerwater, with a hooked bill, which burrows in the ground. Ants, which are very numerous, are the only insects of this place, except the common earth worm. The soil is of a sandy nature, and fresh water seems to be extremely scarce.

Esq.; and the two islands to the southward, *Curtis's* Isles, after Timothy and William Curtis, Esqrs. At five in the afternoon, the captain returning on board, they made sail, standing to the eastward: Macauley's Island is situated in 30° 09′ south latitude, and 180° 58′ 37″ east longitude.

The scurvy now spread exceedingly among the crew, and by the 6th, nine of the men were unable to get out of their hammocks, and many others complained much of their sufferings: particularly of having swelled gums, of the flesh being black and hard; and of a contraction of the sinews, with a total disability. Wine was daily served out to them, and they might have had sour krout, but they refused to eat it. From this time to the 17th they had little variety, and the people were in a very deplorable state; for with all the persons on board, including even the captain, they could muster but ten men who were able to do duty; and even some of them were in a very debilitated state: sour krout, which had before been refused, was now sought after: the captain's fresh stock was appropriated entirely to their use, whilst himself and his officers were living solely on salt provisions. To add to their distress, the wind hung almost constantly in the eastern board, and they could make but very little progress. For several days they had squally and unsettled weather, attended with heavy rain, and frequent storms of thunder and lightning. On the 7th of July they fell in with the south-east trade wind, and as the crew were in a weak condition, it was resolved to make Otaheite as soon as possible.

At six in the morning of the 9th, they saw Osnaburgh Island: at seven they bore up for Otaheite, and at ten that island made its appearance. By five in the afternoon they were abreast of Otaheite Bay, when ten canoes presented themselves alongside with bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, &c. The Indians urged them to come to an anchor there; but Mr. Watts advised the captain to stand on for Matavai Bay*.

It was a pleasing circumstance on their arrival, to see the natives flock round the ship, calling out "Tayo, Tayo" signifying *friends*; and bringing plenty of cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, plaintains, and taro; with a fruit called the Otaheite apple; they also brought several hogs and fowls. The Indians seemed rejoiced to see them, and disposed of their commodities on very moderate terms; their whole behaviour clearly indicating the most friendly and benevolent intentions. In the evening the chief of Matavai came on board, in whom Lieutenant Watts recognized an old friend. The chief was highly delighted at seeing Mr. Watts, as he was the only person in the ship who had been here before, except the steward, who had been before the mast in the Resolution. When Mona, the chief, beheld his old acquaintance, he informed his companions who he was, and that he had been with Captain Cook, and they seemed happy to have some of their old visitors again. Mr. Watts heard from Mona that Otoo was still living, that he was absent on a visit to the eastward, but expected to return in a few days.

The next day, Oediddee agreeably surprised them with a visit on board. He was happy to see them, and very affectionately enquired after his friends: he took much delight in relating his route in the Resolution, and had stored his memory with the names of the several places he had been at in her. He informed them that no ship had visited the islands since Captain Cook; and therefore they concealed his death. Oediddee confirmed the report of the cattle, &c. being destroyed by Maheine, and told them that Omai, and the two New Zealand boys had been dead a considerable time†.

The first salutations being over, Mr. Watts

* On approaching the bay, they could perceive great numbers of natives on Point Venus, and round the beach. Several canoes put off from the shore, the Indians waving pieces of white cloth to invite them to come into the bay. When anchored they had only three men in one watch, and two in the other, besides the mates, and two of these were much afflicted: the rest were in a state truly deplorable.

† On the 13th of July a messenger came on board, with a present from Otoo of a pig, a dog, and some white cloth; he also informed them that he intended to be at Matavai the next day. Early in the morning a few of the canoes came off to the ship, and the natives were observed on shore assembling in great numbers. Soon afterwards a canoe came alongside, with intelligence that Otoo was on the beach. The Captain and Mr. Watts hastened to the shore, and found him surrounded by an amazing concourse of people, among whom were several women very active in wounding their foreheads with sharks' teeth. They were, however, surprised to see a man carrying the portrait of Captain Cook, which had been painted by Webber in 1777. Though so much time had elapsed since the finishing of this picture, it seemed to have received no injury, and they were informed that Otoo always took it with him wherever he went.

asked

asked Otoo to accompany him to the ship, to which he readily assented; but, before he entered the boat, he ordered the portrait in; and was equally ceremonious with the portrait, when he got alongside the ship. When he arrived on board, he seemed highly pleased, made respectful enquiries after his old friends, and particularly with regard to Captain Cook. He visited the ship between decks, and was astonished to find so few people on board, and those in a very debilitated state. He mentioned the death of Omai, and the New Zealand boys; and added, that a skirmish had taken place between the men of Uliatea and those of Huaheine, in which the former were victorious, and that a considerable part of Omai's property had been conveyed to Uliatea.

Otoo was much improved in his person, and made a very respectable appearance; not having yet been disfigured by the baneful effects of the *ava*. He preserved his original character, liberally supplying the ship with provisions. During their stay at Otaheite, he daily visited them, and zealously importuned the captain to move the ship into the Resolution's old birth; but considering the small number of people on board, and their weak situation, he thought it prudent to remain where he was, as, in case of necessity, he could immediately put to sea*.

A few days before they quitted Matavai Bay, Otoo brought the ring of an anchor on board, declaring it might readily be converted into small hatchets. On examining it, Mr. Watts recollected, that it belonged to an anchor which Captain Cook bought of Opooni at Bola, in 1777. There being no forge on board the Lady Penrhyn, the captain offered Otoo three hatchets for it, which he readily accepted.

Though from the season of the year they expected a scarcity of vegetables, they were agreeably surprised to find them in the greatest profusion: hogs were multiplied exceedingly: fowls were plentiful and reasonable, but they were all cocks, and old. The natives also brought goats alongside for sale: and some of them brought a cargo of cats, and offered them in barter. Captain Sever bought a fine male and milch goat, with two kids.

Cocoa-nuts, and the bread fruit, were exceedingly plentiful. The Otaheite apple was equally so. Taro, and plantains, both ripe and green, were brought in great quantities by the natives, but yams and sweet potatoes were extremely scarce. They purchased seven or eight dozen of pumkins, and a quantity of chilipods; but the natives refused to touch any of the pumkins, and they declared the chilipods would poison them.

It has already been noticed, that no ship of any nation had visited this island since Captain Cook; and, from appearances, the iron which the natives then obtained, was nearly exhausted, as no other iron was now seen but the blade of a table knife. They did not even bring any tools on board to be sharpened, which probably would have been the case had they been possessed of any: so eager were they to obtain hatchets, knives, &c. that every produce of the island was purchased at very reasonable rates. But it was not only on hatchets, knives, and nails that the natives had fixed their affections, they extended their wishes to gimlets, files, and scissars; they also enquired for looking-glasses, and white transparent beads, but none of these latter articles were to be had on board: red feathers which had formerly been held in the greatest esteem, were now of little value; they were willing indeed to accept them as presents, but would not barter any thing for them.

Their situation not being a very eligible one, Mr. Watts did not think it prudent to go to any considerable distance from the ship, or to pass much of his time on shore, which deprived him of the means of getting information respecting Omai, and the loss of his property, &c.: but he was inclined to think that the cattle and all the animals were killed, except goats, as Oediddee when he confirmed the revenge of the Eimeo people, never mentioned that any single animal was saved: goats, indeed, had been left on former voyages, and by multiplying had become the

* Otoo was always accompanied by a woman, whose advice he frequently requested; she was not handsome, neither did she possess that delicacy, or those engaging manners that so generally distinguish her countrywomen: she was of the Earree class, and seemed invested with great authority; but whether she was his wife or not could not be ascertained, though Mr. Watts was of opinion that they were married, and he appeared to be very much attached to her.

property of many, but Maheine's resentment, it appears, was levelled only at Otoo*.

The people being now astonishingly recovered, and able to assist in the duties of the ship, Captain Sever thought it necessary to run down among the Society Isles, having a plentiful supply of provisions on board; they accordingly got under way before day-light on the 23d. The natives took the alarm, and, the breeze slackening, they had visitors in abundance, none of whom came empty-handed. Their friends parted from them very reluctantly, and the suddenness of the departure greatly disappointed the natives. They would not have left the place so abruptly, had they not supposed that if their intention was known, the Indians would have flocked on board in great multitudes, and have been extremely troublesome. They had the satisfaction of leaving the island in the most perfect amity with the natives; and it would be doing them injustice not to mention, that while the Lady Penrhyn lay here, not one occasion offered to induce them to fire a musquet.

Oediddee regretted their departure exceedingly, and requested the Captain to take him to Uliatea, but Otoo, (whatever his reasons might be) begged he might not be taken from Otaheite: the captain declared he should not, and, taking leave of Oediddee, conducted him into his canoe, on which he wept abundantly. Otoo was one of the earliest on board in the morning, and did not quit the ship till they had cleared the reef; he expressed great sorrow at their departure, and begged they would not be long absent: he earnestly desired to have some horses brought to him, more particularly than any other animal: before he quitted the ship, he begged a few guns might be fired, with which the captain complied. A breeze now springing up, a last farewell was taken, and they stood to the north-west for Huaheine.

At noon on the 25th, they saw that island, bearing west three-quarters north, fourteen leagues distant. Having had very light winds, and those westerly, they did not reach Huaheine before noon on the 26th. They kept standing off and on, on the east side till the 29th, during which time the natives brought off some refreshments, but they were very exorbitant. The wind veering south-south-east, they stood round the north end of the island, and brought to off Owarree harbour: the natives were perfectly friendly, and supplied them with every article except bread-fruit; but that was not to be procured. They were importuned to go into the harbour, which the captain thought proper to decline, as he did not intend to stay more than a day or two†.

Having recruited their stock of provisions, and added plenty of yams and sugar cane, (the wind coming to the eastward) they took leave of their friends on the 2d of August. They carried away from hence sixty hogs, weighing from 70 to 220 pounds each, besides fifty small pigs, ten dozen of fowls, and an immense quantity of cocoa-nuts, sugar cane, green plantains, taro, and yams. The people were all perfectly recovered, and had a plentiful stock of provisions, so that they had now little reason to be alarmed for their safety. At day-light on the 8th of August they saw a low flat island, bearing from east to north-east, seven or eight miles distance; it seemed to be well clothed with trees, but the weather being then squally, they had but an imperfect view of it. Captain Sever named it Penrhyn's Island; it

* Many of the natives had been carried off by the venereal disease, which arose from their connections with the crews of the Resolution and Discovery: nor were the women so free from this disease as formerly, especially the lower class; the superior sort no longer choosing to risk the chance of such an acquisition.

† In the evening an aged chief, named *Tutti*, whom Mr. Watts recollected to have often seen with Captain Cook, came on board; he confirmed the reports they had heard at Otaheite, and informed them, that after Omai had got perfectly settled, he found it necessary to purchase a great quantity of cloth, and other necessaries, for himself and family; for which his neighbours made him pay very extravagantly; by which means he expended much of his treasure. He died at his own house, as did the New Zealand boys, but Tutty could not give information of the particulars. Upon Omai's decease, the Uliatea men came for his property, alledging that as he was a native of their island they had certainly a right to it. Tutty said they took away a considerable part of his remaining property, and particularly his musquets, the stocks of which they broke, and buried the powder in the sand; he added, that the conflict had been very fierce, and many were slain on both sides. The house which Captain Cook had built for Omai was still in existence, being covered by a very large one after the country fashion: it was taken possession of by the chief of the island. The horse was still living; the mare had foaled, but died soon afterwards: the foal died also. Thus were the benevolent intentions of his Majesty, and all the pains and trouble taken by Captain Cook to preserve the cattle, rendered absolutely fruitless.

is

is situated in 9° 10′ south latitude, and 202° 15″ east longitude.

Nothing particular occurred till the 15th of September, when about noon they beheld the island of Saypan, bearing west half north, twelve leagues distant. The next day at noon, the south end of Tinian was four leagues distant. In the afternoon Mr. Anstis went in the small boat to sound a small bay round the south point of Saypan: he returned at seven o'clock, having found from ten to twelve fathoms water, about a mile off shore, but the ground hard. The next morning Mr. Anstis went on shore to endeavour to procure a bullock, many of which were seen grazing on the island of Tinian. In the evening he returned with the best part of a young bullock. At day-light the next morning, they made sail and stood in for the road, and at nine came to anchor in eighteen fathoms. Soon after they anchored a party was sent on shore to hunt*.

During their stay at Tinian, they were chiefly occupied in filling water, the well not affording above three tons a-day; sometimes not quite so much: the water was a little brackish, but had not any unpleasant flavour. They found the hogs and fowls remarkably shy, and the cattle had entirely deserted the south part of the island; which is attributed to the alarm the Charlotte's people had occasioned among them.

They procured two bulls, eight hogs, and a dozen fowls. Limes and sour oranges were very plentiful. Cocoa-nut trees were numerous, but they were at a considerable distance from the beach. In addition to the animals of this place, several wild cats were observed. The country had nearly the same appearance as when Captains Byron and Wallis visited it, but many of the pyramidical pillars had fallen down, and others were much decayed. In their passage from hence to China nothing material occurred: on the 19th of October they anchored in Macao Roads.

SECTION III.

The Scarborough quits Port Jackson—Touches at Lord Howe's Island—Joins the Charlotte—Falls in with a large Shoal—Discovers a Number of Islands—Account of the Inhabitants—Canoes—Ornaments—Discovers Lord Mulgrave's Islands—Arrival at Tinian—Departure from Tinian—Arrival at Macao Roads.

THE Scarborough transport, Captain Marshall, quitted Port Jackson on the 6th of May 1788, to proceed towards China, to take in a cargo of teas at Canton for the East India Company. For several days they had very unsettled weather, accompanied with squalls and heavy rain. On the 16th they saw Lord Howe's Island; and the next day, at noon, they found the Supply brig, the Lady Penrhyn, and the Charlotte, standing off and on under the island. At two o'clock the Scarborough was close in with the land, but the weather not permitting them to go on shore, they passed the night with standing off and on. Early the next morning, Captain Marshall sent a small party on shore at Lord Howe's Island, to endeavour to procure some turtle, as Lieutenant Ball in the Supply had caught a large quantity there in February, but after the most diligent search not a single turtle was to be found: this excursion, however, was not wholly fruitless, for they brought off a quantity of fine birds, sufficient to serve the ship's crew for about three days.

Having procured what refreshments the island afforded, they made sail at four o'clock, with the Charlotte in company, and stood to the eastward. In the morning of the 22d they saw Norfolk Island. On the 30th they passed several large trees, and a number of Cocoa nuts floating in the water, but no land was to be perceived. Nothing of importance occurred till the 4th of June, when the water appearing coloured, they sounded and struck the ground in fifteen fathoms water: a man was sent to the mast head, who could plainly discern

* From this time to the 25th, they had light varying winds, with frequent showers over the land; and the flies were found as troublesome as Captain Byron had represented them.

discern a shoal running to the westward. Captain Marshall then altered his course, and stretched to the eastward, carrying soundings from fifteen to thirty fathoms water, over a rocky bottom, where in many places they could see ground distinctly. Running to the eastward, about eight miles, they found no bottom with seventy fathoms of line, which induced the Captain to tack and stand to the southward. Vast quantities of birds of different kinds were seen flying to the westward of the shoal, so that there may probably be an island near the situation. The east part of this shoal is situated in 173° 12′ east longitude, and the south part of it in 15° 50′ south latitude. How far it extends to the westward and northward is uncertain. Being now free from the shoal, they stood to the northward with a light easterly breeze*.

At seven they saw another small island, about six miles to the south-west of Hopper's Island; this was named *Henderville's Island.* About noon another island made its appearance; to which Captain Marshall gave the appellation of *Woodle's Island,* three miles north-west of Henderville's Island. Five large canoes came from Woodle's Island towards the ship; but when they were within about four miles of it, they turned back and stood for the shore. The wind blowing off the land prevented them from going near enough, to enable them to give a satisfactory description of these islands; they seemed, however, to abound with cocoa-nut, and a variety of other trees. At three in the afternoon, the Scarborough being within three miles of Henderville's Island, they sounded with sixty fathoms of line, but got no ground. Several large fires were seen upon the shore, and multitudes of the natives were assembled on the beach, many of them pointing at the ship with looks of wonder and astonishment. Soon afterwards nineteen canoes, with several men in each, made towards the ship, which induced Captain Marshall to lay to, expecting they would come alongside: many of them came within a quarter of a mile of the vessel, and there, taking down their sails, stopped to gaze at her, but they could not be prevailed on to venture alongside. Two of the canoes at length, however, made for the ship, and the captain ordered his people out of sight that the natives might not be intimidated†.

It is to be lamented that the captain did not survey these islands more minutely, as there is little doubt of their affording a variety of refreshments; the natives being all plump and fleshy, and seemingly enjoying a life of ease. The inhabitants are of a copper colour, stout and well made; they have long black hair, with black eyes and eye brows, and seem to have remarkably fine teeth. Their ornaments were necklaces, made of beads intermixed with teeth; and many of them had their faces painted white‡.

After quitting these new discovered islands Captain Marshall stood to the northward, with a light breeze; and at five in the morning on the 20th, they saw an island bearing east-north-east, eight miles distant: it seemed very low, and almost level with the water. When Captain Marshall got close in with the land, he perceived it to be a chain of islands extending from south-east to north-west for the distance of about thirty leagues. Having a favourable breeze, they run along the islands, about three miles from shore, when several canoes came after the ship, but none of them would venture nearer. Multi-

* At six in the morning of the 18th they saw an island right a-head: they sounded when about six miles from the land, but got no bottom with sixty fathoms of line. Two or three canoes came towards the ship, with two or three men in each, but they soon put back again, and made for the shore. The captain named it *Hopper's Island.*

† When the canoes were pretty close to the ship, the captain shewed them some little nails, a quart bottle, and a looking-glass, all of which they were anxious to obtain; but they could not be prevailed on to bring their canoes alongside. Three of them jumped out, and swam to the ship, when a rope was given them to take hold of, but they would not consent to come on board. On receiving their little presents they laughed immoderately, and gave the captain some beads and animals teeth, which they wore about their necks as ornaments; a circumstance which sufficiently proves that they have some idea of barter. Soon after these islanders took their leave, and returned towards the shore; and Captain Marshall made sail and stood to the northward.

‡ If we may give an opinion of these people from the construction of their canoes, they seem to possess no inconsiderable share of ingenuity: many of their canoes are capacious enough to contain sixteen or twenty persons; they are narrow and well calculated for fast sailing, and yet there is not the least danger of their oversetting, as they are steadied with an outrigger resembling a ladder on the weather side. Though these vehicles always sail on the same side, they are so contrived as to sail one way as well as the other, and the Indians manage them with great dexterity. From what little Captain Marshall saw of these people, they appeared to be lively, ingenious, and expert.

tudes

tudes of the natives soon assembled on the beach, to gratify their curiosity in gazing at her: this induced Captain Marshall to invite them, by signs, to approach, but none among them would venture. He was half inclined to send his boat on shore to procure some refreshments, many of the crew being laid up with the scurvy; but he prudently declined taking such a step, thinking it would be hazarding too much to have sent a few men amongst an ignorant multitude, with whose character and disposition they were totally unacquainted. Within the islands there appeared to be some fine harbours. The natives were almost black: their canoes resemble those already described.

There being no probability of procuring refreshments from these people, Captain Marshall made sail, and at noon on the 22d they saw land, in the direction of north by east, eight miles distant: it appeared low, flat, and full of trees. In running along shore, they found the land they had seen consisted of six different islands, extending from north by east, to south by west to the length of about fifteen leagues. The southernmost island, Captain Marshall named *Allen's Island;* the second *Gillespy's Island;* the third *Touching's Island;* the fourth *Clarke's Island;* the fifth *Smith's Island;* and the northernmost *Scarborough Island.* They ran along these islands abont three miles distant from the land, and kept the lead continually going, but could get no bottom, which seemed very extraordinary, as the land is low. These islands abound with cocoa-nut and cabbage trees. By the time they were a-breast of Scarborough Island, it was so dark that they could not perceive the land; but the Indians made two very large fires, which enabled them to get clear of all the islands. At six in the afternoon of the 23d, more land appeared, bearing north to north-west*.

Several large canoes now put off from the shore, with eight or ten men in each. The Charlotte, Captain Gilbert, was in company with the Scarborough; she was indeed at some distance astern, and the canoes all went along-side her. Several of them went on board the Charlotte, and ran fore and aft, stealing every thing they could find; one of them got hold of the pump-break, and was attempting to jump over-board with it, but was prevented by one of the sailors. They seemed to be very civilized, and all of them had coverings round the waist: they wore necklaces made of beads, to which a cross was suspended, like those worn by the Spaniards. Captain Marshall distinguished these islands by the name of *Lord Mulgrave's Islands,* in honour of Lord Mulgrave.

Lord Mulgrave's Islands abound with cocoa-nut-trees, and they observed remnants of oranges, and many other sorts of fruit. These Islanders had no offensive weapons; it therefore seems probable that they live on friendly terms with each other. At noon on the 27th they saw land, which they found to be a cluster of small islands, but no appearance was seen of their being inhabited. At noon on the 28th more islands were observed: two large canoes were lying on a sandy beach, but they did not perceive any inhabitants. At five in the afternoon more islands presented themselves, which were supposed by Captain Marshall to be those which Lord Anson discovered, and named *Barbadoes Islands.*

Having now a clear navigation, they prosecuted their voyage without meeting with any thing remarkable till the thirty-first of July, when at six in the morning they saw the island of Saypan, bearing west by south six leagues distant. At day-light the next morning, Captain Marshall sent his boat on shore, with a small party to procure refreshments, and look for anchorage. At two the boats returned, loaded with cocoa-nuts and cabbage; but they could find no place for a vessel to anchor in, the water being very deep close to the land, with a rocky bottom, and so heavy a surf that the boat did not land without much difficulty.

Not meeting with a harbour at Saypan, the Captain resolved to proceed to Tinian; where he might come to anchor, and put his sick people

* By two the next day, they were within two miles of land, which they found to be a chain of islands, extending nearly from east to west for twenty-five leagues: the Scarborough coasted along within a mile of the land, and often sounded with an hundred fathoms of line, but could get no bottom. At the same time they saw the water break near the shore, and a multitude of the natives were collected on the beach. About three, a small canoe with two men in her came off from the shore, but when they were at the distance of a hundred yards from the vessel, they put back again as fast as possible, seemingly much terrified: these men had skins wrapped round their waists, and their hair was decorated with shells and beads.

on shore, having at that time fifteen men laid up with the scurvy, and the rest of his crew were remarkably weak and feeble. The wind, however, was so variable, that they did not reach the south-west side of that island till the 4th of August, in the afternoon, when they anchored in twenty-five fathoms water, and soon afterwards the Charlotte came to anchor near the Scarborough.

Early the next morning, Captain Marshall sent his sick people on shore, with a tent; and provisions to serve them for five days. After landing, the boat's crew walked about the island, and saw a great number of cattle, hogs, and fowls; but they only caught a calf, a hog, and a fowl or two, and loaded the boat with cocoa-nuts, oranges, and limes. On the 6th the chief mate went on shore to look for fresh water: he found out the well, mentioned in Lord Anson's Voyage, but it was perfectly dry, and no fresh water was to be found within two miles of the landing-place. The boat returned about noon; and towards evening the wind came round to south south-west, blowing very strong. The wind continuing to blow strongly into the bay, Captain Marshall sent his boat on shore on the 7th for the sick people, which they brought off, but not without much difficulty and danger. In the mean time, every preparation was made for sea, the Captain being determined to get away as soon as the wind shifted to south, or south by east, so that they could clear the west part of the island. During the night they had a heavy gale at south west, when they expected every minute to be driven on shore: at day-break, however, the wind shifted to south south-east, on which they instantly cut the cable and ran clear of the land. Captain Gilbert cut both his cables and followed the Scarborough. Hardly had they cleared the land when the wind again shifted to the south south-west, and blew a hurricane; insomuch that had the vessels then been at anchor, they must inevitably have been driven on shore. Though Captain Marshall's people had been so short a time on land, they received great benefit from it; their strength gradually returned, and they soon became perfectly restored.

Nothing extraordinary occurred in their passage from Tinian to China; they saw the Lema Islands in the evening of the 7th of September, and anchored in Macao-Roads the following afternoon.

SECTION IV.

Supplemental Account of Animals.

BIRDS.

Bankian Cockatoo.

THIS bird is about the size of the great white Cockatoo; the length twenty-two inches. The bill is very short, and of a pale lead-colour. The head-feathers are pretty long, and the bird is enabled to erect them into a crest at will. The colour of the head, neck, and under parts of the body are dusky brown, inclining to olive, darkest on the belly. The feathers on the top of the head, and back part of the neck are edged with olive; the rest of the upper part of the body, the wings, and tail are of a glossy black; the last is pretty long, and a little rounded at the end: the two middle feathers are entirely black; the others of a fine vermillion in the middle for about one third, otherwise black, the outer edge of the exterior feather black the whole length. Legs black: this bird was met with in New South Wales. With the above specimen was sent the head of another, which differed in having a mixture of yellow in various parts of it.

Red-shouldered Parrakeet.

THIS is about the size of the *Guinea* Parrakeet. The whole length ten inches and a half: the colour of the plumage is green, inclining to yellow on the under parts: the top of the head, the outer edge of the wing, and some parts of the middle of the same are deep blue: round the base of the bill crimson, having a mixture of the same on the fore part of the neck, except that between the bill and eye is a mixture of yellow: the shoulders and under parts of the wings are blood red; two or three of the inner quills,

quills, and the vent pale red: the greater quills dusky, fringed outwardly with yellow: the tail is very much wedged in shape; the feathers at the base chesnut, towards the end dull blue: the bill and legs brown. This species inhabits New South Wales.

Crested Goat Sucker.

THIS is somewhat smaller than the European species, measuring about nine inches and a half in length. The colour of the plumage on the upper part is dark brown, mottled and crossed with obscure whitish bars: the quills are plain brown, five or six of the outer ones being marked with dusky white spots on the outer webs: the tail is rounded in shape, and marked with twelve narrow bars of a dusky white, mottled with black, as are the other whitish marks on the upper parts: the under parts of the body are more or less white; but the fore part of the neck and breast are crossed with several dusky bars: the bill is black, but the gape and within yellow; at the sides of the mouth are bristles, as in other goat-suckers; and at the base of the bill are ten or twelve erect stiff bristles, thinly barbed on their sides, and standing upright as a crest, giving the bird a remarkable appearance: the legs are weak, pretty long, and of a pale yellow; claws brown.

New Holland Cassowary.

THIS is a species differing from that generally known: it is much larger, stands higher on its legs, and has a longer neck. Its length is seven feet two inches. The bill is not very different from that of the common Cassowary; but the horny appendage on the top of the head, in this species is totally wanting: the whole of the head and neck is also covered with feathers, except the throat and fore part of the neck about half way, which are not so well feathered as the rest; in the common Cassowary, the head and neck are bare and carunculated as in the turkey. The general plumage consists of a mixture of brown and grey, and the feathers are somewhat curled at the ends in the natural state: the wings are so short as to be useless for flight. The long spines which are observed in the wings of the common sort, are in this not to be perceived, nor is there any appearance of a tail. The legs are stout, formed like the Galeated Cassowary, with the addition of their being jagged the whole of their length at the back part.

The bird is not uncommon in New Holland, several of them having been seen about Botany Bay, and other parts. That from which the plate was taken, was shot within two miles of the settlement at Sydney Cove, and the drawing made on the spot by Lieutenant Watts.

White Gallinula.

This bird resembles the purple Gallinula in shape, but is much superior in size, being as large as a dunghill fowl. The length from the end of the bill to that of the claws is two feet three inches: the bill is very stout, and the colour of it, the whole of the top of the head, and the irides red; the sides of the head round the eyes are reddish, thinly sprinkled with white feathers. The whole of the plumage is white: the legs the colour of the bill. This species is common on Lord Howe's Island, Norfolk Island, and other places, and is a very tame species. The other sex, supposed to be the male, is mentioned to have some blue on the wings.

Dog of New South Wales.

THE height of this species, standing erect, is somewhat less than two feet: the length two feet and a half. The head resembles that of a fox, the ears short and erect, with whiskers on the muzzle. The colour of the upper parts is pale brown, gradually growing lighter towards the belly: the hind part of the fore legs, and the fore part of the hinder ones white, as are the feet of both: the tail is somewhat bushy, but less so than that of the fox.

This species inhabits New South Wales: this specimen (a female) is now alive in the possession of the Marchioness of Salisbury, at Hatfield-house, having been sent over as a present to Mr. Nepean, from Governor Phillip. It has the manners of a dog, but is of a very savage nature: it laps like other dogs, but neither barks nor growls when offended or teized, but erects the hairs of the whole body like bristles, and seems furious: it is eager after prey, and delights in rabbits or chickens, raw, but will not touch dressed meat. Its fierceness and agility gives it greatly the advantage of other animals much superior in size; for, when a fine French fox dog was put to it, in a moment it seized him by

by the loins, and would have soon terminated his existence, had not help been at hand. With the utmost ease, it could leap over the back of an ass, and was near worrying one to death, having so fastened on it that the creature was not able to disengage himself without assistance. A second of these is possessed by Mrs. Lascelles, which is equal to it in point of ferocity; whence it may be presumed that this elegant animal will never become familiar.

Spotted Martin.

THIS is about the size of a large pole-cat, and measures from the tip of the nose to the setting on of the tail eighteen inches; the tail itself being nearly of the same length. The visage is pointed in shape, and the general colour of the fur is black, marked with irregular blotches of white: the tail, in particular, has an elegant appearance, and tapers gradually to the point. It inhabits the neighbourhood of Port Jackson.

Kanguroo Rat.

THE upper jaw of this species has two cutting teeth in front, with three others on each side of them, and at a distance one false grinder, sharp at the edge, and fluted on the sides; and close to these, two true grinders: the lower jaw has two long cutting teeth formed like those of the squirrel, with three grinders, corresponding with those in the upper jaw. The general shape of the body is not very different from that of the kanguroo; but the visage being strongly similar to that of the rat, and the colour not ill resembling that animal, it has obtained the name of the kangaroo rat. This is an inhabitant of New Holland.

The Laced Lizard.

THIS elegant species is in length, from the nose to the end of the tail, about forty inches. It has a few weak teeth in the mouth which are rather sharp, at about a quarter of an inch distance from one another: the tongue is long and forked: the general shape is slender; and the colour of the skin, on the upper parts, a brownish or blueish black, whimsically marked with golden yellow: in some parts this colour is beautifully mottled, like some kinds of laced work; in others, striped in various directions: the under parts are yellow, crossed with single bars of black on the chin and throat, and double clouded ones on the belly: the toes are five in number on each foot, barred across with black and yellow, as the legs, and each furnished with a crooked black claw: the tail is longer than the whole of the body; towards the base, clouded and marked as the rest; but the further half banded with black and yellow, each band being about three inches broad, the end running to a very sharp point. This lizard is not uncommon at Port Jackson, where it has the reputation of a harmless species.

Bag-throated Balistes.

THIS fish is frequently found on the coast of New South Wales: as the drawing was obtained without any description, the size of it is uncertain. The erect horn or spine is placed over, and a little behind the eyes, as in *Willoughby's Icthyologia*, attended with two shorter ones directly behind the first: the long spine is straight, sharp at the point, and deeply sawed on the back part. It has also a deep pouch-like appendage beneath the throat, in shape like a jelly-bag. This fish is pretty common on the coast of New South Wales. When skinned it is said to be pretty good eating.

A Fish of New South Wales.

THE ground colour of this fish resembles that of the British mackarel, marked with several round, blue and white spots. The figure of it is represented faithfully, from a drawing by Daniel Butler, sent from New South Wales, where it is in great plenty. It is said to taste like a dolphin.

Port Jackson Shark.

THE length of this specimen was two feet; and it was about five inches and a half over at the broadest part, from thence tapering to the tail: the skin was rough, and the colour brown, palest on the under parts; over the eyes on each side a long ridge appears of about three inches; under the middle of which the eyes are placed: their teeth are numerous, consisting of at least ten or eleven rows: the forward teeth are small and sharp; those behind are blunter and larger, and several rows are perfectly flat at top, forming a kind of bony palate like that of the wolf-fish: the

the under jaw is furnished much like the upper: the breathing holes are five, as is usual in the genus: on the back are two fins, and before each stands a strong spine, as in the dog-fish: it has also two pectoral, and two ventral fins; besides an anal fin, placed at a middle distance between the last and the tail: the tail itself has the appearance of being divided, the upper part being much longer than the other.

This was taken at Pork Jackson, but to what size it may usually arrive cannot be determined; perhaps not to a considerable one, the teeth appearing very complete. Some sharks, of an enormous size, have however been caught thereabouts.

Watts's Shark.

THIS species seems hitherto to have escaped the researches of our Icthyologists. The length of the specimen is nineteen inches; the head broad, and angular in shape; and the body rounded, and nearly equal in its dimensions for above half the length, when it suddenly grows small, and so continues to the end of the tail: the colour of the body is brown in different shades, and there are three rows of large pale spots, of an irregular shape, most of them dark within; one row passes down the middle, the others are on each side; and there are others less conspicuous below them. The mouth is placed nearer the end of the head than in most of the genus, and furnished in the front with nine sharp crooked teeth, in three rows, with plenty of small ones on each side. The eyes project considerably above the rest of the head, and are placed on the upper part of it: at the most forward part of the head are two cartilaginous appendages, with four others, nearly similar, on each side between the first and the breathing holes: the pectoral fins are placed beneath these last; the abdominal about the middle of the body; and the anal between the last and the tail: the under part is also finned from that place to the end: on the body are two fins, placed uncommonly far back.

This fish was met with in Sidney Cove, Port Jackson, by Lieutenant Watts, and supposed to be extremely voracious, in proportion to its size. It had lain on the deck for two hours, and seemed perfectly quiet, but on Mr. Watts's dog passing by, the shark sprung upon it with astonishing ferocity, and seized it by the leg; nor could the dog have disengaged himself, had not the people come to his assistance.

Great Brown Kingsfisher.

THE length is from sixteen to eighteen inches: the bill about three inches and a half; the upper mandible brown; the under white, but brown at the base: the head has a sufficient quantity of feathers to form a crest, when erected; the colour whitish, and most of the feathers either tipped or crossed with black: the neck and under parts of the body are nearly the same in colour, crossed on the sides with dusky lines; over the forehead the colour is dusky brown, nearly black, passing backwards in an irregular shaped streak a considerable way behind the eye: the back and most of the wing, is black or dusky, but the middle of the wing is of a shining blue green, as well as the lower part of the back and rump: the tail is barred with pale rust colour and black, inclining to purple, and towards the end whitish: the legs of a dusky yellow, the claws black.

This species inhabits various places in the South Seas, but the specimen from which this description was taken, was sent from Port Jackson.

Black Flying Opossum.

THE following is supposed to be a new animal of this genus. The length from the tip of the nose, which is pointed in shape, to the root of the tail, is twenty inches; of the tail itself twenty-two inches, at the base quite light, gradually increasing to black at the end: the width across the loins sixteen inches: the ears large and erect: the fur is of a richer texture than that of the sea-otter of Cook's River: on the upper parts of the body it appears at first sight of a glossy black, but, on a closer inspection, there is found a mixture of grey: the under parts are white, and on each hip a tan-coloured spot appears, almost as large as a shilling: at this part the fur is thinnest, but at the root of the tail it is so rich and close that the hide cannot be felt through it. The fur is also continued to the claws. The jaws are furnished with teeth, placed as in some others of this genus; in the upper jaw forwards are four small cutting teeth, then two canine ones, and backwards five grinders: the under jaw has two large cutting teeth, like the Vulpine Opossum, five grinders, with no inter-

intermediate canine ones. The fore legs have five toes on each foot, with a claw on each; the hinder one four toes, with claws, and a thumb without a claw, enabling the animal to use the foot as a hand.

This beautiful quadruped inhabits New South Wales: the specimen from which this account is taken, is a male, and the property of Henry Constantine Nowell, Esq. The fur of it is of so valuable a texture, that should it hereafter be found in plenty, it may probably become a very valuable article of commerce.

A Journal of the Transactions at Port Jackson, and Norfolk Island; with the Discoveries which have been made in New South Wales, and in the Southern Ocean, since the Publication of PHILLIP'S VOYAGE. Compiled from the Journals and other Official Papers of Governors Phillip and King, and Lieutenant Ball; and the Voyages from the Sailing of the Sirius in 1787, to the Return of that Ship's Company to England in 1792. Abridged from the Historical Journal by John Hunter, Esq. Post Captain in his Majesty's Navy.

SECTION I.

The Ships destined for the Voyage rendezvous at the Mother Bank—Proceed from thence—The Convicts on board attempt an Insurrection—The Ringleaders punished—Arrival at Santa Cruz—A Convict attempts to escape—Description of Laguna, &c.—Departure from Santa Cruz—Arrive at Rio Janeiro—Description of the City of St. Sebastian.

TO remove the inconvenience which this country had suffered from the gaols being exceedingly crowded with prisoners, who had been sentenced to transportation, government made choice of a spot on the east coast of New Holland, to be formed into a settlement, for the salutary purpose of receiving such convicts. The east coast of New Holland had been discovered and explored by Captain Cook, in his first voyage round the world, and by him denominated New South Wales. Botany Bay, the place which he entered with his ship, was thought entitled to the appellation of a harbour, and recommended by him, in the narrative of his voyage, as a convenient place for a settlement: it was therefore fixed upon by government for that special purpose.

On the 25th of October, 1786, his Majesty's ship Sirius, then in the dock at Deptford, was commissioned, and the command of her conferred upon Arthur Phillip, Esq.: the Supply was also put into commission, and Lieutenant Henry Lidgbird Hall was appointed to command her.

The Sirius was about 540 tons burthen, mounting twenty guns, and was a very capacious convenient vessel. The Supply armed tender was a brig, a strong firm roomy little vessel, mounting eight guns: the complement of the Sirius was one hundred and sixty men; that of the Supply was fifty-five. These two ships were intended, after having escorted the convicts to the place of their destination, to remain in that country to be employed in the public service, till they should be relieved by other vessels from England*.

On the 30th of January, 1787, two transports, one freighted with male, and the other with female convicts, dropt down to Long-Reach, and afterwards proceeded to Gravesend, where they were joined by the Sirius the next day, and advanced to the Nore: here they also anchored, associating with the armed tender Supply. On

* On the 9th of December, the ship being ready to fall down the river, they slipped the moorings and sailed to Long-Reach, where they took in the guns and ordnance stores. The peculiar nature of the service required from the Sirius being considered, another officer, bearing a certain rank, was thought necessary to command the ship in the absence of Captain Phillip, whose presence, it was supposed would be requisite wherever the seat of government in that country might be fixed. In consequence of which Captain John Hunter received a commission appointing him second Captain of the Sirius, with the rank of Post Captain, with power to command her in the absence of the principal Captain.

the

the 4th of February they anchored in the Downs, where they were detained by contrary winds till the 19th, when they put to sea, and arrived at the Mother Bank on the 21st, where the transports and store-ships were directed to rendezvous.

On the 9th of May, Captain Phillip arrived at Portsmouth, and came on board the following day to issue signals and orders to Lieutenant John Shortland, the agent for transports, to be delivered to the several masters of the ships. On the 13th they sailed from the Mother-Bank, in company with the Supply armed tender, and six transports, having on board 600 male, and 200 female convicts, together with three store-ships, containing provisions and other stores. On board the ships conveying convicts, 160 marines, with their proper officers were embarked: a surgeon, and three assistants were also embarked in the transports. The wind being easterly, they ran out at the Needles, and were accompanied by the Hyena, Captain de Coursey, who had received orders to see them a hundred leagues to the westward. They had light breezes, with pleasant weather, down the channel, but had the mortification to observe that two of their transports sailed very indifferently; one of which the Hyena towed two or three days.

They experienced variety of weather till the 21st, when Captain Phillip put his dispatches on board the Hyena; a report was soon after made from one of the transports, that a discovery had been made of an intended insurrection among the convicts in that ship; in which, if they succeeded, they were to have quitted the fleet in the night, and afterwards employ the ship as they might determine among themselves. A few days previous to this project, Captain Phillip had humanely directed that many of the male convicts should be disencumbered of some irons with which they were embarrassed, that they might more conveniently strip themselves at night, as well as be rendered more comfortable during the day. This indulgence had doubtless encouraged those, who were disposed to exert their ingenuity in so daring an attempt, to carry such a measure into execution. After the discovery of the plot upon very satisfactory evidence, two of the principals were brought on board the Sirius, severely punished, and sent on board another transport, laden with very heavy irons.

Intending to make the islands of Porto Sancto and Madeira, they were at a little distance from the former on the 29th in the evening; and the weather being hazy they shortened sail, that the convoy might not fall suddenly in with the land in the night. At day-light the next morning they saw the Deserters off Madeira, having passed the islands of Porto Sancto in the night. At five in the afternoon on the 1st of June, they made the Salvages. They had light airs and variable till the 23d, when the wind sprung up from the northward, and they steered for the island of Teneriffe. Some of the convoy being considerably astern, they brought to, and in the afternoon they bore away, and made the signal for the convoy to make all the sail possible, that, as they were strangers to Santa Cruz road, they might save day-light to the anchorage, which they effected, and had the whole convoy in before dark; at half after six in the evening, they anchored in fifteen fathoms water. The next morning Captain Phillip sent an officer to the governor, informing him who they were, and their business at that island; but previous to their anchoring, some officers came on board the Sirius for the very same purpose, a ceremony which is seldom neglected. The officer who had been dispatched to the governor, brought a very polite reply from him, signifying his sincere wishes of affording him every refreshment which could be procured. Captain Phillip then waited on the governor, who politely expressed a wish that Teneriffe was capable of affording every refreshment which he might have occasion for.

Two days after this visit, the governor, who was then the Marquis of Branceforte, came on board himself, attended by several officers, when the usual interrogations were again proposed and answered. A few days after this visit from the governor, Captain Phillip was invited to dine with him, and to bring with him as many of the principal officers as could be spared from the ships. A party, consisting of about twelve, readily attended, and were entertained with the greatest hospitality and politeness*.

Before

* While they lay in this road, the ships' companies, as well as the convicts, were abundantly supplied with fresh provisions on the island; but vegetables and fruit were somewhat scarce. During their stay here, the watering of the ships was a material consideration, and they were often employed in this necessary business on board the transports after

Before they were ready to put to sea, a party agreed to make a short excursion into the country; for this purpose they set out early one morning, accompanied by two merchants who were residents of this place. The name of these two worthy gentlemen were Mr. Little and Mr. Armstrong. They had previously provided horses, mules, provisions, &c. and meant to proceed towards the city of Laguna, the capital of the island. The distance was estimated at three miles from Santa Cruz, but from the badness of the roads, and other causes, it appeared to be not less than twice that distance. The party travelled through many of the streets at Laguna, which are regular, and cross each other at right angles; the buildings being in general very good. There are two parish churches, two nunneries, and three or four convents, built in a quadrangular form. A conduit in the middle of the town supplies the inhabitants with water, issuing from cavities in several parts of a hill, and conveyed down the declivity in stone-troughs.

The plain on which Laguna stands is pleasant and fertile: it being now the height of the harvest, the people were engaged in cutting down their corn, which seemed to yield abundantly: the environs seem also to be enriched with many pleasant gardens. The governor has a palace here, but generally resides at Santa Cruz; and this city, once the residence of persons in authority, seems now deserted by persons of distinction. Our navigators lamented that the time proposed for transacting their business here, would not admit of a visit to the Peak, a mountain which has employed the pen of many writers.

The bay of Santa Cruz is sheltered by several small batteries of four or five guns each, placed at certain distances round the bay; but their principal fort is near the landing-place, and is a very strong work.

The town of Santa Cruz is irregular, the principal street having, by its form, being almost entitled to the appellation of a square: the governor's house, situated at the upper end, has more the appearance of a country inn than the palace of a governor. The skirts of the town seem deserted, and nearly in ruins.

In the afternoon of the 9th of June, the transports having completed their watering, the signal was made from the Sirius, for all persons in the fleet to repair instantly to their respective ships; and on the 10th they put to sea with a light air of wind from the land. They steered to the south-west till they were near the meridian of the island of Sal, the northernmost of the Cape de Verde Islands, and then sailed a little to the eastward of it. At nine in the morning of the 19th they saw the island, bearing north-west by north, distant four leagues. They steered about three or four miles wide of the reef, which extends from the north-east part of Bonavista, and runs in a south-east direction three or four miles. It was about two o'clock in the afternoon when they made the island of Bonavista, and consequently they had a good opportunity of seeing the reef; from which Captain Cook says, in one of his voyages, he was in great danger, and that it lies off the south-east part of the island; in which last assertion he certainly appears to have made a mistake.

At twelve o'clock at night, they intended to anchor in Port Praya bay, in the island of St. Jago: the object for which they endeavoured to get into this bay, was a supply of fresh provisions. Fresh gales of wind, heavy showers of rain, with frequent calms, and other peculiar circumstances, very much retarded their progress. On

after dark. A convict, one evening, while several of the crew were engaged in clearing a boat of water, contrived to slip into a small boat, and dropped away from the ship unperceived. Getting to some considerable distance, he exerted himself at his oars, and got on board a foreign East India ship then lying there, and offered himself as a seaman; but his services were refused. Expecting to be immediately missed, and sought after, he thought it expedient to quit that ship, and landed to the westward of the town, but on a place where there was much surf, and where the rocks behind him were inaccessible. The officer of the marines on board that transport, mustering the convicts as usual at setting the watch, discovered that this man was missing, and information of it was immediately conveyed to Captain Phillip, who next morning sent an officer from the Sirius to the governor, requesting his assistance in recovering the deserter. Pursuant to orders issued by him for that purpose, the boat that had been taken away was perceived the next morning beating on the rocks to the westward of the town; and when the messengers were rowing to pick her up, they saw the fellow endeavouring to hide himself in the cliff of a rock, not having been able to ascend the precipice. The officer presented a musquet at him, which so far intimidated him that he consented to come down rather than be shot at. He was taken on board, punished, and carefully confined in heavy irons, till he was got to sea, when he only shared the fate of the other convicts.

the

the 14th of July, however, in the evening, they crossed the equator in longitude 26° 10′ west: and with 5° 00′ of west variation. They did not see any thing till the 3d of August, when they made Cape Frio, and at twelve o'clock at night were right abreast of it. This Cape is an island distant about three miles from the main land: they never approached the shore nearer than five or six miles, at which distance they had thirty fathoms water over a soft bottom.

On the 6th of August a light breeze from the sea conducted them within the islands which lie off the harbour, where they anchored for the night, with the convoy, in fourteen fathoms water, the island of Raz bearing south by west two miles, and Rodondo, a low flat island, south-west by south. The next morning an officer was dispatched to the town, to inform the viceroy who they were, and their reason for having visited that port. On the 7th, with a breeze from the sea, they weighed, and, with convoy sailed into the harbour. As they passed Fort Santa Cruz, they saluted with thirteen guns, and were complimented by an equal number from the fort: they anchored off the town in seventeen fathoms water, over a good soft bottom.

The persons on board the ships had been remarkably healthy; only sixteen had been buried since their departure from England. Six only of that number had died between Teneriffe and this place. Many of those whom they had lost since they left Portsmouth, had been lingering under diseases with which they were afflicted when they embarked, and whose dissolution might naturally have been expected. On their arrival here, an inconsiderable number were labouring under fevers, or other serious complaints, except between 20 and 30, in whom symptoms of the scurvy had lately appeared. Fresh provisions and vegetables were procured on their arrival, and served to the ships' companies, marines, and convicts. Even the convicts had a proportion of oranges with their other provisions, that fruit being remarkably cheap and plentiful. It was indeed no uncommon circumstance for those who passed in the country boats, to throw a shower of oranges among the people in the ships *.

Here the navigators received every thing that was civil and polite; and a few days after their arrival, all the officers were introduced to the viceroy, who seemed anxious to render them every service, consistent with his instructions from the court of Portugal. It is customary, when any foreign ships are in this harbour, for a guard boat to attend night and day, in order to prevent smuggling; but that ceremony was omitted in favour of our navigators, every officer being permitted to walk where he pleased, except in the forts; a liberty never granted to strangers. No centinel was placed in any of the king's boats at landing, nor in those of the transports; a mark of civility highly gratifying to every officer in the fleet. But when the masters of the transports went on shore, a non-commissioned officer from their guard accompanied them wherever they went, and a private soldier attended their sailors †.

On the 3d of September, the watering of the convoy having been completed, and every other necessary preparation made, a signal from the Sirius required every person to repair immediately on board their respective ships; the signal for unmooring being exhibited at the same time; and on Tuesday the 4th, with a light breeze from the land, they weighed with the convoy. A singular compliment was afterwards paid: when the Sirius had got within half a mile of Fort Santa Cruz, that castle saluted them with

* When our navigators had been about ten days in this harbour, they found the convicts in a much healthier state than when they left Spithead. Much pains had been taken, by some persons who were averse to the expedition, to propagate a report that, whilst lying at the Mother Bank, they were so sickly that eight or ten of them were buried every day. Among such a number of people confined in small ships, to have no sick on board can hardly be expected, but there are few country towns in England, which contain 1500 inhabitants, (the number which those ships had on board) which have not frequently as many sick as they had, when the report was circulated that they buried such numbers daily.

† The 21st of August being the anniversary of the Prince of Brazil's birth-day, our navigators displayed the flag of Portugal, at sun-rise, at the fore-top mast head, and that of their own nation at the main and mizen. At half an hour after ten, the viceroy received compliments upon that occasion; when most of the officers of the fleet landed, and attended in procession to pay their *devoirs*, and were received with particular attention. They were the first company admitted into the levee room; after them followed the clergy, military, and the civilians. As soon as our navigators had entered the room, a signal was made from the palace, and the fort began to fire. The commanding officer left on board the Sirius, had received orders to salute, after the fort had fired two guns, which was particularly attended to, and a salute of twenty-one guns was given.

twenty-one guns, which they answered with the same number. This was supposed to be particularly meant as a suitable return, to the attention paid by his Majesty's ship to the birth-day of the Prince of Brazil.

The harbour of Rio de Janeiro may be known by a remarkable hill at its entrance, called Pao d'Asucar, from its resemblance to a sugar loaf; another hill to the south-east, is by some named the False Sugar-loaf, but it more resembles a church with a short spire steeple. The land to the westward of the harbour is high and broken, and generally so covered with clouds that the true figure of it cannot be discovered. Right off the harbour lie several small islands, from which a few rocks project.

This harbour, which is very extensive and commodious, has many convenient bays in it, where a great number of ships may be secure from any bad weather. The town is large, populous, and well built, but standing on ground which was formerly swampy, and surrounded with hills of an immense height, its situation is supposed to be unhealthy. Some few of the streets are wide, most of the others are very narrow. The square or parade is large, and the building round it commodious: the south side of the square is ornamented with the viceroy's palace. The churches here are noble structures, and their decorations extremely rich: they seem also to have excellent organs in them. The mechanics here carry on their business in distinct parts of the town, particular streets being appropriated to particular trades: one street is inhabited by taylors, another with shoe-makers, a third with carpenters, &c.

As far as forts and guns can give strength to any place, the city of Saint Sebastian may be considered as strong. The island of Cobres, which overlooks it, lies close to the town, and has a strong work upon it, with a good depth of water off it. The annual exports from Rio de Janeiro are 3200 arobes of gold, which are sent to Portugal, and of which the king has a tenth part; 6,000 cases of sugar, weighing 40 arobes each; 5,000 cases of rice, and 1500 casks of rum, each cask containing eight almudas.

SECTION II.

Anchor in Table Bay—Refreshments—Depart from the Cape of Good Hope—Captain Phillip quits the Sirius, to proceed on the Voyage in the Supply—The Sirius arrives in Botany Bay, and finds the Supply at Anchor there—The Bussole and Astrolabe arrive—Quit Botany Bay, and anchor in Port Jackson.

FOR the two first days after leaving Rio de Janeiro, they had light and variable winds; after which it veered to the north-east and freshened. The weather then became dark and cloudy, attended with lightning and rain. On the 19th they saw several Pentada birds. On the 29th thick hazy weather during the night induced the convoy to mistake the course, and they were found at day-light scattered and to leeward. They bore down, and made the signal for closing. Nothing important, or worth relating, happened this passage. On the 12th of October, expecting every hour to make the land, and the weather being hazy, with a strong westerly wind, at midnight they made the signal and brought to: at six the next morning they saw the land, distant ten leagues; at noon the entrance of Table Bay bore east three leagues. At the distance of about eight leagues from the land, the Supply being ordered for the sternmost of the convoy, Lieutenant Ball took that opportunity of sounding; and at the distance before mentioned he had 115 fathoms, over a black sandy bottom; and at five leagues distance he had 90 fathoms, sand with soft stone.

On the 14th of October, at five in the evening, they anchored, with all the convoy, in Table Bay, Cape of Good Hope, and the next morning saluted the fort with thirteen guns, which was answered by an equal number.

Table bay being the last port at which our navigators could touch for refreshment during their voyage, such articles as they required for present consumption, and for stocking the intended settlement, were applied for in such quantities, as they could find room to receive on board the different ships. Little less than ten days elapsed before they obtained from the

council the necessaries they required in sufficient quantities*.

For the first eight days they had fresh gales from the south south-east, and sometimes at south, which, with a large sea, so much distressed their cattle, that they were afraid they should lose some of them. On the 25th Captain Phillip embarked on board the Supply, to proceed singly in that vessel to the coast of New South Wales, where he expected to arrive a fortnight or three weeks before them, as some of the convoy sailed very heavy. He took with him from the Sirius, Mr. Philip Gidley King, second lieutenant, and Lieutenant Dawes of the marines: several carpenters, sawyers, and smiths, were also put on board the Supply. And as a number of working people would be wanted in erecting buildings, &c. three of the best sailing transports, under the command of Lieutenant Shortland, the agent, were directed to quit the convoy, and proceed as expeditiously as they could to Botany Bay: Major Ross, the lieutenant governor, embarked in one of those transports; the remaining transports and store-ships being left under the care of the Sirius.

The next day, after parting company, the Supply was seen from the mast-head, and the three transports were about seven miles distant; but, the wind shifting to the south-east in the night of the 27th, they stood to the southward, and saw no more of them. On the 16th they saw a quantity of sea-weed, which was supposed to come from the island of St. Paul, as they were now near its meridian, and only sixty leagues from it. Whenever hazy weather was portended, the signal to close was always made, that heavy sailing ships might not run the risk of being separated from the Sirius†.

On the 6th, in the evening, a signal was made for the convoy to close, and to drop into the Sirius's wake, under an easy sail. Though the night was dark, it was clear in the horizon, and they could see two leagues a-head. This night the aurora austreales were very bright, of a beautiful crimson colour, streaked with yellow, orange, and white; these colours continually changing their situations. They continued steering in for the land, and made it on the 8th at three in the afternoon. They stood on without the Mewstone, and steered in for the south cape, which they passed at three miles distance, leaving the rocks Swilly and Eddistone without them. Swilly is a high rock; and the Eddistone has, at a distance, the appearance of a sail: these two rocks are at the opposite ends of a ledge of sunken rocks, on which the sea appeared to break very high.

They had got to the eastward of the south cape when it became dark, and were within five miles of it when it fell calm: soon after a light air sprung up from east north-east, which, with a large westerly swell, hardly gave the ships steerage way. Though their situation created some anxiety, the breeze favoured them, and they had the satisfaction to weather those rocks which seemed inimical to their purpose‡.

On the night of the 8th it blew very strong from north north-east, accompanied with thunder, lightning and rain: on the 10th they had

* A few days before they sailed, having completed their stock of provisions, they embarked on board the Sirius six cows with calf, two bulls, a number of sheep, goats, hogs, and poultry. On board one of the transports were put three mares, as many colts, and a young stallion. A quantity of live stock was also taken on board the store ships. The officers on board the transports, who were to compose the garrison, had each provided themselves with as much live stock as they could find room for, not only to live upon, but eventually with a view of stocking their little farms in the country to which they were going. To effect this, every person in the fleet determined to live almost wholly on salt provisions. Having completed all their business at the Cape, they made preparations for sailing on the 12th of November; and on the 13th they weighed, with the whole convoy, and stood out of the bay.

† On the 1st of January, 1788, they had a heavy gale of wind from north north-west, with violent squalls and hazy weather: the sea was very high and irregular, and broke violently upon some of the ships. Their excessive rolling greatly distressed the cattle, which were now in a weakly state, and their condition much aggravated by their being frequently thrown with much violence off their legs, and exceedingly bruised. The sea now appeared to be covered with luminous spots, resembling lanterns, floating on its surface: the vessels were also attended by many sea-birds; such as albatrosses and gulls; a large black bird was also observed, which, in the motion of its wings, was not unlike a crow; but its neck and wings were longer than those of that bird.

‡ In the morning, at day-light, they bore west south-west three leagues. Here several animals were seen, playing alongside, which were at first supposed to be seals, but they appeared to be different from the animals so called which are met with on the coast of America and Newfoundland; they having a short round head, and these creatures had long heads, and tapered to the nose; they had long whiskers, and frequently rose so high that half the length of the body was out of the water, to enable them to look about them: from these circumstances they were imagined to be of the sea-otter kind.

two violent squalls from the north-west, with lightning, thunder, and rain. At noon on the 19th, they were abreast of Red-point, which is well determined by Captain Cook. About three leagues to the southward of Botany Bay, a range of whitish coloured cliffs appear on the coasts, which extend some distance farther south, and over these cliffs the land is moderately high and level. As soon as they had brought the entrance of the bay to bear north north-west, they brought to, and made the signal for the convoy to pass successively under the Sirius's stern; when they were informed that the entrance of the harbour bore north north-west seven or eight miles; which it was supposed they could not have seen before dark. The next morning being fair, with a south-east wind, they made sail for this opening, and, by signal, ordered the ships into the Sirius's wake. When the bay was perfectly open, they saw the Supply, and the three transports at an anchor; the former having arrived the 18th, and the latter the 19th. At eight in the morning of the 20th, they anchored, with the whole of the convoy, in Botany Bay, in eight fathoms water.

While the ships were sailing in, many of the natives assembled on the south shore, and assumed menacing postures; pointing their spears, and often repeating the words wara, wara. The Supply had not gained more than forty hours of them, and the three transports twenty. Soon after their arrival, the governor was attended by several of the officers to examine the south shore, in order to fix upon a spot for erecting some buildings Very little fresh water could, however, be discovered, and no eligible spot presented itself for their purpose: the natives were found too shy to give them any necessary information. During the time they lay here, they sounded the bay, and found a considerable extent of anchorage in four, five, six, and seven fathoms water, but entirely exposed to easterly winds, and no shelter from those winds could possibly be procured in any part of the anchorage. They anchored on the north shore, off a sandy bay, which seemed to be as good a birth as any which the place afforded; Cape Banks bore east south-east, and Point Solander south south-east*.

Previous orders having been given from Captain Philip to prepare for sea, the signal was made for the transports to get under way on the 26th. Two large ships were perceived this morning in the offing, standing in for the bay, under French colours: these ships had been observed two days before, but as the wind blew fresh from north-west, they could not get in with the land. A boat, with an officer, was sent to assist them in, and about an hour after, a breeze springing up from the south-east, they were safely anchored in the bay. Our navigators then got under way, and with the transports worked out of the bay, and anchored the whole convoy in Port Jackson the same evening.

The two strange ships were found to be the Bussole and Astrolabe, which had sailed from Brest in June 1785, upon discoveries, and were commanded by Mons. de la Perouse. Mons. de l'Angole, who commanded one of these ships when they left France, had been lately murdered, with several other officers, by the natives at the Islands of navigators; though they had, till that unfortunate day, always appeared friendly and inoffensive. This accident happened when their launches were on shore filling water, on the day before their intended departure from those islands. Whilst they were employed in filling their water-casks, confiding in the friendly disposition of the inhabitants, the sailors had been inattentive to the keeping the boats afloat; a misunderstanding happened between the seamen and some of the natives, and a quarrel ensued; and the impossibility of moving the boats, exposed the officers and crews to the rage of the multitude, who attacked them with clubs and showers of stones; and would probably have killed every man among them, had there not been a small boat at hand, which picked up those who had recourse to swimming for the preservation of their lives. Many of the na-

* The day after their arrival, the governor, with two other officers, embarked in three boats, and proceeded along the coast to the northward, intending to reach what Captain Cook has called Broken Bay, hoping to discover a better harbour, as well as a better country; for nothing seemed to recommend Botany Bay as a proper place on which to form an infant settlement. In this examination, a large opening about three leagues and a half to the northward of Cape Banks, was the first that attracted their notice. Though it had rather an unpromising appearance when they entered it, they had not gone far in before they discovered a large branch extending to the southward: into this they went, and found themselves perfectly land locked, with a good depth of water. They proceeded up for two days, carefully surveying every cove, or other place, which they found capable of receiving ships; the country was also particularly noticed, and found infinitely superior to that of Botany Bay. Approving of the eligibility of this situation, the governor determined on fixing his residence here, and returned immediately to the ships.

tives

tives were slain in this affray; and the loss said to be sustained by the ships was supposed to have been fourteen persons killed, including Captain de l'Angle, and some other officers; many others were wounded, and the boats were entirely destroyed. But this statement of the transaction was only collected from loose hints dropped in conversation; as the French navigators did not appear disposed to speak upon that subject, it probably may not be accurate.

SECTION III.

Repeated Interviews with the Natives—Their Weapons, Ornaments, Persons, Manners, and Habitations—Animals—Departure of the Bussole and Astrolabe—A Gold Mine pretended to be discovered—The Fraud detected.

A FEW days after the arrival of Captain Hunter, with the transports in Port Jackson, he set off with a six-oared boat, and a small boat, to take a survey of the harbour. He took with him Mr. Bradley, the first lieutenant, Mr. Keltie, the master, and a young gentleman of the quarter-deck. While they were employed on this service, they had frequent meetings with different parties of the natives. The narrator of the voyage of the Endeavour mentions, that "at Botany Bay they had seen very few of the natives, and that they appeared a very stupid race of people, who were void of curiosity." But in the Voyage to New South Wales, it is declared that they were seen in considerable numbers, "and they appeared to be a very lively inquisitive race; they are a straight, thin, but well-made people, small in their limbs, but very active." They examined the covering of the Europeans with the greatest attention, and expressed the utmost astonishment at the sight of it, considering their apparel as several different skins, and the hat as forming a part of the head. They were much gratified with a few trifles that were given them, and always appeared cheerful and in good humour, dancing, and endeavouring to imitate the words and motions of our navigators.

They were generally armed with a lance, and had a short stick to assist them in throwing it. Their lances are usually about ten feet long; a shell at one end of the throwing stick, is intended for sharpening the point of it, and for various other purposes. It seems possible that a man upon his guard may easily parry, or avoid these lances, though it must certainly be acknowledged that they fly with wonderful velocity.

While they were employed on the survey of the harbour, and going to land in the upper part of it, in order to ascertain a few angles, they were astonished to find the natives much more numerous than they had ever noticed before in any other place: they conjectured, from their numbers, that they might possibly be those who inhabited the coves in the lower part of the harbour, and who, on their arrival, had been so much alarmed at their appearance, that they thought it necessary to retire farther up. They appeared very hostile, and a great many armed men were upon the shore when they approached it, seeming by their motions to indicate vengeance against them if they should rashly presume to land. Finding their numbers still increasing; and their whole number, after leaving one man in each boat, amounted only to ten seamen, and four officers, with only three musquets, they contented themselves with making signs of friendship, and returned to the ship.

About two days after they appeared again in the same place, more completely armed for such an interview. They saw not so many of the natives as they had done before, though it is probable they were in the wood at no great distance; but having occasion to put on shore to cook some provisions for the boats' crew, a projecting point of land was chosen for that purpose, which the party could have defended against some hundreds of such people. Hearing some of the natives at an inconsiderable distance on the opposite shore, they called to them, and invited them, by a display of trifling presents, to come over to them, the distance not exceeding one hundred yards across. Shortly after, seven men embarked in canoes: they landed and advanced towards the Europeans without their lances. Their Captain then approached them, holding up both his hands,

to convince them that he was unarmed: two officers also advanced in the same manner. They met them and shook hands; they were alarmed at beholding five marines, who were under arms near the boats; but they were ordered to ground their arms and stay by them. The natives then cheerfully seated themselves among the navigators by their fire, who invited them to partake of the repast, but they did not relish any of the food.

The captain was one day on shore, in another part of the harbour, cultivating friendship with a party of natives, when their numbers rapidly encreased to about ninety men, all armed with a lance and a throwing stick, and many with the addition of a shield. On examining the shields, it appeared that some of them had been pierced quite through in several places: they also set up another shield at a small distance, and threw a spear at it which did not go through. One of the gentlemen then pulled out a pistol from his pocket loaded with ball, and fired through the thickest part of the shield, which astonished them exceedingly. The natives were very noisy, but did not seem disposed to be quarrelsome; several little presents were given them, which were gladly received, but, like the children, they were only pleased for the moment, for they were often found dispersed carelessly upon the beach.

While our navigators were engaged with this party, a number of women were observed, peeping from their concealments in the woods, but would not venture to gratify their curiosity by coming among them. It was intimated to the men, that if the women would come forward, some presents would be made them. They desired to be the bearers of such presents to the women; but the trinkets were peremptorily refused, unless they came in person to receive them. At length an elderly man, who seemed invested with the principal authority, directed the women to advance, which they did immediately, and with all the good humour imaginable: and while the Europeans were decorating their heads with beads, linen rags, and some other trifles, they laughed immoderately, though at the same time trembling with the apprehension of danger*.

The remarkable softness of the rocks which encompass the sea coast here, is providentially rendered salutary. Whenever rocks are seen in this country, as well in the interior parts as on the shore, they are all found to be of the soft sandy kind, and contain plenty of such cavities or hollows.

In the woods, where the country is not very rocky, a piece of the bark of a tree is often observed, bent in the middle, and set upon the ends,

* The women in general are not quite so thin as the men, though smaller limbed. When they were ordered to approach the navigators, about twenty men, who had not before made their appearance, sallied from the wood, equipped with lance and shield: they were painted with streaks of red and white all over the face and body, to give them a terrific appearance: some of them were painted with a tolerable degree of taste; others had circles of white round their eyes, and several had a horizontal streak across the forehead. The bodies of the men are much scarified, particularly on their breasts and shoulders: these scarifications are not in any regular form, but they are considerably raised above the skin, and are certainly considered as ornamental. The men, thus armed and decorated, drew themselves up in a line upon the beach, each having a green bough in his hand, as a symbol of friendship. Their disposition was as regular as that of any well disciplined troops could have been; and this party seemed wholly devoted to the service of the women, whenever any insult should be offered them. Two very stout armed men were also placed upon a rock, not far from where the boat lay, as centinels. After a visit of about four hours this interview terminated, both parties appearing to be well satisfied with what had passed.

The general stature of the men, is from about five feet six inches, to five feet nine inches: they are thin, straight, and proportionably made, are very active, and walk erect. The women are not so tall, or thin, but they are, in general, well made, their colour is a rusty black, resembling that of soot; but, some of the women are almost as white as a mulatto. Some few of the natives, of both sexes, have tolerably good features; but they have generally broad noses, large wide mouths, and thick lips. Their countenance altogether is far from prepossessing; and they are filthy in the extreme: they never clean their skin, but delight in smearing it with the fat of such animals as they destroy, and afterwards heighten it with mud or dirt. They are never washed, but when accident, or want of food obliges them to go into the water. Many of the men wear a piece of wood or bone, forced through the septum of the nose, which widens the nostril, and greatly spreads the lower part. Most of them had parted with the two foremost teeth on the right side of the upper jaw; and many of the women with the two lower joints of the little finger of the left hand. They have good teeth in general. Their hair is short, strong, and curly; and, having no method of cleaning or combing it, it always appears matted and filthy. The men wear their beards, which are short and curly. The men, women, and children, go entirely naked, and seemed to have no fixed place of residence, taking their rest wherever night overtakes them: sometimes they repose in such cavities in the rocks on the sea-shore which are capable of defending them from the rain, and not unfrequently make a good fire in them before they take absolute possession.

with

with a piece set up against that end on which the wind blows. This hut supplies the place of a habitation, and will contain a whole family. These bark huts, (if they deserve that appellation) are intended for those who are employed in hunting the kangaroo, opossum, or any other animals which are to be found in the woods. As most of the large trees are hollow, and rotten at the heart, the opossum, kangaroo rat, squirrel, and other creatures when they are pursued, usually run into the hollow of a tree. In order, therefore, to make sure of them, when they find them in the tree, one man easily climbs even the tallest tree, by means of notches made at convenient distances: when he is arrived at the top, or where an outlet may be found for the animal, he remains there with a stick in his hand while another person below applies fire to the lower opening: the creature is now compelled to endeavour to make his escape, either upwards or downwards, but whichever choice he make, death is almost inevitable.

Our Europeans were induced to believe, that the natives associate in tribes of many families together; and it now appeared that they have no fixed residence, and that the tribe take its name from the place of their general abode; for though the different families take different routs in search of food, they can be speedily assembled in case of any dispute with a neighbouring tribe. These people are not remarkable for their bravery, except when they are influenced by passion, and then they act, as all savages do, like madmen. In all their quarrels, however, they generally act under the tuition of a chief.

All the human race, which were observed here, appear to exist chiefly on what the sea affords, and consequently the sea-coast is fuller of inhabitants than the interior part of the country. The men fish with a spear, or fish-gig, in the use of which they seem extremely dexterous. Our navigators relate that they have sometimes, in fine weather, seen a man lying across a canoe, with his face in the water, and his fish-gig immersed, ready for darting: lying motionless in this manner, and having his face a little under the surface, he can distinctly observe the fish; which he could not do if his eyes were above, as the tremulous motion of the surface, occasioned by every light air of wind, would mislead his sight: in this mode they strike at the fish with so much certainty, that they seldom miss their aim. The women are generally employed in the canoes, with lines and hooks. Their lines seem to be manufactured from the bark of various trees. Their hooks are usually made from the mother of pearl of different shells, or the talons of birds. The men also dive for shell-fish, which they take from the rocks under water. Whatever they procure they throw on shore, where a person attends to receive it, and has a fire ready kindled for cooking. They had no other method of dressing their food than that of broiling, having not the least conception of boiling*.

The animal called the kangaroo, described in the voyage of the Endeavour, were found in great numbers: one of these was lately shot, which weighed 140 pounds; its tail was forty inches long, and 17 in circumference at the root: the flesh of it was thought as good as mutton. This animal has wonderful strength in its hind quarters, and in his endeavours to escape when surprized, springs from his hind legs, which are remarkably long, and leaps about six or eight

* With respect to religion, it does not appear that they have any object of adoration: neither the sun, moon, nor stars occupy more of their attention than that of other animals. It is certain that they burn their dead: some of the boats' crew, when a survey was taking of Port Jackson, saw, when on shore, on a rising ground near the water-side, what they supposed to be a fresh grave. The earth being removed, a quantity of white ashes was found, which appeared to have been lately deposited there. Among the ashes were found part of a human jaw-bone, and a small piece of the scull; both of which appeared to have been partly consumed by fire, but was not so much injured as to prevent its being perfectly recognized. They put these remains together again, and covered the grave up as before. The earth was not more than six inches under the surface of the ground, but what appeared on the top was raised to the usual height of the graves in England.

In the months of March and April the natives were much less numerous than they had been; but they were not, for that reason, supposed to have retired back into the interior parts of the country; for in all the excursions that had been made inland, very few had been ever seen. Perhaps they were gone farther to the northward, according to custom, as the cold weather approached, to seek a warmer climate by following the sun. In this practice they have another very powerful incitement, as well as the cheering warmth of the sun, which is, that the fish inclines to the northward when the cold weather comes on. This conjecture may account for Captain Cook's having seen so few natives while he lay in Botany Bay, as it was in April or May that he was there.

yards at each bound, but his fore-feet are so very short that they never touch the ground in running. They have astonishing strength in their tail, which assists them greatly when they are attacked. In hunting one of these creatures, as soon as the hound seizes him, he turns, and catching hold with the nails of his fore-paws, he springs upon, and strikes at the dog with the claws of his hind feet, which are wonderfully strong, and tears him in such a manner, that the dog is obliged to be carried home from the severity of his wounds.

The opossum, which is found here in great abundance, differs from the American opossum, and partakes of the kangaroo in the strength of its tail, and the form of its fore-legs, which are extremely short in proportion to the hind ones: like that animal, it has the pouch or false belly, for the protection of its young; and its colour is nearly the same, but the fur is both thicker and finer.

With respect to the feathered tribe, the parrot seems most to prevail: birds are often met with here, with the head, with the head, neck, and bill of a parrot, and with the same variety of beautiful plumage on those parts for which that bird is here distinguished, and a tail and body of a different form and colour. Birds are also seen here with the legs and feet of a parrot, though the head and neck resembled a common sea-gull, and the wings and tail were like those of a hawk.

Besides those of the parrot tribe in this country, there are a very great variety; as the macaw, lorey, cockatoo, and paroquets of different kinds and sizes, and cloathed with the most gaudy plumage. The crow is common here, though it croaks in a manner different from those that are to be found in Europe: hawks of various sizes and colours are numerous here; and here are likewise pigeons and quails: but, among a great variety of smaller, hardly one of them was so accomplished as to have a pleasing note.

Of insects here are as great a variety as of birds, among which are the scorpion, centipede, spider, and ant; the ants are of various sizes, from the smallest known in Europe, to about an inch in length: some are black, others white, and others of a reddish colour; the bite of the latter is attended with a most acute pain for some time after the wound is inflicted. The spider spins its web in the woods between trees, and generally spins them so remarkably strong, that it requires considerable force to break them. Upon bushes, where the web has been found hanging in clusters, a thin shell is seen, like that wherein the silkworm prepares its silk; and, on opening it, a quantity of silk has been found within, in which a spider was also wrapped up.

Among the reptiles, there are snakes from the smallest size known in England, to the length of about eleven feet: they are also as thick as a man's wrist. Lizards, of different sizes, are also plenty.

The natives are sometimes accompanied by dogs, which appear to be domesticated like those of Europe. They are of the wolf kind, and of a reddish colour.

Many beautiful plants and flowers are to be found in this country, which may probably afford hereafter much entertainment to the curious in the science of botany. Our Europeans sometimes met with parsley, sorrel, and spinach, but not in sufficient quantities to afford relief to those who are afflicted with scorbutic complaints.

Our navigators were now in the middle of a wood, in which trees abounded, from the size of a man's arm, to twenty-eight feet in circumference; but they were so crooked, rent, or rotten, that hardly one in a dozen could be found serviceable; and it was an additional misfortune, that not a piece of timber had been then found that would float in water. The wood was so remarkably heavy, that when they found it necessary to cut down a large tree, in order to clear a certain piece of ground, it was found extremely troublesome to dispose of it, or remove it from place to place.

When our navigators arrived in this country, at nearly the end of January, in 1788, the weather was fine, though warm, and the sea and land breezes pretty regular. In February the air was sultry, with lightning, thunder, and heavy rain: this kind of weather continued about a fortnight, with a few short intervals of fair weather; a flash of lightning one night struck a tree by which a centinel stood, who received great injury; the tree was greatly rent, and some pigs and sheep in a pen at the foot of it, were all killed.

About the middle of the month, Lieutenant King of the Sirius, a master's mate, and a surgeon's mate, with four other persons from the ship, with a few men and women convicts embarked

barked on board the Supply, and she sailed with them for Norfolk Island. In their passage they fell in with a small island, which had not before been discovered; it lies in latitude 31° 36′ south: the lieutenant named it Lord Howe's Island. After having landed a party intended to remain on Norfolk Island, with their provisions and stores, Mr. Ball, in his return to Port Jackson, called to examine it more particularly. He found anchorage on the west side of it, but the bottom was coral rock. Landing, with his boat, within a reef, he caught a number of excellent turtle upon a sandy beach. A great variety of birds were also found on the island, which were so little accustomed to be disturbed, that the seamen were enabled to knock down as many as they wanted of them with their sticks.

In March the weather was variable: the marines were this month ordered to clear ground, and begin to build huts and barracks for the winter: the convicts were also directed to employ certain hours in the same necessary business for themselves.

The editor then gives an account of the weather from March to December inclusive; and returns back as far as the beginning of March, at which time, as the two French ships already mentioned were preparing to leave the coast, their commander was determined to visit Mons. de la Perouse before his departure. He therefore sailed round to Botany Bay, in the Sirius's long-boat, accompanied by a few officers. They remained two days on board the Bussole, where they were hospitably and politely entertained. The Bussole and Astrolabe sailed from Botany Bay the 11th of March.

In the neighbourhood of Sydney Cove, which is that part of this harbour in which Governor Phillip has fixed his residence, there are some spots of tolerably good land, but they are only of small extent: exclusive of these spots, the soil is rather steril, and full of stones; but towards the head of the harbour, a considerable extent of tolerable land presents itself, which may be cultivated without waiting for its being cleared of wood, as the trees stand wide of each other, and have no underwood. The woods on the spot now mentioned, resemble those on a deer-park, as much as if they had really been intended for such a purpose; but the soil seems sandy and shallow, and will require much manure to improve it. The grass on it is about three feet high, very close and thick.

On the 6th of May, three of the transports, which were chartered by the East-India Company to load tea at China, sailed from this port; the Supply armed tender also sailed for Lord Howe Island.

The carpenter of the Sirius, and his crew, had been regularly employed on shore since their arrival in this country, assisting in the erection of store-houses and other buildings. The ship's company were also variously occupied out of the ship upon the business of the settlement.

The scurvy having lately appeared more among the seamen, marines, and convicts, than when they were on board the ships, created some surprize, as they had enjoyed the advantage of being much upon the land, and of eating many vegetable productions; but the gentlemen of the faculty say this is no uncommon thing, when people are obliged to continue the same salt diet. About the middle of this month a convalescent, who had been sent from the hospital to gather wild spinach, or other plants, was murdered by two of the natives; one of them escaped, but was wounded: some of his cloaths being found, which were bloody, and had been pierced by a spear, it was supposed he had been killed.

Whether any of the natives of this country are cannibals, is a subject on which our navigators could not venture to speak positively; but the following circumstance may incline persons to believe, that, if the natives in general do not eat human flesh, that such a horrid custom is sometimes practised. One of the officers was present when two native children were interrogated respecting the quarrels of their countrymen: being asked how the chiefs disposed of those they killed, they mentioned some who burned and buried the slain, but they particularly named one who ate those he killed*.

* Shortly after two convicts, who had been employed a little distance up the harbour, in cutting rushes for thatching, were found murdered by the natives. The officer, who went to look after those unfortunate men, and observe what business they had done, after hailing for some time, without receiving any reply, dispatched his boat's crew upon the search, and at length perceived the two men, lying in different places, both dead; the brains of one having been beat out with a club or stone, and the other had many wounds, in one of which a part of a spear remained. Their tent, provisions, and cloaths remained, but most of the tools had been taken away.

The 4th of June being the birth-day of his Majesty, it was celebrated with every possible demonstration of loyalty *.

Large fires were often seen in this season on some of the hills; but for what purpose our Europeans could not for a long time conjecture. Several of the officers, observing one of these large fires on a hill at no considerable distance, they agreed to visit it, expecting they might probably be gratified with some funeral ceremony: taking their guns, they advanced towards the solemn scene, but, on their arrival, not a person was to be seen; still three or four acres of ground were perfectly in a blaze. They were then of opinion that these fires were made for the purpose of clearing the ground of the shrubs and underwood, that they might the more easily get at those roots, which constitute the chief of their subsistence during the winter. They usually took the advantage of windy weather for making such fires, that they may be spread the more extensively.

Proper officers were now directed by the governor, to ascertain, as near as possible, the number of canoes and natives within the harbour of Port Jackson: in the lower, or north part of the harbour, a considerable number of canoes were employed in catching fish: but, seeing they were observed, they quitted their work and fled, a circumstance which convinced our navigators that the persons thus employed were women, as they had always shewn a desire of avoiding them. The Europeans made every signal of friendship they could devise to gain the confidence of these females, but to no purpose: though there were many men upon the shore, who spoke to them in their usual familiar manner, and earnestly invited them to come on shore. Whilst the party were thus in conversation with them, some of them ventured within about twenty yards of the shore, and lying upon their oars, they observed one of the savages place his lance upon the throwing-stick, not supposing he had any idea of directing it among them, after having received so friendly an invitation to land; but they were now convinced that they only wanted them within their reach, as they did not appear to have any fire-arms. But, when they thought they could throw the lance with effect, it was discharged, and went about six feet over the heads of the Europeans. The commander instantly snatched up his gun, which he was resolved to discharge among them, but it missed fire: Mr. Johnston then discharged his into the bushes to which they repaired for shelter; but as it was only loaded with small shot, it could hardly have done any very serious injury. What could have been their provocation to engage in so treacherous a business! for nothing hostile or mischievous appeared in the conduct of our navigators.

On a comparison of the accounts, taken according to the directions of the governor, it appeared that they had seen 67 canoes, 94 men, 34 women, and 9 children; which is far from being an accurate account of the numbers; for more persons had been afterwards seen at one time, in only one part of the harbour.

On the 27th the Supply tender arrived from Norfolk Island, where she had been with stores and provisions for that settlement; she brought the unpleasant intelligence of the loss of Mr. James Cunningham, and four others, who were drowned in the surf, the boat being overset in landing the stores from the Supply †.

SECT.

* In July our scorbutic patients were rather worse: the want of a little fresh food for the sick was much to be lamented, and fish were then remarkably scarce; and many of the natives were almost starving on account of that scarcity. They eagerly watched every opportunity of providing any kind of aliment for their present subsistence. If a bird was shot, and given to them, they instantly plucked off its feathers, put it on the fire without taking out the intestines, and ate the whole. Of small birds, they even devoured the bones and feathers.

† A report prevailed in the settlement that one Dailey, a convict, had discovered a piece of ground, in which a quantity of yellow ore was perceived, which, on inspection, appeared to have a certain proportion of gold in it. The governor happened to be then absent on a short excursion into the country; and the report being made to the lieutenant-governor, he naturally examined the man who had made the discovery, and had related the story with much plausibility. Dailey being interrogated respecting the place, refused to give any explicit account of it till the return of the governor, to whom he would explain the particulars of the discovery, on receiving a reasonable compensation for so valuable an acquisition. Some ships being then on the point of sailing, the reward he expected was his own, and a certain woman convict's enlargement, and a passage in one of the ships to England: a particular sum of money was also required. The lieutenant-governor declared, that, as he had already mentioned the discovery, he should also disclose

SECTION IV.

The Sirius leaves Port Jackson—Sails for the Cape of Good Hope—Falls in with large Islands of Ice—Casts anchor at Robin's Island.

IN the month of September Governor Phillip expressed his intention to dispatch the Sirius very soon to the Cape of Good Hope, to purchase such a quantity of provisions as she might be capable of taking on board. To lighten her as much as possible, he desired the commander of her to land eight or ten of her guns and carriages, with any other articles which the ship could spare for the time she might be absent, for the purpose of making room. In consequence of which eight guns, twenty half barrels of powder, a spare anchor, and several other particulars, were put on shore at Sydney Cove.

On the 30th of September, the captain received his final orders from the governor, and on the first of October unmoored the ship: the governor and his family dined on board, and the wind being easterly, they got under weigh and worked down to the lower anchorage, where they came to, intending to take advantage of the land wind in the morning, to put to sea. The Golden Grove store-ship also anchored below, having provisions and stores on board for Norfolk Island, with a number of men and women convicts on board; together with six marines, and three seamen from the Sirius, In the evening the governor and his party took their leave.

They were no sooner clear of the harbour than the wind veered to the southward, and began to blow strong, with thick hazy weather; the carpenter now reported, that, though the ship had hitherto been tight, it now made water. When this voyage, upon which the captain had now entered, was the subject of conversation, in company with the governor, he always spoke in favour of the passage round Van Diemen's land, and to the westward; but when he expressed a wish to be directed by what route he should endeavonr to perform the voyage, he declined that, alledging that he should be governed by circumstances. After duly considering this business, and the advantages and disadvantages attendant on either choice, and judging from the experience of those who had before made the eastern passage, the commander determined to pass to the southward of New Zealand, and round Cape Horn.

They stood off to the eastward, determined as expeditiously as possible to get an offing of fifty or sixty leagues: the wind continued southward, with hazy and squally weather, till the 5th, when it shifted to south-south-east. On the 9th they were almost as far to the southward as Van Diemen's Land, or South Cape of New Holland; and the wind seeming settled in the south-west quarter they steered a course for the South Cape of New Zealand; on the 12th they passed that cape, and met with a vast number of birds of

close what part of the country it was in, or he might expect punishment for daring to impose on those officers to whom he had related this business. Induced by the fear of punishment, he proposed to the lieutenant-governor, that an officer should be sent down the harbour with him, for the mine, which he said was in the lower part of the harbour, and he would shew the place to the officer. A corporal, and two or three privates, were then sent under the command of an officer, to attend him to the place he pointed out; they landed as the convict directed, who declared the walk would be but short. They entered the wood in their way to the mine; and when they were among the bushes, Dailey craved permission to retire a few moments on some necessary occasion. This indulgence having been granted, the officer continued their several hours without seeing their informant again, who immediately pushed off for the camp by land, as he knew the road extremely well, and had cunning enough to persuade the officer to send the boat away as soon as they had landed. The convict arrived in camp pretty early in the afternoon, and informed the lieutenant-governor that he had left the officer in full possession of the gold mine. He then took a few things out of his own tent, and disappeared. The party, after searching through the woods for the cheat, quitted their stations and marched round to the camp, where they arrived at dusk, tired and chagrined at the trick the villain had played them. The want of provision soon afterwards induced him to make his appearance, and a severe punishment was the necessary consequence of this imposition. Still, however, he insisted on having made the discovery, and that he quitted the officer that he might give information to the governor himself. When the governor returned, another officer was sent with him on this business, who declared he would shoot him if he attempted to run three yards from him: the cheat was then so thoroughly intimidated, that he acknowledged he knew of no gold mine: he further confessed that he had filed down part of a yellow metal buckle, mixed with it some gold filed off a guinea, and had blended the whole with some earth. The inventor, however, received an adequate punishment for his ingenuity.

various

various kinds, chiefly aquatic, such as albatrosses, divers, peterels, pentada birds, and a variety of gulls, some of which were very large, and of a mouse colour; and another smaller sort, with a white body, dark wings, and the head of a light blue colour.

About the middle of October they frequently heard the divers in the night, and often saw them in the day. It was astonishing how these birds could get from or to the land, at such an immense distance from it as from eight hundred to a thousand miles; for they certainly lay their eggs and hatch them on shore.

On the 2d of November, by lunar observations, they were in longitude 210° 27′ east. From the 7th till the 17th, the weather was very variable, and the wind unsettled. On the 18th the wind shifted to west, with a moderate breeze*.

For several days before they made the land, and every day afterthey left it, till the 7th, they fell in with a great many very high ice-islands; and saw plenty of divers and seals. From the 27th of November till the 13th of December, they had the wind constantly in the north-east quarter, which is said to be uncommon near Cape Horn for so long a time; as ships bound into the south sea often find it rather tedious getting to the westward round the cape†.

On the 16th the wind shifted suddenly to the north-west quarter and blue a steady gale. On the 19th it blew very strong from west-north-west, with hazy weather, and frequent showers of rain; which again changed the wind to the south-west quarter, and the weather became fair and pleasant. They now appeared to have got out from among the ice-islands, with which part of this ocean seems, at this season of the year, to be overspread. Our navigators had, in the whole, been twenty-eight days among the ice, and sailed a distance of eight hundred leagues. They had passed through a lane, or street, if it may be so called, of ice-islands the whole of that distance. They were, in general, from the size of a country church, to the magnitude of one, two, or three miles in circumference, and of a proportionable height. At this season of the year, however, in such high latitudes, the nights are so very short, that hardly an hour can be called dark; or it would be attended with great danger to run in the night, the ice-islands were so very numerous.

Our navigators carried on strong westerly winds with them, which compensated for the northerly and easterly gales which detained them so long between Cape Horn and South Georgia; and it was exceedingly fortunate that the winds were so favourable, as the ship's company were now strongly attacked by the scurvy.

Having, on the 25th of December, arrived on the meridian of Greenwich, from which they had sailed in an easterly direction, and completed 360° of east longitude, and consequently gained twenty-four hours, their commander dropt 360°, and repeated Thursday 25th of December. On the 30th died John Shine, a seamen; and on the 31st died Joseph Caldwell, a seaman; both taken off by the scurvy. At day-light they saw the land; the nearest was distant about four leagues, and the Table Mountain bore south by east about ten leagues. The wind coming from the sea, they stood along shore to the southward, and in the afternoon they were a-breast of Robin's Island. The weakly condition of that part

* They frequently fell in with high islands of ice: on the 24th they had fresh gales, with hazy cold weather; they met ice-islands so frequently, that they were obliged to alter their course to avoid them. In the evening of the 26th, they set the extremes of Terra del Fuego from north by west, to west north-west, distant about ten leagues. They continued their course north-east, and expressed their conviction, that there is no island so situated from Cape Horn as this Diego Ramirez is said to be.

† The ship's company now manifested strong symptoms of the scurvy, which was the more distressing as they had nothing, with which they could hope to check its progress, except a little essence of malt, which they continued to administer. This appearance of the scurvy among the company of the Sirius could not excite surprise, as it was more extraordinary that it had not shewn itself sooner, when it was considered how they had lived since they had left the cape outward bound; for during that time, which was upwards of thirteen months, they had not tasted a morsel of fresh provisions, nor touched a single blade of vegetables.

They now began to be subject to hazy moist weather, with very frequent fogs; the weather was extremely cold, and mountainous islands of ice were beheld in every quarter: for fourteen days after getting to the eastward of Cape Horn, they were beating to the north-east, anxious to proceed so far to the northward as to feel the influence of the summer sun, hoping their scorbutic patients might obtain some relief from it. They observed many large whales, going in droves of from five to twenty-five, spouting within a cable's length of the ship, and sometimes nearer. On the 13th, in the morning, they passed one of the largest ice-islands the had seen, which they supposed to be three miles in length, and the perpendicular height about 350 feet.

of the ship's company, who were capable of doing duty upon deck, and the dejected state of many others, induced the captain to endeavour to bring the ship to an anchor before night; as the idea of being in port exhilirates the spirits of those who are reduced low by the scurvy; which was the case with many of their ship's company. After striving in vain to weather the reef off the south end of the island, the captain bore away, and ran round the north end, and anchored within, in nine fathoms water.

SECTION V.

Quit Robin's Island, and anchor in Table Bay—The Sick are sent on Shore—The Alexander Transport arrives—Provisions obtained for the Settlement at Port Jackson—Departure of the Sirius—A violent Tempest—Arrive at Port Jackson.

WHEN the ship was anchored, a boat was sent with the first lieutenant on shore to the island, to procure such intelligence from Europe, as the commanding officer was able to communicate. Our commander also wished to be informed whether Governor Van de Graef was still at the Cape, and if Colonel Gordon continued commander in chief of the troops in garrison there. The lieutenant was very politely received by the commanding officer on shore, who gave him every information in his power, but unfortunately he knew not a word of the English language, and the other was equally ignorant of the Dutch. It was observed, however, that he wore a large orange cockade in his hat; and though he could not converse, he informed the officer, by expressions of half English and Dutch, that the English and Dutch were friends, and that the French had no connection with Holland. On hearing what a long voyage they had come, the officer generously sent a basket of such fruit as his garden afforded, which was immediately divided among the sick.

In the morning of the 2d of January, with a fine breeze, they got under way, sailed up to Table Bay, and anchored there in seven and a half fathoms. The ship being secured, the commander sent an officer to the governor, to inform him of the business he was come upon; who very politely assured him that great abundance of every thing was to be had, and that he had only to signify in writing the quantity of each article that was wanted, and the necessary directions would be immediately given. His excellency also condescended to inform him, that he should in a few days send a ship for Amsterdam; and that, if he had any dispatches to forward, and would send them to his house, they should be safely delivered into the custody of the British ambassador at the Hague.

On their arrival here, the commander directed that quarters should be provided for the sick, which was accordingly done, and forty invalids were landed, under the care of Mr. Worgan, the surgeon of the ship. When they arrived in this bay, they had just twelve men in each watch, and half that number, from scorbutic contractions, were unable to go aloft.

On the 5th a Dutch India ship arrived here from Rio de Janeiro: by this ship information was received of the arrival at that place of two vessels from the east coast of New Holland; that they arrived singly, and in great distress, from sickness, and the death of many of their people. From a variety of circumstances no doubt could be entertained that one of these ships was the Prince of Wales, being one of their transports, and the other was the Borrowdale store-ship. The officers of this India ship also observed, that they were so weak, that had they not been boarded by boats without the harbour, they could not have brought their vessels into safety. These ships had probably parted company with Lieutenant Shortland, soon after sailing from Port Jackson, and had then determined to proceed to the eastward by Cape Horn.

On the 19th a Dutch frigate arrived here from Batavia, from which information was received that Lieutenant Shortland had arrived at that port, with a single ship, in the beginning of December,

cember, in a very distressed condition; that he had buried the greatest part of the ship's company, and was assisted by the company of the above frigate to secure his vessel, which he could not have done without assistance; and that he had been obliged, some time before his arrival, to sink the other vessel that was in company with him, for the purpose of manning one out of the two ships' companies, or he could not have reached Batavia with either: for, when he arrived there, only four men, out of the two crews, were capable of standing on the deck.

On the 18th of February Mr. Shortland arrived in the Alexander transport, much to the satisfaction of our commander, as he was preparing to sail the following day. He was going off from the shore, when he perceived the ship coming round Green Point: he rowed instantly on board, and his people were so rejoiced to see their old friends in Table Bay, that they cheered them as they came alongside. He now received from Mr. Shortland a confirmation of the intelligence he had collected from the officers of the Dutch frigate.

On 20th of February our commander sailed from Table Bay, having first taken on board twelve months' provisions for the ship's company, and six months flour for the whole settlement, with various stores for the colony, &c. While they lay at Table Bay, many civilities, and marks of attention were received from Governor Van de Graef, Colonel Gordon, and other officers of this settlement.

After they quitted the Cape of Good Hope, they had, for three weeks, strong gales from the southward, with squally weather. On the 20th of March, having sprung the trussle-trees of the main-top-mast, they struck and unrigged them, and fitted new ones: on the 22d they had a very heavy gale of wind, and a prodigious high broken sea; it continued to blow very hard all night, and they shipped much water, but the ship having a flush deck, no water could lay on it, and the only danger was that of filling the boats: to prevent which, after the gale, they were ordered to be turned bottom up. On the 16th of April they were in latitude 44° 45′ south, and in longitude 135° 30′ east. At night they observed the sea spread over with luminous spots, resembling lanthorns floating on its surface. On the 20th they had a strong gale from the west-north-west, which moderated in the night, and veered to the westward, with a light air at south-west, and encouraged them to make all the sail possible; but they had no sooner got every thing set, than the wind veered round to the southward, and began to blow; in a few hours it increased to a violent gale: as they drew near the meridian of the south cape, the gale increased to an absolute tempest, with thick hazy weather, and a most astonishing high sea. At day-light on the 21st, the fore, main, and mizzen stay-sails were all split by the violence of the wind; which reduced them to the reefed fore-sail and balanced mizzen. They now found themselves embayed, the gale not in the least likely to abate, and the sea running mountains high, with very thick weather, a long dark night coming on, and an unknown coast close under their lee; nothing remained to be done but to carry every yard of canvass the ship was capable of bearing, and for every person on board to constantly keep the deck, and look out attentively under the lee for the land. They knew not what bay, or part of the coast they were upon, nor what ledges of rocks might be detached some distance from the shore; and they had every moment reason to apprehend that the next night, by the ship's striking, would launch the whole of them into eternity. Their situation was such that not a man of them could have escaped to relate the particulars of the calamity. Whatever might have been the private feelings of each individual, the orders were executed with the greatest alacrity and precision. Fortunately, at this instant, the wind favoured them near two points, and the ship lay better up upon this tack, than the course on the other had promised: still, however, the weather was so thick, the sea so high, and the gale so strong, and so dead upon the shore, that little hope remained of their weathering the land. At two in the afternoon, as the commander was looking from the quarter-deck very anxiously to leeward, he observed the looming of a very steep point of rocky land, and the sea foaming with terrible violence against it. Though he did not mention this circumstance, it was that instant discovered by the sailors stationed forward, who called out, "Land close under our lee." He replied, that he had seen it some time, and that it was now upon their beam. The vessel was, at this time, half buried in the sea by the press of sail,

sail, since she was going through it at the rate of four knots. They soon shot past this head, and from the course they had made, they knew it was Tasman's Head, being the eastern point of a bay, of which the south cape is the western, which Tasman had named Storm Bay.

After passing Tasman's Head, they kept their wind still, and carried sail, in order, if possible, to weather Maria's Islands, which lay six leagues to the north-east. At eight the next morning they passed to the windward of Maria's Islands, which the haziness of the weather prevented them from seeing till they were upon the lee-quarter. A more wonderful escape than that which they experienced, can hardly be conceived. Every thing which depended upon the crew, was certainly performed, but it would be ingratitude to divine Providence, to attribute their restoration wholly to their best endeavours.

After having weathered Maria's Islands, they continued to stand on with a press of sail to the eastward, anxious to gain an offing from the coast, the ship being very much disabled. All the rails of the head, round-houses, and figure of the head were entirely washed away; and the rails of the bumkins were so weakened as to require to be grapped down to the knee of the head.

As soon as they were to the eastward of Maria's Islands, the wind shifted to south-east, and east-south-east. On the 26th, the wind set in from the northward, and blew fresh, and often attended with the most violent squalls: it continued northerly till the 2d of May, when it inclined to the southward, and afterwards to the eastward. The winds now, after twenty-four hours' calm, inclined again to the southward, and they kept plying to windward with all the sail they could carry. Right off Cape Three Points, at six leagues from the shore, they sounded in seventy-five fathoms, over a bottom of grey sand. On the 8th a light air from the northward, carried them by day-light the next morning in sight of the entrance of Port Jackson; and in the evening of the 9th, they entered between the heads of the harbour, and worked up to Sydney Cove, where they anchored in the evening, after an absence of 219 days; 51 of which they lay in Table Bay, Cape of Good Hope; so that, though they had fairly gone round the world during this voyage, they had only been 168 days in describing the circle. They found in the cove the Supply armed tender.

SECTION VI.

The Small Pox appears among the Natives—Its fatal Effects—A Criminal Court held—Six Marines tried and convicted—Governor Phillip visits Broken Bay—Explores its Inlets—Returns to Por Jackson—Survey of Broken Bay—Two Natives brought to the Settlement, and kindly treated—One of them escapes.

THE ship being secured, the commander went on shore to wait on the governor, whom he found in good health, drinking tea with a few friends; among whom he noticed a man of this country who was decently cloathed, and seemed to be as easy and familiar at the tea-table as any person there; he handled his cup and saucer with as much address as if he had been long accustomed to such entertainment. This man was forcibly taken from his friends by Lieutenant Ball of the Supply, and Lieutenant Johnson of the marines, who were dispatched down the harbour, with two boats for that purpose; the governor having found that no encouragement would induce them to visit the settlement of their own accord, he had therefore resolved upon this method to get one man into his possession, who, by tender and judicious treatment, might dispose his countrymen to place more confidence in the Europeans. The name of this man was *Ara-ba-noo*, and he was taken by force, as already stated, and in the following manner. After he had been a short time conversing with some of the gentlemen, one of the seamen, who had received previous instructions, threw a rope round his neck, and dragged him precipitately to the boat: his cries drew a number of his friends into the skirts of the wood, from whence they threw many lances, but without effect. The terror this poor wretch endured, can better be

be conceived than expressed, he expected to have been immediately murdered; but, when the officers came into the boat, they removed the rope from his neck to his leg, and treated him with so much tenderness that he became more cheerful. For some time after his arrival at the governor's house, he was ornamented with an iron shackle on one of his legs, to prevent his effecting his escape. This he was taught to consider as a decoration, and bestowed on him as a compliment. He soon, however, became reconciled to his situation, from the indulgent attention of every person about him; and intimating some uneasiness from the iron, it was taken off, and he was permitted to go where he pleased. He soon acquired the names of the gentlemen who took notice of him. At length he procured that of the commander, which he never forgot, but expressed his desire to come on board his *nowee;* an expression signifying a boat or vessel. The day after the captain came in, the governor and his family did him the honour to dine on board, when he was also favoured with the company of *Ara-ba-noo,* whom he found to be a very sociable good natured well-looking fellow, of about thirty years of age*.

Before the Sirius sailed from Port Jackson, the governor had formed a resolution of sending a detachment of the marines, with a number of convicts, for the purpose of clearing and preparing a track of land at the head of this harbour, in order to sow corn. When they returned from their voyage, great progress appeared to have been made at this farm, which had been named Rose Hill: it much exceeded expectations; the quantity of ground prepared for receiving the grain at the proper time, was very considerable; many huts were built, the gardens were in tolerable order, and a prospect presented itself of a very extensive farm in due time; and, if there were people enough to labour, they knew it might be carried twenty miles to the westward; and every foot of the ground appeared as good as that on which they were now employed in cultivating. But though the land was tolerable, they found an insurmountable difficulty in establishing an extensive farm, chiefly on account of the deficiency of water. At Rose-Hill, in dry-seasons, they had but very little water, and what they had was very indifferent. Several attempts have been made by the gentlemen here, who had little farms in the neighbourhood of Sydney Cove, to raise grain of different kinds for feeding pigs, goats, or poultry; but, though the corn shot up very quickly, it no sooner formed into ear, than the rats, or other vermin, destroyed the whole of their prospect: it is necessary to remark, however, that even such of the corn as had escaped the vermin, turned out most miserable empty straws.

On the 6th of June the captain was engaged in a party with the governor, on a visit to Broken Bay, to examine some part of that harbour which had not been noticed in his last visit to that place: two boats were dispatched under the care of Mr. Keltie, master of the Sirius, with provisions, &c. And the party, which consisted of the Governor, the Judge advocate, Captain Johnson of the marines, Mr. White, principal surgeon of the settlement, and some others, with two men, all armed with musquets, &c. They landed on the north part of Port Jackson, and proceeded along the coast to the northward; in the course of the march they had several long sandy beaches to cross, which were found very fatiguing: when they ascended the hills, they had frequently thick woods to pass through; but as they often met with paths, which the natives had trod down, they were not only more commodious for passing, but were found advantageous, as they frequently conducted them to the spots they were searching for. They left Port

* Expressing his surprize at the governors, that he had not seen a single native on the shore, or a canoe as they came up to the ship, he was informed that the small-pox had made its appearance, a few months ago, among these wretched creatures, and that it was truly shocking to visit the coves of this harbour, formerly so much frequented by the natives; where, in the caves of the rocks, which afforded shelter to whole families in bad weather, nothing was now to be seen but men, women, and children, lying dead. It seems probable, from variety of circumstances, that these people were hitherto unacquainted with this disease, and were consequently strangers to any method of treating it. It may therefore be supposed, that when any of them are taken ill, and the malady assumes the appearance of the small-pox, they are instantly deserted by their friends, and left to perish for want of care and sustenance. Five or six days after our commander's arrival, poor Araba-noo was seized with the small-pox, and though every possible means were used for his recovery, he lived only till the crisis of his disease. The loss of this man was much lamented by every person in the settlement.

Many people had been lost in the woods, and had either been killed by the natives, or perished there. Six marines had been tried by a criminal court, and found guilty of robbing the public stores: they were sentenced to death, and executed accordingly.

Jackson at six in the morning, and arrived at the south branch of Broken Bay, at three in the afternoon, after a warm and tedious journey; loaded as they were with provisions for several days, water, and ammunition. Arriving at the water side, they found their boats, which had left Port Jackson at midnight, were safely arrived. It being now too late in the day to enter upon the business they had come upon, they pitched their tents, and hauled the seine for fish. Having some success with the seine, they sat down to regale themselves on fish and salt beef; and rested the remainder of the day. In the course of these excursions, the boats' crews discovered, this afternoon, a native woman, endeavouring to conceal herself from their sight, in the long grass, which was then extremely wet, and consequently uncomfortable to a poor naked creature. She had, before the arrival of the boats at this beach, been employed, with some of her friends. in fishing for their daily food; but, being alarmed, they all made their escape, except this miserable girl, who had just recovered from the small pox, and was extremely weak, having a swelling in one of her knees, and being incapable of moving to any considerable distance. She therefore crept off as well as she could, and concealed herself among the grass, within twenty yards of the spot where they had erected their tents. She was discovered by a person who had shot at a hawk from a tree right over her. She was so terrified at the report of the musquet, that she screamed out, and discovered herself. When the governor went to take a view of this unhappy girl, she appeared to be about seventeen or eighteen years of age, and had covered her naked and debilitated body, with grass, as before expressed. She was much frightened on their approaching her, wept piteously, and made dreadful lamentations. They endeavoured to console her as much as they could, and with the assistance of a few expressions, collected from poor Ara-ba-noo when he was living, she seemed a little comforted. The sailors were ordered to bring her some fire, and they pulled grass, dried it carefully, and spread round her to keep her warm. Hawks, crows, and gulls were shot and broiled, of which she partook, as well as of some fish. They afterwards gave her some water, of which she seemed to be very much in want. After their utmost endeavours to procure a comfortable night's repose, they visited her early the next morning, when they found her much recovered of her fears, frequently calling aloud to her friends, who had left her, and who they knew could be at no great distance from her. All her endeavours, however, to bring them back, were ineffectual, while the party remained with her; but they had no sooner quitted the beach, than they saw some of them come out of the wood; and there being two canoes on the shore belonging to this party, they launched one into the water, and went away*.

After giving her more fish, and placing a quantity of fire-wood and water within her reach, they took their leave. They embarked in the boats, and sailed across the bay to the north branch. They proceeded but a small distance, before they landed on the west shore and refreshed themselves; after this they advanced till they came to its head, which was very narrow, shallow, full of shoals, and ended in a large bason. When they returned from this branch, they pitched their tents on the west shore for the night, and early in the morning advanced to the

* The following day was employed in going up the south branch, which the governor named Pitt-Water: when much of the day was spent in examining it, they returned to the place where they had passed the preceding night, and encamped on the same spot. Their tents were no sooner up than they repeated their visit to their young female friend, whom they found in a bark hut upon the beach: this was the very place in which she and her friends were enjoying themselves, when the arrival of the boat alarmed them. She was not alone, as before, but had with her a beautiful female infant, about two years of age; and upon their approach (the night being cold and rainy) she was lying with her elbows and knees on the ground, covering the child from their sight with her body. On their speaking to her, she raised herself up, and sat on the ground, with her knees up to her chin, making the most miserable spectacle in the human form that perhaps ever was beheld: the little infant could not be prevailed on to look up, but lay with its face upon the ground, with one hand covering its eyes. They supplied the woman, as before, with birds, fish, and fuel, and made her bed comfortable: her miserable hut was also sufficiently fortified to keep out the weather. She was now become so reconciled to their frequent visits, convinced that they had only her comfort in view, that when she wanted fish, she would ask for them, and she was immediately and plentifully supplied. Visiting her again the next day the child seemed to have so far got the better of its fears, that it would permit them to take hold of its little hand; when it was perceived that, young as it was, it had lost the two first joints of its little finger, of the left hand.

northward: in this route they met with many shoals of considerable extent; and, rowing six or seven miles up, they arrived at the head of it, which divides into two large bays. They returned from hence to a point, near the entrance of this north harbour, where they passed the night: here they perceived about eighteen or twenty natives, a few of whom approached and conversed with them. Across the mouth of this north harbour, a bar of sand extends from the sandy beach, almost over to the eastern shore, and on which the sea broke prodigiously from side to side: they were, on that account, obliged to remain there till it was more than two-thirds flood, when, in the deepest part of the channel, they pushed out, and pulled over for the south-west arm, up which they went. Here they encamped for the night, and successfully hauled the seine, which produced a vast quantity of excellent mullet, and other fish. Grateful for so liberal a supply of these fish, the place was not improperly called Mullet Island.

The next morning they struck their tents, and proceeded to examine a point of high land, which had the appearance of an island, and which they afterwards found to be really entitled to that appellation. In examining this they were led into a branch which had not before been discovered: they continued their course upwards, still finding considerable depth of water, and strong tides; both which were considered as indications of a considerable river. They continued going up till the evening; when, finding it impossible to make any further discovery, and their provisions being nearly expended, they gave up their pursuit. Though the tide was now high, the water was perfectly fresh, and the general depth of this river was from three to seven fathoms; and its breadth was from one hundred to three hundred fathoms. When it became almost dark, they could not perceive a spot on which they could erect a tent, so very deep were the shores, except where they were marshy: at length they put a-shore on a parcel of rocks, which was indeed the only spot near, where they could find room for their tents, and here they passed the night. The next morning they returned down the river, and, as the wind blew fresh, in the afternoon they arrived in the south branch, at Pitt-water. At night they fixed their tents there, and caught some fish, to prevent too rapid a consumption of their other provisions. They now discovered that their female friend had quitted this place.

The governor was now determined to return expeditiously to Port Jackson, and, after some necessary rest, to prosecute this useful discovery to its source. They struck the tents at night, and embarked them in the boats: the wind being northerly, it was intended they should sail at midnight; a wigwam sheltered them during the night, having a large fire before it, near which they reposed. The boats having sailed in the night, they set off early in the morning by land, and arrived at the north cove of Port Jackson by two in the afternoon, where the boats were already arrived. In their journey they passed several dead bodies, which they supposed had fallen by the small pox.

Boats were immediately ordered to be prepared, and provisions got ready for another excursion, the same party having engaged to go again, and endeavour to trace this river to its source. On the 29th of June, the wind being fair for another visit to Broken Bay, they sailed early in the morning. Besides their former party, they had an addition or five marines; and the whole number amounted to about forty, including those in the boats. They were all well armed, and capable of making a powerful resistance, if, as they advanced up the river, they should find the interior parts populous, and the natives hostile.

Instructed by their last expedition, they soon found themselves in the neighbourhood of the south branch of Broken Bay, where a boat had been ordered to meet them. They arrived at the head of Pit-water before eleven, but no boat appeared, which obliged them to walk round all the bays, woods, and swamps till they joined the boats, by which exertion they were exceedingly fatigued; and the day was too far advanced to admit of their proceeding any further: this being the genuine state of the case, they readily agreed to pitch their tents, and occupy the spot which they had formerly done when they were in this quarter.

On the 30th they embarked in the boats at day-break, intending to proceed as high up as possible: they passed Mullet Island, and proceeded into the river; advancing as far up as a point on which they had rested a night when they were here before, and which was within a few miles of the place where they declined the pursuit: here they reposed for the night, and at

day-light on the 1st of July they embarked; when, after advancing a little beyond their furthest discovery, they found the river divided into two branches; one leading to the north-west, and the other to the southward; they took that arm which led to the north-west, and rowing up it all the remainder of the day, they found it in general shoal water, from four to ten and twelve feet: the banks of this branch were principally perpendicular mountains of barren rock. In many places the mountains did not reach the margin of the river, and retreated a little way from it, and were joined by low marshy points, which extended from the foot of the mountains to the edge of the river. At five in the evening they put on shore, and raised their tents at the foot of one of the mountains; and in the morning of the 2d, they proceeded higher up; but this morning's progress was much retarded by many large trees having fallen from the banks; and here the river became so narrow, that it hardly deserved that respectable name: by ten o'clock they had barely room for their oars, nor had they a sufficient quantity of water to float the boats. They found it necessary, therefore, to return, and before noon they put on shore: they now judged from the estimated distances, that they were about thirty-four miles above Mullet Island.

They had now a strong ebb tide, and they rowed late, hoping to get out of the branch before they stopped for the night. About six in the evening, they entered the southern branch, and encamped there for the night. The next morning they proceeded up this arm for about seven or eight miles, when it again divided into two branches. The governor determining to go as high as the boats could find water, they passed through various windings, and met with many difficulties from the shallowness. It is probable that both this, and the last branch they examined, might extend many miles farther than they with their boats could trace them; but the branch appeared to be no longer navigable for any vessel but the canoes of the natives. Having advanced as far as possible with their boats, and rowed about three miles down to a point where there was tolerable landing; they put ashore, and pitched their tents for the night*.

The banks of the river here are low, and covered with what are called the pine-trees of this country. The natives subsist principally on roots, which they dig from the ground.

At five in the evening they put ashore at the foot of the hill; and at day-light in the morning of the 5th, they embarked and proceeded up the river, in which they still found considerable depth of water. As they advanced the river contracted very rapidly in its breadth, and the channel became shoaler, which induced them to believe that they were not far from its source. In the evening they arrived at the foot of a high mountain, which was spread over with lofty trees, and beheld a pleasing country: they ascended some distance, and erected their tents for the night. In the midst of darkness and solemnity, they heard distinctly the roaring of what they supposed to be a water-fall; a circumstance which strongly intimated to them that they could not think of advancing much farther In the morning they walked to the top of the hill, when they found themselves within five or six miles of a long range of mountains; between which, and that where they stood, a deep valley was observed, through which a branch of this river might probably run. This range of mountains were supposed to be those which are visible from Port Jackson, and called the BLUE MOUNTAINS. The hills on each side the gap were thus named by Governor Phillip:—on one side the Carmarthen, on the other the Lansdown Hills; and that on which they then stood was called Richmond Hill†.

Having

* On the 5th of July they frequently saw fires in the woods, and sometimes heard the natives; in the afternoon they saw more persons in the woods, and fires in many different places: they called to them in their own language, by frequently repeating the word *cowee*, signifying "come here." At length two men came to the water side, with much apparent ease and familiarity. From this circumstance, they supposed they had seen them before, either at Botany Bay, Port Jackson, or Broken Bay. They were presented with a hatchet, and a wild duck; for which they threw in return a small coil of line, made of the hair of some animal: they also offered a spear, which was refused.

† When they had reached half a mile higher than the foot of Richmond Hill, they met the stream setting down so strong, that they could hardly get the boats so high. Here the river again divided into two branches, from one of which the stream descended with great velocity, with a fall over a range of stones lying across its entrance: this was the

Having now examined whatever they thought worth their attention, they repaired to Mullet Island, where they landed on the 10th in the evening. It blew so hard a gale of wind from the south, that they were obliged to pass two nights here. On the 12th, though very squally, they struck their tents and sailed for Pitt-water, where about noon they encamped upon a point pretty high up. On the 13th, as they intended to land well up this branch, to avoid the most tiresome part of the road to Port Jackson, they embarked, after they had breakfasted, and rowed up about two miles, when the party for walking went on shore, each having his arms and knapsack, with two days provisions: by four in the afternoon they arrived at the north part of Port Jackson, but they might as well have been fifty leagues off, for here they could have no communication either with the Sirius or the settlement, no boat having been sent to meet them. They instantly made a large fire, near which they lay all night, the weather happening to be very cold. Crossing the hills the next day, they came to the mouth of the north-west harbour, but could discover no means of passing it. At length they found a canoe upon the beach, with which they entertained hopes of getting two men across the water, who could then walk over to the cove where the Sirius lay. This flattering prospect deceived them: the first man who entered the canoe overset her, and she immediately sunk, and the adventurer was obliged to swim on shore.

After some deliberation, a proposal was made to walk round the head of the north-west harbour; but this proposal was objected to on account of the wretched condition of their shoes. Our commander now determined to go back to Broken Bay, and rejoin the boats, which he supposed he could effect in the course of that day: but thinking it probable that he might fall in with some parties of the natives in the way, he wished to have a companion. Captain Collins wished to accompany him in the intended walk, and they were on the point of setting out, when two of the people who were with them proposed swimming over the water, and to cross through the wood to the Sirius. They immediately stripped, and being fortified with a dram, they tied up in a handkerchief, a shirt, trowsers, and a pair of shoes each, which was rested upon their shoulders. Thus equipped, they entered the water, and in about seven minutes landed on the opposite shore; but one of them being seized with the cramp, was under the necessity of disengaging himself from his bundle, which was lost of course. They ran through the wood, and speedily arrived on board the ship; one of them perfectly naked, and the other having on his shirt and trowsers. Upon their information, a boat was sent down, which took them on board, after having experienced a very fatiguing journey. At eight in the morning they heard the report of a gun, in consequence of which they frequently fired several together, and as often heard the report of that which they supposed had been meant to answer them*.

About the end of August, the governor having expressed a desire of having a survey made of Broken Bay, and Botany Bay, their commander offered to perform that service. The Sirius had been removed from Sydney Cove, to one more convenient

the fall which they had heard the night before, when they were situated on the side of Richmond Hill. They were now unable to proceed any farther, on account of the deficiency of water: all expectations, therefore, of tracing this river higher up, with their boats, were now abandoned. On the banks they perceived some yams, and other roots, and evident marks appeared of the natives having frequented these parts in search of them for food. Many traps were found here for catching animals, in which were observed the feathers of several birds, particularly the quail.

They encamped on the 6th of July, in the evening, about seven miles below Richmond Hill; and early the next morning, set off on their return, encamping on the 7th, about twenty-six miles down, where they pitched their tents for the night. On the 9th they proceeded to examine some of the inferior branches; in one of which they passed the night, and saw a few natives, who came off to them in their boats with much cheerfulness and good humour: among the trifling presents bestowed upon them was a small looking glass: which they took the trouble to explain the use of. When they observed their own figure in this mirror, they turned it up and looked behind it; after which they pointed to the water, signifying that they also saw their figure reflected from that.

* After calling out, they listened attentively, and heard a very faint voice in answer; and, at last, by frequent calling, found who the person was: it proved to be Peter White, sail-maker of the Sirius, who had been four days lost; and when he quitted the ship, had not more than four ounces of biscuit with him, one ounce of which was still remaining: he was very faint, and appeared stupid and exhausted. They took him with them, and by giving him such provisions as they had, in small quantities, he seemed considerably recovered in a very few hours. But had he not been found in twenty-four hours more, he perhaps would have been incapable of making any further effort to save himself, and must have perished where he lay down.

convenient on the north side of the harbour, where she might be more commodiously repaired. A survey upon the defects of this ship was ordered by Captain Phillip, when she was reported to be very weak in her upper works, and various other defects were given in. But before any thing material in the repairs was set about, a survey of Broken Bay was taken: the entrance of it lies in latitude 33° 34′ south, and longitude 151° 27′ east: the bay is large and clear; the distance from north to south head, is two miles, and the depth eight, ten, and twelve fathoms. Just within the north head of the bay is the entrance of the northern branch, which, being shallow, is only navigable for boats or small vessels. A little within the south head of the bay is the entrance of the southern branch, or Pitt-water: though this is a good harbour, the entrance is rendered rather narrow, by a shoal-bank, extending from the eastern point full two-thirds across. From the south-west arm several branches extend, most of which have good depth of water, but the chart will be the best guide.

After having rested a few days, a survey of Botany Bay was proceeded on. Two boats, with provisions, tents, &c. were got ready, and dispatched round, under the care of Mr. Keltie, the master of the Sirius. A few of the gentlemen of the settlement having expressed a wish to accompany the party; permission was readily granted, and they all agreed to walk over to the boats. When they arrived there they found their tents pitched, and soon began their operations; and in the course of about ten days the survey of the bay was finished. The anchorag in the bay is extensive, and the passage into it easy; a cluster of rocks lie south-east, about two cables length from a little bare island on the north shore, whereon the sea frequently breaks very high; but by keeping Cape Banks open they may be avoided. A little above Point Southerland another pateh of rocks is to be noticed, to avoid which in turning, the land below this point must be kept open. Though the anchorage here is extensive, yet by observing the chart, it will appear a small spot for so large a piece of water. In some parts this river has good depth, and that near and within its entrance; but higher up it is all shoal water, and is only to be navigated by boats: it has two branches, in which there are several coves containing shoal water. It will easily be perceived, by looking at the draft of this bay, that it is impossible to lie land-locked with a ship in any part of it; as it will always be exposed to the large sea which tumbles in here with an easterly wind*.

The night before they left the Careening Cove, Mr. Francis Hill, one of the master's mates, obtained permission to go over to Sidney Cove, from whence he was to return early the next morning; he accordingly went over, and early the next morning was put aeross to the nearest part of the north shore, intending to walk round to the ship; a journey which might have been performed in about an hour and a half: in this short distance, however, Mr. Hill lost himself; and the next day parties were sent out different ways in search of him, and boats dispatched up and down the

* Towards the conclusion of October it was thought necessary to shorten the allowance of provision one-third; for, though store-ships might be expected from England by the end of January, 1790, there did not remain more than five months' provision in the settlement: the governor therefore issued an order for two-thirds allowance, to commence the first of November.

Having placed the top-riders in the Sirius by the end of October, they took their provisions on board; and on the 7th of November they moved the ship from the Careening Cove to Sydney Cove. A few days prior to this, John Mara, the gunner's mate, had been missing, and was supposed to have been lost in the woods: parties were dispatched in search of him. About the third day after he disappeared, some of the officers thought they heard the voice of a man upon the north shore, as they were going up the harbour in a boat, early in the morning; they lay upon the oars a considerable time, and listened very attentively; when they again heard the voice, and rowed towards the hore, apparently to the spot from whence the sound was directed: there they found the person who had been missing, sitting upon a rock: he was extremely faint, and hardly able to get into the boat; having had nothing to eat during his absence but an herb used by way of tea. Being interrogated with respect to the manner of his losing himself, he said, "that, having been sent on shore in the evening, to fill some water casks, which were landed at a run of water near the ship, and having just before drank pretty freely of grog, he felt himself, soon after he landed, much inclined to sleep: that the weather being warm, and the evening advancing, he laid down upon the hill, some distance from the run of water, and fell asleep upon the grass; that he did not wake till it was late, and the night being dark, he found himself a little confused when he awoke, and went farther into the wood instead of coming out of it, and by that means lost himself entirely." He added, that "when they found him, he was so much exhausted that he could not have walked much longer, and that he had but just reached the water-side the night before."

harbour for the same purpose; a gun was fired from the ship every two hours for the space of two whole days; and the third day many additional parties were sent out, but without effect: it was therefore supposed that he had fell in with a party of the natives, who probably had murdered him, as he took no arms with him to defend himself. The natives were very much disposed to take advantage of a single person, particularly when unarmed *.

The want of one of the people of this country, who, from being accustomed to live among them, might have prevented much of this hostile disposition in them towards the Europeans, was much to be lamented. Had poor Ara-ba-noo lived, he would have acquired enough of their language to have sufficiently understood them, and could have made them perfectly comprehend that they wished to live with them on the most friendly footing; and to promote, as much as might be in their power, their comfort and happiness. The governor was extremely anxious, to have a man or two in their possession, who might be taught enough of the English language, without the danger of losing any part of their own, to render them useful to their countrymen: a project was therefore in agitation of securing one or two such persons by force.

For this purpose, Lieutenant Bradley, with some other officers, and a party of men, were sent down the harbour in an armed boat, on the 25th of November. Proceeding to the north part of the harbour, they observed two native men walking upon one of the sandy beaches, and immediately formed a scheme for engaging them in conversation: a few large fish were held up, and they were called to, which produced the desired effect; the men cheerfully came forward, received the fish, and a conversation ensued among all the parties. Five of the people belonging to the ship were then upon the beach, and the boat was lying afloat, with her stern close to the shore, and the sailors lying on their oars. Mr. Bradley was in the stern of the boat, and, observing the opportunity, gave the signal for securing them. They were immediately seized, and tumbled into the boat, followed by the persons who secured them, and the boat immediately pulled off. They called aloud to their friends as soon as they were taken hold of, and a number of them appeared in the skirt of the wood; but observing arms in the hands of those in the boat, who stood up ready to fire, they did not venture an attack. When the men were first taken into the boat, they were lashed to the thwarts of her, but when they were far enough from the shore to prevent the possibility of an escape, their hands were set at liberty, and they were secured only by one leg: but till they were so far liberated, their terror was considerable. When they were landed at Sydney Cove, they were immediately taken up to the governor's house, where they were vesy humanely treated; but, to prevent all possibility of escape, each had an iron shackle put upon one of his legs, to which a piece of rope was spliced, and a man was ordered for each, who became answerable for their security; wherever they went, one of these keepers accompanied them, holding one end of the rope in his hand. When these two strangers landed in Sydney Cove, curiosity prompted many people to go and see them; among these were two natives, a boy and a girl: the girl was called *A-ba-roo,* and the boy *Nanbar-ry,* or *Bal-der-ry.* As soon as they beheld the men, with raptures of joy they addressed them both by their names: the children were also known to them.

It was soon discovered, on the arrival of these two strangers, whom the children called by name, that one of them was a chief, or distinguished person among the tribe of *Ca-di-gal;* his name was *Co-al-by;* he was a man of about thirty-five years;

* Of this there are many instances, besides the following: a man belonging to the Sirius, who had often been employed in shooting for the officers, was, a few days previous to the supposed death of Mr. Hill, in the woods looking for game, and had been observed by a party of the natives from the skirts of a wood. As they had not been seen by him, they took the advantage of that circumstance, and threw a large stone at him, which very narrowly missed his head: had it hit him, it would probably have knocked him down, and deprived him of his senses, which would have given them an opportunity of dispatching him. Not succeeding in their attempt, however, they still stood their ground, when he fired a small charge of shot at them; from which it was supposed they felt no inconvenience, as they laughed at him, and advanced with their lances: he instantly loaded his gun again, with a heavy charge of buck-shot, and as they appeared to him to be determined on mischief, he resolved, for his own safety, to fire among them; two of them fell, and the rest made off with precipitation; but he supposed they took their dead or wounded friends with them. He continued on the spot, and loaded his gun, and then proceeded towards the ship.

years; and the age of the other was about twenty-five years: he had several names, as *Ba-na-lang, Vogle-troo-ye,* or *Vo-la-ravery;* the first was said to be his proper name; the others were given him on account of his connections. The presence of *Co-al-by* operated as a check upon the cheerful disposition of *Ba-na-lang.* When these people had been seventeen days in this situation, they appeared to be so comfortable and happy, that their keepers began to be less apprehensive of their endeavouring to attempt an escape; of which they did not fail to take notice. One evening, when their keepers were sitting within the door of their house at supper; *Ba-na-lang* was within also, and amusing himself in the same manner; *Co-al-by* was sitting at the outside of the door, and pretended to be eating his supper, the end of his rope being in the hand of the keeper. Whilst those within were thus amused, *Co-al-by* drew the splice of his rope from the shackle, and in an instant was over the pailing, and out of sight. An immediate search was made for him, but without effect, for they saw him no more. They afterwards heard, however, that he had joined his friends, and will doubtless be careful to avoid European snares in future. The other man grew much more cheerful after *Co-al-by's* absence.

SECTION VII.

The Syrius and Supply sail for Norfolk Island—Land the Marines and Convicts—Wreck of the Sirius—Provisions saved—Martial Law established—Ratio of Provisions—Birds—Scarcity of Provisions—Receive a Supply from Port Jackson—Officers and Crew of the Sirius leave Norfolk Island—Description of Norfolk Island—Situation, Soil, Climate, &c.

IN February, the navigators began to think seriously of their disappointment of arrivals; they had not then more provisions than would be consumed by June, at the allowance already mentioned. The governor now saw a necessity for dividing the settlement, and intimated that such a division should speedily take place, by sending a proportional number of marines and convicts, under the command of Major Ross, the lieutenant-governor, to Norfolk Island, where he understood there were resources, which Port Jackson, and its environs, did not afford. An arrangement accordingly took place, and our commander received an order, on the 26th of February, to prepare the Sirius for sea, and to embark the lieutenant governor, with a company of marines, the officers, and baggage, and 186 convicts; making 221 persons in the whole: a proportion of the remaining provisions, and other stores, was likewise allotted to them; and he was also directed to land them upon Norfolk Island: Lieutenant Ball, commander of his Majesty's armed tender Supply, was ordered under his command, and he also embarked a company of marines, and twenty convicts.

They sailed from Port Jackson on the 6th of March, and made Lord Howe's Island on the 9th, at four in the afternoon, distant about eighteen leagues. A very remarkable rock lies about fourteen miles to the southward of this island, which is named Ball's pyramid. This island is about three miles and a half long, north north-west, and south south-east, and is very narrow across. It has anchorage on both sides, but the bottom is foul. On the 13th, at two in the morning, they made Norfolk Island: they brought to till day-light, and then, as the wind was fresh from the south-west, they knew there could be no landing in Sydney Bay, where the settlement is fixed, as the southerly winds occasion a high surf; he therefore bore away, and ran round to the north-east side of the island into Cascade-bay; where, after a few days of moderate weather, and an off-shore wind, it is possible to land on one particular spot, which is a rock projecting some distance into the sea, having deep water to it. On that rock he landed, on the afternoon of the 13th, all the marines, and a great many convicts; but being set to the eastward in the night, he did not land the remainder till the 15th, when they were also put on shore there. When these people were landed, the wind shifted, and blew so strong, that he was unable to land any part of the provisions. From the Sirius and Supply, they had put on shore 270 people, and had not sent any stores with

with them, and they were now driven out of the sight of the island. He knew the exhausted state of the stores there, and he was not unacquainted with the many difficulties which Lieutenant Ball had met with, which gave him much uneasiness. On the 19th, however, a slant wind from the south-east, brought our commander again in with the island. As he stood in, finding he could fetch the windward part of the island, he steered in for Sydney Bay. As he drew near, he observed the Supply lying to in the bay, and the signal upon the shore was flying, that long-boats, or any others might land, without any danger from the surf. Anxious to avail himself of this favourable signal, he steered as far as he thought safe, and brought to with the ship's head off shore, in the south-east part of the bay, hoisted out the boats, loaded them with provisions, and sent them in*.

By the time the principal part of the provisions was landed, the weather proved very unfavourable to their wishes and endeavours; the wind set in for the southward, the sea rose and occasioned a very high surf, which rendered it unsafe for any person to remain on board. Every thing, however, which could be got by the sailors on board was sent on shore.

A few days after the loss of the Sirius, the ship's company being all on shore, a small quantity of provisions being then on the island for so great a number of people, the lieutenant-governor assembled all the officers of the settlement; and as many of the convicts were supposed as wicked and depraved as any which Great Britain had ever produced, the most alarming crimes might reasonably be expected from them; it was therefore judged necessary, and proposed for the general safety and good of the whole, that martial law be now established in this island, till they might be relieved from the distressing prospect now before them by a supply of provisions; or till the governor in chief of his Majesty's territory in this part of the world might think fit, either to approve or disapprove of it. By the proclamation of the law martial, it was generally consented to. But, to avoid further ceremony, the general approbation was taken by every individual passing under the king's colours, which were displayed for that purpose. They were previously informed that such ceremony would be considered as an assent; it was adopted with a considerable degree of solemnity, and was attended with apparent cheerfulness through the whole.

By this proclamation of the law martial, much mischief was prevented; hitherto, every convict, or any other person on this island, who had committed any felony, were to be sent to Port Jackson, with all the evidence, and there to be tried, which would have been attended with many inconveniences and disagreeable consequences. During the whole time of its existence, it never had been put in force but once, for, it having been held out *in terrorem* only, the fear of an immediate trial, and, if found guilty, immediate execution, kept every one tolerably honest, and attentive to his necessary duties.

The Supply tender sailed from this island on the 24th of March, which was the fifth day after the loss of the Sirius, and as our navigators had not then been able to get any part of the provisions from the wreck, they could not give the governor any certain account whether they should or should not be able to get any

* Without entering minutely into the particulars of the wreck of the Sirius, which would be found very uninteresting to any but the nautical reader, we shall briefly relate, that she struck upon a reef of coral rocks, and in a few strokes was bulged: the water flowed fast into the hold, and the commander ordered the masts to be cut away, which was immediately done. When the ship was lightened of this weight, she might be thrown so far in up the reef, as to afford some prospect of saving the lives of those on board. All hands were employed in getting out of the hold such provisions as could be come at, that they might be at hand, should any opportunity offer of floating them on shore. In the evening the wind freshened greatly, and the surf was considerably increased; in consequence of which it was strongly recommended, by the gentlemen on shore, that every person should quit the ship. Preparations were suggested for that purpose, and the whole crew were intended to be landed that night; but when it became dark, the hauling rope got often foul of the rocks, which might have occasioned the drowning of many.

The second day after the landing of the crew, the weather being more moderate, a few of the seamen, who were expert swimmers, were got on board by the hawser, and great exertion made to get some part of the provisions sent on shore; but it was not till the 5th day that any of it could be landed. There were now, upon this little island, 506 souls, upon half allowance of provisions. Such articles as would swim were entrusted to the chance of being thrown on shore by the surf; and every thing which arrived was placed under the care of centinels, till claimed by the proprietor, before certain officers. Articles of provision were however considered as the first object; and though they were all dragged through the sea, the damage they received was very inconsiderable.

thing

thing on shore, to add to the scanty proportion which now remained in the store*.

They were now situated on an island, of only five miles in length, and three in breadth, three hundred leagues from the nearest part of New South Wales, deprived of every hope of relief by a change of situation; and they had the additional mortification of expecting a further reduction of their allowance of provisions.

In the month of April they observed that Mount Pitt, which is the highest ground in the island, was crowded with birds. This hill is as full of holes as a rabbit-warren; and in these holes, at this season, these birds burrow, take possession of a habitation, and prepare their nests. These birds are of the equatic kind, and are in the day-time frequently at sea in search of food. When it is dark, vast quantities of them hover over the ground where their nests are; and the seamen, marines, and convicts, go out in parties to procure them for the general benefit. Arriving upon the ground soon after dusk, they light small fires, which attract the attention of the birds, and they drop from the air as fast as the people can take them up and kill them: when they are on the ground, their long wings prevent their rising till they can ascend an eminence. Nature has, however, provided them with a strong, sharp, hooked bill, and a sharp spur in their heel; with the assistance of which, and the strength of their bill, they climb the stalk of a tree sufficiently high to throw themselves upon the wing. This bird is about the size of a pigeon; but when cloathed with its feathers, appears considerably larger: they are of a rusty black colour, and web-footed; they make their holes upon the hills for breeding their young in, and lay but one egg, which is as large as a duck's egg. This *bird of Providence*, as it may with propriety be called, resembles the sea-bird in England, called the puffin: they had a strong fishy taste, but the keen appetites of the people relished them very well: the eggs were thought excellent.

At the end of May, the wreck of the ship still held together, but the beams and knees were all either broken or loose. Whenever the weather would admit, a few sailors were sent on board, to save such articles as could be got, and to convey them on shore. Their distress did not obliterate from their memory the 4th of June, the birth-day of their much loved sovereign. In the morning, the colours were displayed, and at noon three vollies of musquetry were fired.

On the 6th, a convict man, who had been in pursuit of birds, said he had been robbed of his shirt by three other convicts, who had quitted the business they had been employed at, and taken shelter in the woods: it being necessary to check an evil of so dangerous a nature as early as possible, the lieutenant-governor sent two small parties of marines, and intimated a desire of sending two parties of the seamen, who might perhaps be less suspected of any design to apprehend them. Each person was sent armed upon this duty: in the evening the culprits were brought in, pinioned. A few days after a court-martial was assembled for the trial of these convicts, and they were sentenced to receive three hundred lashes each.

The Sirius's men were now fully employed, when the weather would permit, in fishing for the settlers, and at other times in making fishing-lines and hooks. A party of marines, and all the convicts, were clearing the ground for corn and potatoes. On the 24th of July, when only twelve days' salt provisions were left, it was adjudged necessary by the lieutenant-governor and council, to stop the salt provisions entirely, while the birds were to be caught; the ratio was now three pounds of flour, and a pint of rice per week, or instead of the flour, Indian corn meal, or wheat ground, with the husks and bran in the meal. A portion of the cleared land was

* After having been several weeks longer looking anxiously towards the sea, in expectation of the long-desired arrivals, the situation of our navigators began to wear a very alarming aspect. Reflecting on their deplorable situation, on the 14th of May, the officers composing the council, met the lieutenant-governor agreeable to appointment, and published orders purporting, "that, from the exhausted state of the provisions in this settlement, the following ratio was unanimously resolved, and ordered to take place on Saturday the 15th instant, *viz.*

"Flour—three pounds per week for every grown person.

"Beef—one pound and a half per ditto; or in lieu of the beef, 17 ounces of pork.

"Rice—one pound per ditto.

"Children exceeding twelve months old, half the above ratio. Those under twelve months old, a pound and a half of flour, and a pound of rice per week. In future all crimes, considered as not of a capital nature by three members of the council, will be punished at their discretion, by a reduction of the present allowance of provisions."

planted with potatoes, as the first thing from which relief could be expected. The bodily strength of the people was now considerably reduced for want of a sufficiency of food.

On the 4th of August, a seaman, happening to cast his eyes towards the sea, *saw a sail.* Exulting with joy he ran back, calling out, in raptures, a ship! a ship! The news instantly spread all over the settlement, and men, women, and children were hastening in different directions, to welcome the expected relief. The commander took a spy glass in his hand, and joyfully observed a ship with an English ensign flying, not more than six or seven miles off shore. Some of the officers agreed to walk across the island to receive them: they endeavoured to shew themselves to them, but they did not think proper to notice them; they observed the ship sailing before the wind, and making sail from the island.

As these officers were returning, lamenting their disappointment, and accusing the commander of wanting the common feelings of humanity in not giving them some comfort or satisfaction, it struck one of them that this ship must have been from Port Jackson, and that the commander was bound to China; and, as she had nothing on board for the island, they did not choose to lose any time. They kept a good look out, however, and, on the 7th, a ship was discovered in the offing, and towards the evening another made its appearance: the surf being low, a boat was instantly sent off to go on board the nearest. They proved to be the Justinian and the surprize, from Port Jackson, with provisions for the island, and an addition of two hundred convicts *.

The arrival of supplies at this very critical juncture, was truly comfortable; for their great and only resource now began to fail them greatly. The Mount Pitt birds, which had long supported them, were extremely scarce: the fish also failed them entirely. Had these supplies been detained six weeks longer by any accident or other cause, the settlement would have been reduced to the most deplorable situation.

A sail was, about this time, discovered in the offing, which was supposed to be the Gorgon that they had so long expected; but on her nearer approach, they discovered her to be the Supply armed tender. She had been, upon her return from Norfolk Island with the account of the misfortune of the Sirius, immediately dispatched to Batavia; where Lieutenant Ball was directed to endeavour to hire a vessel, and load her with provisions for the use of the settlement. After the return of the Supply to Port Jackson, she required some repairs, which having been completed, she was ordered upon the service wherein she was now found, viz. bringing a few stores from Norfolk Island, with orders to embark the remaining officers and crew of the Sirius, and to return with them to Port Jackson. This information was joyfully received by our commander, as his situation had now become exceedingly irksome, and he had endured very oppressive feelings. On the 11th of February he embarked with the officers and ship's company, on board the Supply, having taken his leave of a place which had occasioned him so much vexation and distress. They had fine weather during their passage to Port Jackson, where they arrived on the 27th, and were hospitably received by all their friends there; but he was much dissatisfied with hearing from the governor, that he had contracted with the master of the Dutch Snow, for carrying the officers and ship's company of the Sirius to England. Though anxious to reach England as soon as possible, he would much rather have waited the arrival of an English ship, than to have embarked under the direction, or at the disposal of a foreigner.

* The Justinian and Surprize were cleared in about three weeks, and proceeded on their voyage to China on the 30th. As soon as these ships arrived, as well for their safety, as for the more expeditiously landing the provisions, our commander sent Lieutenant Bradley on board the one; and Mr. Donovan, a midshipman. Mr. Keltie, the master of the Sirius, and Mr. Brooks, attended the whole day at the landing-place. The boats employed on this business were manned by the crew of the Sirius, and every possible attention was paid to prevent danger or accident; notwithstanding which, on the 17th of August, one of the boats was overtaken by a succession of heavy surfs, which threw her on one of the reefs, and seven people were drowned. Among these were two of the boats' crew who belonged to the Sirius, three women convicts, and a child; and one convict man, who went off with many others to try to save the women.

SECTION

SECTION VIII.

Improvement of the Country at Rose Hill—Vicissitude of the Climate—Norfolk Island remarkably healthy—Frequent Visits from the Natives—Governor Phillip wounded by the Natives—Natives again visit the Settlement—The Governor entertained with a Dance—Method of dancing and decorating themselves—Music and Singing.

GOING from Port Jackson to Rose Hill great improvements have been and are still making; a considerable town laid out, good buildings erected, and roads cut, with upwards of two hundred acres of land cleared for corn; with eighty acres to be appropriated to edifices and gardens. Rose-Hill is certainly a pretty situation, but it appears to be a poor, sandy, steril soil, and will require much manure, much dressing, and good farmers to manage it, before good crops of any thing can be expected from it.

If government mean to persevere in establishing a settlement in this country, upon an extensive plan, a very heavy expence will be necessary. Cattle are required, if it is only for the manure they furnish; for without manure, this land will never produce any tolerable crops. Should it be resolved on to stock it sufficiently with cattle, many people would also be required to manage them properly, and to prevent them from being attacked by the natives, who are sometimes driven to great distress.

Norfolk Island is subject to sudden changes, but it is remarkably healthy. There cannot be a stronger proof of the salubrity of the climate, than the constitutions of the human race, or any other animal: they cannot be more prolific in any part of the world; two children at a birth are often seen, and women exceeding the usual period of child-bearing, have as fine healthy children as can be seen. Only one old woman, who was sickly when she came into the country, and one infant, has died of a natural disease on the island, since it has been settled.

The name of Ba-na-lang, a native man who had been in the lower part of the harbour, has already been mentioned with that of Co-al-by, who soon after made his escape. Ba-na-lang had been kept in his shackle, and had been so kindly treated, that it was supposed he might be trusted with his liberty without any fear of his absenting himself; he was therefore in April 1790, set at liberty, and did not seem disposed to leave the governor's house; his satisfaction with his situation was so well feigned, that no person appeared to suspect him for several days: at length, however, he thought proper to depart, after having stripped himself of his very decent cloathing, and left them behind. Both he and Co-al-by were frequently seen afterwards, and were so familiar as to converse with the people, who often invited them to come to Sydney (the name by which the settlement is known) but they did not seem inclined to accept of this invitation, till the governor himself should invite them, and give them his promise that they should not be detained. The governor accordingly did invite them, and promised them several articles of which they were much in want. Though these people had once been so treacherously deprived of their liberty, they found themselves inclined to depend on the governor's promise, and actually did go to Sydney: they were kindly received, visited from house to house, and saw all their old acquintances; they received several little presents, and returned to their friends whenever they thought proper. This confidential visit from two men, soon created a more general intercourse; and the next visit from these men brought the same favour from their wives and families, whose example was followed by many others.

A short time previous to this friendly and general visiting from the natives, the governor went down the harbour himself, to see and converse with Ba-na-lang and Co-al-by, when, hearing that these two men, with several other natives, were in Collins's Cove, he went thither, accompanied by several other gentlemen, and they were all unarmed. This want of necessary caution had nearly proved fatal to the governor. A party of the natives wounded him with a spear, from which he was not perfectly recovered in less than six weeks *.

The

* This unprovoked attack was however soon forgiven, and almost forgot: so friendly and familiar was the intercourse now between them, that they frequently had a dance among themselves at night, on the lower part of Sydney Cove, where a small house had been built by the governor's order, for their accommodation. A dance was now proposed

The dancers being ready, they were placed in a semicircle, by Ba-na-lang and Co-al-by, who seemed to have the principal direction. The dance was begun by a few young boys, and was afterwards increased by men and women, till their number amounted to about twenty-six. The dance was truly wild and savage, though with some appearances of regularity and order. In all the different figures that they performed, they generally concluded by certain numbers of their principal dancers advancing to the front, and going through that favourite part of the dance, the quivering motion of the knees. Their music consisted of two sticks of very hard wood, one of which the musician held upon his breast in the manner of a violin, and struck it with the other in regular order. The performer, who was a stout man, and had a very strong voice, sung the whole time, and frequently applied those graces in music, the piano and forte. Signs of approbation from the audience, seemed to give them infinite satisfaction, and generally produced extraordinary exertions.

SECTION IX.

Captain Hunter leaves Port Jackson—In danger among some Islands—Isle of Pines—Stewart's Islands discovered—Bradley's Shoals—Lord Howe's Groupe—The Natives described—Anchor at the Duke of York's Island—Attempt to procure Water—Attacked by the Natives—Disperse the Natives—Reconciliation—Natives—Phillip's Islands discovered—Anchor at Hummuck Island—Refreshments procured—Visited by the Raja—A Quarrel ensues—Several of the Natives killed—Anchor at Batavia.

EVERY thing being embarked on the 27th of March, 1791, they left Sydney Cove in the Waakfamheyd transport, and sailed down the harbour: they were accompanied by the governor, and many of the civil and military officers in the settlement. On their passing the lower point of the cove, all the marines, and the New South Wales corps, came down and cheered the people by way of taking leave. Soon after, the wind setting in from the sea, they were obliged to anchor till the next morning, when a land wind carried them clear out. The master of the ship had orders from Governor Phillip to call at Norfolk Island, to take on board the dispatches of Lieutenant-governor Ross, if it could be done without any material loss of time. There were on board this vessel 123 souls, victualled for sixteen weeks. They wished to avoid touching at Batavia, to prevent sickness among their people, which, in their then crowded state, was much to be dreaded.

Upon making the isle of Pines, on the 23d of April, the wind blew so strong from the northward of east, that they could not weather and pass to the eastward of it. The Isle of Pines, so far from being an inconsiderable spot, is not less than fifteen miles over in a south-east and north-west direction; it is high and remarkable in the middle, being a pointed hill sloping towards the extremities, which are low; the low land having many tall pine-trees upon it.

They continued to steer to the north-westward without seeing any thing, and when they had reached the latitude of 19° 00 south. they hauled to the north-east, so as to pass between Queen Charlotte's Islands and the large track of land which had been seen by Messieurs Bougainville and Surville formerly, and lately by Lieutenant Shortland, in the Alexander transport, and more recently still by Lieutenant Ball in the Supply armed tender.

On the 10th, in the morning, they saw land

posed by some of the principal people, which was readily agreed to, and the following night was appointed, when the governor, and a considerable number attended, every person being provided with arms of some denomination; a very necessary caution, however friendly appearances might then be, for experience had shewn that these people have plenty of treachery in their disposition. Preparatory to this exhibition, great attention appeared in their different modes of decorating their persons. The young women were employed in painting the bodies of the young men with streaks of white, according to the taste of the man himself, or that of the lady who ornamented him: no fop preparing for an assembly was ever more anxious of making his person irresistably beautiful. The paint, however, could not be applied without a little moisture, and the lady was frequently obliged to spit in the face of her friend whom she was employed in adorning.

bearing west-north-west, distant about seven leagues; it proved to be a cluster of small islands, five in number; well covered with trees. They steered from them directly to the northward, to see if they could discover Gower's Island. On the 12th, at nine in the morning, the man at the mast-head discovered breakers on the starboard bow, and not more than six miles distant; soon after, breakers were seen on the starboard quarter; and at eleven breakers were observed on the larboard beam; on this they brought to, and sounded with 130 fathoms of line, but had no ground. This had the appearance of a dangerous cluster of shoals, for being situated in a climate where it seldom blows so strong as to raise a large sea, a ship in the night, without a very good look out, might be in very great danger before they could be perceived.

On the 14th, at day-light, they saw land, and at sun-rise they discovered this land to be a number of islands, some of considerable extent, and many of a smaller size. Thirty-two were distinctly counted from the mast-head, and probably there might be several more. At ten o'clock six or seven canoes were seen coming off, with large triangular sails; a little after noon, one of them, with nine men in it, came up with them, though they did not shorten sail: they could not persuade them to come alongside, or touch the ship, but they threw some beads, nails, and other trifles into their boat, with which they appeared highly pleased; and in return threw some pieces of cocoa-nut on board: a fresh breeze springing up at one, they went away. The men in the boat were of a dark copper colour, stout, clean, and well made; their hair was in a knot on the back of their head, and they seemed to have some method of getting rid of their beards; but they had a kind of artificial beard, consisting of a number of figures, which were fastened on between the nose and mouth, and close under the nose; a row of teeth hung to that beard, representing a mouth lower than the natural mouth: holes run through the sides of the nose into the passage, into which, as well as through the septum, pieces of bone or reed were thrust. Their canoes were about forty feet long, but ill made, and had an outrigger. On the 18th, at eight in the morning, they saw three small islands bearing west-north-west; at eleven o'clock two more islands were in sight: at noon five islands and two rocks were to be seen; they seemed all to be connected by a reef, which on the west side extended to some distance from them. These were supposed to be a part of Captain Carteret's nine islands.

The hills mentioned by Captain Carteret, on the coast of New Britain, by the name of the Mother and Daughters, are very remarkable; a little way in the south-easternmost quarter, a hill presents itself with a small flat top, or volcano, which, while they continued in sight of it, emitted vast columns of black smoke. The next step to be pursued was to examine the Duke of York's Island, and on the night of the 22d, they ran off the east point of it, with a light air from the westward, and brought to till daylight. On the 23d in the morning they had very little wind, and the boat was sent in shore to sound; many canoes came off, with every appearance of a friendly disposition: the boat that was sounding endeavoured to make them understand that they wanted water, and shewed a small keg, intimating that they wanted it to be filled: the people in one of the canoes went to the boat, received the keg, went on shore and filled it, and brought it back to the boat: the officer then gave them another keg, which was meant as a present, but it was instantly sent on shore by another canoe: in the mean time a breeze sprung up, the boat steered along shore and the ship followed. Those who had taken the last keg, after having filled it, followed the boat, came up with her, and delivered it. This was a certain proof of the honesty of these people, and it will the more particularly appear so, when it is considered that the keg was hooped with iron.

As they ran round the western side of the island, they observed a small bay or cove; discovering that water was to be had here, they were determined to have as much as might be necessary for their purpose. The first night there was a very strict look out kept, as well by the natives as by the Europeans; they had a regular watch-word, which they sung out in a very musical manner. The next morning they loaded a boat with empty casks, and had the other armed to lie off the shore, and cover those employed in filling water: the ship's guns were loaded; and twelve men, with small arms, attended on shore with the waterers. The watering business was now begun, and the natives saw the nature of their business there. Their numbers, however, increased very rapidly, and all

armed; they were, indeed, so very troublesome, that very little work could be done in watering. An old man, all over covered with white powder, and who seemed to possess great authority among them, encouraged them to commit acts of violence, and some stones were thrown with great force among the sailors. The consequence of this unmerited attack was, that the officer was obliged to fire, the covering boat fired, and a few shot were fired from the ship. At this time there were about thirty or forty canoes about the ship, full of people; their terror and consternation at the noise, and probably the effect of the guns was such, that many leaped from their boats overboard, and swam under water as far as they were able. Those guns were fired only to intimidate, but they occasioned a general dispersion of the natives, and the filling of the water was carried on with ease and expedition: about seven tons were received on board in the course of the afternoon.

Before the boats went on shore the next morning, they fired a few grape shot into the woods, and none of the natives were seen at the time the boats landed. They warped the ship within a cable's length of the watering-place, and secured her head and stern for covering the party on shore. The covering boat was directed to fire when any of the natives were seen in the woods over the watering party, which, during the day, had been frequently done. Many canoes entered the bay, but at an awful distance, holding up green boughs as a signal of peace and amity: to some they made signs to depart; to others, who ventured a little nearer, they manifested tokens of friendship, and signified that they drew the firing upon themselves by their slinging of stones among the Europeans who were watering. After these hostilities, very little interruption happened, except that the covering boat had occasion to fire a few musquets into the woods over the watering place. In the space of four days they completed their water; and on the last evening, as the sailors were coming from the shore, a great many of the natives came down to the beach with green boughs in their hands, bringing with them cocoa-nuts, plantains, yams, &c. accompanied by a song of friendship. They seemed earnestly to wish for a reconciliation, and testified their greatest concern for what had happened. Peace was now concluded, with much ceremony, and every demonstration of concern and submission was exhibited by the natives; and it is feared that they had too much reason to be sorry, for it is extremely probable that some of them must have lost their lives by the grape shot from the ship*.

The weapons used by the people of this island, were lances of different kinds; some were made of a kind of ebony, or hard wood, about ten feet long, frequently ornamented with feathers of different colours: the lance is thrown by hand, but they had not the use of the throwing-stick, like the natives of New South Wales. In their quarrels they also use the sling for throwing stones. They use in fishing a spear, small seine nets, and hooks and lines.

They have a kind of musical instrument, with which they sometimes, in their canoes alongside, endeavoured to amuse the Europeans, composed of a number of hollow reeds of different lengths. Sound was all they seemed to expect from these instruments; they did not aim at harmony or concord: their vocal music was more harmonious, but they had little variety.

When these people were inclined to be friendly, they sung out in one particular tone, in which, though there were five hundred together, the nicest ear could not discover one to differ in the tone or particular note. Immediately after this vocal salute, they all mimicked the barking of a dog: which was given as a certain proof of

* After peace had been re-established on shore, the conk shell was sounded, which was the signal for great numbers to assemble, who joined in a song of friendship, which was really harmonious and very pleasing. The canoes crowded the bay from different parts of the island, and were as familiar as ever, except that they would not now venture on board, as many of them had done before the quarrel. These are said to be the only people in these seas who do not set a value upon iron work, in preference to any other thing: they were not pleased with looking-glasses, or beads, but they were fond of rags of white linen, strips of scarlet cloth, or any thing of a gay or gaudy colour.

The natives of the Duke of York's Island are stout and robust, and of a light copper colour: they go entirely naked. Their hair, which is wooly, is so enriched with a sort of grease or ointment, and a white or red powder with which they dress it, that it hangs like so many candle wicks; they are usually as completely powdered as a finished beau, equipped for an assembly. Some have their hair of a yellow colour, others delight in a shining red; but none of them were satisfied with the colour which nature has given them.

their

A Man of the Admiralty Islands.

C. Warren sc.

their disposition; perhaps in allusion to the wonderful fidelity of that class of animals,

This island appeared to be about ten miles in length, in a south-south-west, and north-north-east direction: it is of a moderate height, and flat; but is well covered with wood. Along the sea-shore many huts of the natives were seen, which were small and neatly made; chiefly built of bamboo, and generally situated under the shade of a grove of cocoa-nut trees, with a fence or railing before them; within which the ground was well cleared and trodden. In short, from what could be observed while the Europeans remained there, they thought they could venture to pronounce the whole island a perfect garden. It produced cocoa-nuts, yams, plantains, bananas, sugar-cane, beetle-nut, bread-fruit, mangos, and guavas. There are also hogs, dogs, and fowls. The soil is extremely rich and fertile.

In the morning of the 27th of May they prepared for sailing; but before they got under way, two English pointers, male and female, which had been given to the master of the ship at Port Jackson, were taken on shore, and given to a party of the natives, who were much pleased with them: a cock and hen were also given to them. At ten o'clock they sailed out of the bay, which was named Port Hunter. They steered north-west by west, and west-north-west, and at eight in the morning saw Sandwich Island, bearing north-west. It is of a moderate height, and well covered with wood. On the north side of the island, they observed the remarkable peaked hill mentioned by Captain Carteret, with the cr - responding one on the coast of New Ireland.

During the night of the 30th they had heavy dull weather, with light and variable winds, which fell only in light showers. At seven the next morning, they saw an island bearing north-west by west, and at eight saw more land from the mast-head, bearing west, which they supposed to be part of the Admiralty Islands: the wind was at south-east, and they could not weather the southernmost, on which they bore away and passed between them. Having seen much land in different directions before dark, they determined to bring to for the night: it then fell calm, and they had by the morning only drifted a little with a current to the north-west. At day-light on the 31st, they saw much land to the northward and westward. Five large canoes came off from the nearest island, with eleven men in each: six paddled, and five stood up in the center of the boat, painted and decorated as if intended for war; but when they approached they shewed no hostile appearance; they were invited, by signs, to come on board, but they declined venturing too near the ship: they held up a variety of articles, which they seemed desirous of exchanging. They were stout well-looking people, rather darker than the natives of the Duke of York's Island: their hair, which was wooly, was knotted or tied upon the top of their head. Their canoes were from forty to fifty feet in length, neatly made, and turned up a little at the extremities: a stage, which lay across the midships of the boat, projected out some distance on one side; this stage appeared to be intended for the warriors to use their weapons upon. On the opposite side, was fitted in a different manner, an out-rigger to balance the boat: three of the rowers sat before, and three abaft the stage, so that those intended for battle were not incommoded by them.

This groupe of islands is very extensive, as well in a north and south direction as east and west. Having now got to the westward of the Admiralty Islands, they supposed themselves clear of St. George's Channel. On the 3d of June they saw land, about two points before the starboard beam, which proved to be two islands; at eight o'clock the next morning they saw another. It is probable that these islands have been seen before, as in a general chart of these seas, there are three islands laid down nearly in this situation.

On the 11th of July necessity obliged them to reduce the allowance of water; the whole allowance was to each man, for all purposes, two purser's quarts for twenty-four hours, and the weather was exceedingly sultry, which aggravated the distress. On the 13th, from the unfavourable prospect before them, it was thought prudent to call together the officers, to consult upon the most eligible plan to be pursued, for enabling them to reach some port or settlement where it might be possible to obtain some supply of provisions and water, sufficient for the relief of 121 men, the number now on board this small vessel. It was the general opinion, that it would be highly imprudent, in the present reduced state of provisions and water, any longer to attempt to reach the strait of Macassar, in the face of fresh westerly winds, and a strong easterly current:

current; and what rendered it still more necessary to abandon such an attempt was, that the master of the ship declared, in the presence of some of the officers, that he knew not of any one place in their route, short of Batavia, where any supply for their numbers could be had. The quantity of provisions now on board, at half allowance, was a supply for ten weeks, and the water, at two purser's quarts a man *per* day, was a supply for the same time, provided they had no leakage.

On the 13th they bore away to the northward, determined to attempt the strait through which the Acapulco ships pass to the port of Manilla, or to go round the north end of Luconia, and endeavour to fetch Macao in China. In the morning of the 14th, they saw land bearing north, which was found to be two islands, nearly joined together by a long sandy spit above water. The islands are dangerous to people in the night, on account of the sandy spits which project from them. These were named Phillip Islands, after Arthur Phillip, the Governor of New South Wales*.

The wind now became very variable, but chiefly from the south-west quarter; on the 2d of August it shifted to west-north-west, and they stood to the south-west. On the 4th they made the land, bearing west-south-west twelve leagues: at noon they saw it from south-west to west half south; it proved to be the north end of the island of St. John. On the 8th, in standing to the southward, they saw an island bearing south five or six leagues; which, from its situation, must have been the island of Palma.

On the 11th of August they stood in for Hummock Island, and sent a boat in shore to search for anchorage, which they soon made the signal for having found; and at noon came to in twenty-two fathoms water. A canoe came off, with Dutch colours flying, bringing a note from the Raja to the master, written in the Malay characters, signifying that they should have what they wanted.

In the afternoon they sent a boat to look for water, which was found in great abundance near the east point of the island. They immediately began to water the ship, and very soon had a number of canoes from the shore on board, with a variety of refreshments, which they much wanted. A brisk trade was carried on for poultry, goats, and fruit of various kinds. This day the Raja, according to previous information, came on board in a large boat, and did our navigators the honour of a visit, he was attended by a person next in authority, and a considerable number of people; and was, on his arrival, saluted with five guns. On this occasion it was thought necessary to have a party of ten men armed, on the top of the round house abaft, where they continued during the Raja's visit†.

In the evening they weighed from the road, and put to sea: one unfortunate Javanese seaman was accidentally left on shore, yet as he spoke a language which most of these people understand, that may probably be the means of saving his life; but as their rage, when once roused, does not expeditiously subside, the consequence may therefore be fatal to that innocent man. This unlucky affair deprived the seamen of an opportunity of completing their water, or of cutting their wood. They had, however, filled as much water as would prevent their being distressed for some time, and the sailors had been indulged with many refreshments. Hummock Island is exceedingly fertile, producing most of the tropical fruit. They found here rice, sugar-cane, pine-apple, mango, sour oranges, limes, plantains, cocoa-nut, sago, sweet potatoes, tobacco, Indian corn, dogs, goats, fowls, parrots, &c.

* On the 17th in the morning, they saw land from the mast-head, bearing west by south about ten leagues distant; at noon they saw it from the deck, and it appeared to be three islands. The islands lie in the latitude of 9° 33′ north, longitude 137° 30′ east, and are probably a part of the New Carolines. From the time of their making these islands to the 23d, they had light and variable winds. It afterwards became very squally and unsettled weather, with very heavy rains at times. During these heavy showers, which were comfortable in their situation, every one was employed in spreading his blanket or rug, to preserve as much water as he could for his own use; for having no means of providing a quantity for the general good, every one did the best he could for himself.

† When the Raja left them, he promised to be on board the next day, and said he would bring with him the articles they wanted. The next day, in the afternoon, the Raja came again on board, but, instead of the expected supply, he produced only four small baskets of sago powder, and one bag of paddy, which would hardly have supported two men for a week. Hence a misunderstanding arose between the Raja and the British navigators, originating principally from the contending parties not comprehending each other. Several lives were lost before the termination of this ridiculous dispute.

But

But their principal artiele of trade with the Dutch is bees-wax, of whieh they have a vast quantity, and of eourse abundanee of honey.

The natives of these islands are the same sort of people, and speak the same language as those on Mindanao; and they have mueh of the Malay both in appearanee and disposition; they are nearly of the same size, form, and colour, and have many of their features: they generally wear jaekets and trowsers; but the lower classes seldom wear any thing but a wrapper round the waist; with a handkerchief, or other piece of linen round the head, in the manner of a turban. In the sash or wrapper which surrounds the waist, their eress or dagger is stuck, the scabbard of which is a case of wood. Many of these people were afflieted with a disease resembling the leprosy; their skins being covered with a dry scurf, like the scales of a fish, which had a very disagreeable appearance.

Their canoes are of various sizes, the bottom being hollowed out of the trunk of a tree, and they were generally raised with an upper work of split bamboo; they had an out rigger on eaeh side to balance them; and they had also a larger boat, on which they mounted three small pieees of brass cannon. These boats will eoneeal a number of men: they were usually covered with an awning of split bamboo, raised some distanee above the gunwale, like the ridge of a house. Their mast is eomposed of three bamboos, two of whieh stood as a pair of sheers, and required no shrouds; the third stood forward, answering the purpose of a stay; and upon this mast they set a square sail.

When they left these islands, the wind being from the westward, they steered to the southward. At seven in the morning they saw a small island, bearing south-west; at ten they saw two more, and by four in the afternoon of the 15th, seven islands were in sight, bearing from south-west to west-north-west. At six they saw a large island a-head, with a number of smaller ones, and some roeks of considerable height. This island, which is very high land, is that laid down in the chart by the name of Poolo Sanguy. At day-light on the 25th, they made the island of Celebes. On the 27th at noon the land of Celebes was distant about eight or nine leagues. At four in the morning of the 29th, they had a heavy squall from west north-west. On the 30th, at five in the morning, they saw the island of Borneo. On the 31st, at day-light, the land of Celebes bore east by north half north: they had a heavy squal of thunder, lightning, and rain.

On the 7th they saw two large proas in the south-west: they might have been trading vessels, but knowing that these seas are infested with piratieal vessels of that description, it was necessary for them to be upon their guard.

The whole time they had been in this strait, the wind had been variable from the south-south-west, to west-north-west. On the 11th, in the forenoon, as they were standing to the westward, the water appeared suddenly of a very light colour, and on looking over the side, they perceived the ground under the ship: before they had time to heave a cast of the lead, it seemed deeper, and they had ten and twelve fathoms. From the mast-head, at the same time, a dry sand-bank appeared, bearing north-north-east six miles distant; a little way to the eastward of it, the water seemed to break. This shoal is very dangerous; but does not appear to have been regularly marked: there is a shoal, indeed, marked in the Duteh eharts, nearly in the same parallel, but it is so mueh misplaeed in its longitude, or distance from the land, that it eannot be supposed to be meant for the same shoal *.

* At midnight on the 21st of September they saw an island bearing west-north-west three or four miles distant, which they supposed to be the island of Solombo. In the morning of the 23d they made the islands called Cariman Java; the principal of which is large and of very considerable height; it is encompassed by many smaller ones, some of which are well covered with wood. On the morning of the 24th, they saw several water-spouts and whirlwinds; some of which came so very near that they fired a few guns, hoping the concussion of the air might disperse them; but their guns were too small to give a sufficient shock to the atmosphere; yet a good breeze of wind springing up, they were carried clear of them. They steered from Cariman Java, west, and in the evening of the 25th, they made the small islands called the Boomkins, which lie about five leagues from the coast of Java. In the morning they saw Carawang Point on Java, bearing south-south-west six or seven miles; and at five in the afternoon of the 27th, anchored in Batavia Road, after a passage from Port Jackson of twenty-six weeks.

SECTION X.

Caplain Hunter attends the Governor at Batavia—Applies for a Passage to England—Purchases the Waaksampey—Quits Batavia—Passes the Keelings—Arrives at the Cape of Good Hope—Proceeds to St. Helena—Arrives at Portsmouth.

THE master of the ship acquainted his owner (the Shebander) of his arrival; and that gentleman wrote to Captain Hunter, the same night, begging he might see him early the next morning, that he might introduce him to the governor: he also informed him that it was absolutely unnecessary for him to write to the governor on any business he might have to settle with him, as such affairs might be more methodically adjusted by a personal interview. Captain Hunter landed the next morning, and went with the Sebander (who spoke English) to the governor, who resided about three miles out of town. He informed him that Governor Phillip had found it necessary, in order to forward his Majesty's service, to employ the vessel in which he was embarked, to convey to that port the officers and company of his Majesty's lost ship the Sirius, with a view, that, after they had procured the necessary provision and refreshment, they should be permitted to proceed in the same vessel to England. He therefore desired permission to have her refitted, and to proceed with all possible expedition.

The governor, however, not choosing that any vessel belonging to the company should be employed as a transport, obtained the permission of the council to purchase the vessel, a business that was transacted accordingly*.

On the 14th of November, Robert Henderson, seaman, died; and Edward Moore, a seaman, died on the 11th of December. On the 15th they made Cape Lagullus, and the 17th anchored in Table Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope. When they got a few leagues to sea, they found the weather quite moderate, and made sail, expecting to be able to recover the bay again. On the 22d, in the evening, they fetched close round Green Point, and hoisted the signal of distress, having but one small anchor left: his Majesty's ship, Providence, the Assistant armed tender, and Pitt transport in the bay, repeated their signals with many guns, and sent all their boats: several English Whalers, and some Americans also sent their boats, with anchors and hausers, and they were soon got into safety. The same night they received anchors and cables from the shore, and secured the ship.

On the 13th of January, 1792, having completed their provisions for sixteen weeks, the captain directed that such of the men as were sufficiently recovered to proceed upon the voyage, might be discharged from sick-quarters and sent on board. On the 18th, with a breeze from south-south-east, they ran down to Robbin's Island, where they anchored. On the 19th, with a south-west breeze, they stretched out to sea. Five men were left at sick quarters, being too infirm to be taken on board.

On the 4th of February, at five in the afternoon, they saw the island of St. Helena, and at noon anchored off James's Valley. The captain sent an officer on shore to wait on the governor, who, in a note, politely expressed his concern for the misfortunes he had met with, and offered every refreshment the island could afford to the seamen. On the 5th he landed, and was received by the governor under the usual salute.

A letter from Captain Hunter to the Lords of the Admiralty, is here introduced in the original work, giving his opinion on the best course from New South Wales to Europe.

* A short time previous to their arrival here, the town of Batavia had been very unhealthy, and was not now in a much better state. The sailors indeed had continued to enjoy good health, till about a week before they were ready for sea, when a fever began to rage violently among them at Batavia: in some of the seamen, however, this malady was brought on by intemperance. On the 19th of October died Daniel Buddle, seaman. On the 20th they left the road and sailed to the island of Onrust, where they anchored and received some stores for the use of the ship. On the 22d they sailed from Onrust, and the 26th cleared the streight of Tunda, when Terence Berne, seaman, died, and twenty-two were down with the Batavia fever.

SECTION XI.

Lieutenant King visits Monsieur de la Perouse at Botany Bay—His Reception there—His Adventures —Lieutenant King returns to Port Jackson—Sent to form a Settlement on Norfolk Island—Leaves Port Jackson—An Island discovered—Arrival at Norfolk Island—Lands the Convicts, &c. —Ground cleared—A Store-House erected—Vegetables—Distressed by Rats.

AT day-light on the 1st of February, Lieutenant King, and Lieutenant Dawes of the Marines, left Sydney Cove in a cutter, to proceed to Botany Bay and visit Monsieur de la Perouse, on the part of Governor Phillip, and to tender him any assistance he might require. They arrived on board the Boussole at ten in the morning, and were politely received by Monsieur Perouse, and the few officers he had. After Lieutenant King had delivered his message to him, he returned his thanks to Governor Phillip, adding, at the same time, that he should be in France within the space of six months, and as he had stores, &c. sufficient to serve him for three years, he should be happy to send Governor Phillip any thing that he might want. Monsieur Perouse informed Mr. King, that many of the convicts had been to him, requesting to enter on board his ships, but that he had dismissed them with threats, and had given them a day's provision to carry them back to the settlement. The wind blowing fresh from the northward, he accepted Monsieur Perouse's invitation to pass the day with him, and to return to Port Jackson the next morning*.

About this time two criminal courts were assembled to try offenders, who are proceeded against in the following manner. The Judge-advocate issues his precept for three senior naval officers, and three military officers to assemble at a certain time, dressed in their uniforms and their side-arms: when they are met, the judge-advocate administers an oath to the members: afterwards one of the members administers an oath to the judge-advocate, who presides at the court, and the rest take their seat according to their rank. The prisoner is then asked whether he is guilty, or not; when the general answer is, "not guilty." The accusations are read, and witnesses examined to support the charge; after which the prisoner enters on his defence, and produces evidence. The court is then cleared, and the members proceed to pass sentence. If judgment of death is pronounced, five out of the seven must concur in opinion. The governor can respite a criminal sentenced to die, and the legislature has fully empowered him to execute the sentence of the law, or to temper it with mercy. Actions for debt, to a certain amount, are cognizable by this court; and all other actions at common law, where they are decided according to the law of England, as nearly as can be ascertained.

On the 6th Governor Phillip signified his intention of sending Lieutenant King to Norfolk Island, with a few people, and stock to settle it; and Lieutenant Ball was ordered to receive on board the Supply the stores and provisions for that purpose. The business engaged the whole of Mr. King's attention till the 15th, when,

* In the course of their conversation the Lieutenant was informed that he had touched at and been off the following places, *viz.* Madeira, Teneriffe, and Santa Catherina. He had been at Kamtschatka, where he replaced the wooden inscription which had been erected to the memory of Captain Clerke, (which was nearly defaced) with a copper one. From Kamtschatka, he went to Macao, to the Phillipines, the Sandwich Islands, Isles des Navigateurs, Friendly Islands, and Norfolk Island, from whence he came to Botany Bay. At the island Maouna (one of the Isles des Navigateurs) he had been so unfortunate as to lose Monsieur de Langle, captain of the Astrolabe, with eight officers, four sailors, and one boy, all of whom were killed by the natives, besides a number who were wounded. It was also supposed that thirty of the natives were killed in this unfortunate affray. De la Perouse quitted the island immediately after endeavouring to regain his long-boats, which he found the natives had destroyed. He mentions the inhabitants of these islands as a strong and handsome race of men; very few among them being less than six feet high, and well proportioned; and the women are delicately beautiful. He further observed, that the inhabitants are much more advanced in internal policy and order than any of the islands in the Pacific Ocean. He declared, that at every place he had touched at or been near, he had found all the nautical astronomical remarks of Captain Cook to be very exact and true. He concluded with saying, "Enfin Monsieur Cook a tant fait, qu'il ne m'a rien laissè a faire, que d'admirer ses oeuvres." *In effect, Mr. Cook has done so much, that he has left me nothing to do, but to admire his labours.*

having

having received his commission and instructions from the governor, and taken the oaths of fidelity and allegiance, &c by which he was appointed superintendant and commandant of Norfolk Island, he embarked the following persons, who were appointed to go with him, *viz.* Mr. James Cunningham, master's mate of the Sirius; Mr. Thomas Jameson, surgeon's first mate of the Sirius; Mr. John Altree, assistant to the surgeon; Roger Morly, weaver; William Westbrook, and ——— Sawyer, seamen; Charles Heritage, and John Batchelor, marines; with nine male, and six female convicts; twenty-three persons in the whole.

They sailed from Sydney Cove at seven in the morning, and at eight got out of the harbour, when it blew a perfect hurricane. At two in the morning on the 16th, the wind veered round to south-by-west, and moderated. In the evening a flying fish flew on board, which in this latitude was thought extraordinary. At day-break, on the 18th, land was discovered, bearing east-south-east. Early the next morning, having neared the land considerably, they perceived a pointed rock right a-head, at some distance from the island: they hove to, and soundings were tried for with 120 fathoms of line, but they got no bottom. They had light winds and pleasant weather till the 24th, when they had very strong gales from east-south-east, with a high cross sea. Early in the morning of the 28th, the wind veered to south-west, and, supposing themselves to be about fifteen leagues to the westward of Norfolk Island, they hove to at seven in the evening. About eleven o'clock in the forenoon they made the largest of the two small islands, lying off the south-west end of Norfolk Island five leagues distant. The point of Norfolk, opposite Nepean Isle, was named Point Hunter, after Captain John Hunter of his Majesty's ship the Sirius.

At day-light on the 3d, Lieutenant King left the Supply, and went in her boat with Mr. Cunningham, to examine the south-west side of the island, which they rowed round till they opened Phillip and Nepean isles off the south point. There is only one place on this side of the island where landing is practicable, and that is in a small bay just within the west point.

As it blew very fresh all night, Lieutenant King landed the next morning abreast of the Supply, with the midshipman and surgeon; they walked across the island to the bay that Mr. King had seen the day before. After ascending a very steep hill, they got to the top of the island, which they found to be a plain, but every foot of ground was covered with trees, or the large roots of trees which rose above the surface of the earth: it was impossible to walk the distance of three or four yards, without encountering an almost impenetrable net-work formed of a great variety of articles. No grass or herb grew between the roots of these trees, though the soil appeared to be extremely rich and good. The pines, which are numerous, are of incredible growth: one of them, which had been blown down, or had fallen by age, measured 140 feet in length; and several were then standing, which measured 30 feet in circumference. They grew perfectly straight, having no branches for almost eighty feet from the ground.

They found it impracticable to get into Anson's bay, though they saw down into it: the hill over it was a perpendicular cliff, with a large kind of iris growing on the sides of it. Had not the iris been sufficiently strong to have supported their weight, they must have fallen down a depth of ninety feet. They were too thankful for their mistake to attempt a second trial.

During this excursion they saw not a leaf of flax, or any herb whatever. They saw pigeons, parrots, parroquets, doves, and a great variety of birds, so perfectly tame that they might be knocked down with a stick. On hearing a report that landing in Anson's bay was very practicable, Lieutenant Ball accompanied Lieutenant King to visit and examine the place, and they found it exactly answered the master's description of it. The shore, close to the beach, was covered with a long kind of iris, within which was impenetrable forests, and the soil was extremely good. Here Mr. King determined to fix, and was highly pleased that he had discovered a spot where he could begin his operations. But, as it was late in the evening, he returned on board the Supply, when she was soon after brought to an anchor in twenty fathoms.

At day-light on the 6th Lieutenant King left the Supply, with two boats, taking in them all the persons belonging to the settlement, with the tents, some provisions, and many of the most necessary tools; all which they landed, and began clearing a spot of ground, to erect the tents on: he colours were hoisted, and before sun-set,

every article was on shore, and the tents absolutely pitched. Before the colours were hauled down, Mr. King assembled his small colony under them (Lieutenant Ball, and some of his officers being present) and drank the health of his Majesty, the Queen, the Prince of Wales, and success to the settlement. And, to testify their loyalty, they gave three cheers on the occasion.

Soon after the landing of this party, they discovered a fine rivulet of water, running close at the back of the ground where the settlement was made. Trees, growing in every direction, formed an impenetrable assemblage of them, and gave the whole an appearance of an impervious forest. As Lieutenant King had only twelve men (one of whom was seventy-two years of age, and another a boy of fifteen) exclusive of the mate and surgeon, his progress for some time must consequently have been very slow. On the 8th they had strong gales and cloudy weather: at nine in the morning they hoisted the colours, as a signal that the Supply's boat might land; and at eleven they received the last of their baggage, provisions, and stores, and hauled the boat up. In the afternoon Lieutenant Ball came on shore to ask Mr. King if he had any further occasion for the Supply; and, as he had not any, he took leave and returned on board; and in the afternoon sailed for Port Jackson. Lieutenant King sent by him a journal of his proceedings to Governor Phillip *.

Wishing to make every thing as commodious as possible, he set people to work on the 17th, to clear a piece of ground a little above the garden, where he intended to move the tents, or to build houses: he set two sawyers and a carpenter to work in digging a saw-pit, in order to saw pine for building a store-house for provisions, &c. which were now lodged in his tent, made of the Sirius's sprit sail.

In walking about the island, the surgeon found out the flax plant, which proved to be what they had hitherto called the iris. Mr. King had no idea of its being what Captain Cook calls the flax-plant of New Zealand: the cliffs and shore near the settlement were covered with it: it very much resembles the iris, except that the leaves are much thicker and larger; the flaxy part is the fibres, which extends the whole length of the leaf.

The store-house was finished on the 2d: its dimensions were twelve feet square, and nine feet high. All the provisions were now deposited in it. During the last three days the wind blew strong from the south-west, which blighted every plant which bid fair for doing well: the rats were now discovered to be very numerous; they destroyed some Indian corn which was three inches out of the ground.

Supposing the south-west winds would be frequent during the winter, Mr. King began to clear the ground on the north-east side of the hill, which he named Mount George, which would be sheltered from the south and south-west winds. The ground, which had some time been clearing to fix the tents upon, being now ready, they were moved to it on the 3d, and some of the men began to build huts: the sawyers were employed in sawing scantling, and other necessary timber to build the lieutenant a house.

The wheat which had been sown in the garden ground on the 2d, had been consumed by the rats on the 4th. Not a grain was left upon

* Sunday, the 9th, every person in the settlement assembled in his tent, where he performed divine service; after which his commission from the governor was read, appointing him commandant of this island. He then assured every person, that he intended to forward the king's service to the utmost of his power; and, (addressing himself to the convicts) informed them that the idle or dishonest should not escape that punishment which was due to useless and destructive members of society.

In the afternoon they saw some turtle lying on a sandy beach at the east end of the bay, two of which were conveyed to the tents for general use, and issued in lieu of salt provisions. Having thus discovered that there were turtle on the island, Mr. King gave peremptory orders, that no person should go near the beach where they were seen, that they might not be frightened, or risk the loss of so valuable a resource. The turtle they had taken weighed two hundred weight each. From this time till the 15th, every person was employed in cleaning and turning up the garden ground, which, when finished, was enclosed by a hedge, and sown with different kinds of seeds. This afternoon three more turtles were turned, which were brought to the settlement.

On Sunday, the 16th, Lieutenant King performed divine service. Two convicts, whom he had permitted to take an excursion the preceding day, returned this day at noon quite naked: they had several cuts or wounds in different parts of their bodies, occasioned by the entangled state of the woods, and the sharpness of the briars: they had not been long from the settlement before they lost the sight of the sun from the thickness of the woods. At length, hearing the noise of their church-bell, which was a man beating on the head of an empty cask, they speedily returned to the settlement.

the land. There were no cats, and but one dog on the premises; and these vermin were therefore become a serious nuisance: to get rid of them, however, as soon as possible, all the empty casks were ordered to be converted into traps.

On Sunday, the 6th, Lieutenant King performed divine service; and, as some irregularities had taken place, which did not merit corporal punishment, he read to them the orders for the preservation of decorum, of which the following is an abridgement *.

SECTION XII.

Regular Employment of the Convicts—Meet with a disagreeable Accident—Thefts detected—The Robbers punished—Troubled with Rats—Live Stock on the Settlement—Trees affording Food for Hogs—Some of the Settlers poisoned—Cured with sweet Oil—A Convict punished for seditious Language—Birds—Description of Arthur's Vale—The King's Birth-Day—Flourishing State of the Gardens—Arrival of the Supply—Four Persons drowned—Ball-Bay described—Arrival of the Golden Grove Transport—Marines and Convicts brought.

THE settlement being now arranged in some degree of order, Lieutenant King distributed the people into regular working parties, to facilitate the different operations he was desirous of getting forward. Five men were dispatched to clear away ground on the north-east side of Mount George; two in clearing a road from the ground to the fresh-water rivulet; two sawyers were preparing timber to build him a house; two men were erecting huts; and he sent Mr. Altree, the surgeon's assistant, to proceed upon a project already mentioned.

For a considerable time the people were thus invariably employed; but the work was often retarded by severe colds; and sometimes the workmen had been blinded for four or five days together, by the white sap of a tree, which, getting into their eyes, occasioned the most excruciating pain. The best remedy for it, however, was Florence oil, which, dropped into the eye, destroyed the acrimony of the sap †.

Though the commandant, finding the rats to be extremely numerous, had ordered the empty casks to be converted into traps, and great quantities of those vermin were caught for several successive nights; yet they soon grew too cunning to be caught in the traps, and too bold to be intimidated by the dead bodies of their associates, which had been industriously scattered about the premises. Some glass was then directed to be pounded very fine, and mixed with oatmeal, which being scattered about the garden, destroyed vast numbers of them ‡.

On the 8th of May, the two sawyers, the carpenter,

* I. No person to be absent from public worship, which will begin every Sunday morning at eleven o'clock: they are to appear clean, and behave themselves devoutly.

II. The hours of work, are to begin at day-light, and work till half past seven; at half past eight to work till half past eleven; and then at two till sun-set.

III. To encourage the cultivation of gardens, every one will have the Saturdays to themselves; but those who misapply that indulgence will be deprived of it.

IV. Seeds will be allowed to those who have cleared away garden ground, and those who raise the greatest quantity of seeds and vegetables will be rewarded.

V. The women are to sweep round the houses or tents every morning, and to cook the victuals for the men. Fish or fowls must not be cleaned in or near the houses; that business must be performed by the sea-side.

VI. Persons going near turtle-bay will be instantly and severely punished.

VII The women are to collect the men's dirty linen every Friday, and to return it, washed and mended, on the Sunday morning.

VIII. No person is to cut down or destroy any banana-tree.

IX. Exchanging or selling cloaths by the convicts is strictly forbid. Inattention to this order will be deemed a theft.

X. Great care is to be taken of all the tools.

XI. The dishonest or idle will be totally excluded from any present or future indulgences; they will either be chastised by corporal punishment on the island, or be sent to Port Jackson, to be tried by a criminal court there.

† On the 17th, Mr. King detected John Batchelor, a marine, in his tent, stealing rum out of a small vessel. In the afternoon he assembled the settlement, and punished the thief with three dozen lashes; causing him to be led by a halter to the place of punishment. The deficiency of rum was also stopped out of his allowance. Though there was reason to hope that this example would have a good effect, yet on the 20th, a convict boy was detected stealing the surgeon's allowance of rum out of his tent. He was punished with a hundred lashes.

‡ Out of six ewes which the commandant brought to the island,

carpenter, and three convicts were poisoned, by eating some beans which much resembled the windsor bean; in two hours after eating them, they were seized with violent retchings, and cold sweats. Fortunately some sweet oil, and other medicines administered by the surgeon, gave them relief: but they were so much weakened and exhausted that they were unable to work for a week afterwards.

On the 10th the commandant ordered a punishment of forty lashes to be inflicted on one of the convicts, for using threatening and seditious language.

On their first landing they found a great number of pigeons, which were so tame as to be easily taken; but they had lately quitted the low boughs, and harboured about the tops of pines; when plucked and drawn, they weigh from about three quarters of a pound to a pound each. Parrots here are very numerous and very ugly; the harshness of their note is also extremely disagreeable to the ear. The parroquets are entirely green, except a red tuft on their head. Several of the small birds have a melodious note, and their plumage is beautiful. There are also a species of birds which burrow in the ground like rabbits, where they hatch their eggs, and rear their young: they are web-footed, and their bill resembles that of the sea fowl; but they are free from any fishy taste, their flesh being deemed extremely fine. These birds never quit their holes till sun-set, from which time till midnight the air swarms with them.

On the 18th the shell of the commandant's house was finished: its dimensions were twenty-four feet long by twelve wide.

They planted upwards of one thousand cabbages on the 23d, and every vegetable at the plantation was in a thriving state: they had turnips, carrots, lettuces, onions, leeks, parsley, cellery, five different sorts of cabbages, artichokes, and beet in great forwardness; but the potatoes and yams appeared to be almost destroyed by the grub-worm*.

On the 7th the commandant was obliged to punish a convict with thirty-six lashes, for stealing a hatch of eggs from under a hen in the act of incubation.

About this time Governor Phillip sent seventeen queries to Lieutenant King, respecting the appearances of things, and the probable consequences that might ensue, respecting their different operations. These queries are amply stated in the original work, accompanied with the commandant's judicious answers.

At sun-rise on the 12th of August, colours were hoisted, in observance of the Prince of Wales's birth-day.

Frequent accidents having happened to boats here, induced the commandant to search for a better landing place, or a place where landing might be practicable, when the surf ran too high to land in Sydney Bay; and Lieutenant Ball having mentioned one in Cascade Bay, on the north side of the island, the commandant set out at day-light in the morning, taking three men with him, in search of it, proposing also to examine Ball Bay in his road. He left the surgeon commanding officer at the settlement, where his steadiness and general knowledge made him a valuable associate. After climbing and descending a number of steep hills, they arrived at a gully to the westward of Ball Bay, about eleven o'clock, from whence they walked round to the bay by the sea-shore, it being low water.

The landing place mentioned by Lieutenant Ball, is on a rock, a little detached from the island, and has communication with it at half tide: there is no objection to this being a very good landing-place, were it not for the almost total impossibility of getting provisions or stores further than the rock, which is about three hundred yards from the valley that leads down to it. At day-light on the 19th, they set out on their return to Sydney Bay, where they arrived at four in the afternoon, with hardly a rag to cover themselves, the cloaths being torn off their

island, five died with the scab, though every possible care was taken of them; and one of the sows was poisoned by eating something noxious in the woods. The remainder of the stock, which appeared to be doing well, consisted of two ewes, three sows, two boars, four hens, one cock, three ducks, a drake, and a goat.

* On the 6th, the commandant ordered Mr. Cunningham, the mate, into the boat, with four men, to lie within the point of the reef, in order to assist the Supply's boat, should any misfortune happen to her: unfortunately their boat was swept away to the westward by the tide, and whilst they were striving to get under the point of the reef again, a heavy surf broke on her broadside, and overset her. This shocking accident gave him infinite concern. Small as their numbers were before, they were now decreased by the loss of Mr. Cunningham, an amiable young man, the sawyer, and one of the best of the convicts: a seaman, belonging to the Supply: was also drowned.

backs by the briars. In the morning of the 25th, the surgeon, with six men, went to Ball Bay, to make a commencement on the creek, taking with them four tents, and a week's provisions.

Early in the month of October, they found a sensible alteration in the weather; it being very warm, except in the mornings and evenings, which are still extremely cold. On the 13th at day-light, the Golden Grove was observed lying at an anchor in the road; and soon afterwards, Mr. Donovan, a midshipman belonging to the Sirius, came on shore to deliver the governor's letters. This gentleman also delivered a letter from Mr. Blackburn, the master of the Supply, informing the commandant that he sailed from Port Jackson the 24th of September, being ordered by Governor Phillip to conduct the transport to this island.

In the course of the 15th were received on shore the party of marines, and all the convicts; together with stores and provisions. The next day they landed 50 casks of flour, 18 casks of salt provisions, and a quantity of stores. This day a turtle was turned, which weighed 200 pounds.

SECTION XIII.

Provisions received by the Golden Grove—Timber sent to Port Jackson—Observations on the Navigation near Norfolk Island—Number of Persons on the Settlement—Nepean and Phillip Islands described—Corn reaped—A Party sent to Ball Bay—Task-work of the Convicts—The Free People exercised—Plot to seize the Island—Orders for the Preservation of Regularity—Provisions and Stores examined.

HAVING received instructions from Governor Phillip to send what timber he could to Port Jackson, the commandant set the men to work in cutting spars and sawing boards for that purpose. At day-light on the 17th of October, the Golden Grove stood into the road and anchored. By the 21st of October the whole of the stores and provisions were received from the Golden Grove; besides two sows and fourteen young pigs, belonging to the crown; and a she-goat, which was the property of Mr. Collins, the judge-advocate*.

But, previous to the departure of the Golden Grove, a letter was dispatched to Mr. Blackburn, the master of her, requesting him to communicate his remarks on the navigation round these islands, which he very obligingly complied with, and his observations are found very just and accurate: they are inserted at large in the large Quarto Edition, page 337, &c.

As Lieutenant King had much occasion for a carpenter, a man who had been discharged from the Sirius, and was on board the Golden Grove as a sailor, made application to him for a birth, but he said he was so circumstanced that he could make no agreement with him, but informed him that if he chose to remain he must take it on himself: this he, with great readiness, consented to, and the commandant found him a great acquisition.

The Golden grove sailed for Port Jackson on the 29th †.

The settlement now consisted of the following persons, *viz.*

Mr. Stephen Eunnavan, midshipman of the Sirius	1
Mr. Thomas Jamaison, surgeons' first mate of ditto	1
Mr. John Altree, assistant-surgeon	1
Roger Morley, Robert Webb, Thomas Webb, seamen belonging to ditto	3

* Provisions for about seventeen months were received at the following ratio: for one man for a week, flour, seven pounds; beef three pounds and a half, pork, two pounds: butter, six ounces; peas, three pints. For one woman for a week, flour, four pounds and a half; beef, two pounds and a quarter; pork one pound and a quarter; butter, four ounces, peas, two pints. The above ratio was full avoirdupoise weight, without any deduction whatever.

† To encourage the convicts who came by the Golden Grove, Mr. King gave them from the time of their landing till the 30th, to build houses for themselves, and to clear a small portion of garden ground. The little mansions were expeditiously erected, being composed of logs, and thatched with bull-rushes, and flags, which made them very comfortable. Some of the convicts who had the best characters, had permission to build their houses in the vale, and to clear away a proper quantity of land to be appropriated to culinary purposes.

John

Brought over	6
John Livington, carpenter, late belonging to ditto	1
Serjeant, corporal, six private marines	8 16 free
Male convicts	29
Female convicts	17
Total number, besides two children,	62*

On the 14th the commandant planted thirty rod of ground with Indian corn: some which had been planted in September was now five feet high, and the wheat grew so extremely rank that it was found necessary to crop it. He went out in the coble on the 22d, and sounded between Point Hunter and Nepean Isle: there is a good channel, and not less than four fathoms close to Point Hunter. On the north side of Nepean Isle, in mid-channel, there are eight fathoms water.

The weather now becoming very hot, the commandant changed the working hours, and, to avoid the heat of the sun, gave the labourers from half past ten till half past twelve; they were employed in clearing ground, making shingles, and cutting a road from the settlement to Ball Bay†.

The 25th, being Christmas day, was observed as a holyday: the colours were hoisted at sunrise, and the commandant performed divine service; the officers dined with him, and each of the convicts had a pint of rum, and a double allowance of beef: the evening concluded with bonfires.

On taking a comparative view of the work performed by convicts, the commandant adopted the plan of tasking them, and proposed an arrangement in which they all acquiesced. Six men were to cut the timber down on an acre of ground in one week: six men were to clear away and turn up an acre of ground fit to receive seed in twenty-eight days: two sawyers were to perform one hundred feet of sawing each day‡.

Thomas Watts, a convict, received twenty-four lashes on the 19th, for contemptuously refusing to work, and abusing the corporal of marines for properly reprimanding him.

Some irregularities having occurred, the commandant found it necessary to assemble all the free people on the 23d, to read the articles of war. The next day Robert Webb, a seaman belonging to the Sirius, but who was employed as a gardener on the island, expressed a desire to speak to him in private: the request being complied with, he informed him, that a plan had been concerted among the convicts to surprize him, with the rest of the officers, &c. and to possess themselves of the public stores. On his being interrogated, he said, that Elizabeth Anderson, a female convict, had informed him of the particulars. Thinking it necessary to substantiate this information, the commandant caused Robert Webb and Elizabeth Anderson to be kept apart, and took their depositions separately, on oath. They agreed in every particular, and were in substance as follow.

That, on the 22d, between nine in the morning and noon, Elizabeth Anderson sighed, when William Francis, who stood near her, asked her why she sighed? she answered, that she was very low. William Francis then asked her, if she could get

* After the departure of the Golden Grove, the commandant made public an extract from Governor Phillip's letter to him, to the following effect.—"You will return any marine, convict, or other person, whose conduct you disapprove: and you may permit those whose good behaviour merits the indulgence, to work one day in the week on lots of land, one or two acres to a convict, to be pointed out by you for that purpose, and which may be considered as their own property while they behave well. When the time for which they are sentenced shall expire, lands will be granted them, if they wish to remain as settlers, and you are at liberty to give them such a part of the public stock to breed from as you may judge proper, forbidding any person on the island to sell any fowl, hog, or other animal, without your permission; and you are not to permit the killing of any live stock, till you have a sufficient quantity on the island for your support, except in cases of sickness.

† On the 8th the commandant housed all the barley that had been raised on an acre of ground, and was sown in June and July. At first it had a most promising appearance; but when the ear was shot and nearly filled, some heavy rains in September laid a considerable part of it down, and the quantity destroyed by rats and quails was incredible: though there was a prospect of getting at least fifty bushels of grain, the whole, when gleaned, did not exceed ten bushels. The barley was extremely fine, 116 ears having been produced from one grain. Garden vegetables also flourished; cabbages were cut which weighed twenty-six pounds each.

‡ On the 8th, a male child was brought forth, and being the first born on the island, he received the name of Norfolk. On the 15th, at noon, parties were sent in pursuit of the cockswain of the coble, who had lost himself in the woods, as he was returning from Ball Bay: he was found on the 18th, naked and almost exhausted, and could not, without difficulty, be conveyed to the settlement.

her liberty whether she would leave Webb. On her saying yes, he said, the first ship that comes here, except the Sirius, every one of us will have our liberty, to which we were all sworn last Saturday; and we (the convicts) would have had it already, if the Sirius was not the first ship expected; and the day that Watts was flogged was intended to have been the day for making Mr. King, and the free people prisoners.

The taking Webb and Anderson's depositions, and interrogating them consumed about two hours; and, it being Saturday, many of the convicts were out getting cabbages. As there was a possibility that the accusation against William Francis might be an invention; yet, having received that information, it became necessary to use every precaution against a surprize. The commandant therefore ordered a constant guard of three privates, to be conducted by Mr. Dunavan, the serjeant, and corporal; and a guard-house was built, in which the provisions and stores were deposited.

John Bryant, a convict, was interrogated on this business, and a pardon promised him if he would discover all he knew. He was brought before the commandant, and sworn on the cross, being a Catholic; the substance of which was as follows. That in going out to work on the 14th, with all the convicts, Samuel Picket remarked how easy it would be to take the island, by making the commandant prisoner, when going to, or returning from Arthur's Vale; after which, coming in and seizing the arms, and making prisoners of the marines and other free people. The remainder of Bryant's deposition agreed in every particular with the testimony of Elizabeth Anderson and Robert Webb *.

The commandant ordered Samuel Picket and William Francis to wear irons, and the next day (being Sunday) after prayers he addressed the convicts, and pointed out the absurdity, as well as the villainy of their plan; assured them that nothing but industry was necessary to insure them a happy and comfortable support: he exhorted them, by their future conduct, to efface the memory of this criminal attempt; promising to distinguish and encourage those whose conduct was meritorious. Having finished his address to the convicts, he caused the following additional orders to be read.

The commandant orders that no officer, soldier, free person, or convict, shall ever absent themselves from the camp or town for ten minutes together, without leave from the officer charged with the guard.

Every person returning from that leave, shall acquaint such officer of their return.

Every convict, who is observed going over the hill to the farm, without leave, will be fired at by the sentinel.

The convicts, and not more than three together, may build houses for themselves, at their leisure hours, in such places as shall be pointed out.

No person shall, in future, be suffered to live out of the camp.

John Thomson and Samuel Picket are dispossessed of their garden ground, on account of their ill behaviour. So outrageous an attempt having been made, the commandant thought himself justified in administering the oaths of allegiance and fidelity to the officers, marines, and free people individually, in the presence of the convicts. The theft of some Indian corn being fully proved, the offender, William Thompson, was sentenced to be punished with fifty lashes. Thomas Jones, another convict, received thirty-six lashes, for his insolence and abuse of Messieurs Jamieson and Dunavan. All the convicts were now employed in cutting down trees, and clearing the ground near the houses.

Joseph Long, a convict, endured twelve lashes on the 28th, for quitting his work, and absenting himself without leave.

On the 15th the commandant forgave Samuel Picket and William Francis, for their ill behaviour respecting the plot; but he expressed his determination to send Francis to Port Jackson the first opportunity, conceiving him to be a troublesome and worthless villian.

* It was now clear to the commandant that a scheme had been entered into, in which most of the convicts were concerned, and their succeeding in it so far as regarded the taking of himself and the officers prisoners was not to be doubted. Had they succeeded in the first part of their plan, the destruction of the provisions and stores would have followed. It is difficult to say what fatal consequences would have ensued, from the drunken state they would have been in whilst the rum lasted.

SECTION

SECTION XIV.

A great Hurricane at Norfolk Island—Arrival of the Supply—Convicts sent from Port Jackson—Provisions and Stores—Departure of the Supply—Robberies—Employment of the Convicts—A Store-House erected—Arrival of a Party of Marines—Thefts committed—A Female Convict punished—Gardens plundered—Wheat destroyed by Paroquets—Number of Inhabitants.

THE interval of fine weather, which enabled them to examine the state of their provisions, was succeeded by a tremendous hurricane. In the morning of the 25th, they had light winds from the north-east, and very dismal cloudy weather: towards noon the wind blew a heavy gale, and its violence continued to increase. At midnight it blew with great fury, attended with deluges of rain. At four the next morning, several large pines were blown up by the roots; one of which fell on a hog-stye, and killed a sow and seven pigs; a similar accident befel a sow and two boars belonging to the crown*.

On the 2d of March, at day-light, the Supply was seen in the road: on which the commandant sent Mr. Dunavan on board her: he soon returned bringing letters to Mr. King from Governor Phillip; who had also sent twenty-one men, and six women convicts, with three children in the Supply, to be landed on this island. Having full confidence in the few free persons who were with him, the commandant did not hesitate a moment in receiving the additional number of convicts who were now arrived, though some of them had very infamous characters.

The commandant now ordered the surgeon to examine all the convicts who had lately arrived, to discover if any of them were infected with disease, but they were all found to be healthy.

The convicts, who were now just arrived, were permitted by the commandant, to work on habitations for themselves till the 18th: the others were employed at task-work.

Officers, Marines, and Free-men,	16
Male convicts - -	50
Female convicts - -	23
Children - - -	5
Total	94 †.

On Sunday the 5th, after divine service, Thomas Jones, a convict, acquainted the commandant that the term of his transportation expired that day. He had been informed by Governor Phillip, that the different terms for which the convicts were sentenced was not known, as the masters of the transports had left the papers necessary with their owners; but that he had wrote to England for them, yet till their arrival no steps could be taken, as the convicts' words were not satisfactory. He therefore informed Thomas Jones that he might work for whom he pleased, and if he chose to work for the public good, he would be used the same as others were, till he received further orders concerning them.

On the 8th, Noah Mortimer, a convict, received

* From four in the morning till noon, the wind increased to a severe hurricane, and the heaviest rain that imagination can conceive. Pines and oak-trees of the largest size, were thrown by the violence of the tempest to a considerable distance from the place where they grew. To add to the horror of this scene, a large tree fell across the granary, and dashed it to pieces, staving a number of flour casks that were in it; but, by the general activity of the persons in the settlement, the only loss sustained was a few pounds of flour, and a few stores that were blown away. The gale now raged with the most violent fury; while forests seemed, as it were, swept away by the roots. The violence of the wind blew up cabbages, turnips, and other vegetables forcibly from the earth. At three the wind veered round to south, and moderated, and at sun-set the weather was very pleasant. There was no appearance, on any part of the island, of such a storm having ever happened before: fortunately, however, only one man was hurt; he received a violent contusion on his right side, by the branch of a tree falling on him.

† Thomas Watson, a convict, was detected in another convict's house, on the 23d, stealing a bag of flour. The commandant, after examining witnesses, and fully proving the theft, ordered him into confinement, with an intention of sending him to Port Jackson to take his trial. To prevent these depredations as much as possible in future, he gave orders for the convicts to be mustered in their huts three times every night, and the hour of muster to be constantly changed: this was in some degree salutary, but robberies continued to be committed.

James Davis, a convict, received twenty-four lashes, on the 25th, for using seditious expressions, and contemptuously throwing away some fish which had been issued.

On the 30th, some incorrigible wretch stabbed one of the hogs belonging to the crown, which occasioned its death.

ceived sixty lashes for refusing to work. The 10th, being Good Friday, divine service was performed; but no work was done at the settlement.

On the 26th, John Williams, a marine, quitted his guard, and raised a quarrel in a convict's house; when a battle arose between himself and another marine; the former was punished with the chastisement of twent-four lashes*.

At day-light on the 13th, his Majesty's armed tender the Supply, was perceived in the road: the surf at that time ran very high in Sydney Bay, and there being but little easterly wind, with a strong flood tide, she could not get to Ball Bay before three in the afternoon; when the commandant received his letters from Governor Phillip, informing him, that he had sent Lieutenant John Creswell, of the marines, with fourteen privates, to the island; that Mr. Creswell was to put himself under his command; and that in case of his death or absence, the government of the island was to devolve on him. He had the pleasing gratification to find that his conduct was approved of by Governor Phillip.

The surf ran very high on the 14th till three in the afternoon, when Lieutenant Creswell landed, with his detachment and part of their baggage; but nothing else could be received on shore till the 17th, when part of the provisions and stores were landed.

The sea ran so high that no boat could land till the 21st, when they received the remainder of the provisions and stores.

On the 28th of July, a tree fell on John Bryant, a convict, which bruised his head so extremely that he died about two hours afterwards. This man was one of the very few honest convicts which the commandant had on this island. Edward Gaff, a convict, received a hundred lashes on the 6th, for stealing three quarts of wheat. That thefts in so small a society should so often happen was truly astonishing; but when it is considered, that the principal part of that society were notorious for their depravity, it would almost be wonderful if they acted with integrity.

Most of the marines, who came to the island with Lieutenant Creswell, were now in possession of comfortable huts and good gardens.

The 12th of August, being the anniversary of the Prince of Wales's birth-day, was observed as a holiday, but no liquor was given to the convicts on that occasion, their recent thefts having excluded them from that indulgence.

The carpenters' having finished the shell of Lieutenant Creswell's house, the commandant employed them in making an addition to the back part of his habitation, being apprehensive it was in danger of being blown down by the prevailing violent south-west winds.

After divine service, on Sunday the 16th, the following orders were read, for preserving regularity and good order among the inhabitants †.

His Majesty's justices of the peace for this island, *viz.* the Commandant and Lieutenant John

* The 4th of June, being the anniversary of his Majesty's birth-day, it was observed as a holiday. The colours were hoisted, the marines and free people drew up under arms, in front of the commandant's house. The male convicts were drawn up on the right, and the females on the left. In consideration of the good behaviour of the convicts on the day of the hurricane, they were permitted to partake of the general festivity of the day: half a pint of rum being ordered for each man, and a pint of wine for each woman. When every person was assembled, and before the firing began, Thomas Watson, who was in confinement for a theft, was forgiven in consideration of the day.

† I. All persons are regularly to attend muster, and divine service, unless prevented by sickness: the penalty for disobedience is extra work incurred, or by a stoppage of provisions: if repeated, corporal punishment will be inflicted.

II. No person shall be absent from their quarters, without leave, either by night or day. If they are seen lurking about after the watch is set, they will be fired at by the centinel.

III The working hours shall be duly attended to, and those who are absent from their work after the drum beats for that purpose, will lose a portion of the time they may save from their tasks. A second offence will be severely punished.

IV. The tasks to be continued as usual, and the time saved by the gangs to be at their own disposal. Those who distinguish themselves by cleaning the ground and cultivating their gardens, shall meet with suitable encouragement.

V. If any one belonging to a gang shall be justly accused of idleness, he shall receive adequate punishment.

VI. Those who from indolence or obstinacy neglect to build themselves warm huts, or who cut themselves through carelessness, shall have part of their provisions stopped, till they are able to go to work again.

VII. The tools and utensils to be returned every night to the store-house, when the retreat beats: any person who shall be found secreting any tools, or any article of the

John Creswell, have appointed Roger Morley, and John Altree, to hold the office of constables; and every person is required to assist them in the execution of their office.

On the 29th, Ann Coombs, a female convict, received fifty lashes for defrauding Thomas Jones of some provisions: but this punishment did not deter her from committing similar crimes the next day, she being then detected stealing two check shirts from Francis Mew, a marine: for the latter crime she received the chastisement of one hundred lashes.

The gardens suffered extremely from the destructive effects of the grub-worm. The surgeon, who with great perseverence, had improved his spot of ground, and every thing in it was in great forwardness, had all his plants and vegetables nearly destroyed by those vermin; and many of the other gardens partook of the same fate. The depredations of these reptiles and the convicts, rendered the cultivation of gardens very discouraging to individuals. The corporal of marines, an industrious young man, had planted a piece of ground, and by attention and assiduity, had raised a quantity of vegetables, among which there was a very fine crop of potatoes, which was expected to produce at least five bushels; but, on the evening of the 5th, between sun-set and the time of the watch being set, some villians dug up the whole of the potatoes, and destroyed a quantity of other vegetables. Though the convicts were mustered in their huts at sun-set, and three times more in the course of the night, the theft was not discovered till the next morning; when strict search was made to discover the offender, but to no purpose. The potatoes were (in the cant phrase) *all planted; viz.* buried in the ground, to be taken out as they were wanted. Such acts as these were daily committed by these atrocious wretches.

Catherine Johnson, a female convict, received fifty lashes on the 7th, for abusing the storekeeper, and accusing him wrongfully of theft.

As it would be convenient to have a path to the west side of the island, the commandant employed six men to cut a road from the settlement to Mount Pitt, and from thence to Anson Bay, which was completed by the 21st.

On the 27th of October fifteen acres of wheat were in ear, and had a good appearance. Seven acres of Indian corn also appeared in a thriving state, though much thinned by the grub-worm. The paroquets, of which they had myriads, were constantly destroying the wheat, and the garden productions, though a number of persons were employed in beating them away with long poles. The carpenters completed the barn on the 9th of November: its dimensions were thirty feet long, and sixteen wide, and it had a loft over it. It was a complete building, and conveniently situated in the center of the cultivated grounds in Arthur's Vale.

Lieutenant Creswell, on the 13th, turned a turtle in a small bay to the westward of the settlement. He distributed it among the free persons, and others, as far as it would go.

Robert Webb, a seaman belonging to the Sirius, went to the valley above Cascade Bay on the 15th; having obtained the commandant's consent to become a settler, should Governor Phillip have no objection to it.

On the 3d of December, at day-light, the Supply arrived in the road, and soon afterwards the commandant received his letters from Governor Phillip. Six men, and eight women convicts were landed, with provisions and stores for the settlement. By an order from Governor Phillip, all persons on the island were put to two-thirds allowance of provisions, to commence on the 5th: the settlement at Port Jackson were put to this allowance in November.

At sun-rise on the 25th, the colours were hoisted, in observance of Christmas-day. Divine service was performed, two hogs ordered to be killed, belonging to the crown, and issued to the free people and convicts, at the rate of one pound and a half to each person. The crop of

the King's stores, or commits any other robbery, shall be punished as his Majesty's justices of the peace shall direct, or be sent to Port Jackson to be tried by the criminal court, as the commandant may judge proper.

VIII. Every person is cautioned to take care of his cloathing: if any person, whether free or convict, shall buy or sell any article of slop cloathing, he shall be prosecuted for buying or selling the king's stores.

IX. When a complaint is thought necessary, the person complaining shall mention it to the corporal of the guard, who shall report it; when the commandant (or in his absence, Lieutenant John Creswell) will hear and decide upon it.

X. Disobedience of orders, insolence to officers or overseers, or other improper behaviour, tending to disturb the peace, or to be injurious to the king's service, shall be severely punished, and honesty and regularity meet with due encouragement and reward.

wheat turning out tolerably well, two pounds of flour were also ordered to each man, and one pound to each woman, to celebrate the festival. Those few among the convicts who were found industrious, were now rewarded for it.

Richard Phillimore, a convict, had informed the commandant that the term of his transportation expired on the 16th of January, and having taken the oath administered on that occasion, he expressed a wish of becoming a settler. Being a sober industrious man, the commandant indulged him with time to look out for a situation agreeable to his wishes: at length he fixed on a spot in the island, where he thought proper to reside; on which the commandant sent some labourers to build him a house, and to clear away a little ground for a commencement. He also gave him a sow with young, and some poultry. He seemed clearly of opinion, that in about a year or two at the farthest, he should be able to support himself, without requiring any assistance from the settlement.

SECTION XV.

The Arrival of the Sirius and Supply at Norfolk Island—The Loss of the Sirius—Captain Hunter and the Crew saved—General Meeting of the Officers—Regulations adopted—Martial Law Proclaimed—Lieutenant-Governor Ross takes the Command—Lieutenant King leaves Norfolk Island—Description of the Country—State of the Cultivation—General Behaviour of the Convicts—Lieutenant King arrives at Port Jackson—Finds the Country much improved—Manners and Customs of the Natives.

HEARING a tumultuous noise of huzzaing and rejoicing, intelligence from England was anticipated; and, on enquiry into the cause, it appeared that two vessels were seen in the offing. As the wind blew strong, and a great sea was running in the bay; these vessels, which were found to be the Sirius and Supply, bore up for Ball Bay, to which place the commandant repaired, and received from Lieutenant Ball his letters from Governor Phillip. Our expectations were again disappointed, for, instead of those pleasing hopes being realized which had been excited by the appearance of the vessels in the morning, they were informed that no relief had arrived, nor had any intelligence been received from England. The commandant was also directed to furnish Lieutenant-Governor Ross with copies of all such orders as he had received from the Governor, which had not yet been carried into execution; and to leave him such rules and regulations as he had established for preserving order and regularity among the convicts. He was farther directed to embark on board the Sirius, whose commander had orders to receive him on board, with all such petty officers, seamen, and marines, belonging to that ship, who were not desirous of becoming settlers; directions having been given to the Lieutenaut-Governor to that effect. Lieutenant-Governor Ross brought with him one captain, five subalterns, a great many non-commissioned officers and privates, and the colours: with them also were brought a number of male and female convicts, and children; with their proportion of cloaths, provisions, and stores. The two vessels went round to Cascade Bay, where part of the marines, and some of the convicts were landed; and on the following morning, the remainder of the marines and convicts, with a considerable part of their baggage were landed, and they marched to the settlement. The Lieutenant-Governor arrived at the settlement at noon. In the orders of the night, he desired the commandant would continue the command of the island till his departure.

On the 15th the remains of the provisions and stores on the island were surveyed by Captain Johnson, and Lieutenants Creswell and Clark; after which Lieutenant King got the receipts from Mr. Roger Morley, to whom he had given an order to act as store-keeper, with the approbation of Governor Phillip. This day Jeremiah Leary, a convict, ran the gantlet among the convicts for theft, and was severely punished. The two vessels were working up for the island; and at one in the afternoon the Supply came into the road,

road, landed a quantity of baggage, some stock, and thirteen casks of provisions *.

At ten in the morning of the 21st, Lieutenant-Governor Ross, Captain Hunter, all the commissioned officers of the marines, and of the Sirius, and Lieutenant King, assembled in the government house; with a view of establishing martial law till farther orders, there being no law in force on the island by which criminals might be punished with death for capital offences. It was therefore unanimously agreed, that in all cases where sentence of death was pronounced, five persons out of seven should concur in opinion. It was also resolved, that all private stock, Indian corn, and potatoes, should be delivered to the store-keeper, and appropriated for the use of the public; and that every person should be limited to half allowance of provisions till it should be known what quantity could be saved from the wreck; and that three locks should be put on the store-house and barn; one key of which to be possessed by Captain Hunter, another in the possession of a person to be named by the Lieutenant-Governor, and the third by a person to be named by the convicts. These resolutions were agreed to, and signed by the parties assembled.

At eight in the morning of the 22d, all persons on the island were assembled near the lower flag-shaft, on which the union was hoisted. The marines were drawn up in two lines; the colours of the detachment unfurled: the Sirius's crew were drawn up on the right and the convicts on the left; the officers being then in the center The proclamation was then read, declaring that the island was to be governed by martial law.

In the afternoon John Brannagin and William Dring (two convicts) offered their services to go on board the wreck, to heave the live stock over; and, having obtained permission, sent a number of pigs and some poultry on shore, but they continued on board: at the dusk of the evening, a light was observed in the after part of the ship; on which a volley of small arms were fired, to oblige them to quit the deck, or put the light out; which not being done, a three pounder shot was fired into the wreck, but without effect. In consequence of this John Arscot, a convict carpenter, offered to go off; and though it was very dark, and the surf ran very high, he got on board, and obliged the other two convicts to quit the wreck by the hawser. Arscot hailed the shore, but they could not perfectly understand him. Brannagin, one of the convicts was drunk when he came on shore.

On the 23d, the master of the Sirius, with eight men, went on board the wreck by the hawser, and a triangle was erected on the reef, to keep the bight of the hawser from the ground; which would greatly facilitate the landing any article from the wreck. The master informed Captain Hunter, by a note, that Brannagin and Dring, the two convicts, had set fire to the wreck, which had burnt through the gun deck; but had fortunately been extinguished by Arscot, who went on board to send them out of the ship. On this information they were ordered into confinement, previous to their being tried for setting fire to the wreck.

The weather being moderate and pleasant in the morning of the 24th, Lieutenant King went on board the Supply, with Lieutenants Water-

* No landing could be attempted on the 18th; on the 19th the wind grew more moderate, and at day-light the Supply came into the road, and the Sirius was at some distance to the southward, standing in for the island. There being very fine landing, Lieutenant King made the signal that large boats could land safely, and by ten o'clock every thing was received from the Supply: soon afterwards, the Sirius hove to, in order to hoist her boats out, which, being accomplished, she made sail; but the tide of flood still ran very strong, and she could not weather the outer rock of the reef which runs off point Ross; unfortunately the wind shifted to the south-east, and forced her near the island: she was now hove on stays, but having fresh stern-way, she tailed on the reef and struck. The masts were instantly cut away, and only two boats' load of provisions could be got out. At five o'clock the surgeon's mate came on shore by the grating, being hauled through a very great surf: he brought a note from Captain Hunter, desiring to know if the commandant thought it would be safe for the sailors to abide by the wreck all night. He made a signal for the wreck to be quitted, and by the time it grew dark, the captain and most of the sailors were on shore, being dragged through a very heavy surf. Captain Hunter and Mr. Waterhouse were got on shore together, the former being so much exhausted that he had nearly quitted his hold: the first and second Lieutenant, with some of the sailors, remained on board all night.

When the ship struck, Lieutenant Governor Ross ordered the drums to assemble the marines and convicts: martial law was then proclaimed; the officers and marines were ordered to wear their side-arms; guards were set over the barn and store-houses; and some other necessary regulations enforced by the Lieutenant-Governor. On the 20th, by four o'clock, every person was got out of the wreck, without any other accident than receiving a few bruises.

house

house and Fowell, and twenty-two of the crew, belonging to the late Sirius.

Cursory Remarks on Norfolk Island, extracted from Lieutenant King's narrative. This island is a long square, containing about fourteen thousand acres: it is six miles in length, and four in breadth. It is hilly, but there are some extensive plains on the summits of those hills. Mount Pitt is very remarkable, being about two hundred fathoms high. The whole island is covered with a very thick forest, choaked up with underwood.

It is supplied with several streams of very fine water, some of which are sufficiently large to turn a number of mills. On a hill, near the middle of the island, there is a pond of fresh water of about half an acre, with no rivulet near it, nor any spring to be perceived; yet it is always full in the greatest drought, and has a very good tase. All the streams abound with fine eels.

As a proof of the salubrity of the air of this island, the commandant asserted that there had hardly been any sickness since he landed in it; nor had his people any illness, except a few colds.

There are only five sorts of trees on the island that are entitled to the appellation of timber; *viz.* the pine, a wood resembling the live oak; a yellow wood; a hard black wood; and a wood resembling the English beach. The pine-trees are from one hundred and eighty to two hundred and twenty feet high. The turpentine, which exudes freely from the bark, is of a white glutinous substance, but it is remarkable that there is none in the timber. There are a variety of small trees upon the island; but as they are not useful, they are not more particularly described. The flax-plant of New Zealand grows spontaneously, and in great quantities in many parts of the island, but chiefly on the coasts, and in the vallies near the sea.

The coasts abound with excellent fish, which are principally the snapper, and weigh from four to eight pounds each.

The spring is very visible in August, but the trees on many parts of the island are in a constant succession of flowering and seeding the whole year round. The summer is extremely hot. From the 23d of September, 1789, to the 22d of February, 1790, not a drop of rain fell, excepting on two days in December. From February to August may be called the rainy season; though there is not any regular time of rain during these months, the weather being sometimes very fine for a fortnight together; but when the rain does fall, it pours in torrents. The winter, which may be said to begin in April, and end in July, is very pleasant: there is never any frost; but when the south-west winds blow, which are frequent and violent in these months, the air is raw and cold. The south-east and east winds are very parching and dry, as no dew falls during the prevalence of these winds. The south-east wind blows during the summer with very little variation, and sometimes very strong *.

The number of inhabitants left on Norfolk Island, when Lieutenant King quitted it, were as follow:

Civil, military, and free -	90
Belonging to the Sirius -	80
Male convicts - -	191
Female convicts - -	100
Children - - - -	37
Total	498

* From the goodness of the soil of Norfolk Island, Mr. King supposes it capable of maintaining at least one hundred families, allowing to each a hundred acres of ground, and reserving two thousand acres for fuel.

SECTION

SECTION XVI.

Lieutenant King sails for Batavia—Meets with a dangerous Shoal—Tench's Island—Account of the Inhabitants—Prince William Henry's Island—Touches at Kercolang—Description of the Inhabitants—Streights of Salayer—Arrival at Batavia—Interview with the Governor—Description of Batavia—Manners and Customs—Departure from Batavia—Mortality among the Sailors—Arrival at the Isle of France—Arrival in the English Channel.

HAVING received from Governor Phillip the dispatches for his Majesty's principal secretary of state, and for the secretary of the Admiralty, together with the governor's order to go on board the Supply, and to proceed in her to Batavia, and from thence to England with the above dispatches; and Lieutenant Ball having also received his orders, Lieutenant King took his leave of the governor, and at noon on the 17th of April they set sail. From this time till the 22d, they had variable weather. Lieutenant Ball was directed to call at Norfolk Island, if it could be effected without the loss of much time; but as the winds were hanging to the eastward, he thought proper to proceed on the voyage, and accordingly bore up to go to the westward of the shoal seen by the Golden Grove.

At noon on the 3d of May, they were drawing near the situation in which Lieutenant Shortland had discovered land, and being surrounded by birds, and a number of trees floating about the vessel, they were induced to suppose themselves not very distant from it.

On the 4th they sounded, but got no ground with 150 fathoms of line: at noon it appeared like a small island, covered with trees; the weather was hot and sultry, with dark heavy clouds all round the horizon: they had a great deal of thunder and lightning, attended with heavy rain. In the afternoon of the 6th they perceived two small islands, appearing to trend north-north-east, and south-south-west; the main land lying a little to the westward of them.

In the morning of the 19th, they saw an island bearing west by north, six or seven leagues distant; as it lay directly in their course, they soon perceived that it was inhabited, and beheld a number of people standing on the south point, and observed several canoes coming off to meet them; but as the vessel approached them, they paddled towards the shore; still, however, they seemed inclined to be sociable, and the vessel being hove to, they speedily came near them; but no invitation or intreaty could prevail on them to come along-side. At length, two of the canoes, with seven men in each, and two others, with two men each, came close under the stern, but not a man of them would venture on board: it was not without great difficulty that they were prevailed on to come near enough to receive a string of beads, which were let down over the stern; after which they all paddled hastily towards the land. While these canoes were near the vessel, the beach on the island was covered with natives; and on the south point of the island, a man stood alone, with a long pole in his hand, with something annexed to it, which operated as a signal to those in the canoes. The largest of these canoes appeared to be about twenty-eight feet in length. Each had a long out-rigger, to prevent them from over-setting*.

At sun-set they saw another island, bearing west by north: it appeared to be about seventy miles in circumference. This island is surrounded by a sandy beach, on which the surf beats with violence: plenty of canoes were lying near the beach, and some parts of the shore were covered with the natives; but none of them attempted to come off. Several houses were observed among the trees, which appeared to be large and well

* The natives in the canoes were the stoutest and healthiest that our navigators had ever before seen; their skin appeared perfectly smooth, and free from any disorder, and they were entirely naked. They were of a copper colour, and their hair resembled that of the New Hollanders: some of their beards extended to the navel, and much art seemed to have been used in forming them into ringlets; the prevailing fashion on this island appearing to be that of keeping the beard well combed, curled, and oiled. The strength and healthy appearance of these people greatly excited the admiration of the Europeans, who were astonished that so small a spot should support the vast number of inhabitants they saw on the island, all of whom appeared as strong and handsome as those they had observed in the canoes; one thousand inhabitants are supposed to exist upon this island, which Lieutenant Ball named *Tench's Island*, from Captain Watkin Tench of the marines. After lying to near an hour, and perceiving they could have no farther intercourse with the natives, they bore up and kept on their course, steering west by north.

constructed; and the island had a luxuriant and picturesque appearance. It obtained the name of Prince William Henry's Island, in honour of his Royal Highness the Duke of Clarence.

At day-light on the 5th of June, they saw an island bearing north-west, and at eight in the morning of the 6th, being close under the east side of Kercolang, they saw a canoe with a matt sail coming towards them: the natives instantly appeared under the stern without any signs of fear. This canoe contained twelve Malays, who were all cloathed. The out-riggers of the canoe, which were long and slight, would not permit them to come along-side; but a jacket and hatchet being given them, and intimations being made to them to go on shore and bring something to eat, they quitted the vessel, and went towards the shore, where they were followed. Before they landed, a larger canoe, with fifteen Malays in it went to the canoe which had left them; and, as they were not more than two miles from the shore, Lieutenants King and Ball went in the jolly-boat, and joined the two canoes: on this two of the Malays jumped out of of the canoes into their boat, and went immediately to the oars. Such a step could not be misunderstood; it was absolutely saying, "we put ourselves entirely in your power without any precaution." When they approached the beach, and observed the surf breaking on it, they made signs for the canoes to go on shore, and bring some cocoa-nuts and plantains, as they perceived vast quantities on the trees.

Several canoes appeared soon after, which were laden with cocoa-nuts, yams, plantains sweet potatoes, rice, and several other articles, all which were purchased by axes, and other barter: soon after which they returned on board, and were followed by upwards of a hundred canoes. The island of Kercolang is about ninety miles in circumference, and is in general of a very convenient height. These Malays wore no offensive weapons among them, excepting two which were on the beach, who had something resembling halberts in their hands; and they knew not whether these were formed of wood or iron. The houses, which seemed to be erected on posts, were well built and neatly thatched: and their fishing-hooks and lines are chiefly European. The natives are apparently a mild and quiet people; and the confidence that was placed in them sufficiently proved that strangers were not unwelcome guests among them. Their cloathing was a coarse kind of calico, though some of them wore silk; and many of them had a kind of turban round their heads: a Chinese pointed hat was also worn by several of them.

From the 6th to the 10th of June, they had fresh gales of wind at west, with heavy squalls, and much rain, which often obliged them to claw all up. On the 10th Lieutenant Ball declined his plan of going through the streights of Macasser, and adopted that of making the passage between *Celebes* and *Gilola*, through the *Moluccas* and the streights of *Salayer*.

At noon on the 14th, Gigola bore from south by west half west, to east by north. On the 16th they were directly opposite three remarkable conical hills: at midnight they had a perfect deluge of rain, attended with fierce lightning and loud thunder which continued two hours, after which the weather became serene and pleasant. At day-light on the 28th, the island of Salayer bore from south 40° west to north 80° east, and the entrance of the streights north 70° west. The island of Salayer appears to be well inhabited, and cultivated to advantage. The houses appeared to be very good ones.

At half past three in the morning of the 5th, a small island was seen bearing west half south, not more than a mile and a half from the ship; on this they hauled their wind to the southward, and tacked occasionally till day-light. This island is named in the charts *Pulo Packit*, it is very low and covered with trees. Ships bound to the westward, or to Batavia from Crimon Java, should steer west half north, or to west by north, to avoid the shoal to the northward of Pulo Packit *.

The next morning Lieutenant King waited on the general at the request of Lieutenant Ball, to settle the salute, which took place at five in the evening; when the Supply saluted the fort with

* Seeing a brig at anchor under the land, Lieutenants King and Ball went on board her, where they learned that the point of *Pamonakan* bore south-south-west from them, on which they returned on board the Supply, and made sail; and in the afternoon of the 6th, they anchored in Batavia road. Upwards of thirty Dutch ships were seen lying there, besides a considerable number of snows and Chinese Junks.

nine

nine guns, which were returned by an equivalent number *.

After a competent investigation of this business, no other answer could be got than, that the council were to be requested to permit Lieutenant Ball to purchase whatever he wanted, and to engage a vessel to carry what he might want to Port Jackson: this being adjusted, they took their leave. The Shebander drew up a request, which Lieutenant Ball signed, and the following day it was presented to the council, at which the director-general presided (the general being then indisposed.) Every thing was granted; but they refused to interfere in taking up a vessel, or in purchasing provisions, alledging that those matters were to be conducted by Lieutenant Ball. As every vessel here either belonged to the company, or was not capable of such a voyage, it was for a short time doubtful whether any one could be procured. At length, the Shebander, hearing that a snow of about 250 tons lay at a port called *Samarre*, he offered her to Lieutenant Ball; saying he would purchase her and fit her out completely, if Mr. Ball would engage to pay eighty-six rix dollars a ton for the voyage; the Shebander to take all risques upon himself, with respect to the loss of the vessel. As the necessity for provisions was urgent, and as no other vessel was to be procured, Lieutenant Ball thought proper to enter into the agreement, and the Snow was sent for. Provisions were easily purchased, and at a reasonable rate: very excellent beef and pork were bought at six-pence per pound. Of flour, little could be procured, as all the people here eat rice, whether they are Europeans or natives.

As Batavia has been amply described in Captain Cook's first voyage, an elaborate account of this splendid place might be thought superfluous; but as these pages may probably fall into the hands of some who have read no other account, our editor subjoins such remarks as occurred to him during his residence there.

From the best accounts it appears, that the city and its environs cover a space of about eighty square miles: it is situated half a mile from the sea-shore, and has a communication with it by a canal, which will admit vessels of eight feet draught of water. The city is erected on a flat, extending forty leagues to the foot of the nearest mountains. Two large rivers, divided into a number of canals, pass through the principal streets, and on both sides of the different roads: these canals are navigable for large boats, and are planted with trees on each side, cut in the form of a fan. The streets are well drawn at right angles, and are generally wide and well paved: a double row of trees are planted along the sides, which impedes the circulation of air, and contributes to the unhealthiness of the place. Many of the buildings are magnificent, and the houses are finished with elegance and neatness. The inhabitants are particularly attentive to the preservation of cleanliness, which tends to meliorate the intense heat of the place.

No European can appear without a carriage, the paint of which, and his other equipage, identify the rank of the owner; to whom proper respect must be paid by inferiors, under certain penalties. The town is not well defended, the fortifications being irregular and extensive: the walls, which are painted, are very low: it is surrounded with a wide and deep canal; but the best defence of this settlement is its insalubrity. The citadel, or castle, is situated on the right of the city; in which are deposited a vast quantity of cannon, and other implements of war: the governor-general, and the rest of the company's servants, have apartments; and here the governor and council assemble twice a week to transact all public business†.

The roads, or beautiful avenues, leading from the

* On the 8th, Lieutenant Ball waited on the general, accompanied by the Shebander and Lieutenant King. As the general could not speak any other language than Dutch, and the Shebander knew too little English to explain himself sufficiently, Lieutenant King was obliged to interpret between Lieutenant Ball and the Shebander. And here it may be necessary to remark, that, during this conversation, which was in the general's office, they were not asked to sit down. Had the general been polite enough to have made the offer, there was not a second chair in the apartment.

† The suburbs are inhabited by the Chinese and Portuguese: the houses of the former are numerous, but they are low and dirty. The number of Chinese in Batavia, in 1788, was two hundred thousand. They carry on every trade or occupation; many of them are extremely rich, but they are subject to great exactions from the company, or their servants. They are permitted to farm the duties of exportation and importation, for which they pay the company twelve thousand rix dollars in silver money per month. Goods belonging to the company are exempt from duties, but those of every other person pay eight per cent.

The

the different gates of the city, are lined with buildings, which nature and art have contributed to render commodious: every house has a large garden, where elegance and convenience are alike consulted. These houses are occupied by the most respectable people of Batavia.

The government of this island, and indeed of all the Dutch possessions in India, is lodged in the governor-general, assisted by a number of counsellors, called "Counsellors of India." The number is not fixed; but twelve of them must reside at Batavia. At this time, there is one who governs at each of the following places, *viz.* Cochin, Ceylon, Macasser, and at the emperor's court at *Jamarre*, or Java, where, it is said, 400 European cavalry are kept, *to do honour* to the emperor.

The council meet every Tuesday and Friday in the council-room at the castle. Every thing relating to the civil and military government, commerce, and every other concern of the company, is transacted by this council; but the governor-general has a plenary power to put in execution any measure he may judge necessary for the good of the company*.

The deference paid to rank is not confined to carriages, but extends to individuals: no person under the rank of an *edele heeren* is permitted to wear velvet.

When Lieutenant King was at Batavia, there were only five European women on the island of Java, the rest being born of Malay or Creole mothers: it is indeed distressing to see how much they affect the manners of their Malay slaves in chewing beetle, and other disagreeable practices. The ladies wear a loose white or flowered muslin robe, which is open and large, extending to the wrists and neck; much time, however, is employed in the arrangement of their hair, which is generally long, black, and thick; it is gathered into a knot on the back part of the head, and is so nicely combed that not a single hair is out of its place: round this a wreath of diamonds is displayed, which is more or less valuable, according to the circumstances of the wearer. In the evenings, a wreath of jessamine is placed round the hair, which gives it an agreeable prefume†.

On the 21st of July, the *Snelheid*, a packet of 140 tons, belonging to the company, arrived at Onrust, and Lieutenant King applied to the governor and council for a passage to Europe in that vessel. On this occasion, the captain of the packet was ordered to receive him, for which he paid 190 rix dollars into the company's chest. The order to the captain specified, that in consideration of that sum being paid, he was to have a passage to Europe in the Snelheid, and to be accommodated and victualled as a sailor. He was therefore obliged to make a further agreement with the captain for the use of half of his cabin, for which he was to pay him 300 rix-dollars, and his proportion of what provisions were laid in by him, above what the company allowed.

The captain of the packet having received his final orders, they sailed from Onrust on the 4th of August, and in the evening of the 5th, were clear of the streights of Sunda.

Now the pestiferous air of Batavia began to shew itself, for the vessel had not been five days at sea before six men were attacked with the

The Chinese burying-ground is about three quarters of a mile from the city, and consists of fifteen or twenty acres: for the annual rent of this ground, they pay ten thousand rix dollars; and, at the expiration of every ten years, they re-purchase it for a very considerable sum, as regulated by the governor and council. A person of consequence assured Lieutenant King that the Chinese pay twenty thousand rix-dollars a year, for the privilege of wearing their hair queued. These industrious people are also subject to many other impositions. It is remarkable, that the Chinese are the only strangers which are not affected by the unhealthiness of the place, but much may be said in favour of their temperance and regular manner of living.

* The present governor-general, whose name is William Arnold Alting, has been resident more than thirty years at Batavia; eleven of which he has been governor-general: his private character is said to be amiable and respectable; but how any man possessed of common feelings, can suffer such humiliations from those around him, it is difficult to conceive. When any person approaches the general to speak to him, his behaviour and address must be the most abject imaginable; and the respect and profound submission which every servant of the company, and every inhabitant must assume on these occasions, are little short of adoration paid to the divinity: this homage is carried to so extravagant a height, that when the general enters the church, though the congregation may be at prayers, yet every person is obliged to get up and face him till he is seated in his pew, bowing as he passes.

† Onrust is a very small island, about a quarter of a mile in circumference, situated about two leagues and a half from Batavia. It is surrounded by guns, and there is a kind of citadel on it. Onrust is supposed to be more healthy than Batavia; but when it is admitted that twenty men are constantly employed in making coffins for those who die on the island, it cannot be thought a very safe situation.

putrid

putrid fever; and very soon afterwards, the captain, his two mates, and all the sailors, except four, were unable to get out of their beds. It was an aggravation to the horror of this situation, that the surgeon, who indeed knew very little of his profession, was so ill that he could not even help himself. In this dilemma, Lieutenant King found it necessary to use every means for self-preservation; and having obtained the consent of the captain (who was not yet delirious) and the chief mate, he spoke to the only four men who were well, and represented to them that going below would subject them to the infection: he assured them that he would not go below himself, except on extraordinary occasions, when he would use every precaution against the infection; and he further observed that the preservation of their lives and the vessel, with the recovery of those who were sick, depended upon their conforming to his orders; and that he hoped, with God's assistance, not only to preserve them in health, but to conduct the vessel into a port. They promised him implicit obedience, and he began to make a tent on the after part of the quarter deck, for them to lie under. He found much difficulty to prevail on them to relinquish the drams of new arrack, of which they got ten a-day, but he succeeded; and in lieu of it, he gave each man three large wine glasses of port wine, with two tea-spoons full of bark in each glass. Three of the sick men soon died of the putrid fever, their faces being covered with purple spots. He ordered them to be lashed up in their hammocks, and hove overboard with their cloaths; making those who performed that office, wash themselves freely with vinegar, and fill their noses with tobacco. The captain was now delirious, as were most of those who were sick.

On the 12th, Lieutenant King obtained the captain and chief mate's consent to bear up for the Isle of France, when they should get into the latitude of it. The chief mate's complaint terminating in an intermitting fever, he prevailed on him to lie under the tent; and by a plentiful administration of bark and port wine, he became able to keep a day watch.

On the 14th his particular companion, Mr. Miller, was taken ill, and the captain and most of the sailors were dying, not having had any medicine administered to them during their illness: three or four among them, who were of a strong constitution, were in a state of raving madness, uttering dreadful imprecations against the doctor: he was therefore obliged to order them to be lashed in their hammocks, and they died a few days afterwards. Between the 12th and the 27th, five men died; and, on the 28th Mr. Miller departed this life: the whole were taken off by a most malignant putrid fever.

On the 29th they made the island of Mauritius, and anchored the same day at the entrance of the north-west harbour. The captain and three sailors died, as the people were carrying them on shore *.

The general object of cultivation on this island is the indigo, from which four or five crops a-year are procured. Attempts have been made here to rear cochineal; the island abounding with the plant on which the insects lie, but which are destroyed by a small bird. At the distance of three leagues from the port, the King has a garden, which is kept with the utmost care, where the gardener lives at the king's expence, who rears the plants, and distributes them gratis to the colonists. It should be observed that 550 of the nutmeg trees were reserved for *Cayenne, Saint Domingo, Martinico,* and the *Seychilles.*

Here Lieutenant King was importuned by Messieurs De Conway, Mc Namarra, Rossilly, and all the respectable people, to take his passage in La Nymphe frigate. Monsieur de Fourneaux politely offered him half his cabin; and no inducement was wanting to make him accept it. This packet being thoroughly cleansed, and a fresh crew entered, composed of all nations, they sailed on the 21st of September, having only four sailors on board out of twenty-six, which came from Batavia, the rest being all dead, or left at the hospital with little hopes of recovery. They arrived at the Cape of Good Hope on the 9th of October. And here Lieutenant King found Lieutenant Riou waiting for orders from England. As he understood that all vessels belonging to the Dutch company were strictly forbid stopping at any port, or having communication with any vessels during their passage from the Cape to Amsterdam, he wrote a letter to Mr. Van

* The town of Port Louis is large, and covers a great deal of ground, but most of the houses are paltry buildings. Here are large stores, and every thing necessary for the equipment of fleets. The number of inhabitants on the island, exclusive of the military, is about eight thousand; and of blacks twelve thousand.

de Graff, the Dutch governor, stating that he was charged with dispatches, and requesting that the captain might be permitted to heave the vessel to, off the most convenient port in the English channel, in order to land him with the dispatches. This request he readily granted, giving the captain an order for that purpose, and the lieutenant a copy of it. On the 20th of October, La Nymphe arrived here from the Isle of France, and the same day the packet sailed. On the 2d of November they passed the island of St. Helena, and on the 7th they saw the island of Ascension. After a pleasant voyage of two months from the Cape of Good Hope, Lieutenant King arrived in England on the 20th of December, having been absent on the public service, in various stations, and in different places, in the southern hemisphere, three years and seven months.

Here ends Lieutenant King's Journal, giving an account of the first settlement of a new colony in a very distant region, which cannot fail to be interesting to those who delight in tracing the origin of nations.

By the XVIIth section we are informed of the arrival of the Lady Juliana Transport, which sailed from England in September, 1789, arrived at Port Jackson on the 3d of June, 1790,; bringing supplies from England, and dispatches from the Guardian at the Cape of Good Hope, which sailed from England in August, and unhappily struck on an island of ice, on the 23d of December, 1789. By the loss of the Guardian the colony was deprived of liberal supplies which had been sent from England, the want of which greatly impeded the progress of the settlement.

By a general return of male convicts, with their respective employments on the 23d of July, 1790, at Sydney there were 729—At Rose-Hill, 179.

By the XVIIIth section, we are informed of an excursion into the country, and of an interview with the natives. About this time one of them threw a spear with great violence, and struck it against Governor Phillip's collar bone. It was Governor Phillip's intention as soon as he should be able to go out, to endeavour to have the man given up who wounded him, not with a view of inflicting any punishment, but of detaining one or more of these people till they understood each other's language. Nothing very interesting appears in the remaining part of the section.

Section XIX. is wholly occupied in descri bing the fruits in season, and the manners of the natives.

Section XX. dwells principally upon the depredations committed by the natives, with some memoirs of the life of Bannelong; his attendance at Governor Phillip's house. The appearance of a prodigious number of bats is particularly mentioned. "Governor Phillip saw one which measured upwards of four feet from the tip of each wing. Some were taken alive, and would eat boiled rice, and in a few days were as domestic as if they had been bred in the house: the governor had one, a female, that would hang by one leg a whole day, without changing its position; and in that pendent situation, with its breast neatly covered with one of its wings, it ate whatever was offered to it, lapping out of the hand like a cat, Their smell is stronger than that of a fox; they are very fat, and are reckoned by the natives excellent food. From the numbers which fell into the brook at Rose-Hill, the water was tainted for several days, and it was supposed that more than twenty thousand of them were seen within the space of one mile." A further description of the manners and customs of the natives terminate this section.

Section XXI. relates an excursion into the country, and points out the wonderful dexterity of the natives in climbing trees.

Section XXII. relates principally a second excursion into the country; concluding with a list of the first settlers.

Section XXIII. mentions the arrival of the Gorgon and several transports at Port Jackson. As well as the arrival of the Albemarle transport. Lieutenant R P. Young, agent. The convicts on board the Albemarle, during the passage, attempted to seize on the ship, and the ring-leader having knocked down a centinel, and seized his sword, got on the quarter-deck, and was attempting to kill the seaman at the helm; but the master of the ship, hearing a noise, took up a loaded blunderbuss, and discharged it at the villain, who, finding himself wounded, dropped the sword, and ran away. Many of the convicts had got their irons off, and were rushing aft for the quarter-deck; but, on their seeing their leader wounded, they ran forward and hid themselves, so that the whole business was finished in a few seconds. After a short conversation among the officers, two of the ring-

leaders

leaders were hanged, and two seaman, who had furnished the convicts with knives, and who were to have conducted the ship to America, after all the officers and ship's company, with the soldiers, had been put to death, were landed at Madeira, that they might be sent to England: they were both of them Americans, and one of them had a superficial knowledge of navigation.

This section also mentions the arrival of the Barrington, which brought out a captain, three non-commissioned officers, and twenty-four privates of the New South Wales corps, with 264 male convicts: four women came out with their husbands, who were convicts, and two children.

Section XXIV. relates that the Supply left Port Jackson on the 26th of November, 1791.—doubled Cape Horn, and anchored at Rio Janeiro; from whence they proceeded towards England *.

* Of the convicts who were received by the last ships, there were great numbers of the worst of characters, particularly among those who came from Ireland, and whose great ignorance led them into schemes more destructive to themselves than they were likely to be to the settlement. Some of these people had formed an idea that they could go along the coast, and subsist on oysters, and other shell fish, till they reached some of the Chinese settlements: others had heard that there were a copper-coloured people, only one hundred and fifty miles to the northward, where they would be free. Full of these notions, three parties set off; but, after straggling about for many days, several of them were taken, and others returned to the settlement. Some of these wretches were so prepossessed with the idea of being able to live in the woods, and on the sea-coast till they could reach a settlement, or find a people who would maintain them without labour, that several who were brought in when almost famished, and carried to the hospital, went away again as soon as they were judged able to return to their labour: and though what would be called a day's work in England is very seldom done by any convict in the settlement, yet some of them declared they would sooner perish in the woods, than be obliged to work.

END OF GOVERNOR PHILLIP'S VOYAGE.

TRAVELS IN INDIA.

DURING

The Years 1780, 1781, 1782, and 1783,

BY WILLIAM HODGES, R. A.

IN a sensible preface to this interesting publication, Mr. Hodges says the followingpages "consist of a few plain representations of what I observed on the spot, expressed in the simple garb of truth, without the smallest embellishment from fiction, or from fancy—it was owing entirely to the influence and persuasion of my most justly esteemed friend, Henry James Pye, Esq. Poet Laureat, that these observations have been submitted to a tribunal, which I have ever regarded with awful respect—the Public."

He then modestly claims a candid allowance, on the part of his readers, for any imperfections they may perceive in the course of his performance; judiciously observing, that "the studies absolutely requisite to any degree of proficiency in a liberal art, and the practice of that art afterwards as a profession, can leave but little leisure for the cultivation of literature." He also declares that a long circumnavigation, and the professional labour required in completing the works for Captain Cook's second voyage, occupied him for several years; and that a voyage to India, with his different excursions into that country, engaged no inconsiderable portion of his time and attention. He concludes with observing, that the embellishments were engraved from his drawings, which were made upon the spot to the utmost of his ability; and politely returns thanks to the artists for the skill and attention that they have displayed upon them.

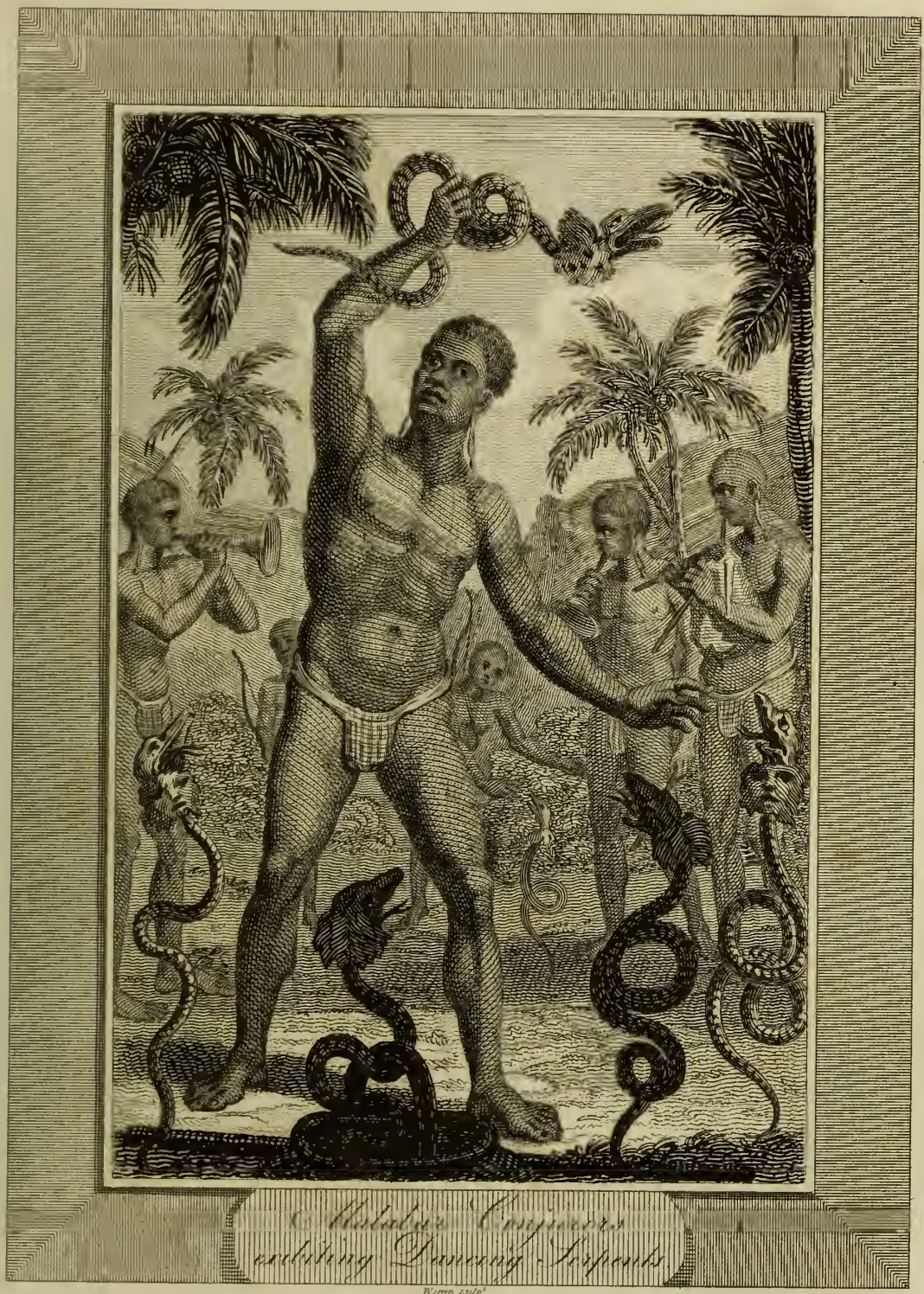
SECTION I.

Appearance of the Coast of Coromandel—Madras—Boats—Reception of Strangers—Sensations on entering the Country—War with Hyder Ally—Sketch of the Country, Buildings, &c. —Hindoo Temple.

THE coast of Coromandel is an even low sandy country, and the land rises so gradually from the sea, as to be almost imperceptible, but from the appearance of different objects which present themselves upon the shore. The English town, rising from within Fort St. George, presents a beautiful prospect from the sea, the houses being covered with chunam, a kind of stucco, as fine as marble, and bears as high a polish as that elegant material. The stile of the buildings is generally handsome, consisting of long colonades, with open porticoes, and flat roofs; exhibiting to the eye an appearance of what might be conceived of a Grecian city in the age of Alexander.

When the ship approaches her anchoring ground, she is hailed by the boats of the country, filled with people of business, who come on board in crowds. At this moment the European feels the great distinction between Asia and his own country; and when he ascends upon the deck, he sees, with some degree of astonishment, the long muslin dresses*, and black faces, decorated with large gold ear-rings and white turbans.

* This dress is usually worn both by Hindoos and Mahomedans, and is called Jammah; whence the dress generally worn by the children in England, is usually called a Jam.



Malabar Conjurors
exibiting Dancing Serpents

Warren sculp.

turbans. The first salutations the European receives from these strangers, is by bending their bodies very low, touching the deck with the back of the hand, and the forehead three times.

The natives first seen in India by European travellers, are Hindoos, the original inhabitants of the peninsula. In this part of India they are delicately framed, and their hands have more the appearance of those of tender females. Correspondent to this delicacy of appearance, their manners are mild, tranquil, and attentive. They are very remarkable for never presuming to interrupt any person when he is speaking, but wait patiently till he has concluded, and then answer with the utmost composure and respect.

From the ship a stranger is conveyed on shore in a boat called a Massoolah boat; a vehicle well calculated to elude the violent shocks of the surf, that breaks here with great violence: they are very light, and dexterously managed by the natives; they are usually attended by two Katamarans, paddled by one man each, and so constructed, that should the boat be overset by the violence of the surf, the adventurers in it may be preserved.

The natives make a motley appearance; some are entirely naked, others wholly cloathed, except the face and neck. Women are seen carried on men's shoulders on pallankeens, and men riding on horseback clothed like women in linen dresses. The whole excited the strongest emotions of surprise!

Our traveller was preparing eagerly for a tour through the country, but that great enemy to the arts, war, descended like a torrent over that quarter; driving the husbandman from his plough, and the manufacturer from his loom. On the 18th of July, 1780, Mr. Hodges was a living melancholy witness to its effects; multitudes arrived from all quarters at Madras as a place of refuge, laden with the small remains of their little property, mothers with infants at their breasts, and fathers leading their horses burthened with their young families. Confusion and dismay appeared depicted in every countenance; and, within the space of about three days, not less than two hundred thousand of the country people were received within the black town of Madras. Our government behaved on this melancholy occasion with their usual liberality; and public and private relief was instantly afforded them to a very considerable amount. Mr. Smith, who was at the head of the government of Madras, with the solicitous attention of his lady, to procure shelter for many English families within the walls of the fort, will ever be gratefully remembered.

The country houses of the English, within a mile of the fort, were stripped of their furniture, by the owners, even to the doors and window blinds: a necessary precaution, as the enemy extended their depredations even to the walls of Madras.

The troops being collected from different quarters, the vanquished spirits of the people appeared to revive; and the reyot was again beheld in the act of cultivating his rice field, or gathering in his fruits. Nothing less was expected, as soon as the army took the field, but that Hyder Ally would soon be escorted by them into Fort St. George, and there make a public atonement for the miseries he had occasioned*. But this vision soon vanished, on the unhappy fate of Colonel Baillie's detachment, and the return of the army from a three week's campaign, much reduced and dispirited. But the arrival of Sir Eyre Coote from Bengal, with money and other supplies in September, with the active measures pursued by that gallant officer, restored confidence to the troops; and the most sanguine hopes of the inhabitants were entertained from his exertions.

The opportunities presented to a painter are few, in a country over-run by an active enemy. Our traveller, however, made a drawing of Marmalong bridge, a modern work built at the expence of an Armenian merchant. It is over a small river, which the sea receives at a little distance from the village of St. Thoma, four miles to the southward of Madras. The Portuguese had once a settlement here, and the church, with a few houses yet remain. The legendary tale of the Roman Catholic church is, that St. Thomas the apostle, in his mission to India, suffered martyrdom on the spot where the church is erected.

* Adjoining the glacis of Fort St. George, to the northward, a large town usually called the Black town, is situated. It is sufficiently fortified to prevent any surprize by a body of horse.

The settlement of Madras was formed by the English about the middle of the last century, and was only of importance for its trade, till the war so ably conducted by General Lawrence, from 1748 to 1752; from which period the English may be considered as sovereigns. In the school of this able officer the late Lord Clive received his military education.

Fort St. George is a place of considerable strength, planned by the ingenious Mr. Robins, who was eminent for his philosophical and mathematical knowledge. Since his time, however, many additions have been made to the works. It has several spacious streets, consisting of elegant houses, enriched with the marble-like stucco. The interior apartments, indeed, present to the eye only white walls, but they exhibit a freshness highly grateful in so hot a country. Ceilings are very uncommon in the rooms, as none are to be found able to resist the ravages of that destructive insect the white ant. These animals are formidable for the immensity of their numbers, which are able to destroy, in one night's time, a ceiling of any dimensions. "I saw an instance," says Mr. Hodges, "in the ceiling to the portico of the Admiralty, or Governor's house, which fell in flakes of twenty feet square. It is the wood work which serves for the basis of the ceilings, such as laths, beams, &c. that these insects attack; and this will sufficiently explain the circumstance I have just mentioned."

Mr. Hodges was much delighted with the beautiful pieces of architecture in Choultry plain: on going to visit a family in one of these houses, in the cool of the evening, after a very hot day, the moon shone in its fullest lustre, and every house on the plain was illuminated. Each family, surrounded by their respective friends, were in the open porticoes, enjoying the breeze. Such a scene operated on our European like enchantment*.

The country near Madras is a perfect flat, on which is erected, at a small distance from the fort, a Choultry. These are public buildings very common in Hindostan, and are of Hindoo origin: they are analogous to those structures called caravanserais, well known through Asia. They have been built and endowed by the liberality of princes, or the benevolence and piety of individuals. A Bramin generally attends them to administer relief and consolation to the poor and distressed, who are frequently supplied with a mat to lie on. Tanks, or reservoirs of water, or wells, are usually near the spot.

SECTION II.

Voyage to Bengal—Description of Calcutta—Route from Calcutta to the Plains of Plassey——Description—The Author's Progress through the Country—Ruins of Zananah—Cataract of Mootejerna—Happiness of India—Description of Bauglepoor—Town and Fort of Monheir—Indian Mode of travelling—Voyage back to Calcutta on the Ganges—Temples—Females bathing—Singular Appearance by Night.

AFTER residing about a year in Madras, and no opportunity presenting itself to our author of seeing and making drawings of the interior part of the country, he resolved to pursue his voyage to Bengal; and, perceiving his health to be on the decline, he entertained thoughts of returning to Europe by the following season. He embarked in February, 1781, and arrived in the Ganges in March; and had the happiness to find, on his arrival in Bengal, that the change of air, and a sea-voyage, had perfectly re-established his health.

The appearance of the country was rather unfavourable at the entrance of the Ganges;† a

* Few objects are to be met with here which illustrate the history of the original inhabitants of India; but our traveller saw a beautiful Hindoo temple, or Pagoda, about two miles south of Madras. It is lofty and of considerable magnitude. Adjoining to the temple is a large tank, with steps descending to the bottom, filled with water. The whole is of stone, and the masonry well executed. On the surface of the temple many basso relievos appear. but our author knew not whether they were connected with the rites and worship of Brama or not, but he avers that some of them are of the most indecent kind.

† This is also called Houghly River, it being only a branch of the great Ganges.

few

few bushes at the water's edge, barely marking the distinction between sky and water. As the ship approaches Calcutta the river becomes narrower. A spot denominated Garden Reach, presents a view of handsome buildings, on a flat surrounded by gardens: these structures are the villas of the opulent inhabitants of Calcutta. After gaining another reach of the river, the whole city of Calcutta bursts at once upon the eye. This capital of the British possessions in the East, is defended by a considerable fortress on the south side of the river, superior in strength and correctness of design to any one in India.

The city of Calcutta extends about four miles and a half along the banks of the river: the breadth, in many parts, is inconsiderable. The streets are broad: and the line of buildings surrounding two sides of the esplanade of the fort, is magnificent: their being detached from each other, and insulated, renders them additionally superb. The buildings are all on a large scale, that a free circulation of air may be admitted; a very necessary consideration in a climate the heat of which is extreme. Our author very emphatically says, "Every house may be considered as a temple dedicated to hospitality."

Calcutta, from an inconsiderable fort, which yet remains (and in which the black-hole so fatal to many of our countrymen in 1756) and a few warehouses, soon became a great and opulent city, when the government of the kingdom of Bengal fell into the hands of the English. For its magnificence, however, it is solely indebted to the spirit and taste of the late governor-general Mr. Hastings.

It is curious to observe the mixture of European and Asiatic manners which are exhibited at Calcutta. Coaches, phaetons, chaises, pallankeens and hackeries*—the passing ceremonies of the Hindoos—and the different appearances of the fakers form a sight more novel and extraordinary than any other city in the world can present to a stranger.

Soon after our author's arrival in Bengal, an opportunity offered itself, which he readily embraced, of making drawings of part of the country, high as Moughain on the Ganges, a distance of three hundred miles. He proceeded on this journey in a pallankeen. Fromthe apparent state of the country a just estimate might be formed of the happiness or misery of the people. Throughout the kingdom of Bengal, tillage was in a flourishing state, and cattle were numerous in all quarters: the villages were neat and clean, and the houses swarmed with inhabitants.

Few objects occur to claim the attention of the curious traveller from Calcutta, till he reaches the plains of Plassey, where Lord Clive displayed great abilities both as a general and a politician; and on that plain was laid the foundation of an extensive empire in India. At Plassey a house presents itself, which was once a hunting-seat of the Nabob of Bengal: it is about seventy miles from Calcutta, and thirty from Moorshedabad. In the last-mentioned place are seen the remains of Cutterah, formerly a seminary for men of learning among the Mussulmans: this building was erected by Jaffir Cawn, the Nabob of Bengal in the early part of the present century; who from his mildness, his love of learning, and his inflexible justice, was the most popular nobleman who ever held that office in Bengal, under the Mogul government.

The road proceeds from Moorshebaded through Jungapoor and Sooty, to Oodooanullah. This road is crossed by several small streams, some of which have ferry boats stationed at them, to accommodate the traveller. At Oodooanullah is a bridge, built by Sultan Sujah one hundred and thirty years ago; which is one of the most elegant specimens in architecture of those times: and it has become famous in ours by the victory obtained over the troops of Meer Cossim in 1764, by the late Major Adams. This situation is thought unhealthy, from the forests in its neighbourhood. It was the seat of the government of Bengal, under Sultan Sujah: there yet remains a part of the palace, supported by vast octangular piers, raised from the edge of the river. This palace, when inhabited by Sultan Sujah was nearly consumed by fire: the zazanah, a part occupied only by the females of the family, was totally destroyed. A tradition prevails in this part of the country, that upwards of three hundred women fell a sacrifice to modesty on this occasion;

* A hackery is a small covered carriage upon two wheels, drawn by bullocks, principally used by the female part of the family.

casion; none of them attempting to preserve themselves, from the apprehension of being seen by the men*.

Our adventurer was escorted to the falls of Mootejarna by a party of seapoys, sent by his revered friend Augustus Cleveland, Esq. about eight miles inland from the river. The path is through the woods, and the noise of the cataract is distinctly heard at the distance of about two miles. It consists of two falls, which taken together, the perpendicular height is one hundred and five feet. The water, falling over immense masses of rocks, is received in a bason below, and continues running through different fragments of the rock, rent from above, till it is lost in the Ganges. This spot is held in superstitious veneration by the common people of the country.

Returning to Sicri Gully, our author continued his route across the pass of Terriagully, where a beautiful scene presented itself. The meandering of the river Ganges through a delightful flat country, and glittering through a well-cultivated immense plain, as far as the extent of the horizon, the eye being almost incapable of discriminating the commencement or termination of sky or land. From the pass of Terriagully the road continues, by the side of the river, opening in extensive glades. After this the road skirts the woods, abounding with great trees, and swarming with a variety of birds of beautiful colours; many of them appearing to be of the parrot tribe. Peacocks were seen in all quarters, sitting on the vast horizontal branches, and exposing their varied plumage to the sun. In this route several inferior rivers are passed, which are tributary to the great Ganges.

Proceeding on his journey, our author reached the village of Sultungunge, opposite to which, in the river, the island of Janquerah appeared in sight. This island is principally a rock, with a few trees growing from its interstices, and a small hermitage, near the summit of the rock, is inhabited by a Hindoo monk. The holy father has shewn his taste and judgment in the choice of his place of abode; as, from the top, he commands an extensive prospect of the country and river, and is guarded against the sultry summer heats. This rock is deemed sacred by the Hindoos, and on many parts of it are pieces of sculpture relative to their mythology, but Mr. Hodges expresses some concern that he cannot bestow on them any high compliments.

Our author proceeded from Sultungunge to Banglepoor, and at the entrance of the last mentioned place, he made a drawing of a Banyan, which is certainly one of those curious productions in nature which cannot fail to excite the attention of the traveller. The branches of this tree having shoots depending from them, and, taking root, again produce, and become the parent of others. In many instances, these trees cover such an extent of ground, that hundreds may take shelter under one of them from the scorching rays of the sun†.

Mougheir is a large Indian town, and has an old fort. One side of the fort is flanked by the Ganges, and that to the land by a deep ditch. There are three principal gates; one on the east, another on the south, and one on the side next the river. The walls are flanked with square towers, like old castles. This fort was built in the middle of the last century, by Sultan Sujah; but the place has been a military station many centuries ago. On this spot was found, a few years ago, a brass plate, with an inscription of a grant, as early as the first century of Christianity. The area within the walls of the fort is large, and is generally made

* It may not be improper here to remark, that when the Mogul government was in the plenitude of its power, the Omrahs, or great lords of the court, were accustomed to hold captive in their zananahs even some hundreds of females, collected from all quarters, and particularly from Cashmira, a country famous for beautiful women. From Rajamahel the road continues by the side of the river to the pass of Sicri Gully, whence it enters the province of Bahar. This pass, as it commands the entrance from Bahar into the kingdom of Bengal, was formerly fortified with a strong wall and gate, the ruins of which are still visible. On the top of the hill is a ruined tomb of a Mussulman saint.

† The situation of the resident's house is on a very elevated spot, on the banks of the Nullah, forming an island bounded by the Ganges on one side, and the Nullah encircling the other. From Banglepoor to Mougheir is about thirty-five miles: the roads are good, the villages neat, and the country highly cultivated. The burial places of the Mussulmans are on the sides of the road; for, in imitation of the Greeks, they always bury near the highways: the lower classes have mounds of earth, covering the whole length of the body; those of superior rank have mansoleums, decorated according to their wealth or dignity. It is usual with the women of the family to attend these tombs of their friends, after sun-set, carrying lamps in their hands, which they place at the head of the tomb; the effect is beautiful, and the sentiment is delightful.

a station

a station for a part of the English army. A house for the commanding officer is situated on the premises, built by the late general Goddard. From Calcutta to Mongheir, a variety of country appears, and the soil is rich: from Rajemahel it assumes a different character, and in many parts contains hills and mountains, with immense forests of timber. The heat here in the months of March, April, and May, is immoderate; and till it becomes tempered by the rains which fall in June and July, the bearers of the pallankeens find it difficult to travel in the middle of the day, the dust and heat are then so intolerable: frequently are they obliged to put down their burthens, and shelter themselves in the shade of the banyan trees; many of which are observed upon the road, particularly near the wells, or some little choultry on the borders of a tank. Their rural accommodations for travellers reflect infinite credit on the care of the old Hindoo and Moorish governments. Though the emperor Shere Shah was an usurper, and guilty of many atrocities, he paid the most humane attention to the comfort and conveniences of his people. He caused wells to be dug at the distance of every two miles, and trees to be planted on the road side. They are from ten to fourteen feet in diameter, lined with stone, and raised from the surface of the ground by a wall about two feet high*.

Sometimes whole families may be seen travelling up and down the country, forming picturesque groupes; sometimes with loaded camels, and some of the party riding on bullocks, and the females in hackeries: the younger part of the company on small horses, chiefly pye-bald, brought from the mountains on the eastern side of Bengal.

The lodgings for travellers in India are the serais, or caravanserais. Many of these are found on the great roads, and have been erected by private munificence, or at the public expence. A noble structure of this kind is now remaining at Rajemahel, built by Sultan Sujah, when Subah of Bengal. Attendant on these serais are poor persons, who furnish a bedstead for the traveller to sleep on, for which he receives a small gratuity. The Mahomedan, on these occasions, is usually more generous than the Hindoo.

From Mougheir our author embarked, and returned by water to Calcutta, where he had an opportunity of observing a series of scenery entirely new; the boats of the country, and the interesting shores of the Ganges. This immense stream suggests the idea of an ocean rather than a river, the general breadth being from about two to five miles. "The rivers I have seen in Europe," says Mr. Hodges, "appear as rivulets in comparison with this enormous mass of water. I do not know a more pleasant amusement than sailing down the Ganges in the warm season; the air, passing over the great reaches many miles in length, is so tempered as to feel delightfully refreshing.†"

The Hindoos are remarkable for their cleanliness: the streets of their villages are generally swept and watered, and sand is frequently seen strewed before the doors of the houses. The simplicity and modest demeanour of the Hindoo women cannot but arrest the attention of a stranger. With downcast eye, and tranquil step, they proceed along, without turning to the right or left to observe any single circumstance or occurrence, however singular it may appear. The men are as exemplary in their hospitality, being constantly attentive to accommodate the traveller upon all occasions. In perfect opposition is the Mussulman character;

* It is curious to observe the variety of travellers on the road: in one part the native soldiers may be seen, their half-pikes sticking by their side; in another, perhaps, a company of merchants attract your notice, wholly occupied in their calculations: devotees, in the act of social worship, draw your attention to another quarter; and in another, the common Hindoo pallankeen bearers baking their bread. This operation is performed by making a hole in the earth about a foot in diameter, in which they light a fire; on the top of which they place a flat iron plate, which they never travel without, and which they support with stones. They next mix their flour with a little water, and bake their cakes, which are soon dressed, and are both wholesome and palatable.

† Small Hindoo temples are often seen on the banks of the river, with passages and flights of steps to the river. Soon after sun-rise the women bathe in the river, and the younger part of them continue sporting and playing a long time in the water like Naiads. Our adventurer soon afterwards, adverting to his profession observes that, "To a painter's mind, the fine antique figures never fail to present themselves, when he observes a beautiful female form ascending these steps from the river, with wet drapery, which perfectly displays the whole person, and with vases on their heads, carrying water to the temples. A sight no less novel or extraordinary, is the Bramins at their oraisons; perfectly abstracted, for the time, to every passing object, however attractive. These devotees are generally naked, except a small piece of drapery round the middle."

haughty, irritable, and ferocious. Such is really the pourtrait of the lower classes; but a Moorish gentleman is a perfect model of a well-bred man. The Hindoos are principally husbandmen, merchants, and manufacturers; if we except the Rajapoots, who are military; and the Bramins, who are ecclesiastics. The Mussulmans may be said to be entirely military, few of them exercising any other employment, except that of collecting the revenues, the Moorish governments having always appropriated a military force for that duty.

At this season of the year a small black cloud is often seen rising in the eastern part of the horizon, and afterwards spreading itself to the north-west. This phenomenon is always attended with storms of wind, vivid lightning, and heavy thunder; and followed by rain. These storms continue to rage for half an hour or more, and then disperse, having greatly freshened the air, and left the sky of a deep transparent blue.

Passing the city of Moorshedabad, on the evening of a Mussulman holiday, our author was much surprised at seeing the river covered with innumerable lights, just floating above the surface of the water. Unable to account for so uncommon an appearance, he found, upon enquiry, that, on these occasions, a number of small lamps are fabricated, which they illuminate and set afloat on the river: the stream continually running, they are conveyed to a considerable distance, and afford amusement for many hours.

SECTION III.

Embark in the Governor-General's Train—Boats described—Views on the River—Dutch, French, and Danish Settlements—Sir Eyre Coote's Seat—Sir John D'Oyleys—Patna—Reception of the Governor—Mosque of Moonhier—Arrive at Buxar—Curious Ruins—Benares—Arrest of the Rajah—Insurrection at Benares—Events of the War—Flight from Benares—Return thither.

THE Bengal government having thought it expedient for the public utility, that the governor-general should visit a certain part of the country, Mr. Hastings, at our author's request, permitted him to accompany him. On the 25th of June 1781, our adventurer therefore embarked in a budgerow for this expedition. The periodical rains had commenced, and every natural object exhibited a freshness of verdure, accompanied with vigour and fullness of foliage. A great number of gentlemen necessarily attending the governor-general, the fleet was considerable; consisting of every variety of the boats, except those which are called burs.

The boats used by the natives, as well as by Europeans for travelling, are the budgerows, which both sail and row: they have usually from twelve to twenty oars, varying in their size according to the condition of their owners; some are sixty feet in length, with very high sterns. They are all very ill calculated to go near the wind, and are really dangerous from their great weight abaft: they are, however, very commodious, having in the centre an open portico, leading by a door into a handsome room, with a range of windows on each side. This may be called the sitting room, within which is a convenient bed-chamber. Besides this boat, a gentleman has generally two others to attend him, *viz.* a pulwah for culinary purposes; and a smaller boat, called a paunchway, to convey him occasionally on shore, and back again, the budgerows not being so convenient to facilitate a landing from them.

Another boat of this country, which is of curious construction, is called a Moor-punky: these are remarkably long and narrow, extending about a hundred feet in length, and not exceeding eight in breadth: they are paddled sometimes by about forty men, and steered by a large paddle from the stern, usually rising in the shape of a peacock, or a snake.

At a small distance above Calcutta is the Danish settlement of Serampoor, containing a handsome town, which carries on a considerable trade. Both sides of the river are decorated with handsome houses belonging to English gentlemen. At Ghiretty, about twenty miles from Calcutta, a very fine seat was inhabited by the family of the late Sir Eyre Coote in 1781, when that general was fighting the battles of his country on the plains of the Carnatic, where his health and life fell a sacrifice to his great exertions. With an army which never exceeded seven

seven thousand effective men this judicious and spirited leader kept the whole power of Hyder Ally at bay, and was always superior in action to the multitudes of the enemy, though they were supported by a most formidable train of artillery, and immense bodies of cavalry.

A little farther up is the French settlement of Chandernagore, which the ruins of the fort pronounce to have been very considerable. The fort was destroyed in 1758 by Commodore Watson, in a very severe action. Near this is situated the town of Chinsurah, a Dutch settlement. It contains a church, several good houses, and has a little mole projecting into the river. From this place the fleet passed by Culna and Nuddea, two considerable towns in the way to Cutwa: and after passing Plassy, which has been already mentioned, they arrived at Burhampoor, a great military station in Bengal, where there are barracks for ten thousand men. A little above is the island of Cossimbuzar, in which the English East India Company have a factory. On each side of the river collections of villages were continually presenting themselves, and the country appeared to be in high cultivation.

When the fleet arrived at Patna the shores were lined with people: the banks of the rivers, the windows of the houses, and even the tops of the buildings were crowded when the governor-general went on shore; so great was the multitude which pressed on every side to greet him. They were all struck with the elegant simplicity of his appearance, and his constant attention to prevent injury to any of the numerous spectators. They contrasted this conduct and appearance with that of their nabobs, who had always appeared mounted on lofty elephants, glittering in splendor with their train followed by the soldiery*.

The cause of disagreement between the British government, it is not the editor's business to dwell upon. Mr. Hodges, however, declares, that, during his residence in India, he never heard the perfidy of Cheyt Sing once called in quesion. It appeared indeed that he was in the interest of the enemy; and it was notorious to every person, that he only wanted an opportunity to withdraw his allegiance from the company.

Several letters and messages having passed between Cheyt Sing and the governor-general, the resident, Mr. Markham, received orders to put the rajah under arrest at his house at Sewalla Gaut; to which he submitted without opposition. This happened in the morning; and, about one in the afternoon, a body of the rajah's people surrounded the house. A note was at the same time received by Mr. Markham, from Lieutenant Stalker, who had been left with two companies of grenadier seapoys as a guard, declaring the people began to be troublesome, requesting an immediate supply of ammunition: it soon appeared that such delicacy had been observed towards the rajah, that the seapoys' muskets were not loaded. To this unfortunate circumstance may be attributed the unhappy fate of Lieutenants Stalker, Scott, and Sims, and two companies of grenadier seapoys, not more than twenty of them escaping with their lives.

Major Popham, who was then at Benares, set off immediately from his camp to lead the remainder of his people to the assistance of their fellow soldiers; but they only arrived in time to be the melancholy spectators of this horrid slaughter, without the power of revenging it, as the rebels had dispersed, and the rajah made his escape. Fortunately the rebels were satisfied with having effected the liberation of the rajah, and the massacre of the seapoys; for had they attacked the governor-general in his then defenceless situation, every person with him must have fallen a sacrifice to their fury.

On the following day every Englishman attended the funeral of the three lieutenants, and a monument was afterwards erected over their remains. The gloom that succeeded was truly melancholy; the city was deserted by many of the inhabitants, and business appeared to be totally abandoned. From this situation they were roused by the folly and ambition of Captain Mayaffer, who commanded a part of Major Popham's detachment at Mirzapoor. This officer,

* This city is the principal seat of the government of Bahar, and has been celebrated for ages. Patna also contains a fort, in which were confined the prisoners taken by Meer Cossim, in the war of 1761, by whose order they were massacred. Meer Cossim became afterwards an outcast from society, and is said to have been starved under the walls of Delhi.

ficer, regardless of positive orders to the contrary, led the troops to the attack of Ramnagur; a fort and town on the opposite side of the river. The streets of this town being narrow, and the houses built of stone, they soon became a fortification, being filled with the Rajah's people.

This rash conduct occasioned the loss of Captain Mayaffer, Captain Doxat, thirty-three of the corps of chasseurs, and one hundred and three men of different denominations. It was now thought advisable to leave this place of insecurity and repair to Chunar, at the distance of about twenty miles. This measure was resolved on about seven o'clock in the evening, and the whole party had quitted the town by eight. The party, including servants, troops, &c. amounting to about four hundred men, safely arrived opposite Chunar about seven in the morning. The resolution was so suddenly taken, that our author was obliged to leave behind him the whole of his baggage, except his drawings, and a few changes of linen, which he had thrown into his pallankeen, and which he had lost sight of in the night.

The war was now evidently commenced, to the apparent disadvantage of the English: their number, which was very inconsiderable, were almost destitute of provision; and no money remained to pay the few troops, who were already considerably in arrears, occasioned by the misconduct of the Rajah, who had now fixed his standard on the fort of Lutteefpoor, and who was recruiting his army. One of the Hircarrahs *, however, reached Lieutenant Polhill, then at Allahabad, who immediately marched with three hundred and eighty men, and reached the opposite shore of Chunar on the 27th.

In the mean time, a person in the service of Cheyt Sing, at Jionpoor, had collected two thousand matchlock-men, and had taken post at Seker, on the opposite side of the river to Chunar. Lieutenant Polhill received orders to attack this man the following morning, which he executed successfully, drove the enemy away, and took possession of the fort, in which was deposited a considerable quantity of grain. Major Popham had detached a party under Captain Blair, to break up the camp of the enemy formed under the walls of Pateeta, which was carried into execution with great gallantry, though attended with considerable loss.

Intelligence of the insurrection having spread to a considerable distance, a force was detached from Cawnpoor and Lucknow, to the assistance of the governor-general, under Majors Crab and Roberts. Effective measures were instantly taken to put a period to the war, by attacking vigorously the forts of Patceta and Lutteefpoor; and both attacks were successful on the same day, the Rajah flying from Lutteefpoor to take sanctuary in his strong hold of Bidjegur †.

The fort of Chunar is situated on the Ganges, about twenty miles from Benares: it is built on a rock, and well fortified. It is said to be of the highest antiquity, and was originally built by the Hindoos. A black marble slab forms an altar in the citadel, on which the tutelary deity of the place is supposed to be always seated, except from sun-rise till nine in the morning, during which time he is at Benares. This has always been considered as a post of much consequence upon the Ganges, from its insular situation and considerable height. It was besieged by the English in the years 1764 and 1765, and gallantly defended by an Abyssinian in the service of Meer Cossim.

The first attempt of the English against Chunar was unsuccessful; but, on the fall of Allahabad, the commandant, perceiving that his master's affairs were desperate, thought it useless to contend any longer, and, in February, 1765, surrendered the fort to Major Stibbert: it was afterwards restored to the Nabob; and in 1772, formally ceded by him to the English East India Company in exchange for Allahabad. The war being now concluded, except obtaining possession of Bidjegur, the whole party returned with the Governor-general to Benares, and arrived there on the 28th of September; after which Mr. Hodges had leisure for his particular and professional pursuits.

* Hircarrahs are servants employed in carrying orders or messuages.

† The sanguinary disposition of Cheyt Sing was manifested by a singular act of atrocity, during his residence at Lutteefpoor. Some wounded prisoners had been left at Mirzapoor, after the unhappy affair of Captain Mayaffer, and were afterwards conveyed to Lutteefpoor: but upon hearing of the success of Captain Blair's party, the Rajah ordered the unhappy men to be bound, carried into the woods, and massacred in cold blood; one poor mangled creature, however, found means to make his escape and repaired to Chunar.

SECTION

SECTION IV.

Description of Benares—Elegant Fascade—Observations on the Hindoo, Moorish, and Gothic Architecture.

THE city of Benares is the capital of a large district, and the seat of the Bramin learning. From universal report it appears to be one of the most ancient of the Hindoo cities: if the accounts of their own antiquity may be relied on, it is perhaps the oldest in the world. Major Rennel, however, thinks differently on this subject, from its not having been mentioned by the Syrian embassadors soon after the time of Alexander, and also from its being unnoticed by Pliny.

From Benares to Calcutta, by the nearest road, is 460 miles; and by water the distance is much greater. This city was anciently named Kasi, but the page of history is silent respecting the cause or the period of its having received its present name. It is situated on the north side of the river, which is here remarkably broad; and as the banks are very high, the appearance from the water is beautiful. The great variety of the buildings has a pleasing effect, and the whole view is rendered more interesting by innumerable flights of stone steps, which form the avenues into the several temples or to the houses. Many elegant Hindoo temples embellish the banks of the river, and a multitude of other public and private buildings contribute to the general magnificence.

Not far from the centre of the city is a Mahomedan Mosque, with two minarets; the height from the water to the top of the minarets being 232 feet. This building was erected by the Emperor Aurungzebe, who destroyed a magnificent temple of the Hindoos on this spot, of the same extent and height.

The streets are narrow, and the houses are very high: but the more wealthy Hindoos live in detached houses, with open courts, surrounded by a wall. The heat of this city is thought very considerable in the hot months, as well from its natural situation, and the narrowness of the streets, as from the houses being built of free-stone.

A dissertation on the Hindoo, Moorish, and Gothic architecture, occupies the remainder of this section; but as the editor of this work apprehends it would be improper to follow the author in a long digression from the avowed purpose of the original work, he ventures to proceed to *Section* V.

SECTION V.

Ceremony of Widows devoting themselves to the Funeral Piles of their Husbands—The Particulars of that horrid Sacrifice—Journey to Bidjegur—Description of the Fort—Arrival at Bauglepoor—The Author accompanies Mr. Cleveland on an Excursion—Mr. Cleveland's Method of civilizing the Mountaineers—Curious Sacrifice.

BEFORE relating the particulars of a very inhuman practice in India, our author gives us the following observations of Mr. Holwell on such extraordinary practices. "At the demise of the Hindoo great law-giver and prophet, Bramah, his wives were so inconsolable for his loss, that they resolved not to survive him, and offered themselves voluntary victims on his funeral pile. The wives of the chief Rajahs, who were the first officers of the state, unwilling to be thought deficient in fidelity and affection, followed the example of the wives of Bramah. The Bramins, a tribe then newly established by their great legislator, pronounced and declared that the spirits of those heroines had ceased from their transmigrations: hence it followed that their wives claimed a right of making the same sacrifice of their mortal forms to God, and the manes of their deceased husbands. The wives of every Hindoo caught the same pious flame; and thus the heroic acts of a few brought about a general custom. The Bramins had given it

the stamp of religion, and instituted the ceremonies that were to accompany the sacrifice, subject to restriction, which leaves it a voluntary act of glory, piety, and fortitude *.

The person our author saw was of the merchant tribe or cast, a class of people which might be supposed exempt from the high and impetuous pride of rank, and in whom the natural desire of preserving life might be expected to predominate. On our author's repairing to the spot, on the margin of the river, where the solemn ceremony was to take place, he saw the body of a man on a bier, and covered with linen, lying at the edge of the river. At that time, which was about ten in the morning, only a few people were assembled, who seemed perfectly indifferent respecting the catastrophe that was on the point of taking place. After some time the wife appeared, attended by the Bramins and music, with a few relations. The procession was slow, and the victim moved with apparent composure of countenance till she approached the body of her husband, after which the procession halted for some time. The lady then addressed those who were near her, without trepidation or change of countenance, holding in her left hand a cocoa-nut, containing a liquid mixture of a red colour: in this she dipped the fore-finger of her right hand, and marked those about her to whom she wished to shew any particular attention. As our author stood close to her, she observed him attentively, and with the colour marked him on the forehead. She appeared to be about twenty-five years of age, a time of life when the bloom of beauty has generally deserted the cheek in India; but a sufficient portion of it still remained to prove that she had been handsome: her figure was small, but elegantly turned; and her hands and arms were particularly beautiful. A loose robe of white flowing drapery, extended from her head to the feet. The place of sacrifice was higher up on the bank of the river, about a hundred yards distant from the spot on which they then stood. The pile was composed of dried branches, leaves, and rushes, having a door on one side, and being arched and covered at the top; and at the side of the door stood a man with a lighted brand.

From the time of the first appearance of the woman, to the taking up of the body to convey it to the pile, occupied about half an hour, which was employed in prayer with the Bramins, and in conversation with her relations and friends. When the body was taken up, she followed close to it, attended by the chief Bramin; and when it was deposited on the pile, she bowed to all around her, and entered without uttering a word. In a moment after her entrance the door was closed, the fire applied to the combustibles, which were instantly in a flame, and immense quantities of dried wood, and other inflammatory articles, were thrown upon it. This part of the ceremony was accompanied with the shouts of the multitude, who were now become numerous †.

The war which had commenced here in August, was not completely finished till October, though the Rahjah had left the country, and joined the army of Mahrattas under Madajee Scindia. The strong fortress of Bidjegur still held out against the troops commanded by Major Popham, and our author was happy to receive the commands of Mr. Hastings to proceed to Bidjegur to make drawings of that, and of

* Mr. Holwell then expressly declares that he has been present at many of these sacrifices, and particularly describes one which happened on the 4th of February, 1743, near Cossinbuzar, of a young widow not quite eighteen, leaving three children; two boys, and a girl, the eldest not being four years of age. This infatuated woman was earnestly requested to live for the future care of her infants; but with a calm and determined countenance, she put one of her fingers into the fire, and held it there a considerable time. She then employed one hand in putting fire into the palm of the other, sprinkled incense on it, and fumigated the Bramins. It was then intimated to her that she would not be permitted to burn herself, at which she appeared exceedingly afflicted for some time. After which she resolutely replied that death was in her own power, and that if she was not suffered to burn, according to the principles of her cast, she was determined to starve herself. Her friends finding her thus resolute in her purpose, were at last obliged to consent to the dreadful sacrifice of this yong lady, who was of very high rank.

† In the Carnatic, and other parts of India, this ceremony is attended with circumstances of greater horror. It is asserted that they dig a pit, in which a large quantity of combustible matter is deposited, which is set on fire; and the body being let down, the victim throws herself into the flaming mass. In other places, a very high pile is raised, and the body with the wife is placed upon it, and the whole is set on fire. Were not these circumstances well known, and well authenticated, they could hardly obtain credit. "I cannot but confess," says Mr. Hodges, that "some degree of incredulity was mingled with my curiosity on this occasion; and the desire of ascertaining so extraordinary a fact was my greatest inducement to be a spectator."

the

the fort Lutteefpoor upon the road. After passing the open country, the traveller enters the woods which surround the fort of Lutteefpoor. The walls of the fort are flanked with round towers. Bidjegur is fifty miles from Benares, and the fort is seated on the top of a high mountain covered with wood. From this station the walls were battered, and after a practicable breach was made, the garrison thought proper to surrender. In the garrison were found the mother, and other female relatives of Chayt Sing, to whom every due attention was paid.

Soon after the taking of Bidjegur, preparations were made for the departure of the party in the train of the Governor-General; and towards the conclusion of December they sailed, and reached Bauglepoor early in January, 1782. Intending to remain here for some time, however, our author took his leave for the present of the gentlemen who had been of his party.

Soon after their departure, Mr. Cleveland asked Mr. Hodges to accompany him through a part of the district into the hills, to which he readily acceded; and in the beginning of February they set out on a tour through a part of the Jungle Terry, to the westward of Bauglepoor. The appearance of this part of the country is very singular, having prodigious masses of stone piled one upon another, from the interstices of which grew large timber trees. On some of the highest of these hills, durgaws, or burial places were observed, with small chapels annexed, belonging to the Mussulmans.

In the course of their journey Mr. Cleveland was invited by some principal hill chiefs, to the ceremony of an annual sacrifice, which invitation he accepted. The people by whom Mr. Cleveland had been invited, reside in a range of hills which lie south-west of Bauglepoor, extending south to the back of Rajemahel. These people are by some supposed to be the aboriginal natives of the country. Their manners are certainly different from the Hindoos, as they are neither divided into casts nor tribes, and eat of every species of provision, which the followers of Bramah cannot. They have formed themselves into Society, and taking post in the mountainous parts, have occasionally issued to commit depredations on the defenceless inhabitants of the plains. Troops have therefore been stationed by the Hindoos, Moorish, and English government, to check their inroads. Like all other savages, their incursions have been predatory, and what they seize is generally by surprize. Being armed only with bows and arrows, and a sabre, they cannot attack or withstand regular troops with fire-arms.

They could never be induced to reform from their infamous practices, by the most vigilant exertions of the military against them, till Mr. Cleveland was placed at the head of the district, whose judgment suggested a plan which has happily succeeded. The humanity of this gentleman, added to the desire of improving the revenue of his district for the Company's benefit, stimulated him to venture among the hills, alone, and unarmed, where he had the address to convene some of the principal chiefs; and, after assuring them of his peaceable intentions, and expressing a desire to render them his best services, invited them to visit his residence at Bauglepoor. By placing so much confidence in their honour, as not to be alarmed for his personal safety, effectually gained their esteem, and shortly after a deputation of their chiefs waited on him. By a variety of attentions, presents, and acts of kindness, he so far subdued their ferocious spirits, that they promised to discontinue their usual depredations; and the whole body became earnest to be personally introduced to this benevolent stranger.

Mr. Cleveland brought forward his well-digested plan by degrees, and whatever he proposed they instantly agreed to. He sent inconsiderable presents to their wives, caressed the children; and to the chiefs presented medals, as a mark of his esteem and amity. At length, perceiving they were prepared for the accomplishment of his plan, he ordered a kind of uniform to be made for a few, furnished them with fire-locks, and caused them to be regularly drilled. In consequence of this, many others petitioned for the same distinction. Thus, at their own desire, a batallion was formed for the preservation of good order; and, in the space of two years, they formed a fine corps, being embodied for the express purpose of preserving from injury that very country, which for centuries before had been the scene of their depredations.

At length, proceeding on the journey, Mr. Cleveland arrived at the village on the hill, where the ceremony of the annual sacrifice was to take place.

place. Here that gentleman was received with every mark of respect and affection by the assembled chiefs; and even the women and children contended who should be the most forward in manifesting their regard. They had built a small open hut solely for his reception, and every person in the neighbourhood was summoned to be present the next morning at the annual sacrifice.

The ceremony began about nine o'clock, before a small hut, and about six feet from the ground an altar was raised consisting of bamboos. The sacrifice was preceded by the decolation of a kid and a cock, the heads of which were thrown upon the altar. This part of the ceremony was, however, little attended to. About an hour afterwards notice was given that the principal rite would speedily be performed*.

The day after the performance of this ceremony, Mr. Cleveland, and our author, proceeded on their journey back to Bauglepoor, and the following day arrived at the village of Deogur, a place much resorted to by the Hindoo pilgrims, this being a sacred spot. There are five pagodas here, of very old construction; they have each a small chamber in the centre, of twelve feet square, hanging over a Lingham. At Deogur multitudes of pilgrims are seen, who carry the water of the Ganges to the western side of the peninsula of India. It is conveyed in large flasks, containing about five quarts each, suspended at each end of a bamboo, which rests upon the shoulders. The price of this holy water is regulated by the distance of the river from the place it is sold at.

Their return was so nearly in the direction they came, that no opportunity was afforded them for observations. In the great famine, which raged through Hindostan in 1770, the Jungleterry is said to have suffered considerably: the population was before estimated at eighteen thousand people; but it is now reduced to a few hundreds, many having been cut off by famine, and others have migrated in search of food.

SECTION VI.

The Author returns to Calcutta—Seized with a severe Illness—Recovery—Proceeds on another Tour—Route from Calcutta to Allahabad—Cawnpoor—Description of Lucknow—Palace of the Nabob—Journey to Fyzabad and Oud—Description of Fyzabab—Palace of Sujah ul Dowlah—City of Oud, &c.

HAVING completed his business by a residence of about four months at Bauglepoor, our author proceeded to Calcutta, where he arrived on the 15th of May, 1782. The extreme

* The people had purchased and fattened a fine large buffaloe, which they were now dragging by the horns to the spot where the kid and the cock had been immolated. The animal was with difficulty conducted to the place of sacrifice, where the chief of the village attended in a state of almost perfect nudity, having only a cloth round his middle; but he had a large shining sabre in his hand. The altar was surrounded by a crowd of people, consisting of men, women, and children; and the young men were all entirely naked. That the creature might not escape, they first ham-stringed him, and then the dreadful operation began. The chief stood on the left side of the buffaloe, and with his sabre struck the upper part of the neck, which gave the poor animal excruciating torture, which he signified by writhing, bellowing, and struggling with those that held him. This horrid business continued for about a quarter of an hour before the spine of the neck was entirely cut through. When the animal fell, the operator proceeded on his business, and at length the head was perfectly separated from the body. Previous to his giving the last stroke, he paused, and an universal silence reigned. He then assumed an erect posture, and, by raising the arm which held the sabre to the utmost extension, gave the signal to the multitude, who rushed in and began scooping up the animal's blood, which had flowed copiously from him on the ground. This was greedily drank up by the spectators, mixed as it was with dust and filth, and besmeared each other with their hands. Parties of them rushed in, and rolling in confused heaps, they appeared like so many bacchanals in their frantic moments. The body was then cut to pieces and devoured: the head, however, was reserved, as well as those of the kid and cock.

After the completion of this sacrifice, they retired in parties to their several habitations, and began to devote the day to revelling and intoxication. On this occasion, our author expresses a wish, for the honour of the fair sex, that these latter excesses had been confined to the men. After the rites of Bacchus had far exceeded moderation, those who could still sustain an erect position, began to dance promiscuously, men and women together; others, in parties, roared aloud in such extravagant strains of joy as might be expected from the present state of the performers; and a profound silence ensued.

heat

heat at this season, with an assiduous application to his profession, threw him into a violent fever; and, after his recovery, he continued in a weak and languid state for a long time.

In this state of debility he had it frequently in contemplation to repair to Europe; but the cold weather returning in the month of November, his strength and vigour returned with it. His curiosity revived, and he again resolved to indulge his inclination to visit other parts of India. He mentioned to the Governor-general his inclination to visit Agra, &c. and he had the honour of receiving his sanction, and that of the council. On the 10th of January, 1783, he began his journey by land, passing once more through Moorshedabad, Bauglepoor, Mongheir, and Patna, to Benares. Having rested only one day on the road, he determined to stop at Benares, finding himself considerably fatigued by a journey of about five hundred miles in a pallankeen. He was happy to receive the civilities of Mr. Markham the resident, a gentleman much esteemed for his liberality and accomplishments.

Having remained four days at Benares, he pursued his journey, and arrived at Allahabad on the second day after. This is the point of confluence of the two great rivers Jumna and Ganges. The fort of Allahabad, built entirely of stone, by the great emperor Acbar, is at the point of the fort, commanding, from its situation, the navigation of both rivers. It is built in the old style of fortification, and covers a considerable space of ground. This was one of the many fortresses that extended nearly from Lapore to Chunar Gur on the Ganges; all of which were erected by Acbar, and must have secured the empire from the confines of Persia to the borders of Bengal. This place is now in the possession of Asoph ul Dowlah, Nabob of Oud. It was once the residence of the present Great Mogul, the unfortunate Shah Allum, who, after the loss of the battles of Geriah and Buxar, threw himself on the protection of the English, by whose influence Allahabad and Korah were allotted for his support*.

Crossing the Ganges at this place, he continued his journey towards Lucknow, where he arrived on the 25th of January. The distance from Calcutta to this place, by the route through Benares, is said to be nine hundred miles; but the estimate is supposed to be too great, as Major Rennel declares it to be only six hundred and fifty miles by the nearest road. This city is now the capital of the province of Oud, and the residence of Asoph ul Dowlah, the Nabob. It is large, but the houses are chiefly mud walls, covered with thatch: the streets are crooked and narrow, and the worst that our author had seen in India. In the dry season the dust and heat are intolerable; in the rainy season the mire is so deep that they are hardly passable. Elephants in abundance, belonging to the Nabob, and the great men of his court, are continually passing the streets, to the great annoyance of the foot passenger.

The palace of the nabob is on a high bank near the river, commanding an extensive view. A small part of it was built by the late Nabob Sujah ul Dowlah; it has, however, been greatly extended by the present prince. The durbar is a range of three arcades, supported by columns in the Moorish style: the ceiling, and the whole of the palace is beautifully gilt, and ornamented. The exterior of the building is not entitled to commendation.

After some occurrences too unimportant to be noticed, our author set out for Fyzabad, and on his arrival there he was received by a person, who was ordered to shew the pallankeen bearers to a small house in a large garden, which was allotted for his accommodation during his stay. The city of Fyzabad is very large, and seems to be very populous, consisting chiefly of the lower class of the people; for the court being removed to Lucknow, the persons of opulence and distinction followed them †.

Soon after our adventurer's arrival, he was

* During his stay here, Mr. Hodges made several drawings of the fort, and then proceeded to Cawnpoor, a military town on the Ganges. It is a cantonment for a brigade, amounting, on the war establishment, to ten thousand men, who all live with their families in huts instead of tents.

† In Fyazebad, there are many handsome brick buildings still remaining: that in which Mr. Hodges resided has a large and beautiful pavilion over the principal entrance. The ascent is by a narrow staircase, leading to three rooms, which command the whole city on the one side, and on the other a vast extent of country, with a view of the river Gogra. Opposite the gate is a mosque, with three domes; the form of which is that of an egg set on its point: the apparent deficiency of firmness at the base, has a very unpleasant effect on the spectator.

visited by a person from the mother of the present Nabob, with a present of dishes of various curries and pillaws for his refreshment, after the fatigue of his journey. After expressing his thanks, and having taken his repast, (which indeed was excellent) he went to take a view of the city, and the remains of the palace, built by the late Nabob Sujah ul Dowlah. This is a vast building, covering a great extent of ground, having several areas, and many separate buildings in them. Nearly adjoining Fyzabad, are the remains of the very ancient city of Oud, which is reported to have been the first imperial city of Hindostan, and to have been built by Krishen. In Dowe's translation of Feritsha's History, it is mentioned as the capital of a great kingdom 1209 years previous to the christian æra. Among the villages which our author passed through, some of them appeared comfortable, and others apparently distressed. After leaving the flourishing district of Benares, he viewed, with a melancholy concern, the miserable appearance of all the territories which were under the absolute direction of Mussulman tyrants.

SECTION VII.

Journey to Etaya—Description of Etaya—Jeswontnagur—O'Kraine—Shekoabad—Fyrozabad—Etamadpoor—Shah Dara—Agra—Magnificent Ruins—Arrival at the Camp of the Nabob—A venerable Chief who had served under Kouli Khawn—Mausoleum of Acbar—Teje Machael—Fortress of Gwalior—Return to Lucknow.

ON the 10th of February Mr. Hodges set out to meet Major Brown at Etaya, according to appointment. As he travelled by a set of pallankeen bearers to the number of fifteen, and had no relief beyond their own set, his stages became short, especially as he was now encumbered with considerable baggage. On the 13th he arrived at the encampment of the Major, his tent being pitched close to the town of Etaya.

The town is large, but wretched, situated on a very high bank of the river Jumna. On the top near the river, are the remains of a fort. The town has only two tolerable houses in it. On the 15th they moved forward to Jeswontnagur, and on the 16th halted at O'Kraine, almost at the termination of the Nabob of Oud's country. On the last day's journey, they saw hardly a spot in cultivation; the villages were in ruins, and the whole presented an uninterrupted scene of desolation. They met several unfortunate people passing down into the provinces, in order actually to avoid being starved, begging their way.

On the 17th our author arrived at Shekoabad, a place which takes its name from Daro Sheko, the most unfortunate son of the Emperor Shah Jean, who, in the contest for empire with Aurungzebe, his youngest brother, was defeated, hunted down like a wild beast, and taken; and afterwards unmercifully murdered. They continued their route to Fyrozabad*.

On the 24th Major Brown was waited on by Afrasiab Khawn, an Omrah of great rank, from the Nabob Mirza Shuffeh Khawn, who lay encamped about six miles to the north-west of Agra, and to whose camp they proceeded, crossing the Jumna, and passed through a part of the city of Agra. On the following day they pitched their tents to the eastward of the Nabob's encampment, in a garden surrounded with a wall. This was a work of Acbar for the accommodation of one of his daughters.

The camp of Mirza Shuffah extended over a vast space of ground. This camp was said to contain forty thousand men; but probably the number was greatly exaggerated. Every soldier, tradesman, and artificer had, indeed, his family with him. In the park of artillery were forty-two pieces of cannon. The tent of the Nabob might formerly have been an imperial one, being

* Along the western bank of the river were seen the ruined palaces of the great Omrahs, built in the time of Acbar, Jahanguire, and Shah Jean. A little farther the city of Agra presents itself to the eye, with the great fort and palace; and the prospect is terminated to the south-west by that superb monument of eastern elegance, the Teje Mahel, built by the emperor Shah Jean.

of

of crimson velvet, embroidered with gold, and lined with silk. It was, however, much torn and moth eaten; and made no very splendid appearance.

A few days after their arrival, our author attended Major Brown to the Durbar of the Nabob, where he saw the principal commanders; among whom were several old Persian chiefs, with beards extending to their girdles, and countenances of great dignity. One of them declared he had attended Nedir Shah, or Thomas Koule Khan, when he made his famous expedition into Hindostan in 1739, and had remained in India since that time. After the ceremony of reception, which was that of touching the turban with the right hand, without rising from their seats, they were desired to sit, for which purpose some antique chairs were brought; and otter and roseswater were handed round, as a mark of distinction. The Nabob Mirza Shuffah sat in the centre of a semicircle, surrounded by his chiefs, with a multitude of servants standing behind. The Major, and our author continued there about half an hour, and then retired. This was merely a visit of ceremony, Major Brown's mission not having been entered upon for several days afterwards; for, among these people, delay is considered as a settled principle of etiquette.

Whilst they lay encamped at this place, our author made daily excursions to Agra and the neighbourhood, the weather greatly favouring his pursuits. The climate, at this season, is delightful, the morning clear and very cold, frequently frosty; but in the middle of the day it was very hot. The city of Agra is situated on the south side of the Jumna. It is believed to be a place of great antiquity: the present city, however, was built by the emperor Acbar, about 1566, and named from him Acbarabad, and was the principal seat of his government. The fort, including the Imperial palace, is of vast extent*.

The palace of Dara Shcko, built by that prince, occupies an extent of ground not less than the square of Lincoln's-Inn Fields. It is extremely dangerous to walk among these ruins; for at every step the passenger is in danger of sinking through holes into the covered vaults, which are now the habitation of noxious reptiles. At the distance of about six miles from Agra, on the road leading to Dehli, at a place called Secundrii, stands the tomb of the emperor Acbar. This enormous building is seated in a garden, planted with forest and fruit-trees, and many flowering shrubs walled round. After viewing this monument of an emperor, whose great actions have resounded through the world, and whose liberality and humanity were his highest praise, our author became desirous of seeing that stone which contained his crumbling remains. An old Mollah attended, who had the keys of the interior of the building, and who obtains a precarious subsistence by shewing it to the curious traveller. The inside of the tomb is a capacious hall, occupying the whole space of the interior of the building, which terminates in a dome. In the centre the body is deposited in a sarcophagus of plain white marble, on which is written, in black marble inlaid the name of

ACBAR.

From the summit of the minarets a spectator's eye may range over a prodigious circuit of country, the whole of which is flat, and filled with ruins of ancient grandeur: the river Jumna is seen at some distance, and the glittering towers of Agra.

To the south-east of the city of Agra stands a beautiful monument, erected by the emperor Shah Jehan, for his beloved wife Teje Mahel, whose name it bears. This beautiful monument of Teje Mahel rises immediately from the river, founded on a base of red free-stone. On the same base are two large buildings, one on each side, and perfectly similar, each crowned with three domes of white marble. When this building is beheld from the opposite side of the river, it possesses a degree of beauty, from the

* Shah Jean, the grandson of Acbar, displeased with the situation of Agra, from the immoderate heats to which it was exposed in the summer months, and anxious to erect a metropolis which should bear his own name, built a large city near the old one of Dehli, and named it Jehanabad: but the name, like the empire, is now almost annihilated. To people this new city, he is said to have transported thither half the people of Agra, to the amount of five hundred thousand. In the eastern front of the fort was the imperial residence, built of white marble, covered on the top with plates of copper gilt, which to this hour retain their pristine lustre: and near it there is a mosque, built of the same materials, with copper ornaments and gilt. It was impossible to contemplate the ruins of this superb and venerable city, without feeling the deepest impression of melancholy. The ruins extend, along the banks of the river, about fourteen English miles.

perfection

perfection of the materials and the workmanship; which is only surpassed by its grandeur, extent, and general magnificence: the whole together appears like a most perfect pearl on an azure ground. "This effect," says Mr. Hodges, "is such as, I confess, I never experienced from any work of art. The fine materials, the beautiful forms, and the symmetry of the whole, with the judicious choice of the situation, far surpasses any thing I ever beheld."—It was the intention of the royal founder to have erected on the opposite shore a similar building, for his own interment, and to have joined them by a marble bridge: but this magnificent idea was frustrated by sickness, and the subsequent disputes concerning the succession between his sons, and at last by his own imprisonment by Aurungzebe*.

The garden, in which the Teje Mahel is situated, is entered from the opposite side, through a beautiful large gate of red free-stone, whence proceeds a large flight of steps into the garden. From the top of the steps the centre part of the middle building is viewed through an avenue of cypress and other trees: the avenue is paved with stone, in the middle of which are copartments, or beds of flowers, with fountains at equal distances: four of the most magnificent of which rise from a square base of white marble. These, as well as the others, are supplied by a reservoir without the building, which is filled from the river by pumps. The centre building is in a perfect state; but those which surround it bear evident marks of decay. Several Mollahs attend the mosque here at the hours of prayer; and behave in the most orderly and decent manner; they are extremely attentive to strangers, and assiduous to shew and explain every part of it. The inside of the great building is of white marble, with many ornaments of flowers beautifully carved. The tomb is in a chamber below, and the body of Teje Mahel lies in a sarcophagus of white marble, under the centre of the building. Near it is a similar one, containing the body of her husband. These sarcophagi are perfectly similar to those in the tomb of Acbar.

On the 3d of March the Nabob's camp moved close to Secundrii, where they remained till the 15th, when they removed to Gougaut. Our author found the heat excessive about this time, and it was soon after much increased by the setting in of the hot winds from the westward.

Our author was much entertained, during the several marches, by the variety of characters he saw; and the adroitness displayed in the management of their horses. He was also much pleased with the majestic movements of the elephants: not only of those which carried the great men, but of those with the heavy baggage. The appearance, indeed, of the whole army, with the camels, artillery, and baggage-cattle, formed a scene highly gratifying to the mind, and entirely new to an European.

The town of Futtypoor Sicri is considerable, and the country near it in tolerable cultivation. On the highest hill is a large mosque, built by Acbar, in a high style of monkish architecture. At the foot of the hill on which the mosque is situated, are the remains of the palace, totally in ruins; not a single apartment remaining.

They remained at Futtypoor Sicri till the 26th, when the camp moved to Siedpoor, about seven miles distant. Here they found the face of the country very different; they marched through a territory in many parts well cultivated. To the south-west of the village it was extremely beautiful, being varied with hills, the vallies and plains between which were in fine cultivation. The village itself had, only a few months before, been plundered and burnt, and all the inhabitants massacred by Mahommed Beg Kawn, one of the chiefs who disputed for the sovereignty under the Great Mogul, on the death of Nudjif Khawn; and who, soon after, assassinated with his own hand, in a friendly meeting, the chief of his army, Mirza Shuffy Khawn. For these, and other similar crimes, however, he suffered death, by the order of Madajee Scindia, the Mahratta chief.

They experienced great inconvenience, about this time, from the hot winds. The great quantities of sand, also raised by the wind, hindered them from seeing the sun set for many days, the atmosphere above the horizon being totally obscured by the floating masses of sand. During our author's stay at Siedpoor, there were several storms of wind: the country people call them aundees, and typhawns; but while they rage they are well entitled to the name of hurricanes,

* Tavernier declares that he was witness to the beginning and the finishing of this building, which employed twenty thousand men constantly for twenty-two years.

destroying every thing in their course, and being accompanied with such immense quantities of dust, as to have the appearance of a moving cavern, approaching to overwhelm the terrified spectators. In one of these storms, not a single tent in the whole camp was left standing.

The dust raised by the storm approaches with a wave-like motion, and affords a clear idea of those tempests which are said to happen on the plains of Arabia, and in Africa: they are admirably described by Lucan, and after him by Mr. Addison:

> Sudden th' impetuous hurricanes descend,
> Wheel through the air, in circling eddies play,
> Tear up the sands, and sweep whole plains away.
> The helpless traveller with wild surprize,
> Sees the dry desert all around him rise,
> And, smother'd in the dusty whirlwind, dies.

Our author's intentions of visiting Dehli were frustrated by the movements of the army under Mirza Shuffy Khawn; and as there seemed no probability of his reaching that capital under the sanction of Major Brown's embassy, and the country being over-run by two hostile armies, prudence dictated to him to direct his course towards Gwalior. He therefore sent off all his baggage under the escort of a party of seapoys, and took his leave of Major Brown on the 28th of April.

The country through which our author had lately passed was most dreary and desolate; not a blade of verdure to be any where seen, and the sun most intensely hot. On the first of May he arrived at Nurabad, and on the following day at Gwalior. Throughout the whole of the above country, which our author had passed in his way from Dohlpoor, not the smallest trace of cultivation was to be seen, nor even a single hut. Let it, however, be remembered that this is the bordering country, lying between the fine province of Malwah, and that country yet remaining under the dominion of the great Mogul; and it has constantly been, ever since the establishment of the Mahratta power, the scene of perpetual wars*.

During the time of the Mogul government this place was the state prison, where the obnoxious branches of the royal family were always confined. They were allowed, for their amusement, a large menageric of beasts, such as lions, tigers, &c.

On the dismemberment of the Mogul empire, Gwalior fell to the lot of a Rajah of the Jaut tribe of Hindoos, who assumed the government of the district in which it is immediately situated, under the title of Rana of Gohud or Gohd. Since that time it has changed masters more than once: the Mahrattas, whose dominions extend to the neighbourhood of it, having sometimes possessed it, and, at other times, the Rana; but the means of transfer were always by famine or treachery.

From the fatigue our author had undergone, and from the violent heats and exposure to the sun in making his drawings, he found himself in a very indifferent state of health; nor was he able to stir abroad for many days after his arrival at Gwalior, After remaining there ten days he therefore determined to pursue his journey immediately to Lucknow; and accordingly proceeded by dauk bearers, and left his servants, with his baggage to follow at leisure.

SECTION VIII.

Departure from Lucknow—Voyage down the River Goomty—Danger from Banditti—Jionpoor—Mausoleum—Sasseram—Mausoleum of Shere Shah—Death of Mr. Cleveland—Arrival at Calcutta.

DETERMINING to return towards Calcutta, our adventurer chose to pass by water down the river Goomty. He left Lucknow on the 16th of July, and, from the various windings of the river, he did not enter the Ganges (into which the river falls) till the first of August.

* The fort of Gwalior is situated on a rock, on every side perpendicular, either by nature or art. At the north-west end is the citadel and a palace, and a chain of seven gates leading to the town at the foot of the mountain. This palace has generally been considered, by Europeans, as the Gibralter of the east. The town is large.

gust. The banks of the river are very beautiful; and there are many villages on its banks between Lucknow and the town of Jionpoor. It is dangerous to proceed down this stream without an escort of the military for protection: near the village of Sultanpoor, a body of about fifty horse appeared, belonging to a well-known freebooter, Rah Sing. His party watched Mr. Hodges' boats the whole of one night, within fifty yards of them; but the clearness of the Seapays prevented any attack, and at day-break the party marched off.

Not far from where this city enters the Ganges, stands the fort of Jionpoor, a building of considerable extent. The stone bridge crossing the Goomty at this place is in tolerable repair, and consists of sixteen pointed arches. The inundations have frequently risen over the bridge: in the year 1774, a whole brigade of the British forces passed over it in boats.

Our author now resolved to make a journey to Sasseram, twenty coss inland, the birth place of the emperor Shere Shah, to visit the mausoleum of that emperor, and to make drawings of it. He was greatly struck with the grandeur of this monument; rising from the centre of a large square lake. A great part of the building is now covered with shrubs and trees, which have taken root within the stones, and promise a speedy decay of this grand pile. The tomb of the emperor is still remaining in the centre, with several others surrounding it, which are of his children.

On our author's return to Buxar, he proceeded to Bauglepoor, where he found Mr. Cleveland on the bed of sickness, which in less than three months deprived the world of his valuable life; a loss irretrievable to his friends, and most sincerely regretted by the public. An incessant application to public business, without sufficient care of a very delicate frame, terminated the mortal existence of this inestimable man, who died on board a ship at the mouth of the Ganges, in which he had embarked for the Cape of Good Hope. His remains were brought back, and deposited at Banglepoor; where a handsome monument has been erected to his memory.

Mr. Hodges arrived at Calcutta on the 24th of September, after a journey of nine months and fourteen days, through a country that had once been subject to the Moguls; the greatest and the richest empire, perhaps of which the human annals can produce an instance. The author terminates his work with reflections on the state of the arts in India, and advice to artists travelling in that country.

He concludes with the following remarks:

"Many other tours in that interesting country might be taken by the enterprizing artist. We know that the whole coast of Malabar possesses picturesque beauty equal to any country on earth; and how valuable would be the representation of that scenery, whether as a natural object, or as connected with the history of the country, and the manners of the people. Pictures are collected from their value as specimens of human excellence and genius exercised in a fine art; and justly are they so; but I cannot help thinking, that they would rise higher in estimation, were they connected with the history of the various countries, and did they faithfully represent the manners of mankind."

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

Stratford, Printer, Crown-Court, Temple-Bar.

INDEX.

VOL. I.

A.

ABOUKIR, in Egypt, 21.
Abyssinia, journey to, 49.
Acacia, gum, where found, and its description, 64.
Acbar, mausoleum of, 761.
Acootan, isle of, 253.
Admiralty Inlet, 384, 389.
——— Islands, 715.
Africa, travels to the interior of, 73;—state of its inhabitants, near the Gambia, 77;—general observations on the climate, the seasons, winds, vegetable productions, population, &c. 121.
African story, 79
Agra, city of, 761.
Agriculture in Upper Egypt, 62.
Allen's Island, 677.
Alexandria in Egypt, 8;—population, language, and disposition of the inhabitants, 9;—antiquities, 10;—the French factory, 12;—Mahometan mosque, *ib.*—commerce, 13;—fish found on its coasts, 13.
Ali, king of Ludamar, 94;—his tyranny, and cruelty towards Mr. Parke, 95, 104.
Allahabad, fort, 759.
Almami, king of Bondou, visited by Mr. Parke, 84.
America, discovery of the North-West coast of, 229;—description of the country near New Albion, 230;—the inhabitants, 231, 377, 431, 464.
American transportation, origin of, 642.
Amsterdam Island, 577.
Anderson, Mr. his excursion up the country near the Cape of Good Hope, 149;—his death and character, 254.
Annamooka, island of, visited by captain Cook, 168;—propensity of the natives to theft, and the punishment inflicted for it, 169.
Apollonia, in Upper Egypt, ruins of, 62, n.
Aqueduct, near Memphis, 50.
Arabian MSS. used by the Mahometan negroes, 130.
Asses, refractory, singular method of correcting, 83.
Atlé, an animal peculiar to Egypt, 24.
Attooi, or Attowai, isle of, discovered, 219;—astonishment of the natives at the European vessels, 220;—their reception of captain Cook, 221;—a morai, 222;—human sacrifices prevalent, *ib*, n.—its extent, situation, and produce, 225;—persons and dispositions of the natives, 226;—manufactures, tools, agriculture, 227;—chiefs, &c. 228.—*See also* 288.—Visited by captain Vancouver, 373.
Ava, *see* Kava.

B.

Babelthoup, isle of, 550.
Balarue, baths of, 2.
Bambarra, kingdom of, 109.
Banana-tree, cultivated in Egypt, 24.
Bankes Point, discovered, 247.
Barbadoes islands, 6.
Barbary, deserts of, 78.
Bardacks, earthen vessels for cooling water, in Egypt, 52.
Barnabas, Cape, 250.
Barra, in Africa, 73.
Barren Isles, the, discovered, 247.
Barter, method of, in Africa, 78, n.
Batavia, island of, 579;—extent, 735;—pernicious effects of its climate, 580, n.—customs of the inhabitants, 582, 735.
Bauglepoor, 744, 751.
Bear hunting, 320.
Beauty, criterion of, among the African Moors, 102, n.
Bede, Cape, 247, n.
Bedouin Arabs, 29, 42;—a camp of, 30;—Sonnini's encounter with a band of, 34;—instances of magnanimity and generosity in, 35, 39.
Beer of Africa, 82.
Benares, city of, 749.
Bengal, 742;—various views of the country, 746.
Besborough island, the natives, produce, &c. 261.
Birch bay, 389.
Birds in the Northern hemisphere, 229.
Blue Mountains, in New South Wales, 702.
Bolabola, isle of, visited by captain Cook, for the recovery of M. de Bougainville's anchor, 212;—description of the island and its harbour, *ib.*—bravery of its inhabitants, *ib.*—animals left there, 213.
Bondou, in Africa, 84;—the court, *ib.*—the king's haram, 85;—its situation and trade, *ib.*
Botany Bay, voyage to, 640;—the natives, 647.—*See* New South Wales.
Boulai, bath at, 50.
Brazil, original inhabitants of, 573.
Bridal present, in Africa, 99, n.
——— procession in Lybia, 40.
Bridge, remarkable, in Africa, 134.
Bristol river and bay, 254.
Broken Bay, 652, 701, 704.
Broughton, Mr. his narrative of occurrences during his cruize in the Pacific Ocean, 358;—his account of Columbia river, 408;—his return to England, 414.
Brown, Mr. his description of the Copts, 1.
Buffaloes of Egypt, 24.
Burials in Egypt, 25, n.
Burke's Channel, 432.
Burney's Island, 259.
Bute's Channel, 390.
Butter at Embabé, 50, n.
——— tree, 111.

C.

Cairo, city of, 44;—marriages, 48.
Calcutta, 743.
Cameleons, 11, n.
Canary Isles, 564, 644.
Candia or Crete, Island of, 8.
Canopis, in Egypt, ruins of, 21.
Canton, city of, 631.
Cape of Good Hope, *see* Good Hope.
Cape de Verd Islands, 501, 564.
Caravans with slaves from Nubia, 48.
Catacombs of Egypt, 11.
Cats honoured by the Mahometans, 16.
Cawnpoor, town of, 759.
Cerigo, or Cetherea, isle of, 8, n.
Cette, natural curiosities of, 1.
Charms in much request among the Africans, 81, 116.
Chatham Island, 359.
——— Point, 392.
Cheslakees, a leader of a tribe of American Indians, entertains captain Vancouver, 393.
China, Embassy to, 557.
——— description of the country, manners of the inhabitants, Mandarines, money, amusements, agriculture, women, &c. 606, 624;—funeral and nuptial processions, the palace, 608, 622;—riches, police, children, &c. 611;—the great wall, 613;—Goitres, among the peasantry, 613;—gardens of the palace, 617;—ceremonies in honour of the emperor, 609, 620;—officers of the emperor's household, how qualified, 620;—canals, 625;—manufactures, 627;—agriculture, 628;—inns, *ib.*—English trade, 630;—public revenue, and state of the sciences, 631.
——— observations on the genius, manners and customs, of the inhabitants, 638.
Christmas Harbour, 150, n.
——— Island, discovered, 218.
Ciotat, whimsical festival at, 1.
Cleopatra's Needles, 10.
Clerke, captain, his voyage of discovery with captain Cook, 115.—*See* Cook.—Succeeds to the command of the expedition, 281;—leaves Owhyhee, and visits Woahoo and Atooi, 288;—proceeds to the North, and arrives at Kamtschatka, 300;—dies of a consumption, 315, n.—his character, *ib*;—funeral, 317.
Clerke's island, 677.
Cochinchina, 587;—manners of the inhabitants, amusements, &c. 589.
Cocos, isle of, 482.

Coffee of Mocha, 62, n.
Columbia river, 408.
Convents of Copts in the Lybian desert, 34.
Cook, captain James, biographical sketch of, 111;—his first voyage of discovery to the South Seas, 143;—his second ditto, 144;—his third voyage of discovery to the Pacific Ocean, and for exploring the North Seas, 145;—lands on Van Diemen's Land, 153;—visits New Zealand, 155;—discovers the islands Mangeea, 161;—Wateoo, 162;—Otakootaia, 165;—visits Hervey's Island, 166;—Palmerston's Islets, 167;—barters for provisions with the inhabitants of Komongo, 168;—arrives at Anamooka, *ib.*—visited by Feenou, a chief from Tongataboo, *ib.*—lands at Hapaee, 170;—visited by Poulaho, king of the Friendly Isles, 173;—his reception at Tongataboo, 175;—interview with Mareewagee and Toubou, 176;—visits Poulaho, 179;—is present at the solemnity called Notche, 183;—procures refreshment at the isle of Eooa, 185;—quits the Friendly Isles, 187;—arrives at Otaheite, 193;—visits a chief, 194;—has an interview with Otoo, king of the island, 195;—quits Otaheite, and anchors at Taboo, in the isle of Eimeo, 203;—visited by the chief, *ib.*—arrives at Huaheine, 205;—at Ulietea, 209;—confines the chief and his family as hostages till the return of some deserters from the ship, *ib.*—visits Bolabola, and obtains the anchor lost at Otaheite by M. de Bougainville, 212;—leaves the Society Isles, *ib.*—discovers Christmas Island, 218;—discovers three islands, and lands at Attooi, 219;—visits the island of Oneeheow, 223;—descries the coast of America, 229;—visited by the natives, 230;—anchors in Nootka Sound, 231;—discovers Kaye's Island, 242;—coasts along Prince William's Sound, 243, 248;—visits Oonalashka, 251;—proceeds to the Northward, 253;—returns to Oonalashka, 262;—departs to winter at the Sandwich Islands, 267;—discovers Owhyhee, 268;—received on shore with great ceremony, and seated among the idols, 271—visited by Tereeoboo, the chief, 274;—killed in a skirmish, 281, n. recovery of parts of his body and bones, 284, 287;—their interment, 288.—Melancholy fate of his sons, 344, n.
Cook's river, explored, 249, 467.
Copts, the, described, 1.
Coptic entertainment, 56.
Corn, method of preparing for food in Africa, 75.
Coromandel, coast of, 741;—sketch of the country, buildings, customs, inhabitants, &c. 742.
Courtship by signs, 18.
Crescent Island, 521.
Crete, *see* Candia.
Crocodiles in Egypt, 66.
Crocodile, tame, *see* Guana.
Crossing the line, ceremony of, 570.
Cumberland, Cape, 151.
Curing meat in a tropical climate, 213, n.
Custard apple, cultivated in Egypt, 24.

D.

Dædalus transport, melancholy events relating to, 411—424, n.
Daisy Koorabarri, king of Kaarta, receives Mr. Parke favourably, 92.
Damel, king of the Jalloffs, 135.
Dead bodies, method of preserving, among the Capuchins of Palermo, 5.
Del Fuca, Straits, 380.
Delta, the, in Lower Egypt, 14.
Demba Sego, prince of Kasson, visits Mr. Parke, and conducts him to the capital of his uncle's kingdom, 88.
——— Jalla, king of Kasson, admits Mr. Parke to an audience, 91.
Denbigh, Cape, 260.
Dendera, in Upper Egypt, 59, 67.
Desolation Sound, 391.
Discovery, Port, 381.
Diving for fish, as practised by the Africans, 112.
Dogs of Egypt, 16.
Doomasansa, in Africa, 79.
Doubtful Island, 352.
Douglas, Cape, 247.
Duff's Mountains, 522.
Duke of York's Island, 713;—the natives, 714.

E.

Echmimm, in Upper Egypt, 57.
Eggs hatched by artificial heat, 44.
—— prohibited to be eaten by the women of the South-Sea islands, 89, n.
Egypt, travels in, 1;—origin of its population, *ib.*n.—its coast, 8;—animals, 15, 66;—climate, 25, 62;—diseases, 26;—antiquities, &c. 15, 42;—agriculture, 62.
Eimeo, Isle of, visited by captain Cook, 203;—the natives guilty of theft, which occasions several acts of hostility, 204;—arrival of the British missionaries, 514.
Elba, sketch of the natural history of, 3.
Elephant hunting, 129, n.
Elephants of Africa, 75.
——— in China, 620.
Elizabeth, Cape, 246.
Embalming in Egypt, 25, n.—in Otaheite, 198;—in Africa, *see* Preserving.
Eooa, Isle of, 185.
Etaya, Isle of, 760.
Europeans much disliked in Upper Egypt, 63.

F.

False Bay, 343.
Fân-palm of Upper Egypt, 57, n.
Fatima, queen of Ludamar, 100;—facilitates Mr. Parke's escape from bondage, 103.
Fatteconda, *see* Bondou.
Feejee, Isle of, 187.
Feloops, a savage nation of Africa, 74, 76.
Feenou, a chief of Tongataboo, pays a visit of ceremony to captain Cook, 168.
Fiatooka, or burying-place, in the Friendly Islands, 180.
Fidelity, remarkable instances of, 46, n.
Fife's Passage, 394.
Fitzhugh's Sound, 431.
Foul Weather, Cape, 229.
Foulahs, an African nation, 76;—their capital, mode of life, and trade, 85.
Friendly Islands, visited by captain Cook, 168;—description of the persons of the natives, their diseases, character, habits, ornaments, &c. 187;—employments, 189; agriculture, method of building, furniture, canoes, tools, fishing-tackle, musical instruments, food and mode of cooking it, 90;—diversions, marriages, superstitious deities, ideas of a future state, fiatookas, or places of interment for the chiefs, government, power of their chiefs, 191;—homage to the king, precaution to to avert famine, the Tammahas, language, 192;—visited by the English Missionaries, 516.
Fright, effects of, a remarkable instance, 40, n.
Frontignan, vineyards of, 2.
Funeral processions in Lybia, 40, 41, n.
Funeral of a slave, at Sooha, in Africa, 116, n.
Furneaux, captain, massacre of his people at New Zealand, 156.
Fyrozabad, city of, 760.
Fyzabad, city of, 759.

G.

Gallam, *see* Kajaaga.
Gallipagos Islands, 484.
Gambia, river, voyage up, 73;—produce of its coast, 74.
Gambier's Islands, 522.
Generosity of the Bedouin Arabs, 35, 39;—of a female Negro, 87.
George, Cape, natural history of, 152.
Gillespey's Island, 677.
Gizah, in Egypt, 50.
Gold dust, method of collecting, 128.
—— mine of Wicklow, in Ireland, 128, n.
Gooch, Mr. his death, 413.—*See* Hergest.
Good Hope, Cape of, 148;—excursion up the country, 149, 646.
Gore, captain, succeeds to the command of the expedition to the Pacific Ocean, 316;—sails for Japan, but proceeds to China, 332;—his reception at Canton, 336;—departs for the Cape of Good Hope, 343;—returns to England, 344.
Granaries of Egypt, 50.
Guana, or tame crocodile of Batavia, 584.
Gwalior, fortress of, 762.

H.

Haiva, a grand entertainment given by the chiefs of Tongataboo, 177.
Halibut Island, discovered, 251.
Hamoa, Isle of, 187, n.
Hapace, Island of, 170;—customs of the natives, 171;—singing and dancing, fireworks, &c. 172;—singular mode of shaving, 173;—a remarkable mount and stone, 172.
Harmatan, a wind so called in Africa, 121, n.
Heeva, a kind of theatrical entertainment at Otaheite, 198.
Henderville's Island, 676.
Heraclea, ruins of, 14, n.
Hergest, lieut. murdered, 413, 422;—trial and execution of the assassins, 425.
Hermit, account of one, at Owhyhee, 291, n.

Hervey's Island, its inhabitants, &c. 166.
Hindoo women, 743;—pagodas, 742, 745, n.
Hodges, W. Esq. his travels in India, 740.
Hogs, method of dressing and carving in the Friendly Islands, 181.
Hoolaiva, Isle of, 173.
Hopper's Island, 676, n.
Houghton, major, perishes in Africa, 94.
Howe's Foreland, 151.
Howe's Islands, 671, 713.
Huaheine, Island of, 205.
Human sacrifices at Otaheite, 197.
Humnuck Island, 716.
Hunter, J. Esq. his journal of transactions at Port Jackson, &c. 682.
Hydrophobia, unknown in Egypt, 16.

I.

Ice, Islands of, 257.
Icy Bay, 473.
Inaccessible Island, 575.
India, travels in, 740—764.
Indians, American, 377—393, 431.
Itinerant singers in Africa, 83.

J.

Jackson, Port, voyage to, 640;—description of the country, 649;—British settlement, *ib.*—the natives, 656.
Jaloofs, a nation of Africa, 76, 135.
Jallonka Wilderness, journey across, 132.
Java, Island of, 578.
Jerboa, a singular Egyptian animal, 11.
Jeswontnager, 760.
Jetta, king of Walli, in Africa, 80.
Johars, an African tribe, 92.
Johnstone's Straits, 391.
Juan Fernandez, 485.

K.

Kaarta, kingdom of, 92.
Kajaaga, or Gallam, in Africa, 86.
Kainalia, a town of Africa, 119.
Kamtschatka, voyage to, 300;—geographical description of, rivers, soil, climate, 321;—inhabitants, &c. 326.
Karakakooa Bay, in Owhyhee, description of, 270.
Karfu Taura, an African slave dealer, receives Mr. Parke with kindness, and invites him to remain with him till after the rainy season, 119.
Kasson, kingdom of, in Africa, 88.
Kava, or Ava, disgusting method of preparing, 181;—pernicious effects, 294.
Kaye's Island, discovered, 242.
Kennyetoo, a town of Africa, 119.
Kerguelen's Land, 150, 153.
King George's Sound, *see* Nootka.
King's Island, 255.
King, lieut. forms a British settlement at Norfolk Island, 720.
Knights of Malta, rise and decline of the Order of, 7.
Komango, Island of, 168.
Koojar, in Africa, 81;—surprise of the inhabitants at seeing a white man, 82.
Kootoo, Island of, 174.
Kowries, or small shells, commonly called Blackmoor's teeth, used as money, 78, n.
Kurile Islands, 330.

L.

Ladrone Islands, 591.
Lagana, city of, 147.
Latoolibula, king of Tongataboo, 173.
Lawsuit, a singular one, in Africa, 77.
Lefooga, Island of, 172.
Lion catchers, an African tale, 79.
Lizards near Aboukir, 23, n.
Lizards of uncommon beauty, 68.
Love potions in Upper Egypt, 55.
Lucknow, palace of the Nabob, 759.
Ludamar, a Moorish kingdom in Africa, 74, 94;—its situation, &c. 103.
Lybia, desert of, 33.

M.

Macartney, lord, his embassy to China, 557;—his voyage, 560;—reception at Batavia, 579;—at Pekin, 605—614.
Macauley's Island, 671.
Madeira, 561.
Madras, view of, 741;—settlement of the English, 742.
Mæreotis, Lake, 10.
Magic among the Africans, 81, 116.
Mahometan marriages, 48.
Makkahah, Island of, given to the English Missionaries, 537.
Malacca, 552.
Malacotta, in Africa, its manufactures, &c. 135.
Malta, described, 5;—language and gallies, 7;—rise and decline of the Order of Knights of, 7.
Mamluke fidelity, 46, n.
Mandingoes, a nation of Africa, 75;—government, manners, &c. 76, 122—125.
Mangeea, isle of, discovered, 161.
Mansong, king of Bambarra, orders Mr. Parke to quit his dominions, 110;—attempts to take him prisoner, 114;—his treachery, 116.
Maquinna, a chief of the natives of Nootka, 397.
Marquesas, the, 371, n.—discovered, 411;—visited by the English Missionaries, 524.
Marshall, Capt. his voyage from Port Jackson to England, 675;—discovers several islands, 676.
Martin D'Aguilar's river, 230.
Massafuero, Isle of, 485.
Mastich, superstition of the Egyptian physicians respecting, 63.
Matavai, ceded to the British Missionaries, 512.
Matrimonial question tried in Africa, 137.
Mayo, Isle of, 148.
Meat, method of curing, in a tropical climate, 213, n.
Medicine, singular prescriptions of, 69.
——— practice of in Upper Egypt, 53.
Memphis, in Egypt, ruins of, 50.
Missionaries, Christian, their voyage to the South Pacific Ocean, 496;—proceedings at the Islands, 507—536.
Modesty of the Hindoo women, 743.
Monterry Bay, 405, 478.
Montreale, city of, 5.
Moonhier, mosque of, 747.
Moors of Africa, their origin, character, &c. 94—103.
Mootejerna, cataract of, 744.
Morai, at Otaheite, 197.
Mougheir, town and fort of, 744.
Mountains of the Birds, 52.
Mowee, Isle of, discovered, 267, 422.
Mulgrave's Islands, 677.
Mulgrave, Point, 256.
Mumbo Jumbo, a ridiculous method among the Africans of keeping their wives in subjection, 81, n.

N.

Naming of children in Africa, 123.
Natron, manufacture of, in Egypt, 21.
Neguadé, in Upper Egypt, 60.
New Albion, 229, n. 378.
New Holland, South-west coast of, 352;—voyage to, 640.—*See also* 682.
—— South Wales, voyage to, 640—700;
——settlement of the British, 649.
—— Zealand, 155, 354;—massacre of captain Furneaux's people, 156.
Nicholas, St. anecdote of, 4, n.
Nightingale Island, 575.
Nile, the, its mouths, 10;—rising of its waters, 61, 70;—voyage up, 66.
Nootka, or King George's Sound, 231; the natives, &c. 232.—*See also*, 396, 431, 475.
Norfolk Island, voyage to, 640—711.
Norton's Sound, 261.
Notche, a ceremony observed in the Friendly Isles, 183.
Nuptial ceremony, in Africa, 99, n.

O.

O'Kraine, 760.
Omai, a native of Otaheite, anecdotes of 145—208;—his death, 674.
Oneeheow, Isle of, 223;—customs of the natives, 224.
Oonalashka, Isle, visited by captain Cook, 251, 262;—natives, their manner of building, &c. 264;—repositories of the dead, 266.
Oonella, Isle of, 253.
Oonemak, Isle of, 253.
Ophthalmia of Egypt, 26.
Orchard, Port, 386.
Oreehoua, Isle of, 225.
Otaha, Isle of, its reduction by the king of Bolabola, 212.
Otaheite, Island of, 193;—natural history and produce, 213, 553;—manners and customs of the natives, 197, 361;—arrival of the British missionaries, 508, &c.
Otakootaia, Isle of, its discovery, produce, &c. 165.
Otoo, king of Otaheite, receives captain Cooke, 195;—his artful conduct, 202;—sends a present for his Britannic majesty, *ib.*
Oude, city of, 760.
Owhyhee, discovered, 268;—authority of the chiefs, 271, n.—the natives, &c. 275—290;—ceded to Britain, 457.
Oxen of Egypt, 15.

P.

Pagodas of the Hindoos, 742, 745, n.
Palermo, description of its harbour, 3, &c. n.
Palmerston, Islets of, 167, 516, n.
Pantalaria, described, 5.
Pantomimic courtship; 18.
Parke, Mungo, his travels into the interior districts of Africa, in 1795-7, 73;—his motives for undertaking the voyage, instructions, and departure from England, 73;—arrives in the Gambia, *ib.*—proceeds to the interior, 74;—quits the African shore, and arrives in England, 140.
Patna, city of, 747.
Pekin, city of, 608, 610;—occurrences there during lord Macartney's residence, 619.
Pelew Islands, 549, 668.
Penn's Cove, 388.
Petrels, or birds of storm, 3.
Peyrouse, Mons. his arrival at Botany Bay, 719.
Phillip, Governor, his voyage to Botany Bay, &c. 640—658.
Phillip's Islands, discovered, 716;—description of, 717.
Physicians in Upper Egypt, 53.
Pines, Isle of, 712.
Plassey, plains of, 743.
Pompey's Pillar, 10.
Pomurrey or Pomarré, regent of Otaheite, 361, 508.
Pork, method of curing on a long voyage, 213, n.
Poulaho, king of the Friendly Isles, 173;—gives a splendid entertainment to captain Cook, 179.
Present, remarkable mode of conveying one, 198.
Preservation of the bodies of chiefs at Otaheite, 198.
Prince Edward's Islands, 150.
——— George's Island, 480.
——— of Wales's Cape, 255.
——— William's Sound, 244;—the inhabitants, &c. *ib.*
Procession, a singular one, 54, n.
Pulo Condore, Isle of, 586.
Pyramids in Egypt, 50, 51.

Q.

Queen Charlotte's Sound, 395.

R.

Rapacity of some of the African kings, 87.
Restoration Point, 388.
Rhamadan, Mahometan fast of, 72, 130.
Rheumatism, singular mode of curing, 200.
Rio de Janeiro, 504, 570, 645.
Rosetta, in Egypt, 14;—inhabitants, and their manners, 18;—manufacture of Natron, 21;—natural history, 24.
Roudda, in Egypt, 50.
Round Island, 253.

S.

Saadi, a sect in Egypt, 26.
Sacrifices in India, 749, 752.
Sai, a town of Africa, beseiged by the king of Bambarra, 115, n.—treachery of the besiegers, 116.
St. Augustine, Mount, 247.
— Elias, Mount, 473.
— George, Fort, *see* Madras.
— Helena, Island of, 637.
— Hermogenes, Cape, 247, 250.
— Jago, (Cape de Verd) 501, 568.
— Lawrence, Bay of, 259.
— Paul, Isle of, 578.
— Paul's Grotto, in the Island of Malta, 6, n.
— Peter and St. Paul, town of, 301.
Salt, a great luxury in Africa, 125, n.
Salt pits of Barbary, 78.
Sand storms in India, 763.
Sandwich Islands, 225, 290, 369;—ceded by the chiefs to the British crown, 457.
Sansanding, a town of Bambarra, 110.
Santa Cruz, 564;—account of its road, 146;—city of, 147;—natural history, &c. 148.
Saphis, *see* Charms.
Savage Islands, 167, 516.
Scarborough Island, 677.
Schumagin Islands, 251.
Sea horses, description of, 257.
Sego, capital of Bambarra, 109, n.
Sennaar, in Upper Egypt, journey to, 55.
Serawoollies, their manners, and trade, 86.
Serdze Kamen, Cape, 259, n.
Serle's Island, 523.
Sever, capt. his voyage from Port Jackson to England, by way of the Pacific Ocean, 670.
Shaving, singular mode of, 173.
Shekoabad, 760.
Shere Shah, mausoleum of, 764.
Shortland, lieut. his voyage from New South Wales to England, 665.
Sibidooloo, a town in Africa, 118.
Sicilian customs, 4.
Sicily, natural history of, 5.
Siege, preparations in an African town, in expectation of one, 89, n.
Singing men, in Africa, 83.
Siout, in Egypt, 53.
Sir Charles Middleton's Island, 545.
Slaves, instance of generosity in, 87;—deplorable fate of a female, 132;—their apprehension of being devoured by the Europeans, 130.
Slavery, sources of, in Africa, 125.
Sledge Island, 255, 259.
Smith's Inlet, 395, 677.
Smokey Bay, 247.
Snares, the, discovered, 356.
Society Isles, 193;—observations on, 213.—*See* Otaheite, *and* Missionaries.
Sonnini, M. his travels in Upper and Lower Egypt, 1—72.
Stephens, Cape, 262.
Stuart's Island discovered, 261;—description of, 713.
Sumatra, Island of, 578.
Sunda, Straits of, 578.
Swine in Egypt, an object of loathing, and why, 66.
Sydney Cove, British settlement at, 658;—climate and produce, 659.

T.

Table Bay, 646.
Taffara, a town of Africa, 116.
Tahoora, isle of, 225.
Tahta, in Upper Egypt, 56, 68.
Taloo, harbour of, 203.
Teje Mahel, monument of, 761.
Teneriffe, Peak of, 147;—trade, &c. 147 564, 644.
Tentyris, in Upper Egypt, ruins of, 59.
Termination Island, 352.
Thebes, in Upper Egypt, ruins of, 65.
Tomieh, in Upper Egypt, 56.
Tongataboo, 175;—description of, 176, n.
Toobouai, Isle of, discovered, 192.
Tornadoes in Africa, 121.
Touching's Island, 677.
Tower of the Arabs, in Egypt, 8.
Transportation of British convicts to America, origin of, 642.
Travelling, curious mode of, 303.
——— in Egypt, 13;—in India, 745.
Trinidad Bay, 430.
Trinity Island, discovered, 250.
Tristan d'Acunha, Isles of, 575.
Troglodyte, whimsical ceremony of catching it, 1.
Tschutski, their weapons, ornaments, &c. 255.
Tucker's Island, 549.
Turnagain, river, 249.

V & U.

Valette, city of, 5.
Valparaiso Bay, 486;—city of St. Jago, 493.
Vancouver, captain, his voyage of discovery to the North Pacific Ocean, and round the world, 345—496.
Van Diemen's land, 153;—inhabitants, customs, &c. 154, 354.
Vany, kingdom of, 74.
Vavaoo, Isle of, 187, n.
Ulietea, Island of, 209;—the chief and his family detained by captain Clerke as hostages, for some deserters, 210.

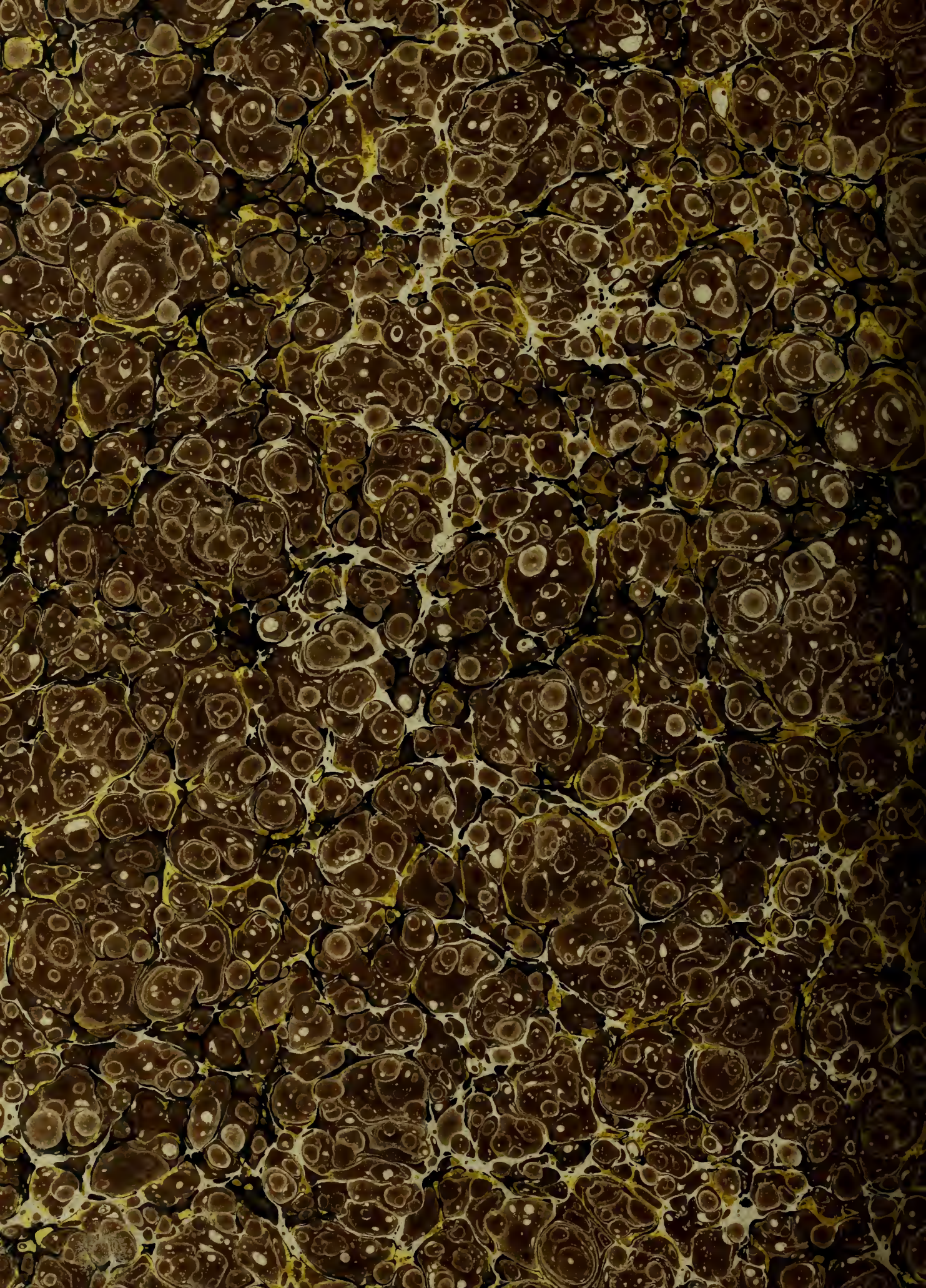
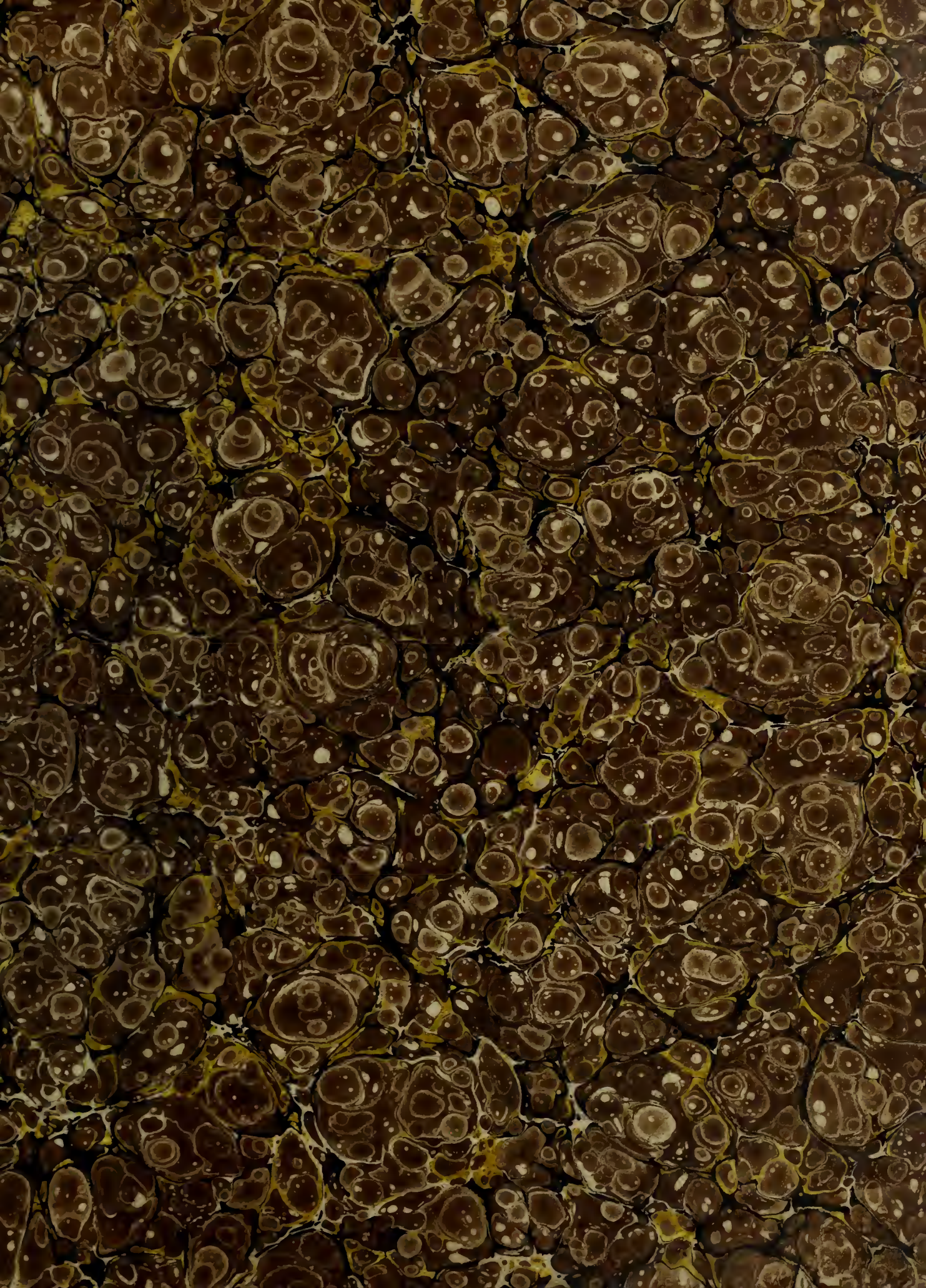
W.

Wall of China, 613, 639.
Walli, an African kingdom, 80.
War-canoes, 199.
Wateoo, Island of, discovered, 162;—conjecture on the origin of the inhabitants, 165.
Water of the Nile, miraculous powers attributed to it, 24.
Whirlwinds, in Egypt, 51.
Widows sacrificing themselves in India, 749.
Wilson, captain James, his missionary voyage to the South Pacific Ocean, in the ship Duff, 496—545.
Woahoo, Isle of, 225, 288;—visited by capt. Vancouver, 370;—murder of lieut. Hergest, 413, 422.
Woodle's Island, 676.

Y.

Yellow sea, navigation of, 595.

Z.

Zananah, ruins of, 743.

Printed by W. Stratford, Crown-Court, Temple-Bar.